Pure Love x Insult Complex

Author: 銀三〇（ゆだ）

Synopsis:

I fall in love to a girl when I get into high school, Yukino Shirasaka. I could only look at her from distance. However one day I heard that she has a boyfriend. Even if I love her, I won't get her. The devil sent me an invitation. I can make her mine!

★ April 24 Tuesday

1. Shirasaka Yukino boyfriend?

Aaaaaaa….

I was running to the bathroom at the same time as the bell ring.

I put down my pants and released the dangerous bomb!

Fiuh… Somehow I made it safely.

Of course I hold it in. It would be pathetic to raised your hand and asked.

“Teacher I want to go to the toilet. ”

However I wonder if Shirasaka saw me running. I would be embarrassed. I wonder if she has a boyfriend? Does she hate man?

For me, Shirasaka Yukino is my world. I saw her at the entrance ceremony. Less than a month ago.

I come from boys only middle school. Living in a dorm, who could endure this kind of torture? Finally grandfather passed away so I could enter co-ed high school and commute from home. I was happy.

At the entrace ceremony, I was nervous. I haven’t speaking to a girl for 3 years. I was stunned when seeing the girls. From the last time I saw them in elementary school, their body is still small. Now, their innocence was gone. Erotic body! I wonder if I have a nosebleed.

My body is trembling and my head feels light.

“Are you alright? ”

Suddenly I heard a lovely voice. I look for the owener and an angel appeared.

A cute girl, black eyes and straight shoulder length hair. Her skin

was smooth and she isn't that tall. My eyes also fixated on her chest. It wasn't big, her breast but I rarely saw it. Slender leg without extra meat, it's perfect.

"Do you want me to take you to the infirmary? "

The angel is talking to me.

"No, no need. "

"Is that so? "

"Yes, thank you. "

"Oh, my name is Shirasaka Yukino. "

The angel said that before leaving. Shirasaka Yukino. Such a cute child and she is in the same class as me.

Unlike me, she made friends quickly. Her smile when talking with the girls, so cute..

Since that day on the entrance ceremony, my eyes only looking at her.

Never leave her.

The Shirasaka who is eating, solving problem with a frowned expression, her figure in gym clothes, she is the ideal girl. She was smart too. Third place in entrance examination. However since that day, she never talk to me and I didn't talk to her.

If only she will bear my child, I will be hally. Such a pure girl, I even wonder if she have a boyfriend. Going to dates, and whether she is good at kissing. After a few times.. Sex.. Has she done that?

All this time my mind is full of her.

"Shirasaka-san.. Shirasaka.. Ooh… "

I was in the toilet cubicle imagining her.

Pathetic. But just seeing her from afar is enough.. I could see her

angelic smile everyday.

“Shirasaka, she is so beautiful. ”

Suddenly voices of people entering the toilet.

“She must be a virgin right? A virgin!.. If only I could have her.. ”

The owner of the voice is kobayashi and Omiya from my class.

“You didn’t know? It’s something hot right now.. ”

“What is it? ”

“Yukino Shirasaka have a boyfriend. ”

I was frozen on top of the toilet seat. My teeth were grinding against each other and my blood is boiling.

Shirasaka boyfriend? He have a death wish.

“It’s a lie right? ”

“No, it’s true.”

“Who’s the man? ”

“It’s Endo. ”

“Endo from baseball club? ”

“yeah.. ”

It is something that couldn’t be helped. Endo Kenji, handsome face, tall, wealthy family and good at sports. The only freshman to be the baseball team regular. A dream man lf every woman.

“well it couldn’t be helped. ”

“how long? ”

“what? ”

“how long they have been dating? ”

This is an important issue. Is Shirasaka lips have been tainted? Or even her chasity is still safe?

“It seemes from last week saturday. ”

“wow. Last week? ”

“yeah after practice some guy from the baseball club witness the confessions. ”

“and? ”

“yesterday she gives him towel after practice. ”

“oh! Towel after practice. I’m so envious. ”

Let’s make it clear, they jave been together since Saturday last week. Is her chasity still safe? Did they meet on sunday? Is her lips is still pure?

“so, what else? ”

“kiss..”

“kiss?”

“yeah, he admitted to the baseball’s senior. ”

What? Even kissing her? I will curse him.

“they make a good pair aren’t they? ”

“well, what do you think going to happen ? ”

“eh? ”

“next week is golden week. Maybe in this sunday she will become a woman. ”

Shirasaka and Endo… This week she will be tainted… No.. I hate it hate hate hate. Absolutely no…

Duut

My fart explode so loud.

“Hey, who’s there? ”

“really farting so loud. ”

“ya! ”

They keep on banging the cubicle door.

“come out! ”

It’s dangerous. If I come out I may be bullied. Suddenly a sound of gushing water could be heard. They put it in a bucket?

splash

From above the cubicle, water comes down. In this small cubicle, rain has fall down.

2. Heaven and Hell

Part 1

I am waiting for a while after trashman leaves the toilet just in case he will be waiting to ambush me in front of the toilet.

After sometime finally I was able to leave.

Oh~Rya Rya… Sound of Flush, Bichabichada (Water sfx?)

It was good that this is after school because I couldn't show such a scene to Shirasaka-san.

I can do nothing but to go to the roof to hung my uniform to dry.

No one would be here at this time right

I climb the stairs to the roof top lightly and open the heavy iron door that leads to the roof with Gigigi sound.

Pyuaa …. the refreshing wind that signals the end of April is blowing

Because of that wind, the door to the roof are also slowly being closed.

Today weather is really warm and good

This place is a good place…at the north side of this rooftop, I have to trouble to hung my uniform to dry because there are mountains of desk and chair that is going to be disposed of.

Whoa… it is really sunny over there

…… huh? !

Reflexively, there's something that is hiding between the desk

Nunu-? ? ? ! (Sfx?)

…… Nuoooooo ! (another moving sfx?)

there, there, over there!

Wait, wait, could it be?!!!!

There, that incredible sight is…..

The girl I thought of as the most beautiful girl in the world…. Shirasaka-san is……. cccccccc-, changing clothes ???

On the unpopular rooftop?

under the blue sky, bathing in the brilliant sun light

no, this is a lie!

Shirasaka-san is taking off her uniform blouse

because the wind is blowing… she doesn't seem to notice me

the distance between us is, about 7 to 8 meter?

from the gap between the desk, I took a peek at the figure of Shirasaka-san

Ah, I can see Shirasaka-san back from here. she is wearing a white bra straps with a ¥ shape

Oh, the bra straps!

Shirasaka-san's beautiful breast under the uniform, the thing that is rising up under the legendary white string, now, is like it's saying "hello " to the sun

Aah, Shirasaka-san turned her body!

beyond shirasaka-san armpit, I could see the milk mountain

A-a-a-amazing…

The meat that is making a mountain is wrapped and covered by a white fabric.

After all it's a breast. That's a breast. These are truly some beautiful breasts

Impossible.. This is the first time I'm seeing a girl breast with my naked eye.

Even so Shirasaka-san back is so beautiful…

I… I didn't know.

That a girl's back can be so sexy.

Shirasaka-san skin look really smooth.

Fair white skin… and thin slim waist.

Amazing, it looks like it will be broken if you hug.

A girl is so small.

And, the gym clothes are hanging on a chair on the side of Shirasaka-san

And I don't know how she ends up changing into gym clothes in the roof top.

Right now, her upper body is only covered with a white bra. her lower body is only wearing a skirt.

Well… from here, what will she do?

① Before she takes off her skirt, she will wear the gym shirt first. (the "not much skin can be seen" faction)

② she will also takes off the skirt and will be in her underwear only. (the " when changing you take off the clothes first " faction)

Now…Which one?!

2 please, 2 please ,2 ,2 ,2 , please, please please …. !!!

Shirasaka-san hands move to her skirt.

Yess , it's ② !!!!!!

The skirt, fall to the ground with a thump.

Hello, stripped panty.

I can only see her ass from here but still, hello panty.

Oh, stripped panty-sama.

Of course the color of the stripe is sky blue and white.

Shirasaka-san ass… it looked so soft!!

Shi-Shirasaka-san pa-pa-panty is in full view!!

"Ho, reporting in, Ensign-dono, Shirasaka-san panty pattern is stripped."

"As I thought, it was stripped! Well done, sergeant!"

while I made a monologue play in my mind, Oh! I came up with an idea"

T-t-that's it.

With a trembling hand I took out my mobile phone from my pocket.

And then… I took a photo.

of the Shirasaka-san wearing only striped panty and white bra.

One time, two times…three times.

All of them are taken horizontally… although it was from behind.

Shirasaka-san milk mountain… has been engrained into my memory.

Inside my brain and mobile phone.

Dream that lasted only for seconds.

Immediatelly, Shirasaka-san changed into her gym clothes.

She wear it (?).

But still, that defenseless panty is in full view so I keep pressing the shutter again.

Then the shorts, a navy blue gym shorts (bloomer?)

That good round ass shape is imediatelly hidden.

Oh, what a regret…!

But…still the slim and slender leg is visible.

No no… it will be dangerous.

“I’ve already taken a lot of her photo right….. me”

What… what should I do?

What’s the best thing to do now?

At that time, only one word that comes up in my mind…

‘escape’… is the only choice.

Once again I tried to stealthily hides between the desk.

For now, let’s get back to the roof entrance door.

However, my feet… are stuck.

As I hit my head on the desk hardly.

Dosshīn! ! (Sfx?)

And then I tried to turn over my body to see the mountain of desk.

Dongaragasshān! !(another sfx?)

“…Who? who is there?”

oh… It's Shirasaka-san beautiful voice.

I mean.. it's dangerous, I've been found out!!

When I tried to get up… Shirasaka-san short figure is already there…!

At point blank range, My and Shirasaka's eyes meet.

Shirasaka-san big eyes, is looking at me.

Eeh. What should I do, What should i do, what should I dooooo !!!!

"Um?Um?… excuse me?" Shirasaka-san asked.

"Um?Um?…this is." I replied.

I said as I turned myself on the ground.

"…ah..um…he-he-hello-lo…"

A- a-, it's tiring! I'm so useless ….. !

Hentai (pervert) ! I will be seen as a hentai

and then… Shirasaka-san eyes goes wide..!

"Um.. Are you Yoshida-kun from my class?"

…… Uwa wa wa wa? !

Th-This is a miracle! Shirasaka-san remembered my name!

"Um, is that wrong? are you Yoshioka-kun?"

Part 2

No No No

I shake my head sideways

"Yoshida, Yoshida, It's Yoshida"

“That’s right, It’s Yoshida”

Shirasaka smiled pleasantly, aaaaaaaaaaaa so cuuuuuuuuuuttttttte~!

“By the way Yoshida, why are you on the roof”

“U-Uuuuuuhm, that, is, t-t-t-t-t-t-that……W-w-w-what about you Shirasaka?”

Uwaaaa! I answered Shirasaka’s question with a question

Didn’t I look like an idiot?

Besides, Idiot, Idiot, Idiot!…..Someone, kill me already!!!

My heart’s pounding so much, my words, words, words can’t get out!

More than that…..I’m talking to S-s-s-shirasaka!!?

“I was in the cleaning duty….Since the rooftop is dirty, I thought of cleaning it after school”

“Eh? S-shirasaka alone?”

“Yup, everyone else has their clubs, I’m not in any club, and besides…..”

Oh….I see

Shirasaka is waiting for the baseball club to end their practice…..

I see, I see, that’s how it is…..D-dammit!

“But, w-w-why are you wearing gym shorts?”

“Oh, I thought my uniform will get dirty when I start cleaning the rooftop….That’s why I changed into this”

Nooooo…..I-i was watching. I never said that. Of course. (TN: He says “iyaaaaa”, which has also the same feel as “oh man~”)

“A-a-a-ah, I-i-i-i-i-see….Uhm, my uniform got wet, s-s-s-s-o I thought of drying it on the rooftop, so…”

“Hmm. I see.”

Shirasaka looked at the wet student uniform on my hand.

“It’s not like that! It’s not like I’m peeing! A malicious dude splashed a water bucket on me, that’s why uhmm, that’s the reason I got this wet, hehehehe. ahahahaha”

The more I speak, the more incoherent I become

I can’t get away with just laughing.

Shirasaka looked at my foolish face and burst into laughter

“I don’t think like that you’re peeing, we’re already high school students”

“A-ah-ah. That’s right, that’s right! Ahahahaha, ahahaha”

A laughing Shirasaka! Her laughing face is cute too~!!!

That’s no good, me. Just by talking to her, I’m broken.

“Ah, Yoshida…I think if you leave your uniform there it will dry faster”

Shirasaka recommended me a pile of desk that is well lit by the sun.

“T-t-t-t-thank you very much!”

“What are you saying , we’re classmates aren’t we? There’s no need to be formal with me”

“Awawawa…Y-yeah”

I put my uniform on the desk just like Shirasaka said.

Today’s weather is good, so it should dry immediately.

“Well then, I should start cleaning”

“B-by cleaning, you mean this pile of desks?”

Shirasaka laughed once again.

“I won’t be able to clean that all alone you know?…In the rooftop there are quite a lot of people going in and out. I often see people littering something like plastic bags, milk cartons, or bread wrappers. I thought I should collect them and throw them in the garbage.”

As she said that , Shirasaka grabbed a broom and started sweeping below the table

Indeed, there are a lot of trash coming out.

“Really….there a lot of people with no manners.”

Wearing her shorts, Shirasaka looks cute from behind as she sweeps the dust.

She bent forward a little, then her ass came into full view….Oh! What a beautiful ass

Every time she shakes her body, her ass also sways.

And…while I was paying attention to her ass, she turned around unexpectedly

This is bad! This is a desperate situation

….Shirasaka is looking at me!

Was I caught out? Was I not caught out?

“Hey, Yoshida”

“Eh? Ah? Oh? U-u-u-uhm, what is it?”

I look over there. I looked at the sky. Watching the birds in the sky. That’s why I was not looking. I wasn’t looking. I am not looking at your ass. Believe me. Believe me! Shirasaka!

…..I plead desperately with my eyes

And, Shirasaka said

“….Yoshida, can you help me clean?”

“Yeah?….Clean”

“Yeah…Can’t you?”

“I-i-i-i don’t mind”

“Thank goodness”

Shirasaka gave me a pleasant smile.

oooh! Let’s do it! Just do it!

I’ll help you clean the rooftotototop!

For roughly an hour, the two of us were cleaning the rooftop.

….I was happy.

I was really….Happy.

The garbage we collected had filled two large garbage bags.

“After we throw this away, we’re done”

“T-that’s right.”

It already ended….Happy times sure flies fast.

“I’ll go carry one bag, Yoshida, can I ask you to carry the other?”

“….to request me”

“You see….can you bring the garbage?”

“Y-Yeah”

“You don’t mind?”

Shirasaka smiled.

Oh~….I want to stare at this face forever.

“R-roger that! heave-ho”

Ah!…I involuntarily saluted to Shirasaka

Shirasaka giggled,

“Yoshida, I never knew that you were an interesting person”

No, what? what’s this?

Am I …..maybe being praised by Shirasaka?

This feels good.

…B-but, I don’t know what face I should make in this situation….

“Ah, sorry, did I anger you perhaps?”

Eeeeh?! What?!!

“No! That’s, not, I’m not angry! I have no reason to be angry.”

Shirasaka seeing me like that, she bursted out laughing again

[I’m really sorry alright. That’s because you are amusing, that Yoshida-kun, it’s true.]

Shirasaka-san is laughing. While being bathed in the april sunlight, her smooth forehead had a bit of sweat.

To be looking closely at Shirasaka-san’s smile…..She’s so cute just as I expected ~ ！ ！ ！

Those 2 got along well as they held the garbage bag one by one and went down the stairway

Shirasaka is ahead, and I’m behind.

Since the garbage bags are heavy , Shirasaka talks to me while walking slowly.

From Shirasaka's back, I secretly sniff the scent of her hair.

*Sniff**Sniff*….What a nice fragrance.

S-so this is the smell of women's shampoo

Wow, I can see Shirasaka's nape

Worship, Worship (Pun: KING ARTHUR!KING ARTHUR!)

Since this sight is so rare….

Delicious! Delicious!

It's different on close up as expected.

Unlike watching from a distance, more than the presence, I can feel the aura of living Shirasaka

Just from walking behind her, my heart's pounding already!

My chest tightens!

I know this feeling!

Oh! I can see small beads of sweat running on Shirasaka's nape

…..ugh, I want to lick it! I want to taste that bead of sweat! ugh

But it's impossible so I gazed downwards….

Uwah, Shirasaka's waist is so thin~! I feel it would break if I hug her.

I'm saving the sight of her ass and the leg line.

This ass and legs, I want to massage them! I want to put my hand in the slit of her ass.

What am I saying, after I inadvertently observed and had a wicked delusion of her at a near distance to her, but did she sense my wickedness, by which Shirasaka-san turned around with a kururi sound.

….Shit!

“Yoshida?”

“…W-what do you need from me?”

“Is that garbage bag heavy?”

“What?”

“You’re breathing heavily since earlier”

Part 3

[Eeeehhh? Ah?…….Ahh recently, since I lacked physical activity for a moment, Th-, The stairs, asce, asce, asce, ascending, ascending, ascending and descending training is what I was doing though, bu-, but, since I wasn’t good with it for a moment then, i-, it’s just that’s all…Yes!]

[……..I see, then though it’s good. Take care of yourself.]

Shirasaka-san smiled at me with sweetly

Ah~, I’m meltingggggg!!!!

I exchanged my shoes with the outdoor shoes, went out of the schoolhouse and proceeded to the dumpsite in the back.

Should I make some small talks, is what I thought though…..when I’m conversing with Shirasaka-san, my head is short and that’s why I couldn’t talk to her even with all my best.

Since there’s no helping it, sometimes, I would peep at Shirasaka-san side figure from the back……this loveliness……Ah, truly a beautiful girl would still be beautiful in any kind of angle!

I am right now. had the same goal(Throwing away the garbage) with Shirasaka-san and is now walking on the same path as her!

We’re now sharing our time together!

My life, as now at it's climaxxxxxxx!

It would be good if this time just continued on for a long time

…Stop this time right now! Please stop!

Sincerely and truly, I prayed so.

…but even though I've prayed so!

In pitilessness, The time of supreme bliss has been broken abruptly

[Yukino!!]

The was a manly voice that greatly resounded in the direction of the building where the club room of the Exercise club was!

To call my Shirasaka-san with her first name [Yukino], Who are you?!

A man appeared!……..That guy's name is Endo Kenji

Kenji Endo came running to our direction while still in his baseball club's practice uniform……!

[Ah, Kenji! ……Wait that's wrong, E-, Endo-kun……]

Shirasaka-san, though she called him with his name Endo for a moment, she restated it since I was with her.

……A relationship that both calls each other by their first names, that is in a word……

That is so. I didn't consider any other thing.

……These 2 are a couple to put it simply……A man and a woman who are going out with each other.

[Today's practice, has it already ended?]

[Yeah, It's alright to get up for today is what the senpai said though. How about you?]

[Me too, I'll just throw this garbage bag and it'll end]

[Then, let's go home together.]

[Okay!]

With that, I have been completely disregarded and the conversation of those two ran in general

After that……like suddenly finding the thing that hasn't been seen up to now, Endo looked at me and said.

[……You, who are you?]

To call me you……. I am tentatively, a guy who is in the same class as you.

[…..It's Yoshida-kun. He's in our class]

[Was there such a guy like that?]

I was there, I was there, I WAS THERE YOU KNOW. In the nook of the corner of the wall of the back side of the class……!

[Really now, that's rude. I'm sorry Yoshida-kun. …You know, I only helped with Yoshida-kun in cleaning the rooftop……. It's only that.]

Eh? Umm?

……To say that That's only it.

Shirasaka-san, what do you mean by That's only it……..?!

[Oh really, then just do it alone yourself. Me and Yukino will be going afterwards so, just leave that garbage bag over there and it's alright for you to go home now.]

What the hell, What the hell, What the hell, This guy, Who does he think he is!!

Kachin, Kochin, Kichintokuraa! (TLN Miserre: Sound effects)

……A seditious atmosphere entered amongst Shirasaka-san

[Since it's already good then go change your clothes already Kenji! The Dumping place is already there.]

[……..But.]

[We'll be going home together right ! Aren't we wasting our time right now !!]

Shirasaka-san…Considerably, she's a laying out your butt type (TLN Missere: One being dominated)

Endo reluctantly agreed too……which he doesn't.

「……Listen here、Don't make a pass on Yukino alright。」(TLN Missere: Those are forbidden words that raise the flag of the POWER OF NTL-NETORI!)

Is what he said to me.

[What are you talking about, Kenji.]

[It's alright, if I don't precisely say it then this guy might awaken a strange feeling for you]

[Yoshida-kun is a classmate you know. Such a thing will not happen……okay.]

……Eh?, Though I'm your classmate, didn't we have a strange mood for the whole time a while ago

[Anyway after you finish throwing the trash then quickly go home. Alright!]

Endo stabbed at my chest with a DON sound and returned to the club room of the exercise club……!

……What a hateful guy. He's truly a hateful bastard!

Again, we proceeded to the dumping place……there was no conversation that happened between me and Shirasaka-san as

expected.

We silently went to the corner of the dumping place and threw the garbage in.

[……..Thank you, Yoshida-kun, you've been very helpful]

Shirasaka-san said so while cleaning up her dirtied hands.

[Nah, I-, It's not l-, li, li, like I……]

[No, You've helped me. Yoshida-kun is a good person huh.]

[Th- That is……]

[Afterwards……]

Shirasaka-san cast her look downwards for a moment

[I'm really sorry for that person to strangely pick a quarrel with you a while ago. He doesn't have any ill intent against you. Please forgive him]

Shirasaka-san bowed her head down. For that Endo, Shirasaka-san is……!

[I-It's alright, It's alright already s-, so, please raise your head, Shirasaka-san! I-, I didn't really minded that at all, I……!]

[So you'll forgive him?! Yoshida-kun, you're truly a good person as expected]

(TLN Missere Meow: Tch, I hate nice girls.)(Pun: Missere Meow earned a new title [8man]) (Missere Meow: *SPOILER* Though You'll learn in the next chapter on what this human is.)

Shirasaka-san smiled at me!

That face of hers, truly when she smiles, that face of hers, looks like the beauty of a blossoming flower and, that face of hers, as expected is the highest among high for being cute

And that is why……I.

Inadvertently…….I have asked unto Shirasaka-san.

[…….Shi-, Shirasaka-san. Umm, Is the story of you going out with Endo…….Is it true?]

Then, Shirasaka-san……made the most highest smile……!

[Ah, Yoshida-kun, so you knew already! That's right, We're going out with each other, the two of us!]

I thought that my heart stopped.

It seems that the blue sky is frighteningly clear and very spacious…….

[……Th-, that is to say……di-did it start from monday this week?]

[Yep, we started at monday this week……oh my, how did you know?!]

[Eh? Ah ? No, I just hear a rumor…….]

[Eh?, I didn't talk about it with anyone!…..Ahh, Kenji is unexpectedly talkative huh. Well now, so everybody knew about it. I was planning on keeping it a secret with all my effort.]

Shirasaka-san is, smiling…….Shirasaka-san is, smiling right now.

That smile though, has drowned me into abyss of despair.

Though I say that it's hell……I as of now, seemed like I would die in solitary in the paradise.

She finished off my heart……that is what I've felt….!

However…….her smile seemed to be truly happy.

I am…to such a smiling girl

I've been thinking that a while ago would come to an H scene rushingly.

If I personally say it then [This woman, I'll Violate her!] will

become like this feeling.

3. I saw a devil

I went to the roof once again. Fuu…
Evening would come if I wait for the uniform to dry.

I was here with Shiarasaka-san just a while ago.
That was a pleasant memory.
And now everything's lifeless.
It's the end of April but I feel that it's somewhat chilly.
Could it be a broken heart's wound? …Or rather, this is even a broken heart?

No…I feel that I've already lost before I can call this on the stage of broken heart.
…That's right, I just lost to something…that's how it feels but it's still remaining in my body…

I could've confessed to Shirasaka-san earlier than Endo if I know this would happen…I can't think like that.
The result would be the same even if I confess earlier.
There's no way Shirasaka-san would like a man like me…that's for certain.

I, to be honest, I never thought that Shirasaka-san would be someone else's, I'm glad if it stays like that…I'm just happy by only watching Shirasaka-san.

And yet, Shirasaka-san is…is with that bastard Endou.
That's overwhelming. It's too much. It's the worst…fuck!!!

「…You're interesting」

Suddenly…I heard a voice.
I turned towards the voice.
I never felt any signs of life until now…!

What's standing there is…A young teacher.
Her age is 25-26. Long black hair and black edge glasses…She's wearing a crimson suit.
She's a beauty but she had a cold expression.

She's super tall…Isn't it close to 180cm?
However, she's thin, and her skin is very white as if she's not being outside.
If I recall…it was.

「…I'm Yuzuki Minaho, I teach English」

Right…If I recall correctly, she's a homeroom teacher on second years?

「Aaaaa…Uhm, I-Is there something…?」
「Yes. You see, I am interested in children like you」

The female teacher laughed.

「M…Me?」
「That's right, you. You lose your own confidence, it ages, and distorts…However, you're a unfair and miserable man that can't defy your own penis' desire」
「I-I…」
「What? You're saying I'm wrong? Are you going to insist that you're a decent man?」
「…No」

…That's right.
Sensei is right.
I'm unfair. Even today, I ogled at Shirasaka-san's body a lot. I had delusions. Taking peeping photos of her in her panties. I sniffed fragrant hair.
I…I feel a strong desire with her.
However…I can do nothing but give up on her.
If she's' going out with Endou…I can do nothing but stay silent watch her being fucked by Endou.
I…am a weak human.

「Hey…What do you want to be in the future?」
「…Nothing」

That's right. I don't have a dream in particular.

「When I was at your age, I always thought of becoming the devil」

The female teacher said something suddenly.

「D-Devil?」
「That's right, a devil. You see…I graduated from this high school」

Sensei slowly approached me

「…Sensei did? I-Is that so?」
「Yes, that's right. On my high school days, I always wanted to become a devil for so long. Become the devil and make all the humans on this school become sorrowful…」

Sensei's hand…is touching my shoulder.

「Hey…You, what do you intend to do with her?」
「H-Her, who?」

Sensei smiles bewitchingly.

「Ara, I know it…everything in your mind…」

I felt a chill on my back.
Oh…I feel that this kind of person grips hearts and grinds it.

「Wh…what do you mean?」

The cold hand…caress my cheeks

「…If you want her body, then I will get it. Of course, her heart can't be taken. However, you can make her body yours
「W-what are you saying…Sensei?」
「No one will be happy. You, her, her lover, everyone around you would become unhappy…Everyone would be on the bottom of sorrow. However…You can have her body if you sacrifice everything」

Her speech that has no sense of high tension wraps up my body.
I…Anyway, I want to get out of this situation.

「…Just only obtaining her body, isn't that no good?」

The female teacher snorted.

「What are you saying?…Aren't you interested in her body? Isn't her heart irrelevant?」
「…That's□」
「In the first place, what are you doing with her? You came to like her outward appearance.. That's all to it. Won't you be satisfied if you can make her body yours?」

I…don't know how should I answer.
Sensei's words might be right.
However…However.

「Take your time thinking about it…However, there's not much time. Highschoolers these days have sex don't they?…Even her, she won't be able to protect her virginity forever」

Shirasaka-san's…Virginity.
Endou will violate it.
No…I don't want that.

「If you have the resolve to make her feel sorrow…If you have the resolve to be in sorrow…if you have the resolve to make everyone in the school feel sorrow…Just tell me. If you do, I'll let you do as you please with her body. This won't end just once. Her body would be yours for life. There's no man who would be able to embrace that body except you. Surely, that girl would hate you. She'll curse you for her whole life」
「That's…I can't believe it」
「Even if it is…You're already believing what I'm saying」
「Why…Sensei's telling me this?」

The female teacher's mouth distorts to a grin.

「You already know it, don't you?…I'm a devil」

Oh…Right.
This smile…This face.
This person's a devil.
I felt that for some reason.

「I was finally able to become a demon I always yearned for when I was a high school student. That's why I want to realize a dream」
「Sensei's…dream?」
「I talked about it a while ago but…I want to make everyone in this school be deprived of their happiness…!」

The cold hand of the devil is grasping my heart firmly.

「I will make this school hell…!!!」

Sensei's face…Is beautiful, cold, and mad. Her eyes shine in purple. My memory was flying after that.

…When I noticed, I was already at home.

I can't remember how I came back from that.
I thought I just saw a dream but, my heart aches terribly.
The pain in my chest informs me that the conversation with Sensei isn't a dream.

I decided to sleep early because my body's aching so hard.
I saw the class picture taken at the entrance placed on the study desk incidentally.
…Shirasaka-san's reflected on it.
…Shirasaka-san's laughing.
…Endou's there too.
…Endou is having such an unpleasant smile.
…I'm also there.
…I'm not laughing…

Shirasaka-san went home with Endou today.
It's possible, it's possible that Shirasaka-san has kissed Endou about this time.
It's possible that, sex too…
I thought, became lifeless, covered my head with the blanket and slept…

…Shirasaka-san appeared in my dream.
Shirasaka-san in her usual uniform…Or rather, I never saw Shirasaka-san not wearing her usual uniform and sportswear.
Suddenly, Endou appeared in the dream too, and he strips

Shirasaka-san one piece at a time.
…Dammit, stop!
I pushed Endou away in my dream.
Endou disappeared and there's only me and Shirasaka-san in disordered clothing…

「…Hey, you really want to rape that child didn't you?」

Turning around, I found the female teacher on her crimson suit looking down.

「You only feel lust for her…!」

Taken aback, I looked at Shirasaka-san.
Her big eyes looks at me uneasy.

「…Watch carefully. What you desire is in there…!!」

Just as the female teacher said that, I looked back at Shirasaka's body unconsciously.
What's there is Shirasaka's half naked body.
Cute face. Cute lips. Small chest. Beautiful curve, ass, and legs.
Shirasaka-san's really cute.

I don't want her to be taken by Endou.
In the end, I want Shirasaka-san.
I want to have Shirasaka-san.
That lips, that body, I…I…I!!

Unable to endure, I attacked Shirasaka-san!
…But…However…I…Aah…!

…When I woke up in the morning, I had a wet dream.
I had a wet dream with Shirasaka-san on it.

I feel so miserable that I want to die…Dammit!

★ April 25 Wednesday

4. Pure love x Sex ban!!

The morning is clearing up but my heart is clouded.
Before the morning homeroom. Everyone's noisy.
The girl's group is having the topic of the upcoming golden week.
Those good friends seems to have a plan on going out to play somewhere.
For me who entered the class at January, I don't have a friend to talk to.
I lived in a world where both television and radio is forbidden for three years so I don't know what's popular and neither I have interest in it. I don't have any hobby either. (My friend at middle school had been thrown in an all boys school at the heart of the mountain)
That's why…I have no clue on how to talk with people.
Especially with women, I always mess up…

…It's fine. After all, I don't have anyone who I want to get along with in this school.

「Morning, Yoshida-kun!」

Suddenly, someone called me!?
…Eh?…Shirasaka-san?!!!!
It was the first time someone told 「Good Morning」to me since I entered school in January!

「Thank you for yesterday. You helped me a lot 」
「Iiit's fine, uuuhhmm, itt's not like… 」

Shirasaka-san smiled after saying that and returned to her seat.
Her beautiful back line. Her swelling ass that can be seen even on top of her skirt.
…I held her body in my dream last night. That body!

「Hey! Don't ogle at women!」

Looking back, Endou had a hateful face.

「You know it don't you!?」

「…W-w-w-what are you talking about?」
「Someone like you should just back off!」
「……!」
「Looking at Yukino as if you're licking her…It's disgusting, you fucker」
I don't know how should I answer back to Endou.
Then, Endou looks down at me and made a vulgar laugh and pushes my shoulder coldly.

「Listen, don't ever come to my sight ever again」

Saying that, Endou went to Shirasaka-san's seat.
Shirasaka-san smiled at Endou.
…It feels much happier than when she smiled at me.
I don't want it…I don't want to hear it…And yet I listened to the conversation of the two.
The happy conversation of Shirasaka-san and Endou is as expected…the plans for the consecutive hollidays.

「…I have a day long break from the practice after the second half of the consecutive holidays. That's why let's go to somewhere near? If you want, let's stay over for the night?」
「Idiot. High school students can't just stop in everywhere. 」

Oh…This is reality…dammit!

The chime that tells the start of the homeroom began to ring.
The door on the platform side of the classroom opened.
Thinking that it was the homeroom teacher, the class becomes instantly quiet.
…However!
??…The one who entered was the female teacher that I met in the roof yesterday!
If I recall, it was Yuzuki Minaho sensei……?!!!

The tall female teacher with a thin black hair.
She's wearing a crimson suit yesterday but she's now wearing a black blouse and black tight skirt.
Her cold eyes is looking at us under the black edge glasses.
Yuzuki sensei stood before the teacher's desk…and spoke to the entire class.

「It maybe sudden but I would be in charge of this class from today…I'm Yuzuki Minaho. Best regards」

There's a voice of surprise「Eh□?」 leaked out from a girl.

「Uhm…What happened to Saegusa Sensei who was in charge until now?」

Yamamine-san who's the class rep, asked the female teacher.

「Saegusa-san moved to the second years. I exchanged class in charge with Saegusa sensei. Well, it"s a rare case but you don't mind, do you?」
「Well…we're on our first month just yet so there's no problem even if the teacher was suddenly replaced」

Kobayashi who's a frivolous person replied.

「Now then…now that I'm the homeroom teacher, I'll be wiping off everything that Saegusa has decided before. eerr…Who's the class rep?」

The female class rep is Yamemine-san and the male class rep is Aida.

「I see, you and you? Hmmm」

The female teacher evaluates the two of them deliberately.

「The girl, what's your name?」
「…Yamamine Megumi」

Yamamine-san became red from the strong glance.
She has a tall and slim figure.
She's a sports girl who's playing sprint at athletics sports club since middle school.
Black bob cut hair, along with her tanned skin…Her eyes are narrow.
Well, she's certainly a healthy and excellent beauty like Shirasaka-san.

「I guess I can let Yamamine-san stay as the class rep. The boy can

retire. I'll take another child」

Aida was dismissed from being a class rep suddenly by Yuzuki sensei's absurd state power…!!
However…Why is no one protesting against sensei?
Even if they want to…they can't.
The atmosphere of the cold female teacher wrapped in black clothes is something nobody can go against.
The dark eyes under the black edge glasses examined each and every man on the class.
That glance stopped in front of me.

「Oh…You're the one」
「M-m-m-m-m-m-me?」
「That's right…What? You're objecting?」

Yuzuki sensei's eyes shine mysteriously.

「N-n-n-n-n-n-no…I-I get it」

Kukuku, the female teacher laughed.
The whole classroom fell silent from the strange atmosphere.

「Now then…now that we have decided who's the new class rep…I want you all to hear something. Would that be fine?」

The eyes of the class are concentrated on the female teacher on the desk.

「What? It's not something so special. I just want to have a slight investigation. In this class, who already had their sexual experience? Could those who had their virginities taken raise their hand?!」

The whole class fell in whirlpool of confusion.

「…Please wait a moment!!!」

The source of voice is…Shirasaka-san!

「What? You have something to ask?」
「No…Why are you investigating such a thing!?!」

「Such a thing?…You mean about sexual experience?」
「That's right!!」
「I'm purely interested as the class teacher of first year high school」
「…Isn't that a breach of privacy?!」

The female teacher's mouth distorted.

「Privacy□…Oh, you can think of it like that」
「That's not something we can just tell Sensei…furthermore, raising your hand in front of everyone?」

Shirasaka's anger is fair.
Shirasaka-san who's glaring at Yuzuki-sensei…that dignified face is also beautiful.

「Oh…So that's how it is. In short, you're no longer a virgin?」

Shirasaka-san's face blushed from the words of the female teacher.

「…I-I'm a virgin!」
「You're lying. Aren't you interfering with my investigation because you're not a virgin anymore?」
「No!」
「Are you really a virgin?」
「…Yes」

To be honest…I got erect.
Shirasaka-san's confession…and the expression dyed in shame…!

「Hmm…Then lets leave it as that. Everyone must remember it, this child is still a virgin. For now」

The entire class don't know how to react.
Taking advantage of the confusion, the female teacher continued to speak.

「Well fine. There's no helping for those people who already had experienced sex, from now on…I forbid those students on my class to take any sexual act at all. Live a healthy high school student life. That's right, I'm also forbidding relationships[1] Relationships hinders your studies after all. If you have a lover right now, break up with

them…That's the basic rule in this class. It must be strictly observed. You get it?」

Yuzuki-sensei lightly declared.
The scene and the classroom became quiet.
The students in the class already became silent from the mysterious compelling force of the female teacher.
This Sensei is dangerous. A dangerous existence.
…Understanding that, the whole room was dominated.
And yet…Someone break down the quiet air!

「…I-I can't agree to that!」

Shirasaka-san spoke out loudly again.
…The tip of her finger is trembling.
Shirasaka-san…That's dangerous. I'm telling you!
Yuzuki-sensei who's on the platform turned around to Shirasaka-san slowly.

「You again?…What? You really want to have sex that much?」
「That's not it!!!!!」
「Then what?」
「…I think that love doesn't necessarily hinder our studies!」

Shirasaka-san confronted Yuzuki-sensei.
Just stop it already.

「…Fuu,, that's an interesting opinion. You're going out with someone right now?」
「Y-Yes…I do. 」

Stop this already.

「…He's here?」
「…Yes」

…Stop this.

「Who's this child's partner? Raise your hand… 」

Endou…Raised his hand timidly.

「M-Me」[2]

Dammit…Despair surrounds me[3]
Endou's trembling…his body shaking little by little.
The female teacher in black glasses is alternately looking at Shirasaka and Endou then said.

「I don't get it but…In short, you want to tell me that 『Love and Studies can go together』?」
「Y-Yes. That's right! It coexists! It's balanced!」

Shirasaka-san clearly told the teacher.

「…But when men and women take in a romantic relationship, they'd want to have sex don't they? Once they tasted sex, they'd be absorbed in it and do nothing but that. Especially men. At any rate, don't you think it's just a hindrance to studies?」
「…I don't think that relationships isn't tied to sex」

Shirasaka-san spun words slowly while feeling nervous.

「Oh, that's an interesting opinion. Are you saying love and sex are different?」

The female teacher smiles as if mocking Shirasaka-san.

「…Yes, that's right. Uhm, for example, it makes you trust the partner, thinking dearly of the partner, just being together, just holding hands happily together…that's the high-school-like love…I think」
「Oh, so you're okay with just holding hands?」
「…Yes」
「What abouto kiss?」
「…Eh?」
「The two of you already had kissed, didn't you?」

The eyes under the black edge glasses is attacking Shirasaka-san!

「Answer properly! You two have kissed already, didn't you?」
「…Y-Yes. We…h-have kissed but, w-we did, b-but,」
「If you already did then it's a normal providence to want to advance to the next. The distance from kiss to sexual intercourse is

just a moment… 」

The female teacher had a smile of victory.

「 …B-But, 」
「 Very well. I will accept the relationship of the two of you if you can promise that you won't kiss nor have sex from today until graduation. In exchange, if ever you had kissed or had sex, the two of you have to leave this school…how about it? 」

Shirasaka-san and Endou exchanged looks.

「 Kenji…we can, can't we? 」
「 …But Yukino, that's. 」
「 Kenji, we're at a crisis whether we can still go out or not. I love you Kenji. You do love me to don't you? You don't want us to break up, do you? 」
「 That's of course… 」
「 Then, isn't that fine? Just holding hands…holding hands…it's fine if it's just holding hands isn't it? 」

Shirasaka-san asks the female teacher.

「 …Right. I'll allow holding hands 」
「 Hey, say it. We can do it until graduation…don't we,, Kenji? 」
「 …Eerr 」
「 I don't want to break up with Kenji like this!! I love Kenji!! 」

Shirasaka-san's words breaks my heart.
My expectations are killed.

「 Y-Yeah…Got it. I get it, Yukino 」

Endou has a complicated look but he lost against Shirasaka-san's enthusiasm.

「 …Then, would you take a pledge? The two of you will accomplish your duties as high school students and keep a clean relationship, never kissing nor having sexual intercourse until you graduate. I'll be allowing your relationship with that as a condition…Good? 」

The dark eyes of the female teacher looks down at Shirasaka-san.

「…I-I swear」
「…You?」

Endou hesitated for a moment but he still prepared himself in the end…!

「…M-me too, I swear.」

It's a strange time. It was an ominous dreadful time.
No one understands why there were captured by the mysterious atmosphere of the female teacher.
Shirasaka-san and Endou spoke a logically and ethically unpermitted vow in front of the class somehow.
It was forcibly shown to me.

Shirasaka-san and Endou's…love oath.

I, I, I…

I want to break it.
That oath.
I want to trample it.
This love.

That's what I thought from the bottom of my heart.
「…That's the end of my class. Oh right, the male class rep, come to my table at breaktime」

The female teacher looks at me.
Oh right…I was the class rep.

「…I have to talk to you about something」

Yuzuki-sensei said that and made a suggestive smile.

「…Do you have something to talk about with me too don't you?」

…That's right.
…I

I was wrapped with wicked thoughts…

---

1. This is read as Ren'ai, which is the pure love on the title of the chapter and the novel but let's have it as relationship here because that's the appropriate read here ↩
2. Endou said "B-Boku desu", which is very far from his arrogant way of speaking ↩
3. Upupupupupupupupu ↩

5. Preparing a trap

After the class was done, Yuzuki-sensei leaves the room.
The class inside the room felt liberated from the tension instantly.
Our actual first our lesson is with our homeroom teacher, Saegusa-sensei's class(Chemistry) however, Saegusa-sensei was suddenly transferred to the second years and it turned to self-study.
The students talks freely when there's no teacher.

「Haaa, that was some really scary teacher」
「Or rather, that one is so unreasonable」
「If you think so then why did you not protest?!」
「What about you?」
「Can you even it against that black magician-like sensei?」
「Yup…she has a somewhat mysterious atmosphere」
「It's dark, or should I say cold?」
「Right right」

Everyone speaks out selfishly as soon as the person disappeared.

「But Yukino's amazing. She even opposed Sensei upfront」
「Right right, that was so cool」

They keep praising Shirasaka-san.

「That's not amazing at all. In reality, I was unbearably scared」
「But, you were resolved…and made free love win」
「Winning…I didn't do that」

Shirasaka-san has a troubled face.

「But you see, Other than Shirasaka-san…Kei-chan and Kikuchi-san has a boyfriend don't you? What would you do? Would you break up just like what the sensei told?」

The glamour girl wearing glasses, Hanamatsu asked such a thing.

「No way we would～!」

Answering was Tomisawa-san from the tennis club. If I recall

correctly, her boyfriend is the second year student from the men's tennis club.

「Even I won't do that. We can just go out secretly so Sensei won't find it out. He's my boyfriend since middle school…we're in the same high school but we're in a different class. There's no need for my boyfriend to be following Sensei if he's in the other class, does he?」

Kikuchi Seiko-san said.

「That's right. Even Yukino-chan can just let what Sensei said pass through your ears and go out in secret」

Hamamatsu-san told Shirasaka-san.
However…Shirasaka-san…~!

「I don't wan that, someone you love is important to you isn't he? I think it feels sick to be falsifying, hide, and doing it sneakily like you're fooling yourself」
「Uwaaa, Isn't Yukino-chan too fastidious when it comes to relationships?」
「Isn't that fine? High school life is only once in a lifetime so I don't want to have regrets!」

Shirasaka-san declares.
Her pure white heart is too dazzling for me.

「Then would Shirasaka-san keep her promise with that Sensei!?」
「Of course!」
「Eehh, That's no kiss nor ecchi until graduation you know!」
「…It can't be helped」
「You can just do it secretly! Kissing or ecchi」
「Right. There's no way Sensei could possibly check your virginity」

The girls laughed.

「Hohoon~…How do you check virginity?」
「Yup, how do oyou do that?」

Kobayashi and Omiya(Bathroom Duo) interrupted the girls when

they heard them their talk.

「Well, of course it's that, Kobayashi-kuun～ Opening the legs apart and confirming the girl's hymen visually…!」
「As expected, they're' going that far won't they, Omiya kuuun?!」

They should just shut up. Or rather, die already.

「…Boys over there, if you want to talk about something useless then don't let us ear it!」

Yamamine-san who's our class rep scolded Kobayashi.

「…Sure thing, class rep」
「But you see…This is in short, that? Shirasaka and her boyfriend, Endou would still be virgins till they graduate in high school?」

Gyahahaha, Kobayashi and Omiya laughed.

「Shut up!」

Endou kicks the leg of Kobayashi's desk.

「Uwaa, scaryy～」

Endou has a good physique because of baseball club…even Kobayashi would shut up from that.
Yamamine-san turns around and talks to Shirasaka-san.

「Hey…Yukino, are you really sure?」
「About what?」
「Making such a promise…」
「A promise is a promise. I'll follow it…Even Kenji will!」

Shirasaka-san looks at Endou with a smile.
Endou…gulped.

「Y…Yeah. Well」

Of course. For an Ikemen-kun, he can't have any answers.

「What's that, don't make such a face! We became a official class

recognized couple! The others hide it secretly but we can flirt on bright daylight.」

The class cheers.

…Shirasaka-san.
…Shirasaka Yukino.

「oooooh! They're even holding hands」

Omiya banters again.

「That's right, we can hold hands!… We can do it during the whole class?」
「…Idiot」

Endou is embarrassed from Shirasaka-san's words.
The happiness of the two.
The happy Shirasaka-san…

…I
…Dammit!

The first hour ended with such a feeling.
The morning class ended too…

I ate my lunch(Sweet roll and coffee milk) hastily and rose from my seat.
I was told by Yuzuki-sensei to come to her after the morning homeroom.
Going there…what is waiting for me there?

「…Yoshida-kun, you're going to Yuzuki-sensei?」

Yamamine-san, the class rep called out to me.

「…Y-Yes, I'm about to」
「You want me to go with you?」
「…Eh?」
「Look, I'm also a class rep too」
「No…Uhm, I-I'm the only one called」
「Don't you think it's scary to go to that teacher's room alone?」

「W-Well, I'm scared…B-But I'll go alone」
「Is that so…Then it's fine」
「Y-Yeah」
「It feels somewhat strange but, the two of us became the class rep so just ask for my advice when you need it」
「…Y-Yeah」

Yamamine-san has a healthy tanned skin. Her almond eyes bloom.
However…feeling I can't stay any longer, I went out of the room to escape.

While I was walking in the corridor, I thought that I should've told Yamamine-san「Thanks for worrying」
My thoughts are always slow.
There's no spark when there's the force to fire.
Then regretting it when noticed later…
That's how I usually am.
I'm always…

Yuzuki-sensei's desk isn't in the faculty office.
When I asked some teacher I know, Yuzuki-sensei is always holing up in the 「English Preparations Room」 at the far at the third floor for some reason.
I don't know why a 「Preparation room」is needed for an english class though.
Or rather, it's said that Yuzuki-sensei is the only teacher that's going in and out of that small room.
Right…she said.

「Come to my room during lunch break」…

In short, that's her room.

…*Knocking sfx*
I knocked the door

「…Whoo?」
「Y-Yoshida…First year class two…」
「…Come in!」

I entered the room following the voice.

I was surprised when I went inside.
There's an overflowing amount of monitors in the room.
The inside of the school is reflected at the screen.
Classroom, corridor, gymnasium, roof, grounds, clubrooms, backyard, even inside the toilet…!
The black haired female teacher is sitting on the reclining chair covered in leather, watching the monitors leisurely.
There's a crooked smile on her lips…

「U-u-u-uhm…What's this?!」
「Oh, surprised? I had installed 68 hidden cameras and microphones on this school. It's running around the clock…That said, there's no one here at night so it's meaningless but, you can observe the school with this. Of course, this can record too」

The female teacher pressed the keyboard at her hand.
The biggest monitor on the front showed a picture…and sound.

『What's that, don't make such a face! We became a official class recognized couple! The others hide it secretly but we can flirt on bright daylight』

The spectacle from the class earlier…the camera on top of the blackboard?
Shirasaka-san's blooming smile is caught in the screen clearly.

「…Shirasaka Yukino」

Yuzuki sensei mutters her name then slowly looks at me.

「…Do you want that child that much?」

I…

「However you don't know anything about her, do you?」

The female teacher looks at me with eyes treating me as a fool.

That's right…It's just as Sensei said.
I don't know anything about Shirasaka-san.
I'm only just watching her from a distance…we hardly talk at all.

「…Okay, have this」

Sensei gave me a file of A4 paper.

「…W-What is it?」

The devil smiled.

「Shirasaka Yukino's filed 『Person History』…Don't you want it?」

I…gulped down my saliva.
The file given to me.

The document with Shirasaka-san's photograph sticking on it.
If I have this then her picture will be mine.

「You're already greedy with just a picture…You're good. You're really stupid, pitiful…and pure」

I looked at the documents.
It's Shirasaka-san's birthday, address, contact number, even her phone address…it's a document submitted when entering the school.
Perhaps, it's also Shirasaka-san's handwriting.
The 『Personal Information』 that should be protected is at my hand…
Shirasaka-san's family structure…parents and a little sister.
Shirasaka-san has a little sister at middle school…!

「…Her father works as an office worker in a major advertising agency. Her mother is a lecturer for students at the culture center. They purchased a stand-alone-house three years ago in the city. Well, their family's social standing is rich. That's because her grandfather seems to be running a trading firm at Kobe」

Shirasaka-san…is a daughter of such a house.

「She's at a all-girl's school during middle school. That school has a high school department and yet why did she enter our high school specially…Do you know why?」
「…I-I don't」

There's no way I would.

「She was at basketball club at middle school. She was quite a promising player. She's even the club prez…but she ran into trouble at the last tournament at her third year
「…Trouble?」
「A day before the district tournament, her grandfather fell and was on critical condition. Thus, she went out to Kobe」
「…She didn't make it in the game?」
「That's right. Then her grandfather died. And, the game was a crushing defeat. She's the scorer for the team so…she seems to be trusted highly as the club prez too. Then the team went to the tournament without her」

The female teacher talks about her misfortune happily…

「Then, she feels sorry for her team…Hahaha. She stopped playing basketball with that reason. She even purposely chose a different high school. She decided to not go to club activities anymore!!」

That's why Shirasaka-san didn't enter any clubs.

「But…That's something inevitable, isn't it? It's not Shirasaka-san's fault at all. She didn't do anything wrong!!」
「…That's right, she didn't do anything wrong. She's not at fault at all. And yet she's an idiot girl who thinks that she's responsible for it…! She's really a detestable woman…She's enduring to satisfy everything for herself but she can't!」

That's Shirasaka-san?

「…She's an egoist. She wants to be always pure white. 『Gentle to everyone and always right』 is what she wants to be…That's why she casts away when she's dirtied. She stopped going to club for many years to protect her own virtual image of herself in her mind. She even changed schools. That child will never understand how to be dirty as long as she lives. A boring, cute girl…that's how she is」

I…don't know how should I answer.
The Shirasaka-san in my memory.
The always smiling Shirasaka-san.

The Shirasaka-san that's kind to everyone.
The Shirasaka-san everyone relies on…

That's…all just a false figure to patch herself?

「…She's really a suitable woman for you」

I was confused from Yuzuki-sensei's words.

…Eh?!
Shirasaka-san and me?

「…Isn't it? You're dragging her to the dark side. While you're completely exposed, she skillfully hides it inside…however that's the only difference. The essence doesn't change」

The eyes under the black glasses shines.

「…The two of you are really perfect for each other. I want to see the two of you intertwine. Hating each other, cursing, and loving it, intertwining while not agreeing on the hell in this world」

Intertwined hell with Me and Shiraska-san?

「…That's right. There's no way the two of you will have a happy relationship. You do know that don't you?」

…That's right.
Shirasaka-san and I will never be happy with each other, will never love each other.

「…However, if you're ready to hate each other, you will be able to intertwine with her. Rather than that, you can never enter her life with that means」

Right now…I'm nothing for her.
Just a classmate.
Perhaps, she won't even remember me if the class changes and when she graduates.
I will never cross her life.

「…Then, what do you want to do?」

The devil forces me to choose…
The choice of falling to hell…

「I…」
「…What?」
「I want to intertwine with Shirasaka-san…I want to tie my existence to Shirasaka-san…」
「…Even if you get hated and cursed for the rest of your life?」
「I'm fine falling to hell…if that's the mean to have Shirasaka-san…!」

I…made a contract with a devil.
The female teacher laughed.

「…Very well, then I'll give that child's body to you. You'll never have her heart. However, you can do as you please with her body」

The female teacher turned her gaze to the monitor again.

「…Well then, let's set up a trap for that」

★ April 26 Thursday

6. Smoke and Blood

A playback video is projected on the monitor.
The numbers floating on the corner of the screen that the video is 23 hours ago.
The early summer sky on the roof of the high school building. The sunlight of the afternoon when the day is sinking. Past 4 o'clock…
It seems that the image is taken with a hidden camera.

A duo who's practicing from baseball club has come.
One is a fat man and the other is a tall man.
The fat one is Sugiyama and the tall one is Koizumi…Both of them are second year students.
They're second year but they're second string players…and in addition, a reserve of reserve.
It seems that they don't have the possibility to have the firepower like the others to be a regular.
The two of them doesn't notice the hidden camera at all.

The fat Sugiyama took a cigarette from his pocket.
The brand is Lucky Strike
Could it be that they're attracted to the word strike because they're baseball club members.
He took one out with his finger soiled with mud then he passed it to tall Koizumi.
The two second years of the baseball club are having cigarette at the same time.
Sugiyama used his fat fingers to light up the cheap oil lighter.
After his own cigarette lit up, he urged Koizumi with his eyes.
Koizumi bends his tall body and placed the cigarette tip on the flame…
The two of them breathed in and exhaled at the same time…
The tobacco smoke goes up on the rooftop…

Suddenly, a voice was heard from outside of the screen!

「Sugiyama-san and Koizumi-san, you were hiding here?」

Another silhouette appears into the screen.

That's Kenji Endou who's wearing baseball's practicewear.
Endou doesn't notice the camera either…

「…What the hell Endou?」

The fat Sugiyama mutters expressionlessly while exhaling smoke.

「Don't be like that! Coach is looking for you. Sugiyama-san and Koizumi-san had disappeared even though it's training. I've been ordered by the captain to look for the two of you…Or rather, it's bad time to smoke」
「…Tsk, shut up」 said Koizumi.
「…We sneaked out just to have a short rest for a while」

The two senpai were expressionlessly sucking the cigarette.
On the other side, Endou doesn't look like he has enough composure at all.

「Anyway, please hurry up and return to the ground immediately. It's dangerous. Coach is already on the verge of bursting」
「Is that so? Well fine. We'll return after we finish smoking this cigarette…right, Sugiyama?」
「Right, let's do that Koizumi」

The two breathed in and exhaled smoke again.
They're not seen rushing at all.
Rather, Endou is the only one who's come to call the two in hurry.

「No, you see senpai…please spare me already!!」
「…I told you to wait for us until we finish smoking」
「Isn't smoking dangerous?!!!!」
「Huh? You, why are you so frolic?」

With the two Senpai not shaken at all, Endou lost his temper.

「Please stop this already!! The district meet is already near. Isn't that obvious that it's dangerous for you two to take your time and smoke!? Do you even understand that!?」

Endou strongly denounces the two.

「…That's what Endou-chan said but, what to do Koizumi-chan?」

「…What to do, Sugiyama-chan?」

The two of them exhaled smoke.

「…In other words, Endou…you disagree with the two of us smoking?!」
「…In the first place, isn't it bad for a high school baseball player to smoke?」
「T-That's…not on that level of disagreement…If we're found out that we're smoking at this time, we would be leaving the summer meet. That won't just be the senpai but our whole school would be blacklisted, what would you do? You do know that the whole high school baseball is all in the hands of the upperclassmen!…Please. Stop smoking already!」
「Oh…Isn't that fine if we don't participate anymore?」
「Right, right…It might not be bad for us to take a rest from an official game for a year」

Endou desperately persuades them but the two second years just lightly wash it away.

「Please don't joke with me!! I'm seriously saying it!」

Endou finally presses the two senpai with a serious face.
…However

「…Hey Endou. You're opposing a senior even though you're just a first year?」
「…Could it be that you're underestimating us?」

The fat and tall man's attitude became threatening suddenly.

「Uhm…That's not it, I'm just thinking about the team」
「Hmm, well, of course you will be. Even though you're a first year, it's possible for you to get off the bench and become a regular」
「However , we can't participate the game if we're kicked」
「We're going to support you from the audience instead of the bench」
「We're truant and we don't need to be there so at least let us off when we skip practice and smoke」
「Really really, seriously」

「No, but, that…I'm sorry if my attitude seem arrogant. Forgive me. But please. Please stop smoking. It's because like this」

Saying that, Endou takes of his had and bows in front of the two people deeply.

「…Hey, Endou」
「Yes?」

The fat Sugiyama called him out and Endou raised his face.

「You're really pampered even though you're just a first year, you don't know a think on how to respect your seniors」
「…Yes?」
「He's really no good」

The tall Koizumi had an amazed expression and threw his cigarette on Endou's feet.
The cigarette hits the floor and made a spark.

「T-Thank you very much!」

Endou seems to have misunderstood that 『Koizumi abandoned smoking』

「…That's not it idiot.」

Koizumi received a new cigarette from Sugiyama and lit it up.

「…Then, should I take my second too?」

Sugiyama lit up his second cigarette too.
Endou instinctively looked at the two people with strong hatred.

「…Look, it's that kind of eyes.」
「…Eyes that look at people like a fool, not thinking that it's his seniour」
「…First years with talent are so different」
「…Seriously」

The two of them exhaled smoke again

「How can I stop the two of you from smoking?」

Endou asks the two people calmly

「…Say something Sugiyama-chan」
「…The voice is too small that I didn't hear it Koizumi-chan」
「…He asked how to make us『Stop smoking』」
「…He doesn't have a brain does he?」
「…It might be hindered by his big pride?」
「…Even earlier, he bowed his head just for a bit and 『Like this?』he asked」
「…He doesn't even have the resolve to dogeza does he?」
「…Probably none. He's a first year overflowing with talent that's aiming to become a regular after all」

The fat and tall man laughed while puffing smoke out.[

「Should I just kneel on the ground?…」

Endou's voice is shaking
The two said 「Dogeza」but it seems that there's strong anger felt from the two.

「…It's a problem if you don't understand unless you're told to」
「…Well, isn't that fine if you just at least kneel? I don't know whether we would stop smoking though.」
「…He surely won't, his pride is too high after all」
「…Right, he's a bit of narcissist after all」
「…He even had a cute girlfriend recently」
「…well, ikemen riajuu will never kneel on the ground of course」

Everyone knows what will happen to a guy like Endou after all of this.

「Okay! I'll dogeza」

He got on all fours then placed his hand on the floor.

「I beg the two of you! Please stop smoking!!!」

Rubbing his forehead on the ground, Endou begs the two…!
At that time…!

I opened the iron door of the rooftop and jumped out!
I'm holding a digital camera on the ground.
Then I took the photograph of what's going on!!
Click Click Click Click Click Click Click Click…!
The baseball club seniors are smoking on the roof…!
And Endou kneeling in front of the two of them…!
I recorded the image in my camera…!!
Endou who noticed me was taken aback…!!
He had a foolish look of surprise in his face…!

「Aryayaya, I came to the roof by coincidence and I saw something unbelievable!!」

I murmured some foolish lines from something like Cagliostro's castle.
I feel ashamed from my miserable acting when I saw the recording.

「Yoshidaaaa, fuckeeer!」

Endou who confirmed it was me stood up!

「…Endou, destroy his camera!!」
「Y-Yes!!!」

Endou who has his blood completely gone up to his head obeyed Sugiyama's instruction from the series of events.
He jumped to me and take the digital camera from my hand!!
Then, he threw it to the ground with all of his strength!!
The camera was squashed and breaks!!

「…Endou…Shut him up so he won't talk!」
「…Anyway, hit him twice or thrice!!」
「Okay!!」

Endou who's already on his limit hits me reflexively!!
One! Two! Three hits…!!

It's hard to watch myself being beaten in the video…!
The pain from 23 hours ago came back…!
The taste of blood spreads in my mouth…
I was lying down on the rooftop grounds.

Then Endou bends over and grabs my collar to raise me!!
Several buttons on my uniform popped and flewl…!!

「Hey Yoshida!! Don't even think of talking about this!! If you do, I'll kill you!!」

Endou's face isn't normal already.
He's helplessly excited already.

「…This…what "this"?…」

The image of me yesterday asks Endou while bleeding at the mouth.

「…The smoking? You breaking my camera? Beating me up?…Or」

I'm looking at Endou filled with scorn while speaking.

「…That you kneeled on the floor?」
「Fuckeeer…!!」

Endu hit me once again.
One! Two! Three hits…!
Endou's anger isn't calming down!!
Four! Five! Six hits…!!

……The video stops suddenly.
The black haired female teacher…Yuzuki sensei stopped the video.
The teacher smiles and turned to the two students who are watching the video.

The first one is of course me. My head is rolled on bandage and plasters are pasted on my face.
And the other one is…Shirasaka Yukino.

She completely lost blood from seeing the video of her own boyfriend's violence.

◇ Yukino Rape -Arc□I

7. Witch's contract.

Let's turn back time for a bit.

Student counseling room after school.
Shirasaka-san was called by Yuzuki-sensei after the homeroom and was brought here, then she was shown the video of yesterday's incident.
I was in Yuzuki-sensei's 『Preparation Room』 since this morning…I skipped today's classes.
There's one reason.
To shock Shirasaka-san.
We can't show my swelling face plastered and bandaged beforehand…
Actually, Shirasaka-san was surprised to see me waiting in the student counselling room .

「…What's wrong, Yoshida-kun!?」

I didn't answer. I'm just looking down…
Shirasaka-san will be driven into a trap now…it would go wrong if I speak poorly.
I thought of leaving everything to Yuzuki-sensei.

「He got caught up in a small trouble you see…This is why he was absent from the class today. Well, it's related to you though…」

Sensei had a suggestive smile.

「Uhm…What do you mean? What's my relation to Yoshida-kun's injury?」

Shirasaka-san's face became clouded.

「…I don't think you're the one who did this violence to him. Shirasaka-san, did you talk to Endou-kun today?」
「Yes? Kenji…Endou-kun? Uhm, we're in the same class so we talked」

She's puzzled as the Endou's name who's her classmate and lover is

mentioned.

「…How was he? Did you feel something strange in his actions?」
「Err…I'm worried because he's not energetic but…Uhm, Is Kenji somehow related to Yoshida-kun's injuries?」

The female teacher didn't answer Shirasaka but instead took a piece of disk in silence and inserted it to a laptop.

「…Shirasaka-san. Do you know that there're surveillance cameras installed in some places in this school?」
「…No」
「…It has become dangerous lately. Therefore we installed surveillance cameras on locations where the school eyes can't reach and delinquency seems to occur. One of the important point to monitor is the roof of the school building」

The teacher in black hair and glasses say 『It's normal for teachers to observe the students』 justifying the existence of the surveillance cameras.

「…Then, what you're going to see is the recorded video from yesterday after school」
「Why do I have to see this…?」

She's feeling a bad premonition.
Shirasaka-san throws her doubt to the teacher.

「…Well, you'll understand when you see it」

The teacher clicked the play button with her thin fingers…
…And.
Shirasaka-san looks pale after the video stops.
The female teacher's lips is grinning.

「…Then you see, here's his medical certificate. His bruise and scratch would take a month for a complete recovery. Oh, his treatment was made by an acquaintance doctor. It would be a big problem if the school infirmary's doctor would take a look at him」

Yesterday, a voice from the school speakers suddenly called out while Endou was beating me up.

「Students on the rooftop , leave immediately! That's a restricted area!」

Yuzuki-sensei's voice was heard from the speaker.
The second year baseball club member and Endou was surprised and left the roof in a hurry.

「Listen here, don't even talk about this to anyone…!」

He left with such a bad line…
Afterwards, I dragged my aching body down the rooftop to a floor below and Yuzuki sensei smilingly meet me.
Then I was taken to a medical practitioner in the town by a car.
Of course, I don't care about my body.
We got a medical certificate from the doctor to obtain an evidence of the clear violence…

「…Now then, your lover did something very grand again. Even the camera he threw on the floor to destroy apparently costs five to sixty thousand yen」

The remains of the camera was put ona plastic bag on top of Yuzuki-sensei's table.
My digital camera was broken…Well, it actually costs 30k from a mass market.

「… Should we add the smoking of the two second years, Endou-kun's damage to properties and physical injuries and grave threat against Yoshida-kun. All of them would become trouble if revealed」

Yuzuki-sensei's voice is light. She's being lighthearted.

「Kenji…I'm calling Endou-kun here. I'll have him apologize to Yoshida-kun. I'll apologize too. . I'll compensate for the camera too. Including the expense on the doctor…」

Sensei hit the table with her fist lightly.
Shirasaka-san was surprised and interrupted speaking…

「…We're not here about that」

The eyes under the black glasses of the female teacher glitter suspiciously…

「Then…Uhm…What is it?」

Shirasaka-san is finally cornered.

「…Let me confirm this first. There's no other people from this school who knows this event from yesterday except for the people concerned, you and I. I haven't reported this matter to anyone yet」
「…Nobody knows yet?」
「…That's right. The principal and the other teachers. Even Yoshida-kun's guardian doesn't know it」

That's right…Even my parents doesn't know about my injury.

「…Now then, what should I do next?」
「S-Sensei?」
「…Let's see. First, should we have the principal take a look at it? Or is it better to let all of the staff take a look at it? Should I let the board of education learn about this? What was it again…Oh right, was it National High School Baseball organization? Should I tell them?」

There's beads of sweat on Shirasaka-san's forehead…

「I'd be troubled if you do…If you do that, the baseball club won't be able to participate anymore」

Yuzuki-sensei gradually torments the weak Shirasaka-san…

「…It seems so. That's regrettable. It would be a problem for the baseball club members when it happens. I wonder if they would be punished by forbidding them on foreign games for one year? Would they be able to endure if if they can't participate in a match after training for a year? It's also pitiful for the third years who will have their last tournament.」

Oh…The devil can make this kind of smile…

「I'm sure everyone would bear grudge against Endou-kun…They won't forgive him for their entire life. Hated and loathed, would

Endou-kun be able to enter school in that state? At least he would be leaving the baseball club」

Shirasaka-san's heart is being crushed by the pressure…

「…Could you keep it a secret?」
「What? I can't hear you」
「…Kenji stakes his life in baseball! Please don't take baseball away from Kenji!」
「It's inevitable isn't it?」

The cold eyes under the glasses presses Shirasaka-san…!

「That might be true…But think about the members of the baseball club who practiced for the match this whole time. For them to be refused to make an appearance…!」
「…Those kind of things!!」

I looked at Shirasaka-san's face instinctively!
Shirasaka-san noticed my glance too…!
Shirasaka-san is looking at me…
My face that's swelled up and plastered with bandage…!!

「…I-I'm sorry. Yoshida-kun. I don't mean that」

…Then, what do you mean by that?!
The female teacher laughed as she look at Shirasaka-san and my state.

「…Sensei!?」

Shirasaka-san who's at loss calls out Sensei.

「Shirasaka-san…Are you misunderstanding something?」
「…Eh?」
「You see, I'm a teacher. I have a duty to report all of the events at the school. To the principal, the board of education…and even the police」

A chill runs through Shirasaka-san's spine…!

「Yoshida-kun, what would you do? Would you file a criminal

case? We have video as evidence and a certificate from the doctor too, I can also testify. I know a good lawyer. If you want, we can go to the police station to make a complaint report now」

Shirasaka-san looks at me with frightened eyes.

「It would be a big trouble for Endou-kun isn't it? He'd be prosecuted from an injury event and he won't be able to come to school for a while」
「T-That's…Please stop it. I beg you, please forgive Kenji, Endou-kun!!」

Shirasaka-san lowers her head to Sensei.

「…Hmmm. In short, You don't care about Yoshida-kun? You're quite a cold child. He was beaten down and injured, his important camera was destroyed, he's crying himself from those experience you know」
「T-That's not it!」
「Isn't that what it means with what you're saying?!」

The next moment, Shirasaka-san stood from her seat and kneeled on the student counselling room's floor!
Shirasaka-san is kneeling in front of me and Sensei!!

「…Please!!」

Shirasaka-san places her forehead to the ground…
Shirasaka-san formed a small curl.
Her blouse makes an opening and the line of her spine is drawn bow-shaped.
The body of Shirasaka-san who's placing her hand on the floor somehow feels smaller than I see it usually.
I felt that her size is convenient that I can carry her with both of my arms.

「Well, you're imitating your lover now? You're a couple that likes to kneel on the ground…」

Sensei looks at Shirasaka-san while having a dark smile.

「You do know it, right? If you do that, your request becomes a

『Demand Act』 for us」

Shirasaka-san opened her mouth while still bowing.

「I'll do anything. If it's money, I don't care how many years it take, I would pay」
「Oh, this time you're using 『Bribe』? You're such an unexpected criminal mind」

I was shocked.
Such words can come out of Shirasaka-san's mouth…!
Shirasaka-san's pure white heart that's overflowing with sense of justice.
She's going to dirty her heart little by little just to protect Endou.

「…Then, how can I make you overlook Endou-kun?!」

Shirasaka-san raised her voice and begs Yuzuki-sensei…!
The devil teacher didn't miss the opening of her heart.

「…Surrender yourself to me for a night!」

Shirasaka-san had a 「???」 face
She doesn't get what the female teacher just said…!
Yuzuki-sensei moistened her lip with her red tongue.
She's enjoying it…The devil is enjoying this moment!

「Shirasaka-san…You see, I'm a lesbian」

Shirasaka-san's body trembled…!

「You see, I want to tease cute girls like you to my heart's content at least once. Don't worry, I won't do anything cruel. I'm only going to hug and kiss you all night long. Oh, I also want to see you naked…」

The female teacher's eyes is licking Shirasaka-san's body like a snake.

「W-What are you saying, Sensei?」

Shirasaka-san sat down on the floor.

She's having an「I can't believe it」expression…!

「You said it a while ago didn't you? 『I'll do anything』…What now? Was that just an ad hoc random speech?」
「Because…Sensei…It's not like Sensei? Furthermore, you're a woman…」
「You see…Isn't it fine for a female teacher to have carnal desires to her schoolgirls? Then…What would you do? Would you endure for a night or not?」

At that moment, Shirasaka-san's eyes changed from surprise to anger!
Aggressiveness to protect oneself…
This is Shirasaka Yukino…Her true nature…

「…I'll tell other teachers! My parents and the police!! Isn't sensei just doing『Sexual Compulsion』!!」

However…Her feelings of anger didn't reach the black teacher.

「Right. I'm 『Forcing』you. I'm『blackmailing』you. It seems that you finally understood it…I'm sexually harassing you with all of my power. I want to delight myself with your youthful body…」
「N-No way, I!!!」

It might be a psychological, reflex reaction.
Shirasaka-san refused immediately.

「Oh? That's unfortunate. Then, it can't be helped. I'll report Endou-kun to the school and police. Who'd thought that you're going to abandon Endou-kun that easily…」

Happily, Yuzuki-sensei looks down at Shirasaka-san gladly.

「…S-Sensei's unfair!!」
「Right, I"m unfair. But I intended to take the risk to my shoulders when I made my 『Proposal』you know」
「…Risk?」
「Isn't it? You can come out of this room right now and make a complain about me in the staff room. No, you don't even need to go out of this room, you can just inform the police with your phone if

you want to. I won't stop you. If you do, I would be dismissed from this school. It's possible that I might appear in the local newspaper」
「…S-Sensei」

Shirasaka-san hesitated for a moment but…She placed her hand inside her pocket and reaches for her phone.

「…I'm sure that it would be a big news. A female high school teacher forcibly sexually harassed a female student and the reason is the the female student's lover who's a member of the baseball club. It would surely be a big scandal that it might be covered by a daytime variety show…!」
「……!!」

That's right…Endou and the baseball club's ruin can't be overturned whatever she does.
Shirasaka-san's fate is already checkmated.
Yuzuki-sensei leaked a small sigh.

「Shirasaka-san…You seem to be an honor student but it seems that you're not good at thinking. You only have two choices left since long ago」

Beads of sweat flows from Shirasaka-san's forehead.
Her beautiful spotless skin. It's smooth.

「Making love with me for a night to cover up Endou-kun's case… Or abandone Endou-kun and silently watch him perish. Chose whatever you want to happen…!」

Shirasaka-san who's at loss looked at my face.
「…Help me, Yoshida-kun」 is written on her expression.

「It's useless to expect anything from him…You can't go against me so why do you think you can ask help from him? He's under my control already. In the first pace, he's the victim here. There's no way he"d want to help if he's feeling hatred for Endou-kun you know?」

…I

I can't endure Shirasaka-san's eyes and turned away from her…

「…Yoshida-kun」

The dark despair surrounds Shirasaka-san…

「Don't worry. I won't do something that hard. Just as what I told you a while ago, I'll only look at your naked body, give you hugs and kisses. I won't damage your virginity. I promise you that. You'll be able to come back to your house with your body uninjured. … Oh, I also want to take a souvenir picture. But, it's okay. I don't have a hobby of showing it to someone. I only want it to be mine…」

Before long…Shirasaka-san slowly looked up at Yuzuki-sensei.

「…You're going to keep your promise?」
「Covering up this event or protecting your virginity?」
「…Both」
「Of course, I can promise you that…!」

That's a lie.
The female teacher is lying.
I know that.
However…I just stayed silent…!

「Then…okay. I'll do as Sensei says」
「Oh?…You're okay with it?」
「In exchange, please be silent about Kenji」

The witch laughed…
Shirasaka-san…Endou…Me.

「Of course I will. His rampage…The smoking of the baseball club members…Once I have embraced you…I'll keep everything a secret」

All of us were taken by the witch.
We surrendered to the witch's contract…!!!

8. The spider web's mansion.

「…Then, Shirasaka-san. Could you send 『I'm going to stay at Yamamine-san's house today so I can't go home』 to your little sister?」

The female teacher said it lightly.

「…Eh?」

Shirasaka-san looks at Yuzuki-sensei with surprise.

「…Your mother is an adviser of the cuisine researcher on culture center at Osaka on Friday and Saturday so she won't be home for tonight won't she? Also, your father is on a three week overseas business trip at Australia so your sister should be the only one at home」
「Why…Do you know it?」

The female teacher answered Shirasaka-san's question lightly.

「Why do I know?…I'm your homeroom teacher. I've seen the household questionnaire you've answered. It's delivered to the school so you shouldn't be writting so much individual information in detail. The teachers in this world aren't all good teachers」

That's right…There's this kind of wicked teacher too.
Of course there's no way she would know that much detail with just the household questionnaire that was submitted to the school.
The demon with a face of a teacher investigated about Shirasaka-san with other methods.
…A thorough one.

「But…Why stopping at Yamamine-san's house?」

That's right…why 『Yamamine-san』?

「Oh? Isn't Yamamine Megumi-san your relative?」

…Relative? A distant relative?

「I've…never wrote those in my slip. I even didn't tell anyone in the class」

Certainly…Ever since the entrance ceremony, I never saw Shirasaka-san and Yamamine-san getting along intimately.
The two of them belong to different girl group…
No…Speaking of which, Yamamine-san called Shirasaka-san 「Yukino」. I thought that there was something strange with that…

「…That's right, you didn't write anything about her. but, Yamamine-san firmly wrote on her slip that…『Shirasaka Yukino-san is my relative』 That's why I asked her directly…!」

Sensei's smiling
…Oh is that so?
But…Why is Shirasaka-san hiding such a thing?

「…Anyway, just message your little sister already. You're going to be with me till morning at any rate. You have to remember your promise」
「…Okay」

Did she give up?…Shirasaka-san took her phone with her trembling hands and began her mail.

「…Oh right, It's your promise but should we be a bit more specific? Let's see…From now on until seven in the morning. You will submit yourself to me until seven in the morning tomorrow. Would that be fine? It's okay, I'll be sending you by car so you'll be in time for tomorrow's class」

The tip of her finger striking the keys of her phone stops.

「Shirasaka-san…You're the type of girl that keeps her promise once you said it, aren't you?」

The cruel glance of the female teacher is piercing Shirasaka-san. Shirasaka-san began to push the keys with her white fingers once again to escape that glance…

「…Yes, that is right」
「Well, in your case, you have to defend something rather than

keeping your promise?…That's trouble, you have that kind of character」
「…It's not that agonizing」

Shirasaka-san's voice sounds aggressive.

「Fufu…That's because I want you to promise. You will do everything I say until seven in the morning tomorrow」

Shirasaka-san's big eyes glares at the female teacher.

「…Understood, I promise. 7 AM」

Her face has anger, hatred mixed with disgrace.
The female teacher looks at her expression and smiled seeming satisfied.

「Then, should we go? Get yourself ready too, Yoshida-kun…」

Shirasaka-san had a 「Eh?」 voice leaking out of her when she heard the teacher.

「…Yoshida-kun too?」
「That's right. Oh? I haven't said it yet?」

The female teacher said it barefaced.

「You have to bribe him to secrecy too don't you? Isn't that fine? Show him how you entangle with me…」
「N…No way!」

Of course she don't want that.
Letting a man she doesn't like see her lesbian act with the teacher…
The demon has a 「Oh, that's trouble」 face and talked foolishly.

「You do understand that you『have to become a complicity for him』」
「…Well, I do, but」
「He's the key man in this situation you know? He was the one who took violence from Endou-kun. He's the one injured here…so Yoshida-kun has the right to appeal. You do know that you have to offer something in collateral so he can be silenced, don't you?」

Shirasaka-san looks at me.
Her moistened eyes looks like it's about to cry any moment
I…did nothing but look down.

「Isn't that fine? Show it to him. Don't mind showing that much skin. He's just going to watch…I will be the only one who will be playing with your body. He'll never raise his hand. Isn't that just fine?」

The female teacher is making a thoughtless proposal as if she's just inviting someone on a child's play.

「…Furthermore, Yoshida-kun might not even be interested in Shirasaka-san's naked body at all」

She said while laughing.
An unpleasant laughter…It was an unpleasant laughter as of making a person a fool.

「Then…What would you do Shirasaka-san? Do you really hate going together with Yoshida-kun? Are you really going to turn over after this far? Are you going to abandon Endou-kun and the baseball club in the end?」

Being told up to there…Shirasaka-san answered quietly.

「Understood…I'll do everything sensei says」

That's right…Shirasaka-san has no other choice…
…For Endou's sake＝.

「Oh, is that so? Then, you have to ask Yoshida-kun properly…」
「…Eh?」
「It's important. You have to properly tell him don't you? Beg that『Please don't say anything about what Endou-kun did』and to promise 『In exchange what can I offer you?』」

The devil seems to be thoroughly teasing Shirasaka-san…
To dirty her white heart to darkness…
Shirasaka-san…looked at me and turned hard.

「Hey, you're an honor student aren't you?…You have to tell him

the words properly…Yoshida-kun!」
「Y-Yes!」

I was shocked from the sudden call of the teacher.

「You have to look at Shirasaka-san's eyes properly…The two of you, look eyes to eyes」

Shirasaka-san looks at my eye. I also looked at Shirasaka-san's eye too.
It's a stiff and confused eye…I'm sure that I have the same eye.

「Hey…Hurry up!」

Shirasaka-san's mouth finally began to move from the teacher's instruction…

「…Y-Yoshida-kun」
「…W-What?」
「…Please don't tell anyone what Endou-kun did to you, please…in exchange I…」

Tears collect on her big eyes.
It was beautiful grain of crystal.

「I…I'll show you my naked body…I'll show you myself being embraced by Yuzuki-sensei…」

Tears collected in her eyes fell down.
It flows down the beautiful smooth cheeks of Shirasaka-san.
The grain of tear fell bursts on the floor…!
At that moment…She burst into tears.…!

◇　◇　◇

「Don't go crying forever…Let's go already…!」

The female teacher who left Shirasaka-san crying for around three minutes said that.
It was a heavy and cold order.

「…Yes」

Shirasaka-san took out a handkerchief form her pocket and wiped her tears…
I thought from the bottom of my heart that I wanted that handkerchief.

Three people went out of the 『Student Counselling Room』
The teacher, Yuzuki-sensei, Shirasaka-san in the middle and lastly, me.
Shirasaka-san went to the classroom and took her bag.
School Building after class…It's already close to five in the evening.
We didn't meet anyone in the hallway.

She took the bag, and back to the hallway…
Shirasaka-san walking while hanging her head and I look at her back…
The white lamb is going to the slaughterhouse now…

(ah…Shirasaka-san is bit shorter than me)

That's the first time I noticed it…

We got off the first floor and towards the shoebox on the entrance…
The track and field team is practicing at the grounds outside the window,
I saw Yamamine-san…
Yamamine-san who's wearing shorts from the track and field club is doing some stretching with the other members.
Her body build is beautifully balanced like a sports girl. Should I say it's the frame?
Her body is overall slim without too much meat and her light brown skin is shining.
Her healthy beauty stood out remarkable among the members of the track and field club.
So she's Shirasaka-san's relative?…
They don't look like much.
Yamamine-san's a beauty however…if Shirasaka-san is a goddess of flower beauty, Yamamine-san would be a goddess of the moon.
Their trend of beauty is different.
Fuu, Yamamine-san's glance turned to us…?!

(…She noticed us?)

She stopped stretching and Yamamine-san looks at us curiously.
…Well of course.
The three people walking along the corridor right now is arranged strangely.
Shirasaka-san is walking behind the black haired black-glasses cold blooded teacher.
And me dressed in bandage is walking behind Shirasaka-san.
However, I didn't show in the classroom today…
Looking dubious, Yamamine-san looks this way.
Still, she probably won't see Shirasaka-san's swollen from tears eyes that far.
A track and field senpai called out and she returned to her practice once again.

We changed shoes and waited outside the school building.
We went to the parking lot of the teaching staff of the school in the backyard.
Yuzuki-sensei's car is surprisingly a big minivan with seven passengers each for three rows.
This one picked me up when I went to the doctor yesterday.
However, the windowpane from the back and sides are pasted with Yakuza like mirror sheets so the people outside can't see what's inside.

「…Get in」

Being told by the teacher, Shirasaka-san and I sat on the second row.
Shirasaka-san hugs her bag closely and shrinks to the seat and sits down.
I sat down next to her but a bit far, I leaned my head on the window.
Yuzuki-sensei sat on the driver seat and asked something unexpected.

「…Hey, Shirasaka-san. Speaking of which, do you know Yoshida-kun's full name?」

What's with that now?

「…No」

Shirasaka-san answered in a small voice.
Well of course…as expected.
People like me, for Shirasaka-san is…

「…What about Yoshida-kun? Do you know Shirasaka-san's full name?」

I…answered.

「…Shirasaka…Yukino-san…!」

The female teacher burst into laughter
Sensei's voice echoes in the car.
The black teacher laughed…
I…my thoughts.

The car was started…and it moved.
Turning on the corner of the school…The baseball club's ground…

「Ah…Kenji」

Shirasaka-san sticks to the windowpane and watches the baseball club practice…
Endou's siding with the defense position and received a fungo from the coach.
He doesn't have the room to notice this car at all.

「Kenji…Kenji, save me…」

I heard Shirasaka-san's sorrowful voice.
That voice made me determined.

I will rape Shirasaka-san tonight.
I'll definitely make her body mine…!!!

9. Meal and excretion

Yuzuki-sensei's car stopped five minutes away from the school.
What's there is a big western house.
Behind the big iron gate is a three story mansion where the roofs and walls are all painted black…
The balcony with big pillars looks like the White House…No, rather it has an unpleasant feeling like a mansion where the master of a slave master of a straw farm in the US is living in.
However…the outer walls of that country would surely be painted in white but this one's painted in solid black entirely…
An old building…it's constructed at least before war.
When Sensei made her car light passing, the iron gate automatically opened.

「…It's my house」

Sensei mutters as she get off the car.
For Sensei to have this kind of big house…Seriously, what is she?

「…It's an old fashioned dirty house. I'd like to crush it a lot of times but a person in the house doesn't allow it」
「Err…C-Could it be that it's your family?」

Yuzuki-sensei snuffled at my question.

「…No. It's my butler」

B-Butler?![1]
The car stopped by the entrance…it stopped under the balcony where a carriage would arrive on the old days.
Then…I see, there's certainly an old butler…and a young maid is also waiting there.

「…Get off. Both of you」

Shirasaka-san and I went off the car from Sensei's orders.

「…Leave the bag in your car. We'll go to the school tomorrow anyway」

Being told so, I left my bag in the car.
However…Shirasaka-san get off with her bag.

「…Shirasaka-san, did you not hear me?」

Sensei's lips twitched.

「I did…But, I'd like to manage my own things myself…!」

Shirasaka-san glares at the female teacher.
Sensei exhaled and smiled.

「Right…You're that kind of child after all」

The butler and the maid turn up cheerfully at Yuzuki-sensei who got off the car.
The butler is a gray haired old man close to seventy. Black butler clothes.2 Black necktie on top of a white shirt. Rimmed glasses that seems to be old. He looks thin and his backbone is grown for his age.
The maid is…around twenty years old I guess? She's a beauty with big tits…as anyone can see, it's clear that she has big brreasts. However, her waist is firmly tight. Her ass is doban3 too A terribly glamorous onee-san figure.
Her hair has a trace of light brown color but…that color shines in the white colored maid cap. As expected, black maid clothes and white apron.

「Katsuko…take the car to the back」

Yuzuki-sensei talked to the maid and handed over the keys.

「…Certainly, ojou-sama」

The maid called Katsuko took the key and went to the driver's seat. She's likely to put the car to the parking lot.

「Morishita…Could you prepare a meal?」

Sensei asked the butler.

「Yes. I'll prepare meal for three people as Ojou-sama requests」

The female teacher turned around to me and Shirasaka-san.

「Now then, should we have dinner first? I'm quite hungry…!」
◇　◇　◇

The interior of the mansion was wrapped in an old-fashioned grand atmosphere.
However…The walls are black. The floor is black. The curtain's are white as expected though.
Yup…white things are sometimes mixed to black background.
For example the interior…the desk…the clock
This house has no other colors than black and white…4

It feels strange to enter someone else's home without taking off our shoes.
We were lead to the dining room.
A dining room is an exclusive room for eating dinner. That's the original meaning. I've read it some book.
By the way, breakfast is eaten at the morning room.
Where do they eat lunch then?

Yuzuki-sensei's dining room has chairs lined up on a big desk.
The number of chairs is three…In short, seats for only Sensei, Shirasaka-san and me.
Sensei's taking the head's seat…the so called 『Birthday Seat』
Shirasaka-san and I who's the guest are seated facing each other…
Though the three sides of the wall are painted black, only the front side of Sensei's seat is white.
Is there any meaning on that?
Also…There's a white piano put in this room.

「…Uhm, I'm not that hungry」

Shirasaka-san said and the female teacher was,

「What's wrong? Feeling nervous?…It's fine so just eat. The night ahead is still long」

She answered.
Shirasaka-san glared at Sensei but the teacher just laughed…
The butler and the maid from a while ago had brought the dish4

Eh…could this be?

「…at least eat some soup and sandwich」

No…That's not just soup. It's a bouillon soup, a genuine French cuisine.
It seems to be boiled carefully for hours…the appetizing smell envelops the room.
The sandwich too, it looks like it came out from a first class restaurant it feels like a plate where the workmanship costs two thousand to three thousand yen…even the dough is already different in appearance.

「Come…Let's eat」

Shirasaka-san hesitated.
I take and ate one sandwich.

「…Delicious」

The taste of roast beef and fresh tomato spreads in my mouth.[5]
Hearing my mutter, Shirasaka-san picked up one sandwich too.
A bite sized amount entered her small mouth.
When she found that there's no problem with the taste, she began to eat ordinarily.
The soup too…it can't be called just delicious! It falls to my stomach smoothly.

The butler brings a small wine bottle and cut the seal in front of us.
He first poured into the female teacher's glass…
Next, Shirasaka-san's glass…

「Wait…liquor is quite」

When Shirasaka-san was about to decline the serving, the female teacher was

「You don't need to worry. This isn't wine. It's just an undiluted solution of a wine…an ordinary grape juice. It doesn't have alcohol. Furthermore, the first class winery sells only to selected customers, it's something that can't be normally obtained…」

She said while drinking a sip…

「…Oh, delicious」

Shirasaka-san looks at the glass with half-doubt.
The butler poured it in my glass so I drank it to test.
W-w-w-w-w-w-w-what…!!

「It's delicious…It's very…amazing, delicious!!」
「Isn't it? It won't do for me if it's not this…!」

The female teacher had her throat sounded and she drank the whole glass.
The butler goes to pour in immediately.
Shirasaka-san timidly tastes the glass too.
Then…she confirmed the taste with her tongue, and swallowed it…
Shirasaka-san's soft lips…

「What's wrong Yoshida-kun?…Is it really interesting to watch Shirasaka-san eat?」

The teacher said something unexpectedly.
Shirasaka-san was startled and looked towards me.
W-Was I staring too much.

「S-sorry」

I apologized to Shirasaka-san.
Shirasaka-san turned her eyes away from me silently.
Therefore…I make sure not to look towards Shirasaka-san too…

「Isn't that fine?…Take your time observing her. There's a theory where you can understand the interests of the person in sex by looking on how they eat…」

When Yuzuki-sensei said that…that made me increasingly conscious. I'm nervous.
Feeling helpless, I concentrated on my meal.
I pick up a sandwich, pour soup to my stomach…every time the glass becomes empty, the butler just pours in so I just jug in the juice.
Was it because I kept eating without any restraints that…Shirasaka-

san is eating normally without feeling nervous too? How many cupfuls I have drank already?…
It's really a delicious juice that the three people had already emptied several small bottles.

We kept eating silently for a while.
Yuzuki-sensei spoke up suddenly.

「…It's too quiet that it's not pleasant. Katsuko, play something」

The maid…Katsuko-san went to the piano.

「…What piece would you like?」

Katsuko-san sat down on the white piano and asked the head.

「Let's see…Ravel6 will do 『Jeux d'eau』…」
「…Certainly」

Katsuko-san played the piano…!
It's a splendid performance that must be a professional pianist!
Shirasaka-san is also surprised that she stopped eating her meal to listen to the performance…
We were completely overwhelmed…
Yuzuki-sensei, this mansion…the butler, and Katsuko-san…
Everything it brings out has an elegant atmosphere…
Overwhelmed…tricked…
I'm sure that this is also another one of Sensei's traps she set up…

When the piano piece has finished…Shirasaka-san called out Sensei.

「…Uhm…Yuzuki-sensei」

She's strangely fidgeting.

「Oh?…Is there something wrong Shirasaka-san?」

Sensei answers smilingly while holding a glass on one hand.

「…Where's the powder room7?」

Powder room…Oh, restroom?

Speaking of which, I might've taken too much juice and soup.

「Morishita…guide her」
「Yes…Ojou-sama」

Shirasaka-san was taken by the butler and went out of the room.
Sensei immediately faced towards me and…she displayed a devilish smile…

「Now then…Yoshida-kun, you can continue your observation」
「…W-what?」

I don't get what Sensei is talking about.

「Katsuko, prepare it」
「…Yes, Ojou-sama」

The maid flipped a switch on the wall…
The whole dining room becomes dim and a machine with a projector stored got off from the ceiling.
……Eeeeeh? What's this?
A huge image is projected on the only white wall-that was made a screen in the room
…That's!!
wait…Isn't this a restroom?!

「…Isn't it interesting?」

Sensei's grinning though…
T-This is a crime!!!

The image on the screen is split into four.
The image on the right is an image from the hidden camera on top of the restroom.
The middle upper part is a hidden camera buried under the toilet seat.
On the middle bottom, it seems a camera on the door. Perhaps it's a position that would reflect the face of the person excreting.
And the image on the left is certainly somewhere in the toilet…

「Recently the camera's are getting smaller…and their images are getting clearer」

Sensei says that but I'm already…
Then, the door in the bathroom screen opens…
Awawawawawaaaa, Shirasaka-san came inside…!!!8
Shirasaka-san closed the door.
She had a relieved expression when she entered a space where she can be alone.
Actually, she's being appreciated in such an extra large screen in another room…
「Shurushuru」a rustling sound…there's a hidden mic too.
Ooooh, P-Panties!…Shirasaka-san is taking off her pantiiiieeeees!!!
T-The camera on the toilet seat caught Shirasaka-san's panties!!!
Her panties today is white…pure whiteeeeeee!!!
Shirasaka-san placed her hands on her panties…then her ass came out!
White ass…perfectly round…T-This is Shirasaka-san's ass…!!!
It's bouncing…!
Shirasaka-san sat down on the toilet seat…Shirasaka-san's ass closed up to the camera on the toilet seat…ah, the moment she sat down, I think I saw something!! I think!!
Could it be that was…Her hole in her ass?…!

「…You're really interesting」
「Eh?」

I was startled with Sense's voice.

「You're…really getting into a child like Shirasaka Yukino, it's really interesting…and laughable. Do you really like that girl that much?」
「…I-I do!」

I answered honestly.

「Is that so?…Oh, look, it'll be even more amazing」

Being told so, I looked at the screen again…!
The image on the camera on the toilet seat turned completely black when Shirasaka-san's shadow entered.
Instead, the camera set on the toilet…!!
I might die from shock.
Shirasaka-san's crotch is reflected on the screen.

Yes, this is the crotch?…This is the slit?…Uhm, this is where pee appears, eeh.
Sorry…It's the first time I saw it in my life so I don't know how to express it.
It's plump like a peach…and yet, I can see the crack perfectly shut.
It's really beautiful. It's not crooked, it's not swerved.
No one has violated it yet…It's closed, a straight line.
The thin pubic hair too…I can see it.
T-There's some growing…As expected, even beauties like Shirasaka-san has some hair too…!

「…U, n」

The hidden microphone picks up Shirasaka-san's voice.
Shit…It's sounds so lewd.
Finally, the gap between her crack has water coming out…
Shirasaka-san…is peeiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiing!!
There's a sound of water moving rapidly as her pee spills.
She's letting it out right now…She's ejecting it…Shirasaka-saaaan!!!!!
The flowing pee is washing off the lens of the hidden camera!
Looking at the image of another camera, Shirasaka-san's expression while she's peeing is clearly projected…
Moistened eyes…Shirasaka-san has a somewhat melting expression in her eyes…It's so lewd.
Such a beautiful and pure girl, is peeiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiing!!
My crotch…is diamonds…!
What…my body's feeling hot…

「S-Sensei…C-could it be that you put something in our meal?」 9

Sensei's watching Shirasaka-san peeing happily while I ask her…

「…Of course. I did put something. Even if you put in a medicine, you won't be able to guess because of the thick taste like grape juice」
「B-But…E-even sensei drank it」
「Why do you think I purposely let out small bottles?…Since the second bottle, we split it to those with medicine and those that doesn't have it」

I-Is that so!?

「It's still not taking that much effect isn't it?…It would be amazing after another twenty minutes」
「…W-what would happen?」
「Well, just look forward to it…!」

Kukuku, the female teacher laughed.
E-Even if you tell me that.

「Don't worry about it…I only put in a small stimulant and aphrodisiac. In her case, it seems that she's going to pee before the aphrodisiac takes effect…but well, that happens once in a while. Especially on virgins…」

The female teacher said something that shocked me calmly.

「I don't want to use medicine as much as possible but…It won't it be troublesome if that place isn't at least wet, would it? For you and her…」

Shirasaka-san's genital is on the screen.
Shirasaka-san who finished peeing in the took some toilet paper.
The sound of dry toilet paper sounds.
Shirasaka-san's thin finger holding the paper wipes between her wet groin.
For a moment, her crack opened up…!!

……Aah!!!!!
There…my penis will go in there soon!
It's going in there…penetrates…deep…everything.

The dining room returned to it's original state before Shirasaka-san came back from the restroom.
Shirasaka-san who finished peeing and returned…is somewhat red.
Her eyes looks sleepy.
Is the drug starting to work?
She sat down in her seat and she spoke to Katsuko-san.

「Sorry…Can I drink a bit more of the juice earlier? I'm feeling somewhat thirsty…!」

1. C-Could he be named Sebas?! ↩
2. Kuroi Shitsuji ↩
3. Bursting explosion sound effect ↩
4. Are you sure you entered the right TV? ↩
5. Pure love x Insult Complex is a cooking manga ↩
6. Joseph Maurice Ravel ↩
7. Can also be read as restroom ↩
8. it sounds wrong ↩
9. How did he guess? No, seriously, I'm asking how he guessed it with just his erect dick and hot body ↩

10. Tension→Relief→Constraint

When the meal ended…Sensei called out the maid.

「Katsuko…is the room ready?」
「Yes, as you instructed」

Sensei had a satisfied smile from the maid's answer.

「Then, should we go?…Morishita, you're dismissed. You can rest now」

The butler bowed, and left.

「…Shirasaka-sama, Yoshida-sama, here please」

The maid Katuko-san knows our name…!
We went out of the dining room being led by Katsuko-san.
On our back is, Sensei…She's sandwiching us, we can't run away.
We returned to the entrance gall and went up the second floor stairs.
The maid opened the big door to the left.

「…Here」

The room was…formerly a western style dance hall. A big space of approximately two classroom spreads out. The ceiling is also high.
Of course…it's likely that a ball hasn't happened for dozens of years anymore.
On one side of the room are several machines for gym…Is sensei using it to train?
And at the back of the room…what's there is like a photography studio…!
A big white cloth is hanging down from the ceiling to the floor. Is this the one they call a backdrop??
There's a light blue carpet spread only on the floor in front of the backdrop.
There's lighting equipment on both sides and a big white umbrella thing…that's a machine that has a built in flash if I recall correctly.
And there's a digital single lens reflex camera[1] put on the tripod at

the front…!
The best equipment for the professionals. I think this stuff's costs lightly cross a million yen.
And there's three of them lining up.
Even more surprising is that there are several digital camera's of normal size being put on the side wagon.
There's a laptop on the table.

「Then, take off your shoes and stand in front of the camera」

The female teacher said and as she look at Shirasaka-san.

「…Eh? Uhm」

Shirasaka-san doesn't seem to be following the events well…

「I said it didn't I? I'm going to take a souvenir photo…don't worry. It's okay if you're still dressed」
「…Shirasaka-sama, please go this way」

Being prompted by the maid, Shirasaksa-san took off her shoes without understanding the situation and went to the carpet…

「…Then, Katsuko, please.」
「…Certainly」

Katsuko-san began to fiddle with the camera on the middle of the three.

「…Yoshida-kun, come here」

Sensei went to the table and the sofa on the wall.
It's a bit far from the spot of photography…approximately ten meters.
If I get that far, I won't be able to see Shirasaka-san being photographed.
That's regrettable however…I can't go against Sensei's instructions.
Sensei sat down on the sofa and opened the laptop that's on the table.

「Then here we go…please look down」

The maid is talking to Shirasaka-san.
It seems that the photography is Katsuko-san's work somehow or another…

「Hey…Please wait a moment」

Shirasaka-san is at loss.
Shirasaka-san dressed in her usual uniform becomes stiff in front of the camera.

「Ah, okay. That's it, it looks fresh!…Don't move!」

「…Yess!!」

The flash shined.
A shutter sound.
Pipipipipi…The charging sound of the flash continues afterwards.

「Yup, your face is still slightly stiff…Okay, let's go with the next… Look here…yes that's it, cheese!」

…Flash!! bibibibi!!
That one looks interesting.
Ooh …I want to look around, I thought.

「…Yoshida-kun , take a look at this」

Then, Sensei laughed and showed me the monitor.
I'm looking at…myself.
…Huh?
What's there is the image of Shirasaka-san that was taken just now…
Katsuko-san and this camera is connected…?!!!

「Katsuko has a talent in photography so…I always leave it to her」

Always…you're always doing this?
I wanted to ask but my eyes are already concentrated on the monitor.
Katsuko-san's photo's are magnificent…even my amateur eye can understand.

Shirasaka-san's cuteness, loveliness, is being completely reproduced…
Her unease from being brought to such a place, fear, irritation, even the hate…

「Okay, well then, please turn towards that wall and lower your gaze…a but up. That's right. Please stick out your chest more… okay. You're very cutee, like that, stay still…Okaaay~!!」

…Flash!!

Katsuko-san took the photographs one after another…
Images of Shirasaka-san increased by ten…twenty…

「Look…her state should be changing bit by bit」

Sensei looked at Shirasaka-san's image and smiled.
Certainly…When I looked at the photo, Shirasaka-san's tension has been away suddenly.
Her, anxiety, and irritation comes apart…Is she opening her heart to Katsuko-san…?!
Or rather, her face is blushing…and a bit sweaty…
It feels like she's being absent minded.
I've never seen this kind of face from Shirasaka-san at school.

「Katsuko has good skills on making her subjects feel comfortable… also, the women to men ratio is high in this room. I purposely let the two of us took a bit of distance from them…」

I see. The reason why the location of photography is a bit far away is to relieve Shirasaka-san from her tension.
She purposely let Katsuko-san who's energetic take care of her…
When taking a picture, an artificial-relationship of mutual trust is tying them.

「Look…She who's being completely nervous and not showing any chance is slowly getting very loose…」

Shirasaka-san wiped the sweat on her forehead with her right hand.

「Ararara…Okay, here's a towel」

Katsuko-san got off from the camera and handed over a pure white towel to Shirasaka-san.

「…T-Thank you very much」

Shirasaka-san wiped off her sweat with the towel.
With the soft sense of the towel gently washing her, she relaxes her heart again.

「Then…could you take off your coat?」

Katsuko-san smilingly spoke to Shirasaka-san.

「…Eh?」

「Isn't it hot? It's better if you take off your coat!」

『I'm just saying it out of kindness』 is what Katsuko-san's smile saying

「O-Okay」

Shirasaka-san took off her blouse because of the words of the beautiful and cheerful Katsuko-san…

「Uh-huh. That's good…looks nice…Please look heree, okaay!!」

Katsuko-san took image of Shirasaka-san who's dressed in white blouse…

「Hmm, It seems that it's still hot…could you open some of the buttons near your neck? Yup, that looks good!」

Being told so, Shirasaka-san unbuttoned her blouse.

「Horahora, you got cuter…take a seat there. Ah, please smile. Smile…hora, you look better when you smile」

Shirasaka-san is being nervous since she came to this mansion.
Shirasaka-san who never smiled…smiled at the camera…!
Cameraman Katsuko-san…has completely eroded Shirasaka-san's heart…!

「Ah, a little devil feel came out a bit…twist your upper body a bit. T-T-T-T-That's good, that feeling…ah, please unbutton another one…」

She unbuttoned another one as if it's natural…I caught a glance of her white bra.

「Okay, that looks good…cheese」

Another flash, Shirasaka-san's body clearly surfaced.

「Please crouch this time…good, as if you're waiting at the bus stop. Is it here yet? How long are we going to wait…That's right, stay still」

Shirasaka-san doesn't notice it…
The inside of Shirasaka-san's skirt is in full view on the monitor.
Yes, I – can – see – your – panties!
A defenseless snow white panties…
Lewd…too lewd…!

「Let's see…should we already take off your skirt?」

Katsuko-san made a suggestion with a flat smile…!

「T-That's」

As expected, even Shirasaka-san would hesitate here…

「It's okaay～ You're still wearing your blouse. I just want to display this slim legs more～」

Shirasaka-san in the monitor glanced at me.
It seems that she hates being seen by me

「Isn't that fine?…You're not being told to be fully naked!」

Yuzuki-sensei declared in a cold and loud voice.

「You promised didn't you?!」

Shirasaka-san's expression stiffened.

「Horaa～ It's okay, it's okay…You don't need to mind it!!」

Katsuko-san acts brightly between the two people.

「…Understood.」

Shirasaka-san's hand is holding her skirt.
The skirt fell on the floor.
Katsuko-san took photos of that state…

「That's good…good…It looks wonderfully goood!!!」

Shirasaka-san's wearing just her blouse and underwear.
Just one piece was taken of and yet…It looks very sexy.
Shirasaka-san puts her hand in front of the blouse and covers it to not let her panties be seen.
Her face is completely red from the shame.
Lewd…lewd…lewd Shirasaka-san.

「Take off your socks. That way it would look longer…!」

Shirasaka-san just carries out Katsuko-san's bright proposal without inserting any meaning in it.
As expected, Shirasaka-san doesn't have a bad habit of taking off her socks with only her foot not hands.
She holds her blouse's front with her left hand, bent her right leg then she was somehow able to pull off her socks with her right hand.
Shirasaka-san bends her body making a C shape.
The posture has some impossibility…her panties appeared at a glance from the seam of the bouse…!
When the right sock was took off, she moved to the left sock…
Katsuko-san completely records Shirasaka-san's state of taking off her socks with her camera…

「Looks good…Girl's bare feet looks good」 2

Oh…Shirasaka-san's legs is so white and slender.
The thighs starting from the bottom of the blouse to her foot fingers…all of it are flesh-colored.
Bare legs…It's called bare legs isn't it?…huh

「Then, look here this time…Lean a bit…okay」

Katsuko-san orders Shirasaka-san to make a pose steadily.
The flash and the shutter follows…
Unaware…Shirasaka-san forgot to hold her blouse's front already.
Her white underpants is on full view already…

「I want to switch to Ideas already…some unusual situation…」

Katsuko-san looked up from the finder and suggested.

「Hmmm…Is there something?」

Katsuko-san looked around the room.
The gym equipment caught Katsuko-san's sight…

「Oh right! Let's use that…!!」

Sensei whispered to my ears…

「Keep your distance from them…you can't approach them right now. We must remove our presence」

I nodded…

「Isn't that…A training apparatus?」
「That's right, here! This time, use this and I'll take photos of you!」

Katsuko-san's words is too bright.
She lifted and carried the smallest camera of the three.

「Okay…Please come here」
「O-Okay…」

Though Shirasaka-san feels suspicious, she still followed Katsuko-san…
Sensei and I didn't move.
We stay away from them.

「First of all, try this!」

What Katsuko-san showed is a so-called butterfly movement machine.
It's a training machine where you have to sit on a chair and you bend the bar with your elbow.

「Sit down here!」
「…But」
「It's okay, It's okay～!」

Shirasaka-san who's on her white blouse and white legged was forcibly made to sit down.

「Here, you have to fix your foot here. Please place your feet on this pedal here…Okaay～ I'm putting in the magic tape」

Katsuko-san fixed Shirasaka-san's ankles.

「Put your hand here, and please grip this bar…fix your wrist here」

Shirasaka-san's wrists is also fixed as expected.

「Then…please push the bar. Is it too heavy?」

Shirasaka-san's hand pushes the bar firmly…

「…It's good」

…The bar moved

「Then , continue that and look down…I'll take photos!!」

Katsuko-san changed the camera mode to 『Video Recording』
Shirasaka-san's exercising body is being projected at Yuzuki-sensei's laptop…!

「Okaay～…Oneee, twwoooo, threee, fouuuuur…!」

Katsuko-san matches the counting as Shirasaka-san continues to push the bar…
Everytime she put power, the muscle foot can be clearly seen tightening.

Of course, her panties are visible.
Her belly is also seen aside from her panties.
Her first year high school stomach curls…and it contracts every time Shirasaka-san puts power on it.
Haa, haa, I can hear heavy breathing…
While continuing it for nearly five minutes, Shirasaka-san's sweating all over her body…
Her white thin blouse sticks to her body and…a line of her upper body is clearly surfacing.
The beads of sweat on her thighs are also sexy.
It looks like I'm watching a sexy image video where Shirasaka-san is the star…
However…what's displayed is Shirasaka-san and me, we're in the same room after all.
This body is just ten meters in distance…

「Okay…that's good. Let's take another photo on a different machine!」

Katsuko-san said that and fixed the camera on the tripod and then took off the magic tape on Shirasaka-san's wrists and ankle.
Then, she handed a towel again…
Shirasaka-san wiped off her sweat while panting.
Ah, she put her towel from her stomach and wiped the side…
Shirasaka-san must be thinking that we can't see it from our location but…that camera is on video mode.
I can see it! It's recorded!
Or rather…I want that towel!!!

「This will be the last machine photo so here…sit on this one」

As for the machine Katsuko-san mentioned, my eyes can't understand what kind of activity is carried out by that machine.
Yellow colored urethane is coiling a round iron bar and combined together, it's forming a shape of a sitting person.
Shirasaka-san sits down on the seat as told.
It seems that she's completely trusting Katsuko-san.

「Okaaay～ I'm going to fix your wrists and ankle again okay～」

Katsukos-san fixed Shirasaka-san's hand and feet with magic tape

just like a while ago.
Shirasaka-san is about to move her body…
However, the machine's not moving in any direction?!!!3

「…How do yo move this?」

When Shirsaka-san asked, Katsuko-san-

「Oh…This machine has to be turned on first!」

Katsuko-san turned on the switch on the machine's back.
Wiin, wiin, wiiin…A mysterious sound was heard.
It's as if some gears are being turned slowly from the inside…
Next, a sound of announcement from the machine…

『…Sensing figure…please take a deep breath and wait for a moment』

Shirasaka-san exhaled as she was told.
…Before long

『…Beginning restraint』

Wiiiin, wiiiiin…!!!
That machine began to transform while Shirasaka-san's still bound…!
It slowly stood up…!

「…What's this?!」

Shirasaka-san tries to move her hands and feet…!
However, her wrists and ankle are firmly fixed…she can't make any movements!!
Before long, the machine that restrains Shirasaka-san made an X form and stood upright…

「…It went well」

Sensei muttered
…I see!!
That's not a training apparatus…!!
It was a 『Restraint Stand』 that was feigned…!!

「…No…No…No!!」

Shirasaka-san who's caught by the machine…has both of her hands and legs making an X shape…

「…Now then, let's go」

Sensei spoke while I was looking at Shiraka-san in the monitor like a prey.

「It's fine to look closely at this point…She's already restrained」

…The devil smiled.

「Help me…no, I don't want thiiiss…!」

Shirasaka-san desperately asks for Katsuko-san's help.
However…Katsuko-san is.
She bowed like a maid and went to meet her master…!!

「Katsuko…Well done, you've done your work perfectly today」
「Thank you…Ojou-sama…」

---

1. DSLR Camera, I had to consult my brother for this one, lol ↩
2. I'm starting to doubt that Katsuko is the real lesbian here ↩
3. Lol, it's an obvious trap ↩

11. Virgin Examination (Hands-On)

「…She's really a stupid child. Getting caught into something like this」

Yuzuki-sensei laughs at Shirasaka-san who's crucified at the restriction stand.

「…Please let me down…I'll do what I promised even if you don't do this…!」

Shirasaka-san who took the surprise attack, strongly protests with her big eyes…

「Arara, you're being energetic…」

Yuzuki-sensei approaches Shirasaka-san that's on the restriction stand while laughing.
The female teacher's thin fingertips stretches to feel Shirasaka-san's skin…!

「…D-Don't touch me!」

Shirasaka-san desperately tries to bend and twist her body but the magic tape tied on her hand and feet is too strong that she can't do anything…!
She's perfectly crucified…!!

「…That's custom made. It'll never come off no matter how strong you are. Even a pro wrestler, not even a mountain gorilla」

The female teacher laughed happily.

「Now…First, let's take a look at her cute navel」

Yuzuki-sensei's finger took off the remaining buttons of Shirasaka-san's bouse…!
Shiraska-san's sweat filled skin gradually appears from the gap of her blouse…!

「N-no…Don't take it off!!」

One…Two…Three
Slowly…All of her buttons were removed.
The blouse's front is exposed.
…The valley of chest from the white bra.
…The belly button her thin waist.
…Lastly, the pure white panty that forms a delta zone[1] is jumping to my naked eye.

(…I-It's beautiful)

There's a hollow dent in her round stomach.
…Shirasaka-san has a clean navel.
I don't have experience in looking at people's navel ever before but…I can declare that it's beautiful. No, It really is.

(I-I want to lick it!)

Waves of lust is coming up from the bottom of my heart…!!
Ah…Arere?
What? My body's feeling hot…
My chest is pounding hard…My whole body is going popoka[2]…!
Sweat is dripping from my forehead.

「…The drug should be working already」

Sensei looked at my state and spoke to Katsuko.

「…Thinking about the elapsed time and the amount taken, Yoshida-sama should be at peak in several minutes」

Katsuko-san reported to Sensei.

「…Since Shirasaka-sama had some exercise and made her blood circulate well, it should be getting good soon」

…I see.
Shirasaka-san was purposely made to use the training machine to let her blood circulate well and increase the potency of the drug.

「…I see, it seems so」

The female teacher looks at Shirasaka-san's state carefully.
Her complexion…the state of her skin…and
Sensei moved her middle finger and forefinger under Shirasaka-san white panties…!!

「…Hiiiii!!!」

Shiraska-san's crotch made a wet sound…!

「Oh…This isn't sweat isn't it?…」

Sensei purposely explained in a loud voice to humiliate Shirasaka-san.

「I-It's sweat! I just exercised just now…!」

Shiraska-san desperately denies it while having a crimson face…!

「…Hmmm, I wonder. Let's observe it for a bit more」

Sensei's fingers oscillated between between Shiraraska-san's trembling crotch…!!

「…Kiiiiiii…yaaaaaa!!!」

Shirasaka-san's lewd shout…!!
Shirasaka-san's panties are…getting wet instantly!!
Could this be…Aaaaaaaaaaaaa, love nectar????!!

「Yoshida-kun, remember this…When you're caressing a female's genital…it's effective if you stimulate it on top of the panty first」

Shirasaka-san remembers my existence from Sensei's explanation!

「Yoshida-kun…D-Don't look…Please…Noooo」

The female teacher strengthened the vibration of her finger even more…!

「…If you touch it directly suddenly, the stimulation would be too strong. Touching it on top of a cloth would widen the contact to the genital, don't you think?…To be effective you have to do this

first!!!」

Sensei made the vibration of her finger tips even more intense…!!!

「Aaaaa…No, nooo…Stop, please stop it…!」

Shirasaka-san is feeling it.
Her body's trying to curl itself up…
However, she can't escape from Sensei's fingers…
…The half naked Shirasaka-san wearing only her blouse and underwear.
…The restricted Shirasaka-san.
Her expression of trying to endure the pleasure is…lewd…
Katsuko-san is taking pictures of that appearance.
The lens of the camera zooms…

「…Noo…Don't take pictures…This is…This isn't me…This isn't meeeee……!!」

What's there is the figure of Shirasaka-san that can't be seen in the classroom.
Female(Onna)…A woman(Mesu)…Animal
…Shirasaka-san's woman body.

「…Fuuu. Should we do this first for the time being?」

Sensei finally stopped her finger vibrator, then removed her hand from Shirasaka-san's crotch…
Shirasaka-san breathed heavily while restricted to an X-character.
Her crotch…is already drenched.
Shirasaka-san's thin pubic hair is visible from the white panties soaked in love nectar…
Of course…her slit is also clearly seen.

「…It's a bit dark here. Katsuko, move this restraint to somewhere with more lights」
「Certainly, Ojou-sama」

Katsuko-san separates from the camera and moved to the back of the restrain stand according to her master's order.
A square unit snapped from the case of the pedestal.

That's…a parcel size box with a cord on it.
Katsuko-san opened the cover…inside the box is a joystick and a toggle switch and a numeric keypad.
Could this be…possibly, a wireless remote of the restraint stand?

Katsuko-san flipped one switch and fiddled with the joystick.
Then…the stand that's binding Shirasaka-san advanced.
It seems that the tire attached on the bottom of the stand is somehow working with an electric motor…

「…What's this?…No more…Noo!」

Shirasaka-san who's underwear is exposed from the open blouse is carried slowly like a big float from the festival.
Both her hands and feet are extended…
Yuzuki-sensei returned to her laptop and fiddled with it.
the light used in photography had it's angle automatically changed…
…The lights gathered in the center of the room.
It seems that all of the illumination in this room is operated by that laptop…
Before long…the stand that holds Shirasaka-san was enshrined at the center of the light…

「Katsuko…prepare to take video」
「…Certainly」

Katsuko-san returned the wireless controller box to the stand then picked up the large camera from the cameras lining up.
She carried the tripod in front of the restraint stand…
The focus of the camera is…of course, the half-naked Shirasaka-san…!!

「…Okay, Camera's okay…It's recording now!!!!」

Red LED lights up on the camera.
…It's starting to record.
Surely, there's a red 『●REC』 floating in the finder Katsuko-san is looking at…

「…Thanks. Then, should we start the sex education time?」

Sensei smiled and Katsuko-san took out a remote control box.

「…This restriction is well made…the arm of this machine can be moved freely, it's possible to force the person bound here to make various poses. For example…」

Sensei's finger pushed some switches…
Then she slightly moved the joystick…
She's not hesitating on operating this at all.

Wiiiin…wiiiiiin…!

The restraint starts to transform again.
Shirasaka-san lifts her leg up and moved it to her back…
Her head that's fixed on the headrest was turned to face front.

「…What…What's going on…I don't want this…Don't play with my bodyyyyyyy!!!」

Shirasaka-san herself doesn't know what to do.
Sensei operates the joystick a bit more delicately.
Wiin, wiiin, the restraint stand transform according to the operation…

「……This restraint stand is designed to be comfortable and ergonomic. It turns only on a direction that's appropriate for human frame and muscular structure. Your bone will never break and it will never hurt a muscle so don't worry」

Even if she say that…If she's being just lead along, there's no way she can feel relieved.
Shirasaka-san desperately tries to escape the restraint stand by twisting her body.
Sweat began to ooze out from her whole body…
The sweat flows from her cleavage to her cute stomach…!

…Aah…I!!!
My heart throbs from the tension and excitement…it hurts
However…I can't take my eyes off the frightened, confused, suffering half-naked Shirasaka-san anymore!!!

The restraint's transformation ended…

Shirasaka-san is…C-c-c-c-c-c-c-c-could this be an M character?!!!!!
She's spreading her legs to an M shape…Uooooooooooo!!!!

「…No…this is such…Don't look…please don't look…!!!」
Shirasaka-san opens her legs wide in front of the camera.
Between her legs, the delta zone of her crotch, the mountain of breasts covered by the white bra, the embarrassed and confused beautiful face of Shirasaka-san…is lining up!
The female teacher put the remote control aside.
Then she approached Shirasaka-san's body upfront…

「…D-Don't come!!」

The thin wicked fingers is caressing the bra as if confirming the chape of the mountain…
When it's around the right nipple, her fingernails pinched the area…

「…Hyaaa!!」

Bulls eye…!!
Shirasaka-san's nipple is right under that!!!

Sensei's fingers descends down caressing Shirasaka-san's stomach…
Onto her panties again…
Shirasaka-san's female genitalia's shape can already be seen from top of her panties.
The thin fingers traces the line and draws a circle around…

「…nuaaaaaaa!!」

Lewd voice comes out of Shirasaka-san's mouth…!!
Wet sounds echoes…

「…Hmm. It seems to be good」

Sensei had a wicked smile floating on her face and then she separate from Shirasaka-san on the restraint for a moment.
She took something from the table nearby and came back…
Yuzuki's hand has something glittering on it…That's?
…Surgical knife?!

「…Don't move, I'd be troubled if I cut somewhere strange」

Sensei's lip is smiling.

「…No…Please stop it…I beg you…」

Shirasaka-san trembles in fear from the sparkling metal blade!!!

「…Well, you have a cute face」

The knife that's on Yuzuki-sensei's hand is closing up to Shirasaka-san's crotch…
I can't speak out.
Shirasaka-san only stares at it in fright, unable to move…

Sensei's left hand grabbed the edge of her white panty…
The surgical knife on her left hand…torn Shirasaka-san's panty off lengthwise…!!!
Shuruuruu…!!
The sound of the white thin cloth being torn sticks to my ear…!!
The surgical knife is sharp…
The panty that was torn into two is nothing but just a piece of cloth!
Sensei pilled up the remains of the panty with her left hand with all of her might…!
Tsurun…Shirasaka-san's soft ass bounce on the restraint stand…!!
Shirasaka-san still doing an M shape…!!
Shirasaka-san was robbed off her white panties…!
Before my eyes…is a bare female genitalia!!!

(…Uooooooooooooooo!!!)

Shirasaka-san's genitalia has sticky love nectar oozing out.
P-Pussy…pussy, pussy, pussyyyyyyyyyyyyyyyyyyy!!!

「…D-don't look, Yoshida-kun! You can't look! I won't forgive you if you do!! I'll never forgive youuuuu」

Shirasaka-san screamed!!!
However…my eyes are already glued on the flesh colored crack…
Ah…love nectar is oozing out again.
The sticky liquid flows to her anus then drips down…

「Hora…Yoshida-kun」

While I was gazing at Shirasaka-san's crotch, Yuzuki-sensei throw something white and it fluttered to me.
I caught it by reflex.

「You can have that…You want that don't you?…」

That's…the torn panty of Shirasaka-san.
It's wet with sweat and love nectar…
I smelled it instinctively.
This is…Shirasaka-san's smell.
Women's sweat has a sweet scent of milk…
I licked the torn cloth with my tongue.
It has some sour taste…
This is Shirasaka-san's taste…

「…Don't sniff that! Don't lick it! Throw it away! I beg you!!」

Shirasaka-san who's bound, begs…!!
But…I can never throw a treasure like this!!!

The female teacher laughed…
Katsuko-san who's holding the camera can also be seen smiling.

Shirasaka-san's face has all of the negative feelings in the world mixed in it.
I…surely am having such a senile face.
Is it the effect of the drug?…or is it that my consciousness is concentrating on Shirasaka-san's womanly body!

「…Then, should we continue our sex education? Yoshida-kun, please pay attention to Shirasaka-san's genitalia…」

My eyes concentrated on Shirasaka-san's crotch once again…!
Sensei's finger stroked her bare sex organ…

「According to the person herself…This is a virgin genitalia. It remains pure, it hasn't let anyone invade it yet. Certainly, when you look at it, there seems to be no change from having a sexual intercourse. It seems that she hadn't masturbated much too」

The female teacher makes such commentary joyfully.

「…Don't look, I beg you」

Shirasaka-san's voice doesn't reach me anymore…
I was extremely aroused from seeing a female genitalia for the first time in my life.
Looking at it again…women's crotch are beautiful.
Is it so simple to just call it a crotch without a penis?
Comparing to my own crotch I'm used to seeing…it's shocking.
Men and women are really different beings…!!
After that…there's thin pubic hair growing on the border over the genital.
It's different from Shirasaka-san's smooth hair…it's curly.
…Lewd, this lewd thing is growing in the cute Shirasaka-san that's like an angel…!
I'm not convinced…
I can't agree to it…but this gap is helplessly erotic.
And below the pubic hair.
Shirasaka-san's slit looks like it was cut by a knife straight.
Looking at it once again…it's bigger than I imagined.
I thought it's such a smaller hole.
However…thinking that I'm going to shove in this erect penis…It might really be small after all.
Can penis really get inside such a small crack?
Though it's oozing out such sticky love nectar…

「…Uuuuu, stop, don't look…stop recording this…please stop this…」

Shirasak-san's voice gradually shrinks…

「Then, lets stop observing the outside and we'll go take a look inside…!」

Shirasaka-san's body trembled from Sensei's words…!
Her face dyed in fear…is also beautiful.
No matter what kind of expression Shirasaka-san make, it's very lovely…

「…Stop, stop, don't touch meeeeee!」

Yuzuki-sensei's right hand touched Shirasaka-san's bare crotch…!
The thin thumb and forefinger touched Shirasaka-san's genital then did a V shape…!!!
Her genital opened!!
The love nectar spills…!
What's inside is a narrow flesh colored…!

「…Beyond this is a bean like stiff thing, that's the clitoris. That's women's most sensitive location…That's why don't touch it violently」

While the right hand is opening the genitalia…Yuzuki-sensei caressed the clitoris with her left hand's finger…!!

「…Aahn~!!」

Shirasaka-san's voice leaked out…amazing!!

「…Below that is the place where the male's genitalia goes in… Yoshida-kun, take a look…」

Yuzuki-sensei widens the opening of the female genitalia with both of her hands this time.

「…Ah, I see it. You can see something whitish inside the hole, can't you?…that's the hymen」

I-I can see iiiiit!!
T-This is the hymen!!!
S-S-S-Shirasaka-san's…!!!

「…Don't looooooook!!! Don't spread me thereeeee!!!」

Shiraska-san…shouted violently!!
Her beautiful face is warped sorrowfully, it's so lewd.
Shirasaka-san's body dyed in shame is helplessly erotic…

「Katsuko…You're recording?」
「Yes, ojou-sama…The hymen, Shirasaka-sama's face, it's captured clearly. We're recording without any problems here」
「Is that so?…That's great」

Yuzuki-sensei speaks to Shirasaka-san while still opening the female genitalia with both hands…

「How's it Shiraska-san?…how does it feel to have your hymen seen by your male classmate? This is quite a rare experience you know? There's a lot of women who had their hymen broken without even seeing it themselves…」

Un…Certainly.
Usually, far from being seen by people, even oneself can't see it.

「…I'll never forgive you. I'll, never, ever…!!」

Shirasaka-san's face that's red from shame has tears shedding from her eyes.
Tears of anger, sadness, and hatred…
Still, Shirasaka-san scowls at Yuzuki-sensei…
Shirasaka-san's heart isn't broken yet.

「Great…It's been a while since I had such a lively child like you」

The female teacher laughed.

「…How long can you continue that vigor?」

Yuzuki-sensei's eyes caught me…

「Now then…Yoshida-kun, I made you wait. It's time to practice sex education!」

Eh?…Me?
P-Practice?

「…Take Shirasaka-san's virginity」

Shirasaka-san's eyes opened wide from surprise!!!

「You can violate her until you're satisfied…!!」

…V-Violate!!
…I-I'll rape Shirasaka-san!!!

Shirasaka-san's face turned pale instantly!!!

「…This isn't what we agreed on!! Yoshida-kun won't interfere!! My virginity won't be taken!! You promised!! I didn't sign up for this!!!!」[3]

Shirasaka-san protests violently…!!
She's desperately resisting…!!
Her whole body's feeling fear and tension…!!
She's sweating again…!!
Tears drop from her eyes…!!!

「…Yeah, I did promise. I did it didn't I?」

Yuzuk-sensei had a faint smile floating as she look down at Shirasaka-san…

「…Sorry. All of it was a lie」

…Devil.
…Devil, devil, devil!!!

「…Now, Shirasaka Yukino-san. Lose your virginity from a rape!!!」

---

1. He's just saying that it's shaped triangle ↩
2. Poka is an Impact sfx ↩
3. Remember kids, read the terms and agreement before you click I agree. ↩

12. The night when the first love was raped. (Virgin rape)

「…Katsuko, set up the spare camera」
「Yes, Ojou-sama」

Yuzuki-sensei's giving out orders happily…
Katsuko-san opened a a panel of a machine installed in the wall…
A lot of switches and monitor are queued up…
Katsuko flipped the switches one by one…
whirr, the wall opened and a lot of cameras appeared from the inside…

「…The first camera takes Shirasaka-san's close up expressions… The second camera on Shirasaka-san's genitalia. The third camera goes on a birds-eye view of the two…don't capture Yoshida-kun's expressions, I'm not interested」 1
「…Yes, certainly」
Whenever Katsuko-san flips a switch, the camera switches angle.
What an unexpected mechanic mansion this one is!

「I'll leave the 4th, 5th, and 6th cameras to your taste…Don't ever miss the part where her hymen is ripped and the moment he impregnates her okay?…」

The camera lenses concentrates on Shirasaka-san…
I'm completely surrounded by cameras!

「…It's done!」

Katsuko-san reported to Sensei.
The female teacher had a wicked smile then she looked at me…

「…Camera's are on standby already…are you ready?!」

I…!
I'm extremely aroused…!
Aaah, my body feels hot. Hot. Hot.
Looking at the half naked Shirasaka-san…

My body's being drawn to Shirasaka-san…!!

「S-Stop…Hey , I bet you…Yoshida-kun…!!」

Shirasaka-san who's forcibly made to make an M pose by the restraint stand desperately shouts at me.
Her eyes is filled with tears…
Ooh…I want to lick her tears.
…I want to slurp it.
Rather than that…I want to fully taste the love nectar dripping from her crack…!!

「…It's no use…the drug has completely taken him over…」

The devil teacher is increasingly enjoying as she verdict Shirasaka-san coolly…

「His reason is already blown off, he can't think of anything else but his libido and him raping you. He's just a male who lost the breaks of his lust. An ugly beast that's giving to his desire. What do you think…Interesting isn't it?」

Sensei laughed greatly…
I closely approached the restraint stand…
To the half naked Shirasaka-san…

Shirasaka-san's love nectar spilling from the crack is right in front of me…
On top of it is the stomach, the navel that looks so soft…
Still, her chest is still covered by her bra
…Shirasaka-san's frightened face is filled with tears.

「…I-It's hot, my body's hot!!」

My heart's beating so hard.

「…What's wrong? If it's that hot then why don't you just take off your clothes.」

I was taken aback by sensei's suggestion.
That's right, I can just take it off.
Naked…I'll get naked……

I throw away the uniform I stripped off…!
The buttons of my Y shirt flew out but who cares…!!
I throw away my shirt!
I made my shoes fly!
I removed by belt, dropped my pants and kicked it away!
I'm already at my brief and my penis has become greatly hard and firm.

…I want to let it out…My semen…soon!!

Then I took off my brief in front of Shirasaka-san!!!
My penis is piercing the sky…!!!
The tip points right straight at Shirasaka-san's face!!!

「…Kyaaaaaaaaaa!!」

Shirasaka-san's scream echoed in the room…!!!
It must be her first time in her life to see this kind of brutal erect penis!!

「…Hora, take a look, it's so big and shining dark red…that's a man's erect penis!!」

When Sensei ordered her to 「Look」…Shirasaka-san desperately tries to turn away from my erect penis.
However…Her head is fixed on a headrest so Shirasaka-san's face turned to the front…!!

「…Ufufufu. There's something shining on the tip isn't it? Yoshida-kun's wet…He's itching to enter you!!!」

Shirasaka-san closed her eyes hard, she's desperately enduring, she looks sorrowful.

「…This is the penis that will break your hymen. You've shown your hymen so you should look at Yoshida-kun's virgin penis too…」

The devil teacher informs Shirasaka-san some absurd reason…

「…Now, Yoshida-kun, touch Shirasaka-san's body…You wanted to touch it this whole time didn't you? You can touch wherever you

want. You can massage it. You can even embrace her. You can lick it. It's even fine if you want to kiss Shirasaka-san's whole body!!! 」

…Oh
…It's fine.
…Doing that.
…That's right, it's fine.
Because…Shirasaka-san's body is here.
I…to embrace her.

「 …nooo, noooo, noooooo!!! 」

The naked me reached out for Shirasaka-san's body that's on the restraint stand.
Shirasaka-san's white stomach…the area of her navel.
Shirasaka-san's stomach can't escape from my finger.
My finger touched the stomach right there!!!

「 …Hiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiii!!!!! 」

…At that moment!!!
Goosebumps extends from the point where I touched to Shirasaka-san's stomach…!!
That shocked me.

…D-Dammit!!!
That's how much you hate being touched by me?…!!!

I gripped Shirasaka-san's stomach in anger!!

「 …Uuuu!! 」

Shirasaka-san groans in pain…!
Soft…Shirasaka-san's stomach.
I gently caressed Shirasaka-san's stomach once again…
I slided my finger around the hole in her navel…
And yet, Shirasaka-san's goosebumps doesn't stop…

…Dammit…dammit…dammit…!!!

「 …Yoshida-kun, there's something better than the stomach you know? 」

Sensei said in amazement.

「…Well fine. I'll change it so you can touch it easier」

The female teacher smiled.
Once again, she operated the restraint stand…

…Wiiiiiin!!

With both her legs spread out…Shirasaka-san's upper body was pulled up!
Shirasaka-san's face and chest approach before my eyes…!!

Shirasaka-san's face is wet from her tears.
She's enduring with eyes closed. She's enduring.
Still, it looks beautiful.
Shirasaka Yukino…The beauty I'm in love with all this time.
She's here…!
Where I can reach her…!

I thought of wanting to touch her cheek.
I slowly closed my hands to Shirasaka-san's face.
Shirasaka-san's cheek bounced back. Fair skin.
My hand is touching her left cheek.
It's feeling bouncy.
Shirasaka-san's skin is warm…!
It feels like a freshly baked white bread from a fancy restaurant…!
Oh…I'm touching Shirasaka-san's face right now…!!
My heart is jumping around from the feeling!!!
…At that moment!!!

「…Aun!!!」

I feel a sharp pain in my hand!!!
…I-I'm bitten!!
Shirasaka-san's mouth is biting my hand with all her might!!!
…I-It hurtsssssssssss!!

「…ugaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!」

I pulled my hand out of Shirasaka-san's mouth by force!!
There's a tooth mark sticking to my hand clearly.

Blood is oozing out from the mark…!!
She bit with all of her power!!

kuwaaaaaa, dark anger rose within me!!
I'm going to slap Shirasaka-san, I raised the bitten right hand with all of my strength…!!
Shirasaka-san's face fell into fear towards my action
…However!!

I couldn't lower my hand.
I can't.
I can't hit Shirasaka-san…

I put strain on my floating right hand. I strongly gripped it…
I realized that blood is flowing out from the bite mark once again…

「…Oh? You're not going to hit her?」

Yuzuki-sensei had a surprised face.
I won't…Like hell I will!
I can never damage her beautiful face!!

The pain from the bitten hand is feeling numb.
I have to stop this pain else I won't be able to feel Shirasaka-san's soft skin!
…I want to be drowned in this warm body.

I realized that her face is dangerous right now.
Then…Next would be her breasts
I gripped Shirasaka-san's right breasts on top of her bra…!

「…Iyaaaa!!」

Shirasaka-san screams once again. !
The lovely breasts fits to my hand perfectly…
I massaged it tightly with all my power.
It transformed to the shape of my finger!!!

「…Stop, I beg you!!」

Ooh…I can feel her breasts even on top of her bra.
I'm massaging her left breasts with my left hand.

Soft…both left and right are so soft.
I'm massaging it…

「…How's it? What's your impression with Shirasaka-san's breasts? Does it feel good?」
「I-It feels good!」

I speak out my honest impression to answer Sensei's question.

「…Stop, it's gross…I'm feeling sick of this…!!」

Shirasaka-san mutters in a tearful voice…

「…How about you try touching it directly?…You want to touch her nipples didn't you?」

That's right…that's right.
Sensei's right!

I separate my hand from the bra.
My blood-marked right hand moved to Shirasaka-san's right hand.
A dotted red line of red blood shapes according to Shirasaka-san's bite mark…

I attempted to remove Shirasaka-san's bra…

「…Don't do it…Stop it, don't take it off!!」

Shirasaka-san twists her body to resist again.
However…E-err, how do we take off a bra?
What kind of mechanism does this have…???

「…Ah, Yoshida-sama!! Shirasaka-sama's bra is a front hook, bend the two cups to make a 90 degree and it'll come off!!!」

Katsuko-san who's operating multiple cameras at the panel on the wall side taught me.
I see…Is that how it is…?!!!
Doing as I was told…I placed my finger on her cleavage…

「…You can't do that!!!」

Certainly, when I bent it to fold, it came off…
Between the caps that was taken away…two beautiful breasts came up to my view!!
…Shirasaka-san's raw chest!!!
…Two beautiful cute mountains!!
…On top of it is a but with a beautiful color!!!

「…Aaaaa」

Shirasaka-san's sigh of despair……
I finally saw it.
Shirasaka-san's raw breasts…!!

I wrapped it with my hands again and massaged it!
Different!…The feeling from when you massage it on top of the bra is completely different.
The contact of raw skin to skin…!
Shirsaka-san's breasts is hot, gentle…it has a gentle tension in it.
Uoooooo…I wanted to touch this all this time…
I wanted to massage this…!!
Shirasaka-san's nipples…Is completely erect, is it because of the drug?
…I pinched Shirasaka-san's pointed nipples!
…Pinch, pinch!
…I twists as I pinch it!

「…Iyaaaaaaaaaaa!!」

Shirasaka-san's feeling it?
Is she feeling it from my touch?…!!!

「…You can lick it. This virgin nipples hasn't been sucked by any men. Yoshida-kun, how about taking the first?」

Sensei told me that!
I closed up to Shirasaka-san's breasts…!
I buried my face under Shirasaka-san's chest!!!

「…You can't, you can't do that…noooooooooo…!!」

I sucked Shirasaka-san's nipple…!

I licked it with my tongue…!
Licked it tastily…!!
Rolled my tongue over it…!!
Right nipple…even the left nipple…!!!

「Aaaaahn…Even though I told you that you can't!」

The soft beautiful chest.
This is mine.
I'll never give this to anyone.
I'll make this mine and only mine.
This nipple too…
I put in all of the pink areola in my mouth!!
I sucked it with all of my power!!!
I bit it with my teeth…!
Oh…I wish milk comes out of this!!

「…No more…help me…help meeeeee!!!」

I moved my tongue from the nipples to the stomach.
I licked Shirasaka-san's navel.
Then…her crotch.

「…That's no good…Absolutely no goooood!!」

The taste of her hair…the texture is a bit gritty.
Then, my tongue reached Shirasaka-san's crack…!
My tongue folds over Shirasaka-san's crack…!

「…Nooooo!!」

Shirasaka-san's ozzing love nectar has a stimulating sour taste to my tongue…!
The smell of Shirasaka-san's genital is indecent.
I opened her crack with both of my hands…!
The flesh colored fold extends in front of me.
And the white hymen can be seen from only several centimeters!!!
To reach her hymen…I stretched my tongue with all of my might!!!

「…Uhiiiiiiiiiiiii!!!」

Shirasaka-san's body bent backwards on the restraint stand!

Just like that, my tongue goes in and licked the inside of her vagina…!!

「…Stop…don't like that placeeeee!!!」

Then…My tongue finally caught Shirasaka-san's clitoris.
First of all, I licked it from the bottom!!!

「…Uaaaaaaaaan~!!!!」

Furthermore, I licked the tip and around!!!
My tongue moving roughly goes around the top of Shirasaka-san's clitoris!!

「…Iyaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaan…Iyaaan…Help me…Mooooooom!!!」

I'm sucking the clitoris…!
I kissed it!
Chupachupachupa!

「…Help me…Help me…Kenji…Help me…」

Shirasaka-san called out Endou's name suddenly…

…I was surprised.
…I was shocked.

Shirasaka-san's seeking Endou's help.
That Endou…
The flames of jealousy is blazing up from my heart…

「…What? Endou-kun? Endou-kun's still in the school you know?」

The female teacher talks to Shirasaka-san from the side…
…Eh?
…What do you mean?

「…Katsuko」
「Yes, Ojou-sama」

Katsuko-san pushed some switch on the panel on the wall…!
Then…a projector came from the ceiling just like the time in the

dining room!
This time the screen is in front of Shirasaka-san.
…W-What?!
I instinctively turned around to the screen to the wall on the back…!
…Then!!!
Some kind of image was projected from the backdrop there…!!!

「…aaah…Kenji…!!」

Breath leaked out suddenly from Shirasaka-san's mouth!!!

That's the image of our school…
Also…that's the baseball club's ground!!!
It's dark because it's already night but the baseball club continue practicing with the ground's illumination at nighttime.

「…This is a real-time video!」

Katsuko-san explained…!
In short…The current activities of the baseball club?!!
This is also another of Yuzuki-sensei's hidden camera?!
There's a member holding a short fungo…
A member throwing…
A member running…
Seriously…Just how many members are there in the baseball club?
Ah…I see Endou's figure from the members practice swinging.
I understood…
Shirasaka-san immediately saw Endou from the large number of members in there…!

Endou is talking about something to his practicing companion.
…He's laughing.
Endou's laughing…!!
At the same moment I'm being intertwined with the naked Shirasaka-san…Endou is having such a foolish conversation with his companion wearing a muddy attire.
Having a grinning face…
…Idiot!
He's an idiot!!

「…Kenji…Kenjiiiiii…!!」

Tears spill from Shirasaka-san's face again as she look at Endou in the screen…

「…Help me…save me…help me, Kenji…!!!」

…Stop that.
…Stop that already.
I am here.
Shirasaka-san's here.
Endou's not here, and yet…!!!

「…Why, Why, Why…I don't want this, help me Kenji!!!」

The naked Shirasaka-san is here.
The naked erect me is here.
If naked men and women are together, it's obvious what they would do…
…Isn't that obvious?!!!

The female teacher coldly sentenced Shirasaka-san who's desperately calling out Endou's name.

「Now…Shirasaka-san. How about you say goodbye to your virginity soon?」

One again, the teacher operated the joystick of the remote…

「…You're going to lose your virginity while watching Endou-kun practicing happily!!」

…The devil smiled.

Wiiiiin, wiiiiiiiiiiiin…!!

The restraint stand changed Shirasaka-san's pose forcibly…
Her thin legs are opened as big as possible.
Just like a frog that's about to be analyzed…
Her ass is lifted and thrust by the waist high in the air…
Both of her hands are spread out greatly
And…her upper body and head is lifted to a position where she can

see the unity of the bodies.
The height of the restraint was adjusted.
…Just right in the position of my waiast.

If I thrust my body forward, my erect thing can enter Shirsaka-san's genitalia with me just standing…
Shirasaka-san's forcibly made to pose for sex…
Pitiful Shirasaka-san…
…She's crying.
…She's screaming
…She's yelling!!

「Iyaaaaaaaaaaaa! Iyaaaaaaaaaaaa, Kenji, Help me! Kenjiiiiiiiiiiiii!!!!」

Endou's not here…
What's here is me!!
I'll violate…I'll rape you!!
I'll be taking Shirasaka-san's virginity!!!

「…Hora, Yoshida-kun…It's here. Just insert your genital in that hole, it's easy don't you think? Ufufufu」

The devil continues to laugh…

I gripped Shirasaka-san's waist!
The delicate body…brought closely, it's so delicate that it might break…!
The penis that's 200% erect approaches Shirasaka-san's crotch…!!!

「…You caaaan't! I'll never forgive you! I'll never forgive youuuuuuu!!!!」

Shirsaka-san's trembling in fear that her body's shrinking firmly.
Being afraid and helpless…She closed her eyes tightly…!!
My penis…my glans that's shining dark red is approaching the wet vagina…!
The genitals kissed each other…!!

「…Hyaaaaaaaaaaaa!!」

Shirasaka-san screamed…!!

Along with the wet sound…my precum is mixing with Shirsaka-san's love nectar!!
The tip of the glans is feeling the soft and wet female meat!!

…At that moment!!

「…uuuuuuuuuu!!!」

I ejaculated!!
The white torrent scattered to Shrirasaka-san's chest and stomach.

「…W-What?!」

Shirasaka-san who had hot liquid dripped to her stomach opened her eyes in surprise…!
She's looking…!
Shirsaka-san's big eyes…!
The white semen I let out…She's looking at my semen!!!

「…I…Iyaaaaaaaaa!!」

That's some spectacle a 16 year old beauty won't be able to endure…!
However…Shirsaka-san's eyes of fear is arousing me!!!
Though I just ejaculated intensely, my erection's not going down at all…
Rather, it got even bigger than a while ago…!!

「…Now, penetrate her this time!!」

The devil teacher whispered and I invaded the virgin soil of Shirasaka-san once again…!
The strong penis with semen clinging on it greatly opens Shirsaka-san's vaginal opening…!
Munyuu, the glans goes inside the female genitalia…!!

「…Uwaaaan!!」

Shirasaka-san's struggling, shaking her body to escape from my penis…!
But…Her restrained body can't do anything!!

「……There's no angle in insertion. Just push it up from under!!!」

I pushed up my penis from below according to the devil's advice…!!
The glans is buried inside the meat pot…!!

「…Y-You can't!! T-Take it off!!」

The resistance is just like a kitchen knife in an ice cream cake…
However…Shirasaka-san's insides is hot!
Very hot!!
My glans is wrapped in moist female meat.
…It's rubbing.
…What pleasure!!

「…Kuh…It hurts…it's gross…H-Help meee…」

…A-arere?
…I-I can't go in?
I can't go in deeper inside Shirsaka-san???
Something's hindering the insertion…?!
I want to push in deeper to the root!!

「…That's the hymen. You saw it earlier didn't you?」

The voice of the female teacher pierced my ear!
This is her hymen?!
I…my penis is kissing her hymen???!!!

「…Uuuuuuuuuuuu!!!」

The moment I understood it…I ejaculated once again!!

「…H-Hot!!! W-W-What's going on!!!」

Shirasaka-san's screaming as her inside is taking my semen!
Her vagina tightened in surprise…!
It's strangling my penis…!!!
Ooooh, my ejaculation…My ejaculation doesn't stop…!!!

「…What? Yoshida-kun, you ejaculated again? It can't be helped!」

The female teacher laughed at me.

「…But, you still can go on right? You drank that medicine after all, you won't be satisfied unless you ejaculated five to ten times… ufufufufufu」

Shirasaka-san trembled in reaction when Sensei said 『Ejaculation』

「…Ejaculation…He let it out…That's…I don't want that…I'd be troubled…!」

Shirsaka-san's big eyes is overflowing with tears again…!
My penis is still hard inside her.
It's not withering at all…It's not losing strength at all…!

「…Please release me already…Help me, Kenji…Help me…!」

Shiraska-san's tears spilled…!

…Dammit!
…What's with Endou?!!!
…Dammit!
…Dammit!
…GODDAMMIIIIIIIIIIIIIT!!

I…pushed in my waist with all my might!!!
My penis poked Shirasaka-san's hymen with all of my strength!!

「…I-I-I-It huuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuurts!!」

Shirasaka-san's sad scream extends to the room!!

That's Shirsaka-san's farewell cry to her virginity!!
Xurururu, the penis was swallowed inside Shiraska-san.
All of it was pushed even the root!

…I pierced her!
…It broke through!!
Shirasaka-san's virginity, I…!!

「…Congrats. Shirasaka-san, you're no longer a virgin!」

Sensei's voice made Shirasaka-san dye to despair.

Shirasaka-san bursts into tears silently…
Tears shed like rain.

「…Yoshida-kun, the place your tip is hitting is Shirasaka-san's uterus. Taste the feeling!」

The puripuri feeling at the tip of my penis…
Is this her uterus?
Oh…I want to pour in my hot semen here!!
I slowly made a rhythm with my body…

「…I-It hurts, It hurts…Stop, don't move it…Yoshida-kun…Please don't torment me more than this!」

The movement of my waist is strong that every time I pierce her, Shirasaka-san's body shakes.
Her cute breasts move back and forth…
Ah…Aaaah.

「It hurts…Help me…Mooom…Help me…Kenji…Kenjiiiii…!!」

…I can't endure it anymore!!
The waist that's beating Shirasaka-san's crotch pistons violently!
There's water leaking out from the connected part…!
…Faster!
…More intense!
Violate…I'll violate her…!!!

「…It hurts, it hurts, it hurts…Stooop…forgive meee…Yoshida-kuuuuun…!!!」

That's right, call my name.
More, more, Shout my name!!
Accept my penis!!
Accept my semen!

My waist is throwing itself against between Shirasaka-san's crotch!
Panpanpan! The sound of meat hitting each other…!!
The tip of the glans is knocking the uterus…!

Aaaaaa…uuuu.
Pleasure gathers in my waist…

…No good.

「…I-I'm cumming…S-Shirasaka-san, I'm cumming…I'm going to cum again, I-I'm going to let out a lot…inside Shirasaka-san…!!!」

…Shiraska-san's sorrowful eyes opened wide!!!

「…You can't! Yoshida-kun! Please don't make my inside dirty!!!」

Ooh…Shirasaka-san's eyes is filled with despair and fear.
Her beautiful big eyes has the figure of me raping her…
…She's watching.
…She's watching.
…Shirasaka-san, me

「…Aaaaaaa, cummiiiing!!!!!」

I violently ejaculated for the third time!!!

…Byurururu, byurururu, byrurururururu

The deepest of Shirasaka-san's inside, my penis forced on the uterus powerfully…!
The tip has the hot venom gushing out!!!
…It's pouring in!!!
…It's flowing out!!!
Shirasaka Yukino, my semen…!!!

「…Iyaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!」

Feeling the hot white liquid in her womb, Shirsaka-san's body convulsed in shock!!
Gyuuuu, her vagina shut tight!!
I-I'm being squeezed……!!

…Byurururururu…Byrurururururu!!

Still…My ejaculation doesn't stop!!!

「…Uuuuuuuuuuuuuu…!!!」

The ejaculation doesn't stooooooopppp!!!!

1. Thanks Yuzuki-sensei ↩

13. The night continues…

…I let it out inside Shirasaka Yukino.
…I completely raped Shirasaka Yukino.
I pierced her virginity!

I'm spitting out rough breath along with Shirasaka-san.
My forehead has sweat dripping from it.
My sweat drops down to Shirasaka-san's body…
Shirasaka-san's insides is tainted by my sperm.
This time my sweat taints Shirasaka-san's white skin…

「…Iyaaaan…I told you that you can't and yet…I told you to stop and yet…!」

Shirasaka-san who's face is about to cry mutters in a small voice…

「…I won't forgive you…I'll never forgive you…!」

Shirasaka-san says 『You』…You're talking about me?!
She wont forgive me…?!!!

…I
Raped my first love.

Shirasaka-san's looking at me with her big eyes…
She's looking at me with eyes of hatred…

「…I hate you!!!」

Hate…「Hate」She clearly said…
Shirasaka-san did…
My most beloved…the class beauty…

「…Disappear in front of me…get away…I don't care if you die!!」

Shirasaka-san who's spilling large teardrops continues to words of cursing and hatred to me…!

You really hate me that much…?!

I'm being hated…!
Even though our bodies is this deeply connected…!!

Even though I ejaculated three times already, my penis is still hard…
It's deeply installed inside Shirasaka-san…It's reaching her womb…
I can still have sex with her…
The two of us are having sex…!

「…Yoshida-kun, get away from Shirasaka-san for a moment」

The female teacher ordered me…
I don't want that.
I still want to be connected with Shirasaka-san.
More, More, I want to ejaculate inside this soft wet hole!

「…I'll let you continue immediately. Take a look at the connecting part, Shirasaka-san's crotch has become a disaster…!!!」

Yuzuki-sensei told me and I looked at the connecting part with Shiraska-san for the first time.
Shirasaka-san's genitalia and thigh is stained red with blood…
…My penis is also dyed with Shirasaka-san's virgin blood.
Just pulling it out a bit makes Shirasaka-san's vagina overflow with red blood and syrupy sperm.
A cruel state…
So this is how virginity is lost…
This would become an injury?

「…S-Sorry. Shiraska-san, D-Did it hurt?」

I instinctively asked something stupid.
That only added fuel to Shirasaka-san's hate…

「…Just pull it out!!! Get out from my insides! You coward!!!」

Cold eyes…eyes of wrath…
She's angry.[1]
She hates me.

「…I'll pull it out」

I said so and pulled out my penis from her inside…
Shirasaka-san's crotch had blood and sperm dripping from the slit…
Restrained, her groin is open in the air.
The white and red viscous liquid flows from her vaginal opening and fell on the floor.

「…Very good. You took that properly?」
「Yes, Ojou-sama」

Katsuko-san's camera recorded it even if it's such a miserable scene.
Everything that we've done…

「…We need to take a souvenir picture shouldn't we?」
「Certainly」

Katsuko-san holds the DSLR and come over this direction.

「…Stop, please don't take images of this appearance!!」

Shirasaka-san's plead is empty as Katsuko-san presses the shutter continuously…
Shirasaka-san's naked body is stained with blood, sweat and 2Sperm3

「…Yoshida-kun, here」

Yuzuki-sensei handed me a towel.

「…Wipe off yourself…leaving the blood like that feels disgusting doesn't it?」

Oh…I get it

「T-Thank you very much」

I used the towel to take off the blood and semen from my penis…

Sensei took a water container with long mouth to serve bedridden people to Shirasaka-san's restraint stand…
I surely thought that She'd let Shirasaka-san drink water but…It was different.
Sensei splashed the water from the container to wash Shirasaka-

san's red genital…
The water also jetted to the entrance of the vagina…!

「…kuuuuu!」

Shirasaka-san screams from the coldness of the water!

「Let's wash the inside too…This water has medicine that suppresses the inflammation」

Saying that, the female teacher used her left hand's forefinger and middle finger opened her genital with a V shape.
…Then injected water inside the vagina!

「…Hora, it's now clean. Oh, the hymen's destroyed as expected」

She's laughing as she observes Shirasaka-san's genital who finished it's first sex…
Shirasaka-san's enduring such humiliating act…

「…Please don't do that. Please let me free. I'll clean it myself!」

Shirasaka-san violently opposes someone else care between her wide open crotch.
However, Sensei…

「…Sorry. I can't let your body free yet. Because, Yoshida-kun needs to ejaculate even more inside you」

Yuzuki-sensei replied as if it was obvious.

「…I don't want it! No more…please don't rape me…Don't violate me anymore…I beg you…!!」

Shirasaka-san begs at the teacher crying.
…However

「…I can't let that. We need to have lots of ejaculation inside you to get you pregnant don't we?」

…Pregnant!
Shirasaka-san's eyes opened widely!

「…Shirasaka-san's recent mens ended two weeks ago. That's why it's possible for you to be fertilized right now…To make it easy to understand, it's your『Dangerous Day』」

The female teacher talks happpily…

「…W-Why?」
「…Oh, didn't you have a physical check up split on gender during the entrance ceremony?」

That's right…Certainly, it was a separated physical check up.
Women had a female doctor in charge of them I think.

「Don't you think it's strange? Even if you're a female teacher, how can you know about the menstruation period of a first year…!」

She knows even that much…!
That means that Yuzuki-sensei knows the menstruation cycle of all the first years!!!
Who's going to get pregnant when…!!

「…N-no…I-I don't want to be pregnant…I don't want to!」

Shiraska-san shakes in fear.
The cloudy liquid oozes out from her crack once again.

「…You can't, you have to bear Yoshida-kun's child!」

…The devil smiled.
…A dreadful fate.

「…You wanted it don't you, Yoshida-kun? Shiraska-san's child?!」

…Impregnate
…Shirasaka-san
…With my sperm

「…Come, make Shirasaka-san a mama!!」

…I
My penis…
Got swells too much once again…

My glans is expanding like crazy!!

「…Help me Kenjiiiiiiiiiiiiiii!!!」

Endou's form is still reflected in the screen.
It seems that the baseball club has finished their practice…
Endou's cleaning the tools with another first year.
Ah…He made a big yawn.
His stupid face.
His vulgar laugh.

「…Kenji…Kenji…!」

I'll never hand Shirasaka-san over to that kind of guy!
I'll make Shirasaka-san get pregnant with my child!
I'll make her a Mama!!
I'll bind her with me for the rest of her life!!

「…Yoshida-san, I finished cleaning Shrirasaka-san's genital. You can now continue!!」

With sensei's words, I leaned on Shirasaka-san's body once again!!!

「…Stop this!! I don't want this! don't come near me!!!!」

Shiraska-san's roar…
I ignored it and pressed my stiff glans against her opening!!!

「…Hiiiiiiiiii!!!」

Nunununununu, I thrust in all at once.
…I rammed it in!
…I pierced her!

「…Iyaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!!!」

I rubbed her breasts to my hearts content!!!
I turn my hands on her back and hugged her tightly!!
Thin…Light…!!!
How fragile…!!
Shirasaka-san's body is in my arms!!

「…I don't want thiiiiis…No moreee…Please, stoooop!!!」

The connecting part is sloppy and wet…
Sweat flows like dripping water…
A man and woman…the indecent smell, stinks…

Sex…we're having sex…
Rape…I'm raping her.
Shirasaka…Yukino…
My Yukino…
Shiraska…Yuknio…

「…Uuu, cummiiiiiiiiiing!!!」

My fourth ejaculation today!
It poured inside her womb!!!

「…I-I'm scareed!!」

Shirasaka-san's afraid of getting pregnant.
Her body's trembling…
Tears spill over…

I shoved in my waist more while ejaculating inside Shirasaka-san…
More, I want to ejaculate more…!!
…I'll ejaculate!!
I'll make Yukino Pregnant!!!!!
I'll make her conceive my child!!!!!

「…That's wonderful. The figure of a beautiful getting raped is splendid. So pitiful, miserable…she lost her future. A fate which has nothing but despair…」

I heard the words of the devil teacher…
However, I'm too absorbed on violating Shirasaka-san…

「Shirasaka Yukino-san…you're the seventh girl who lost her virginity in this mansion…!」

aah…Cumming again. Cumming. Cumiiiiing…!!!
◇ ◇ ◇
I ejaculated inside Shirasaka-san eight times…

Shirasaka-san who's on the restraint tired is completely exhausted.
It seems that he lost consciousness in the middle of sex…

…Is it from the pain of deflowering?
…Or was it from the mental damage from being violated.
I don't know which…

I pulled out the penis that came inside Shirasaka-san multiple times.
The amount of the overflowing cloudy liquid is surprisingly large…!!

…Was she impregnated?
…Is she pregnant?

「…Well done. You had me spend such a fun time. Shirasaka-san can take her rest for today」

The female teacher looks completely satisfied.
She had a face of a child after watching an adventure movie.

「Katsuko…Prepare the room for the two」
「Yes…Ojou-sama」
「…I'll take my rest already so I'll leave the rest to you」

Saying that, Yuzuki-sensei left briskly…
…We were left in the room.

「…Good night, Ojou-sama」

Katsuko-san bowed deeply to the back of Yuzuki-sensei…
Also, I remembered the screen at the back.
When I turn back and looked at it…the screen was completely black.
The exercise is over so it seems that the lights are turned off on the ground already…
Far away, there's a small red emergency light inside the campus shining…
Endou must've gone home already…

「Then, I'll be guiding you to your room Yoshida-sama…」

I was suddenly called out by Katsuko-san, I was surprised…

Sensei's no longer here…Shirasaka-san fainted already.
But, Katsuko-san's wearing a maid uniform while I'm being naked.

…I suddenly got embarrassed.
…I covered myself in a hurry.
Even though I think it's too late.
She's taken a lot of photos of my sex scene with Shirasaka-san…
But as expected…Etiquette..
Ah…I got erect again!
Kuh, is this the effect of the drug?
It's still not calm even though I released it 8 times already!!!

「I-I'll C-C-Change immediately!」

I grabbed my clothes scattered on the floor in a hurry!
…Brief, brief, where's my briefs!

Katsuko laughs at me and spoke.

「Please come without changing!」

Hey…Uhm, I'm naked though?!

「I'll be washing and deliver the clothes tomorrow morning!」

…B-But!!!

「That's why……Please come without changing!」

Katsuko-san's smile is wonderful…!
But…her eyes isn't smiling at all.
In short…this is compulsion.
I'll be naked until morning.
That's the instruction.
I get it…Yes

「…Well then, let's go!」

But…What about Shirasaka-san?
It can't be that they'd just let her stay naked on that stand, can they?
When I thought of that, Katsuko-san picks up the remote of the

restraint stand.

「We'll be carrying Shirasaka-sama like this out of the room!」

I see…This stand has a tire below to move after all!

Katsuko-san operated the remote control lightly.
Wiiiiiiiiiiin, the restraint stand began to move.
Shirasaka-san's body is lifted it it slowly moved out of the room…!

I also walked following that…
I walked in the corridor of the mansion naked.
I can feel the carpet with my sole…
I feel the wind on my half erect penis and my sack contracts too…
Walking around someone else's house naked…somewhat feels strange.

「…Is there something wrong?」

Katsuko-san turned around looking curious.

「N-N-N-N-N-N-N-Nothing…D-Don't mind me!!!」

Katsuko-san giggled.
…I might be getting teased here.

The naked Shirasaka-san was carried along the corridor with her legs wide open…
With her fainted…She lost strength that her limbs are dead tired…

「…Please use this room」

Katsyko-san opened the door of the room with a key…
When I peeped inside…There's' a big double bed on the center and a small refrigerator on the side. There seems to be a shower room on the inside too.
…Isn't this like a love hotel's room!
…I've never entered a love hotel though.
The indirect lighting on the bed is strangely lewd, it feels that way…?!

「…I'll be moving Shirasaka-san to the bed. Please assist me」

Katsuko-san tore of the magic tape on the wrist and ankle of the restrained Shiaraka-san while talking to me.
Uwaa…There's a red bruise take marking.
That's the proof of Shirasaka-san's violent resistance…

「This blouse is no good…I'll dispose of this」

Katsuko-san raised Shirasaka-san's arms and removed her blouse…
It's the white blouse she wore this whole day.
The clean pure white blouse this morning is now covered with sweat, blood and semen, it looks like a worn out dustcloth.

「I'll be taking the bra to laundry」

With the front hook removed, Katsuko-san removed the bra from her.
Shirasaka-san's stripped off…
Once again…I saw the full naked Shirasaka-san…

A beautiful naked, healthy, well balanced body…
The body I tainted.
I can't get enough loving it…
Her womb right now has my cloudy liquid collected in it…

「I'll take care of the upper body, Yoshida-sama please take care of her legs!」

Ah…I see, we're taking her down from the stand.

Katsuko-san holds Shirasaka-san up from her back through her side…!
Katsuko-san's big breasts is gently touching Shirasaka-san's head.
I also hold both of Shirasaka-san's legs…!
Smooth, long and beautiful legs…

「Here we go…One, two, three, okay!!」

Shirasaka-san's body was raised by two people.
Just like that, she was carried towards the bed…
She was quietly laid down the bed.
…Fuuuu

Shirasaka-san's lying naked down the bed facing up…
Exhausted…She's asleep

「…Please get up 5:30 tomorrow. The alarm on the bed board is already set
「…5:30?」

Katsuko-san answers my question smilingly.

「We promised Shirasaka-sama that we'll only play with her body until seven in the morning…」

…Oh right.
…That's what she said.
That was the promise!!!

It's only probably tonight when I can embrace this wonderful body…
Ah…Surely, Yuzuki-sensei already had a schedule for tomorrow morning prepared.
To the very limit of seven o'clock…
…It's her after all.

「…Then, I'll be taking my leave…Good night!」

Katsuko-san bowed and left the room immediately…

「…Aah…W-Wait!」

More, I want to ask more questions…!!!
The door was closed even before my voice reached her.
…I heard an ominous clicking sound!

…Eh?

I ran towards the door in a hurry!
The door knob clattered!

…As expected!!
…We were locked in!!!

The naked Shirasaka-san and me are locked in this love hotel-like

room until morning…!!

…What should I do?
…W-w-w-w-w-w-what should I do?!!!!
C-Calm down…Calm down me.

Let's open the refrigerator for now…
There's a bottle of mineral water.
I opened it and gulped it down…
So I was this thirsty…!!!
Speaking of which, this room's a bit hot…
I see, the bed has no cover…
The temperature is adjusted so the wind won't get on us while sleeping naked…

I thought of it as trivial for a while…
This room's quiet…
I can't even hear the sound of aircon…
Could it be that this room is constructed soundproof?
No…I can hear a sound!!!

That's…Shirasaka-san's small sleeping breath.
Suuu…Suuu…That kind of small breathing.
Every time Shirasaka-san inhales, her chest swells slightly and move up and down.

I approached Shirasaka-san's body.
The beautiful sleeping face is seen closely!
The sweet sleeping breath of Shirasaka-san…I sniffed it!!
The Unconscious Shirasaka-san…!
She won't notice whatever I do to her right now!!!

I…kissed Shirasaka-san's lips quietly.
My first kiss…
I know that this isn't Shirasaka-san's first kiss…
I'm surely her second kiss partner!!!

…Endou.
The dark cloud of jealousy rises inside of me again…!

I licked Shirasaka-san's nose with my tongue.

I kissed the tip of her nose.
I pressed my cheek on her soft cheeks…
I embraced her sleeping body…!

Surely…This chance won't come again[4]
That's why…I'll do everything I can tonight!
I'll thoroughly taste the body of Shirasaka-san!!

I massaged Shirasaka-san's breasts…!
I sucked Shirasaka-san's nipple…!
I locked the soft chest from edge to edge…!
I inserted my tongue in her armpit…!
Her damp sweat is a bit salty.
I enjoyed the feeling of her ass…
Shirasaka-san's ass is wonderful…!
It's like a rubber that's naturally adopting to anything…It feels squishy!!
Then, I caressed her thighs…!!
I licked her legs…
I've already licked her whole body!!
I hold each her toe-finger in my mouth…
…Cute.
Shirasaka-san's toe-finger is so lovely…
I locked her hands…
I licked every gap between her fingers…
The healthy pink fingernails too…
Then back to her head again…
I locked Shirasaka-san's nape from down to top.
Earlobe…her earhole too.
Shirasaka-san's hair poked my nose.
Kunkun, I sniffed her hair…!
Smells good…
This is Shirasaka-san's…
…oooh
I want to release semen again…
I can't endure it anymore!!!

I opened the legs of the unconscious Shirasaka-san by force!
I leaned over her naked body!!
My penis hit her vagina!!!

She's not waking up…!

「…H-Here we go!!!!」

The glans felt the interior of her vagina once again.
…I entered her once again!!!
Rape…we're having sex!!!

Shirasaka-san groaned 「Uuuuu」
She frowned her eyebrows…It seems that she felt pain from the insertion
Still…She's not waking up!
I violated her while she's unconscious!!

We're having sex on top of a bed!
I run my arms around her and hugged her closely!
Her breasts is sticking to my body!!!
We kissed with our lips!
I licked her whole face clean!
I sniffed the scent of her hair!!
Having sex while embracing Shirasaka-san's body feels good!!
…The close contact of both skin!!
…T-T-T-T-T-T-T-T-This is out of this world!!!

I moved my waist rapidly…!
The penis rubbed inside her.
It strongly pushed against her womb!
No good…I'm cumming again!!!!
…Guuuuuuuuuuu!!!!

…Byrurururu, byrurururu!!

I came inside Shirasaka-san without her permission!!
Shirasaka-san doesn't know this ejaculation…!!
The arousal doesn't stop…!!!

Just like that, I continued to rape the fainted Shirasaka-san…
I raped her again and again like a sex doll
I licked her whole body…
Her stomach and breasts is painted with my semen…
…Her lips too.

I ejaculated more than three times inside her vagina…
As long my stamina is still going on…and it's on the limit of my physical strength.

Then, I sank into deep sleep while embracing the naked Shirasaka-san.

---

1. You don't say? ↩
2. Tears ↩
3. Dick tears ↩
4. Nope, you'll be fucking her tomorrow too ↩

★ April 27 Friday

14. …Naked morning

…Pipipi…pipipipipi…

I heard an beeping alarm…
Who set this alarm?
Uwaa, I'm sleepy…I feel heavy.
Uuuu…What's with this terrible fatigue…?
My whole is worn out…
The room's hot…I'm sweating…
My eyes feel gloomy……?!

I opened my eyes absentmindedly…

…Huh? Where's this?
Why am I naked?!
Or rather, what's this soft thing I'm clinging on while I'm naked?
I'm embracing something with my both hands and legs…It's completely a dakimaakura…?!

Ha! I suddenly snapped out!!
I'm still embracing…!
Shirasaka-san…the naked body of Shirasaka Yukino!!!

I looked at Shirasaka-san's face…
Shirasaka-san is already awake
She's looking at me with her big eyes!
With intense expression of hate and scorn!!

「…If you're awake then get off me already!!」

She shouts words of hatred to me…!

「…I can't move because you're on top of me!」

…Eeeh!
Did I sleep all night long on top of the naked Shirasaka-san?!

「…Ah, aaaaaa, sorry」

I jumped out and separate my hand from Shirasaka-san.

「…Kyaaa!」

Shirasaka-san screamed…?!
Ah…My morning wood…!

「…Don't show me that! Get it away…Get it away from me!」

Even if you tell me that…I'm naked so I don't have anywhere to hide it!
Of course, she's the same…
My eyes sees the nude Shirasaka-san…!

「…Don't look at me! Don't look this way! Don't even get close to me!!!」

Shirasaka-san used both her hands to hide her chest then she ran away to the corner of the bed…
That's the body I've played with last night…
I kissed, massaged, licked…violated!
The memories of the pleasure came back instantly… !

「…Coward! Idiot! Maniac! I hate you so much!! I'll never forgive you, I'll never forgive youuuuu!!」

Shirasaka-san kept cursing me like an elementary school girl…
…I

…Click!

Suddenly, the door of the room is unlocked.
The door opened…
Yuzuki-sensei is standing there.
She's having her usual nasty smile…

「…Morning. You're so energetic in the morning. Shirasaka-san」

Shirasaka-san is glaring at Sensei with hatred from her whole body…

「…I won't accept this! I'll never forgive all of you!!!」

…For Shirasaka-san, I already belong to the same group as Yuzuki-sensei.
…Well, that's obvious.
I think it's normal for her to have that impression…

「…Hmm. You won't forgive us, then what will you do?!」

Sensei provokes Shirasaka-san on purpose…!

「…I'll call the police! The school too! I'll send everyone of you in prison!」

Blood rises at Shirasaka-san's head that she's yelling out her feelings!

「…You should all just die! Disappear from my world!!!」

That's the lamentation of the heart of the raped girl…!
I deeply wounded her heart…
Shirasaka-san is in pain…
I thought of hugging her.
Not with lust…I just want to hug her closely.

「…Well, you're free to do what you want. Isn't that fine? Report this to the police and school」

Yuzuki-sensei answered without her complexion changing.

「…By the way, what would Endou-kun think if he discovers that you were raped?」

Shirasaka-san is surprised…!

「…With his lover experienced something cruel, Endou-kun surely can't concentrate playing baseball. Oh…That looks good, he might stop playing baseball」

Sensei's ill natured smile.

「When you getting raped comes to light, we wont be able to hide Endou-kun's voilence…when that happens, the baseball club would be suspended from the summer tournament」

Shirasaka-san's face looks pale…
Tears collect on her big eyes again…

「…If you do that, Endou-kun won't be able to enter the baseball club anymore. He has no choice but to leave the high school…!」

…Shirasaka-san is speechless.
Ufufu, Sensei laughed.

「…Rather than that, Shirasaka-san, I want you to look at something」

When Sensei says that, there's two aluminum picture frame for two big posters came from the corridor…!
The frame has a huge B1 Image…

「…!!!」

That's…Shirasaka-san's image last night!!!
One of it is the Shirasaka-san tied up on the restraint stand naked… the virgin blood and semen dripping from the crack of her vagina.
Of course, her face is clearly seen.
To top it off…There's some embarrassing text written on top and bottom of the image of Shirasaka-san…!

『First year second class, Shirasaka Yukino. I lost my virginity from rape!!!』

The other is a picture of me and Shirasaka-san in the middle of sex…!
It must be taken from above…My face isn't clearly seen but the naked body of Shirasaka-san is seen well.
The expression of agony from being raped by a man…
The connecting part where my penis is being accepted is distinct…
The caption here is 『Shirasaka Yukino. This is the moment I lost my virginity!』
Oh…This is the image of her having her hymen broken.

「…It looks good doesn't it? Katsuko's really a good cameraman!」

With her own foolishness from last night shown again, Shirasaka-san is…

Covering her face in agony of despair…
Her pink nipple and thin pubic hair is exposed…

「…What do you intend to do with this photo?」

Shirasaka-san asked Sensei quietly…

「I wonder what should I do? Should I let Endou-kun see it? If you want, I'll decorate the baseball club's room with it!」
「…Stop that!!」
「…Fufufu. That's a joke. There's no way I would do that, wouldn't I?」

The female teacher smiled on her victory…
Sensei's completely tormenting Shirasaka-san…
She's enjoying this…

「…We'll have it displayed in the mansion for the time being. Let's see, the dining room? I'll have it there until the summer tournament of the baseball club ends…」

In other words…she doesn't have the intention of letting Shirasaka-san free until the district tournament(The baseball club shouldn't be able to go to Koshien1)

「What should I do?」

Shirasaka-san asked Sensei weakly.
Those words indicate her 『surrender』 to sensei.
Sensei laughed and answered like she failed…

「For the time being, you'll submit your body to me until seven this morning…I'll think about what's ahead later」

Shirasaka-san hangs her head warily…
Looking at the clock…It's still 5:40.
We still have an hour and twenty minutes…

「…Of course, you have to attend school normally. As a teacher, so I can't let you take absence with just this…」

The devil teacher says that the virgin rape as 『Just this』 …

「…Shirasaka-san is an honor student so she won't be skipping school after all!」

She'll go to school like usual the morning after she was raped…
She's going to meet her friends and her lover…
Of course, she can't tell anyone she was violated…

「…Yes, I understand」

Shirasaka-san answered while looking down.

「…Uhm, can I wash my body? I can't go to school if I'm like this…!」

That's Shirasaka-san's urgent wish…
Shirasaka-san's been naked since yesterday.
Her whole body has blood, sweat, and semen clinging on it…
Our body's stinks with lewdness!!

「…I can't meet Kenji with this dirty body…!!!」

Sensei opened the door inside the room.

「…That one's the shower room. The front is the dressing room and the back is the bathroom. Let's see…you have ten minutes. Get yourself clean within ten minutes…」
「…O-Okay」

The naked Shirasaka-san jumped off the bed and trot towards the shower room…
The well proportioned naked body ran right in front of me like the wind…
…Shower.
Shirasaka-san is taking a shower…

「…Now then, Yoshida-kun. Do you want to appreciate Shirasaka-san's Shower scene?」

Sensei's looking me treating me like a fool.

「…D-Do you have another surveillance camera again?」

It's sensei after all.
There might be a camera installed even in the shower room.

「…You're such an idiot, Yoshida-kun. There's no way we would install a camera on the bathroom don't we? The lens would be clouded with steam and that's bad for the machine, don't you agree?」

…I see.
…There's no camera.

「…That's why, we do this!」

The female teacher pushed a switch hidden on the bed board…
Then, the wall side adjacent to the shower room began to move without making a sound…?!
Inside the wall is a thick glass…On the other side of the glass is Shiraska-san taking a shower…I-I can see it…!

「…This room becomes a magic mirror2」

As expected of Yuzuki-sensei…!
Or rather, what a magical mansion!!3

The shower room is covered with white tiles.
And then…I don't know why but, there's a handrail attached here and there on the wall.
It looks like a remodeled house where elderly people exists…
It doesn't look that strange because it harmonized with the design of the entire shower room.
No…The handrail doesn't matter right now.
Right now, Shirasaka-san is…!!

Shirasaka-san is washing away the dirt in her whole body with hot water…
The flow of water drips smoothly at Shirasaka-san's beautiful bodyline…
Speaking of which, it's the first time I saw Shirasaka-san's standing naked body…
Looking at it from a slightly remote place…It's really beautiful…
The beautiful breasts isn't big but still bouncy…

The standing pink nipples…
The line of her round ass…
Her thin and long legs…
I enjoyed myself with Shirasaka-san's naked body for a while…
…Huh?
Shirasaka-san's crying while taking a shower?
Tears are…overflowing…

「…Once she's closed in a place where she's alone…Her heart won't be able to endure it」

The female teacher explained…
I see, Shirasaka-san doesn't know we're peeping at her…
The crying Shirasaka-san places the nozzle of the shower between her crotch…
She's washing her genitals…!
She's pouring hot water on her vagina while crying…!!

「…Idiot, that kind of shower won't be able to flush the semen that poured into her womb」

The female teacher laughs at Shirasaka-san…
Shirasaka-san on the other side of the mirror is desperate…
She's inserting her finger inside her slit and scrapes the semen from inside…
My semen…while crying…
I got aroused with Shirasaka-san's tears…
My penis is piercing the heavens!!!!

「…Oh? aroused? It can't be helped…should we go in too?」

The female teacher looks at my erection and speaks while smiling wryly.

「…G-Go, w-where?」
「…Isn't that obvious? The shower room!」

Yuzuki-sensei's lips distorts to a devilish smile…

「The shower room here doesn't have a lock…ufufufu」

We walked in just like that and opened the door of the shower

room…!
We entered the dressing room and immediately opened the glass door of the bathroom!!

「…Kyaaa!!!!」

Shirasaka-san screamed when Yuzuki-sensei intruded…!!
I see the spectacle I saw from the magic mirror…!!!

「…We're about to reach ten minutes, Shirasaka-san」
「I'm coming…I'm going out already…!」

Shirasaka-san rushed to stop the water and return the shower head to the original position.

「…Just keep doing what you're doing」

The female teacher declares coldly.

「…Eh?」

Surprised, Shirasaka-san turned around…

「…Ufufu, Shirasaka-san. Is your body clean now?」
「…Err, uhm…mostly…」
「…Is that so? That's great!」

The female teacher had a wicker smile…

「Now that you're clean…let's have you get raped once again…!」

Shirasaka-san's naked body trembled in fear…!

「…N-No…I'm already done with that…!!」

Shirasaka-san rejected while shedding tears.
The memories when she lost her virginity from rape must've returned…
However…Sensei is…

「…You promised didn't you? We still have time before Seven o'clock!!!」

Shirasaka-san can do nothing but surrender to the word 『Promise』…

「…Understood. I'll do…I'll do as you say…」

Fufufu, the female teacher laughed…

「…Yoshida-kuuun, come in! Shirasaka-san seems okay having sex with you!!!」

Sensei calls out my name.
…I
…I
I…jumped inside the shower room immediately…
My erect penis swells as if it's going to burst…!

「…Shirasaka-san, place your hand on the handrail there!」

Sensei ordered Shirasaka-san.
The hot water from the shower drops on Shirasaka-san's head to bottom…
She grabbed the handrail just like Sensei instructed her.
She turned her back at us…
However…the handrail is a bit low so Shirasaka's body is bending forward…

「…Stick out your ass…open your legs…It's a sexual position called standing back[4], do you get it?」
「…I don't」

Of course, Shirasaka-san doesn't know sexual positions.

「…It's easy. You're going to get violated from the back while you're standing…That's all…get it?」

Shirasaka-san doesn't answer.
She just strongly endure while putting strength to her body.

「…Get it?!」
「…Yes」

When asked strongly once again…Shirasaka-san finally answered.

Then, she thrust out her ass and opened her legs…
Shirasaka-san's white back has hot water flowing from the shower…
The hot water transmits to her body…and drips down from the tip of her nipples…
Or towards her ass…
Hot water slips on her round ass…
Trembling…Shirasaka-san's trembling from the fear of being violated by a man…!!

「Stick your ass out even more! You have to show your important place to Yoshida-kun clearly!!」
「…Yes」

The beautiful ass was pushed out even more…
The ray of lighting from the bright shower room lights up Shirasaka-san's genital area…
The crack I tormented a lot last night is a bit swelling…
The perfectly closed crack is slightly open like a door.
Ooh…The anus I didn't see that much yesterday is now seen clearly…
This is Shirasaka-san's anus…

「…Then, Yoshida-kun, please violate Shirasaka-san a lot!」

The female teacher ordered me lightly…
However…I
The Shirasaka-san and me last night drank some drug…
But…The drug's already worn out.
But just like yesterday, my desire to violate her is…already!

「…What's wrong? You're tired from having sex with Shirasaka-san?」

…That's not true!!
It's not, however…

「…Then, Shirasaka-san beg for it…『Yoshida-kun, have sex with me』!」
「…I-I won't say that!!」

Shirasaka-san's ass moved…
The anus has become even narrower…!

「…Shirasaka-san, what's your promise?」

Yuzuki-sensei spoke coldly…!
Shirasaka-san's body trembled and it stopped…

「…Y-Yoshida-kun…have sex with me…!」

I can't see her face because her ass is facing this way…
But, I certainly heard it…that Shirasaka-san…!
The pure Shirasaka Yukino…to me!!

「…Rape Yukino!!」

…I
I gripped Shirasaka-san's round and small ass with both of my hands!!!
The swelling penis touches her entrance…!!!
But…Shirasaka-san's vagina isn't wet unlike yesterday…!!!
Not minding even though it's not wet…I pushed in my glans!!!
「…aaaaaaaaaa!!!」

Shirasaka-san screamed…!!
Her body bent greatly and endured it…!!
Both her hands gripped the handrail on the wall strongly…!!
The hot water pours down from the shower to Shirasaka-san's body.

…Murimurimurririri!!!

The friction of Shirasaka-san's insides from accepting my glans is… amazing…!
Only half of the penis is inside the tight vagina…!!!

「…Use your waist and pierce her a lot. It'll loosen soon enough!」

I began my piston, following sensei's advice…!

「…No, it hurts, it hurts, it hurtssss!!!」

Sex from the back…while standing!!!

Shirasaka-san's scream arouses me further!!
The glans pierced her…!
Just as Sensei said…while I was repeating my piston, Shirasaka-san's vagina loosens an gets wet!!!
Finally, all of my penis up to the root is going inside Shirasaka-san!
The tip of my glans pierces her uterus, pierce! pierce!

「…Iyaaaaaaaaaaa, iya, iyaaaaaan… 」

Shirasaka-san's scream echoes in the small shower room…!
The sound of the shower can't erase her big panting!!!

「…Yosohida-kun, take a look at the mirror 」

Being told by the female teacher, I looked at the mirror!
The other side of the magic mirror I'm looking at a while ago!
That's a big mirror.
The mirror projects me and Shirasaka-san copulating like beasts…!
We're having sex while taking a shower…rape!!!
Looking at it, Shirasaka-san's beautiful breasts shake every time I pierce her…!
Shirasaka-san has an expression of desperately enduring from being violated from the back…!

…THen

The one violating Shirasaka-san…me.
My ugly look…!

My face that was hit by Endou the day before yesterday is in the mirror…
Blue from the internal bleeding…bruise here and there…and the area of my left eye swelling…
Ugly…it's really an ugly face.
A man with that face is violating Shirasaka-san…
…Shriasaka-san's so pitiful.
She lost her virginity to a man like me…

I was suddenly attacked by a huge guilt…
There's no way an ugly man like me can violate such a beautiful girl like her…!

…However!!!
I won't stop…I want to violate her more…!!!
I want to violate Shirasaka-san!!!
I want to make her pregnant!!
…Aaaah!!

「…Nooo…Nooooo…I don't want thiiiiis!!!」

I massaged Shirasaka-san's breasts from the back
I twists her nipples…!!!
Shirasaka-san's beautiful back…I licked it, I licked and liked again!!!
With the stimulation of the hot water from the shower…my sexual feeling rise even more!!!

「…Uuuuu, C-Cumming…Cumiing…S-Shirasaka-saaaan…!!!」

Semen is welling up!!

「…I don't want thiiiiis…Don't cum anymore…I beg you!!!」
「…I-I can't…I-I'm already going to cum! I'm going to ejaculate inside S-Shirasakasan!!!」
「…Spare me!! Don't let it out inside Yukinooooooooo!!!!」

…Byrururu, byu, byrurururu!!

I cling to Shirasaka-san's breasts from the back…I pierce her with my waist with all my might…and ejaculated!!!
It's pouring inside Shirasaka-san's womb!!

「…Aaaaaaa, hooot!!!!」

Shirasaka-san's cry of despair…
It's reaching…Towards Shirasaka-san's deepest part…It's reaching!!!

…Byrururu, byrururururuurur!!!

My morning semen…the ejaculation doesn't stop…!!

「…I even asked you to spare cumming inside…!」

Shirasaksa-san cries quietly…
However…we're still connected…!!!

Right now…there's only the sound of the hot water dripping from the shower room echoing.

---

1. Koehien Stadium, where the Japan National High School Baseball Tournament is held ↩
2. If you watch JAVs, you might've heard this, or maybe detective shows, where they interrogate one person and people talk on the other side of the mirror ↩
3. Kuro****-land! A magical place to lose your virginity! Get pregnant! And love dicks! ↩
4. Tachi bakku ↩

15. Inside the car…

The shower's faucet was closed.
The flow of the hot water stops.
Silence came to the shower room…

「…What should I do?…If I get pregnant…I'll be troubled…I'll get in trouble…!」

Shirasaka-san who accepted my semen in her womb spoke while crying.
I pulled out my penis from inside her.
White semen comes out gently…

「It's not something troubling. Just give birth…!」

Sensei said something irresponsible calmly.

「…I don't want to bear this person's child!!!」

This person…That's me.
For Shirasaka-san, I'm no longer an ordinary classmate…
Rapist, a criminal…Anyway, her enemy.
…The person who defiled her.

「…Then? He might be a good person if you try to go out with him though」

Sensei's making fun of Shirasaka.

「I'm going out with Kenji!…I don't want to bear a child of a man other than Kenji…!」

If you say that far…
Endou's that much to you…
…Dammit!

「Then, if you got pregnant with Yoshida-kun's child you're going to abort it? You're cruel. You don't think that abortion is murder on women's point of view?」

「……!!」

Shirasaka-san fell silent from Sensei's words.

「That's right, do you know this? The probability of getting pregnant from rape is higher than having love sex. Female body ovulates instinctively when they're surprised from a forced sex. Your womb will also do that…!」

Shirasaka-san covered her face and cried…
While she's naked in the shower room…
Right now…Her thin waist is filled with my semen.

I…am already prepared.
To be together with Shirasaka-san all the time…
To make her mine…
…I have to impregnate Shirasaka-san.

I'll make her bear my child and service me throughout my life. I'll make her.
There's nothing left for me but that…

There's no way Shirasaka-san will ever come to like me.
In past, present, and even in future…
The possibility will always be zero.

「How long are you going to cry?…It's done already, let's eat breakfast already」

Sensei ignored the crying Shirasaka-san and made that suggestion.

「…Yoshida-kun, there's a bath towel on the shelf over there so wipe Shirasaka-san」
「…O-Okay」

I opened the shelf of the dressing room and took two big white bath towels.
I'm sure that this is a high class item, it feels so fluffy to touch…
I placed a bath towel over the shoulders of the crying Shirasaka-san.
Err…How should I wipe her?

「…Don't touch me. I can wipe myself!」

Shirasaka-san glares at me…!
…I

「…Shirasaka-san, I asked Yoshida-kun to wipe your body」

The devil smiled…

「…We still have an hour before seven o'clock」

Shirasaka-san bites her lip and surrenders…
She muttered without looking at my face.

「…Please wipe me up」

I toweled Shirasaka-san's body while embracing her…
It absorbed all of the water…
I reconfirmed the softness of her chest on top of the towel…
I wiped her ass…and her crack…
Then her beautiful stomach, navel…and crotch…
Lastly, I let the towel slide to her thin legs…

Shirasaka-san silently…like a doll, let me do as I please.

Meanwhile…Sensei called out Katsuko-san from the extension phone in the room.
Within almost a minute, Katsuko-san came carrying breakfast on a big wagon…
Meals are put on a silver tray…
There's clothes prepared under the wagon too.

「…Can…I put, on my clothes?!」

Shirasaka-san craves to wear something on her body while having a sorrowful expression.
She desperately tries to hide her body in the bath towel…

「…Not yet. You have to stay naked until the meal ends! Also, take off your towel. This room isn't that cold even if you're naked isn't it?!」

Sensei's cold blooded order…!
Certainly, the temperature here's comfortable…

「…I don't need breakfast. I'm not that hungry」

Looking down disappointedly, Shirasaka-san takes off her bath towel…

「…That's no good. You didn't eat much last night did you? It'll be long before the lunch you know? It's a problem if you fall down during classes. Eat even if you have to force yourself!」

Sensei persuades Shirasaka-san logically…

「…Understood」

…Naked breakfast.
I'm also naked for some reason…
Shirasaka-san and I lined up in the bed.
Katsuko-san made the wagon a table…
Sensei and Katsuko-san stands in front of us like a prison guard and observed us taking a meal.
The contents of the meal is…bread and milk. Then, there's a salad.
As expected Shirasaka-san doesn't easily eat those food.

「…This morning's meal doesn't have any strange drugs. You have to go to school today. I won't do something foolish like that」

That's true but…Sensei lied a lot…

「I baked this bread! It's delicious so please eat!」

Katsuko-san's refreshing smile…
That face was deceiving her all this time…

Still, she resolved herself…Shirasaka-san tears off a small part of the bread and throw it to her mouth.

「…Delicious」

I took a bite too…Delicious.
I noticed that my body requests nourishment the moment I ate a mouthful…
So I was this hungry…!
The big shock from yesterday continues so my sense of hunger

seems to be paralyzed.
I ate the meal greedily…
I gulped down the milk…
When she saw my state, Shirasaka-san also began to eat normally.
Naked…on top of bed…Shirasaka-san's eating a meal…

Yuzuki-sensei looks at our state satisfied.
It's like an expression of an owner in the middle of feeding a pet…

「…That's fine. We should be heading to school soon. Suit up」

6:20…We finally got our permission after our meal.
Furthermore, because the school starts at 8: 30, I think that it's a bit too early.
The school right now has only the members of the athletic clubs having their morning training…?!
「…First, this is your underwear」

Katsuko-san handed me the brief and shirt that was washed.

「Shirasaka-san's panties are already no good so I've prepared this…」

That's a light blue silk panty.
A flashy laced bra and panty…
I can understand that it's a high quality article even just by looking at it.

「…You can have that. I prepared a correct size by looking at your physical checkup data. Even if you return that, Katsuko and I can't wear that…!」[1]

Is everything according to Sensei's Keikaku?[2]
Shirasaka-san stood up and took the panty…
She must be embarrassed…She turned her ass at me and wore it….

「…You can't, do it where Yoshida-kun can see it!」

Her back trembled…
Shiraskaa-san timidly turned towards me…and wore her panty in front of me…
Ooh…her pubic hair is covered with a thin cloth…

However, Shirasaka-san in panties gives off a different charm from when she's naked!
Next, she wore her bra…
This bra is a back hook…
Shirasaka-san bent forward…
And her jiggly breasts is pulled by gravity…!
She holds to the extension of the bra, placed her hands to her back…and hooked it up!
The pink nipples are hidden!
And yet…the figure of a girl in bra is beautiful…
How lovely she is…Shirasaka-san!!
Shirasaka-san's wearing a light-blue silk underwear…!
The high quality underwear emphasized Shirasaka-san's beautiful proportion even more!
The chest and crotch covered with silk cloth…and it's contrast with white and thin waist and long glossy legs is beautiful.
As expected…She's a beauty!

「…I've also prepared a new school blouse」

Katsuko-san handed a white blouse to Shirasaka-san…
Furthermore, she put on a clean washed skirt…
Tied up a pink ribbon around her neck…
She wore the jacket of her uniform.

It's the usual Shirasaka-san.
The Shirasaka-san in uniform I'm looking at everyday.

…Did I really just embrace this person for this whole past night?
…Did I ejaculate inside this body a lot of times?

Right now, the beautiful girl in front of me…If someone told me that 『She's completely a virgin』, I would believe it.
It's clear she's pure and clean.
I can't think of nothing but a pure virgin…

「…Okay, let's dry up your wet hair!」

Katsuko-san said and took out a dryer.

「I'll…do it myself」

Shirasaka-san was ignored.

「Just leave it to me!」

Saying that, Katsuko-san combed Shirasaka-san's hair and dried it up…
The glossy hair of a beautiful girl…

I was just looking at that spectacle…
I'm just fascinated by Shirasaka-san…

I thought once again that I really like her…!
◇ ◇ ◇

After we finished wearing our uniform, we went to the entrance hall of the mansion…

Huh?
Shirasaka-san's walking is strange?
She's somewhat pigeon toed…She's walking totteringly as if her waist is in pain…?!

「Shirasaka-san, it seems that your crotch is still in in pain?! It can't be helped, you lost your virginity from from forced sex after all… That'll feel like that for two to three days!」

Sensei spoke laughingly…
Shirasaka-san glared at Sensei.

At the entrance gall, the butler, Morishita was waiting…

「…Good morning Ojou-sama. The car has been prepared」

The butler bowed respectfully…

「Thanks, Morishita…oh, what do you have there?」

Looking at it, there's one school bag on top of the chair at the side of the entrance.
I left my bag inside sensei's car so…This is the bag Shirasaka-san brought to the mansion.
If I recall it correctly, it was left behind the dining room…

「…T-That's my bag!!」

Shirasaka-san ran to the bag with unsteady steps…
She took her phone inside it.
She turned on the phone and looked at the incoming.

「…Kenji, as expected」

Shirasaka-san muttered sadly…
She promised to call Endou last night…

…Tsk, she's going 「Kenji, Kenji, Kenji」everywhere!

「…Let's go, Shirasaka-san!」

Sensei urged Shirasaka-san with a strong tone…
When the butler opened the big door entrance, Sensei's car has already stopped in the front…

Board in the car…
Sensei's taking the driver seat just like yesterday. The two of us are in the rear seats.
However, the second row seat is folded this morning so I sat down on the third row.
Shirasaka-san places her body towards the window tightly to be separate from me as much as possible…
…I'm quite hated.

The sound of engine…Kyurururun, totototototo…!
The car started…
We went from the residence to the national highway…
I mostly understand the location of Sensei's house.
The school is closer than I thought…it's just several minutes distance when you ride a car.
While Yuzuki-sensei is driving, she talks to Shirasaka-san over the rearview mirror…

「…What do you think Shirasaka-san? How does it feel to lose your virginity? It hurts? Harsh? Sorrowful?」
「…I don't think that's something you talk to people!」
「I want to hear your honest impression!…What are you feeling

right now?!」

The eyes of Sensei under the black glasses through the mirror is cold.

「…It feels the worst…I want to die!」

Sensei laughed.

「You can't die, Shirasaka-san. If you die selfishly, I'll reveal everything to the public…the video of Endou-kun's violence, your virginity loss video, everything! Oh, should I rather exhibit on the world using the internet? Endou-kun might follow you from the shock!」
「…Sensei, that's unfair!」

I think it's too harsh than unfair.

「…That's right. I'm unfair. What's wrong with being unfair? I'm living, I have to enjoy my life!」
「I'm not living to amuse Sensei!」
「Oh, didn't you know? Every human living are all existing for my amusement」

Uwaa…『All of humanity』That's something big.

「…But, you two are much more interesting than the other children. Yoshida-kun and you…makes me have so much fun right now. It's a solid feeling!」
「…Please spare me already. I beg of you!」

Un…Well, anyone would hate when they're told「Fun, solid」…
Or rather, I'm also one of the people concerned…
As expected, I feel I'm not fully satisfied with it…

「Now then, what should I do?!…It's about seven o'clock, the promised time…」

That's right…Yesterday, Sensei promised Shirasaka-san「Until Seven tomorrow morning」…
I don't think this person sticks to her agreement however…

I can see the school building from a distance…
…We're about to reach the school.

「…Shirasaka-san, you see…I, I'm the same age as you when I lost my virginity too. My thoughts when I had my first sex…『Oh, When am I going to die?』 You see, I believed that women can live forever unless you lose your virginity. It's strange isn't it? But, I believed it…yet, I lost my virginity…It's foolish isn't it?」

Sensei's eyes is dark…It's filled with madness…

「…As a woman who lost her virginity from being raped by a man, I had a trauma with sex. I feel fear from sex and I can't have sex with someone I love. There's a lot of people who lived their life without being able to experience the pleasure of having sex. On that respect…you're lucky」

…Eh? What do you mean?

「…For you, no matter how bad you are in sex, there's a partner who'll forcibly rape you…」

Her eyes looks at me through the mirror…

「…You're in good luck!」

With that said…I can have sex with Shirasaka-san from now on…? Can I embrace her?

「…I don't want that. I don't want to do it with Yoshida-kun again!」

She said it with a straight face…!
…S-Shirasaka-san!!!

「…Oh? Why?」

Sensei's laughing…she's having a mocking face.
This demon's enjoying it!

「…Because…I hate him…someone like Yoshida-kun…!」

Shirasaka-san looked down…however, she said it clearly

「…Hmm, what do you know about him?」

…That's right. We don't know anything about each other yet.
Nothing has began with me and Shirasaka-san!!!

「…I don't want to know. Nothing about Yoshida-kun!!!」

…Shirasaka-san!!
You're going to refuse me that far!

「…Oh? Is that so?」

The car…entered the high school site.
We run towards the side of the baseball club's ground…
Eh? I didn't notice it yesterday but the parking lot of the teaching staff goes this way…?!
Sensei…you're going this way on purpose…?!!!

「…Well, it looks like the baseball club kids are energetic. They're even practicing this early in the morning!」

At the ground…The baseball club members are doing a base running!
…I can see Endou too!!!

「…Kenji」

Shirasaka-san's eyes caught Endou…
Not me…Endou
Tears gently suspend on Shirasaka-san's eyes…

…dammit!
You like Endou that much!!!

「…Oh well, Shirasaka-san. You really thought that I'd allow you to speak the name of your lover, didn't you?!」

Yuzuki-sensei stopped the car on the shadow of the tree on the side…

There's a bush of grass so we can't be seen immediately from the ground…
Though, we can see the baseball club's exercise scene from inside the car…

「…W-What are you intending to do?!」

Shirasaka-san asks Sensei in surprise.
Sensei turned around from the driver's seat and smiles at the two of us…!

「Not me, the two of you are going to do it…!」
「…Eh!」
「…There's still 18 minutes until 7:00!」
「…Could it be!」
「…That's right. Your guess is on point…Shirasaka-san, you're going to have car sex with Yoshida-kun here. You haven't done Car sex yet, do you?」

The color of blood on Shirasaka-san's face changed…

「…I can't do that!」

That's right…to have sex while watching Endou-kun practicing.
It was a video last night but this time, we're closer!
The car's around thirty meters away from Endou!
If Shirasaka-san shouts asking for help, Endou will be able to hear it clearly…!!

「…Then, why don't you ask for Endou-kun's help? Try shouting with 『Help me』 with a loud voice…In exchange, Endou-kun and everyone in the baseball club will see your embarrassing photos, you don't don't you?!」

Sensei takes a transparent folder with the pictures out from the dashboard of the car…
That's the photos from last night…
The naked Shirasaka-san being violated by me…!

「…You coward! Maniacs!!!」

Shirasaka-san curses Sensei as tears collect in her eye…!

「Say anything!」

Sensei pushed some kind of button…!
Then, the seat Shirasaka-san and I'm sitting reclined by itself…!
The rear seat became flat!
I see…to make the car sex easier, Sensei brought this big minivan!!
3!

「…You want to do it don't you, Yoshida-kun? Car sex with Shirasaka-san?! Don't you want to embrace Shirasaka-san in her uniform?!」

…I
…Right now, I want to make a mess of Shirasaka-san here.
…I want to humiliate her.
…I want to violate her and ejaculate with all my might!!!

「…Why don't you just do just do what you like?!!!!」

The despaired Shirasaka-san lied down on the seat in powerlessness…
Tears shed like rain.

「…That's wrong, Shirasaka-san. You're going to have sex with Yoshida-kun. You have to prepare yourself!」
「…Prepare?!」
「…Open your blouse, raise your bra and show your own nipples to Yoshida-kun」

Shiraska-san looked at me…
She's' looking at me with eyes of great resentment…

「…Hurry up!」

Shiraska-san's white finger…is taking off the buttons of her blouse while trembling…
The light blue bra that I saw a while ago…
The trembling fingers tucked up her bra…!
Poron, the beautiful breasts comes out…!
Her pink nipples…!

「…15 minutes more. Yoshida-kun, indulge yourself as much as

you want!」

…I attacked Shiraska-san!
I buried my face in her chest…!!
I lick her nipples…lick…suck!
I feel the softness of her breasts though my cheeks!!
…I can't endure it anymore!!
I took off my belt and lowered my pants…!
My erection is on the maximum!
I lowered my brief and my penis jumped out!

「…Kyaa!!」

Shirasaka-san saw my dark red penis and screamed…!

「…Shirasaka-san, get on all fours. Turn your face towards the ground. Get violated like a dog while you're watching the baseball club's practice!!」
「…That's」
「…Hurry up!」

Hurried by Sensei…Shirasaka-san made a dog pose…!
I raised Shiraska-san's skirt…!
Just like her bra, the light-blue silk panty that's wrapping up her ass comes out…!

「…Now, copulate!!」

I pulled down the silk panties…!
Shirasaka-san's anus and lewd lower lip…!
I pressed my penis there…!

「…N-noo!」

The moment my hot penis touched her…Shirasaka-san's body trembled!
Just like that, I pushed in quickly!
The viscous liquid from the morning shower remained so my penis quickly got buried to the root…!

「…S-Stooop…I-It hurts…take it out, save me Kenjiiii…!!!」

On the other side of the car window, Shiraska-san's asking for help from Endou who's in the ground!!
Even though she's completely connected with me…It's Endou's name again…!!!

Uooooooooooo!!!!

I pierce Shirasaka-san badly…!
Shiraska-san's insides is hot…it's tightening…it's twining all over!!!
The feeling of Shirasaka-san's folds.
…Feels good!
…It feels good!
…It feels good!
Shirasaka-san's small and moist meat pot is tightening with penis!
The suspension of the car shakes because of my intense movement…!
If someone else looks at it, anyone will understand that someone's doing a car sex!

「The two of you are like stray dogs. You're having sex like animals…!」

Sensei looks at our sex while laughing…!

「Nooooo!…Stoop!…This isn't me…this isn't mee!」

Shirasaka-san's denying the reality that she's being violated.

「Noooo!…This isn't meeeee!…This is sooo…wrooong…! Help me Kenjiiii, help meeee!!!!!」

Shirasaka-san is looking at Endou who's practicing with the baseball club at a distance…!
He's having an earnest face while taking the coach's advice…!
Not knowing that his lover is being violated near him…!

「…Kenjiiiiiiiii!!!」

…You're still going to call Endou's name?!
I made my waist movement's even more intense!!
…Uuuu!!!
Every time I pierce her, the feeling of Yukono's ass feels wonderful!

Puripuri, the feeling of her skin!!
Every time I move my waist with an intense piston, it's making a a banging noise!
The car's shaking!
That shaking is made from sex!

「…I-It feels good!…S-Shirasaka-san's body is the best!」
「…Stop this already! I don't want this! It feels gross! Kenji, save mee!」

While my penis fucks her thick pot, I stretch my hand through her side and massaged Yukino's breasts![4]
The feeling of her breasts when it's pulled by gravity on all fours position is different. I pinched her nipples with my thumb and forefinger!

「…Iyaaaaan! Don't do this!」

Sensei laughs…!

「…Shirasaka-san, you're connected with Yoshida-kun! You're having sex…you understand?!」
「…I don't want to understand it…I don't want this…this is a dram…if this is a dream, wake me up…![5]」
「Sorry to disappoint you. But this isn't a dream. Accept Reality… Shirasaka-san, who's the one violating you right now?」

Shirasaka-san doesn't answer…She's gritting her teeth and enduring the pain!

「…Answer! Who's the man you're having sex right now? If you don't, I'll be calling Endou-kun here!! I'll show him how you're being ravished like a dog!」

The female teacher torments Shirasaka-san's heart!
I scoop even deeper to violate her body!!!

「…Hora, answer already! Who's the one you're having sex right now?!!!」

Shirasaka-san continues to be violated while on all fours!!!

「…Uuuu…Y-Yoshida-kun…It's Yoshida-kuuun!!」
「What? I can't hear it well? Speak out in a louder voice, make it clear!!」
「Y-Yoshida-kun is…I-I'm being ravished by Yoshida-kuuuuun…I'm being violated…Nooo…Don't rape meee…Yoshida-kuuuuun stooooop!!!」

Shirasaka-san calls out my name while crying…!
Not Endou…but my name!!!
Inside her, my penis swells greatly!
The car shakes even further!
I'm about to reach my limit

「Uoooo…S-Shirasaka-san…I-I'm cumming! I'm going to cum inside Shirasaka-san again!!!」
「…Nooo, stooop! Don't cum anymore!!」
「Uuu! …Here we go, here we go, Cumming, cummin! Yukinooooooooooooo!!!」
「You can't!! Stop! Yoshida-kuuuun!!!」

Shirasaka-san is screaming my name…!
AT that moment…I ejaulated inside her womb intensely!!!

「I-It's coming…It's coming in again…the hot stuff is…aaaaa…!」

…My penis pulsates intensely inside Shirasaka-san's vagina!!
…I'm sending in my semen like a pump!

「…Ufufu, a lot of it is coming out!…Who's semen is flowing inside Shirasaka-san's womb? Hora, answer!」

Shirasaka-san answered cryingly Sensei's question!

「Uuuu…Uuu…Uuu…Yoshida-kun's…Yoshida-kun's semen is coming inside me…Nooo…Don't make me say it…It's still coming in…a child…I don't want a child…Bakaa…bakaaa!」

Shirasaka-san's bursting into tears while still connected to me…
She buried her face to the seat while still on all fours and sobs…
She's not looking at Endou anymore…
She's not calling Endou's name anymore…

Shirasaka-san's sheds tears while semen pours inside her womb!

---

1. We've got better ass than you -Katsuko and Yuzuki-sensei ↩
2. Keikaku means plan ↩
3. What the hell, Big-Mini ↩
4. He now starts to call her Yukino instead of Shirasaka-san ↩
5. WAKE ME UP INSIDE! ↩

16. Come, she's a prostitute…

「…Okay. It's seven o'clock[1] Yoshida-kun, get off from Shirasaka-san」

Being told by Sensei…I gripped Shirasaka-san's ass and pulled out my penis from inside her.
I wanted to enjoy the reverberations of being connected with her for a bit but, it can't be helped.
My semen is dripping from the all fours Shirasaka-san's ass to her thighs…

「The semen would stain her skirt…Yoshida-kun, wipe it」

Sensei said, she took a wet tissue from that was on the passenger seat and handed it over to me.

「…I-I'll wipe it off, Shirasaka-san, d-don't move」

I took the wet tissue and dry out the semen dripping on Shirasaka-san's thighs.
Next, I put a tissue on Shirasaka-san's genitals.

「…Ahn!」

While I was grinding it, Shirasaka-san leaked out a seductive voice…

「…That's fine already. Yoshida-kun, you can stop now」

Shirasaka-san told me off but there's still semen dripping from her slit…

「…B-But there's still」
「I told you to leave me alone!!!」

Shirasaka-san on all fours raised her body…
She rolled back her skirt to cover her raw thighs from me.
After that, she put on her panty again…

「If you leave that then the semen would drip down during class!!」

Sensei mocks Shirasaka-san happily.

「…I'm fine with it. I don't mind!」

Shirasaka-san fixed her bra…and her cute nipple is hidden…
She pinned the button of her white blouse and…grooming complete.
She smooth out the wrinkle of her blouse and skirt…then fixed her hair…

「Oh, amazing…I can hardly see the schoolgirl who just had sex right now!」

Sensei's words are cruel as usual…

「It's seven already, isn't it?…Please let me free already!」

Shirasaka-san seriously glares at Sensei.
Sensei just laughs it off.

「For the time being…you amused me till seven」

Sensei started the car's engine…

「Right…let's talk about the location for the next time?」

The car began to move…
I can see Endou on the other side of the ground…
Shirasaka-san looked at Endou for a moment then…turned straight to the front after that.
…I understood that she intends to fight Sensei head-on.

Sensei's car stopped on the corner of the parking lot for the School personnel…
This is a blind spot from the school building.
No one will notice unless other teachers comes in by a car.
Well, even if they come there's a mirror sheet that's like Yakuza on the rear seat of Sensei's car so they won't notice Shirasaka-san's figure unless they come and look closer…

「…From yesterday till this morning, well done both of you. It was an interesting game. Thanks to that, I was able to have a lot of fun」

Yuzuki-sensie said such a thing suddenly.
She's saying that what Shirasaka-san and I did is an 『Interesting game』…
It's as if she's speaking that she enjoyed having a camping trip with us.

「…It was a lie when you say that you'll set me free, isn't it?!」
「Isn't that obvious?…Are you an idiot? A bottomless optimist?!」

Shirasaka-san bites her lip and endured her anger…

「Until when this is going to continue?」
「Let's see. For the time being, let's have you do it until the baseball club finishes their summer tournament? If the summer tournament ends, Endou-kun's violence incident won't make a big damage, don't you think?」

Well, once the summer tournament ends…being blacklisted on foreign games won't be that much troubling.
The third years would be able to retire without regret and even Endou won't resign on the baseball club…

「…Is that so?」

However…there's still one month before the qualifier begins.
Furthermore, as long as our baseball club continues winning games…Shirasaka-san must continue following Yuzuki-sensei.

「Then…I have something to give the two of you…」

Sensei rustled her bag, then took out a document from the inside.
She gave each small piece of paper to me and Shirasaka-san.

「Okay…here, the minutes until this morning…」

…M-Minutes?!

「…What is this?!」

…Shirasaka-san raised a surprise voice while looking at the paper handed over!
…I'm surprised too!

「What? I just talked about it right now…it's the minutes of the work you did this time」

Sensei laughs calmly…!

It's a computer document, and read as follows…

『★Payment Details…April 27
● Shirasaka Sama
Virgin loss / Complete set……250,000 Yen.
Virgin loss recording / Complete set…250,000 Yen.
Normal sex scene recording / Complete set…200,000 Yen
Intravaginal ejaculation / 30,000 Yen per Ejaculation x 12 … 360,000 Yen.
- -
Total……1.06 Million Yen2

|Yoshida Sama
Sex Scene recording / Complete set…10,000 Yen.
Intravaginal Ejaculation / 2,000 Yen per Ejaculation x 12…24,000 Yen
- -
Total……34,000 Yen3

Abovementioned are transferred. 』

「Shirasaka-san you have your own bank account in Yotsuya bank, don't you? Katsuko investigated and immediately found it. The full amount was transferred this morning so…It's so convenient this days, you can now transfer easily over the internet」

The female teacher has a smile on her whole face…

「…What does this mean?」

Shirasaka-san's hand is trembling…

「Labor value. You've worked hard on that so you can receive it

with confidence. You've earned money by sacrificing your own body!」
「…My virginity is 1.06M Yen!?」

Shirasaka-san's anger blows up…!
Sensei looks she can't endure laughing from Shirasaka-san's state.

「Take a look a the details. Your virginity costs 250,000 Yen. 1.06M Yen is the total!!!」
「…Don't put a price tag on my virginity by yourself!!」

Shirasaka-san beats the car's seat with all of her strength!!
The while car shook!

「Sorry. You're too cute so I thought of giving you a bit more but Morishita stopped me. The girls until now have been given the same amount」

…『The girls until now』?!
Yuzuki-sensei did this to other schoolgirls…

「…I don't care about money! Give it back to me! Give back my virginity to me!!!」

Shirasaka-san is already frenzied.
She's protesting against Sensei while half crying.

「Sadly, broken virginity won't ever come back you know? If you want, you can go for an operation where they reproduce your hymen? I'll take out the costs for the operation. At most, your vagina has already accepted Yoshida-kun's penis multiple times and spread out so it can never go back to it's original state when you were still virgin…but do you want at least the membrane fixed?」
「…Don't make fun of me!」

It's the first time I saw Shirasaka-san this angry…
She's having a red face…while crying.
Shirasaka-san is crying even when angry…

「I don't need money…I'm not a prostitute!」

However…Shirasaka-san's anger only pleases Yuzuki-sensei

「But, it's already transferred. I can't do anything about it」

Shirasaka-san glares angrily!

「I'll return it! I don't need such money!」

Sensei laughed at last…

「If you want to do that then that's fine…but do you know, Shirasaka-san? The transferred money is from a 『Suspiciously named shop from Kabuki of Shinjuku』 You can never show your passbook to your parents. If they see that, they'll surely worry about you…!」

…A suspicious shop?!

「…What do you mean by that?」

Sensei took another memo from a file…

「…Err, what was the store again? I leave it to Katsuko so I don't know the details…Err, it's this. 『Kabuki Street's Date Club – store of koneko-chan』 …It sounds too suspicious isn't it? This is a real shop I think…what would your parents think if a shop with this name transferred a million yen to you?」

Sensei laughs like a child…

「They'll think that 『…Is our daughter selling herself?』」

Shirasaka-san was at loss of words…

「…That's…that's…I!!!」

Ahahaha, Sensei laughs loudly!
Sensei continued laughing for a while…

「…Anyway, you can no longer return the money because it's already transferred. The name of the shop would lbe printed on your passbook. Oh right, before I forget…I'll be transferring the share for the car sex by the end of the day. Since there's no record, the intravaginal ejaculation would be 30,000 yen! and Yoshida will

have additional 2,000 yen」

Shirasaka-san quietly mutters.

「…I'm not a prostitute!」

Looking at that face, Sensei laughed loudly again.
Then…She suddenly looked at her with cold eyes.

「I'll be the one to decide if you become a prostitute or not…」

Eyes of overwhelming fear…!

「Shirasaka-san…can you stop that crap? You've been retorting to my orders a lot of times so far and you troubled me so much. If ever you want to continue that…I'll seriously sell you out. This isn't a threat. There's a child who went through that before already!」

Last night…Sensei told Shirasaka that she's the 『Seventh』
Perhaps, that's the truth.
Sensei must've captured schoolgirls in the past and depraved them to such environment…!

「Want to be embraced by oily old men? Want to be gangraped by dumb groups on a university? I can introduce you to the customers with a lot of money…You'll get even richer. The money you've earned from using your body will all be deposited on your bank properly…!」
「…N-No…That's not…me!!」

I'm at my limit too!

「…S-Sensei! I beg you! P-Please don't make S-Shirasaka-san experience that!! P-Please!!!」

Sensei looked at me with a surprised face…
Shirasaka-san too…

「Oh? What's wrong, Yoshida-kun?…Do you hate Shirasaka-san being embraced by other men that much?」
「…Y-Yes!!!」

I answered immediately!
I'm serious!
…Like hell I'd let Shirasaka-san do prostitution!!!
That's absolute…Never!
I don't want that!!

「Is that so?…Then, Yoshida-kun. Get off the car and kneel in front of me?!」
「…O-Okay, got it!!」

I opened the door of the car and jumped outside!
Just like that, I kneed and lowered my head on the gravel stone of the parking lot.
Sensei also got off the driver's seat…!

「…Yoshida-kun. Your head is still high!」

Sensei walks towards me and her black leather pumps stepped on my head!!!
My head is being grinded on the gravel!

「…P-Please! I beg you! S-Sensei, please!」

Sensei kicked my face with her tiptoe.
Spark comes from my eyes!
The acute pain from the day before yesterday still runs through my face!
Blood comes out of my nose!

「…Oooh, P-Please! Please! Sensei, I beg you!」

Still, I got back to my posture immediately!
I buried my face in the gravel and beg to Sensei desperately!

「…Yoshida-kun, you really want Shirasaka-san that much?」
「…Y-Yes!」
「You'll do anything to have Shirasaka-san?」
「…Yes!」
「If I tell you to kill someone, you'll murder?!」
「…Yes! I'll do anything!!!」
「If I tell you to die, then will you kill yourself?!」

「…I-I'll kill myself!!!」

That's my honest thoughts.
I want Shirasaka-san.
I don't want her to be taken by other men.
I want her to be mine only.
Whatever happens…!!

「…Fufufufufufu」

Suddenly, Sensei began to laugh…

「Very well. You're really an interesting kid. I like you…Then, I'll let Yoshida-kun have Shirasaka-san freely for one week」[4]
「…O-One week?」

I looked up from the gravel and up to Sensei.
The blood is still dripping from my nose…
Sensei have a smile like a demon…

「Have a week first…If you're well behaved, I'll be extending it for another week. But if ever you tried to go against my will, even for a but…you get it don't you?」

Shirasaka-san will be prostituted?!!!

「I-I won't…I-I'll never go against you…I-I'll do, I'll do anything Sensei tells me to do! T-T-T-T-T-T-T-That's why!!!」

I rubbed my forehead against the stone once again…

「You're really interesting, with that said…Shirasaka-san. You'll be Yoshida-kun's exclusive prostitute for a week. If Yoshida-kun wants to have sex, you have to properly report at me. Because I'll be paying your labor according to the contents of the sex…!」

The car door I opened.
I can see Shirasaka-san's figure on the other side of it…
Shirasaka-san is looking down at me…
She's looking at me, judging that I'm an ugly thing…
Shirasaka-san…is looking at me…
◇ ◇ ◇

Parting from the parking lot…Yuzuki-sensei gave Shiraska-san some orders…

「I think you already know this but…you must not tell anyone that you're no longer a virgin. Spend the whole day like how you normally do your school life. 」
「…Normally? 」
「Isn't that obvious? If you act strange , the class and Endou-kun will think of it as abnormal, don't you think? Act the same 『Daily life』 as yesterday…! 」
「…Okay 」
「Also…do you want to have a bet? 」

Sensei's mouth is crooked.
…She's thinking of something sinister again.

「…Bet? 」
「That's right…If Endou-kun will beat Yoshida-kun this day? 」
「…okay 」

I wasn't in the classroom yesterday so I didn't meet with Endou.

「If ever Endou-kun didn't beat Yoshida-kun for today…You don't need to have sex with Yoshida-kun for today 」
「…! 」
「But…If ever Endou-kun does hit Yoshida-kun…You're going to be ravished by Yoshida-kun by the number of times he was hit…! 」

Tears collect in Shirasaka-san's eyes again…!

「…Do you get it, Shirasaka-san? 」
「…Yes 」
「Good response…That's right, when the class ends, remain in the classroom with Yoshida-kun…okay? 」
「…Yes, understood 」
「Oh, by the way, Yoshida-kun. Because we don't have time in checking your account…here 」

Sensei said and handed me a brown envelope.

「Normally, I'd be sending you off after giving the money

however…your behavior pleases me so much so…here's the 34,000 Yen from the sex until now」

…E-err?!
Shirasaka-san's looking.
With eyes of scorn…

「…I-I can't accept it」
「It's fine, take it…use it on Shirasaka-san. Like hotel charges…」

Sensei laughs and screws the envelope on my pocket!

「That's right, I forgot another thing…This is from Katsuko」

Saying that, she took two package from the passenger seat.

「…W-What?」
「It's lunch box…the two of you don't have any lunch prepared, don't you? That child's prepared that in consideration…」

…Lunch box?
W-What attentiveness!
Katsuko-san, I really don't know whether she's a good person or not…

「…T-Thank you very much」

I took the package with trembling hands.
…Shirasaka-san too.

「Later then…Let's meet in the homerom」

Saying that, Yuzuki-sensei stood up and was going to leave.
Suddenly, she stopped and approached Shirasaka-san.
Sensei approached the afraid Shriasaka-san and sniffed her…

「…Shirasaka-san, you stink. You're having an intense smell of a man's semen!」

…Shirasaka-san endures the humiliation.
Yuzuki-sensei left us while laughing…
The parking lot for personnel has only me and Shirasaka-san left…

「Kuh…something like this!!」

Shirasaka-san stared at the lunch box…she raised it overhead and was about to fling it to the ground!

「You can't…Shirasaka-san!!」

My voice stopped Shirasaka-san!

「I'm sure Yuzuki-sensei will check it…whether we had properly eaten Katsuko-san's lunch or not…!」

I didn't say that there's surveillance cameras set up in the school.
Still…it seems that Shirasaka-san understood that Yuzuki-sensei will surely confirm it.
Shirasaka-san's eyes looked at me.
Severe eyes…angry eyes.

「…Yoshida-kun, what the hell is with you!」
「…I-I」
「Don't you think it's embarrassing for you being Yuzuki-sensei's underling!! Doing such terrible things at me!!!」

Shirasaka-san throws all of her anger at me.

「…Liar! Maniac! Coward! Pervert!!!」

She knocked my chest away!
My ass toppled on the ground!!!

「…I hate, someone like you…!!!!」

Shirasaka-san trots towards the school building…
I chase after her.
Shirasaka-san…is feeling dull pain in her genital.
…She walks unsteadily bowlegged.
That's why I caught up immediately.
I walked behind Shirasaka-san.
Seven in the morning, school building's back…
There's no one else…there's no students walking.

「…Don't follow me!」

「W-were in the same class」
「…Don't talk to me!!!」

Shirasaka-san's eyes of hatred!
Her intense hatred is piercing me…!
…Why the hell are you looking at me with that eyes?!

…I love the laughing Shirasaka-san!
…I love Shirasaka Yukino's smile!

And yet, why did this!!!
…Dammit!!
My heart explodes!!

「S-Shirasaka-san…I-I like Shirasaka-san…! I-I've always liked you since the start of the school!!」

However…Shirasaka-san's eyes shoot out light of hatred to my confession…!

「…Don't fool around! Don't Joke with me! That's not a joke!」
「I-It's true! I-I'm not lying! I-I like Shirasaka-san! I-I was always looking at Shirasaka-san!」
「Don't say something stupid! What do you know about me!? I don't even know anything about you!!!」
「I-I like Shirasaka-san's face! I like Shirasaka-san's body! I like Shirasaka-san's voice! I love everything, everything about you!」
「…I hate you! I hate you very much!!」
「E-Even Shirasaka-san…Y-You still don't know a-anything about me!?」
「…I don't want to know! I don't have a speck of interest of knowing anything about you! A man who raped me! Bakaa! Dieee!…I decided to give my first to Kenji and yet! Kenji's the only one who can embrace me! Not you! not you! and yet!!!」

…Shirasaka Yukino

「…I don't don't want to betray Kenji…I don't want to betray him and yet! You have raped me a lot of times! You came inside of me a lot of times! Die! You should just die!!」
「…Y-Yukino!」

「Don't call my name bakaa! Kenji's the only one who can call me Yukino! Kenji's the only one who can kiss me and embrace me!! Not you!! You're such an unfair person…!」

Shirasaka-san…cried again.
The tears spill out again.
With the existence of fear, Yuzuki-sensei gone…the emotions she had endured collapses instantly…

「…I, I!」
「Urusai! Urusai! Urusai! 5 Don't speak! Shut up! Don't even come close to me! Go away somewhere! I don't even care if you die!! Pervert! Pervert! Pervert!!!!!」

…Ah.
…I realized that it's already no good.
…Shirasaka-san will never forgive me for the rest of her life.
She'll continue her whole life hating and avoiding me.
Dammit!
…Very well, that's fine by itself!
I've already prepared myself.
That's fine.
I'm already fine being the worst scum.
I'm fine being a trash of a human.
Still, I'll never hand over Shirasaka Yukino to anyone.
If I can never have her heart, at least I'll settle with her body.
I'll make it only mine…
…Definitely, absolutely!!

「…I-I'll tell Endou!」

Shirasaka-san's eyes suddenly opened widely!

「I-I'll tell Endou…that S-Shirasaka-san gave her virginity for Endou's sake…! I-I'll also borrow the photos from Sensei!! I-I'll show it to him!!」

I threatened her.
My first love.
The girl I love the most in this world…

「…Don't tell Kenji anything. P-Please keep everything a secret from Kenji!」

The fire of anger from Shirasaka-san's eyes disappeared…
What's there is just a frightened poor girl.
…Sixteen years old.

「I-If you don't want that, l-look at me properly, a-and beg! F-from the bottom of your heart!」

Shriasaka-san turns at me…
Her crying face…cute face…oh, it feels refreshing to make her cry!
I'll make her cry from now on…
Always, always…

「…Please…I beg you」

Shirasaka-san deeply bows at me.
I won't easily agree!
Let's be a bit cruel!

「T-Then…Y-You're going to have sex with me all the time?!」

Shirasaka-san's surprised.
……She's trembling.
…Exhausted, eyes of resignation.

「I-I get it…」
「S-Speak properly…B-be specific on what you're saying!」

I remembered Yuzuki-sensei from the car sex earlier and ordered Shirasaka-san.

「Y-Yukino will have…sex, with Yoshida-kun whenever he wants to! I'll do…I'll do it so!」
「…W-What is Shirasaka-san to me…?」
「…!」
「…Y-You're my exclusive what?!」
「…P-Prostitute」
「Speak clearly!」
「Shirasaka Yukino is Yoshida-kun's exclusive prostitute!」

She's crying again.
Shirasaka-san is crying.
…Ahahahahaa.
Making Shirasaka-san surrender is fun…
Looking at her crying face is fun.
Really fun.

「Very well…I'll keep it a secret from Endou」

The laughter…I can't stop laughing.

「…You're the worst. You're the worst!」

Shriasaka-san's words of scorn is now fun…
Because, Shirasaka-san is looking at me when she says that.
Shirasaka-san is looking at me.
Her crying face is looking at me…
Whatever reason it is…even if it's eyes of hatred, even eyes of disgust.
I'm already satisfied as long as Shirasaka-san looks at me.

We went towards the classroom just like that.
…Shirasaka-san's ahead.
I'm walking from behind.

Shirasaka-san seems to be really in pain from losing her virginity.
…She's stopping occasionally to rest.
She's being conscious about her panties from time to time so she's touching her ass.
I ogled a lot on her cute ass thoroughly.
Form the rarely used stairs to the schoolhouse.
While walking up the stairs…White liquid drips from under Shirasaka-san's skirt to her thighs!
I see…My semen's dripping…!
Shriasaka-san's worried about it so she's holding her ass…!

Shriasaka-san took out a tissue from her pocket and tried to wipe the white liquid from her thighs in a hurry…!

「…L-let me look!」

I ordered Shirasaka-san from behind.

「…L-Lift your skirt and show me your panties!」
「…I don't wnat to」
「H-Hurry up!」
「…Someone will come!」
「…N-No one will!」

There's no person nearby. There's no footsteps either.
Shirasaka-san's positioned higher in the stairs than me…

「D-Do it…you prostitute!」

Shirasaka-san's tears flowed.
She, silently, slowly raised her skirt.
The light-blue silk panty that Katsuko-san gave her appears!
The genital location of the panty is wet!
My semen's dripping from her slit!!

「…N-Nice view!」

I gave out a lewd impression on purpose.

「P-Pervert!…Die…!」

Shirasaka-san in tears muttered…

「Why…Why do I have to experience this…!」

Inside her body, is my semen filling her up!
This is my woman…!
I'll make her mine…

「…How long is this going to continue?!!!!」

A large drop of tears spit open on the stairs!

---

1. It's not High Noon ↩
2. Approx 10,500 USD ↩
3. Approx 300 USD ↩
4. Remember the dates, It'll be important ↩

5. Urusai means shut up! This is a common phrase by Shana on Shakugan no Shana, I assume that you already know what it means ↩

◇ School Arc I

17. …Broken daily life.

Morning…7:20.
There's still no one in the classroom.
Those guys doing their morning practice still isn't at the time where they'd come back…there's still some time before the students go to school.
There's two people in the classroom.

Shirasaka-san took her seat…
The second and third rows from the window…are brimming with light.
She took out her phone and made some rummaging sound.
I wonder if she's reading the mails Endou sent last night…?

I also sat on my own seat too.
My seat is from the fourth from the corridor wall…A dark seat where light doesn't hit.
It's a blind spot from the entrance of the classroom.
I'm originally a thin shadow in the class.
I'm an existence that's mostly forgotten by the other students…

I'm gazing at the appearance of Shirasaka-san bathed by the light of the morning from the shadow of the seat.
…Just like usual.
I'm watching Shirasaka-san from the usual angle.
The usual Shirasaka-san in uniform.
But…it's already different.
What's there is my own exclusive prostitute…!
I can do what I want with that body for this whole week…!
I recall the naked Shirasaka-san in my head.
Under that uniform is her breasts.
The pink nipples.
Cute stomach.
And…the honey pot that has just lost it's purity…!
I know all of it…
I've confirmed it with my eyes.
I've touched it.
This penis…raped her!!!

…I know that!
Endou doesn't' know…everything about Shirasaka-san's body!!!

「…Don't look this way! Don't grin…it feels gross!」

Shirasaka-san told me.
Am I looking at her that way?
Un, I looked at her…with quite lewd eyes…
However…it's really shocking to be told by the girl you like words of hate.

「…S-Sorry. I'm sorry」

After I apologized, I noticed!
Ah…I should be be a bit more aggressive!
I even threatened Shirasaka-san with cruel words earlier…!
When I looked at Shirasaka-san, she also had a dumbfounded face…
S-Shit…I-I should be a stronger man.
…Shirasaka-san is 『My exclusive prostitute』!!!

However…the following words can't come out!!!
Awawawwa…An awkward atmosphere is tossed in the classroom.
…Err.
On this kind of time…Yuzuki-sensei will be speaking severe lines to damage Shirasaka-san…

And, while I was troubled…I heard footsteps from the corridor!
Two schoolgirls entered the classroom!

「…Morning, Shirasaka-san, you're early!」
「…Morning, Yukino」

Two girls…
That's Yamamine-san.
She's the female class rep and I'm the other, a slender figured member of track and field club…
Oh right, what did Yuzuki-sensei tell again?
Yamamine-san is a relative of Shirasaka-san?

「Ah…Good morning, Ogino-san…Yamamine-san」

Huh…?

Yamamine-san calls Shirasaka-san 『Yukino』.
And yet…Shirasaka-san calls her 『Yamamine-san』?
I feel I don't get something here.
Yamamine-san took her seat after that.
Ogino-san spoke to Shirasaka-san in a friendly manner.

「Isn't it unusual? Shirasaka-san isn't your usual bus coming at 7:40?」
「…That's true however…I woke up a bit early today」
「Them you arrived at the school at such time?」
「…Un. I thought that someone's already here. Those people who practice.」
「Don't be ridiculous…the club members will come a bit later」

Shirasaka-san is amazing.
She's crying in the very bottom of despair earlier and yet…
She returned to her usual smiling cute beauty in front of her classmates.

「What about you Ogino-san?…Weren't you in morning practice?!」
「Oh, we're always waking up earlier so…it's somewhat physical condition」
「Oh…Ogino-san, are you not feeling well?」
「No…It's that day. It's a bit painful Since it's the fourth day, the amount is a bit low. Megumi's not the same but it's embarrassing for me to be alone so I she came with me…」

T-That day…M-Mens?!
I instinctively made bumped my chair…!

「Eh?! Yoshida-kun, you're there?!」

Awawa…A-As expected, I was noticed!
err…W-w-w-w-what should I do?!

「…What happened to you, Yoshida-kun?!!!」

…Eh?!
Yamamine-san who's sitting on her seat silently… looked at my face and spoke loudly!

「…W-What?」
「Don't what me! What happened to your face?!!!」

…Oh right.
I was hit by Endou on the rooftop a day before yesterday…the internal bleeding became a blue bruise, there's scratches, and the top of my eye is swelled up too…I'm having such a terrible face right now.
The pain is normal but my sense is already paralyzed completely…!
Or rather, I was in adrenaline for the whole night so my face didn't hurt at all…
As expected…this'll become terrible.

「…N-N-N-No, uhm…This is」

From Yamamine-san's back, Shirasaka-san's having such a desperate face…
She's clapping her hands and bowing at me…
…I know.
I won't tell about Endou…there's no way I can.

「…J-Just, I-I f-fell down from the stairs in my home!」

I made a very bad excuse…
However, those are the words that came out at the moment.
…However, Yamamine-san!

「…That doesn't matter!!!」

…What?

「Yoshida-kun, there's blood around your nose! You didn't notice?!!!」

…N-Nose?!
Ah…I was kicked by Yuzuki-sensei with her leather shoes a while ago. With all her heart.
Then there's blood coming out of it so I rubbed it off with my hands…and stuffed tissue in it.
I thought the bleeding stopped bbyt it seems that it continued…
Speaking of which, I haven't seen my face in the mirror since

then…
Could it be that I was having a bloody face all this time?!
I was threatening Shirasaka-san with a blood around my nose?!
I came to the classroom bloodstained!
Eh?…Why didn't Yuzuki-sensei nor Shirasaka-san tell me?!
Could it be that I'm hated?!
Well…I'm hated, I guess…!!

That doesn't matter, my head's feeling spinning!!

「…get up and let's go to the school infirmary!」

Yamamine-san pulled my arm!
…Eh?

「…Hurry up!」

Meanwhile…Shirasaka-san and the other girl had a surprised look…
I was taken by Yamamine-san to the school infirmary…
However…it's still morning.
The doctor isn't here yet.
The school infirmary is locked.

「…It can't be helped. Yoshida-kun, wait for me here, I'll be back soon!
「…Yes?!」
「…Don't ever move from there!」

Then, Yamamine-san runs with her skirt fluttering…
Her back figure has a tall, and balanced frame
Her track and field member form is very beautiful…

A few minutes later, Yamamine-san returned…
She's breathing roughly…

「…I brought the first air kit from the club!」

Yamamine-san went to the sports club's room!
…For my sake!

She opened the plastic first aid kit then took out antiseptic solution and cotton…

She made me sit down on the corner of the corridor and wipes my wound…!!

「…Y-Yamamine-san…d-don't you feel disgusted?」
「About what?」
「…A-About…t-touching my wound」

Yamamine-san long slit eyes closed and she laughed…

「Well…I might be feeling a bit disgusted but you see…I'm already used to it」
「…U-Used to?」
「Un. Our club has everyone falling down and getting wounded so I'm already used to such treatments」

Yamamine-san smiled and kept treating me…
Her hand touches my face.
O-Our body's close
She's standing by her knees in front of me sitting down the floor…
Yamamine-san's breasts is in front of me.
It's flatter than Shirasaka-san…
I compared it unintentionally.
But, it's very sports girl like, the slender proportion is charming by itself.
Under her skirt is an antelope like legs stretching…

「…Un, this looks fine」

Yamamine-san pasted a plaster on the wound…

「…T-Thanks」

I honestly spoke my gratitude.
I didn't know this at all.
Yamamine-san is such a good person…

「…Hey, Yoshida-kun?」

Yamamine-san spoke while putting away her first aid kit.

「…W-What?」
「…My father's company has someone who's playing boxing」

…B-Boxing?

「Then you see…I've been there to see a boxing match before…」

…W-What are you saying?!

「Yoshida-kun's wound didn't come from falling from the stairs did it?」

…Yamamine-san!!!

「That's a wound by being hit by someone isn't it?」

…!!!

Yamamine-san's beautiful, long and narrow eyes looks at me quietly…

「T-T-This is…R-Really a wound from falling from the stairs, I-I'm not lying, I-It's true…!」 1

I could do nothing but say that.
I need to protect it.
My promise with Shirasaka-san…

「…Is that so?…If that's what Yoshida-kun says then I'm sure it is. Got it. But, if ever you needed a helping hand, just ask me okay?!」

Black bob cut sports girl…
Yamamine-san says that while smiling at me.
…She's really a good person!

Yamamine-san returned the first aid kit to the clubroom and I thanked her and returned to the classroom alone.
The time is past eight…
The number of students in the classroom has increased considerably.
Shirasaka-san is sitting on her own seat while talking to the other girls
…Endou's not here.
Because the morning practice has the first years cleaning up, they'll always jump to the classroom on the very limit.

「But you see, Endou-kun's amazing…He's been decided to be a regular by the next game you know? The first year members are making a fuss last night on the clubroom!」

A girl named Tomizawa from the tennis club spoke to Shirasaka-san .

「Un…It seems so. He mailed me about it」

I see…I'm sure the mail Shirasaka-san is looking was…!!

「Eh? You haven't heard it from him directly yet?! Endou-kun was so amazingly happy that I thought she'd be calling Shirasaka-san immediately !」

No, he may have done it really.
I'm sure that Endou bastard called Shirasaka-san to inform the splendid news by himself.
However, no matter how many times he tried to call her, Shirasaka-san didn't answer…so he mailed her!
…I remembered!
Yesterday, when I took Shirasaka-san's virginity…!
Endou's having such a serious face while listening to the coach in the screen!
Is it that time when Endou's decided to become a regular?!
At that same time…Shirasaka-san's virginity was pierced by me!!!

…The dark laughter crossed my mind.

Oh…I suddenly feel sleepy. My body feels heavy.
Speaking of which, I've ejaculated a lot of times from yesterday till this morning…
Even if Sensei's suspicious drug is effective…I'm still actually deprived of my physical strength…
Ah…my swollen face becomes painful somehow…
My face fell on the desk and I closed my eyes.

…The starting bell rings!
Surprised, I open my eyes.
Before I noticed, the classroom's filled with students…
…Endou too.

I'm sure they entered the classroom while I was asleep.

When Endou looked at my badly injured face, he looked unpleasant.
It's as if his face is saying「I don't want to see you, get out of the classroom」
This guy's not even feeling bad that he hit me at all.
You asshole…!
Some of the students are looking at my face filled with plaster with curious face.
But…There's no one talking to me.
When I looked back at them…they avert they gaze.
This is reality.
That's my standpoint in this class.

Yuzuki-sensei entered the classroom.
The tall teacher stands on the desk…
Long black hair, black glasses.
Thin body and fair skin.
A cold beauty female teacher.
It's like a dream that I've stayed in the house of this person with Shirasaka-san all night.

「…Good morning class」

Yuzuki spoke this morning's morning report indifferently.
Lastly, she talked to Endou…

「…By the way, Endou-kun. Are you keeping your promise with Sensei? You haven't kissed Shirasaka-san haven't you?!」
「I didn't!…There's now way I can do that soon after!」

Endou answered Sensei with a bit of anger.
There's laughing heard in the classroom.

「…Shirasaka-san, what about you?…Are you protecting your virginity?!」
「…!!!」

…Shirasaka-san had a gloomy face.
The guys in the class has misunderstood that it was Shirasaka-san's expression of embarrassment.

「…Shirasaka-san, has even more and more beautiful body!」
「…Endou won't lay a hand on her right?!」

The frivolous Kobayashi and Omiya made fun of them in a loud voice.
Then, a laughter occurred…
Then…Shriasaka-san's reply became unsettled somehow…

「…Well, it's not necessary for Shirasaka-san to have Endou-kun as her first partner though. Shirasaka-san might have an affair with other boys」

Yuzuki-sensei said while having a jeering face.

「…No way, Shirasaka-san would do that」
「…Shirasaka-san's earnest after all」
「…Endou-kun's so cool after all」

The girl's low voice can be heard here and there.

「Sensei! What do you mean by that?!」

Endou stood up and shouted.
He's protesting against Yuzuki-sensei with strong eyes!

「…I don't care whatever you say at me but…don't even make fun of Yukino! I won't allow it even as a joke!!」

Endou's seriously angry!

「…Endou-kun's so cool!」
「…Great, you're so great, an example of boyfriend!」

…That's Kobayashi and Omiya's remark.

「…Oh, I apologize if I hurt your feelings」

Sensei laughs.

「…Right, an innocent girl like Shirasaka-san won't ever try to have an affair, right?」

…A provocative smile.
Endou's face distorts…
A critical atmosphere!!

「Geez, Sensei, get over it!!…Endou-kun, take a seat too!」

The class rep, Yamamine-san stood up and mediates between the two…
Reluctantly…Endou took his seat.

「…Then everyone, Let's spend our day pleasantly!」

The female teacher said happily then left the classroom abruptly.

「…What, oh? Is that teacher a bit crazy in her head?」
「Un, it feels a bit cruel…want to consult other teachers?」
「Let's try to watch her for a bit more…it's only her second day sine she took place as a homeroom teacher」
「…I see. But, that was sexual harassment isn't it?」
「Is that even sexual harassment in case of a female teacher?」
「Hmm, I don't know」
「But, either way isn't that a bit too mean? Isn't that discrimination?」
「…Shirasaka-san, you don't need to worry about it」
「Un…Shiarasaka-san's pure love is known by everyone okay?!」

The female classmates began to encourage Shirasaka-san one after another…

「Un…Thanks, everyone」

Shirasaka-san express her gratitude to her friends with a smile…

Shirasaka Yukino is no longer a virgin…
Shirasaka Yukino already had sex with a man who's not her lover.

In this class, only Shirasaka-san and I knows the truth…
I know the feeling of the living flesh of Shirasaka-san…
Only me…

I slept for most of the class in the morning.
It can't be helped, I was sleepy.

I woke up during the third lesson which is math then…Shirasaka-san is also tired, I can see her dozing off.
That honor student Shirasaka-san…!
haha…You're the same as me, Shirasaka-san!

…Lunch break.

「Yukino, where do you want to eat lunch? Let's go to the rooftop since the weather's fine」
「Eh, here's fine. Let's eat in the classroom. Bring your lunch box here Kenji!」

Endou and Shiraskaa-san are having a lover's conversation.
Shirasaka-san returned to her usual smile.
She's making a forced smile? Or is she glad that she's with Endou? I don't know.

「Eh? Let's go to the rooftop…everyone's here」

The concern of the classmates to the two people has risen with the confrontation with the teacher this morning.
『They can't kiss nor sex until they graduate』 is their situation, and they became a couple that's recognized by the teacher…

「Isn't that fine, let's show off to everyone!」

The smiling Shriasaka-san…lovely smile.

「…Then, that's fine」

Endou got embarrassed…then took his own lunch box to Shirasaka-san's desk.
I know the true reason why Shirasaka-san doesn't want to go to the rooftop.
Shirasaka-san's been sitting on her own seat since this morning today.
She didn't go to the restroom…
In short…Shirasaka-san doesn't want to seen her bowlegged walking from the dull pain of virginity loss by Endou.
Perhaps, right now, there's my sticky semen dripping in her panty under the skirt…

…Truly cute. You're so cute, Shirasaka-san!

「…huh? Yukino got a lunch box today?」

Shirasaka-san opened Katsuko's package that was given by Yuzuki-sensei this morning.
It can't be helped because she has nothing else to eat.
She can't go out and buy because her body's aching…
The contents of the wrapping is a sandwich
It's wrapped beautifully on a plastic container.

「Wow, that's amazing…Where did you buy that?!」

Katsuko-san's work is perfect.
When you look at it, you'd think it's bought from a big baker from somewhere in the town…

「Err…from a new bakery in front of the station. That's where I bought it」

Shirasaka-san made a suitable lie…

「Oh, so they opened this morning?」
「Un…it seems so」

…You're lying at your boyfriend right now.
…Does it pain your heart?
…Are you feeling guilt?

Me too…I opened the wrapper quietly in my seat.
I can't let the others know that I'm eating the same thing as Shirasaka-san…
Furthermore, there's no one who would pay attention to me.

I tried eating one of the sandwiches.
…Delicious.
Katsuko-san's really good at cooking.
…However.
The dinner last night was also sandwich.
Then, earlier was bread.
And now…it's sandwich again.

Katsuko-san…could it be that she loves bread?![2]
It might possibly be Yuzuki-sensei's hobby though…

「Looks delicious! Can I take one?」

…Eh?

When I looked up…it was Yamamine-san.

「…G-Go on」
「Itadaki!」[3]

Yamamine-san's thin fingers took the edge of the sandwich and ate it.[4]

「Wow, this is delicious! Yoshida-kun, which shop did you buy this from?」

…Err

「…T-The new bakery, i-in front of the station. T-That's where I bought it」

For the time being…I'll copy Shirasaka-san's lie.
There's some noise coming out though…

「Oh, they opened this morning?」
「Y-Yeah…it seems so 」

Hey…where's the shop? I don't know where though…

「That was delicious…Then, this'll be a debt!」

…W-What?

「You don't have to mind the first aid kit this morning!」

Oh…Yamamine-san is.
She's taking me this morning in consideration…then she came all the way to me…!

「…Then, bye!」

Yamamine-san left the classroom with a smile.
I see of the tall back figure…
I didn't know that she's such a gentle child.
But then…only one month has passed since the entrance.

「…Oh, sorry Kenji. I wasn't able to pick up the phone last night」

My ears heard Shirasaka-san and Endou's conversation and I came back to my senses.

「I called you again and again. I even sent a mail」
「Sorry, sorry…I helped my sister in her studies and got tired so I slept.」 Thus I didn't notice it until this morning」

Shirasaka-san arranged a smooth lie.
Shirasaka-san can make a lie with such a cute smile.

「If that's how it is…it can't be helped」
「Congrats, regular!」
「Ehehe…Even if I'm a regular, it's just decided that I'll be temporarily let out on the next practice game」
「But, that's amazing. You're a first year after all…when's the game?」
「May 1. Nishitaka high school's team will be coming to our school」
「I'll go to watch…I'll be supporting you」
「Un…please」

May 1…I took note in my head…

「…Then, Yukino, the club;s practice on tomorrow is going to end early」
「…Is that so?」
「Un. The supervisor has some business so…that's why, do you want to go to the harbor tomorrow evening?」

That's…an invitation to a date?!

「…R-Right. Un, okay. Let's do that」

Oh…those two will be having a date tomorrow sunday.
Shirasaka-san, can you make promises that easily?

You're my exclusive prostitute you know?…For this whole week!

「…I'm glad. I'm in the training camp with the baseball club this whole golden week so I can't play with Yukino for a while」
「…But, but that's not for all the time right?」
「Yeah, the training camp will be until the morning of the 4th. Fifth day will be a rest day. Let's go outing that day?」
「U-Un…Right.」
「Let's go out on the fourth and stay overnight?」
「Geez, Kenji…don't say something absurd!!」
「I won't do anything strange…we can just sleep holding hands, isn't that fine?!」 5

Endou's saying something foolish…
Well, fine. I'll be taking that plan.
I'll stay overnight with Shirasaka-san in this Golden Week!
…The dark laughter rose in me.

「…Hey, don't smile, don't look this way!」

Suddenly, Endou turned towards me!

「I'm talking about you…Yoshida!」

Endou's glaring at me with severe eyes!

「You've been eavesdropping with my conversation with Yukino all this time…it feels disgusting!」

Endou's big body comes to me rudely!

「…Stop it Kenji!」

Shirasaka-san tried to stop Endou!
But…She can't get up from the chair!

Endou's big arm grabbed my chest…

「Yoshida…stop this already you fucker!」

The schoolgirls who's having a meal in the classroom screamed…
Endou's not worrying about them…

「…Let's talk for a bit…on the rooftop. There's too many people here」
「Ah…aah」

The young high school baseball player who's built is bigger than me is grabbing my chest…
…For the time being, let's answer him somehow.

「Hey…Stop it Kenji!」

I can hear Shirasaka-san's voice from the back…

「It's fine Yukino…I'll be back in a moment」
「…Uwa, it's a fight?!」
「…Let's go watch it!」

Kobayashi and Omiya got in excitedly.

「Don't follow me! It's not a fight, I just have to talk with Yoshida for a bit. Just the two of us」

Endou says that and controlled Kobayashi…
Endou and I went out of the classroom…
There's no onlooker following at all.

There's no one on the rooftop northside.
When the door closed, Endou suddenly spoke…!

「Yoshida…You haven't told anyone about anything yesterday haven't you?」
「…A-About what?」

I feigned ignorance with all my might.

「…About your face!」

As expected…He's worried
If it goes wrong, the participation of the baseball club will be withdrawn because of his violence.
Oh…It's not about me eavesdropping Endou and Shirasaka-san's conversation at all.
Endou was minding me all this time!

「…You…If you tell someone, it won't end well!」

I began to laugh.」
What's with 「It won't end well」?
…What do you intend to do?

「…What's funny!!!」

What's funny?…Well

「I'll seriously make sure that you can't come into this school! I'm serious!」

…How?
Are you an idiot?
Or rather, Endou's seriously an idiot.

「…Don't laugh!」

It can't be helped, it's funny!

「You…Don't fucking underestimate me!!」

…Got it, Endou.
In other words, you've never thought that you're sorry about hitting me even for a bit.
He doesn't intend to apologize at all.
However…do you really think that can shut me up with such a ridiculous threat…?
I spoke to Endou laughingly.

「…I-If I do underestimate you…w-what do you intend to do?」

…Anger gushed to Endou's face!!!

「…Fuckeeer!」

Endou's fist approached my face!
One punch…![6]
Next, he hit my belly!
Two hits …!
Then he strongly strike my chest!

Third…!
He threw me on the wall and hit me again!
Fourth…!

I lay down on the ground.
My body's painful here and there…
Endou's breathing heavily…

「…Listen! Don't even tell anyone that I beat you up! if you ever spoke about it, this wont end well for you!!!!」

Endou lastly kicked my waist…
Fifth…!!!

I can hear the sound of the iron door of the rooftop closing from a distance.
I was left alone in the rooftop, flying down.
Ouch…I can't move…

But…My face is laughing.
I laughed「Ahahaha」on the rooftop where there's no one.

Shirasaka-san…It'll be five times today.
I'll be having Sex with Shirasaka-san five times after this!
…I'll fuck you!
…I'll be raping you!

…Dammit!
…Dammit!
…Dammit!

---

1. Obvious lie. lol ↩
2. Yes, she loves me. ↩
3. To eat ↩
4. I take a potato chip, and eat it ↩
5. Oh, Nei-san, oops spoiler ↩
6. One puuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuunch!! ↩

18. The fourth and the fifth.

…N?
…Huh?!!!
…Since when I was asleep?

I can hear a song.
It looks like a class seems to be singing a chorus in music lesson…
Oh…this is a good school.

The middle school I entered for three years…is a dorm style boys school closed in the heart of the mountains so we didn't take music class properly.
Sleep…chatter…or play with your phone.
The music teacher was an old man near his retirement so he has no motivation at all…
He just plays a famous music on a CD every class…
You only need to write impressions such as 「I think it was a nice tune」, or 「It's good」and it'll be fine, it's quite a bullshit class…
We never did a chorus together…
In the first place, I don't remember the school song in middle school…don't newly enrolled students mostly don't know about it?
Really…that middle school there was so unpleasant like a prison…

However, why am I here?
Why am I lying down in such a place…?
…Ah, the blue sky spreads out.
The sky is clear blue no matter where you look…
Un…there's something white sticking out in field of vision filled with blue sky?
…What's this white object?…It looks like a cloth?!
The white cloth…is swelling like a mountain…?
Huh?…That's a button?!
hey…Could it be a female's blouse?!!!

That moment…I came back to my senses!
Did I feel unconscious after I was hit by Endou in the rooftop?
Then…Eeeeh, the afternoon classes already started?!!!

「…N, you awake?」

A voice from the top.
A sweet voice as clear as this blue sky…
Hey…Huh, there's 「some soft and warm thing」on my head?!
C-C-C-Could this be…possibly?!
H-H-H-Hizamakura?![1]
I'm resting on someone's lap?!!!!

There's blue sky and white cloth on my field of view.
From the cloth, there's a woman's face suddenly appearing!

…B-B-B-B-Blonde!

Her blonde hair with volume shakes around…!
Even though I said blonde, it's not a showy gold color, and there's some milky white.
…It's not the natural color.
Perhaps it's dyed hair…!
In the fluffy semi-long hair…there's a face of a woman who's smiling gently!

While I was unconscious on the rooftop, this woman had my head rest on her lap????!!

Therefore…Our faces are facing top and bottom…
However…Even if I'm looking upside down, I can understand that she's a super beauty…!
A finely chiseled shape comes out, her beauty's like a doll from France!
Actually, her eyes are blue like French people…?!
Eh…Foreigner?!
No…wrong
This is a contact lens!
When I looked closely…there's the edge of the contact lens showing clearly…!

「…Hey, you okay?! You've been unconscious since a while!」

The beautiful school girl with blue contacts and blonde hair…
Is looking at my face on inverse on the knee while smiling

nonchalantly…

Or rather…It's been the first time I'm admiring such a woman from below!!
I never expected this to happen to myself.
Or rather…There's no woman existing in this world to let me rest on her lap!!
In short…This is a dream.
Surely…I'm still in the dreamland while being hit by Endou!!

The schoolgirl looking at my puzzled face made an 「Ufufu」laugh.

…Ah, it's not a dream!
This is really happening, this Hizamakura!!!
Could it be, 'that'…?!
D-D-D-D-Did a 『Miracle』happen?!!!
It's a miracle!
…It's a MIRACLE!!! G-G-G-Gooood!!!

The person who's letting me rest on her lap…the blond hair schoolgirl is looking at my face and called 「An?」
Our eyes match while being upside down!
This is…I-I-I-I have to talk about something!
Anyway, let's try to talk to her!

「…W-Who?!」

For the time being…those foolish words came out of my head…

「…Nn, me?」

The upside down blonde woman points at herself with a long finger.

「…Y-Yes!」

Hey…there's probably no one else here.
My current view is…Sky 40% and blonde hair 60%
I repeat.
The sky's 40% and the blonde hair is 60%…!

「…Who do you think?」

The schoolgirl has a teasing 「Fufun」 smile
Seriously…don't return question with a question.

「…I-I don't know」

It's the first time I saw her so I have no other answers.

「Then, what do you think when you look at me?…What kind of person am I?」

…What kind of person?!
…Err.

「…Just tell me your frank impression!」

Once again, I looked at the upside down schoolgirl…
She's a super beauty and a very gentle person, however…
The dyed blonde hair and blue contacts…
…In short.

「…Western crazy?」

The blonde schoolgirl burst into laughter.
「Gyahahaha」, she laughed in a loud voice!
Her stomach is trembling…and the vibration is transmitted from that person's lap to my head…!

「…What was that, so funny!! How did you come up with that?」
「…B-Because…Y-You're blonde haired and your eyes are blue」

The schoolgirl laughed further with my answer…

「…Interesting, you're amusing! Are you an airhead?! I think you have the talent! Do you want to become an entertainer with me and aim for the star?!!」

No…I'm not aiming at such a star.
…Aah, geez.
Anyway…I can't let myself be lying down on her lap for any longer.
We can't face each other when we're upside down, and we can't talk properly either!

I raised my body and separate from her.
Kuu…The areas hit by Endou still hurts!

「…You okay?」
「…I-I'm fine!」

I part from the schoolgirl at least one meter…and sat down on the waterproof green rubber floor of the rooftop…
The schoolgirl looks at me while smiling.

Looking at her this way from a slightly remote position…I realized that she's much more beautiful than I thought.
The inverse image is completely on a different degree…it went up by four levels.
Her form is distinct, a very beautiful woman with gentle and charming features…
Her big eyes is fantastic and her mouth is too…
The big impressive mouth feels like laughing 「Mufufu」…
Oh…This person has quite a big chest!!
It's not as much as Katsuko-san however…it comes out boing, and still her stomach is tight dented.
It would look amazing in a swimsuit…

「…N? Where are you looking?」
「Ah…S-Sorry」
「Well it's fine…it's not that it's diminishing…」

Then…in the end, who's she?

「I'm…Natou Nei! Second year!」

Second year…a Senpai?!

「N-Natou-senpai…? W-Why are you letting my head rest on your lap…?!」

…Right.
That's what I don't get in the first place!

「N…You don't know?!」
「T-There's…n-no way I would!」

Natou-senpai laughingly answered.

「Isn't that obvious that I was called by Yuzuki-sensei?!」

…Y-Yuzuki-sensei?!

「I'm the fifth」

The senpai with blue contacts and blonde hair smiles sadly…

……Fifth

Last night, Sensei told sad that Shirasaka-san is the 「Seventh」…
Could it be that…?!!!

「That's right… I'm Yuzuki-sensei's fifth toy…!」

Yuzuki-sensei's toy.
…Plaything.
I can hear the voice of the chorus from the music room downstairs again…

「…Y-Yuzuki-sensei…W-what?」

During the chorus…I daringly asked Senpai.

「N…I was called by Yuzuki-sensei this lunch break. Then she told me to『Nurse the boy who got unconscious on the roof and look after him』…that's all. Ah, 『Look after』only, she didn't tell to『Do lewd stuff』okay?!」

No…that's of course.
Huh, but…it's class hours right now.
If the school is in a break, the inside of the building should be noisier…
I can even hear the chorus on the music class clearly…!

「…S-Senpai, W-what about the fifth class?」

When I asked she looked at me then…Senpai laughed once again…

「Geez, it's already sixth class…You completely slept the fifth

class!」

Ah…Is that so?

「…T-Then, S-Senpai was letting my h-head rest on her lap since the l-lunch break?!!!」
「Un…Right」
「Y-You didn't go to the fifth class?!」

Natou-senpai's face became sad again…

「It's fine. You see I…I'm a 『Notorious delinquent』 in this school…」

…Delinquent?
Certainly her hair is blonde and she has a blue contact lens, it feels like a delinquent…
However , when I talk to her…Natou-senpai doesn't look like a delinquent at all.
She's easy to talk to as if she's a friendly puppy…
On top of that, she's very kind…

「Well, those kind of things doesn't matter to you so don't mind it!」
「…B-But」
「You see, I'm a repeater. I actually should be a third grader but I'm still a second year this year. That's why…I'm good!」

…Repeater?
She repeated another year as a second year again…???!

「…Last year, I didn't attend the school that much. Ah, it's slightly more. It's because I was always absent since the half of second second semester and third semester!」

…Medical treatment?
…She got a big injury?
No…it's wrong.

「C-Could it be…b-because of Yuzuki-sensei?」

Senpai laughed weakly.

「Half of it…but half of it is my own fault. That's why even if I remained in the same class for another year, I don't resent Yuzuki-sensei…that's something I decided by myself after all」

Natou-senpai said that.
…The voice of the chorus from the music room sounds again.
This is different from earlier…a different song.

「…Ah, I love this song! Mendelssohn's『On wings of song』」[2]

Once again, Natou-senpai returned to her smiling face…
How rich of an expression is this person…!

「…I haven't sing this song for so long!」

Senpai mutters as if she's nostalgic for something.

「You see, I was a member of chorus club…one year ago」

…Now it's different.
She had to leave the club.
I'm sure, Yuzuki-sensei is in that shadow…

「…Should I sing together with them? If it's mixed with the voice of other children, I won't be found out that I'm here right?!」

Senpai asked me with sparkling eyes.

「…P-Perhaps」
「Then let's go singing!!」

Natou-senpai's singing voice…
Honestly…I don't know this song.
I didn't learn it in my middle school.
Or rather, even if I do, I won't remember it.
…It's a song which I virtually heard for the first time.
However…Natou-senpai's singing voice is splendid!
Though she's matching her voice with a lot of students…I hear only Senpai's voice clearly standing out…!
Her singing voice is as beautiful as this transparent blue sky!!

This person was diligent in the chorus club…

I understood it well.

And…for her to be in the chorus club with all of her effort…
This person had to leave…!!

Before long…the song ended…

「…it's no good if I don't sing for a while. My voice doesn't come out at all」
「T-That's not true…I-I am impressed!」
「That so?」
「Y-Yes!」
「Then, that's great!」

The blonde haired Senpai laughed.
A carefree smile…

What's the delinquent in this person…?!
Well, her eyes is blue and her hair is blonde…with her western like flashy look matches her strangely…
She's not a delinquent at all! Isn't she a cute person!

「…Sorry」
「…Eh, what?!」

Senpai quietly talked to me.

「We only met today so that's how it feels but…I'm sure that it'll become horrible when Yuzuki-sensei orders from now on. A lot…A lot of it. That's why…I want to apologize beforehand…!」

…Natou-senpai!

「T-That's…P-Please don't mind it. A-Anyway, S-Senpai also had to obey Yuzuki-sensei's instruction so you fell in such a situation too, don't you?」

…I'm sure, this person too.
…Her weakness is taken advantage of.

「No…I'm doing this because I like to!」

…What?

「I keep being Yuzuki-sensei's toy on my own will!…That's why, sorry!」

I-Is that so?

「In exchange, if Sensei instructs, you can violate this nice body of mine with all of your heart!」

The blonde senpai smiles.
Ah…As expected, this person may not be a bad girl…

「…T-That's…Uhm…」
「What do you think…It feels like you want to hold me don't you think?!」

Un…Certainly.

「Expect it okay?!」
「…O-Okay」
「Un, good response!!」

…The chime for the sixth class sounds!

「I think you should be returning to your class soon…It's the return homeroom isn't' it?」

…Oh right!
Homeroom is Yuzuki-sensei!!

「O-Okay, I-I'm going back!…What about Senpai?」
「I'm going to stay in the rooftop alone for a bit more…Or rather, I'm not going to attend school for today」

Then…She didn't come to her own classroom?

「Then, later…It's good if we can meet this relaxed next time!!」
「…Yes」

Senpai…she might come to torment me next time.
Me…and Shirasaka-san.

Suddenly…the iron door of the rooftop opened!

「…Oh, Yohsida-kun, you're really here!」

That's…the class rep, Yamamine-san…?!

「Y-Yamamine-san…W-Why are you here?」
「Yuzuki-sensei told me…Yoshida-kun's in the rooftop so bring him back」

I-It was anticipated.
Or rather, Sensei is definitely watching us in the camera…I'm sure.

「Hora, someone came to receive you…bye bye」

Natou-senpai laughingly said…
She had a lonely smile…

「Excuse me…Let's go, Yoshida-kun!」
「U-Un」

I bowed at Senpai and entered the school building from the roof…
Yamamine-san is walking down the stairs in quick steps.
I'm running after her from behind
Yamamine-san talks to me while we hurry to the classroom.

「…Natou-senpai, that person's a second year」
「…Y-You know her?」
「She's famous. I heard it from the Senpai in the club…She's a big delinquent」
「…R-Right」
「I've been told that she's been absent from the school last year all the time」
「…Y-Yeah」
「…I heard that she did with compensated dating, got pregnant, then aborted her baby」

…Eh? Compensated dating, pregnant, abort?!

「…Why is Yoshida-kun with Natou-senpai in the rooftop? Do you know each other?」

Yamamine-san looks at me with her long and narrow eyes.

「…I-It's our first meeting today! U-Uhm…I-I was exhausted in the rooftop and N-Natou-senpai c-c-came to help me…!」
「…Exhausted…in the rooftop?」

Ah…I said something unnecessary.

「…Yoshida-kun, you went to the roof with Endou-kun during lunch, right?」

That's right…Yamamine-san wasn't in the classroom that time.

「…Y-Yeah」
「Could it be that Endou-kun beat you up?」
「……!!」
「Not just this lunch break…your injury from this early morning is caused by Endou-kun isn't it?」
「…N-N-N-N-N-No!」
「…Speak the truth!」
「I-I-I-I told you, that's not it…. E-Endou-kun isn't related to anything…」

Yamamine-san returned her eyes to the front…
She spoke in a strong tone without looking at me…!

「Is that so?…if that's what Yoshida-kun says then I won't ask any further…!」

…S-She's angry?
…Did I make her angry?

The two of us returned to the classroom.

「…Sensei, I brought Yoshida-kun!」

Yamamine-san reported to Yuzuki-sensei in bad mood.

「Okay, well done…get back to your seat」

Yuzuki-sensei has her usual cold smile…
The students inside the classroom looks at me and whispers at each

other.

…Well of course.
Everyone saw me being taken by Endou to the rooftop after all.
My face is swelling even more than a while ago and my uniform is in tatters…
Everyone has guessed what happened…

Endou himself is looking outside the window angrily…
Shirasaka-san is looking down with a dark face…

「…Yoshida-kun, how many times?」

Suddenly, Yuzuki-sensei snorted and asked me.
The students in the classroom has a 「???」 expression as they don't get it.

…I understood it immediately.

「…F-Five times!」

Shirasaka-san's face falls to despair…

Five times…that's how many times Endou hit me.
And…the number of times I'll be raping Shirasaka-san today…!

「Is that so? Five times…that's quite trouble for you too. Come to my room after the homeroom is over. I have to talk to you for a bit」

The members of the class misunderstood by themselves that Sensei intends to 『Interview』 me.
So, the interest in the 『Five times』 fades away…

「Then, let's end the day…Goodbye everyone!」

Homeroom ends…
When I was about to go to Sensei…

「…Hey, Yoshida!!」

Endou called me out.

Uwa, he's glaring at me with a terrible look!
『Don't ever talk about it!』 His eyes tells me…
Even though everyone's looking…
He's an idiot.
Seriously an idiot.
A genuine idiot.[3]

Shirasaka-san looks at Endou with anxious eyes.
She's not looking at me.
As expected…It's endou.
…huh?
Yamamine-san is looking at Shirasaka-san……?!
With quite serious eyes…
…Could this be?

「…Yoshida-kun, let's go!」

Yuzuki-sensei called me…

「O-okay!」

While walking at the corridor, Sensei said.

「…Really, you're the worst…you're getting everyone get involved…」
「…W-What?」
「Furthermore, you don't even notice it…」

Saying that, Yuzuki-sensei laughed…

Sensei took me not on the 『Student guidance room』 but on Sensei's 『Private room』, the 『English Preparation room』
…Or should I say the monitor room of the surveillance cameras set up in the school.

「…Want some kofi?[4]」

Sensei said that suddenly as soon as I entered the room.

「N-no…I-I'm fine」
「…Is that so?」

Sensei poured her own share into the cup from the kofi maker.
Then, she operated the keyboard on the desk……
Currently, what's reflected on the center of the monitor is the classroom I was standing a few minutes ago.
There's students going home and students going to their club activities.
The students decreases steadily…

Among them, Shirasaka-san isn't moving.
She's quietly sitting on her seat.

That's right…she's been ordered by Sensei to stay in the classroom after school this morning.

Endou goes to Shirasaka-san….
The mic picks up their conversation…!

「…Yukino, still not going home?」

Shirasaka-san turns around Endou while still sitting down on her chair and answered.

「…Un. A bit later」
「If you're going to study in the library…wait for me until the practice ends. Let's go home together. Let's eat something along the way…」
「Ah, today's no good…I have some business to do. Uhm…My mother asked me, so…」
「What…is that so?」
「U-Un, Sorry…Tomorrow, I'm sure tomorrow…!」
「Okay, we have a date tomorrow evening after all!」
「…Right」

Yamamine-san is watching the two from a distance…

「…Look, Kenji, if you don't hurry, Senpai would get angry at you…do your best in your practice okay?!」
「…Yeah. I'll be calling you tonight, okay?!」
「…Un」
「Spare me from not answering like last night!」
「…I know」

Endou went out of the classroom.
Waving her hand, Shirasaka-san saw Endou off.
Walking briskly…Yamamine-san went to Shirasaka-san's seat…
There's hardly any student remaining in the classroom anymore.

「…Yukino, can I talk to you?」
「W-What?」

Shirasaka-san forced as smile and looked at Yamamine-san.

「…Yukino, you're strange today」
「…Is that so?」
「That's so. Your complexion is bad…you were dozing off a lot of times during class…also」
「…What?」
「You've never left your seat since this morning.」 You didn't move at all!」

Shirasaka-san trembled…

「…Fufufu, Yamamine-san, you observed it well」

Sensei happily laughed while looking at the monitor.

「…That's not true」
「Lies, I was looking all the time…what's wrong, are you feeling bad?!」
「…Leave me alone!!!!!」

Shirasaka-san…yelled at Yamamine-san?!
Also…the always smiling Shirasaka-san is shouting in such an unimaginable strong tone…

「…Leave me alone. Megumi…Yamamine-san has nothing to do with it…!」
「…Yukino!」
「…Don't call my name familiarly!!! We don't have that kind of relationship!!!」

Shirasaka-san's roaring!
The students who stayed in the classroom left because of the threatening attitude…

Shirasaka-san and Yamamine-san are the only two left in the room…

「…We have such a relationship」

Yamamine-san calmly talked to Shirasaka-san…

「Yukino might not want it but I'll be calling Yukino by your name. I also want Yukino to call me Megumi…」

I wonder what happened to this two?
What's their relationship…Shirasaka-san and Yamamine-san?
…Aren't they just distant relatives?!

「…I don't want to」

Shirasaka-san answered in displeasure.

「That's fine…But, if ever I can do something about it, talk to me」
「…I don't have anything to talk about with you!」
「…I'll be waiting」
「…Get out! Leave me alone!!」
「…Got it」

Yamamine-san said that and went back to her seat to take her bag

「…Then, Yukino…I'm going to my club」
「…Why don't you just go without telling me!?!」

Yamamine-san left the classroom totteringly.
Then…Shirasaka-san became alone in the classroom…

Phew, Shirasaka-san sighed.
She's biting her molar as if she's enduring something while still remaining on her seat…

「…Now then, let's open the second act」

Yuzuki-sensei said while staring t the monitor.
…Second act?

「…look, she came」

Footsteps can be heard from the corridor.
Someone's coming to the classroom where Shriasaka-san's alone…!
That's a…beautiful girl with long hair…wearing glasses!!

「…Are you Shirasaka Yukino-san?」

The glassess beauty talks…and Shirasaka-san got startled.
Turning around the entrance of the classroom…she looked at the beautiful girl.

「…Do you know about me?」

The glassess beauty smiles at Shirasaka-san while speaking.

「…I-I do. Seitokaichou…[5]」

Oh right…I've seen her at the school events a lot of times since the entrance ceremony!!!

「…That's right. Third year, Iwakura Yukiko…!」

Iwakura-san…Seitokaichou Iwakura Yukiko-san!!!
A beauty with a cool intelligent face…
Her reputation is good with both students and teachers.
I heard that she was elected last year with almost unanimous votes…

That glasses beauty seitokaichou is smiling at Shirasaka-san…

「…You're…the seventh aren't you?」
「…Eh?」

Shirasaka-san opened her eyes wide!!

「…I'm the fourth」

In short?!!

「I'm Yuzuki-Sensei's forth toy」

---

1. Lap pillow ↩

2. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=BJLRFfCXk24 ↩
3. He's a genuine idiot that I don't need to type baka just for him ↩
4. Yes Sensei, please give me some kofi, I need it to pay my fees on school ↩
5. The president of the student council ↩

19. The woman named Iwakura Yukiyo

…Fourth?
…The Student Council President Iwakura-san?

Shirasaka-san who's at the monitor is surprised too…!
Iwakura-senpai moved to meet Shirasaka-san on her seat.
Seitokaichou's steps is very light and beautiful…
Speaking of which…when Iwakura-senpai enters the stage when she's about to greed the newly enrolled students, there was cheering from the female first year because of her excessive elegance.
It's as if she's a fashion model…she walked elegantly that her head and shoulders looks noble.

「…That girl looks good isn't she?」

Sensei laughs while looking at the monitor.

「…She was intensely trained how to walk by a trainer from a model agency. Her posture and behavior is done thoroughly by a ballet specialist. Etiquette is perfectly taught by a specialist in charge of first class hotel employees…!」

…Could that be?!

「That's right…That Iwakura Yukiyo there is someone I broke once, reorganized and rebuilt. I trained her for a year to be a suitable woman becoming a student council president…!」

Yuzuki-sensei…made this elegant Iwakura-senpai?!
Could it be that her running as the student council president and winning is Sensei's plan too?

「Now…Iwakura-san, what kind of show will you make today?!」

Sensei stares at the monitor with an excited expression…
The seitokaichou in the screen stopped in front of Shirasaka-san's seat…
It had a dashing feeling like an actress in Takarazuka…![1]

「Come, stand up…Shirasaka Yukino-san!」

The glasses beauty Seitokaichou tells Shirasaka-san with a graceful smile…

「W-what?」

Shirasaka-san is completely puzzled…!

「…Just do it…!」

Though her tone is strong, Iwakura-senpai's face is gentle
Slowly, Shirasaka-san raised her waist from the chair……
Is her genital still in pain? She frowned for a moment.
Then Iwakura-senpai, had Shirasaka-san…eeeeh?!
…She embraced her softly!!!

「…Ah!」

Shirasaka-san's body stiffened in surprise…!

「Just relax…」

Iwakura-san whispers quietly over Shirasaka-san's ear…

「…It was hard isn't it?…It must've hurt…It must've been agonizing…It's sorrowful isn't it…that was the same for me too…!」

The tall Iwakura-senpai gently embraced Shirasaka-san and she trembled.

「…Iwakura-senpai too?」

Iwakura-senpai then embraced Shirasaka-san even stronger…!

「That's right…I embraced men I don't love because of Yuzuki-sensei's orders. My virginity was stolen forcibly, filled with semen… I was pushed to the very bottom of fear of getting suddenly pregnant…!」
「…S-Senpai」
「Un…I'm your Senpai. I'm the 『Fourth』 and you're the

『Seventh』…Everything you've experienced is something I've experienced in the past too. That's why I came here to help you…!」
「To help me?」

Shirasaka-san is inside the arms of Iwakura-san…
Her stiff body becomes loose…
Her strength is draining…

「That's right…believe me」

Iwakura-senpai quietly placed her hand on Shirasaka-san's shoulder.
…The gentle eyes under the glasses looks at the younger girl kindly…

「…Uhm」

Shirasaka-san turned her face away from the eyes of that Senpai…

「What's wrong?…You don't believe me?」
「No…that's not it」

That that moment…Senpai embraced Shirasaka-san once again!
Shirasaka-san's spine jumped in reflex as the glasses beauty seitokaichou embraced her forcibly…

「…Pitiful child!」
「……???」

Shirasaka-san is bewildered…!

「…You don't need to force yourself believing me. But, remember this. I will definitely help you. It's already enough that we're the only ones who're unhappy because of Yuzuki-sensei…!」

Iwakura-san in the monitor said 『We』…
Could it be…Iwakura-san and…who?!

「…Shirasaka-san, it's not 24 hours yet since you we're raped am I right?!」

The glasses Senpai asked Shirasaka-san with anxiousness from the

bottom of her heart.
Err…Yesterday, when we went to Sensei's house, we ate Katsuko-san's sandwich, then took a photo session so it should be passed seven…
24 hours hadn't passed yet…!

「…Yes, not yet」

Shirasaka-san did the same calculation as me in her head.

「…I'm glad…then, it's still fine!」

Senpai sighed in relief…

「…Still fine?!」

Shirasaka-san who doesn't understand what it means asked Senpai.

「I have a medicine. It's a medicine I got from Yuzuki-sensei last year. Do you know emergency contraceptives?」」
「…No」
「It's a medicine that'll prevent getting pregnant for less than 24 hours even when raped . Women raped in the US gets prescribed by the doctors of the same medicine…!」

Shirasaka-san spoke in surprise…!

「I…I want that! I need it! Please…Senpai!!」

This time, Shirasaka-san embraced Iwakura-senpai…!
Iwakura-senpai gently caressed Shirasaka-san's hair.

「It's okay. I'll give it to you…Let's go to the student council room immediately!」
「…Student council room?」
「Yes, I have the medicine there…we must also take other measures to prevent pregnancy…」

Senpai is thinking of various measures for Shirasaka-san's sake…

「…But」
「What's wrong?」

「I…have to wait here. Yuzuki-sensei told me to stay in the classroom…」
「…If so then that's fine」

The glasses Seitokaichou smiles.

「If it's Yuzuki-sensei, then she's probably watching us with hidden cameras…isn't that right, Sensei?!!」

Iwakura-sensei shouted towards the ceiling of the classroom…
Yes…you're correct Sensei and I can see you.

「…You see, Yuzuki-sensei thinks…『Because that person's like that, it can't be helped』so her head's got a clear decision but her heart won't get convinced. Then, she'll feel a bit better」

Iwakura-san is a Senpai as a 『Sensei's toy』so she's giving Shirasaka-san an advice.

「…But」
「You'll gradually get used to it. Anyway, let's go to the student council room…after all, we should better hurry up with the treatment…! Also」

Iwakura-san gently whispers…

「…There's no hidden camera in the student council room. I destroyed it. I made a thorough search when I took position of the student council president and throw all of the things that seems like a camera. I even disconnected all of the things that looks like a curcuit…!」

Uwaa…doing that far. This person might unexpectedly be active…?
Or rather…though she seems to be trying to speak in a low voice, her voice can still be heard clearly…?

「…I changed the microphones into high performance without telling that child. We might've not heard it if it was slightly before…!」

Yuzuki-sensei did her best in a lot of things, yes.
Without knowing it, Iwakura-san continues to talk to Shirasaka-san

in low voice…

「…Don't worry. If we're in the student council room, we can talk with just the two of us…」
「…Okay. Understood」

Shirasaka-san seems to feel relieved from the confident words of the Seitokaichou…
She agreed to move to the Student council room…

Iwakura-senpai holds Shirasaka-san and left the classroom.

Yuzuki-sensei changed the video from the classroom hidden camera to the corridor's camera…then switched it in sequence.
The two of them walked in the corridor…
As expected she's walking slowly, Shirasaka-san seems to be having a hard time walking.
Iwakura-senpai helps her and walks together.

The student council room is a bit off from the third floor of the school building…
Iwakura-senpai opened the key to the door…

「…Come in. If I lock it, Yuzuki-sensei won't be able to come in」
「…E-Excuse me」

The camera on the corridor saw the two people entering inside…
The door closed.
The doorknob was locked…!
…Haa, we can only peep until there…???!
There's no camera on the student council room after all…

「…Sorry to disappoint you Iwakura-san」

Yuzuki-sensei knocks the keys immediately after.
Then…the student council room is projected on the monitor in front…!

…There is!!

Or rather…Sensei, what in the world are you fighting against?
What's with your enthusiasm of putting surveillance cameras for

peeping!!!

The image projected in the student council room looks a bit oblique down below…
Where did you put this camera…!?

「There's a pinhole camera and mic under the door at the entrance of the room…it seems that Iwakura-san hadn't noticed that the door has been replaced… 」

…I had enough.
…It's Sensei's win.

Iwakura-san turned the knob of the door and confirmed that the door of the room is perfectly closed.
While not noticing that there's a camera at the door…

…Shirasaka-san is nervous.
Senpai turned to her and smiles…

「Don't worry…it's already okay. We can buy at least 30 minutes with this… Yuzuki-sensei is someone that panic when something unplanned occured… I think she'll be observing our state from the outside for a while without doing anything… 」 2

I see…they're long acquainted after all
Iwakura-senpai knows Yuzuki-sensei's behavior pattern well.
Of course…at the stage where Yuzuki-sensei's plan is driven out…it would be the loss of the Seitokaichou…

Iwakura-san opens a drawer in the desk of the student council president and takes out a small zip bag.
Inside the bag is a big tablet coated in orange.
After that…she took a two litter bottled mineral water and poured it in an aluminum mug.

「…Here. Drink this 」

Shirasaka-san who's handed with a medicine and drug…took the orange colored medicine out of the bad and swallowed it immediately.
Shriasaka-san drank the water and her throat made a gulping

sound.

「…The emergency contraceptive seems to be a strong medicine so you might feel a bit bad but endure it」
「…O-Okay, thank you!」

Shiraska-san who's convinced she escaped pregnancy thanked Senpai with a cheerful smile.
She wiped the drop of water that's stuck on her lip with the thumb of her right hand…

「…Ufufufu」

Yuzuki-sensei who's observing the situation of the student council room on the monitor screen laughed aloud suddenly

「…S-Sensei?」
「It's so fun…Isn't it fun?! Yoshida-kun! Look, Shirasak-san looks so relieved that the tension of her face loosened!」

…Could this be?

「…That's right. That's not an emergency contraceptive…!」

…T-Then!

「Iwakura-san believed that all this time…well I declared 『If ever you drink this medicine you can definitely avoid getting pregnant』 when I gave her that so she also thought that it really is」

L-lies…that's a lie?!

「One year ago…Iwakura-san is mentally weak and is afraid of getting pregnant. She's quite in a depressed condition so I just speak some random speech to get her on. Do you really think that's real?」
「…Then, what kind of medicine is that?!」

There's no way that it's something that promotes pregnancy?!

「You see…that's no medicine. That's just marble choco…the cocolate inside it just tastes a bit medicine like…!」

C-Cruel…too cruel.
…T-This person is A devil.

「…But well…for her to easily trust my words no matter how weak she was in that state, Iwakura-san still long ways to go. Well…I'm having fun here though」

Iwakura-senpai on the screen took a translucent pill case from the desk after.

「…There's no more emergency contraceptive other than the one I just gave you. But I still have a lot of the weaker medicine to share with you」
「…Is that a contraceptive too?」
「Yes…this one can prevent you from getting pregnant as long as the ejaculation inside your vagina is three times a day. But, you have to be careful on the certainty. Yuzuki-sensei said this…On the contrary, the probability of getting pregnant is certain when ejaculated four times it seems…!」

I looked at Yuzuki-sensei next to me…
Sensei is laughing…

「There's no way a contraceptive that's okay getting ejaculated three times a day exists! Furthermore, definite pregnancy on the fourth…if there's a medicine like that, I would want that!!!」
「…W-What medicine is that actually…?!」
「…A light aphrodisiac. It provides slight arousal…!」

Uwaa…Iwakura-senpai believed it all this time and drunk it…
She did well on not getting pregnant.
Yuzuki-sensei has an ill natured smile and the two girls in the student council room are talking with an earnest expression.

「…You have to drink this medicine definitely before you have sex」

Shirasaka-san nods greatly at the glasses Seitokaichou who's explaining with a serious expression…
…Shirasaka-san.
That's all a lie you know…Shirasaka-saaan!

「…It'll only work for three times」
「That's right…only three times. What's wrong…?!」
「I…have to do it five times for today」
「…Eh, five times?」
「Yes…Yuzuki-sensei's orders」
「…That's trouble」

Iwakura-kaichou thinks with a serious expression…

「Shirasaka-san…do you know fellatio?」

Shirasaka-san's face got red from Seitokaichou's words…!

「…U-Uhm」
「You've heard about it don't you? Licking and sucking men's thing…!」
「…Y-Yes」

Uwaa…Shirasaka-san knows it.
A word like fellatio!
The information about sex in the modern society reaches even the pure an innocent girl.

「Ask them to permit you doing it twice in your mouth!」
「…Mouth!!!」

Shirasaka-san took impact.
Iwakura-senpai nodded seriously.
…This person is fundamentally serious and caring, she's a good person…but a but off point.

「It's better than getting ejaculated inside isn't it? There's no need to worry about getting pregnant if it's just fellatio」
「…But」
「It's easy if you try it」
「…I-I can't!」
「It's just licking and taking it in side your mouth!」
「That's…doing it with someone I don't love…!」
「…You have no choice but to get used to it!」

Iwakura-san's words are severe…

Suddenly, tears collect on Shirasaka-san's eyes…

「Should I even get used to such things?!」
「…Shirasaka-san」

Once again, Iwakura-senpai embraced Shirasaka-san in her arms gently…

「…It's all right. The end will come…this won't last forever」

…End?
…Could that be?!!

「…Is that true?」
「Yes…Thee months…You only have to endure for three months!」
「…Three months?」
「Me, and the child next to me ended with at least three months… Yuzuki-sensei's quite fickle. I suffered hell in three months however…nothing after the three months. She stopped summoning by order already. Today, it's already half a year since I was last called by Sensei…!」

Iwakura-san said that and smiled gently at Shirasaka-san.

「…S-Sensei, w-what she said just now…is that true?」

I boldly asked Yuzuki-sensei next to me.

「…I wonder?! It depends on the person. Well, it's true that three months is a standard」

Saying that, Sensei calmly drank her coffee…

「…It's the end of April now so by the end of July, I'm sure that you'll be released by summer vacation! Let's believe that, okay?」
「…I wish…that's true…!」

Shirasak-san cried with her face buried under Iwakura-senpai's chest…!
While looking at the state of the two, Sensei muttered.

「Now then…would I easily let her go?」

Inside the student council room…The crying Shirasaka-san's tears is wiped gently by Iwakura-senpai.

「…Hey, don't cry, Shirasaka-san. It'll be all right. I'm sure it'll be fine…Right now, I have a university student as a boyfriend」

The crying Shirasaka-san inside the monitor is surprised and looked up…
On this side of the monitor, Sensei's having a eerie smile…

「I'm happy. I was raped by men everyday…there was a time where my body's tainted everywhere, however, I'm still happy right now. It's just half a year before graduation…then, I will be able to say goodbye forever to Yuzuki-sensei」

Yuzuki-sensei's having such an inappropriate smile while looking at the monitor in the surveillance room.
Inside the student council room…Shirasaka-san is being watched by Iwakura-senpai with gentle eyes.
Wicket eyes…and gentle eyes.

「I haven't been embraced by my boyfriend however…since that time, I'm still afraid of having sex with men and I still haven't let him but…But I'm sure I can overcome it. I'll marry him…then I'll bear the child of the person I love!!!」
「…I-Iwakura-senpai…!!」
「I'll do my best…That's why, have some hope too!…Okay?!」
「…Yes, I…yes…!!!」

Inside the student council room, the two schoolgirls embrace each other closely.
The two of them are being played with Yuzuki-sensei.
…Pitiful beauties.
『Fourth』and the…『Seventh』

「Kukuku…Isn't she interesting, Iwakura Yukiyo. Her belief is very strong…quick to jump on conclusions…impertinent…she's ignoring what's in front of her…as a result, she's having such a troubling sexual disposition because she was led to a worse situation…!」

Sensei commented on Iwakura-senpai…

「Hey…Yoshida-kun. Don't you think this girl resembles you…?」

Eh…Me?
I…my belief is intense…I jump into hasty conclusions, impertinent…
…Certainly, I am.
Every time I do various things, I feel sorry for Shirasaka-san…

「Well, Iwakura-san is positive thinker while Yoshida-kun's basically a negative in comparison…」

Umu…I'm a negative human.

「But, the two of you are obediently cute…and a bit dumb」

…Is that a praise? I don't know whether I'm being spoken ill of.

「…The two of you are my favorites!」

…Eh?

「Aaaah…Thank you!」

I feel that I have to give thanks when pleased…
Is this strange…?
It's fine being strange…

Sensei looks at me and laughed.

「Look…that's how you are!」

Once gain, the eyes returned on the student council room in the monitor again…
Iwakura-san…a washbowl and…what, she took something like a big syringe.

「Uwaa…that girl's still using that?」

…Eh?
That tool…is being used?!

「You see…that's actually an enema syringe for horses…!」

…Horse?!
…Horse enema syringe???

Iwakura-senpai pours the mineral water on the washbowl…
Then the water put on the washbowl is sucked up by the big syringe…

「Then, Shirasaka-san…Undress your lower body and get on all fours on top of this washbowl!」
「…Eeeh?!」

Shriasaka-san's surprised.

「I'll tell you the method of washing your vagina, it's worrying with just medicine. We should clean the vagina with water few hours after an intravaginal ejaculation from a man! The probability of getting pregnant will decrease greatly…!」

…S-Seriously?
…W-washing the vagina?
…Are you serious?

I looked at Yuzuki-sensei's face.
Sensei laughed…!

「…S-Sensei?」
「No matter how much water you pour in with such a rough tool, the semen in the womb will never be washed away! If you really want to wash your vagina, you don't use that kind of tool…」
「…B-But…Iwakura-senpai does that…?!」
「Un. I told her that it's better if she does that. I'm the one who prepared that tool!」

…As expected.

But, Shirasaka-san's believing Iwakura-senpai's words and prepared herself…
…She lowered her skirt bashfully…!
H-H-Her panty too…!!
She drag it down and took it off!!
…It's been a while cute crack and pubic hair. 3

「Aah. She seriously believed the lie I taught her and continued it all this time. On top of that, she taught her Kouhai…she's a good child however, quite an idiot isn't she…?」

…Sensei. If you say that far, I feel sorry for them.
…Oooh. Amazing, Amazzzzzziiiiing!!!
Shirasaka-san who's naked in her lower half is crawling on top of the washbowl…
Looking it from this angle, she looks like a dog…
Iwakura-san with the syringe looks at Shirasaka-san's ass.
Is she checking the condition of her genital?
It feels surreal…
The two of them are very beautiful girls and yet…!

「This looks pitiful…the labia's completely swollen. Your virginity was broken yesterday, isn't it? Afterwards, you were forced to have sex a lot of times… Yesterday, how many times you did it?」
「…Fourteen times」

…Iwakura-san became speechless.
Getting intravaginal ejaculation fourteen times for her first night of virginity loss is surely too much.
Or rather…It's too cruel.
Or rather…I'm the one who did it.

「Lastly this morning…while going to school…Inside Yuzuki-sensei's car…」

Shirasaka-san bursts into tears once again as she remembered the scene of humiliation.
While having a shameful posture of pushing out her naked ass…

「…Then it got this horrible. There's dried sperm stuck around your genital…!」

Iwakura-san splashed the water from the syringe and washed the surroundings of Shiraska-san's genital.

「…Aaan!」
「Oh, was it cold?…Sorry」

The glasses Seitokaichou once again splahed water on Shirasaka-san's vaginal opening…

「The cold water will go inside you…so endure it okay?…!」

She pushed the piston of the enema syringe with both of her hands.
Byu…B-Byuuuuuu…A water current flows inside Shirasaka-san's vagina…!

「…Iyaaaaaaan!!」

The cold water rushed inside Shirasaka-san's vagina and dripped down from her vaginal opening again!!

「…Second round, here we go!」

The two beauties repeated the shameful act three times.
The washbowl wasn't enough being placed under her genital that in the end…the floor of the student council room got wet with water that washed Shirasaka-san's insides…
「But, I don't think all of it was washed away with that much…I'll give this tool to you. You have to definitely use this after the sex ends…okay?」
「…Doing this kind of thing, everyday…by myself…?!」

…She's going to push the enema tool on her own genital by herself and push water on it!!!
Uwaa, that's trouble…

「I did that all this time…It's for decreasing the chances of getting pregnant after all, it can't be helpled!」

No…Even if Iwakura-senpai insists it with a straight face…
Yuzuki-sensei's laughter while watching the monitor doesn't stop since a while ago…

「…How interesting…This child is so funny!!! It was the right choice to make that child the Student council president!」

Shirasaka-san wipes her wet genital with a towel while having a gloomy face.
Iwakura-senpai took out a mop from the cleaning locker and wiped

the floor…

「Shirasaka-san, you're going to have sex from now on, right?」
「…Yes」

Shirasaka-san answers while wearing her panty again.

「…I want to give you advices as a senpai, but I don't have that much」

Senpai stops her hand from moving the mop and spoke to Shirasaka-san…

「…Try to make the male partner feel good as much as possible」
「…Eh?!」

Shirasaka-san turns around to Senpai with an unexpected look on her face…

「You do know that men ends faster when men feels good, don't you?」
「…But」
「It's painful to have the men's genital rubbing inside you for a long time. You have to end it as soon as possible…! You must endure somewhat」
「…Is that so?」
「I think so…as a conclusion from my experience」

Shirasaka-san is lost in thought as her lower part and panty is exposed.

「But…I don't know how to make my partner feel good」
「That's easy」

Iwakura-san said it lightly.

「When having sex, kiss your partner…men are weak to those kind of things」
「I can't do that! I…don't want to kiss someone I don't even love!」
「…Even though you had sex and ejaculated inside a lot of times?」
「…Because」

For women, it seems that kiss is special…

「Don't think that it's a kiss…I always put in my own tongue on my partner's mouth」
「…Tongue」
「That's right. Then you twine the two tongues together, that's not a kiss」
「…Yes」

Uwaa, Shirasaka-san's seriously listening?!

「After that…when men are about to ejaculate, shout『Hurry up and let it out!』…Then men would immediately ejaculate because they think that way. I've tested a lot of lines and this has the best effect」
「…Haa」

Shirasaka-san blew a big sigh…

「…Iwakura-senpai had her rough time too」
「Didn't I tell you?…I experienced the same thing as you」
「…I see. You did, didn't you?」
「…Yes」

The two smiled at each other.
Looking at them, Yuzuki-sensei spoke…

「…Fufufu. It seems it went well」
「…W-What do you mean?」

I asked because I was bothered by it.

「Shirasaka-san's been thoroughly tormented from yesterday till today didn't she? Her heart would be on the very limit of breaking…
「…O-Okay」
「When people fall in such situation they'd think『I'm the saddest person in the world』『There's no one in the world who suffered in such horrible experience but me』」

Sensei's wicked eyes is sparkling…!

「Then…when a 『Senpai』 who has experienced the same thing before appears…what do you think will happen?」
「I-I don't know…」
「…You see, people easily trusts those who experienced the same thing as them. That's not all, when they know that 『I'm not the only one who experienced this』, they'll become unexpectedly calmly accustomed to such severe situations…!」

Everything's keikakudoori…[4]
For the sake of making Shirasaka-san fall…

「It went well. With this…even if you become a bit more cruel for today, Shirasaka-san won't break!」

The devil's laughing…

「What's wrong Yoshida-kun?…Isn't it your job to do terrible things to Shirasaka-san?」

Oh right[5]…I will be raping her after this.
The devil is me.
I am the devil…

Once again, I pay attention on the student council room on the screen…

「Iwakura-senpai…I want to ask something」

Shirasaka-san who straightened her clothes talks to Iwakura-senpai…

「…Very well. As long as I know it」

Iwakura-senpai continues to mop and answered Shirasaka-san

「Senpai's the 『Fourth』 …And I'm the 『Seventh』 aren't I?」
「…Yes, that's right」
「Senpai, do you know the other girls Yuzuki-sensei has?」

She hesitated for a moment…Then, Iwakura-senpai answered quietly.

「…I know the 『Fifth』. But, I can't tell you about her. That child has her privacy after all. The『Third』graduated last year. Also… the 『First』surely is Katsuko-san」
「…Katsuko-san」

I looked at Sensei's face.
Sensei is just looking at the monitor laughingly…

「Uhm…Iwakura-senpai, I heard it from Yuzuki–sensei however…is it true that if you oppose Yuzuki-sensei, You'll be sent to compensated dating and have your baby aborted if you get pregnant?」
「That's…!」

---

1. The Takarazuka Revue (宝塚歌劇団 Takarazuka Kagekidan) is a Japanese all-female musical theater troupe based in Takarazuka, Hyōgo Prefecture, Japan. Women play all roles in lavish, Broadway-style productions of Western-style musicals, and sometimes stories adapted from shōjo manga and Japanese folktales. The company is a division of the Hankyu Railway company; all members of the troupe are employed by the company. ↩
2. Lies ↩
3. It's been a while, Yoshida-kun ↩
4. Just as Keikaku. TL NOTE: Keikaku means plan ↩
5. He seriously forgot, he doesn't think that he's the one who will be doing it lol ↩

20. The woman named Iwakura Yukiyo (Continuation)

…Suddenly, a phone ringtone sounds!
The two people in the student council room are surprised…
Even I know this ringtone…
Beethoven's 『Fate』 …1

…Jajajajaan!!

「…It's from Yuzuki-sensei!」

Saying that , Iwakura-senpai took out the phone from her pocket…
Oh…I thought so, is this Iwakura-senpai's hobby?
Then…when I turned to the side, as I thought, Yuzuki-sensei is on her phone…She's smiling at me while having the phone on her ears…!

The student council room in the monitor…Iwakura-senpai answered the phone with a serious face…

「…Yukiyo here」

On my current location 『English Preparation room』 …Yuzuki-sensei began to talk happily…!

「…Iwakura-san, have you finished your secret talk with Shirasaka-san?! I want her back soon」
「…Y-Yes. Sensei」
「Bring Shirasaka-san to the east gate fifteen minutes later」
「…East gate?」

The east gate of our high school is closed now. You can't go through it.
The school building was built in front of this gate until several years ago, the east gate seems to have been the front gate of the high school at that time. (Right now, the south and west gate are being used by the students going from and to school now)
After the new school building is built, the old school building is

completely broken and became a vacant lot.
However, there are several old buildings that are still left on the area.
The corner of the east gate is blocked by a 『Construction area』 roadblock and a fence.
To enter inside, you need to go out of the school, go around the school to pass the east gate.

「…You heard it?」
「…But, Sensei…」

Iwakura-senpai tries to rebel against Yuzuki-sensei.
…However!!!

「…Iwakura Yukiyo, don't make me repeat my instructions!」

With Sensei's order…Iwakura-san's back straightened and she answered immediately!

「Yes…Iwakura Yukiyo will bring Shirasaka-san to the east gate outside the school in 15 minutes!」
「…Make sure you're not seen by anyone!」
「Yes…I won't be found by anyone! Iwakura Yukiyo will accomplish your order perfectly!」

Suddenly, she became a different person…
The moment Yuzuki-sensei called her by her full name…Iwakura-senpai is speaks to Yuzuki-sensei with tension.
It's as if she's Yuzuki-sensei's 『Faithful Servant』…

「Later then…Iwakura-san」

Sensei hangs up…
By the moment Iwakura-senpai was called 『Iwakura-san』, the tension was released and she lost her strength…

「N-No good…I-It's been half a year since then and yet…Uuu!!」

Just like that, she hold her stomach and rushed to the water supply on the student council room!

「…Ueeeeeeeeeeeeee!!!」

Iwakura-senpai vomits violently!

「Senpai…are you okay!?」

Shirasaka-san approached Iwakura-senpai anxiously and rubbed her back gently…
Senpai twists the faucet and flushed away the vomit with water…

「I'm fine…I'm okay, thanks…!」

After rinsing her mouth with tap water…Iwakura-senpai thanked Shirasaka-san…

「I'm already no good. When Yuzuki-sensei calls me by my name, I can't go against her orders. Time has passed so I thought I would be able to loosen her curse on me even a bit however…I wasn't able to resist at all」
「…Senpai」
「You see…I was a completely different person before I met Sensei. I'm gloomy, shy of strangers, not good standing in front of others… And I never thought of running for the president of the student council」
「…Is that so?」
「That's right…I always hid behind the shadow of others, a woman only does wait and see on the surroundings. An existence in class that's okay even if not there. An air-like woman」
「…I can't believe it」
「I'm such a transparent and colorless existence like air and yet… and yet, I've been always made fun of the students around me」
「…Eh?」
「Cheerful and gloomy children, children with good and bad grades, those who are good and bad at sports, honor students and delinquent students, everyone's making a fool of me. I hated all of the students at the school. I thought『Everyone should just die』.
『I'm different from the children here, this isn't the place where I belong』I spent my daily life thinking that…」

Shirasaka-san's stunned from Iwakura-senpai's confession.

「…In the end I was the most stupid. A real idiot. That's why I was found by someone like Yuzuki–sensei and told…『I'll take you to a

world where other students haven't experienced』 …But, that was hell」

Shirasaka-san's face is filled with fear…

「Sensei always says… 『Iwakura Yukiyo go in this place today』 at that time, I already had my weakness grasped by Sensei so I can't go against her… With Sensei's orders, I went to different locations…first was a big station dirty love hotel.
Then, my virginity was taken by an unknown man and was prostituted everyday…!」

…I see.
The 『Prostituted child』 Yuzuki-sensei was talking about is Iwakura-senpai…!

「 『Iwakura Yukiyo, go to this place today!』, 『Play with this person for today!』 …And I had an unreasonable experience. I was raped by a rich old man on a high quality hotel suite. I even had sex in a foreign owned jet on an altitude of 10,000 meters. On the contrary…I was gangraped by homeless people on a muddy night park on an unknown town. I was even taken on a motorcycle gang hangouts and was sold for 300 yen on one shot!!! Certainly, all of it are 『Special Experiences』 but…it was an endless hell…!」

Iwakura-senpai had that kind of experience…

「That kind of life continued for three months. Then, one day, Yuzuki-sensei told me. 『Iwakura Yukiyo, then how about you sell yourself in the school from tomorrow? Sell your body on those students who made fun of you. How much should we sell per shot』 …She said」

…C-Cruel!
Sensei is laughing next to me…

「I finally couldn't hold it anymore. I was able to endure it because all of my partners in prostitution are people I don't know. I break off with all of them after one occasion and they're all someone I don't know. And yet, selling myself on the students of this school?…I wasn't able to endure it. That's why, I told Sensei 『I'd

rather die than do that…please kill me』!!」

Shirasaka-san's breath is taken away!
Iwakura-senpai keeps talking…

「…At that time, I was in despair. I hated my body that was tainted. I thought that I was dirtier than anyone in the world. I thought that my life is already over…But, Sensei doesn't allow me to die…!!」

Sensei spoke while staring at the monitor happily.

「I told Iwakura-san. 『What are you saying, just how can you say that your life has ended?』」

Iwakura-senpai in the student council room began to squeeze out her words…

「…It's over, I can never go back. That's what I thought…and yet, Sensei told me…!!」

Sensei and Iwakura-senpai's words overlap…!

「『…Think that the you until now is dead. Iwakura Yukiyo will be reborn from here!!!』」

Sensei's smiling and Iwakura-senpai's shedding tears…
Shirasaka-san in the student council room is dumbfounded…and me in front of the monitor is mute amazement…

「The next day, wasn't sent for prostitution. But, I'm still ordered by Yuzuki-sensei…「『Iwakura Yukiyo, go in this place today』『Keep company with this person today』」But it was a high class beauty salon, a famous beauty parlor, a behavior teacher on model agency, a counseling teacher… Every one of them were women. I didn't meet any men. Then, I gradually changed…」
「…Changed?」

Shirasaka-san muttered quietly.

「That's right…first is my appearance. My skin and hair became beautiful, my body style has changed with repeated lessons. My

speech, way of talking, even how I let out my voice was corrected strictly. I'm becoming not myself steadily. …Then, the number of children who talk to me in the school has increased. My interior hasn't changed and yet. Then one day, Sensei told me… 『Iwakura Yukiyo, you'll run for the student council president next election』！」

The devil next to me chuckles…

「I replied… 『Impossible. The student council doesn't suit me』 Then, Sensei told me this way 『That's right, it doesn't suit you. That's why, act. Act as the president of the student council!』」

…Act?!

「Then I was made to take acting lessons. I think, it was perhaps planned from the beginning. Sensei continued… 『Act it. You can act on a play don't you? It's a lie after all. It doesn't matter if your heart differs. Imagine what kind of student council president does your hated students of this school love? Then, play it!』」

…It's a lie!
All of Iwakura-san's figure as a student council president that we see…

「I did as Sensei told me…I killed my own heard and acted as the a suitable woman everyone expects from the student council president. Then, I was elected. Right now, I have a lot of people I get along with. There're juniors who yearns for me. When I became the student council president, Sensei stopped calling me…Perhaps, she's already tired of me. …Sensei pushed me to the very bottom of despair. …But, she granted me the hope to live. I told you about my boyfriend in the university, haven't I?…」
「…Yes」
「I thought that I'll never experience love for the rest of my life. But, I met that person…and fell in love. At that time, I tested the method Sensei told me」
「…Could that be?」
「That's right. I made an act…I imagined what kind of lover he desires and played it. Then, I was able to lock my past experience. I act with all my might and love him, I am loving!!」

Iwakura-senpai crumbles in tears.
Shirasaka-san embraced that Senpai quietly…

「…Iwakura-senpai's different from me」

Iwakura-senpai looked up at Shirasaka-san in surprise from what she heard.

「You just told me a while ago right?…That 『We had the same experience』」
「…Yes」
「But I'm different…Iwakura-san's experience is much more cruel. You've gotten over such a harsh thing, and yet I!!!」
「…Shirasaka-san」
「I was convinced all this time that I'm the person with the harshest life in this world…I was such an idiot…I was such a detestable woman!!!」

Shirasaka-san began to weep.
This time, Iwakura-senpai embraced her…

「…It's fine. Don't mind it…You don't have to mind it…」

I kept looking a the image of the two…

「…Now then, should we be going now?」

Then, Yuzuki-sensei stood up. She placed the ko-fi cup away.

「Eh…W-Where are we going?!」
「We need to arrive ahead of those people on the waiting place I told Iwakura-san」
「…But」

The two people on the monitor caught my eye.

「The training ended. There's no more information that would come out…Iwakura-san also knows that I'm strict on time so she'll be bringing Shirasaka-san as promised…!」

Saying that, she switched off the monitor.

「…Let's go!」

It can't be helped when it comes to this…
I went out of the room…

Then we appeared at the south gate of the campus.
We went around the wall of the school and towards the east gate.
There's no pedestrian at all.

「With the pretext of not disturbing the huge construction vehicles passing though sometimes on the construction of the new school building, the main street is closed down. Anyone but the person living in this neighborhood are the ones passing this way!」

…Hey, Is Yuzuki-sensei doing that thing?!
I saw a big iron gate ahead of the long wall.
There's fence for construction applied at the front of the gate…
There's red rust floating on the big wire and chain of iron that binds the fence.
This must've been closed for years…
Sensei got over the orange and black barricade and faced the guard room on the side of the gate
It looks like the guard room is structured to be embedded on the wall of the school.

「…we can go inside from this guard room」

Certainly, the guard door surely reaches both on and off campus.
If you open both doors, you can get in the school…
Sensei took out a kay and opened the door to the guard room.

「…Yoshida-kun, hide yourself here for a while」
「…Eh?」
「I don't want Iwakura-san meet you yet.」

…What, does she have a plan?
I reluctantly hid myself in the guard room.
I can see the sky from the window of the guard room…
It's almost five o'clock, nearing the end of april.
From the clear blue sky, it changes to orange of the evening…

「…Sensei, I brought Shirasaka-san」

…I heard a voice form the outside. Iwakura-senpai's voice.

「Well done. Iwakura-san, you may return…」

---

1. ↩

◇ Yukino Rape -Arc II

21. Sex Club President: Shirasaka Yukino!

Hiding in the guard's office, I listened to the conversation of Yuzuki-sensei…

「…Shirasaka-san. I will be at the student council room after school so depend on me if anything happens. I'll be there to talk to you」

The glasses student council president…Iwakura-senpai's voice.

「…Iwakura-senpai, thank you very much」

Shirasaka-san's crying voice…

「…Do your best. No matter how harsh it is, it'll surely end. I guarantee it…okay?!」
「…Yes」

Senpai encourages Shirasaka-san.

「Yuzuki-sensei…please don't be too cruel on Shirasaka-san…!」

Iwakura-senpai appeals to Sensei…

「…I wonder what should I do? In the end, it depends on the person herself…isn't it the same on your time?」

I can't see it from my position but I'm sure that Sensei's laughing.

「Anyway, you can go back now Iwakura-san. Or could it be that you want to participate? You haven't done sex for a while yet don't you?」
「…I」

Iwakura-senpai's voice is trembling…
She's prostituted in the past so her fear of sex might come back…

「I, I will do my best! I'll work hard so please…Senpai should go back!」

Shirasaka-san seems to have interrupted the two…

I see…Iwakura-san has a university student boyfriend right now so she doesn't want to get involved.
But are you sure…Shirasaka-san?
Saying something like that in front of Yuzuki-sensei.

「Oh, you're totally willing now aren't you Shirasaka-san? How's it, are you used to having sex already? It should be feeling good already, shouldn't it?」
「I-It doesn't feel good…!」
「…Then, you're going to have sex until it feels good!」

…Look?

「I won't get used on that way…I won't!」
「Even if it's forced sex, if it continues for long, it'll feel good you know…women's body has that kind of feeling…!」
「…That's a lie!」
「At the beginning of Meiji era…do you know red light district? It's a place where there's a lot of brothel. There's a scholar who asked the prostitutes about their change. Various data remained. Among them, there's a prostitute who keeps company with a customer she hated saying 『No matter how much you hated it, you'll soon reach climax after doing it a lot of times』 The body gets used to it…!」

Sensei laughs!

「…No…I don't want that!」
「…Shirasaka-san, it's okay. You'll surely be fine…okay?!」

Iwakura-senpai's voice was somehow able to calm down Shirasaka-san…
…However!

「…Iwakura Yukiyo! Go home already!」

Sensei ordered her!

「Yes! Iwakura Yukiyo will return!!!…Uuuu!」
「…Senpai!」

Past Iwakura-senpai accepts Sensei's orders directly.
The current Iwakura-senpai tries to refuse Sensei's orders by reflex.

There's two selves fighting inside Senpai.

「Iwakura-san…you're my 『Fourth Toy』 That will never change…Both your joy and pains will taste the same. Don't forget it!!!」

I heard Sensei's laughing voice again…

「…Goodbye, Shirasaka-san see you tomorrow…Endure it, do your best…!」
「…Yes. Iwakura-senpai, thank you for your guidance!!」

◇ ◇ ◇

…Before long, Shiraska-san and Sensei entered the Guard room.
Iwakura-senpai seems to have returned already.
When Shirasaka-san confirmed that I'm here, she sent me a glance of hatred and scorn…
I'm already hated from the bottom of her heart.
I thought once again…

We passed through the guard's room and entered the closed space in the school, the 『Construction Area』
Of course, Yuzuki-sensei locks the door of the guard's room tight…
It's impossible to run away anymore.
Shriasak-san…and me.

「…This way!」

Sensei invited Shriasaka-san and me on a small building.
It's a two stories ferroconcrete…It's surely a Showa building. The concrete is completely dirty and discoloring green…

「You see, this was an annex of the old school building. It was a building added later for a special class」
「…S-Special class?」
「…In this high school before, there're are students who graduated who wants to be employed. It's a special teaching lesson for such children. Clothing room, cooking room, and technical room… there's only special classrooms here」

…Eh, so there was such a class here before?

「Due to the declining birthrate, this high school has is centered for preparing them to get into university for ten years ago. That's why such special classes has been stopped ahead」

…Haa, I see. So that's what this building is.
But, why is the old main school building became an empty lot and only this annex remained…?

Sensei opened the lock to the back entrance of the building…

「Remember this…I'm the only one who have this key」

…We entered the building
It smells moldy…
There's dusts collecting on the window…
The school building in the Showa era has a lower ceiling than the current school building…
There're pipes showing itself on the ceiling…
Somehow, the atmosphere feels dark…
It's already sunset outside the window.
Oh…It's already that time.

「…This way. This room is convenient so this building remained without being destroyed」

Sensei stopped in that toom.
It's written as『Night Duty Room』…

「During the Showa Era , there's young teachers staying overnight and patrolling the school building…Isn't it funny? But thanks to that this room is prepared for lodging environment so…it's ideal for sex isn't it?」

…Haa, is that so?
『Night Duty Room』, I can't imagine what kind of room is that…
Honestly…I don't want to look outside, but I can't say that.

Sensei put her hand on the doorknob…
And opened the lock to the night duty room!
…The old wooden door opens with a creaking sound!

「Oh, I've been waiting for you!」

…Huh?
Katsuko-san in maid uniform is inside…?!!!

「Ojou-sama, I've done the preparations according to your order!」

The energetic Katsuko-san smiles pleasantly…

「Thanks…Katsuko」

Inside the night duty room…
The floor is made of wood…and there's at least a 60cm tall tatami mat spread on the interior floor.
Oh, it feels like the Janitor's room in the middle school.
It has an impression of a 4.5 mat Japanese style room on a 6 mat Western Style room…
The western room part has a gas stove and a sink. There's an old refrigerator too.
However…It somehow brings out a strange feeling…!
The 4.5 mat area room…!!
What's there is a futon spread out and two pillows…
There's a small screen behind the pillow.
Somehow, it's in lewd Ukiyoe[1]
Then there's a small black tray with two bags of condom…
On the side of the room, there's a big old fashioned dresser.
It's cleaned perfectly but…could this be…?

「Ehehe, I made it to an image of Showa era brothel!」

'Ehehe'…Katsuko-san?

「It's the world of 『A Strange Tale from the East of the River』[2]」

"Bokuto kaidan"…What's that?!

「Well done…You've overdone it in some places though」

Sensei seems to be satisfied with Katsuko's work.

「…But, this isn't needed」

Saying that, she picked and raised the condom on the tray…
She showed the bag of condom to Shirasaka-san…

「Shirasaka-san, do you know this…?」

Sensei laughs maliciously.

「…I don't. What's that?」

Shiraskaa-san answered with a displeased expression…
Shirasaka-san doesn't know!

「Condom…A rubber tool to prevent pregnancy!」

Shriasaka-san is surprised…

「T-That, please let me use it!」

Shirasaka-san's fingers tries to reach the condom in Yuzuki-sensei's hand…!

「…Nope!」

Yuzuki-sensei raised her hand up quickly…!
Shirasaka-san's hand won't reach the hand of the tall Sensei.

「…A child like you doesn't need condom!」

The devil smiled…

「Get your inside filled up a lot today!」

Shirasaka-san's face distort in humiliation…!
Ignoring Shrasaka-san, Sensei went towards the door.

「Now then, I have some urgent business today. That's why I don't have time to watch your sex for today…!」

Sensei says while placing the bag of condom on her pocket.
Eh…Could it be that today's sex is cancelled?!

「But your body just learned about sex so your body should be itching to do it several times all day long don't you?」

…I am though.
Ah……Shirasaka-san's angry again…

「It can't be helped…Katsuko will be supervising your sex for today!」
「…Certainly!」

Uwaa…This was the plan from since the first anyway
Eh, but…Katsuko-san will be watching our sex in Sensei's absence?!

「Katsuko…Shirasaka-san's quota this time is five times」
「Okay, it's fine as long as Shirasaka-sama makes Yoshida-sama ejaculate five times isn't it?!」
「That's right…Shirasaka-san, what time should you be going home?」

Suddenly, Sensei aksed Shirasaka-san.

「…What?」
「Your mother should be coming home today shouldn't she? Your father's still in a business trip though…A daughter of a good home like you should have a curfew, don't you?」
「T-There's nothing in particular…B-but at least I want to go home by Seven!」

Seven o'clock…that's the end of the baseball club's practice…
Endou would be calling her…

「…Seven o'clock is impossible!」

Sensei said it flatly.

「…It's nearing five o'clock isn't it? If you want to arrive home by seven o'clock, you need to leave here by half past six. It's impossible to have sex five times with one and a half hour you know?」

…Amazing
The location of Shirasaka-san's house and the way to commute is completely grasped!

「No matter how much you persevere, you'll end at half past seven or eight o'clock. I'll send you home by car if ever it gets too late. We'll be properly deceiving your mother too…」
「…It's fine. Don't do that!」

「Oh my, I'm sociable so it's fine. I won't say anything to worry your mother…」
「I beg you…please don't get my family involved here!」3

Shirasaka-san strongly repulses Sensei's words.
Yuzuki-sensei snuffled her nose…

「Is that so?…Then hold out and do your best. Try to finish five times as early as possible, okay?」

Sensei's sneering eyes is completely making fun of Shirasaka-san…
Those cold eyes once again checked the interior decoration Katsuko prepared…

「Shirasaka-san…this will be your room from now on」
「…What?」
「You need your own work room as an exclusive prostitute don't you?!」

…Prostitution room!
…Shirasaka-san's!!!

「…If I recall, Shriasaka-san's hadn't entered a club yet, don't you?」

…Could this be?!

「I filed a new club establishment report by today's date. Tomorrow, Iwakura-san will be pushing the stamp of authorization of the student council. Club head will be Shirasaka-san. The adviser will be me. And the member, Yoshida-kun for now」

Shriasaka-san shivers.

「…The club name will be 『Sex Club』!」

Shirasaka-san lost all the power in her body from the shock.
The sixteen year old girl weakly sits down on the floor…!

「I-I don't want that!」

Shirasaka-san who's pushed being the sex club's head…cried, and

protests!

「It can't be helped…I've already delivered it!」

…W-What are the club activities?[4]
…B-but, If it's a club, then other students can wish to join in too?! Or rather, could it he that Sensei's going to turn Shirasaka-san a prostitute in this school?!!!

「Geez…Yoshida-kun, don't make that kind of face! Don't worry… whatever happens 『Sex Club』 is a 『Prostitution Club』. Katsuko…read the rules of the club」

Ordered by Sensei…Katsuko-san took out some paper out of the pocket of her apron…

「Well then, I will read out the rules of 『Sex Club』!!」

Ehem, Katsuko-san clears her throat…

「First, the activity of this club is to research and practice illicit sexual relations. Creating a smooth communication between members through sex!」

…W-what?!

「Second, the purpose of this club is to have the high school students get pregnant and give birth. Never practice birth control and experience pregnancy and childbirth while high school students as much as possible!」

Shriasaka-san's body doesn't stop from trembling from despair!

「Aren't you glad?…You're still a first year so you can get pregnant three times…!」

Sensei's having a victorious smile!!
Shirasaka-san curled her own body strongly!

「Third, the members of this club cannot have sex with other people except the members! Applicant's cannot join the club as long as the club adviser doesn't give her permission!…That's all!!!」

Katsuko-san finished reading…

「…With that said, no member will get in as long as I don't allow them. I will go out picking the best for a while. That's why… Yoshida-kun, have sex with Shriasaka-san intensely, okay!」

…Fuu.
…For the time being, it seems that she doesn't intend to let it become indiscriminate group sex.
I feel a bit relieved.

「Oh right…Katsuko, I just remembered it, add this to the rules…」
「Roger!」

Katsuko-san took out her pen and prepared to take memo.

「Ready…Fourth, once you entered this club, you can never withdraw. You can never leave whatever reason it may be!」

Shirasaka-san trembles.

「Yup…I took it down」

Katsuko-san smiles laughingly.
Yuzuki-sensei's ridicules.
Right now…what kind of face am I making?

「…It's no use even if you two die. If ever you died while in high school『Sex Club』 will be on your school funeral…!」

…This person will seriously do it.

「Oh, I'll also be leaving the photos of the club activities on your yearbook. You guys having sex as club activities and the resulting child…!」
「…No…no…Noooooooooooooooo!!!!」

Shirasaka-san screams…!!
It seems that she's unable to endure it anymore…!

「Oh…this building is an off limits area so you can shout as much as you want!」

That's right…this area in the school is partitioned with a high iron fence for construction, the gate of the campus is also a bit far. There's only fee people walking around the east gate from the start…

「Oh right, I've made a member card for Yoshida-kun」

Saying that, Sensei took out a piece of card…
It looks like a stamp card from a shop.
My name and member number 001 are printed on the surface…
Opening inside…There's fourteen 『Yukino』 stamp pushed in it.

「Handling the card is Shirasaka-san's duty as the head.. You have to fix a stamp on Yoshida-kun's card on how many times you had sex…you hear?!」

You can push stamp on the card 100 times.

「Look at me, Shirasaka-san…I'm taking my time here to explain the stamp card!」

Shriasaka-san's covering her face with both of her hands.
She's thoroughly refusing Yuzuki-sensei…

「…What? Do you really hate being the head of 『Sex Club』?!」

Towards Yuzuki-sensei's provocative words, Shriasaka-san muttered.

「…I hate it…isn't it obvious that I hate it…?!」

Yuzuki-sensei's mouth distorts to a devil smile!

「Is that so…If you hate it that much then it can't be helped. Then, let's do this. If you ever filled up the stamp in one week…At that time, Shirasaka-san, you'll be freed. 『Sex Club』 will be gone. I'll be deleting all of the sex videos you have until now…and of course, It'll help Endou-kun too…!!!」

「Eh?!」 Shriasaka-san looked up at Sensei's face…!

「Yesterday, I promised that Yoshida-kun will have one week didn't

I? Today's April 27 so, it'll end by May 4!」

…One week?
……The columns of the card has to be stamped until May 4?

「The stamp fields are 100 pieces…but fourteen are already stamped yesterday. With this pace…it's easy to have sex 86 times for the remainder of the week, don't you think?」

You say that Sensei but…
Last night, I drank some strange drug…
I ejaculated to the extent that I was surprised but I feel so much burden on my body.
Even with simple math, won't it be more than ten times a day for the remainder?!!
…I-It's impossible!
I-I'll do it though.

「…What would you do? Will you throw away your chance of getting free? Are you giving up?」

Sensei's stirring Shirasaka-san up with a foolish tone…

「…Got it」
「Is that so…go ahead and try it okay? Shirasaka-san」
「…Yes」

The orange ray of the dusk shine from the window…
The light shinign on Sensei's face seems to be stained with color of blood…
The red teacher laughed once again.

「Then, Katsuko…I'll leave the rest to you. Take recordings of the club activities. I'll be watching later」
「Yes…Ojou-sama」
「Then, enjoy the club activities to your utmost!!! Ufufufufu!!」

Sensei went out of the room while laughing as she say that.
I can hear the cold steady footsteps from the corridor.
The footsteps gradually gets away…and finally gone.

◇ ◇ ◇

「Then, let's start the club activities!!!」

After Sensei's gone, Katsuko-san spoke first.
…T-Too bright.
Why is this person so bright all the time?!

Katsuko-san took out her favorite DSLR camera from the big leather travelling bag that's on the wooden floor.

「I will be taking the photos properly so the two of you are free to do what you want! Go on!」

…Go on, she said.
…Hey, Shirasaka-san.

I looked at Shirasaka-san and she turned the other way…
Shirasaka-san's harsh with me if Yuzuki-sensei's not here…
Well, that's obvious.
…W-What sould i do then?

「…Are you troubled Yoshida-sama?」

Katsuko -san holding the camera called me out.

「…W-W-W-W-Well, Y-Yes」

I don't even know what to do or how to start…

「If you want, you can consult me!」

Yes, I'm thankful if you can guide me!

「Then, Yoshida-sama…what would be the theme of the Sexual Intercourse[5] for today? Something like a situation you want to try」

Katsuko-san…what's with 'sexual intercourse'
It's my first time seeing someone saying 『Sexual intercourse』
Katsuko-san's so beautiful and sexy outside…and yet, she's disapointing!

「If you don't have any theme or situation in particular…I have a suggestion」

…Eh?! What?!
Rather, it'll help me if you have a suggestion…!
I'm alone so I don't know what to do with the angry Shirasaka-san!!
6

「Let's see…then since the dusk light is being beautiful. Let's have Shirasaka-sama do a striptease act in this light…!」

Katsuko-san…You're a genius!
I'm sorry I said you're disappointing!!!

「S-Shirasaka-san…s-striptease…」

I ordered Shirasaka-san…
Shirasaka-san glared at me silently…

「Okay, Shirasaka-sama will be doing a striptease! Cast off all your clothes and become naked!!!!!!」

Ooh…people who don't read the atmosphere are the best.
Katsuko-san…you're so good!!!

「…Got it. There's no choice but do it, right?」

Shirasaka-san muttered small…

「Then, Yoshida-sama, please take a seat in this place and appreciate it! Shirasaka-sama should go in front of the window… Yes, that's the brightest so the rays hitting looks great. Then… please take off your clothes in sequence!」

The ray of the setting sun comes through the window.
In that light…Shriasaka-san's taking off her jacket first…
…oooh!

「N□, what a nice expression! That's good! It looks good, Shirasaka-sama!!!」

Katsuko-san presses the shutter…

「…Next, which should go first, the blouse or the skirt?」

Katsuko-san asked me.
Err, since the blouse will remain to the last minute of the night…

「…B-Blouse!」

Shiraskaa-san's trembling fingers unbuttons her blouse…
The white blouse shines orange from the evening glow…
Shirasaka-san's face is nervous.
…Expression of embarrassment.
…Expression of hatred
All of it is being recorded by Katsuko-san…

…I see the bra.
…The cute navel.
When every button was taken off…
B-B-B-Bravo!!
Bravo, Shirasaka-san!!

「Okay, Shirasaka-sama please take off your blouse quickly」

Shirasaka-san takes off her blouse while being told by Katsuko-san
I can see the armpit!
Shirasaka-san's arm is very thin…

「Please throw the blouse to Yoshida-sama!」
「…?!」
「Throw it! The striptease dancers will always do that! Please remember that!…Go!」

She's becoming desperate?…Shirasaka-san threw the blouse she took off to me!
It spreads out in the air and the white blouse falls on top of me.

「Yoshida-sama, please smell it! Sniff it! More, like a middle aged man!」

While being told, I sniffed the scent of Shrirasaka-san's blouse!
The smell of Shirasaka-san's blouse…it smells like sweet milk.
Ah…Shirasaka-san's who's upper body is only covered with bra is glaring at me with a frightful look!
As expected, she hates it.

「Then, Shirasaka-sama…the skirt is the next one!」

Shirasaka-san's fingers trembled again from Katsuko-san's words.
She undo the fastener of the skirt…!

「…Just like that, drop the skirt to the floor!」

Shirasaka-san's determined…But by the moment she released her hand from the skirt, she had an anguished expression like she scalded herself for a moment.
The light-blue silk panty that was handed to her in Sensei's house this morning…I can see it!

「Good, good…I'm taking good pictures!! Please throw out the skirt to Yoshida-sama too!!」

The skirt flew off!!
I sniffed it…kunkunkun!
Shirasaka-san's having such a hateful face…that's good!

「Yoshida-sama…should we go with the strip stease rules next?」

…Striptease rules?

「…The bra goes first and panty goes last!」

…O-Oh right

「T-Then…let's follow the rule…!」
「Following the rule, certainly, with pleasuree!…Shirasaka-sama the order will be Bra first and Panty last」

I-I don't get it though…
Still, Shirasaka-san's following Katsuko-san's instructions…
Her trembling hands turn around to the hook of her bra…
Is this bra having a back hook…Is that so?

poron…Shirasaka-san's beautiful breasts spill out!
P-P-P-Pink nipples too…!
Shirasaka-san's having a unbearable expression!!!
Her cheeks are red in humiliation…!!
That appearance is also captured by Katsuko-san…

「…Yoshida-sama, is it difficult?」

Katsuko-san suddenly turned to me.

「…W-W-W-W-What is?」

I'm not having any difficulties at all…I'm totally enjoying this.
The one who's having a hard time is Shirasaka-san who's stripteasing.

「…I'm talking about your honorable penis!」
「…W-What!?!」
「Yoshida-sama's honorable penis is intensely erect so I thought it's painful to leave it like that…」

…Yes?
…Oh, Yeah
…Certainly, my erect penis seems about to explode.
Katsuko-san…please stop calling my penis 『Honorable』 7

「How about you take off your pants and take out the penis from inside your brief?! I think you may rub your honorable penis while you're you're watching Shirasaka-sama striptease…」

…I-I lost.
…But.

「N-No…U-Uhm…」
「…Is it embarrassing?」
「…Y-Yes」
「It's fine. Aren't you aroused with Shirasaka-sama's beautiful figure?! Your penis is erect with Shirasaka-sama as the sexual target. Please take it out confidently and show it to Shirasaka-sama!」
「B-But…K-Katsuko-san's here too」
「…Me?」

Katsuko-san had a curious face.

「Please don't mind me. I'm just a tree. Air. If you think of me as a fairy with a thin existence…!」

No…isn't the fairy too strong in self0assertion?!

「Look…Shirasaka-sama, beg for it too! 『Please stroke your penis while watching me strip』…!!!」

Katsuko-san's forcing Shirasaka-san on the absurdity!
However…Shirasaka-san is…

「…Please stroke your penis…while watching me strip…!」

…Shirasaka-san!!!

「I want to go home soon. End this faster…!」

I can feel anger from those words…
I slowly took off my pants.
I took off my brief showing off to her…and my erect penis exposed itself!!!

「…Now…Shirasaka-sama, please throw your bra to Yoshida-sama」

The silk bra was thrown as hard as possible!!
I grabbed it and sniffed it!
I stoke my penis while sniffing it…!
I purposely showed it to Shirasaka-san!!

「…Uwaa, It's completely erect isn't it! Shiraska-sama, right now, Yoshida-sama is doing the men's masturbation. Please look at it…!」

Shirasaka-sann's face froze as if she's looking at something ugly and frightening!!

「…No, I don't want thiiiis!!!」

Shirasaka-san tries to avert her eyes away from me…!

「Look at it! Shirasaka-sama!!! Open your eyes wide!!!」

…Shirasaka-san looked at me.
It must be her first time seeing a male's masturbation scene…

How's it…Is it ugly! Dirty? Are you feeling disgusted?!

「Then…let's continue and take the last one off!」

Shirasaka-san's trembling as she look at me!

「…Please take your panty off! Shiraskaa-sama!!!」

The trembling hands…reaches for her panty!

「Let's do it faster…Take it off!!!」

When the panty was lowered…the cute pubic hair came out!!

「…Please take off the panty from your foot!!」

Shirasaka-san tries to follow Katsuko-san's instructions…!
However, her body's trembling that her foot gets entangled…!
Shiraskaa-san's posture breaks and she fall down the tatami mat!!!
…Dangerous!!!
Katsuko-san moved immediately and pushed Shirasaka-san's body from the bottom!
Shirasaka-san's naked body lied down on the mat!!!

…!!!!!

On top of the tatami mat…Shirasaka-san fell down on the futon that was spread out…
The ray of the evening reaches the great body of Shirasaka-san…
The panty that was about to take off is caught in her right ankle…
The crotch is opened a bit…Shirasaka-san's crack is…!!!
Lewd…what a very lewd appearance.
…Shirasaka-san!!!

…I can't endure it anymore!!!

The me naked on the lower half face towards Shirasaka-san's body!!!

「…You can't, Yoshida-sama!!!」

For some reason, Katsuko-san stopped me…?!

「…Katsuko-san?!」

Shirasaka-san's surprised…

「It's no good to attack suddenly. Isn't that just rape?!」

No, It's rape though.
Or rather…it's always been rape all this time.

「This is a club activity so doing it forcefully is no good. You both have to express gratitude at each other…」

…What?!

「…Could it be that Katsuko-san's high school days」
「Yes, I'm from Kendo club!」

I-Is that so?

「Then, Shirasaka-sama…It seems that Yoshida-sama can't endure it any longer so I think it's time to advance to sexual intercourse soon…is it okay?」

…Is it okay, you ask?
Shirasaka-san answered Katsuko-san's question this way.

「…Please wait a moment! I'll be taking a medicine!!」

…Medicine?!
…The one Iwakura-senpai handed Shirasaka-san?!

「I'll do anything after I drank the medicine…please!!」

Shirasaka-san's eyes had tears accumulating in it…!!
Katsuko-san looked at me.
I nodded.

「Then…please hurry up!」
「O-Okay!」

The naked Shirasaka-san jumped out of the bed and searched her own bag…

Then she took out the pill case passed by Iwakura-senpai from the inside.

「Shirasaka-sama…have some mineral water!」

Katsuko-san took out a pet bottle and handed it to Shirasaka-san…!

「The electricity and water of this building has returned yesterday, however…the water that would come out now if you twist the faucet is from the tank on the rooftop that's been collected for a long time, so…」

…It can be used in toilets but it's impossible to drink?
Shirasaka-san swallowed the medicine and drank the water.
After she drank the medicine…She's a bit relieved.

Shiraskaa-san…do you think that it's a contraceptive?
But…I do know.
That drug doesn't have an effect of preventing pregnancy…

「Then, Shirasaka-sama…please sit down at the corner of the futon」

Being told by Katsuko-san …The naked Shirasaka-san goes no top of the mat.
Ah…the silk panty's still hanging on her ankle.

「Ah…Please take off that panty. The socks too」

Shirasaka-san takes off her panty and socks while having a red face.
Katsuko-san picked up the things she took off…

「Yoshida-sama…Want to smell it?」
「…I-I'm fine right now!」

My penis is already maximum erect!
I don't have time for that !!

「Certainly…Then, at least wear the panties!」

…Whut?!8

「…Please wear it!」

I-I-I-I don't get it but!!!
For the time being, I'll just wear the panty Shirasaka-san took off on my head as I was told!!

「…Subarashii[9]! It's Splendid!」

W-What is she praising for?
Ah…Shirasaka-san's looking at me in blank surprise.

「Then, Shirasaka-sama, bow your head while pressing three fingers of each hand on the floor and face Yoshida-sama! Yoshida-sama please bow while still standing!」

On the mat…the side of the futon, the naked Shirasaka-san sat on her soles and faced me bowing her head and pressing three fingers of each hand on the floor.[10]
My penis is standing up while I'm still on my school uniform on the upper body, I bow my head while having Shirasaka-san's panty on my head…

「Then…Best regards on the two of you!!」

Katsuko-san's the judge!

「B-Best regards!」
「…Best regards!」

Looking up…my eyes met with Shirasaka-san…!

「…Fight!!!」

The soul gong rings!!

「…S-S-S-Shirasaka-san…lie down and face up the futon!!」
「…O-Okay」

The naked Shirasaka-san lied down the futon facing up, following my order.

「…O-Open your legs!」

「…O-Okay!!!」

Shirasaka-san opens her legs with an enduring face.

「More!…If you don't open it wider, you can't can't have sex, Shirasaka-sama」

Katsuko-san who's holding the camera, ordered her!

「Shirasaka-sama, that's where you say『Please ravish me』!!」

Shirasaka-san's closed her eyes.

「…Please ravish me!」
「…Say『Please fill up Shirasaka Yukino』!」
「…Please fill up…Shirasaka Yukino!!!」

That moment…I attacked Shirasaka-san's' body!!
While I'm still on my school uniform on the upper body…my lower body's stark naked!!
I can't endure it anymore!
I can't endure!!

I licked Shirasaka-san's breasts!
I bit her nipple!
I licked up her nape and made my tongue crawl on her cute ear!!!
Shirasaka-san is closing her eyes…she's desperately enduring!!
I opened Shirasaka-san's legs by force!!
I pushed in my about to explode penis in her vaginal opening!

「…Hiii!」

Shirasaka-san's body shuddered from the fear of the insertion!

「…H-Here we gooooo!!!」
「Noooooooooo!!!!」
「Shirasaka-sama, you have to say 『Please put it in』!!」
「…Like hell I can say that!!!!」

Unlike last night, the aphrodisiac's effect isn't strong…
The drug she have drunk right now might not be fast acting.
Shirasaka-san's body is trembling purely from the fear of rape…!

「Say it, Shirasaka-sama. 『Put it in, ravish me, enjoy it』You have to flatter him like a prostitute…if you don't, this won't end!!!」

Shirasaka-san's heart is pierced by Katsuko-san's; words!!
Her cute mouth has lewd words coming out!

「…Please put it in! Please enjoy violating me!!」

Murimuimuri, the angry penis penetrates Shirasaka-san in a dash!!

「…Iyaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!」

Guchoguchogucho…I start the piston movement!
Sex on top of a futon is different from when doing it on the restraint stand…!!
The movement of my waist is handed down to Shirasaka-san directly!
Guigui, every time I pierce her, Shirasaka-san's beautiful breasts shakes and draw a circle!
I'll massage those breasts!!
Shirasaka-san's inside gets wet bit by bit.
Deeper, Deeper, stronger, pierce, pierce, pierceeeeeee!!!
It feels good…Shirasaka-san's body is so soft!
Her damp genital twines around my glans…!

「…I-I'm about to cum!!!!」

When I raised a merciless scream, Shirasaka-san…!

「…Hurry up and release iiit! Hurry up and cuum!!!」

That's the line Iwakura-senpai taught her.
As expected of an honor student…she's got a good memory.
…If so!!

「L-Let's kiss, I-I want to r-release inside S-Shirasaka-san while k-kissing!!」
「…W-we can't kiss! I hate kissing!!」
「…T-Then, I-I'm fine whatever you want!!」
「…L-Lick my tongue…I'll allow you to lick my tongue!!」

Saying that, Shirasaka-san took out her pink tongue…!!!

I covet that tongue!!!
A man's mucous membrane coming in contact with a woman's mucous membrane, the pleasure is chilling!!

「…Nnnn!!!!!!」

…Too late!!

I lick Shirasaka-san's tongue!
Our tongues are twining!

Feeling disgust, Shirasaka-san presses me down forcibly and violently!!
Of course, I didn't stop my piston!
Lastly, I sucked in Shirasaka-san's tongue with all my might!!
My lip overlaps with Shirasaka-san's lip!

…This is a kiss isn't it?!
Furthermore, it's a deep kiss!!

Shirasaka-san's eyes open wide from shock…!!
…At that time!!!

…Byurururu, byurururu, dokun!!

I began my grand ejaculation inside Shirasaka-san's womb…

Shirasaka-san's look at me with trembling eyes. Her body's trembling.
Her whole body's accepting the ejaculation…

I continued sucking Shirasaka-san's tongue until my ejaculation completely settles.
Our lips remained overlapping…!

When I released everything…I separate my lip from Shirasaka-san.
We're still connected down there.

「…Cruel」

Shirasaka-san muttered…

Before I noticed, the sky's grown dark…
The orange light doesn't come to our room anymore.
I'm embracing Shirasaka-san in this very dim light…

---

1. Color print of every day life in edo Period ↩
2. 墨東奇譚 read as Bokuto Kaidan, written by Kafu Nagai ↩
3. hahahahahahah ↩
4. oh Yoshida, never change ↩
5. Katsuko is saying osekkusu, not sekkusu, well, this will be relevant on the next lines but ignore it ↩
6. The lion! ↩
7. This is another ochinpo and chinpo difference, Katsuko's adding O on the words means respect on the subject ↩
8. He said 'nanu' it's still a 'What', but I thought it would be fun to put 'whut' on it instead of 'what' ↩
9. Wonderful ↩
10. This shit is shorter in JP: 三つ指 Mitsuyubi, it literally means 'three fingers' ↩

22. A lewd girl in the mirror

Click, I heard a switch being flipped.
…The room lit up.
I remained connected with Shirasaka-san so…Katsuko-san turned it on.
Even with the lights, the room is still dark…
There's only one 60 watt unshaded bulb on the space of the 4.5 mat floor…

「It's this kind of room so I considered the mood for the lighting!」

This seems to be produced by Katsuko-san.
Certainly…The body of Shirasaka-san that's seen with the gentle yellow ray of the unshaded bulb has emphasized the shade of her body, it's strangely seductive and risque
It really seems like an ancient brothel.

Shirasaka-san's body who just finished having sex on the first count is sweating slightly.
The reflection of light…makes the breast of Shirasaka-san that moves up and down as she breathe heavily, shine…
The inside of the room has completely changed it's scent to Shirasaka-san and my sweat and love nectar and semen…the smell of sex is shrouding.
Lewd smell…lewd body.
The view and the scent…stimulates my brain!

「After finishing the first sex, Yoshida-sama, how do you feel?! Did it feel good?!」

Katsuko-san asked smilingly…!

「…O-O-O-Of course!」

There's no way I would be dissatisfied with having sex.

「Then, you should properly tell your gratitude to Shirasaka-sama! The foundation of the club is cooperation and care between members!」

Katsuko-san said…I looked down at shirasaka-san's body.
Our lower halves still remain connected.
Shirasaka-san turns her eye away from me…

「…S-Shirasaka-san, I-It felt good!」

Shirasaka-san silently looked towards the wall.

「Geez, that's no good! Please say 『Your body's the best! It felt so good that I ejaculated, thank you!』」

…Katsuko-san?

「Repeat!」

…Eei!

「S-Shirasaka-san…Y-Your body's the best! I-It felt very good that I ejaculated! T-T-T-T-Thank you!」

…I-Idiot.
…Am I an idiot?![1]

「Then, it would be Shirasaka-sama's turn! 『You're welcome! Please continue to love me a lot from now on!』…!」

Shirasaka-san…

「Shirasaka-sama…go on」

Shirasaka-san who's facing the side…opened her mouth unwillingly…

「Y…You-re welcome…P-Please continue to love me a lot from now on…!」

Shirasaka-san who's facing sideways…is shedding tears.
I scooped out those tears with my finger instinctively…
My fingers touched Shirasaka-san's face…

「D-Don't touch me…!」

Even though my penis is still inside her vagina…Shirasaka-san

shows disgust when I touched her face.
Just like that, I licked the tears of Shirasaka-san on my fingers.
It's a bit salty[2]
This is the taste of Shirasaka-san's tears…[3]

「Then, the sex club activity…the first sexual intercourse has finished! Both of you bow and say! Thank you very much!」
「T-Thank you very much!」

Being lured by Katsuko-san, I spoke my gratitude to Shirasaka-san.

「…Shirasaka-sama too! Sexual intercourse begins and ends with thanks!!」

…The hell is that!

「…Thank you very much」

Shirasaka-san ignored me and muttered in a small voice…

「Well then, let's begin the second round of sexual intercourse!!!」

Katsuko-san decleared brightly!
…A-Already?!
Or rather, we're connected all this time though?!

「Oh right!…Before that, I have to record the results of the first round of the sexual intercourse! Yoshida-sama…please pull out from Shirasaka-sama for a moment!」

…What?

「I gave to take photos properly or else I would be scolded by Ojou-sama!」

O-oh.
R-Right.
I pulled out my penis from Shirasaka-san…

「…Ahn!」

Shirasaka-san let out a seductive voice…

Semen began to spill out of her vagina…

「Ah, Shirasaka-sama, stay like that!!」

Katsuko-san set up the camera and began to take pictures…
Naked on top of the futon…Shriasaka-san's legs is wide open…
Hiding her chest with her hand and facing the wall while crying…
It's as if you can see the first customer of the young prostitute raped her in this room with an atmosphere of Showa era brothel.

「Okay, your eyes please, look this way!」

Slowly, Shirasaka-san looked up at the camera…
The face of a raped girl…
This is the eyes of genuine rape victims…!

「While I'm taking photos, Yoshida-sama, please take everything off!!」

Oh right…I only removed my clothes on the lower half.
No, this is rape-ish on itself…
Let's see…as expected, I want to taste Shiraska-san's whole body by my skin!
I immediately took off my clothes!

「Thank you for waiting! Then, let's start with the second round!」

This time, I'm on the space of the tatami mat from the beginning…
I faced the naked Shirasaka-san…
We're both sitting straight…

「Well then…Bow! Best regards!」
「…B-Best regards!」
「…Best regards」

We both bowed our heads…
…Ouch!
It was too close that our heads clashed!!

「Are the two of you okay?!!!」
「…I-I'm fine」
「…I'm okay」

Though she says that…Shirasaka-san's holding her head.
I can see her cute armpit and breasts4

「Then…you will be using this!」

Saying that, Katsuko-san pointed at the big dresser put on the wall in space of the tatami mat.
It's a three sided mirror use d by old women on the Showa era.
Katsuko-san opened the two mirrors..

「Then, Shirasaka-sama…please place your hand on this dressing table and get on all fours!」

Being told so…Shirasaka-san did the pose.

「Yoshida-sama, please attack Shirasaka-sama from behind!」

I moved towards Shirasaka-san's ass.
…And!

「How's it?! It's a nice view isn't it?!!」

There's a big dressing table in front of me!
The Shirasaka-san enduring the shame while on all fours is projected at different angles at each mirror!!!
There's three Shirasaka-san! With the real person in my front, it's four people?!
Whichever mirror I look, Shirasaka-san's breasts and face is projected clearly…!
Shirasaka-san Shirasaka-san's hand is attached on the edge of the dressing table and her head can't lower!

「…N-No, seeing my own ravished figure!!」

Shiraskaa-san hates it…
Oh…My penis is swelling so much already when I saw Shirasaka-san hating it.
My penis is already at the MAX!!

「Well then…Let's begin the second round!!!」

With Katsuko-san's order, I gripped Shirasaka-san's thin waist!

The strong penis faces the white ass and approaches the crack!

「…W-wait! I don't want this!!!」

…Like hell I'll wait!!

My penis invades the warm vaginal meat!!

「…Hyaaaaaaaaaaa!!! It's inside agaiiin!!!!!」

Shirasaka Yukino's being violated…!
Again and again…and again and again…!

Inside the mirror is Shirasaka-san's face agonizing from the invasion of the penis!!
Seen from different angles…the three Shirasaka-san in the mirror is being violated.

「Look, Shirasaka-sama, please take a look at the mirror～!
Shirasaka-sama is being violated by Yoshida-sama right now…
You're having sex!!!」

Katsuko-san presses the shutter of the camera again while throwing out words of tyranny!

「…Don't say that…don't take pictures…don't look at me!!!」

I began my piston…!

「…Aaaaaa, aahn～!」

The missionary sex a while ago was just Shirasaka-san enduring it…
Nothing but curling her own body, enduring it despearately…!
But…this dog pose right now…
It's impossible to bear it when she's on all fours!!!
I slowly move my waist to pierce!

「…Aaahn…ah…aaaahn!!」

Her voice is leaking…Shirasaka-san's gasping voice…!
Perhaps…Shirasaka-san herself doesn't notice it…!

「Look, Shirasaka-sama right now is being violated by Yoshida-sama like a doggy…!」

Katsuko-san flares up Shirasaka-san even further!

「Really…You're like a bitch in heat! Get ravished a lot and give birth to lots of cute puppies okay?…!」

There's three of Shirasaka-san's face on the three mirrors.
Everyone of them is hot and wet in dispair…!

「Noooo!…Stooop……This isn't me!!…This is not me!」4

Hear tear stained face from suffering is being taken by Katsuko–san's camera…!

「That's not truee～…Take a look at the mirror properly…It's Shirasaka-sama being raped…Shirasaka-sama loves being raped by Yoshida-sama…!!」

Shirasaka-san in the mirror…Shirasaka-san is looking at Shirasaka-san…!
…She's looking at her own figure being violated by me!!

「…Iyaaaa!…This isn't meeee!…This is soooo…wroooong!!!」

Shirasaka-san denies the reality desperately!!!

「But…it feels good doesn't it?…It feels very good to be violated by Yoshida-sama, doesn't it?…Shirasaka-sama loves being raped after all…You're that kind of lewd girl!!」
「…No, I'm noooooot!!!」
「Then, who's the one being projected on the mirror?…The lewd woman pleased from being violated?…!!!」
「No…I am no…being pleased by this…!!!」

…uuuu!!
Shirasaka-san's insides is tightening!!
Every time I push my hips, the feeling of Yukino's ass hitting my belly is wonderful!
It feels tender as if it's like a fresh raw rubber!!

…I can't endure it anymore!!!

I shift to violent piston!!!
The waist banging Shirasaka-san's ass is making an intense banging sound!!
!
「…Ah…Ah…ah…ah…! Aaaahn!!!」

Every time I push in deep…Shirasaka-san's mouth releases lewd sighs…!

「Yoshida-sama…how is it? Does Shirasaka-sama's body feel good?!!」

Katsuko-san whispers at me…!

「…I-It feels good!…S-Shirasaka-san's inside…is t-twining…so wet…l-lewd…i-it feels good!!」

I shouted my impressions loudly!!

「Stop this already…I don't want this…I hate this…Help meee!!」

Shirasaka-san in the mirror shook her head…!

「…That's not true isn't it? Actually, it feels good, doesn't it, Shiraskaa-sama?! It's fun being raped isn't it?…!!」
「…T-There's no way I'm having fun!!!」
「It's no good to lie at yourself…Shirasaka-sama, You love having sex with Yoshida-sama…getting ejaculated inside, you're always itching for it!」
「…That's not…!!」

Shirasaka-san desperately denies it!!
There's sweat beads floating on her whole body…!
Her whole body is flushed…!
She's aroused…!
…She's feeling it!!!

I stretched my hand through Shirasaka-san's armpits and massaged her breasts while my penis is still pushed inside her meat pot!
Her breasts is also wet from the sweat…!

Looking at the mirror…I can clearly see that her pink nipple has sweat dripping from the tip!!
I pinched her breast tightly!

「…Iyaan~!」

I massaged her squishy breasts!
With her all fours posture, the feeling of her breast following the gravity is different…
My hand can clearly tell the weight of the lump of flesh called breasts!
I punched her nipple tightly with my thumb and forefinger!!
I'm milking her!

「…Hyaaaaan! Don't do that!!!!」

Shirasaka-san's back warps greatly…!

「You're so lewd…Shirasaka-sama's pussy is taking in Yoshida-sama's honorable penis up to the root!…You're already this drenched!…It's clamping this honorable penis so much!…It feels very good isn't it?! Shirasaka-sama's pussy is being happy from the pleasure isn't it?…!!」

Katsuko-san throws out lewd words at Shirasaka-san even more…!
She's teaching that Shirasaka-san is a lewd girl…!

「…Nooo…This isn't mee…Noooo…this is a lieeee…I'm not this kind of womaaaan!!!…I'm not leeewd!!!」
「You're lewd!…Take a look at the mirror…! You're being raped, yet wet, and feeling it!…It's clearly telling Shirasaka-sama's lewd appearance!!!」

Sweaty, smeared with lewd liquid…disheveled hair, raped from behind…!
That's the reality of the girl named Shirasaka Yukino…!!

「…No!…No, No, this is wroooong!!!」

I moved even more violent!
I grind my waist violently, I'm violating!…I'm violating Shirasaka Yukinoooo!!!!

Feels good…Feels good…raping Yukino feels good…!
The one sided sex with Yukino turned me to a brute!!

「Aahn…Aaahn…Aaahn…I'm not lewd…I am…aaaaaahn!!」

Shirasaka-san's noble face distorts in the mirror…!
「An an」 her lewd voice leaks out…!
Is this a scream of pain…or panting of pleasure?…
I don't know…
However, Shirasaka-san's face while being raped by me is beautiful!

「I-I love youuuu…I love you…Shirasaka-san, I love youuuuuu…!!」 5

I'm violating Shisasaka-san with my emotions!
I want to violate her more!
I want to be connected with Shirasaka-san forever and ever!!
…I want to have sex with her!

「…Nooo…I don't want this…I hate someone like you…!!!」

Shirasaka-san in the mirror shouts!!
Crying…violated, crying…!
Her crying eyes looks at me in the mirror!!

Shirasaka-san's inside has my penis swelling greatly!
…I'm about to reach my limit on the second time.

「Uoooo…S-Shirasaka-san! I'm going to ejaculate inside Shirasaka-san again!!」
「Eeeh?!…Noo, stoopp, don't cum anymoreeee!!」

No matter how much I release inside…Shirasaka-san won't get used to creampie…!
Shirasaka-san's surrounded by fear and hatred!!

「Uuuuuu!!…H-Here we go…I'm cumming, I'm cumming, Here we gooooo…Yukinooooooo!!」
「…You caaan't!! Stop it ! Yoshida-kuun!!!!!」

I ejaculated in Shirasaka-san's womb as I look at her eyes of despair!!

「…I-It's coming in…It's coming out again…the hot stuff again… aaah…!」

My penis pulses violently inside Shirasaka-san's vagina!
Doppu doppu…the semen pours in!
Her expression at the moment I ejaculated at her…is taken by Katsuko-san's camera!

「Uwaaaa…Must be nice, cumming lots on the second time. I'm jealous of you, Shirasaka-sama!」

Katsuko-san said with a little girl like smile.
She perfectly captured the connecting part of Shirasaka-san and me and the semen oozing out.

「Okay, I captured the two of you being connected! I'll be showing this to your child in the future~!!!」

I pulled out my penis and semen drips down slowly…
Shirasaka-san losses her strength and plopped on the tatami mat…

「…I don't want this」

Shirasaka-san cries quietly.

「Waa, you're crying from the pleasure?!」

Katsuko-san said while taking photos of her crying face.

「…I'm not!」

The naked Shirasaka-san can't move as she's weakened…

「Ojou-sama says this often…」

Suddenly…Katsuko-san seems to have recalled something…

「There's nothing more arousing to men than women's tears…!」

That's…true.
I'm getting aroused every time Shirasaka-san cries!
I'm getting erect!!!

「So that's why…You're immediately offering your tears to raise Yoshida-sama's sexual feeling. Shirasaka-sama's really a lewd woman aren't you?! You have my respect.」

With Katsuko-san's words…
Shirasaka-san spilled out large drop of tears again…

「He just ejaculated for the second time and yet you already intend to get Yoshida-sama erect already? your lust is abysmal!!」

Katsuko-san…are you seriously admiring her?
Ah…Her face looks serious.
Symmetrical to Yuzuki-sensei's evilness…Katsuko-san has no ill-will…she's too pure!
But…For Shirasaka-san, it's the same cruel person…

「…No…I'm not lewd…!」

Lying down on top of the tatami mat, Katsuko-san's eyes is shinign as she look at Shirasaka-san crying quietly…!
…She's thinking of something again?!

「Ah, Yoshida-sama…could you please try licking Shirasaka-sama's tears with your tongue?!」

What?!

「I want to take a photo of something with that feeling! It's a scoop! It's art! I'm aiming at Kimura Ihei Award![6] Go…!」

Katsuko-san's showing an amazingly threatening look…!
Hey…Who's Kimura Ihei?
Anyway…I approached the lying down Shirasaka-san…
Shirasaka-san is just crying, not moving an inch.
I took out my tongue and approached Shirasaka-san's cheeks…1
I picked up the tears under her left eye!
At that moment…Shirasaka-san's body reacted!
Click!…The sound of the shutter!!

「…Okay, okay, good! I took a good image!」

Katsuko-san laughs.

Shirasaka-san's tears melts in my tongue.
The taste of her tears is wonderful!

…Greed flares up inside me again!!

I gripped Shirasaka-san's head with both of my hands…
I thrust my fingers into her hair and fixed it to her head…!

「…Nooo!!」

The trembling Shirasaka-san twists her body and tries to run away!
I pressed down her body…!
I licked Shirasaka-san's tears on her face!!

「…Iyaa, don't lick it…noooo!!」

Shirasaka-san's eyes has tears of despair flowing out one after another…!
I lick those drops!
I sucked it!
I'll violate you…I'll devour Yukino's body everywhere…!

Yukino's tears…transforms to semen inside me!

---

1. Not as much as Endou ↩
2. Just like Moba players, gatcha players and every gamer that has RNG and Teammates to blame ↩
3. It's a taste of a liar ↩
4. I am the shadow, the true self! PERSONA ↩
5. He's saying suki, not ai, not koi ↩
6. The Kimura Ihei Award (木村伊兵衛写真賞 Kimura Ihei Shashin-shō) is a Japanese photographic award that attracts the attention of the mass media and book-buyers. ↩

23. Fellatio approved course (Sixth Grade)

I bend over Shirasaka-san's body just like that…!

「Are you going for the third round already!…Ah, but you still haven't given your thanks for the end of the second round, so the second round still continues!」

Katsuko-san is playing dumb again…
If you say that…my feeling withers.
Un…I'm a bit tired.
As expected, doing twice on rapid fire…

「Err…You have to do it five times for today, don't you? Should we change the plans for the remaining three rounds again?…or would you want to feel the sexual intercourse with your whole body?!」

Right…It'll be hard for me if I lust greedily and intensely, it might be good to take it easy…
When I was thinking about it…

「…M-Mouth…Let me do it with my mouth…!」

…Shirasaka-san!
The lying down Shirasaka-san made a suggestion gladly by herself…!

…Oh right.
The false contraceptive Yuzuki-sensei gave Iwakura-senpai…
She did drink that…
The False contraceptive has a setup of until only three times intravaginal ejaculation…
The possibility of getting pregnant rises instead starting the fourth time.
Of course, there's no way such a foolish drug can exist…
Shirasaka-san completely trusts Iwakura-senpai it seems…Iwakura-senpai's depth of her heart is caught by Yuzuki-sensei so…an unhappy chain is completed.

Also…I already ejaculated inside Shirasaka-san twice…

There's one more for the limit…
She should be resorting to fellatio or it'll be dangerous…

「Shirasaka-sama, it's your first time doing fellatio, don't you?!」

Katsuko-san asked Shirasaka-san.

「…Yes」

Shirasaka-san nodded with a gloomy face.

「That's wonderful! What greed on sexual deside!…Shirasaka-sama is really a lewd woman isn't she?! This 『Inran-san1』! I will be calling Shirasaka-sama 『Inran-san』 from now on, do you mind?…!!」

…I-Inran-san, she said.

「…That's…please stop…」

Shirasaka-san refused it immediately as expected.

「That's a disappointment!…Even though Shirasaka-sama should already be the Princess of the lewd world!」

…Enough.
…Katsuko-san. Enough of that already.

「Oh right, I just remembered!…Shirasaka-sama's a beginner in fellatio, aren't you? Then, this imcompetent me, Katsuko will be teaching Shirasaka-sama the beginner class for fellatio techique!!!」

…Uwaa, Katsuko-san turned to a teacher!
F-Fellatio teacher…!

「I think it'll be a somewhat harsh lesson but please accompany me!」

Katsuko-san's smiling persistently…!

「…P-Please」

Shirasaka-san bowed her gloomy face on that Katsuko-san…

Then…Katsuko-san's fellatio lesson began!

「First, Yoshida-sama, please sit on the edge of the tatami mat!」

Being told by Katsuko-san…I sat down on the edge of the mat that's risen by around sixty centimeters from the wooden floor.
I opened my legs and sat down.
On the middle of it is the penis that's on the after state from the second ejaculation…

「Then…Shiraskaa-sama, squat down between Yoshida-sama's legs and serve his honorable penis!」

Oooh…so that's the posture!

「…It's a bit cold」

Shirasaka-san mutters as she goes down the space of the tatami mat barefooted…
Certainly, it's getting colder…
The sun has gone down, and we're sweating and naked.

「If so, then please wear this」

Katsuko-san took out something from the bag…?
That's a…thin red kimono?
What's this…that's not a Yukata.
It's too short…and the color is too showy for a Yukata…

「This is a hadajuban![2]」

…Hadajuban?

「Yes! If it's about the prostitutes on the old brothels, it should be hadajuban!」

Oh…the brothel play still goes on.
Katsuko-san helped Shirasaka-san wore the Hadajuban…
…Uwaa.
The cloth is too thin and transparent to the degree that the skin is visible…!
Her hand goes through the sleeve…Shiraskaa-san's forcing to cover

her chest with the collar of the clothing join together.
H-Her nipples are visible!
I can see it…Shirasaka-san!

「Ah, you can't! Please don't conceal the front! don't join the collars…you should just keep it hanging down like that」
「…Then it'll be seen」

No…it's already transparent.
But, when she does as Katsuko-san told her…the breast area of the hadajuban would be open and Shirasaka-san's cute raw breasts and genital will be exposed!
…That's better though.

「It's fine! It's not 『Seen』, you're 『Showing』it」
「…B-But」
「It's okay! It's a traditional figure of a Japanese prostitute!」

I don't know whether that tradition is true though…
Anyway…Katsuko-san seems to be making Shiraskaa-san a 『Old time Japanese prostitute』…
Shirasaka-san can't go against Katsuko-san's strong claim.
She gave up and weakened the hold on the collar of the clothing…
Lightly…The front of the clothing opens…!
Breasts…navel…and the genital-san, konnichiwa3
Her arm and shoulders is concealed by the thin red piece of undershirt…!
…The important places are seen, but fine!
…Su-Ba-Ra-Shi-I!!!
It feels lewder with her wearing a single piece of hadajuban than being naked!
…Amazing!
Katsuko-san…are you a genius when it comes to lewd stuff?!
My penis regained it's hardness instinctively…!

「Then…just like that, please sit down between Yoshida-sama's legs!」

Being told so…Shirasaka-san kneeled before me and crouch down…!
…Ooooh!

Shirasaka-san's face is on the height of my stomach!
And between her hadajuban are two breasts dashing out…
If I stretch my hand, the small nipples would be in the range of my fingers…!
Between those two mountains is my penis standing tall!
Exactly like the tip of the glans cutting through, it feels like it's locked on Shirasaka-san's face!!

「Then…Shirasaka-sama, please look at Yoshida-sama's penis properly first. How does it look like?!」
「…I-It's disgusting!」

A-An immediate answer?…!
Well…this must be Shirasaka-san's first time observing an erect penis of a man up close…
Even on her first experience last night it was far from her, Shirasaka-san closed her eyes from fright…

「Eh, there's no way it's disgusting…It's a very cute penis you know! I love this kind of shape!」

…Does this go in on being praised?
I don't want it to be called cute though.
It feels like they're saying it's smaller than the usual.

「This swelling and gleaming part is the glans(亀頭)! it's written as turtle(亀) and head(頭)[4] the back of the glans is called Kari[5] This is the one that's being stuck in Shirasaka-sama's stomach and it feels good when it rubs up…!!」

Katsuko-san began her penis lesson…!
The two beautiful girls are gazing at my penis…it's embarrassing!
But…Arousing!!!
It feels thrilling…!!

「…No, I don't want to look at it! I don't want to know anything about it!」

Shiraska-san who's unable to endure it anymore turned her eye away from the penis.
…well, she's disgusted with it of course.

Even I think it's a grotesque object.
The pole has blood vessel floating on it…the hair is growing randomly…the balls are filled with wrinkles too…!

「You can't, you have to study properly!…You can't become an excellent prostitute without knowing the penis!!」
「…I don't want to become a prostitute!」

Katsuko-san gripped Shirasaka-san's shoulders from the back!
Shirasaka-san got surprised from the sudden contact and curved her back…!
Katsuko-san whispers at Shirasaka-san from the back…!

「Shirasaka-sama…do you still not understand it don't you?」
「…?!」

Katsuko-san smiled and spoke at the frightened Shirasaka-san's ears…

「Shirasaka-sama's already a prostitute!…Last night, when you lost your virginity in the mansion, you already degenerated to a prostitute!!!」

Shirasaka-san's eyes opens wide suddenly!

「…But, uneducated ones are bad prostitutes ! Thus Shirasaka-sama has to study a lot to become a good prostitute…you're going to study sex too!」

…Shirasaka-san shivered!

「…N-no…I don't want that!」
「It's useless…it's too late already!」
「…L-Late?」
「Yes~…Shirasaka-sama became a woman from rape!…Your virginity can no longer return!」

Shirasaka-san's wide open eyes have tears spilling on it.
The grains of tears falls down on top of the hadajuban that's on top of her breasts…

「You're crying again?…But, I like that! That kind of Shirasaka-

sama! Your pride is helplessly high, you only love yourself and… you're high-handed! 'Why did I have to experience this?'You will not understand it by yourself?!」

Katsuko-san smiled

「But…You're already too late! It can't be helped already! You have fallen already!…Now, let's go back to our sex lessons !!!」
「…No…I…I can't endure something like this…!」

Shiraska-san sobs…

「Arara, that's troublesome…you still have three more rounds remaining to reach the quota for today! We can't take so much time…then should we suspend our fellatio lessons and have Yoshida-sama violate you intensely instead?…Let's have the remaining rounds getting Shirasaka-sama's inside filled with semen…」

Hearing those words of Katsuko-san…I was convinced.
Katsuko-san knows it…!
The fake contraceptive Iwakura-senpai gave Shirasaka-san…!
She knows that Shirasaka-san's afraid of ejaculation inside her vagina more than three times…so she purposely!

「I-I'll do it! I'll do fellatio!」

Shirasaka-san wipes her tears with both hands and told Katsuko-san…

「That's the princess of the lewd world for you!! Then, I will continue my lesson on fellatio okay?!」
「O-Okay…P-Please teach me…the way on how to fellatio…!!」

Shirasaka-san asks to continue the lesson with tearful voice.
From her back…Katsuko-san smiled and winked at me!
Of course…her smile isn't seen by Shirasaka-san.

「Well then…first will be smelling Yoshida-sama's penis」
「…Eh?!」
「Get your nose close…and sniff it like a dog!」
「…That's!」

「…You promised to study didn't you?!」
「…!!!!」

Shirasaka-san took a deep breath and calmed her heart.
Then her cute face…approached my angry penis rapidly!!
Kun…Kun…She sniffed it twice!

「How does it smell?!」
「…Kuh, it stinks…I feel sick…!!」

The penis that just finished sex…
It's covered with semen and love nectar…it smells indecent!

「Eeeh?! Let's see…let me sniff it for a moment!」

…Uhe?!
Katsuko-san's face shoved from between our bodies…?!
Looking at her closely…this person's an amazing beauty.
The chest on the maid uniform…firmly confirms the mountains that can only be described as explosive breasts6
Uwaa, she inserts her face on top of the penis so her white maid cap is really close at my nose!!
The smell of her hair smells like flowers!!

「Eeh, Isn't this quite a good penis?! It's so lewd and it smells so delicious!」

Katsuko-san sniffed my penis…she sniffed it with all of her heart that you can hear 「kunkun」coming from her nose…then she spoke her impressions.

「That's not true, the smell is. Unpleasant…」

It seems that Shirasaka-san can't agree with Katsuko-san's opinion…

「Oh, I see…got it!」

Eh…What did you get, Katsuko-san?

「Shirasaka-sama, have you drunk liquor?」
「…No」
「Have you ever drunk one?」

「At Christmas…in a restaurant where our family ate, I drank wine」
「Then, was it delicious?!」
「No…Uhm…I still don't know whether liquor is delicious or not」
「…Isn't it, isn't it? That's how it is!」

Katsuko-san laughs.
…W-what is?!

「…Even penis have that kind of same taste!」

…C-Could that be?!
…H-How's that?!!!

「Shirasaka-sama has few experience with penises so she can't make a proper judgement! I can assert it! This penis is a good penis! this penis' scent is a very good scent! It smells very delicious!」

…I-It came to this?

「Shirasaka-sama, please sniff Yoshida-sama's honorable penis once again! Then say 『Hmm, it smells delicious!』 You have to master it first! This penis smells delicious after all!…Come!!!」

…Shiraskaa-san's confused!

「…Okay, go on! Ready…Action!!」

Being pushed by Katsuko-san's spirit…Shirasaka-san once again re-approached my penis with her nose!
Kunkun, she sniffed…!

「…Then, say it!」
「…U-un, it smells delicious…!」
「…Once again!」
「I-It smells delicious!」
「…More, put your feelings on it!!」
「It smells very delicious!」
「…What's delicious?!」
「The penis…the penis seems delicious!」

…Uwaa, Shirasaka-san.

That pure and innocent honor student, Shirasaka Yukino is…!!
Saying 「Penis」!!!

「Good! Very good! Excellent!!!」

Shirasaka-san got startled for a moment!
She just understood what she was blabbing about!
Shirasaka-san's face turned red from the flames of shame!!
…However!

「Then…next stage!! Kiss the penis with your mouth!!」

I-Is this person a demon sergeant?!

「What's wrong?! It's finally the main stage of the fellatio! First would be kissing the tip of the glans! It's easy!」
「…I-I can't! I can't do it!」
「You will do it! Shirasaka-sama! You can't get an approval of sixth grade fellatio!」

…Does fellatio need approval?!
…Grade?
…As expected, first grades are black belters?!

「…B-But」

Shiraskaa-san seems to be unable to let out her courage…

「You leave me no choice…well then, Yoshida-sama, can I ask of your cooperation?」

…What?
…Eh, Me?!

「She needs to get used to it, once she's done it she'll do it naturally next time. That's why, we have to at least make Shirasaka-sama kiss Yoshida-sama's penis at least once!」

…Ah, okay.

「Shirasaka-sama, please close your eyes and don't move! Yoshida-sama will have his penis touch your lip!」

Eh …Me?!

「Is this okay for the two of you?!」

Katsuko-san looks at me…
G-Got it.
I-I only gave to do it right?!

「Then! Shirasaka-san, please close your eyes!」

Shirasaka-san…seems to have readied herself.
She closed her eyes with all her might…
Then her lips is closed so hard as if she ate something sour…

「Shirasaka-sama, please relax your face! Aren't you like an octopus!」

When she was told that she's like an octopus…Shirasaka-san loosened the muscle on her face…!

「Relax even more…it's fine to be expressionless right now…!」

Katsuko-san orders me with her hand…!
Katsuko-san herself sets up the camera…!

「Loosen yourself even more…It'll just touch just for a moment…!」

The tip of my erect penis closes up to Shirasaka-san's lip.
I gripped the root of my penis and adjusted the angle…

Katsuko-san spread her hand and showed it to me…!
She's closing her fingers sequentially from her thumb…
That's… a countdown that the Shirasaka-san with closed eyes won't know, the coundown to contact…!!

…… 3 !
…… 2 !
…… 1 !
…… 0 ! ! !

The tip of my glans made a dock on Shirasaka-san's lips!

…Shutter!!

Katsuko-san's camera made a flash and records the scene!!

「…Eh!?」

Surprised by the flash, Shirasaka-san opened her eyes.
Without missing the moment…the second shot flashed!
…Click, click, click!!!

「…Nooooooooooo!!!」

…Uwaaa, that's dangeouuus!!
I pulled my waist to the back so that Shirasaka-san won't bite my penis in surprise!
…T-That was dangeous!

「Uuunnn, thisis a good photo!! I'm sure that Ojou-sama will be satisfied!」

Katsuko-san looks satisfied…

「W-Why did you take a photo?!」

On the contrary…Shirasaka-san looks dissatisfied.

「Geez, don't make that kind of face!…Take a look at this!」

Saying that, Katsuko-san showed the screen of the digital camera to Shirasaka-san.
What's there was the image that was taken just now.

…Shirasaka Yukino kissing an erect penis of a man.
Whoever sees it…they'll know.
It's the first year, 16 year old Shirasaka Yukino…!
It's not just her face…but also a bust shot on her chest.
In short…Shirasaka-san's spilling breasts on the gap of the hadajuban and her pink pointing nipples is clearly seen…!

「…D-Delet dis. T-This photo…!」

Being shown her own embarrassing photo…Shirasaka-san's face is

covered in shame!

「Nope! If I do that, Ojou-sama will scold me!」

Katsuko-san looks very happy.
No…she's a bright and happy person at any time…

「Once again, please take a look at this image! Look…Shirasaka-sama's lips is dirtied by Yoshida-sama's penis. The upper mouth and the lower mouth has been tainted!」
「Uu…Don't say that!!!」
「It's already tainted!…That's why you can now already lick and suck the penis!!!」

Katsuko-san's bright words…drives Shirasaka-san to the darkness even further!

「…Now, try licking it with your tongue!」
「I-I can't…that's impossible for me!」

Shirasaka-san's frightened…!!

「Geez…It can't be helped!!!」

Katsuko-san put the camera aside…
And approached me!

「…You do it like this!」

K-Katsuko…san?!
Katsuko-san's face is between my crotch…?!
She opened her mouth wide and her long tongue…!!
Licked my glans!!!

「…Unuu!!」

I instinctively let my voice out…!
It's wet and warm, her tongue is licking up my glans!
…I shiver from the pleasure!!

「Uun, it tastes good! It's delicious, Yoshida-sama!」

That appearance also made Shirasaka-san look in amazement!

「…Isn't it easy?」

Katsuko-san smiles!

「…Now, it's Shirasaka-sama's turn next!」

Shirasaka-san made big breathing!
It must be from the tension…!

「I already made an example so…Shirasaka-sama should do it too!!」

Finally…Shiraska-san moved her head timidly…!
Slowly…her cute mouth closes up to my penis…!
The tip of her nose approached the glans!
Her frightened eyes is staring at my flesh colored glans!

「Please look at the area I just licked a while ago. If it's there, you can lick it right?!」

…The place Katsuko-san has already licked is sterilized?!
There's no such stupidity.
However…Shirasaka-san's actions triggered with those words!
…For a moment!
Her cute pink tongue went out and licked my glans!!!

…Buhiiiiiiii!!

The pleasure went through my spine to my head!!!
I-I though I was going to ejaculate!!
I'm glad that it's already after the second round!!!

「Well done!…What's the taste!?」
「…I-I don't know!」
「Then, taste it well this time…open your mouth and place the glans inside. Then suck it with your mouth and cheek!」
「…!!!!」

Shirasaka-san froze once again…

「Again?…It can't be helped!」

Once again, Katsuko-san's mouth approached this way!

「I don't think that it's good for me to set examples too much though…!」

Katsuko-san…an adult lady of age twenties.
There's enough young features remaining for her to be called a 『Beautiful girl』
Her lip has faint color of lipstick sticking on it…
That bright red lip was opened…and gulped down my penis…!
…F-Fells good!
…A-A-A-A-Amazing!!
Her lips stimulates the glans…!
The backside of her cheek rubs against the glans…!
She deeply holds it in…then she began to piston her head…!!
Kyuu…My penis is sucked in…!!

「Uaa…aaa…I-It feels good…!!」

My voice…my voice is leaking out!!
Uwaa…What's this pleasure?!!!
Is this what Fellatio is…?!
I-If this continues…I'd cum!!

「…Okay, that's enough!」

Katsuko-san…pulled out the penis from her mouth and said.

…Eeeeh!?
…I was just about to cum!

「I only showed an example!…Now, it's Shirasaka-sama's turn next!」

Oh right…Shirasaka-san's going to do it!
My thing would go in Shiraskaa-san's virgin mouth!!

「Okay, go on!!」

My penis is shining with Katsuko-san's saliva.

「I've already licked up to the root!…You can do it now, can't you?」

Shirasaka-san has a scared face…!

「…I don't mind if you won't do it!!」

…Shirasaka-san's mouth slowly closed up…

「…More, open your mouth wider!」

Katsuko-san is speaking like a dentist.
Shirasaka-san closed her eyes…!
In front of me…I can see the inside of Shirasaka-san's mouth.
The rows of the teeth are good…there's no decay at all…the cute tongue…I can see everything.

「You can't bite it okay?…You only have to soft bite it with your lips…Yoshida-sama, please jam it inside Shirasaka-sama's mouth!」

…Jam it in!
…Inside Shirasaka-san's mouth!!!

Being told by Katsuko-san, I thrust forward my waist…!
Shirasaka-san repeatedly made hot breathings…!
Ooh…I can feel the hot wet sigh with all of my glans!
My penis slowly goes inside Shirasaka-san's mouth!
…It's invading!

「Okay…please close your mouth slowly…don't ever try to bite it… wrap it with your mouth and tongue gently, and gently…!」

Shirasaka-san's mouth narrows and closed…!

…Nuaaaaaaaaa!!!

My penis…the glans…is wrapped in wet and warm stuuuuuffff…!!!
It's inside…Shirasaka-san's warm mouth!!!
Shirasaka-san's lip…tongue…saliva…everything's felt by my peniiiiiiiiiiiisssss!!!

Shirasaka-san…as expected, she can't hold all of my penis in her

mouth yet…
For the time being…just the glans.
But…Even with just the glans, Shiraskaa-san's sucking it with her mouth!!

…Amazing!!!
…I'm happy!
…I'm already fine dying!!

「…Then, Shirasaka-sama…please open your eyes slowly…I'll be taking pictures」

Shirasaka-san opened her eyes in surprise and looked at Katsuko-san while having the glans in her mouth…

「We have no choice but to take photos!…It can't be helped!…It's fine isn't it?!」

Though she's smiling gently…there's insanity dwelling in her eyes.
No one can't go against Katsuko-san.

「Don't go biting it from being surprised from the flash okay?…
Okay, please take a look at the lens!」

Shirasaka-san looked at the lens unpleasantly while still having my penis in her mouth.
The eyes of despair…has tears collecting on it again…

「…Okay, cheese!」

…There's no person who'd tell someone who has something in it's mouth 『Okay, cheese!』

Still, Katsuko-san pressed the shutter…!!
Flash!
Again and again…!!!

「Okay, I took pictures! Then, let's go to the real deal…!!」

As Katsuko-san speak…Shiraska-asan doesn't know what to do.
She's stiff while still having my penis in her mouth…

「Yoshida-sama, please thrust out your forefinger at me…!」

…Eh, finger?

「Hurry up!」

…G-Got it!
I thrust out my left hand forefinger at Katsuko-san…!

「Shirasaka-sama…Can you see this?! I'll be servicing this finger thinking that it's a penis so, Shirasaka-sama, please mimic my actions!」

…T-That's!
…Could it be a finger fellatio?

「First…hold the root of the penis with your right hand like this… you only have to use your thumb, forefinger and middle finger to round it. Please don't get too much power on it…Just gripping it gently is good enough…!」

Katsuko-san gripped the root of the finger I thrust out…!
Similarly, Shirasaka-san used her three fingers to grip the root of my penis!

「Next, please wrap up the sack with your left hand below…do you know what the sack is?…That's right, that wrinkled thing!」

Katsuko-san's left hand supports the bottom of my hand…!
Shirasaka-san's left hand is touching the bottom of my testicle sack…!
The thin finger of a woman is slightly cold that I shivered…!!

…I'm having chills!!!

Having someone other than oneself, furthermore a beauty touch your balls feels this good…?!
My body might not cum with masturbation anymore…!

「Okay…That's the basic form of your hand…Please remember it!!
7」

…Unun, Don't forget it okay, Shirasaka-san!!

「Then…Let's begin the fellatio! Please trace my movement okay?!」

…Then.
Katsuko-san holds my finger in her mouth.
…Uuuuuuuuuu!!!
I-It's my finger and yet…This also feels good!!
This is finger fellatio?!

Katsuko-san moved her face slowly back and forth…!
…Juppo, juppo!

Following it, Shirasaka-san made the same movement on my penis…!!
…Juppo, juppo!

…I-I-I-I-I-I-I-I-I-It feels goooooooodddd!!!
My penis and finger, double kumochiiii!![8]

Next, Katsuko-san licked the bottom of the finger then the top!
Shirasaka-san also…mimicked Katsuko-san and used her tongue!

Then after that…she licked the glans!
While licking, the right hand's finger is stroking the pole…!
The left hand is also brushing up the balls…!!

「Ah…Aaah…Aaaaah…I-It feels good…S-Shirasaka-saaan…I-I…feel gooooooodddd!!!」

…No good.
I know that this is disgraceful land yet…
My voice…my voice is leaking out…![9]
Does fellatio feel this good?
Or could it be because my beloved…the cutest girl in the world does the fellatio?!
…Aaaaaaaah!!
I-I'm going to cum immediately…!

KAtsuko-san began the last spurt!
ChupaChupa…Her mouth moves faster!!

Shirasaka-san too…She moved even more violent to match!!
She's moving her fingers on both hands and stimulates the whole penis…!

Uwaaaaaaa…Shirasaka-san's mouth…is violently stimulating my glans and my penis!!!!!
The feeling of her small tongue…!
Shirasaka-san's mouth is so hot!
The mucous membrane of her mouth an d the mucous membrane of her mouth…is rubbing each other…!!
Die…I'm going to dieeeeeeee!!

「S-Shirasaka-san…I-I'm about to cum!!…I-It's fine to cum isn't it?…I-I can cum inside Shirasaka-san's mouth, can't I?…!!!」

Shirasaka-san's face cramped in fear!
But…the stimulating movement of her mouth doesn't stop!!!

「…It's fine! Just like that…accept it with your mouth!! Now… Yoshida–sama, it's okay to ejaculate!! Inside Shirasaka-sama's mouth!!!」

Katsuko-san removed my finger from her mouth and shouted in a loud voice…!
She took out her camera and faced the lens at Shirasaka-san!!

「…C-Cummiiiiiiinnngggg!!」

…Byuru, byurururu, byrurrururuur!!!

My penis pulsates inside Shirasaka-san's mouth!!
The cloudy liquid pours in!!!

「…Nnnn!!!!」

…She must hate it!
…She must unbearably hate it!!
Shirasaka-san's face agonizes from the ejaculation inside her mouth!!
Tears…Tears spill out…!!
…It's painful?
Hey…Is it painful, does it hurt…Shirasaka-san, hey?!!!

Katsuko-san makes consecutive shots of Shirasaka-san's tragic appearance!!
It's completely recording the woman who's tasting a man's semen for the first time!!!

I released an amount of semen you won't think it's the third time…

「Yoshida-sama, please pull out your penis from Shirasaka-sama!」

My penis lost it's strength as expected…
I pulled it out from Shirasaka-san's mouth…

Shirasaka-san's mouth is at loss of what to do with the semen inside her mouth…
Katsuko-san's capturing her pitiable expression with the camera…

「Shirasaka-sama…open your mouth wide and show it to Yoshida-sama!」
「…?????!」

Shirasaka-san…seems to not understand what it meant…

「The amount of semen that was accepted by the mouth must be confirmed with eyes properly!…Come!」

Shirasaka-san looked at me with a confused expression while her mouth is closed…!

「Yoshida-sama too, please order her by yourself! 『Open your mouth and show it to me』 …!」

…Un. Certainly, I want to confirm it with my own eyes.
How much did I let out…or did it enter the mouth properly…!

「…S-Shirasaka-san. O-Open your mouth…and show it to me…!」

I gave her a cold blooded order…!
Shirasaka-san hesitated for a moment…but still, she faced me and opened her mouth wide…!

Inside her small mouth…on top of her tongue is my semen filling it up…!

Cute…!!
Amazingly cute!!
You're cuter than anyone in this world…Yukino!!!
My Yukino!!!

This is the best love I felt for her since ever!
I didn't have this kind of of feeling even at our first experience!!!

「Please let me take a look too…!!」

Shirasaka-san faced Katsuko-san with her mouth still open…
Katsuko-san pressed the shutter immediately…

「…Then, please drink all the semen in your mouth!!」
「…?!!!!!!!!!!!!!!」

Shriasaka-san shook her head intensely…!

「Dilute it with your saliva…then spread it out with your tongue!!
After that, drink it!」

Shriasaka-san still refuses…!

「…It won't end if you don't drink it!」

Shirasaka-san's movement stopped.

「Use everything inside your mouth, gargle it properly…Then, there will be a lot of saliva coming out…use that your tongue and saliva to mix it. I always to that…that's why…!」

Shirasaka-san…seems to have given up.
She's chewing inside her mouth…
Oh…Inside this beautiful face is my semen being mixed…!

「I think that's good enough!…Now please swallow it!」

Shirasaka-san…Slowly gulps down her mouth…!
It seems she can't drink it in one go…
Gulp…Gulp…Gulp…!
Her thin throat gulped three times…

「Well done!…How's the taste of your first semen?!」
「…B-Bitter」

Oh…So semen's bitter…
I didn't taste it myself so I don't know…

「It's delicious isn't it?」
「…That's not delicious at all!」

Shirasaka-san's getting worked up…!

「No, men's semen are very delicious! Shirasaka-sama will soon get used and will love it! Let's see, if you drink it for twenty times, you'll be able to understand the taste! Please do your best to achieve that level sooner okay?!!!」

Katsuko-san's bright as always…!
Her my pace is terrifying in some meaning…!

「Here you go, water…!」

Katsuko-san offered Shriasaka-san a water bottle.
Shirasaka-san took it immediately…!
She then faced the sink…
She stuffed the water in her mouth instantly…and gargled.
Again and again…

「…uu, uuuuu…uuuu!」

Again…while crying…and again…

「My, Shirasaka-sama! Are you impressed so much that you cried?!」

Katsuko-san said while capturing the state with her camera.

「Of course you do! Tasting a man's semen and learning it is one step to becoming a woman after all! With this, Shirasaka-sama safely experienced Fellatio! I offer you the Fellatio approval – 6th grade to you!」

…There's really one? Fellatio approval.

…Or rather, why 6th grade?
…Doing that much.
…She even drank the semen.

「Next, you'll be doing it without examples! If you can do fellatio by yourself, you'll reach 5th grade, okay…?!」

The demon sergeant's lesson continues…!!

---

1. Inran means lewd ↩
2. A japanese style undershirt! ↩
3. Konnichiwa means Hello for those new in the JP language, lol ↩
4. Oh, so that's why turtles are usually being put on penis jokes in JP ↩
5. Head of a penis ↩
6. 爆乳 It can also be enormous breasts ↩
7. It'll be in your tests! ↩
8. I know that you already know this! ↩
9. Sounds like Yoshida-kun's a raped girl being mindbroken. lol ↩

24. Sixteen year old, losing to climax.

「…Well then, Shirasaka-sama will rehearse her fellatio again!!」

With that said, we had two consecutive fellatio in succession…
This is also Shirasaka-san's training to become a fellatio master. 1
I will play with her in all respects…!
Furthermore…Shirasaka-san herself…
Unnn, a delicate expression…
It seems that she hates holding my erect penis on her mouth once again and have it pour sperm inside…
But, Shirasaka-san has no other options…
She must at least do it another time with her mouth or else the fear of pregnancy waits her…!

「Should we change the pose this time?!」

…Huh?
Katsuko-san seems to have thought of something…
She entered the tatami mat herself and put away the futon…
The futon is folded and placed to the wall's side…

「YOshida-sama, please sit and lean your back on this futon! It's okay to spread your legs…!」

…Sure sure.
Following Katsuko-san…I leaned on the futon naked…!
I spread out both of my legs…

「Ah, Yoshida-sama, place cushion under your buttocks! It would be easier for Shiraska-sama to lick it if your waist is raised a bit…!」

Un. Katsuko-san's really a woman who notices it well…
Okay okay…let's put a cushion under our ass!
My waist is raised and I let my head just fall softly on the mountain of futon…
My body, has it's waist bent like 「＜」…

「Then! Shirasaka-sama will go cover Yoshida-sama's legs…That's

right! It's on all fours! Get on him with that pose!」

Oooh…Shirasaka-san on Hadajuban is coming to my leg…!
Uwaa…She's looking displeased again…!
But…That kind of face is also cute…!
Shirasaka-san's getting on top of me while crawling on all fours!
The soft piece of cloth is touching my foot lightly…!
…Aaah!
Shirasaka-san's head…Is on top of my crotch again!
…It came!!!

「Shirasaka-sama…Just like that, get on your knees and spread your legs open…Like sticking our buttocks out!!」

The demon sergeant gives instructions in sequence…!
With the unreasonable instructions being fast and precise,
Shirasaka-san follows it unintentionally…!

「Both of your hands on Yoshida-sama's thighs please…support your body with the four points of palms and knees! That's right, it's like dogeza with only the buttocks raised upwards!…!」

Finally, in top of my leg…Shirasaka-san's body is stretching itself like a cat!

…C-Could this be?!
…The so called 『Lady Leopard Pose』?!

In my field of vision is a valley and two meat lumps clearly seen!
The nipples hanging downward seems to be like a fruit…!

「Shirasaka-sama, please lower your head a but more! And raise your buttocks even higher!」
「…L-Like this?」

Shirasaka-san's upper body sinks down!
My eyes can see…Shirasaka-san's beautiful back under the transparent red hadajuban making an arc for ski jumps…!
On the summit of the curve…is surely the freshly harvested peach like cute ass…!
Her head approaches between my crotch…!

Ah…The pointing down nipple tip just touched my foot!!

「Un…looks good!」

Katsuko-san looks delighted from the pose she built herself…!

「Then, please begin your fellatio!!」

Then…Katsuko-san said.
My penis is in front of Shirasaka-san…

「…It's small」

Yup…My penis still hasn't revived!

「You have to hold that small penis inside your mouth and make your tongue roll on it…It'll grow big inside Shirasaka-sama's mouth! If you can't do that and you'll never become an adult!」

…You're saying that, but.
Shirasaka-san's eyes…is blinking…
…Speaking of which, she must've never penis other than the erect ones…
Once again…she looked at the small penis…It feels heartbreaking…
It feels that it withered too much…

「Yoshida-sama…please pick up your penis with your own fingers so that Shirasaka-sama can lick it!」

Eh…I'm lifting it myself?
…It can't be helped.

I lifted the root of my small penis and let it face Shirasaka-san's mouth.
The distance of my penis and Shirasaka-san's mouth is just several centimeters…!
Shirasaka-san's having a hateful face again…

「Okaay…now please it in your mouth!」

Still…for a woman who experienced it once in her mouth is different…

Shirasaka-san's mouth slowly opened…and she took in the tip of my penis, saying 「Amun～」

…Uuu!

The sight of a beauty holding my penis in her mouth is something indescribable…!
Such lips that looks so pure and innocent is licking at the most dirty genital in the world…she's taking it in.
Ah…The warm saliva wraps my glans…!
Blood stream swells the spongy dick…!!!

「Then lick it with your tongue!…Like an image of a kitten drinking milk!」

Shirasaka-san's pink tongue is licking up my penis…!

…Pecho, pecho, pecho!

Lewd wet sounds sounds every time the mucous membranes comes in contact with each other!
We've done it too much last night, my penis that's somewhat getting dull on lust…restarts from this visual and stimulation!

…It feels good!
Ah…so cute!
The girl who's licking my penis is someone I really love.

…Pecho, pecho, pecho!

Shirasaka-san's tongue service…continues!

「…Now then!」

Katsuko-san who photographed Shriasaka-san's figure several times, put the camera aside slowly…

「Since I already took this much, I think it's already enough…!」

Saying that…She turned to Shirasaka-san's ass…
The hadajuban was rolled up quietly without Shirasaka-san noticing…!

The naked ass…appeared in front of Katsuko-san!
She's…confirming Shirasaka-san's genital that's raised up…!

「Ufu…It's a cute pussy isn't it?! The anus is also cute!!」

Katsuko-san's finger touches Shirasaka-san's crack!

「…K-Katsuko-san!」

The surprised Shirasaka-san pulled out from licking my penis and turned to Katsuko-san…!
…However!

「The sexual liquids are mixed very well…Un, looks delicious…!」

Katsuko-san used her hands and opened Shirasaka-san's labia…!

「…W-What are you doing?!」

Shirasaka-san's body shook from the attack she never expected from Katsuko-san!

「Your pussy's not played that much, isn't it?! Shirasaka-samaa… How do you normally masturbate?」

Katsuko-san asks while observing Shirasaka-san's genital while she's on all fours…!

「T-That's…I don't do it…!」

Shirasaka-san can't move away from her leopard pose!

「Is that so?!…Then You've never experienced cumming, don't you?…!」

Katsuko-san…smiled…!!!

「I'm getting bored from taking photos all this time! Shirasaka-sama…It's okay for me to participate already, shouldn't I…?」

Katsuko-san blew breath at Shirasaka-san's genital…!

「…Hyaan~!!」

Shirasaka-san is in agony…!!

「…I'll be teaching you what kind of place heaven is!!!」

Shirasaka-san on top of my legs bent her body like a bow…!!!

「…Aaaaaaaaahn!!!!!!」

Shirasaka-san's body becomes an obstruction from my position so I can't see what Katsuko-san is doing…!

But, I can imagine it!

Katsuko-san's putting her finger in Shirasaka-san's genital!
Shirasaka-san's genital is being licked!
Violently…Skillfully…!!

「…Uaa!…Uaa!…Aaah!…Kuaa…!」

Shirasaka-san's pant every time Katsuko-san makes a rhythm with her finger!
The deep hole has already softened after two degrees of sexual intercourse.
The semen and love nectar is melting hotly…
Shirasaka-san's genital…is being attacked by Katsuko-san's skillful tongue and finger!!!

「Nufufu!…It's here?…It feels good here, doesn't it?!…Women knows best where women feels good after all…」

「…Hyaaa!…Nuaaan!…Aaan…!…Uuun!…!!」

S-Shirasaka-san's writhing!
Shirasaka-san's eyes is warped in pleasure!!
In front of me…!!!
Her cheeks are curled up…Shirasaka-san's half open eyes are like a crescent moon!

「…Stooop!!…Iyaaaan!…don't do thaaaat!!」

…Chupa!…Chupa…!

Katsuko-san's intense tongue skill's sound is reaching my ears!!

「…I'll be licking your anus too!」
「…Hiiiiiiiii」

Shirasaka-san's body trembled from the feeling she felt for the first time!

「…Isn't that fine! There's this kind of pleasure in this world~!!!!」

Getting even more intense, Katsuko-san rolled up her skilled fingers and tongue!
Shirasaka-san's body…Jumps on top of me!! Shakes! Flies!!

「Yoshida-sama…Please take a proper look! Shirasaka-sama's shameful face…!!」
「D-Don't loook!!!」

I!!!
I gripped Shirasaka-san's hair with my left hand…!
…In front of my erect penis!!
My right hand strokes my fully erect penis…!
Shirasaka-san's face is touching, rubbing the tip of the glans!!

「…Now then…we should be attacking the clitoris soon…!!」
「…Nuaaaaaaaaaaaaau, Guanuuuuuuuuuuu!!!」

Shirasaka-san's pleasured face…!
Shirasaka-san looks…in pain…in agony…sorrowful…in worry!
…L-Lewd!
…You're lewd!!

I stroke my penis as strong as I can…!
Shirasaka-san's already sweating…!
She's leaking out hot breaths…!!

「…How's it?! Shirasaka-sama! How about here?!!」
「W-What's this…Ah…Ah…aaaaah!!!」

Katsuko-san's fingering Shirasaka-san's vagina, it's vibrating bit by bit!!

「…This what we call G-Spot!!!」
「Iyaaaaaa…Iyaaaaaa…aaaaaaaa!!!」

Uu…I'm about to cum!!!

「Yoshida-sama…Shirasaka-sama's about to cum too…please let it out in her face and inside her mouth!!!」

…Even if you don't tell me that…!!
…I'll let it fly!
…I'll make her drink!
…I'll sprinkle it in her face!!!

「…Hyaan…Nuaan…Aaaaahn…aaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!」

Shirasaka-san…a sixteen year old beauty…is melting in pleasure…
is falling!!!

「I'm…feeling straaangeee…No goood…You can't…this is no good and yet…!」

Satisfaction…agony…suffering…Shirasaka Yukino is blooming right now!
She's being trained to the pleasure by force!!!

「It's strange…It's really strangeeee…I'm floating…I'm floatiiing…!!」
「Now…go and cum!…Cum!!…go ahead and cum dammit!!」

Katsuko-san's last blow goes through Shirasaka-san's body like lightning!!
From the womb to her head…a big pleasure stabs her!!!

「…I'm flyiiiiiiiiiinggg!!!」

Shirasaka-san shouted 「Flying」…!!!

Shirasaka-san's shouting her climax loudly in front of my crotch!!

…Now!!

I fired my gun!!!

White jet from my glans is blown at Shirasaka-san's face!!!

First shot goes through her mouth!!
The second shoots and mess with her nose!!
The third flew to her neck and scatters to her chest!!!

Just like that, the penis that's wet with semen is forced at Shirasaka-san's face!
…It's rubbed!
…It's rubbing slimy!!

Then…the spout of semen stops.
The fireworks that was blown off falls into the dark sea…
The lust…the pleasure descends gently…

…Haa, haa, haa, haa.

Shirasaka-san's breathing roughly…
She lost strength from her all fours pose…
Shirasaka-san's hot sweaty body leans over my leg…
Her face is completely wet with my semen.

Facing the collapsed Shirasaka-san…is Katsuko-san on her maid clothes breathing roughly too.
Her face is laughing.
She's smiling as she made a girl fall…
Our eyes met…!!
Katsuko-san winked at me!!

「…Now's the time, Yoshida-sama!」

Haa, haa, haa…W-What?!

「…Now's the time to make Shirasaka-sama completely fall!!!」

I looked at Shirasaka-san's face…!
Shirasaka-san's hot body is dead tired…!

「…Her body and mind are very loose!!!」

Her open eyes are absent minded…she's still intoxicated from the lingering reverberation from her first sexual pleasure…

But…She didn't faint like last night.
…She's still conscious!!

「Shirasaka-sama right now will cum from any penis!」

…Will cum?
…From my penis?!!!

「…Please select your last blow at Shirasaka-sama! Yoshida-sama will make her surrender to your penis!! Her pussy will sing! Engrave the pleasure of sex in every corner of her mind and body… thoroughly!!」

This one's a demon!

However…I'm also a demon!!
I'll become a demon!!

My penis gathered blood rapidly!!
…It got hard!
…It got big!

Let's finish this…Yukinooo!!

I put my hand on Shirasaka-san's side and dragged her quickly!

「W-What…What's going on…?!!!」

Yukino still hasn't understood the situation yet…!
She's desperately wiping the semen smeared on her face…!

I toppled over Yukino's body to the side and leaned on from the top…!
The breast wet from sweat comes before my eyes!
I sucked those nipples! Licked!! Bit!!

「…W-Wait…S-Stop for a bit…It's no good doing it right now…!!」

…I drive in!
…I pushed her down!
…I'll definitely make use of this perfect chance Katsuko-san gave me!!!

I opened Yukino's legs forcibly…!
Yukino right now doesn't have any power…!!

…Here we go, here I come, I'm going iiiin!!!

The erect penis hits her vaginal opening…!!

「…Wait…spare me for a moment…I beg you!!」

…Inside the hot wet vagina!
…I slipped in without stopping!!!

「…Iyaaaaaaaaaaaaaaan!!!」

…Amaziiiing!!
…It's melting!!!

Yukino's vagina who just reached climax…is hot and soaking wet!!!

…What's with this pussy?!
…It's so hot, wet, and slimy!
…And yet, it's constricting my penis!!!

It's completely different from the forced sex we had before…!!
Yukino's pussy is accepting my penis!!
She's permitting the invasion of a man!
She's wanting it…!
Her womb is demanding my semen, it's opening wide!!

This is genuine sex?!
This is…the taste of Yukino's pussy…What's with this?!!

…Gucho, gucho, gucho, gucho!!

The fat and erect penis is rummaging Yukino's insides!
The swollen head of the penis is rubbing against Yukino's hot folds!!
I massaged Yukino's sweaty breasts!
I bite her nipples!
I put my hand in her hair, gripped it hard, and raised!!

…I'm embracing Yukino!
…I'm having sex with Yukinoo!!!

「…Aaahn…What's thiiis…What's going oon!!!」

The sharp sexual pleasure of Yukino continues!
…She's sinking!!
…She's falling down!!!

「…It feels good, doesn't it? Shirasaka-sama…This is what sex is!
That's the taste of a man's penis!…Isn't it delicious?!!」

Katsuko-san whispers at Yukino's ears…!

「…This is sex?…It's seeeex?!」

Yukino's already drowning…she's in trance…!

「It'll feel even better…more, and even more pleasurable…it feels good doesn't it?…!」

Yukino with half open eyes can't focus anymore…

「…Now, Shirasaka-sama…tell your honest feeling right now…
Does it feel good?!」

Yukino's being forced up by me…!
Weakened like a doll…only feeling pleasure inside…!
Every time I push her up…Yukino's body shakes like a wave…!
The meat of her cute breasts…bounces too…!
The tip of the glans is feeling up Yukino's uterus…!

This is sex!
The unity of Yukino and My body!!

「…Aaaah…I'm…feeling goood!!!!」

Yukino mutters…!

「What is it?!…Say it once more!!」

Katsuko-san's voice provokes even more…!!

「…I'm feeling goooooooood!!!」

Yukino's voice shoots through my heart!

I embraced Yukino's body tightly!

…More!
…More!
…More!

「…What should I do?…I'm feeling goood…!!」

Katsuko-san inserts a finger on our connecting parts?…!

「Yoshida-sama, please continue moving…I'll be stimulating Shirasaka-sama's clitoris!」

Katsuko-san's finger began a high speed vibration!!!

「Hyaaaaan…!!」

Yukino pants…!
She's crying…!
Yukino who's been crying from the humiliation until now…
Is showing tears of delight right now…!

「…It feels goooooood!! What should I do?…!!」

The sixteen year old beauty dances in pleasure…!
My Yukino!!!

At that time…Yukino shouted…

「…It feels goood…Kenjiiii!!」

…… ! ! ! ! !

…I thought the blood in my whole body froze
…The momentary pleasure broke and scattered!

Then the anger and sorrow wraps me up deeply…!

「…I'm not endou!!」

I thrust inside Yukino with all my might!!
Bang…bang…bang…the young meat bangs each other and makes an intense sound!!

「…Endou's not here!!」

Yukino was taken aback and looked at me…!
The huge eyes…Yukino's pupil reflects my face of hatred!!!

「…Yoshida-kun?!」

Yukino's face got frightened!!

「Noooo…I don't want thiiiiiisss!!」

At that time, Katsuko-san's finger stimulates Yukino's clitoris with an awful force!!

「…Go and cum!!!」

Super high speed vibrating finger…!
I push up my waist with all my might and violate her!!
The pleasure of the body, and the shock in her mind both attacks Yukino!!!

「…N, aaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!」

Her eyes and mouth opened widely…!
Yukino reached climax once again!!!

「…I'm flyiiiiing!!…I'm flyiiiiiinggg!! I'm flying agaaaaaaaiiiiinnnn!!」

…Yukino's vagina is tightening hard!!
…Her whole body's convulsing intensely!!

I embraced Yukino's trembling body with all my might…!!
I released my semen in her deepest part!!

「…Cumiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiinggg!!」

The hot torrent blows up!!
My big hose pulsates inside Yukino and blew out cloudy liquid!!

「Yukinooo!! I'll make you pregnant!! We'll be mating! I'll definitely make you pregnant Yukinooooo!!」

I became hald mad from the pleasure and hatred…!!

「…Iyaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!」

Yukino's face is covered with fear and despair!!
Her heart is refusing me intensely!
However…Yukino's body is not!!

…Goku, goku goku!!!

The tip of my penis can feel the rumbling of Yukino's womb!!

「…It's drinking!…It's drinking it in!!…Yukino's womb is drinking my semen in!!!」

「…Iyaaa…Noooo…I'm noooot…This is so wroong!!!」

Yukino's wet body…hot body…is in my arms…!
Right now, I'm embracing Yukino!
…We're connected!
…I'm ravishing her!

Yukino's body that keeps on trembling is embraced by me desperately…!!!

---

1. Gotta catch them all! ↩

25. End of decline…

I came at the same time as Yukino…
I came…I made her cum…
Even if Katsuko-san's hand helped…

Somehow, I feel proud.
I feel that there's a 「bond」that was born between Yukinon and me.
Of course, that's just my selfish illusion.
Still…something inside me has changed…

I had lots of sex with Yukino since last night…
Virginity was exchanged for virginity…
However…I think I 「became a mean」in the real meaning right now…
…This is what real sex is!

「…Ufufufu! You finally came, Shirasaka-sama!」

Katsuko-san takes photos of our sweaty intertwining…
The two people's breathing are rough…
The large drop of sweat from my forehead drops on Yukino's breasts…!
The surrounding air gets hot, and wet…!

「…Shirasaka-sama until now was just a victim of mere violence! A poor girl! It was just done one-sidedly and forcibly so…she can make excuses on her family, her friends, and even her lover! She herself can make an excuse…! That's because she was raped by force!」

Katsuko-san puts down the camera and took off the maid cap on her head…
…She's laughing!
That abnormally bright expression…!
…An insane smile!
While embracing…while connected…Yukino and I looked up at Katsuko-san…!

We can't separate our eyes from Katsuko-san…!!!

「…Shirasaka-sama has endured the cruelty with all her lilfe!…A hard penis forcibly pierces the deepest part of the vagina and pours in semen again and again without any permission!…For such a cruel reality, Shirasaka-sama closed her heart and body tightly… desperately enduring the painful feelings…endured the discomfort of a penis piercing the stomach painfully all this time…! You did well on holding out!!! Katsuko's deeply impressed!!!!」

Katsuko-san throws the cap she just took off towards us!
The fluffy white laced hair ornament gently hits my naked shoulder…!
Katsuko-san's hand is untying her ribbon apron…!

「…But, the painful time has already ended! The sense of being victimized is already good-bye with this!」

Katsuko-san took off her maid apron…!
As expected, she threw it…the white apron fluttered in the air…!

「…Because, Shirasaka-sama already experienced the pleasures of sex…! The pain and sorrow…all the discomfort…will be changing to pleasure from now on!!!」

The bright red lip smiles mysteriously!
…A sexy expression just like a goddess of sexual love!

「Aaahn!…I can't let myself wear clothes already…!!」[1]

The fair hand reaches for the neck of the maid clothes…!
Slowly…she takes off the button in sequence from the top…!

Katsuko-san's strip teasing filled with desire…!
She's undressing to please the eyes of the others…!
That's…coquettish, and bewitching…!
It's completely different from Yukino's amateur strip tease…!
She's trained to do it magnificently…artistic and sublime…it's a lewd ritual offered up to the goddess of sex!!!

「…Even though…she was violated against her will…even though it's rape…Shirasaka-sama reached the climax of sex…!

Furthermore, it's her first ever orgasm!! The first time she learned the pleasure of a woman was in the middle of rape!! It's so pitiful that my laughter can't stop!!」

Katsuko-san took off all the buttons…!
She grasped the collars with both hands and she did a stop motion for a moment…!
Accumulating a break…After that, she took off her clothes in a dash…!!
…The stripped dress flies in the sky!
…The white skin becomes bare!!

Caucasian…it's a splendid proportion that looks like a north European nude model…!
Her huge breasts…are wrapped in a black lase brassiere!
Both her legs are tightened from tiptoe to her thighs with black silk garter stockings!
Her big breasts and ass is tied to her surprisingly thin waist!
Below her navel…is a garter belt with the same material as the stocking forming a line around her waist…!
Then, Katsuko-san's genital…!
She's not wearing any panties!
Her pubic hair is shaved up…between her slippery crotch is a crack with hot liquid dripping from it…!
It emits a strong lewd smell tempting men!!!

「…Iyaaaaaaaaa!!」

Yukino screamed from the appearance of the strong naked body of Yukino!!!

「What are you getting scared off Shirasaka-sama?! I'm the same as you!! A suitable figure to have sex!!」

The sexy woman's body only wearing a black bra and garters approaches us slowly…!

「…Did you know Shirasaka-sama…a woman who's only being raped will get bad at sex…she'll become weak on sexual intercourse between a man and a woman!」

The sensual body…fascinating lips…is walking!

「…However, there's still a way for her to be saved if that's all. If she knows the joy of having sex with someone she loved…she may be healed. Take time and the trauma in the mind will slowly be erased…!」

Katsuko-san reaches out for her own genital…!
…She's touching it!
Her fingers comforts herself…!!

「…However, a woman who came from being violated is different! That kind of woman will never come back to her lover! She'll never be healed by someone she loves…her mind and body who's broken completely from being violated, will never be healed by the power of love…do you know why?」

Katsuko-san took out her red tongue and moistens her lip…!
She's…violently in heat!!

「…A woman who came from rape will never feel it from anything other than rape anymore!」

Katsuko-san massaged her own breasts with the other hand…!!
She's rolling up her own nipples on top of her bra!!!
The groin that's being played with her right hand drips love nectar on the floor…!

「…Don't come…Don't come this way…!!!」

The frightened Yukino crawls behind trying to escape…!
My withered penis gets away from Yukino's pussy…!
Still, the space of the tatami mat is small…!
Yukino's back hits the wall…!
…She can't run away!
…She can't escape from us!!

「Ahaha…found it…Oh cute honorable penis!!」

The half naked Katsuko-san slowly goes up the tatami mat!!
The eyes drowned in lust looked at my penis…!
Katsuko-san take aim at me.

「…Hey, Yoshida-sama…It's unfair for you to have sex with only Shirasaka-sama! Katsuko's completely wanting to stick a penis right now…it's fine isn't it? Katsuko can also eat Yoshida-sama's penis with her pussy can't she?…!!」

Her red lips closed at my face…!

「…Please have sex with Katsuko-too!…Please pour in your hot semen in my womb!…I'll do anything lewd you want!…Ravish Katsuko, rape her, assault her!! I want to be violated by Yoshida-sama!!!」

Katsuko-san embraced me!!
Her huge breasts presses against me…!!!
The indecent scent of an adult woman stimulates my sense of smell!!
…But!!

「…I-I can't!!!」 2

I pushed Katsuko-san away…!!

「…Why? Please enjoy me! Please enjoy violating Katsuko~!!!」
「…I-I can't do that!!」

…I
…I

「…You let out too much semen?…Your penis can't stop up anymore?…Ufufu, it's fine! There's no problem!!」

Katsuko-san's right hand's white finger touches my penis!
Her practiced hand caresses it skillfully!

「…Ufufu. It's cute, it stinks with delicious smell…!! Katsuko will make it big again! I'll be licking it! I'll be sucking it!! Katsuko will reveal every technique she knows!… Will use my best to serve you!! So please violate Katsuko with all your might!!」

…That's not it!
…That's not the problem
…I

Katsuko-san's bewitching smile…stopped.
The caress of the penis stopped…

「…You do really prefer Shirasaka-sama that much?!」

…Eh?

「…Is that so?! Yoshida-sama has no interest in other body but Shirasaka-sama!!」

I looked at Yukino…
Behind me…is a naked girl with her back sticking completely on the wall…
…Frightened.
…Trembling
…Shirasaka Yukino
The first woman I fell in love with.

If Yukino's not here…I might've attacked Katsuko-san…
I might be defeated by my desire from the magic of Katsuko-san's body…

But…Yukino's here.

「…You can't embrace a woman in front of Shirasaka-sama?!」

Because, it feels like betraying Yukino…

「…Ahahahahahahaha! That's strange! It's very pleasing! Yoshida-sama, you're very interesting! You're really someone funny!!!」

Katsuko-san's loud laughter echoes in the room…!

「…Yoshida-sama, Shirasaka-sama's not your lover!! For Shirasaka-sama, Yoshida-sama is just a rapist! An enemy of women! A pervert! A degenerate! A filthy penis! This bastard penis! A trash of a person who's beyond saving…!」

…That's right.
…That's how it is.

「Yoshida-sama's trying to look better in front of the woman you

raped yourself so you can't embrace other women?…That's foolish. You're such a shitty person aren't you…Yoshida-sama…!」

Yukino looks at me.
With eyes of sorrow and hatred…
I will no longer be liked by her…
I'll be a perverted bastard, a scum forever…
A foul rapist…!

「But…I like her…!」

Words that I never thought of came out of my mouth!

「…I do like Yukino!!」

Yukino's expression turned to surprise…!
But…it changed to hatred immediately!

「…I don't want to be liked by someone like you!!!」

A small mutter was released from the bottom of her heart.
…Yukino
…I

「Ahahahaha, hahahahaha, hahahahahaha…!!!」

Katsuko-san laughed at me…
Yukino's glaring at me…
…I
…i

「…This is really wonderful!! You violated her because you like her!! It's twisted!! it's mad!!」

…That's right, I…
…Am wrong.
…I know that it's wrong.

「…You can't ravish Katsuko by any means?…!」

…But
…What's bad if I'm wrong?!!

I really do love Yukino!!

「…Then, it can't be helped」

Katsuko-san breathed deeply…

「Katsuko will comfort herself…I'll be cumming by my own…That's why…!!」

Katsuko-san's plump body moved aiming at me…!

「…At least please let me suck it!!」

She pushed me down the tatami mat!!!
The bright red lips holds my penis in it!!
The tongue stimulates the penis!!
Katsuko-san's right hand is playing with her own genital…!!

「Delicious…A rapist penis is very delicious!」

Katsuko-san's posture changed greatly while still sucking my penis!!
Her own crotch is on top of my face…!
…It's 69 isn't it?!!!

「…Nfufu…Can you see it……?? It's completely drenched isn't it?…It's my first time being this teased…ufufufu…」

In front of me is Katsuko-san's wet crack!!
The middle finger goes deep and stirs inside!!
The finger's rubbing the clitoris…!
The hot love nectar pours into my face…!!
This is an adult woman's genital!!
An adult woman's masturbation!!
Fingers can be used that way…!!

「…Please blow on it!! Your breath!!」

Being told so…I blow by breath to Katsuko-san's wet hole!

「…That's good! You're wonderful! Yoshida-sama's the best…!!」

…Gucho, gucho, gucho…!!

Delicately…bewitchingly…Katsuko-san's finger attacks herself!!
Also, her tongue twines with my penis…Aaah!!
I got big again!!
Inside Katsuko-san's mouth!!
…No good!
…Even though I can't!!

Suddenly, Katsuko-san got off from 69 poseture…!

…?!!!

「…Yoshida-sama, please stand up…Stand up…in front of Shirasaka-sama…!!」

I don't get what Katsuko-san mean!!

「…Cumming on Shirasaka-sama, you can do that at least, can you?!!」

…Oh
…That's how it is……!!

Yukino looks at me…!
With eyes that considers me as filthy…
Eyes of hatred…

This face will be dirty once again…!
I'll put my smell on this body…!!

I stood up staggering…!!
In front of Yukino who's backs to the wall…!
Katsuko-san kneeled in oblique of me and hits her mouth against the penis from the side
…She's sucking it!
Of course…Her left hand is masturbating all this time…

I look down at Yukino!
Yukino's glaring at Katsuko and my figure…
Her eyes looks at us as if we're demons or monsters…
I'm fine being a demon…I'm fine being a monster…!
I'll even become the devil…!!

Katsuko-san's stroking the root with her right hand while sucking the glans…!
Her left hand has been playing with her pussy all this time…!

Yukino's watching!!
She's watching Katsuko-san and my foolery though she's frightened!!
Her face seems so cry is glaring!!

「…Why are you making that face?!! Shirasaka-sama had this kind of face earlier too!! You were licking Yoshida-sama's penis this way…!! With a very lewd face!!」

Switching over from fellatio to hand job…Katsuko-san fuels Yukino with words…!!
…She's mocking!
…She's abyusing!

「…Shirasaka-sama's also a pervert! A perverted girl who's cumming from being raped!! A lewd woman who's behaving like a cute child!」

「…No…I'm not…I'm different from you people!!」
「…We're the same…You're just like me!! Fall, fall, fall…you'll be a bitch whos pleased from being violated by a man!!」
「I won't!…I'll never!!」3

Yukino's trembling!!
But…She's watching…!
Yukino's watching!!「」

「…Ah…Ah…Yoshida-sama…I'm about to cum soon…I'm going to cum!」

Katsuko-san's indecent confession!!

「…M-M-M-Me too…I'm also near…K-Katsuko-san…!!!」

Katsuko-san's technique is too great!!
Katsuko-san's body is too lewd!! Too indecent!!!
Her fare skin has a scent of an adult woman!!
Different from Yukino…a ripe woman…filled with a female scent!!

…Juppo, juppo, juppo!!!

Katsuko-san's left hand rubs her genital, and thoroughly teases it!!

…Shushushushushushushushushushu!!!

Katsuko-san's right hand is griipping my penis and goes up and down instensly!!!
The red tongue licks the glans…!

「…Aaaahn! Delicious!! This honorable penis is so delicious!!!!」

…N-no good…if you do that!!!

「…Aaaah…Cumming…I'm cumming…
Cumiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiinnggg!!!」

The kneeling Katsuko-san bents her back greatly and shouts…!!
…She reached the climax!!!

「…M-Me too…C-C-C-C-Cumming!」

My semen jumps out!!
As expected of the sixth time, the amount is little…!
Still…my semen splashes!!
It drips like water on top of Yukino's cramped face!
Katsuko-san's squeezing my penisn with her right hand until the last drop…!!
…Aaaaaaa!!

「…Filthy!!」

Yuukino desperately swings away the semen put on her head…!
Even though it's repeated a lot of times already…
Still…Yukino hates the cloudy liquid released from my semen!!
Yukino will refuse me forever!!

…Kuh

At that moment I admire Yukino's figure!!

…Zubu!!

「…K-Katsuko-san?」

Katsuko-san…her left hand that's wet with love nectar…
Her middle finger…!
Invaded my anus!!

「…ufufu…This is the prostate…」

A flushed face after reaching the climax…
Katsuko-san's eyes is filled with frenzy!

「…W-What are you doing?」

With the abnormal act in front of her…Yukino's watching with eyes of surprise.
…Aaaaah!
The finger is stimulating something inside my body!!!
…M-My body!!

「…I-It's spilling! It's leaking!!」

My mouth just opens and closes…words can't come out!!

「…Please leak out!!」

Katsuko-san vibrates her finger…!!

…Ah…Aaaaaah.
…I-It's leaking…it's going to spill!!

My body can't release semen anymore…!
In exchange, my bladder opened instead!
From the erect glans…yellow urine dashed out!!

…On top of Yukino's body.
…Yukino, I
am peeing on her…!!

Yukino's breasts…stomach…genital…legs…
My pee is scattering…!!
The stinking water flies at Yukino's face and hair…

Still, Yukino's looking at me.
My face as I pee on Yukino.
…She's frozen.
Her thoughts have stopped from too much shock…

Pee…
The pee doesn't stop…!!

Before long…Katsuko-san pulls out her finger from my anus…
Then just like that…my urine lost it's momentum…

「…That"s wonderful! It's magnificent! Yoshida-sama!!」

Katsuko-san's frenzied smile…!
She then slowly stood up…!

「…Shirasaka-sama, you're very beautiful!!」

Katsuko-san…stood up in front of the urine stained Yukino!!

「…While we're at it, please be my toilet too…!」

Katsuko-san smiles innocently…!

…Sha!!!

Warm water flows from her crotch…!!

Katsuko-san's pee hits Yukino's face directly…
Yukino's head…hair…face…
The pee washes Yukino's semen stained face…!
Her whole body got wet from pee…
Yukino's body has stink going up…

「…How's it?! It's warm and it feels good doesn't it?!…Shirasaka-sama, you're a toilet now!!!」

…Yukino got startled!
Yukino who was frozen in time began to move !!

「…Iyaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!」

Yesterday she was just a virgin sixteen year old beauty…
A happy first year student who has a good looking sportsman boyfriend…
She's not dissatisfied with anything…
Even insecurities…

Shirasaka Yukino's whole body…is bathing in urine right now…

「…Uwaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!」

…She shouted.
…She cried violently.
…Just like a young child
…All of her pent up feelings exploded!

「…Moooooooooom…mooooooom…Iyaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!」

…Yukino shouts and cries
…She's just crying!!

…It was the moment Yukino's heart was broken…

「…What a cruel face. Disgraceful. Miserable…!」

Katsuko-san looks down at the crying Yukino and announced.

「You finally showed your face! A proud, strong minded ojou-sama. A woman like you has no other value but to become a toilet from the start! Do you finally understand?!!! If you cried like this sooner, you won't be driven here like this …!!」

Katsuko-san snickers…!

「…I've always wanted to see that kind of face, Shirasaka-sama! You finally were able to strip your mind!!」

Her peeing stopped…
Yukino's tears and screams doesn't…!

Her feelings overflow…she shouts…she cries…
…It won't stop.
…She's just doing nothing but cry.

I knew the weight of my own crime for the first time…
Just how much I damaged Yukino's mind and body…

I've been just washed away until now.
I…raped Yukino unconscious of the responsibility I have to take.
Again and again…
Even if I did a cruel thing, Yukino will continue to be 『Yukino』…
She'll desperately try to resist and continue to protect the conventional 『Yukino』…
…I didn't notice that.
No matter how many times I violate her…Yukino's inside will never change, she'll set her heart on it selfishly…
And…as a result.
I broke Shirasaka Yukino…

Yukino can no longer…go back to the 『Yukinoi』she carefully pretected…

The kind, gentle, pure and innocent Shirasaka Yukino I come to love…
Is no longer here.
I'll never meet that 『Yukino』again…

Still…I do love Yukino.
I can clearly say it now.
I clearly…understand!
This naked woman covered with urine and crying like an infant…
I love her from the bottom of my heart…

…I like you
…I love you!

…I love Shirasaka Yukino

---

1. She's just saying that she wants to undress, it's hard to translate it how Katsuko did say it ↩
2. Nah, he'll bang her some chapters later. lol ↩
3. Ahahahahaha ↩

26. A new 「Sex Beast」is born…

「Now then…Which do you think is better?」

As I look at Yukino sinking down on the floor smeared with tears and pee…Katsuko-san spoke brightly.
On her right hand is aluminum made ashtray that I think is originally an item in this night duty room…
On her left hand is a tinplate bucket with a fire prevention written on red marker…

「The ashtray is good at letting out good high pitched sound…on the destructive power, it's the bucket～」

Katsuko-san smiles…
Where is the brutal 「Sex beast」that was here until a while ago?…
She completely came back to the bright Katsuko-san…
…However
I don't get what she's aiming at all…?!
There's two products being compared on her hands…Before long, Katsuko-san lowered the bucket on the floor…

「…Let's use this ashtray!」

Katsuko-san…seems to be having fun in all respects…
She showed me Yukino who's sobbing like a child and whispered…

「…Don't ever think that she's pitiful! When you're making a woman fall, you should do it thoroughly, once you showed a chance, she'll bite you!」

…Katsuko-san?!

「…If your purpose is to break off the heart of the other, then you only have to torment!…This is rather the start of training her to become a lewd bitch! Now's the time to strip her woman heart, we have no choicee but to drive her further!」

…Could it be?!!
…You still intend to attack Yukino even after everything that's

done?!!!

「…She's still not in genuine despair when she's still crying!!」

Saying that…Katsuko-san smiled.
Then…She raised her hand that's holding the ashtray…!
…She threw the metall ashtray against Yukino's feet with all her might!!

…Kakiiiin!!!…Kuwaraan, karaaan!!![1]

The ashtray hits the wooden zone at the edge of the tatami mat…!!
It made a sharp shrill metal sound in the room…!!

「…Hiiiii!!!」

The crying Yukino raised her face in surprise from the sudden outrage…!
Her face is stiff in fear…!
Her tears stopped!!

…Karankarankaraaaan!!!

The round ashtray spins on top of the floor then…stopped.

「…Look at me!!」

Yukino on top of the tatami looks up at the source of the voice…
…There's shadow reflecting in her eyes.
Once gain…the mad 『Sex Beast』Katsuko is standing in front of her…!!

「…Just how long are you going to cry!! You foolish girl!」

…Yukino's words don't come out!

「We used you as a 『Toilet』specially…and yet Shirasaka-sama doesn't have any feeling of gratitue!!!」

Katsuuko-san steps forward in front of Yukino…!

「…Ungrateful!!」

…Pachin!!

That was a wonderful slap…!
The movement of her hand is completely used to beating people…!
With just one slap, the resistance of the opponent's heart is completely destroyed…A critical hit!!

Katsuko-san told me earlier…

「…A person who swings violence on woman multiple times is just a scum! If you aim at the proper time, one time violence is enough! Please carry out the one time chance definitely! The sharp pain will be memorized by the skin!!!」

It's really just as she said.
It was a splendid slap that it can be put on a textbook…
With just one time violence…Yukino can never go against Katsuko from now on…

「Don't you have something to say! You toilet woman!!!」
Yukino holds her beaten face and trembles…

「…Shouldn't you be saying『Thank you for making me a toilet』?」

Katsuko-san raised her hand again…!

「…Hiiiiiiiiiiii!!」

…Yukino got scared!!

「If you don't want to be hit then answer faster!」

Yukino shouts in a hurry!!

「T-Thank you for making me a toilet!!!」
「…Who's a toilet?!!」
「…Y-Yukino!!」
「…Yukino-sama is a toilet of whom?!!」
「K-Katsuko-san!!!」

Katsuko-san kicked the ashtray that fell on the floor with all her

might!!

…Guaan…kuwaaan!…Karakaraaan!!

The ashtray hits the wall and fell on the floor again…!
Yukino's frightened and at her wits end from the continuous high pitch metalic sound…!!

「…That's wrong!! Yukino-sama's not my own toilet, isn't she?!!」
「…T-That's?!!!」
「…You're Yoshida-sama and my toilet!!」
「…Hiii!!!」
「Isn't it?!!」
「Y-Yes!!」
「What is yes?」
「Y-Yukino is Katsuko-san and Yoshida-kun's toilet!!」
「…Where's your gratitude to Yoshida-sama?!!」
「…Y-Yoshida-kun…Thank you, Thank you very much for making Yukino a toilet……」

The end of Yukino's speech is completely teary voice…

「…Okay, Well done!!」

The sex beast smiled.
As I was thinking that, she went to the tinplate bucket…

「Then, my toilet-san…it's your turn next!!」

Katsuko-san put the bucket in front of Yukino.

「…Please pee」

Yukino's tears stopped.

「…Yukino-sama will show her peeing figure in front of Yoshida-sama…You're okay with that?! You can don it, right?」

It seems that what Katsuko-san said earlier is true…
When people becomes really hopeless…they don't cry anymore.
The tears won't come out…
When they're still crying…they're still not in genuine despair…

「…Hurry up!! Stand up! Stand up you toilet woman!!」

Being urged by Katsuko-san…Yukino slowly stood up…

「I'm sorry Yoshida-sama but could you take my camera?! Her first excretion scene has to be properly recorded…」

I picked up the camera and handed it to Katsuko-san…

「Nfufufu…Thank you very much!!」

Katsuko-san has an obscene smile floating…
Meanwhile, the naked Yukino stood up in front of the bucket…!

「…Oh, Yukino-sama do you always stand when peeing?!…That's wrong isn't it?! Please use the proper pose when peeing」

Yukinoi crouch down to the bucket while trembling.
The crotch that's opened wide like an M…and the crack that's violated a lot of times is seen…

「Then…You have to greet Yoshida-sama…『Please take a look at Yukino's peeing figure』go!!」
「…Please take a look at…Yukino's peeing figure…!」

Yukino's frightened…
Yukino's trembling…
Her M legs is shaking bit by bit…
Katsuko-san set up the camera…

「Okay, go on!…It's already fine to let everything out!!」

However…Yukino is…!

「…I-It's not coming out!!」

The sex beast laughs while looking at the viewfinder of the camera…

「Well of course! If your body is trembling that much, it won't come out!…Yukino-sama, please take a look at the lens of the camera!」

Yukino's eyes looks at Katsuko-san's camera!

「…Listen…imagine deep inside your stomach, down under your womb…there's a leather bag filled with warm water…That's Yukino-sama's bladder…」

Katsuko-san's making suggestions as if it's hypnotism
Yukino's eyes are being sucked in by the lens of the camera…

「…Next, concentrate your will on your anus…Yukino-sama's anus is connected to the leather bag in the stomach…When your anus loosens, the leather bag's mouth also loosens…Okay, slowly loosen the anus…Okaay~ the water inside the leather bag is slowly spilling out…!」

…Yukino loosened her force in her anus as told.
The tension in her body became loose…
「Haa」She breathed out deeply…
Yukino's face also loosens…!
The last fort of Yukino's heart is taken over by Katsuko-san…!!!!

…Chororo, chorororororo!!!

Hot water dripped from Yukino's crack…
Yukino is peeing in front of me…naked and making an M character!!
Her expression is so tranquil as if she's in heaven!!

「…Look, Yukino-samaa…It feels good, doesn't it?! Being seen as you pee…!」

Katsuko-san's crawling deeper in Yukino's heart as she continues to shoot with her camera…

「You're being seen by Yoshida-sama. Look, Yukino-sama should take a look at Yoshida-sama too…!」

Yukino who became senile looks at me…
Yukino's filthy water creates an arc as it flows out of her crotch…
There's steam rising from the tinplate bucket…

「Yoshida-sama…Please say something to Yukino-sama!」

…I

「…It's beautiful. You're beautiful, Yukino!!」

I heartily think so…
Yukino who's violated deep in her heart is really beautiful.

「…Aren't you glad Yukino-sama?! Yoshida-sama praised you!… Yukino-sama too, please return your gratitude at Yoshida-sama!!」

Yukino speaks to me with dark eyes…

「…T-Thank you very much…Thank you for praising Yukino's peeing…Thank you very much…Thank you very much…Thank you very much!」

Yukino's eyes has no tears anymore…!

◇ ◇ ◇

「Oh well, the futon and hadajuban, everything's wet with pee!」

The trace of our foolery is too horrible…

「Well, that's fine…I'll be cleaning this up later…!」

The 『Frenzied Sex beast』 has returned to the energetic maid again…
Yukino's still squatting down on the bucket…
Expressionless…She's just looking at the bucket she peed on motionlessly…

「Anyway…should we take a shower? Everyone stinks!」
「…Shower?」

Is there such thing on this kind of building?

「…The back classroom of this floor has a 『Cooking Practice Room』 has water heater…therefore!」

Katsuko-san took out a long hose and shower head from the cardboard box put beside the entrance of the room…

「The supplier has opened the stock gas yesterday so the water heater is usable properly and I confirmed it beforehand!」

…This person's really an able housemaid!
Or rather…Why is she a maid?!
She's beautiful, she also looks intelligent, she's fast on any kind of work…If it's Katsuko-san, there's no doubt she can do any work she has.
Well…I can imagine the reason now that I've seen the 『Sex Beast』 mode of hers…

「…Let's go!!」

Katsuko-san take the lead and left the 『Night Duty room』 naked…
No, the one's truly naked here are Yukino and I.
Katsuko-san's carrying one shawl bag on her shoulder.
That's where the camera and the hose are put in…
The sun's already down…
The corridor of the building is dark…
Katsuko-san took out a large portable LED light from her bag…

「Sorry, the corridor's not all changed to fluorescent lamps yet. It takes time and money …and above everything, the light of this building would leak out…

Katsuko-san smiled wryly.

…That's of course. If this is too bright, it may be seen from outside the gate.

The light of the LED is comparatively less bright…
The three of us walks down the corridor naked…
Yukino's seems to be exhausted but she's following totteringly after she's ordered by Katsuko-san.
I walk behind Yukino.
I enjoy the sight of her ass and her back…
I got used to being naked in front of others last night…
There's also a naked woman…

「Yoshida-sama's atmosphere has changed」

Katsuko-san told me…

「…Is that so?」
「Yes. Your timid feeling has completely disappeared. You're now very dignified!」

…Speaking of which
I'm not stuttering even when I talk to women…
I can talk to them normally…!

I was preoccupied with Yukino's change all this time…
…I see.
…That's how it is.
Even I experienced a lot of things such as throwing my virginity last night and the course of making Yukino fall…
There's no way I won't change…

「…Katsuko-san」
「Yes, what do you need?」
「Could it be that I'm also being trained?」

…By Yuzuki-sensei?!

Katsuko-san turned to me and smiled.

「…You finally noticed!」

…As expected

「But…Ojou-sama's approach on Yoshida-sama is not
『Training』!」
「…What?」
「If I had to say then it's…『Education』」

…Education?!
…Teaching…Develop.
What is Yuzuki-sensei developing in me?!

「…Okay, this way!」

Finally, we reached the cooking training room…
Katsuko-san turned on the switch of the wall, only one third of the

fluorescent laps on the back of the room lit up.
It's on the range where the light won't leak outside, it's lightly to illuminate only until there…
The making of the building is old…after all, this building is from Showa era.
Embezzled, there's a lot of dented stainless steel on the work desks here and there…
The floor of the room has white tiles on top of concrete and there's a lot of iron drainage cut here and there, it's possible to drain little water…
Certainly, we can use shower here…

Katsuko-san tied the long hose on the faucet of the water heater.
Then she extends the hose and pulled it to the drainage of the first corner of the room.

「…Please bring the shower head!」

I received the shower unit installed to the point of the hose from Katsuko-san.
Katsuko-san returned to the water heater…

「…This water is unsuitable for drinking but I think it's fine to be used on bathing」

Katsuko-san's head griped the knob of the water heater…

「…Then, I'll fire it up!!」

Along with the sound of the stove…the stove flares up!
Immediately, water dashed out from the shower head…

「…How is it, yoshida-sama!」

Katsuko-san asks as she light up the water boiler…hot water came out immediately.

「Yoshida-sama…please!」

The hot water became at the right temperature immediately…

「Yes…the heat is just right!!」

I took shower…
Flushed all the sweat in my body…
I washed my crotch too…

Uwa…it's so sticky from the semen and love nectar…

「Katsuko-san will be washing the back…!」

Saying that, Katsusko-san took the shower nozzle and sprinkled hot water on my back…
The hot water rinses the skin…
It feels good…I feel alive again.

「…Thank you」

When I told her, Katsuko-san smiled.

「Then…Yoshida-sama, please wash Yukino-sama…」

Katsuko-san passed the shower to me…

Yukino leaned on the stainless steel desk and sat down.
…Expressionless
The trembling back that touches the metal leg that shines dully must be cold…

「…Yukino, come here」

…Yukino doesn't move.

「Get here already!! You toilet woman that stinks pee!! I'm telling you to get your filthy body groomed by Yoshida-sama!! Take come consideration you idiot!!」

The 『Sex beast』 came back and shouts!!

「…O-Okay!」

Abruptly, Yukino stood up and came to me unsteadily…

「…Where's your greeting to Yoshida-sama?!」
「…… !」

「…Greet him!」
「…W-What should I say?!」
「Thank about it yourself!!!」
「…I'm sorry…I'm sorry, I'm sorry, I'm sorry, I'm sorry…」

Yukino keeps apologizing to Katsuko in a weak voice…

「Enough! I'll teach you only for today! Repeat what I will say!」
「…Yes, I understand…!」

The naked Yukino is trembling…

「…I'm a stinking toilet girl!」
「I-I am…a stinking toilet girl…」
「…Sorry to trouble but please groom my body!」
「S-Sorry to trouble…B-But please groom my body!」
「…Everyday from now on, I'll be a 『Sperm Toilet』 for Yoshida-sama to release his desire on!」
「E-Everyday from now on…from now on, I-I'll be a 『Sperm toilet』 for Yoshida-sama to release his desire on…」
「…Please play with Yukino's body forever!」
「P-please play…noooo…Doing this everyday, I don't' want it, nooooooo!!」

Yukino's eyes have tears collecting…

「…Don't cry you toilet!!」

Katsuko-san pushed Yukino's naked back!
That moment…Yukino's tears stopped!

「…Sex toilet don't cry! A toilet is a toilet! Yukino-sama's a semen toilet so you should just shut up and become Yoshida-sama's toy!!」
「Y-yes…I get it…I'm sorry…!」

Yukino desperately apologizes to Katsuko-san.

「…I'm going to confirm it again! Yukino-sama is a what?!」
「A toilet! A sperm toilet!」
「Whose toilet?!」
「Y-Yoshida-sama's sperm toilet!」
「Then, you'll be making Yoshida-sama release his semen

everyday?!」
「Y-Yes!」
「Then give Yoshida-sama a proper response!!」

Yukino looks at me…

「…Y-Yukino is Yoshida-sama's sperm toilet! P-Please…release your sperm…inside me…every day!」
「…Well done!!」

Katsuko-san praises Yukino immediately!
…A smile on her whole face.

「Now, Yoshida-sama should praise Yukino too!!」

…Eh, praise?

「Embrace her and pat her head!」

…Ah, aah.

I embraced the naked Yukino and pat her head…

「Un…Well done. You didi your best, Yukino's great…!」

For the time being, I'll say what I'm thinking…
Yukino's trembling in my arms…

「Now…please wash Yukino's body…!」

I pour the hot water of the shower on Yukino.
Yukino…calmly gets washed by me…
Her face is expressioless…

I sprinkled hot water on her head…
On her back…
Her breasts…
Her crotch…
Her legs…
The stink of urine from Yukino's body disappeared…
Yukino's not resisting at all.
She's not making any reactions.

Just expressionless…silent.
She's quietly being washed by me…

I massaged Yukino's breasts…
…Yukino doesn't resist.
I gripped Yukino's ass…
…Yukino doesn't resist.
I embraced the naked Yukino…and kissed her.
…Yukino doesn't resist.
She's just looking at the corner of the floor.
While playing at the doll-like Yukino…
…I!
…I!
…I got erect again!

「…There's no need to hold back you know?!」

Katsuko-san mutters as she take the shower head from me.

「…Yukino-sama's Yoshida-sama's toilet after all」

Then she told Yukino…!

「…Yoshida-sama seems to want to use Yukino-sama's body!」

Yukino looked at me…
With her expressionless face…
However, there's a color of fear from her eyes…

「…What position do you want? Missionary? Or doggy style?!」

Katsuko-san asks me…

「On top…I want to to violate Yukino from the top!」

Yukino's body trembled!

「With that said…Yukino-sama, please lie down on the floor on your back…!」
「…N-No…please spare me already today, please…!!」
「…Hurry up you toilet, don't be so slow!!」
「…Hi!!」

Yukino sinks down on the floor and lies down…
The tiles are completely warm from the hot water

「…What happened to your greetings?!」
「…… ! 」
「… 『Please enjoy』 …?!」
「…P-Please enjoy…!!」

I leaned over the naked body of Yukino!
Yukino didn't resist at all.
She just entrusts her body to me…!
I put in a finger inside Yukino's slit…
Yukino's inside is still drenched from the reverberation of the sex until a while ago…
I…opened her legs wide…
Then the erection hits the vaginal opening!!
Yukino's eyes falls in despair…

…Zuyubori!!

It invades Yukino's inside…!!

「…Aaaaaahn!!」

Yukino, who's expressionless all this time…raised her voice when the penis went in!
I start the piston rapidly…!

「…Aaah…Aaaan…Aaaa, ah, ah, aaaah…!!!」

Every time I pierce her, Yukino's body flutters rhythmically…!
Her cute breasts shakes plumply…!

「Ufufu…the body that's ignited once…helplessly feels good from being violated, doesn't it?! You're going to cum immediately after again…Yukino-sama!!」

『Sex Beast』 Katsuko-san laughs like the devil…!!

「…Ahn…aaaahn…Hyaaaan…ah, ah, ah…aaaah!!」

Yukino turned to a sex doll…!

…It's indeed a good sound…!
I'll make you cry more…!
More, more, more…!!

「Ufufu…Let me do it too once again!」

Katsuko-san placed the shower nozzle between her crotch and started a hot masturbation…

「…Ah, ah, ah, ahuaaan, ahn!!」

Yukino's satisfied voice!
The meat doll that's made only to be violated by me has really a really good pant!!

「Uuun…It looks like it feels so good!! I want it too…even though I want it too!!」

Katsuko-san fondles her own breasts while putting the hot current on her clitoris!
…She's licking her own nipples…!![2]

「…Aaaaa! Ah, aaaaaaaa!!」
「…Uuuun…U, uu, uun!!!」

The two lewd gasping is jumping at both of my ears…
Me too, I violate Yukino intensly…rape…ravish!!
No matter how many times I've done it, this body doesn't get tired!
Embracing a body feels good…!
I can feel the touch of her beautiful face…!
A beauty was raped by me…I stole her virginity…!
…Yukino!
…Yukino!
…Yukino!

「…Agaain, it's coming, something's coming…the light…the white light!!!!!!!!!!」

Yukino runs up to the stairs of climax in a dash!!
I run after her!!

「Y-Yoshida-samaa!!」

Katsuko-san who's masturbating intensely calls me?!

「…A man's pleasure reaches the peak only for a moment but for women, it'll continue for a while after climax…therefore for both to climax at the same time, the man has to match the timing later than the woman!!」

…I see!
…That's how it is!!

「…Aaaaah, the liiight!!」I'm flying, flying…I'm flyiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiinggg!!」
「…Here we go…I'm…about to…!!」

Yukino and I reaches climax…!!
At that time…Katsuko-san whispers at Yukino's ears…

「…Are you okay with that Yukino-sama. That's the fourth creampie you know?!」

Yukiino's eyes opened wide in surprise…!!!

「…You can't!!! I'll get pregnant! Noooooo!!!」

Yukino's body reaches climax while she shouts…!!
Her body bent like a bow and her body convulsed greatly!!!
Her vagina is squeezing with all it's might!!!

…Pregnant!!
…I'll make it!
…I'll impregnate you!!
…Your womb!

「…Drink in my semeeeen!!」

I ejaculated!!

「…It's comiing iiiiiin…The hot stuff is flowiiingg!!!」

…Goku, goku!
…It's drinking!!
…Yukino's womb is drinking my semen!!!

「…Ahahaha, ahaahaha!! He let it out! You're pregnant! You'll be a mama!! You'll be pregnant with a child of rape!! Ahahahahaha…!! This is too funny and strange that I came already!!!…Aaaaaaaaa!!」

『Sex Beast』Katsuko-san came from masturbation while laughing…

「…Haa…Haa…Haa…」

The wide『Cooking practice room』…
The lights of the room is only a third so it's dark.
In such a lonely room…the sound of water and the rough breathing of three naked people is echoing…

「…What should I do?…What should I do?…What should I do?」

Looking up at the ceiling, Yukino mutters as she's piled up with me…
Katsuko-san slowly gets up and gets her bag…
She took something inside…?!

「…Yukino-sama, could it be that you want this?!」

Katsuko-san showed a small plastic bag containing something small to Yukino…!

「You do know this medicine, don't you?!」

That's a big round orange tablet…!

「…Ah, that…!」

…Yukino jumps out!!

「…I'm asking if you want it or not!」

That orange tablet is the same thing as what Yukino received from Iwakura-senpai and drank this afternoon…
The『Emergency Contraceptive』Yukino and Iwakura-senpai believes to be able to prevent pregnancy for sex done less than 24 hours ago.
I know.

That there's no such medicine…
That's just a marble chocolate coated on orange sugar coating…
It doesn't have any effect to prevent pregnancy.

「…I-I want it…Please give me that…please let me drink it…I beg you…please…please …!!!」
「…Even if you bow at me, I'd be troubled! Please ask Yoshida-sama!!」

Katsuko-san points at me smilingly…

「…Yoshida-sama, what do you think? should I give this medicine to Yukino-sama?!」

…Laughing.
…Katsuko-san's laughing!!!

「…Please! Please give it to me!!…I beg you…this is my lifetime request…I beg you…I'll do anything so please…!!」

…!!!
…Yukino?
…She's kneeling on the ground naked in front of me…!
She's pressing her forehead against the floor…!
…To me…!
…To a man like me…!
…She's even kneeling!!
…She wants the fake medicine…!!

…You hate being pregnant with my child that much?!!!

The beast inside me woke up…!!
…That's right.
…When the female heart has become naked, start to drive her further!

「…Go on. Katsuko-san, please give that medicine to Yukino!」

Yukino looked up in surprise…!

…Don't be happy!
…It's too early to be happy!

I thrust my penis before Yukino's face and said.

「But I'll do another before that!…Let me have fun one more time! I'll cum inside you! That's why, suck it! make my penis energetic inside your mouth!」

Yukino's face despairs!
I see…it's no good if I don't do this…
I will never have Yukino!
I have to be more of a demon…
More, more, more…!!

「Lick Katsuko-san's pussy while being violated by me…make Katsuko-san cum with your tongue!」

Katsuko-san laughs…
She's blessing it…
The birth of the new 『Sex beast』…

「…Yukino!…Let's do it once again!!!」

…In the dark cooking practice room.
…I did it three more times.
…Ejaculating inside Shirasaka Yukino…!!!

---

1. Sound of the ashtray hitting the floor, rolling, then fall down flat ↩
2. That's how big Katsuko-san's breast is!! ↩

27. After party

We took shower again after everything was over…
There's nothing coming out anymore…It's my first time to ejaculate this much.
I feel sleepy……heavy. I'm worried about my body.
My waist a aches…the overused glans is sore…

KAtsuko-san took out a clean bath towel.
Then we wiped our body…and came back to the pee smelling 『Night duty room』 to take our clothes…
Katsuko-san returned to her former maid-san mode, she's speaking brightly but…Yukino and I are silent.
Anyway…it was tiring.
When I looked at the phone I have on my jacket, it's already past nine in the evening…

…I had sex all this time.
…With Yukino.

Yukino too looked at her own phone…
She looked at the incoming.
Surely she had a call from Endou
…A lot.

「Can…I wear my clothes now?…」

Yukino asked Katsuko-san in a low voice.

「Yoshida-sama…is that okay?」

Katsuko-san asked me…
Yukino never asks me directly…

「Yeah…it's okay now」
「That's what he said!」

Katsuko-san smilingly told Yukino.
The woman on 『Sex Beast』 mode is no longer here…
It was a smile of a very gentle onee-san.

Her body is also exhausted…Yukino looked for her panty from the clothes she took off messily.

「Here」

I found it on the floor…picked it up and handed it to Yukino.
Yukino accepted it silently…
The blue silk panty is worn through her leg.
Her round ass is wrapped in cloth.
I feel reluctant to say farewell on this naked body but it can't be helped.
Next, Yukino looks for her bra.
Yukino continues her miserable search inside the pee stinking room with only one dark light bulb.

I too off mine quickly so my clothes are generally gathered up.
I put it on quickly.
While confirming Yukino's state occasionally…
Oooh, she's putting on her bra…

Katsuko-san wore her clothes the fastest.
As expected of a person used to taking it off, she's also fast on wearing…
Then she took out a big phone from her bag…
Then she pressed call…!

「…Hello, it's Katsuko! It just finished now!」

She's reporting to Yuzuki-sensei…

「Okay…understood!」

Katsuko-san pushed the switch of the phone
Then…it became loudspeakers and Yuzuki-sensei's voice is heard from Katsuko-san's phone…!

『…Well done the two of you. How's your first activity in sex club? Did it feel good?』

Yuzuki-sensei's voice seems to be happy.

『Katsuko…report the details…!』

Yukino's hands stopped…
She's wearing only her white uniform…
Yukino's underwear is still exposed on the bottom…

「Yes, Ojou-sama…Intravaginal ejaculation – seven times, fellatio and semen drinking – four times, facial ejaculation – two times… then for the extra, a coerced striptease and photography, pee bath from Yoshida-sama and me, and Yukino-sama urination show too!」

…Uwa, that's quite a lot.

『…Is that so? Since intravaginal ejaculation is 30k yen, it would total to 210k yen. Semen drinking is 20k yen. Striptease is 10k yen. Since the photography session didn't have any video, 100k yen should be enough?…! The pee bath, Katsuko-loves it but I don't evaluate it that much. I don't know what's fun there. That's why it'll only be 10k yen for the two. The urination show would also be 10k yen…!』

On the other side of the phone, Yuzuki-sensei calculates quickly…

『360k yen in total…It'll be transferred to your account by evening. You got quite an income again Shirasaka-san…do you intend to buy an condo by graduation?!』

Sensei laughed loudly…
Yukino stayed silent…
She can't cry anymore tonight…

『Yoshida-kun…take out the stamp card』

Oh right.
I took out the card I put in my wallet…

『…Shirasaka-san, the ejaculation count is ten times, push the stamp ten times…!』

Katsuko-san took out the stamp from her bag and handed it to Yukino…
Yukino…hates to push the stamp by herself…

『Isn't it the fruits of your labor for today? Shirasaka-san, push it

yourself…』
「Come…pleapse push it…Yukino-sama!!!」

Yukino pushes the stamp timidly according to the orders of the two women…
The 『Yukino』 mark on the card increaes…

『There's still 76 remaining… If you go with this pace, you can fill all the stamp columns at the remaining days. Sex should also gradually feel good for you, doesn't it? Shirasaka-san's golden week on her sixteen year of age is something unforgettable…!』

Sensei laughs…
Yukino…expressionlessly pushes the stamp one by one…

「…Ten, I've confirmed it. Yoshida-sama…here」

Katsuko-san confirmed the ten new stamps and returned the card to me…
There's still 76 times of sex remaining for the six days.

『After that, Shirasaka-san…You were put to help the student council for today. Thus you were late to return today…I already contacted your house and told that…』
「…Eh?」

With her house becoming the topic…Yukino regained her human expression for the first time.

『Don't worry…I didn't make the call as I promised. I had Iwakura-san call them. It's a report from the student council president that the whole school trusts…so your mother seemed to have trusted it easily…』

Sensei…uses her own 『Toys』 to encircle Yukino…

On one side…Iwakura-kaichou is a 『Senpai who experienced the same thing』 so she's someone she can relax her guard with…
On the other…Katsuko-san is recognized as a 『A subject of fear and forcibly rule her mind』
Using her own subordinates to capture Yukino from various directions…She'll be able to dominate her by herself…

Until Yukino falls as a 『Seventh Toy』…Sensei's strategy will continue.

『It's already late tonight so Shirasaka-san will be sent by Katsuko by car…Yoshida-kun, return by bus』

The two days since yesterday really had a lot of things happening… I can finally go back to my room…

『Right…When you come back to your daily life space…You'll realize it for the first time. How much you have changed…and that you can never go back…』

Sensei laughs…

…That's right.
…I can no longer turn back.

『Take a rest for today…don't be late for tomorrow. If you try to skip school…you do know what will happen, don't you?』

…Sensei's words made Yukino tremble.

『…Shirasaka-san, your answer?』
「…Yes」
『…Yoshida-kun too! Don't make a face like you're unrelated to this!!』

Eh…Me too?
Oh right…I'm also being trained…No, Katsuko-san explained that it's 『Education』

「…Yes, understood」

At the moment I answered, I was surprised.
As expected…Yuzuki-sensei's monitoring this room…
There's some hidden camera somewhere.
Sensei's watching all this time!!

「Good answer…Then, the two of you. See you tomorrow…!」

…The call ends.

◇ ◇ ◇

We went out of the building and go to the east gate.
Katsuko-san locked each doors.

「…Okay, have this」

Katsuko-san passed the bunch of keys to me

「Remember the keys for each doors okay?…From tomorrow forward, Yoshida-sama can freely go in and out of here with Yukino-sama!!」
「…What?」
「This is the sex club's room…I'll be coming here everyday to clean it come so please don't mind getting it dirty. Oh right, I'll also prepare an exclusive chamber pot for Yukino-sama's use!!」
「…Chamber pot?」
「Ojou-sama said it a while ago but…I love peeing on cute girls!」

No…even if you say that with such a face…

「Aah…instead of getting a chamber pot, should I get an toilet for cats?! Like a pet!!」
「…R-Right」
「Then, I'll do that! Yukino-sama, please pee a lot!!」

Yukin doesn't answer.

「…Yukino-sama, your answer please?」

The 『Sex Beast』 comes for an instant…

「…Y-Yes」
「…It's not Yes! You need to speak your gratitude…!!」
「…T-Thank you…very much…」
「…What are you thanking for? You have to be detailed…!!!」

…Yukino trembled.

「U-Uhm…T-Thank you for…preparing a cat toilet…for Yukino's sake…」

This timid attitude was me until earlier this day…
Yukino and my attitude has reversed before one notices…

「…You have to properly pee there okay! I will never allow you to pee on other toilets!!」
「Yes…understood…」

Katsuko-san embraced Yukino with a smile.
Then pat her head…

「…Okay, well done! Yukino-sama's a good child!!」

This is Katsuko-san's 『Training』…
Repeating tension and relaxation a lot of times and let her mind get tired…penetrate deep in her heart…
Being held on Katsuko-san's voluptuous breasts…Yukino loses her strength while still expressionless…

「…Then, I'll be taking my car…please wait here for a while!」

Katsuko-san radiantly said.
Then she took out a parcel from her bag…!

「You're hungry aren't you?…Please eat this!!」

Could this be?!

「…This is the bread I made! I baked it this early afternoon so I thikn that it's still delicious!」

Uwaa…last night, this morning, this lunch, and right now…It's all Katsuko-san's bread.
Well, It's certainly delicious though…
Inside the paper bag are various kinds of sweet rolls

「…Katsuko-san loves making bread」
「Yes…I want to work as a baker in the future…!」

…Future?!
…Katsuko-san's dream?!

At that time, Katasuko-san's smile was…

A normal smile for a twenty year old girl.

「…Just do it! Katsuko-san's bread is really delicious after all… 」

When I said that…Katsuko-san looked a bit lonely…

「It's no good right now…The me right now is still…Ojou-sama's 『First toy』 after all! 」

Finally…Katsuko-san revealed the truth from her mouth…
As expected…Katsuko-san's the 『First』
Yukino also looked at Katsuko-san in surprise…

「…Yuzuki-sensei doesn't let you? 」

When I asked…Katsuko-san shook her head

「It's not…It's just because, now's not the time yet… 」
「…Time? 」
「I still can't be released… 」

Katsuko-san used the word 『Release』 …
…Then that means?!

「Could it be that there's a person who's released already?! 」

Yukino with earnest eyes listens to our conversation…

「…Yes It's the 『Second』 」
「…Where's that person right now? 」
「She's living happily! She gave birth to a girl…and that child's already three years old this year…she's very cute~! 」
「…Is she married? 」

Katsuko-san laughed…

「No way…She's raising a child who's father is unknown! Her body can no longer be satisfied with normal sex too…! 」

…Could that be?!!

「Yes…Ojou-sama's 『Toys』 will be released when they get

pregnant! That's the rule!」

…Rule?!

「…If I give birth to a child, I'll be released. Ojou-sama has no interest on a woman who became a mama. In exchange, she'll properly take charge of the life afterwards. The second child is a flower shop owner on the nearby town right now. Ojou-sama funded everything to open the store. That's why…someday, my bakery shop too. I think so…!」

That's…Katsuko-san's dream…

「…That second person…does Katsuko-san know her well?!」
「…She's my best friend. On my high school days」

Katsuko-san looks at the east gate sorrowfully…

「We always meet in front of this gate…Aha, that's so nostalgic!」
「…Katsuko-san…could it be?!」
「Yes. I'm a graduate of this school…and Ojou-sama's first student!!」

…Graduate.
…A Senpai!

「I used to make bread on the 『Cooking practice room』 earlier. That's the room where I first learned how to make bread… There's the old school buildings those days and the east gate was the front gate of the school. I'm very happy that I came to a nostalgic place for today! I'm also glad that the kendo ground still remains…!」

…Kendo ground?
…Oh right, Katsuko-san said that she was in Kendo club in her high school days.

「…The old Kendo ground was burnt by the third and fifth child!」

Fifth child…It's Natou-senpai!
…The blonde senpai's a serious delinquent!!
No…rather than that!

「Uhm…Katsuko-san, how old are you?」

Katsuko-san smiled.

「…It's taboo to ask a woman's age!」
「Ah…I'm sorry」
「…I'm 21!」

Then…she was a new student five years ago?

「Ojou-sama was a new teacher when I was a first year! The school has completely changed in these five years!」

The school building has completely been replaced to a new one…
and it was embedded with Yuzuki-sensei's peeping and wiretapping system.
At the same time, this construction area is off limits for the normal students.
On the surface…the student council, Iwakura-kaichou is sent to rule the minds of the students
From the back…Natou-senpai's working secretly…

No, I still don't know the 『Third』 and 『Sixth』 …

「Now then, the talk has become so long…I'll be taking the car here immediately so please wait!」

Saying that, Katsuko-san on her maid uniform left the east gate…
Yukino and me remained on the gate…

「…Yukino, let's eat bread」

I took out a cream bun from the bag.
…Delicious.
Katsuko-san's bread shop will definitely succeed…
It must be hard to maintain a shop while having a baby…

「Yukino should eat too, you must be hungry…!」

Yukino ignored the bread I held out and took distance from me.
She walked staggering bowlegged…
Her body's overworked from sex since yesterday…

At the moment Katsuko-san disappeared, the tension have taken over…
She sat down to the concrete on the side of the gate…

「…Hey, you okay?」

When I tried to approach her…

「…Don't come here…don't approach me…!」

She muttered in a small voice.

「…I want to go home sooner…I want to take a warm bath in my house again…」

She whispers quietly as she stare at the ground.

「You should eat something…you'll get better even a bit. If bread is impossible, should I buy you a drink?」

I found a vending machine about twenty meters away so I said that. However…

「I don't need…I don't need anything…」

Yukino doesn't even try to look at me…

「Don't say that…What does Yukino usually take?! You don't buy anything before coming home?!」

Trying to soften the atmosphere…I spoke in a light hearted feeling. The unsteady Yukino…glared at me…!

「…Stop that」

It was different from a while ago…She spoke it in a clear sharp tone…!

「We don't have that kind of relationship…!」

…Yukino!

「…That kind of relationship, what kind of relationship?」

Yukino stands up and shouted!

「Don't forget!… I hate you! I think of wanting to kill you! I'm not your friend! You're not a friend so don't talk to me!」

Yukino throws intense words at me who piled bodies with her a lot of times!

「I see…then it's fine. I'll be eating the bread alone!」[1]

I turned my face away from Yukino's hatred glance…
Then, Yukino!

「…That's right! A man like you should just be alone!!」[2]

…What?

「…Even though you can't' do anything alone!!」

Yukino's eyes of hatred looks at me…
Dark eyes looks at me…

…I
…I

I understood my own 『Mistake』[3]and 『Err』[4]…!

The one who threatened Yukino and bound by words is Yuzuki-sensei.
…Not me.
The one who grips Yukino's trust and entered her heart is Iwakura-kaichou.
…Not me.
The one who drive Yukino mentally and made her obedient is Katsuko-san.
…Not me.

Certainly…I had sex with Yukino a lot of times…
We also reached climax together.
However…still…

I'm still nobody for Yukino.

I'm not a ruler.
Not a lover.
Not a friend.

For her…I'm just Yuzuki-sensei's tool that she should hate…
I'm nothing but a sex tool that releases semen inside her…!

Yukino doesn't approve me as a human being…!!

At the moment I realized that…Tears collect in my eyes…!
Kuwaaa, tears overflowed instantly

「…Hmm…Even if you cry…then just cry!」

Yukino mocks me…!

「…Pervert! Madman! Idiot! A scum!! You should just die!! Just die alone!!」

Yukino curses me…!
…The negative feelings of Yukino that's been saved up all this time.
She throws it at me in a dash!!

Yukino looks at me with eyes of hatred
She's hating me from the bottom of her heart…
I'm being cursed…

…Sorrowful
…Sorrowful
…Sorrowful.

The tears…the tears doesn't stop!!

I…I have strangled to death my first love by this hand…!

There's headlight shining on the other side of the road…
It's Katsuko-san's car…
Today's car is a midnight blue, a big Benz…

「…Sorry to keep you waiting!」

Katsuko-san opened the window of the driver seat ant at the

moment she said it…the rear seat opens and Iwakura-kaichou jumps out…!

「…Shirasaka-san…are you okay?!」

The Seitokaichou runs up to Yukino!

「…I-Iwakura-saaan…!!」

Seeing her trusted senpai, Yukino jumps to her chest…!
Iwakura-senpai also embraced Yukino firmly…!

「…I'm sorry Shirasaka-san! I wasn't able to help you! But, it's okay already! I'm here…I'll be here with you!…!」
「Senpaiii…I…!!!」

「…Waaaaaa!!」With her loud voice…Yukino cried.
Everything she endured spouts all at once!!
Yukino sobs in Iwakura-kaichou's chest…

「It's' okay…I'll be with you until you come home…I'll also talk to your family so you don't need to worry about anything okay…
Shirasaka-san…It's already fine, it's already okay!!」

Saying that, Iwakura-kaichou pushed Yukino to the car…
When she's stepping in the car, she glared at me…
…Eyes of scorn.

「Then…I'll be sending Yukino-sama off!」

Katsuko-san on the driver seat told me laughingly

「Ah…Katsuko-san please wait!」

I called Katsuko-san who's about to take off with the car…

「…What is it?」

Katsuko-san has a blank face in surprise…

「Thank you for everything today…!」

I bowed my head to Katsuko-san…!

「W-What are you doing suddenly?」
「…It's words of gratitude!」

That's right…I learned this from Katsuko-san today…

「Also, the bread was delicious! I'm sure that Katsuko-san will be a good bakery owner!」

When I said that…
Katsuko-san on the driver seat looks a bit embarrassed….

「…If you think so, then please violate Katsuko when the opportunity comes!」

…What?

「…Katsuko wants to give birth soon!!」

She left with such frightening words…
Katsuko-san drives off the car…

I alone was left on the unpopulated east gate.

The moon rose in the sky…

---

1. That's his problem! lol ↩
2. He already is. Fuck, I cried again ↩
3. Ayamachi ↩
4. Ayamari ↩

◇『Kuromori』 Arc

28. Kuromori

When I looked at my phone…it's alrealdy 9:48PM
…Now then, I should go home soon.
Forty-five minutes is the shortest time going from my house to school but at this time…the number of busses should be few.
While thinking that…I carried my blue school bag and walked the way home…
I began to walk on the direction of the main street from the east gate.
…Then.

A car came from behind…
The light was dazzling…
I know this car!

It's a big green minivan.
The back seat is covered by the mirror sheet…!
That's…Yuzuki-sensei's car!!

The car stopped by my side…
Then the window of the driver seat opens…

「…Oh, Yoshida-kun, going home?」

…Transparent.

「…You're watching us from somewhere anyway Yuzuki-sensei…!」

Sensei laughed.

「It was just a wiretap…It was interesting. Shirasaka-san really burst out that much…」

…As expected.

「…Hey, Yoshida-kun…why do you want that child?」

Sensei looked at me with mocking eyes…

「…What do you mean?」
「I mean what I said…Because Shirasaka-san's such a boring girl…!」

…Boring?

「…She's just a bit cute but you can find someone like her anywhere. Let's see, she's the type that's quite beautiful but will never become an idol… Even if she'll have some maniac fans, she'll fade out from the industry without getting too much popular…」

Sensei happily criticizes Yukino…

「…Her character is so simple and common…she's just an idiot daughter who's chasing love. She'll be in high spirits when a man asks her 『Go out with me』 for the first time. Endou's face and reputation as a sportsman, it just matched her preference by chance. She only know the other by that much and she thought that it's her 『Fated love』 … No , rather than think, she'll decide it…!」

Yuzuki-sensei is declaring that Yukino and Endou's relationship isn't genuine[1]

「…Is that so?」
「Isn't that obvious? If you really love the other, you'll never make a promise in front of your classmates such as 『I won't kiss nor have sex with my lover until we graduate』?! The existence of 『Ideal love image』 in her head is too big that it's the only thing she loves. The truth is that it may not be Endou-kun…Anyone's fine as long as it's her ideal character…!」

…I see…
…That's how it is I guess.
If not, Yukino will never love a man like Endou.

「…Of course Yoshida-kun…You're not included in her ideal love character! Even if you apply to be her lover normally, Shirasaka-san will never chose you as her lover…!」
「…I know that!」

…That's right, I know that from the start…

…That's why, I
…Violated her
…From the start…!!!

「Well, she's just a fairly beautiful girl, and a girl pampered by everyone around her so she can't look at herself objectively! But her fantasy is just too much! Shirasaka-san's screws on her head might be loose…」

Sensei made a big laugh inside the van…
The girl named Shirasaka Yukino is completely criticized and mocked, and she laughed loudly…
…Then…!

「…Yoshida-kun , why do you want that girl?」

…Why?

「…Did you like her face? Or could it be that you were impressed on how gentle she was on the surface?…I think you already know it but she's not really a child that behaves friendly in reality. Shirasaka-san's only playing her idealized image for her daily life…『A me that everyone loves』. While getting along with all of her classmates, she's making fool of them thinking that they're inferior in appearance and ability from the bottom of her heart…Shirasaka-san's that kind of person…!」

Sensei smiles…and look at me.

「…Why can you assert that far?!」
「…Because, I'm a teacher. I understand. I've been watching since the first month of your entry…I heard it. Not only the conversations in the classroom…not only the talks in the women's toilet, the back of the school, the rooftop, the gossips in the locker room of the clubs…Not just Shirasaka-san's words but also all the talks about Shirasaka-san from the other students…!」

Yuzuki-sensei…knows everything…!
All of the talks that happens in the school…!

「…Do you know? The baseball club and Endou are making a bet

on the timing when will Shirasaka-san let Endou-kun have her body…! The most popular is when the summer tournament ends the first stage. The second most popular is within this golden week! Endou-kun himself bet 3,000 yen for the later half of the golden week!」

…Endou!!!
…That guy doesn't even think of protecting his promise with Yuzuki-sensei!!!

「Look, Endou-kun has a practice game this May 1…If they found out that Shirasaka-san had sex before that, the second years that aren't regulars, would feel sorry for the third years don't they?… More than the bet, the result has to be reported to all of the members of the club…!」

…That's Endou.
…He's going to press Yukino to have sex after May 1…!!

「…With that said…even if you didn't rape her, Shirasaka-san is scheduled to lose her virginity soon anyway. Then well…her relationship with Endou-kun will collapse in three months. Such selfish children will never last that long. But, they'll have lots of sex before they part. Shirasaka-san will completely experience the taste of sex with Endou-kun」

Yuzuki-sensei's fearful prediction continues…

「…But, Shirasaka-san is an ordinary cute child so she'll find her next lover immediately. She'll never stop having a man until she graduates…the long one year will be short that she'll replace men steadily between weeks. Of course, she'll have sex with everyone of them. Then, she'll cry at the graduation ceremony… 『My three years in high school life is a very happy time』… What she actually done is just holding men's penises in her mouth…!!!」

The female teacher expresses an obscene smile…
Sensei's eyes is testing me…

「…Perhaps, that's how it will be.」

I thought that Sensei's analysis is correct…
There's nothing wrong…
Shirasaka Yukino is that kind of woman
…Maybe.

「Yoshida-kun…You just met the Shirasaka-san that's not dirtied by anyone yet. That's why she had the goodwill in her. If you met each other one year ahead…Shirasaka-san would've already lost her virginity…I wonder of Yoshida-kun will still like Shirasaka-san…?」

…That's!

「She's already not a virgin…Yoshida-kun has no interest on women who knows the taste of other men's semen until yesterday, don't you?」

…That's right.
…The me until yesterday
…Perhaps…

「Then…I have a proposal foro Yoshida-kun…」

The demon smiled at me…

「…Want to embrace other woman than Shirasaka-san?! For example, Katsuko…or Natou Nei? Nei's good. She's much more beautiful than Shirasaka-san…her character is much more gentle. Of course, other women is also fine. If it's a schoolgirl in this school, anyone can do. If Yoshida-kun wants to have sex with a girl, I can set up anyone. Want to impregnate all the girls in our class? Want to rape the middle school students who'll take the entrance exam? That's fine too!!」

…I
…I!

「…Sensei」

I looked at the eyes of the female teacher and answered clearly…

「…I still…like Shirasaka Yukino!」

The female teacher's face warped in dissatisfaction…

「…Even though she's like that?」

My thoughts dashed out of my mouth!

「…But, I like her!」

…That's right.
…This thoughts are helpless!

「Is that so?…But, you did the worst on the girl you liked you know? You stole her virginity forcibly, you raped her a lot of times, and even peed on her…do you understand that?」
「…I do」
「…That's a criminal act…you do know that it's an unforgivable act for a human? A man who's caught doing a sex crime will be bullied in the prison…then he'll be labeled as 『Sex Criminal』after he gets released out of the prison for his whole life. Every time the employer or landlord search for your records…of course they'll know your records in the past…」
「…Yes」
「…Then…what do you intend to do after that」

If I contradict Yuzuki-sensei's will…I will never be helped by Sensei…
When I get busted, it's normal that I will withdraw from the school…
…My life will be in ruins.
…My fall is certain.
I will no longer be able to meet Yukino…
I won't be able to hold that body!!

…I
…I

「…I'll do anything…I intend to do anything for Yukino…!」

Sensei's eyebrow raised up from my answer…!

「…What do you mean by that! Are you saying that you'll make up for all of your sins?!! You'll apologize to Shirasaka-san for your

whole life…?!」
「…That's not it!!」

…A moment of silence.
I looked up the night sky…
The moon that shines silver…
I…deeply bowed at Yuzuki-sensei…

「…I'll do anything! I'll do anything Sensei says!」

…I placed my hands on the ground!!!

「That's why…please let me have Shirasaka Yukino!! Please!!!」

Even I think it was a messed up and irrational wish…
In the first place, Yukino doesn't belong to Sensei…
But…I want Yukino no matter what…!

「…You don't intend to make up for your sins?」

Sensei said from inside the car.

「Yes…I don't regret anything! If I didn't rape her, nothing will start between me and Yukino!」
「It might've been happier if you just watched her from a distance…!」
「That's not true…I don't want to just look at her! I want to embrace Yukino with this hands…Ejaculating inside Yukino is thousand times better!」
「…Even if you get caught by the police?」
「…I'm prepared for it」
「Even if Yoshida-kun's life becomes a mess?」

My mind has already decided.

「It's fine…My own life, future, everything. I don't mind even if I get caught by the police right now and spend my whole life in prison. I'm fine even if I die right now. I'm already fine dying…!」
「…Yoshida-kun?!」
「I've embraced my beloved Yukino…kissed her…had sex with her…Yukino's virginity and my virginity…I ejaculated until my waist came off. It's like a dream…」

The tears…spilled again…

「…I felt that I've already used my lifetime luck! That's why it's enough! I'll offer the remainder of my life to Sensei! If Sensei's not here, I won't be able to embrace Yukino that's why…I'm thankful! Yuzuki-sensei!!!」

Yuzuki-sensei muttered in amazement from my tears.

「Are you saying that you'll become my tool in exchange of letting Shirasaka-san free?」
「…No!」

I looked up at Sensei…!

「I'll become Sensei's tool…But please don't let Yukino free! I don't want Yukino to be embraced by other men!!」

…That's not love(Koi).
…This isn't affection(ai) either
This is stubbornness…Obsession…
…Still!!

「…I'm the only who will have sex with Yukino!!」

「…Pu」Yuzuki-sensei burst into laughter…

「…Fufufufu, ufufufufu, ahahahahaha, hahahahahahaha!!!!」

Sensei's laughter doesn't stop…!!
Sensei is laughing at me…!!

「…Very well, Yoshida-kun! You're really pleasant! You're the best talent!!!」

Finally, Sensei's laughter stops…
She smiled at me.

「…You see, I intended to take out Shirasaka-san to a foreign country」

…Foreign country?!

「…A slum area in the southeast Asia. I was thinking of prostituting Shirasaka-san in the slums…one shot for 20 yen, a disgusting prostitute. Since Japanese girls are unusual for them, I'm sure that she'll be a popular prostitute. Though there're some choices to pick up in the town…!」

She had that kind of plan!

「…I wanted to make that foolish girl with high pride fall completely…but I'll stop…!」

Sensei looked at me.

「I'll be giving Shirasaka-san to you…Having her held by you is much worse than selling her in the slums as a 20 yen prostitute…I think it's a genuine hell…!」

…I, Yukino.
…My first love.
…Will fall to hell by this hands…!

「…Yoshida-kun, you said that you'll do anything right?」
「…Yes」
「From now on…you'll hurt people without any sins, and rape women forcibly but do you mind it?!」
「…Not at all!」
「You might be caught by the police sooner or later…or you might get killed…I'm telling you right now, I'm fine throwing you away anytime」
「…That's fine by me!」

…Enough
…I don't care anymore
I will perish as long as I keep holding on Yukino.
This life is already done.

「…Get in the car Yoshida-kun」

Sensei smiled satisfied and told me.

「…Welcome to the Crime Organization 『Black Forest2』」

◇ ◇ ◇

The rear seat door of Yuzuki-sensei's minivan opened…!

「…… ! ! ! 」

There's already two passengers inside!!!
There's one on right and left of the second row of the three row seat…
Both are blond beauties…
Both are wearing black leather jacket…
One of them is…

「…Iyaa, you're really interesting!! 」

Natou Nei Senpai…!!
The blue contacts and dyed blond hair…
Senpai's wearing a thicker make up than when I met her earlier…
She really looks like a foreigner.
Under the black leather jacket is a pink tank top and a polka dot miniskirt…
Her appearance seems to be coming from an American movie from the 50's…it suits her very well.

「But…I somehow know that you'll chose that child more than me! I'll give it to you afterwards so check how goof my body is okay?…! 」

…No, I never thought that Natou-senpai's in this car.

「…You're the one to speak! 」

Then…the other girl spoke.

…Who's this person?

Natou-senpai's face looks like a foreigner but this person's face is seriously a foreigner. The foreigner itself.
It has the same blond hair as Natou-senpai, perhaps it's the real one…
Even her eyes looks really blue…
Or rather…her face looks really scary.

A beauty is a beauty but…there's a big scar on her left cheek.
If she didn't have that wound, Natou-senpai would be an average beauty…
Rather, the wound on her beautiful face makes this person's scary atmosphere tripled…
The body under the leather jacket too has an outstanding figure but it feels like it's muscular…
Black T-shirt and jeans on the lower part. Her foot is wearing a U.S. military-like boots…

The scary foreign Onee-san continued to speak…!

「…Nei, you're still a virgin!」

Eh…Virgin?!
I returned my glance at Nei-senpai instinctively!

「Geez!…Maru-chan, don't reveal it!」

Eh…She's really a virgin?
If I recall, Natou-senpai got pregnant and aborted, then she wasn't able to attend the class for enough number of days so she repeated a year…

「It can't be helped that it's revealed! Yoshida-chan, I'll give my virginity to you! Be gentle with me when you do okay?!!!」

…Err.
…S-Senpai, I don't get what you're talking about…

「Don't push your virginity to your kouhai!」
「it's fine! Yoshida-chan is our companion from now on! Even Maru-chan wants to have sex with Yoshida-chan don't you?」
「I wonder?」

…Err
…What should I do?

「…Yoshida-kun, you already met Nei, didn't you? Next to Nei is Margo. Margo 『Highway』 Starkweather…She's the 『Third』 child」

…Third
…Yuzuki-sensei's 『Third Child』

「Margo is a child that I picked up from America. She's descended from an American Indian Blood…!」

Yuzuki-sensei explained from the driver seat…
…I-Indian?!

「What's wrong…Yoshida-kun?」
「Uhm…I'm just wondering if the word Indian is usable…?」

Margo-san's face moved…

「…What's with you, are you making fool of Indians?!」

…S-Scaryyyyy!!

「No…Uhm…I thought that shouldn't it be called 『Native American』 these days?」

I remember learning about that…

「Oh…That's just a selfish campaign of a Japanese publishing company for a certain period of time. Even in America, Indians are still Indians…!」

Yuzuki-sensei gave a lifeboat from the driver's seat…

「Is that so…I don't know that. Ah, I'm not making fool of Indian in particular…that…」

Margo-san laughs at my trembling appearance…

「…Nice to meet you. You can call me Margo」

Margo-san stretched out her hand to me…

「…Yoshida」

I understood it from the handshake…!
It's a very bulky hand…the fist bulge up roughly…
This…she's used to hitting something all the time!

「…Yoshida-kun, Margo's from armed groups. If you do something strange, it'll be a big problem you know」

No…I understand by just looking at her.

「That's not true, Maru-chan's very gentle! She's embracing me when we sleep!」

Hey, Margo-san's embracing Natou-senpai?!
…Haa
Then, what's the relationship of this two3?
Natou-senpai dyed her hair blond and wears blue contacts…could it be that she's trying to match Margo-san???

「…Then, let's go, Yoshida-kun take the seat in the back」

I take my seat as told…
Where do they intend to go?

Yuzuki-sensei drove the car…!

The car goes from the school to the main street…then towards the private railway station…
Only Natou-senpai is speaking brightly and endlessly inside the car.
Margo-san and Sensei nods occasionally…and I'm just silent…

Before long, the car arrived at the roundabout of the private railway station…
It's not a big station so it's not that crowded…
There's only the convenience store and the doughnut shop, the other stores are closed…
Since it's already 11 o'clock, there's not much people as long as the train doesn't arrive…
In it…there's a station wagon that's that's staying…

An obviously delinquent car…
It's repainted on a not-clever looking color, metallic purple…
The door on the back is open and the huge speaker inside the car is playing a hip hop music loudly…
To the surroundings of the car…are four university students men four, five people and two women with gawdy face hanging

around…
Ah…the people who came out of the convenience store, isn't that Kobayashi and Omiya from our class?!

「…Senpai…I bought the beer!」
「Oh, hand it over to everyone!」
「…Okay」

Why do these fellows errands on this place?
Is this where the local delinquents gather?
Oh, they began drinking around the station…!!
Everyone's sitting on the ground…!

「…The target is that car」

Sensei orders from the driver's seat…!

「…Got it」

Margo san opened the door and goes out quickly…

「…Then, Yoshida-chan, I'll be going too!」

Hey…Natou-senpai…?!

「Eh…Where?!」

Senpai spoke with a smile…

「Nfufu…I'll be the decoy…!」

Different from Margo-san, Natou-senpai opened the other door wide and went out…!
Just like that…she went straight to the delinquent's car…
A blond beauty wearing a black leather jacket and miniskirt…!!
She's walking towards the delinquent's ground swiftly…!!

「…What's with you?!」

The gawdy delinquent girl was the first one to call out Natou-senpai.

「…Hey hey, where's the toilet here?」

Natou-senpai asks the woman with her usual smile…

「Shouldn't you go to that convenience store there?…Rather than that, want to drink with us?!」

The fat university delinquent lights up his cigarette as he ogles at Natou-senpai…!
Un…even if you look from far, she's a good woman.
Katsuko-san has the better proportions but…it's drawing attention too much on the opposite.
On that respect, Natou-senpai has a nice body where you can get intimate…

「Stop, that woman's…!」
「Isn't that fine? She's quite a beauty…!!」

The delinquents observed Natou-senpai…!
…Then

「I can't endure it anymore…I'll do it here!!!」

Natou-senpai rolled up her polka dots miniskirt!!

…S-S-She's not wearing any panties!!!

Just like that, Natou-senpai urinates!!
She sat down towards the delinquents…!!
The vigorous pee goes out of Natou-senpai's crotch…!!

「…Youuu, what are you doing!!!」

At the moment one of the delinquent stood up from the location of where she's peeing…!
Shurururn Margo-san's figure came out…!!

「…Sha! Shu, shu, shu, shu…Haa!!!」

…Kick!
…Hit!
…Beat!

…Throw!!

…Gua! Gii! Hiii!! Aaah!…Gooo!! Gyoee!!!

The delinquents were taken down in surprising swiftness as soon as they speak up!!!

「Margo's amazing…One hit and she'll take the ability of the enemy to take action, they'll never faint…!! This is for them to remember clearly who did it and how painful it is…」

The delinquents who're taken down was hit on their trachea hard, they're rolling around holding their throats and chests…!
They can't even raise a scream…!
Oh, Kobayashi and Omiya toppled over too…

「…Then, Yoshida-kun wear this」

Yuzuki-sensei presented a black thing to me…

「…What's this?」

When I spread it…it's a mask of a wrestler.
It's completely black.
There's a red 吉[4] written on the forehead…

「Wear that and hand this to Margo and Nei…!」

…That's two beer bottles.
After that…two golf clubs that are chopped to half of it's length.
It's rolled with vinyl tape to make a handle…

「…Could this be?」

When I asked…Sensei…

「…It's a beat up stick」
「…What?」
「…It's used to beat people up so it's beat up stick…!」
「…Haa」
「Hurry up and go…If you let her wait, Margo will berserk!」

Sensei smiled.

「…Yoshida-kun, this will be your debut as a driminal!」

…I wore my mask in a hurry and brought the beat up stick and beer bottles and got off the car!!

「…Oooh! He came, he came! This way!!」

Natou-senpai who finally finished peeing called me out!

「…You're late!」
「…Sorry!」

I handed the beat up stick to Margo-san while apologizing…!
When Margo san had the stick in her hand, she smashed the windshield of the delinquent's car!!!

…Guhashaan!!

「Me too□!!」

Natou-senpai also hit the windowpane with the beat up stick!!

「…H-Hey…S-Stop…Stop that…!!!」

One of the delinquents that still rolls on the ground is desperately calling out the two…!
However, Margo and Natou-senpai are…!!!
Happily hitting the delinquent's car with their beat up stick…!!!
The door, the bonnet, the roof…are beaten up until they had dents…!!

「Then, let's do the finisher…pass the beer bottle!」

I handed one of the bottles to Natou-senpai.
Senpai threw the beer bottle around the cracked windshield!!
The beer clashed and broke…!!
…A smell comes to my ear!!!
…It's gasoline!!

「…You do the other one!」

Margo-san ordered me…
…I hesitated for a moment.

「…What are you doing? You promised, didn't you…?!」

That's right, I!

I threw the beer bottle on the door of the car with all my might…!!
…The gasoline splashed around!!!

Margo-san picked the lighter of the the delinquent that fell on the ground.
Kachin…the oil lighter flares up!

「…Hiiiiiiiiiiiiiii!!!」

The delinquents who fell down gets up immediately and tries to run away!!

「S-Stop thaaaaat…!!!」

Margo-san and Natou-senpai spoke to the delinquent who cried…

「……Do'nt　Fuck！Black　Forest！」[5]
「…Don't make a fool of『Black Forest』!!!!」

The lit up lighter was thrown into the delinquent's car!!!

「…Hey, we're running!!」

Held by the two beautiful blond girls…I faced Sensei's car and run with all my effort!!

The het flares up from the rear…!!
The fire…lights up the surroundings!!!

Natou-senpai shouted at me while running…!!

「…You're our companion with this!!!!」

---

1. This isn't what Hachiman is looking for! ↩
2. Kuromori ＝ Black forest, It'll be explained later so I won't

give much details ↩
3. Author wrote three, but the next lines doesn't match it ↩
4. This means Yoshi…meaning Good luck, the first character of Yoshida's name ↩
5. I pasted what the author wrote, please don't comment that this is wrong ↩

★ April 28 Saturday

29. Turning Point

Yuzuki-sensei's car escaped with an earth-shattering force…!
Just like that, the car went downtown…

The biggest station around our school…
Though high school students have classes on Saturdays…tomorrow is Golden week for most of the people…
There's drunk office men and couples happily walking down the town…

「…Then, let's go!」

Natou-senpai calls me out…

「…Go?」
「Nfufu…Let's patrol…we'll do a round…!」
「This is our turf…!」

…Patrolling on the turf?

「Right, Yoshida-chan, take this…」

Natou-senpai handed me a fat black thing.
It's a leather handed pipe with length of approximately thirty centimeters…When she handed it over, it's really heavy…!

「…That's called black jack! It's stuffed in with sand! This is exclusive for Yoshida-chan!」

…B-Black jack?!
…It's filled with sand????!!!

「Swing it around and hit them hard…Different from the usual blunt weapon…it's a weapon with high killing power on the internals. Because it doesn't make any external wounds the opponent, this has the advantage of being hard to specify…!」

…Killing power…It won't leave any external wounds?!

「Also, I'll also give you this!」

Natou-senpai handed me a machine that looks like an electric shaver…

「You do know this right? It's a stun gun. This is the switch. This comes in contact with the enemy and shock them with electricity… got it?
「I'll try to follow up with you as much as possible for tonight but try to protect yourself as much as possible, okay?」

Err…Where are we going after this?!

「The mission tonight is to go around the downtown…we'll go to the red light district, and come back…*All right*?![1]」
「Take care…!」

Yuzuki-sensei sent us off with a wicket smile and…the car left…
The two blonde girls, wearing the same black dyed leather jacket…!
Walking on their back is me wearing a black mask and school uniform
Hey, is this a punishment game?!
There's a 『吉』on the forehead of my mask…
However, even if I'm having a strange appearance and even walk with the black jack on my hand, no one's minding it…!!

「…Let me show you something interesting!」

Saying that, Margo-san walked ahead briskly…
In front of Margo-san are two drunk office men and three young couples walking…
When they're about to pass by each other…!!
…Ue?!
It was too fast that I didn't see anything!!
When I noticed…the office men and the males of the couples…are already holding their chest on the ground!!!

「…Un, Sasuga Maru-chan!!」

The office men are breathing gee-gee, while down…!
The three men from the couples are holding their crotch in

suffering!!
Ah, one of them wet his pants!!
The woman with them screamed…!
With the sudden cry and the illustration of hell, the people gathered from the surroundings…!!

Margo-san orders with her fingers 「Hurry up and come here」…
Chasing in hurry…we escaped the scene looking as if we have nothing to do with it…

「…You see, the girl there's quite plain!」

Natou-senpai said.

「If she was cuter then we could've kidnapped her and have Yoshida-chan rape her…!」

Eh…Natou-senpai?

「I see…Certainly, when the penis only has one score, the variations of the play won't increase」

E-Even Margo-san!

「Let's do it next time Let's aim for fireworks display or Christmas…let's have the cutest girl get raped in front of her boyfriend…what do you think, isn't that fun?!」
「Un…that looks interesting」

Ah…They're really delinquents…
Or rather, it's not on a delinquent level anymore, it's a crime organization…
…This people.

「Let's all chose a couple and let's grade who picked the couple with the most interesting crying face…! Yoshida-chan too, you should pick one…!」

Natou-senpai's having such an angelic smile while sceming such a plan…!
Yuzuki-sensei's a 『Devil』 and Katsuko-san's a 『Sex Beast』…
Then Natou-senpai's a 『Fallen Angel』

Then…Margo-san is…!

「…Found it. Let's go!!」

As soon as we entered the red light district…Margo-san looked at the four-man hoodlooms and told us.

「Okay…Go, Yoshida-chan!!」

…Eh, me?

「We're the decoys」

Natou-senpai locked arms with me…!
My arms hit Senpai's soft big breasts…hey, it's not time for that!
Natou-senpai drags me and went to the hoodlums…!

「…You guys are no good! I even told you not to come to this area again! This place is our turf you know!!」

Natou-senpai calls out the hoodlums with her angelic smile…!
The hoodlums got startled with Natou-senpai suddenly approaching them…!

「Y-You…You're not with the foreigner woman from last time!?」

One of the hoodlum looks around restlessly…
I can't see Margo-san anywhere…!
W-Where could've she went…?!

「…Nee-chan, you alone?!」
「As you can see, I have Yoshida-chan!」
「What's with this kid?! What's with your mask?!」

…That's
…I also want to know why!

「If that foreigner is gone then it's just right…I'll payback for the last time! Nee-chan, play with me!」
「That's right…Let's take him to Yamada's aniki!」
「That's good…let's have nee-chan go on a prostitution video. No pay though!」

「We'll have you pay the doctor's expense and damages with your body!!」

Natou-senpai answered with her best smile…

「…No way~!!」

The hoodlums attacked Senpai all together…!

「…Get her! Tie her up!!」

…However!!

…Bachi bachi bachi!!!

…A burning smell!!
One of the hoodlums fall down…!

Natou-senpai…also has her stun gun!!

「…Yoshida-chan, the beat up stick!!」

At that moment…My body moved as Senpai instructed!!
I swing the blackjack around the shoulder of the hoodlum that fell down…!!
…Zuzhi, a heavy feedback!!
The shoulder of the hoodlum had a dent!!
…Eeeeeh?!
…His bones broke with only one attack!!!
Blackjack has this much power?!!!

「…You guys will pay for this!!」

The three remaining hoodlum pulled out their knifes all at once…!
…At that time!!
Margo-san appeared like a wind!!

…Shu! See! Haaaaa!!!

With three counts…the three remaining people fell down on the ground too…!!!

「…This is your second time!!」

Margo-san kicked the leg of one of the hoodlum…!
The foot bent to a strange direction with just one hit!!!
…She broke it without hesitation!!
The next guy had his arm…the other had his thighs snapped…!!!
The hoodlums shouted 「Ugyaaaa」loudly…!

「You guys made a joke about letting out Nei's video so it'll be threefold…which do you want, your intestines ruptured or your bladder?…!!!」

The hoodlums that fell on the ground are in panic…!!
Margo-san smiled cruelly…!!

「…Let's go with testicle rupture!!」

The hoodlums crotch was smashed by a sharp destructive kick!!

「…Gyeeeeeeeeeeeeeee!!」

The hoodlums screamed…!!
Margo-san grinds and crushes their crotch!!

『Savage』…!
Margo-san's a 『Savage』!!!

Another set of hoodlum was sent to hospital and we escaped the red light district.
We left the site before the police or the hoodlum's companion comes…

「…Are you doing this patrol every night?」

I asked Natou-senpai while walking in quick steps.

「No way…Just ocacsionally. Only on the nights when Yuzuki-sensei orders us…Well, at least once or twice a month…!」
「But…you just said that this is our turf a while ago didn't you?」
「It was just a wordplay to make a pretext…it doesn't matter who's turf is this! We don't want this. We're only just crushing the local delinquents or hoodlums or the yakuza to stand out…!」

「Eh…why are you doing that…?!」

Margo-san turned around when I asked…

「we're trying to sell our faces and names to be the most dangerous guys in the town…!」

…Selling the name and face?!

「It's 『Black Forest』!… 『Black Forest』is popular on rumors that they're the most evil, dangerous and tiwsted organization!」
「…That's to become an untouchable existence in this town!!」

…What the hell?!!
…I don't get it!!

「…Yoshida-chan, do your best too okay?!!」
「Your hit with your black jack earlier was good…It's good that you're can make up your mind fast. I'll rely on you from now on!!」

That's right…this isn't somebody else's problem.
I'm also a member of 『Black Forest』

We returned to Yuzuki-sensei's car…!

「…I've already talked to the police and hospital. And the higher ups of the hoodlums too」
Sensei suddenly said that.

「…Yoshida-kun. Because word about the delinquent and hoodlum hunt won't go out, you don't need to worry as no one will complain. At most, the target of the delinquents and hoodlums won't be harming us in any way…!」
「I can manage that kind of spark just by myself…!」

Margo-san said laughingly…

「Yoshida-kun, stay on my mansion tonight…okay?」

This is my second day staying out.

「You don't mind it don't you…After all, nobody's at Yoshida-kun's

house…!」

…As expected, she knows about me too!

「Eh, what? Yoshida-kun's living alone?!」

Natou-senpai asked in surprise…

「Rather than living alone…that's how it is, or rather…」
「…What's that?!」
「Disappearance…!」

I answered honestly .

「My mother and father divorced…my mother left the house and my father disappeared…!」

I spent three years of my middle school in a dormitory of the all boys school in the middle of the mountain…
Then, when I came back…that's the state.

My father is overworking on the company he's placed in and he's troubled as he's sandwiched between the human relationship of the boss and subordinate.
On top of that, his relation with my mother worsened too…
My mother determined the divorce at the same time my high school was decided…
I…since I picked a school which I can commute from home without trouble, I stayed in the house.
I wasn't able to forgive such a mother leaving the house at such a time…
But…those cornered father in a dash…!

April 3…At the day of the high school entrance ceremony.
My father left a note saying「…I'll be going somewhere far away. I'm very sorry」on his desk on the company and hadn't returned…
He didn't leave any message in the house…
I was worried for the first week but…after two weeks had passed, the feeling of nobody will come becomes stronger…
Well, my father's company still treats it as a temporary retirement… so they're leaving the bankbooks in the hosue.

When the time comes, I'll just sell the house…
At least, I can live until I graduate…

「What, aren't you the same as me…!?」

Natou-senpai smiled at me…!

「I'm the same as you! My father's missing. Mama got killed…」

…S-Senpai?

「I'm the same…I was abandoned by my parents. If Minaho didn't pick me up, I might've died cruelly without even going out of the Indian settlement…!」

Margo-san said.

「…Sleep while being embraced by me tonight okay?」

Natou-senpai embraced me tightly…
Different from Yukino…it's a soft and warm body…!

「…It's fine to have sex too but don't get Nei pregnant okay?!」

Yuzuki-sensei said while starting the engine of the car…

「Why?! I want to have a child sooner though!!」

Senpai complains at Sensei…!

「You forgot the rule?…You'll be released when you give birth…!」

…That's right.
『Yuzuki-sensei's toys』 have that kind of rule.

「…That's troubling!! I want to play with Maru-chan a lot…!」
「Me too. That's why, don't get pregnant…Nei!」

Margo-san gently spoke to Natou-senpai.

「Got it…I'll do that. Yooshida-chan, I can't get pregnant immediately so sorry…!!」

…No, even if you apologize.
…Rather than that.

「…Sensei?!」
「…What is it, Yoshida-kun?」

She looks at me on the rearview mirror while driving.

「…If they got pregnant and give birth, they'll retire as『Sensei's toy』won't they…?!」
「That's right, I'm not interested on a woman who gives birth to a child…I have them resign」
「But…Sensei's always inducing Yukino to get pregnant all the time though?!」
「…Something strange with that? Anything odd?」
「Because…Yukino's sensei's…『Seventh Toy』isn't she?!!」

Sensei bursts into laughter…!
Margo-san too…Natou-senpai laughed too…!

…Eh?!!

「…No way, You still seriously think that Yoshida-chan?!」
「…No, you can say that it's such an outstanding talent for him to be this far in a sense!!」

Eh…Margo-san?!
Eh…Natou-senpai?!

Sensei informs me through the mirror while laughing

「…Didn't I tell you earlier?…I don't care about Shirasaka-san. I only think of her as a boring woman…!」

…Then, why Yukino?!!

「…The one I'm interested in from the beginning is you alone, Yoshida-kun!」

…M-Me?!

「Shirasaka-san is just a bait to invite you in…」

The devil's lips distorts in the mirror…

「…You're my 『Seventh Toy』…!」

◇ ◇ ◇

With the car facing towards the mansion…Yuzuki-sensei said this.

「Have you eaten a wild cucumber? I did…Its shape is distorted, crocked, it doesn't taste delicious. God planned that the living beings he made are perfect. That's why, even that kind of cucumber, when grown in a correct environment, give it with proper amount of water and fertilizer, it'll grow properly…and the taste will be better. But, in the wild world…the correct environment, as long as human hands doesn't enter it, it'll be normal to be distorted, crocked, and tastes bad. I think that's more natural…!」

The green minivan runs in the night town.

「You see…I hate most of the students in our school. All of those children are cucumbers brought up carefully in the greenhouse. Their shape is uniform, they look clean, and the taste is all right too…but that's not interesting for me. I love children like you. Distorted, crocked, a child out of order…! Children like you are much more natural, wild, and rough…it's fascinating!」
「*Born Be Wild*?」

Margo-san asked Sensei…

「Right…the English word "Wild" includes the meaning of all of it. Rough, violent, coarse, wild…!」

I don't get it well.
Natou-senpai's sitting on her seat…

Before long…the car arrived at Sensei's mansion.
Just like yesterday, Katsuko-san and the butler met us…
It's already past midnight…a little less than 1 o'clock.

「Welcome back, I've prepared the meal!!」

Katsuko-san's lively as ever.

Everyone ate late dinner in the dining room…
The European food Katsuko-san prepared is deliciou.
The soup and bread(!), salad and meat…
Speaking of which, it's a proper meal after a long time.
After my mother left the house and my father disappeared, I didn't eat something satisfactory every day…
Sweetened bun…or cup noodles…beef bowl or hamburger…

Sensei spoke to Katsuko-san while the coffee is poured after meal.

「Katsuko…was there any movements? Were you able to record it?」
「Yes…I've done everything Ojou-sama ordered!」

Katsuko-san smiled…!

「…Then give the report」

Katsuko-san opened the laptop on the corner of the room and reads the contents that's projected on the monitor aloud.

「…10:19 I've delivered Yukino-sama to her house. We entered the entrance of the house with Iwakura-sama and talked to Yukino-sama's mother and little sister. The contents of the conversation is 『We had Yukino-sama help with the work of the student coundil today』 and 『Shirasaka-sama had helped Iwakura-sama bring back the documents from her house however, Shirasaka-sama's condition turned worse in the evening so she was staying at Iwakura-sama's house until now』 those are the two points. I was called as Iwakura-san's housemaid!」

Haa…that's the lie they made up.

「…Shirasaka-san didn't say anything strange didn't she?」
「It's okay. I'm with them…Yukino can no longer go against me!」

Yukino mentally surrendered to Katsuko-san.
Even if she resist, her body remembers the fear…!

「…Continue the report」

「At 10:32, Iwakura-sama withdew from Shirasaka house. Iwakura-sama returned by taxi and I continued monitoring. Until 10:50, Yukino-sama takes supper, and a bath afterwards. She retired to her own room at 11:00 and called Endou-sama…!」

Yukino called Endou after she washed her body in bath.
It must be hard to call with her dirty body.

「Ah, during the bath, Yukino-sama used the syringe handed by Iwakura-sama to wash her vagina…By herself」

Ah…She did that.
Pouring in water on her vagina with that huge syringe…
Even though it has no such effects of hindering pregnancy…

「You took a photo of it?」
「I'm very sorry, I have yet to set the hidden cameras for today…!」
「It can't be helped…let's put that to pending」
「…Yes, certainly」

Hey…Sensei's going to put cameras even in Yukino's home?
Or rather…since it's Katsuko-san, she might've already put wiretaps.

「Then…were you able to record the conversation of Shirasaka-san and Endou-kun?」
「Yes…perfectly!」
「…Let me hear it」

Katsuko-san operates the laptop…!
I hear their exchange over the phone on the speaker!!

『…Hello, Kenji?』
『What the hell, what happened?…I even called you multiple times after the club activities was over!』
『…I-I'm sorry. Mama came back from the province today so our family ate meal outside, I wasn't able to answer the phone…』

Yukino lied to Endou again.
Even though she actually had sex with me all this time…

『The hell…Well fine. Unlike last night, Yukino properly called me so okay…I forgive you!』
『…Sorry, Kenji』
『No, I don't mind it that much…rather than that, because the practice tomorrow will end by 4:00…!』
『U-Un…I get it. I'll return to my home and change clothes!』
『I'll bring some civilian clothes tomorrow too…I'll change on a toilet somewhere and then let's go out somewhere!』
『Right, let's do that…where should we go?』
『How about the port? There's a new fashion mall there?!』
『Got it, let's go there! I'll go wherever Kenji wants to go!』
『…Yukino, what's wrong?』
『…Eh, what?!』
『You're being strange…it feels that you're too hyped?…』
『…Is that so?!』
『That's right…you are…』
『…W-What?!』
『Aren't you minding Yoshida-kun too much?!』

…A moment of silence.

『…Y-Yoshida-kun?!…What's with Yoshida-kun?』
『Look, you're really worrying about him…!』
『…I'm not!!』
『You don't' need to hide it…I won't ever be suspended from the school or leave the baseball club even if I get found out that I hit Yoshida in the rooftop…!』

…Endou!
…Are you an idiot?!
…Are you a fool?!

『…In the class, the serious people are making a racket. That's not my fault! That's because Yoshida's picking a fight…that's why I hit him! Rather, I'm the victim here…!』

…Endo.
…I'll kill you.
…Or rather, die. Commit suicide.

『…But, Kenji hit Yoshida-kun…wasn't he injured?』

『That kind of injury won't even matter! In the first place there's no evidence that he hit me…at words, even if Yoshida reports the school I'll be able to feign ignorance to the very last!』
『…I wonder?』
『That's right! Yoshida has no friends at all…no one will trust whatever he says! If you want, I can have someone arrange an alibi for me, and use that! I can just have someone testify that I'm somewhere else when Yoshida was hit!』

Endou…you're making a fool of the world too much

『…But, if ever they had an evidence?』
『There's no way they'll have one, something like a hidden camera on the rooftop…!』

No…there's one.
A hidden camera on the rooftop.

『Y-Yuzuki-sensei's aiming at us! If it's sensei, she might use Yoshida-kun's testimony to work on disposing of Kenji! That person's scary, I don't know what she's planning to do!!!』

That's…Yukino's sorrowful appeal…
…However.
Her real intention doesn't reach Endou…!!

『Really, that teacher's so annoying…!!』
『…That person, definitely…will do something to us…!!』
『Got it…I'll do something about it!』
『…Kenji?!』
『You don't need to worry that much…My father's known as a celebrity in this town. He knows the face of the board of education and he's also an acquaintance of a famous lawyer and police… Also, my uncle's a city councilor, he knows the director of our school so it's easy to apply pressure on a young teacher like Yuzuki-sensei!』 2
『…But』
『Even Yuzuki-sensei won't think of doing something where she can lose her job as a teacher! If ever she has a material to threaten us, we're friends with the board of education and we can just denounce Yuzuki-sensei!』
『But…if…if ever for arguments sake that there's a video of you

hitting Yoshida-kun…if that ever comes out, won't the baseball club be unable to participate in the summer meet?!』
『I told you it's fine…unless it's recognized here…there's no way it would go around. In the first place, as long as the violence of a member of the baseball club doesn't result in death, it won't matter that much. …Did you know? Every year, we make a report on the Japan High School Baseball Federation secretly after the summer meet, there's quite a lot of cases about make believe foreign games for three months.[3] The school and the Japan High School Baseball Federation doesn't do something trivial as suspencion, they don't seem to be insulted on the net.[4] It's not the time where the responsibility is called for the whole forever…!』
『…Then, even if Kenji got punished for your case with Yoshida-kun the baseball club can still take parti in the meet?』
『Isn't that obvious?! There's not even a single percent on that chance! Don't even underestimate the power of Endou house』[5]」
『…I-Is that so?!!』

…Endou laughed!!
…Yukino

『…Hey , Yukino. Are you crying?』

…Yukino cried.

She has already lost her virginity…
She accepted semen inside her vagina again and again…
She has declared 『There's no problem at all』 to Endou…
She was raped thoroughly…her body was dirtied…

I can hear Yukino's sobbing voice…

『…S-Sorry. I didn't think that Yukino worried about it that much…!!』

Endou…you're an idiot.
You're a genuine idiot.

Yukino's virginity won't return!!

『…Kenji…I love you. I love you Kenji…!!』

『Y-Yeah…I love you too Yukino…!!!』
『I love you , I love you, I love you very much, okay…!!!』
『Me too, Yukino…Let's play with all our heart tomorrow okay?!!』
『…Un』

…Then, the recording ended

「Now then, what would you do, Yoshida-kun?!」

Yuzuki-sensei looks at me seemingly happy…

「Should we hear what Shirasaka-san has to say in silence after this…?!」

---

1. This is written in English ↩
2. Oh Endou, you don't know anything ↩
3. ……知らないか？毎年、夏の大会が終わった後にこっそり高野連に報告して、対外試合三ヶ月自粛とかでテキトーに誤魔化してるってケース……結構多いんだぜ ↩
4. 学校も高野連も、あんまりつまんないことで出場停止処分にするのは、ネットとかで叩かれるからやりたくないみたいだし。 ↩
5. lol, what house? ↩

30. Yukino's resistance

Err…what will happen from now on…?
Stretching out in the bed…my face is being wrape din Natou-senpai's plump breast right now…!

A bigger breast than Yukino…No bra under her pajamas…!!!
I can feel Natou-senpai's nipples touching my cheek…!
By the way, she's only wearing the top pajama.
Down there is nopan.
In english, *NO Panties*

According to Senpai 「Sleeping without taking off your panties isn't hygenic!」…What the hell is that?
That's why…I was also forced to not wear my underwear too.
…Yep. Right now…Natou-senpai and I are embracing each other lying down in the bed naked down there…!
My face is buried under her breasts…and Natou-senpai's beautiful face is in front of me…!
When I look closer, she looks really beautiful…!
I think Natou-senpai's a matchless beauty…!!
A sweet sigh hits my face every time she exhales…!

This might be heaven in some meaning!

But, the problems is…Natou-senpai's hugging my face like a pillow and is cutely breathing asleep.
Senpai said…「I'm sleepy so I'll sleep, good night!…」and went to the dreamland after several seconds.
…Boo-hoo

To further explain my situation…on my back is Margo-san sleeping on her pajamas too…
This one's naked on her lower part!
Margo-san's flexible chest that's trained like rubber is hitting the back of my head…!
This is also another wonderful feeling…but…!
Unfortunately…Margo-san is also sleeping…!
Her arm is around my neck…in a choke sleeper[1] pose!!

…I-It hurts.
…H-Help me!!

My head is being gently embraced by Natou-senpai…and my neck is being constricted by Margo-san…!!
In some meaning, I'm sleeping with two beauties but…I-Ill die…!
If this continues…I'll die!!

Aah…Natou-senpai said「The three of us sleep together today!」so I just followed unintentionally…I was a fool…!!

「…Father」

Then, Natou-senpai sleeptalked.

「…Mama」

And Margo-san quietly muttered…

「…Gugugu…It hurts…help me…!!」

With my trachea crushed…I can't raise my voice!!

…I-It's hell. It's a hell closest to heaven…!!!

…I fainted soon after that.

◇ ◇ ◇

「…Good morning!…Please wake up!!」

…W-Who?
…Katsuko-san?

When I open my eyes…I'm alone on top of the bed.
…Huh?

「…Nei-sama and Margo-sama already woke up ahead!!」

Katsuko-san dressed on her maid uniform informs me.
She came to wake me up.

「Ah…it seems so」

Looking at the clock…it's 7:20
I can reach the school from Sensei's mansion in five minutes by car…

「…Yoshida-sama's energetic this early in the morning!」

…Eh?!

Katsuko-san is looking at…my penis greeting 『Good morning』…!

「…It looks so delicious!」

…Katsuko-san?
Then, Natou-senpai got out of the shower…!
…Naked!!
It's my first time seeing Natou-senpai naked…!!
Suggee…Naisu puroposhon!![2]
She's big breasted but it's not sagging…the nipples are facing the top!
Her waist is firm…but her ass is round and elastic…!!
Katsuko-san's naked body is too sexual but, Natou-senpai's naked body is artistic…
The difference can be called a nude photograph from a photogravure from an American men's magazine and a nude art from a well known photographer. [3]

「…Morning Yoshida-chan! I need to hurry up this morning. I want to lick your dick but I'll leave that for next time okay?!!」

The beautiful naked body says on the room next to mine…

…E-Eh?! N-Natou-senpai??

Next is Margo-san coming from the shower too…!
As expected, the two of them…t-took shower naked, together???!!
Margo-san's naked body is perfectly like an athlete's naked body.
There's no unneeded meat at all…
The muscles are tight but…it's beautiful.
Not a martial artist but an athlete's body…

「…Morning. I've got morning training too…so I'll do the sucking next time possible…!」

…W-W-W-W-W-What?!

The trained naked body also disappeared towards the next room.
Katsuko-san in front of me smiled blooming…!

「Then…Katsuko will be taking the penis this morning!!」

…W-wait a moment Katsuko-san?!!!
…Ah, Uwawawawa!!!

The erect penis got inside Katsuko-san's mouth…!!
H-Her mouth is stoking!!

「Nfufu…I'll be licking it!!」

Katsuko-san licks the glans with her red tongue while looking up at my face!!
She licked up and down and her tongue crawled on my balls…!!

…So good!

「…I don't mind if you came immediately! Inside Katsuko's lewd mouth…I'll suck Yoshida-sama, please let it out with all your might…make me drink it…Make Katsuko drink it～!!!」

Juppojuppo, her lips stimulates my penis…!!!
She's rubbing my penis with her hand while sucking out the glans!!
…Aaaaa!!
…No goooooodd!

…Dokun, dokun, dokun!!

The white semen…gushed inside Katsuko-san's mouth as the first thing in this morning…!!
Katsuko-san smiled while still holding my penis in her mouth…!!
When the ejaculation ended, she opened her mouth wide…and showed me a large amount of semen on her tongue.
Then her cheeks made a chewing sound…then she drank the semen…!!

「…Delicious!! Thank you very much! I finally was able to drink Yoshida-sama's semen!!」

…No
…I'm the one who should say thanks here.

「Ah, please wait. I'll be cleaning it right now…!」

Saying that, Katsuko-san gulped the glans once again…
She sucked the remaining semen in the urethra…

「Nfufu…then, Yoshida-sama, please take a shower! I'll be making preparations for breakfast!」

Katsuko-san separates her tongue from my penis before it rise again…

◇ ◇ ◇

Breakfast…it's only me and Katsuko-san.
The bread and the scrambled egg salad…are both delicious.

「…Where's Sensei?」

Katsuko-san answered while pouring in the tea.

「Ojou-sama already went to the school by car earlier!」

…Eh, already ?!

「I've ben told to have Yoshida-sama arrive at the school on the last minute」
「…On the last minute?」
「…That's right!」

Uun. Since it's Yuzuki-sensei, she must have some kind of plan…
Doesn't matter…If I go to the classroom too early, I might just get in a fight with Endou again…
But…How do I go to school?
I know most of the way but…just how far would it be on walking?

「I'll be sending off Yoshida-sama today…!」
「Eh, Katsuko-san?!」
「…Yes!」

Then that means…Benz?
I don't have the social position to arrive at school on Benz…
If I get seen by my classmates, what kind of excuse shall I make?
…Oh well.
I don't have any one close to me though…

…Just when I thought of it!!!

「…Katsuko-san, what's this?」

…In front of the mansion fifteen minutes later.
Katsuko-san is wearing a two tone leather biking suit with colors red and white…
She prepared two helmets…
And in front of Katsuko-san is a…big mechanical looking machine!
Eh…Isn't the engine protruding sideways?!

「It's my beloved car! BMW's R1200GS Adventure!」

…A-Are we riding such a huge bike…Katsuko-san?!

「Yes! Please put on your helmet!!」

…I-I'm going to ride this?!

「…Are you worrying about Katsuko's driving?」
「N-No…I'll get in! Please let me!」

Katsuko-san smiled.

「…I thought that Yoshida-sama will say that!」

…Haa.
I'll go to school with this, that's amazing…
I'm not driving it myself though…

Katsuko-san sits on the motorcycle ahead…
Then I followed…

「…Please hold on to me tight! I don't mind if you massage my breasts from the back!」

…Katsuko-san says so.
The big motor has a very high position of seat…I won't fall off…
For the time being, let's have our arms coil around Katsuko-san's thin waist…

「…Cling to me harder!」
「…L-Like this?!」
「…Yes!」

Katsuko-san starts the engine!
The vibration from the strong power is transmitted to my crotch!

「…Let's go!!」

…Immediate takeoff!!
…Rapid acceperation!!!
…And, we became the wind…!!

……!!

「…Haa, haa, haa, haa!!」

I wiped my seat while breathing heavily…
My heart's beating like a drum…
I-I thought I would die…
…At least eight times.

「…We arrived!」

I'm still clinging to Katsuko-san's delicate back…

「…Where's this?」

It's an unknown location…When I looked on the other side, it's the east side of the school building, I think those the club rooms…

「It's the side entrance for the school's staff that's usually not used! This has the shortest distance from the mansion」
「…O-Oh, I-is that so?!」

Somehow…I feel that we went into thin, zigzagged and updown roads with a violent speed though.

「…Yoshida-sama, are you okay?!」

Katsuko-san looks at me anxiously.

「…I-I'm fine.」

…I'm alive.
…At least I'm alive.

「K-katsuko-san, you should follow the legal speed for the time being! The legal speed! How many times have you ignored it?!」
「…Approximately two times!」
「…It's seven times!!!」
「I sincerely apologize Yoshida-sama…I don't have a Japanese driver's license…!」
「…What?」
「I got my driver's license in Canada…Speaking of which, Japan's traffic rules is quite complex! I don't get it well…!!!」

Wait wait…There's-no-way-that-is-the-case!
In the first place, weren't you able to drive a car normally last night!?!!!

But…Katsuko-san's smiling…!!
…Haa.
I've learned the terror of a 『Crime Organization』 this late…

「it's fine…the road is a private land」
「…Private land?」
「Yes…This side gate until the mansion is Yuzuki-house's land! There won't be any problems even if I drive a motorcycle without a license!」

J-Just what is Yuzuki-sensei?! 4

「Oh right…Yoshida-sama, take this!」

Katsuko-san took a package from the horizontal tooling box of the motorcycle.

「Eh…Todoay's Saturday so the Lunch…?!」
「…Please eat it along with Nei-san!」

「…Natou-senpai?」
「Yes…she'll surely come to Yoshida-sama!」

I don't get it but…I just took in the wrapped food.

「Then…please take care!!」
◇　◇　◇
The start chime sounds…!
I jumped into the classroom on the very last minute just as Yuzuki-sensei instructed.
And the eyes in there are…!!

「…Kenji, my lil sis got angry at me! 『Onee-chan's a bully』 she said! It's so funny…ahahaha!!」

…An ugly scenery.

「…What was that, you're so helpless Yukino」
「…Ehehe」

…Yukino's having a pleasant chat with Endou.
…She's snuggling up with Endou.
…Her right hand is grasping Endou's right hand.

With the abnormal atmosphere f the two being so sticky with each other…the other classmates have their mood ruined…!

「…Morning, Yoshida-kun」

The one who called out to me is…our class rep, Yamamine-san.
It seems that she's also at loss from Yukino's strange state…

「They've been like that all this morning…Shirasaka-san and Endou-kun…!」

Endou noticed me…

「…Hey, Yoshidaaa!」

The classroom rustled instantly…
Everyone knows what Endou did to me Yesterday…
Endou brought me to the rooftop during lunch and…I didn't come

to class in the afternoon.
Then, the number of wounds in my face increased when I appeared at the end of the class…
At least…Everyone's aware that some kind of violent trouble happened.

「…W-What?!」

I glared back at Endou!
…Then!

「…Kenji, leave him be! You don't need to think about him!」

Yukino…clings to Endou and spoke in a loud voice…
She's looking at me with eyes of contempt…!

「…But,, Yukino」
「Isn't that fine? I'm here for Kenji after all!」

Saying that, Yukino embraced Endou's back…
And the classroom has voices of 「Eeh?」, 「Hey hey?!」, 「What's this?」leaking out…!

「…Okay, get in your seats!」

At such a timing…!
Yuzuki-sensei entered the classroom…!
The students who left their desk returned to their seats in panic…
Yukino too…

「…Good morning everyone…!」

Yuzuki-sensei's at her usual pace.

「…Today's the start of Golden Week. but, since you people are high school students, you will have half day classes…By the way, Shirasaka-san」

Yuzuki-sensei smiled at Yukino…

「…It seems that you've helped Iwakura-Kaichou?」

Yukino answered Sensei with challenging eyes!

「…It seems so」

The classroom were astir…

「…Eh, Why Shirasaka-san」
「…Iwakura-kaichou, isn't she that beautiful glasses girl?」

Ignoring the voices of the students, Sensei continued.

「Iwakura-san handed this over to me earlier…She told me to give it to you」

It was a…nameplate badge.
The surface is made of liquid crystal…
A huge character is displayed on it…『76』!!
That's the number of times left for me and Yukino to have sex in six days!!
……Yuzuki-sensei!
Every thing you do is nasty!

「I don't get it but, Iwakura-san told me that you have to wear this badge until you finish school…right」

Yuzuki-sensei offered the liquid crystal badge to Yukino…!
But…Yukino

「I don't want to put that on!」
「Oh, that's troubling…Iwakura-san requested me for this!」
「…I don't have any reason to wear that!」

Yukino glares at Sensei.
The female teacher laughed.

「Is that so?…Then, I'll be holding this for the time being!」

Sensei put away the liquid crystal badge…

「Now then, I'm a bit busy for today so I'll end the homeroom earlier today…」

Sensei's eyes looked at Endou.

「There seems to be a serious violence happening in the campus…a child from athlete's club seems to be concerned. He's being called by the principal for that matter…!」

Endou's face got stiff!
Yukino's glaring at Sensei with hatred!!

「Well…I don't think you people are related to it…well, I think you'd all know the details by the end of the class so I'm just telling you that for now!」

Ufufufu, Sensei left the classroom with a smile on her face.

「…What was that?」
「…Isn't the violence incident Endou and Yoshida?」
「…Did Yoshida report the teachers?!」
「…Isn't that dangerous?」
「…Won't he be kicked out of the baseball club?!!」

The classroom buzzed in a dash…!!
Endou and Yukino looks at me…!
With eyes of anger and hatred…!

「Hey, quiet everyone!!」

Unable to stand it…Yamamine-san hushed the class with a loud voice…
At that time…!
The classroom's door opened!!
Who entered is…the first lesson's teacher…not?!!

「…Yoshida-chan, you're here?!」

Natou-senpai's the one who entered!!
The beautiful fallen angel on blond hair and blue contacts…why's she here?
Natou-senpai's a second year! A repeater!!

The chole classroom's astir from the sudden visit of a Senpai!
The blue eyes and blond hair has quite an impact but…anyway,

Natou-senpai's a beauty. A beauty that's not on an ordinary level…

「…She's amazingly beautiful!」
「…C-Cute!」
「…But, she's a delinquent?!」
「…Eh, I thought she's a performer?!」

Why did such a beauty come to meet me…furthermore, before the first lesson!!

「Ah,, you're there…Let's skip classes! It's already golden week!」

No…High school students still have classes on Saturday though…
After that…Natou-senpai looked around the class…

「…Shirasaka Yukino, where's she?!」

The class's eyes gathered at Yukino.
Senpai looked at Yukino, then laughed.

「The hell…she's not that cute!」

Yukino trembled from those words…
The blond senpai in front of her…even if she says those words at Yukino, she's an ultimate beauty that it won't be a sarcasm.

---

1. ↩
2. Amazing, Nice proportion!! ↩
3. Basically, Katsuko is for playboy and Nei-san is for museums ↩
4. Well, She's the leader of Kuromori House. ↩

31. Flashing Nei!

「W-what's with you?」

Yukino glared at Natou-senpai!
But, Senpai laughed and showed a composed expression.

「You don't need to make such a scary face! That's so uncute! Also, I'm your senpai! I'm a second year pretty much! Why don't you speak a bit more politely?!」

…Uwa.
…It's completely taken over by Natou-senpai!

「Well, I already memorized your face so it's okay for now! I'm quite disappointed that you're much ugly than what I heard but I originally don't care about you![1]」

「…Guh!」 Yukino falters…!
She's glaring at Narou-senpai with eyes of intense hostility.
There must have never been a girl of the same age group as Yukino who's been negative with her in her life.
In addition to that…from a girl that's much more beautiful than herself…!
But…Senpai completely ignored Yukino's hostility!

「By the way…Who's Endou Kenji?」

Yukino and Endou…!
With the couple's name coming out of Natou-senpai's mmouth, the classroom has become noisy…

「…I'm asking, where's he?! Can't anyone point him out for me?!… On three, One! Two! Three…Point!」

……!
With Senpai's command, approximately ten schoolboys pointed at Endou all at once!!
The eyes of the classroom is concentrated at Endou…!

「…W-What is it?! Do you need anything from me?!」

Endou's spooked…!
He was able to put up a front somehow though…!!

「…Hmm. So you're Endou-chan…!」

The beautiful blond girl looked at Endou with a suggestive look…

「You see…You beat up Yoshida-chan the day before yesterday and during the lunch yesterday on the rooftop right?…」

……!!
Natou-senpai suddenly gets on the point!
A huge earthquake shakes the whole classroom!

…Endou's startled…
…Yukino's startled…!

The small whispers from the students spread in the room!!

「…As expected!」
「…What? Endou-kun did something to Yoshida-kun?!」
「…Shirasaka-san's two timing?」
「…There's no way that is!」
「…If Yoshida clings to Shirasaka-san, Endou would go berserk right?」
「…Certainly, Yoshida-kun always looks at Shirasaka-san with unpleasant eyes after all…」
「…But, he's only looking. He didn't chase her nor call out to her」
「…Isn't it just too much to hit him suddenly?」
「…Eh? So Endou-kun's a violent type of person」
「…Un, I'm a bit disillusioned!」
「…Or rather, isn't Endou a member of baseball club?!」
「…He's boasting about being a regular some time ago!」
「…Then won't this become a violence incident?!」
「…Yoshida-kun still has bruises left on his face…!」
「…It won't make such a bruise if he wasn't hit hard like that won't he?」
「…If Yoshida appeals to the baseball club or Japan High School baseball Federation, won't it be dangerous to the baseball club?!」

「…It'll happen soon.」
「…They won't be able to participate the summer meet…!」

While the whole class are making remarks all they want…Natou-senpai stares at Endou with her big blue eyes.
A thin smile is floating on her face…!!

「…I wonder?! I don't remember it at all!!」

Endou denies Senpai's words directly!!
While having sweat in his forehead…!!

「…Hmm, Do you really think it'll work somehow if you try to lie up like that?!」

The blonde Senpai crossed her arms and looked at Endou!

「I told you, I don't know!…Didn't Yoshida just fall by himself?! That should be, right Yoshidaa!!」

Endou threatens me with a loud voice…!
He's glaring at me…!
But…Sadly, I'm not the Yoshida yesterday…!
Today's' me is the『Yoshida-chan who beat up a hoodlum with a leather bag clogged up with sand』!

「Endou-chan's saying that but…Yoshida-chan, what about you?!」

Natou-senpai looks at me with eyes of expectation…!
Yukino looks at me!
Those aren't eyes saying 『Don't say it』!
These are 『If you say it I won't forgive you』eyes of hostility!
…Then it can't be helped.

「…Yes, I got hit by Endou!」

…The entire classroom became noisy!!
Endou chews his molars!
Yukino looked down and is at her wits' end…!

「…T-That's a lie!! That guy's lying!」

Endou shouted!!

「In the first place, who are you!! An acquaintance of Yoshida?! You're just pairing up with Yoshida to entrap me right?!!! That must be, it should be!!」

Endou who lost his cool shouts and points at Natou-senpai…!!
The blond senpai laughed bloomingly…!

「Ah, I see…You're just a new guy in this school after all! It can't be helped that you don't know me!!」

Senpai goes up the platform and looked around the classroom…!

「…Okay, who knows me?!!」

A thin hand raises up…!
…Yamamine-san!!
A tall bob-cut black haired…slit eyed sports beauty!!

「…Oh , do you know me?」

Yamamine-san answered.

「I heard it from my senpai from the club…You're a second year, Natou Nei, aren't you?」

At that moment…a wave of surprise spread out from the member of the athletics club!!

「…Ah, I heard it too!」
「…Speaking of which, I heard it from my senpai from the club too!!」
「…Eh, I thought that was just a rumor?!」
「…S-She really existed!」
「…Even though she's such a beauty…?」
「…Eh, isn't she such a famous delinquent? I heard that she set the Kendo grounds before…?」
「…I heard that she's the boss of the compensated dating…?!」
「…I heard that she stabbed a yakuza to death?!」
「…With such a beauty, no way?!」
「…But, she's blond…she must've dyed it…」

「…She's also wearing a blue contact lens…!!」

Senpai hears the whispers and smiled satisfied.

「…That"s right! I'm the worst delinquent in this school, Natou Nei-chan!!」

…The classroom became quiet in an instant.
Senpai…introduced herself quite indifferently after all…!
W-What an airhead…No, a bright and sociable person!!

「…T-Then why is such a delinquent senpai is poking her nose to Yoshida and my problem?! I feel that there's a lot of misunderstanding here, this case is Yoshida and my problem only… Senpai's not related at all!」

Endou tries to refuse Natou-senpai's intervention logically.
…But you see.
This blond beauty senpai…won't have that kind of reason go through her…

「…Sorry but, I'm related here, I'm the one who decides, not you!」

…Look.
Natou-senpai's smiling face, turned to anger…!
The entire classroom froze instantly!!

「…The unrelated are unrelated! Get out already!! This is the first year's classroom! Someone go and call Sensei! It's fine if you call Yuzuki-sensei! It doesn't matter who it is!! Hurry up and call someone!」

Endou's…attacked with fear from his spine, and spoke loudly and forcibly!!
…There he goes, he snapped off…!
In the end, he's just a obochan who's' pampered since childhood…!
His boiling point is really low.
The members of the class are also astonished…
Their favor for Endou is dropping rapidly!
Kobayashi and Omiya goes behind Endou sneakingly.

「…Hey, Endou…back down」
「…That's right, you might not want to anger her that much!」

Endou turned towards the two…

「Huh??! What the hell is this woman?!」

Endou's still on berserk…!

「…Endou, you don't know?」
「…Recently, there's two blonde delinquents that goes on hunting in the neighborhood」
「…Those delinquents even beat down Yakuza-san」
「…The blond duo of a scared face foreign and Japanese girl」
「…Their modus is to have them lower their guard with the beautiful Japanese girl and have the macho foreign girl beat them out with some strange martial arts……」

Omiya…He just said Margo-san as a macho…
You'll get half-killed later…I think!
Get ready to have your bones broken…!

「…What the hell's that?! There's really that kind of people?!」

Endou seems to be skeptical of the story of the two!

「…There's one! I'm telling the truth!」
「…Because, we」
「…Were beaten by them yesterday!!」
「…Our senpai was sent to the local hospital!」
「…Or rather, she sprinkled gasoline on Senpai's car and set it on fire!」
「…The car flared up and it exploded!!」
「…Last night, there's three people! A man with a black pro-wrestler mask!」「…That's right, there's a two meter tall guy too!」
「…They had at least twenty Molotov cocktails and they threw it out!!」
「…They're so dangerous!」
「…They must be mental! They blew it away!」
「…They're devils! They're undead monster army!!」

Kobayashi, Omiya…sorry, that man's me…
They remember me from the fear but…I'm not that big.
I also only held two bottles of gasolilne…!

「Ooh, So so you're the guys last night! Sorry~ Did it hurt? Was it scary? Were you surprised?!」

…Yuzuki-sensei !
You examined Kobayashi's gang beforehand and made us attack them on purpose…!!!
She's really a devil teacher, she's thorough in all respect!!2

「…Could it be that the foreign blonde person with a wound in her face, the one named Margo-san?」

One of the boy in glasses asked Natou-senpai.
Who's he again?…He's from the astronomy club.
If I recall, his name is Sugiura.

「Err, do you know Maru-chan?!」
「Yes…My elder sister graduated from this school last year…!」
「Ah, Is that so?1」
「Uhm…You see. She told me that there's an American student who knows martial arts…」
「That's right!!」
「…Two years ago, a male teacher used violence on a schoolgirl from the chorus club and that teacher got hemiplegia…!」

…Once again, the whole classroom is wrapped in silence.
…Eh, was there an incident like that?

「That's right!…I'm a member of chorus club that time!!」

…Eh, seriously?!

「At that time, Maru-chan was really amazing! That teacher had both of his hands fractured and his internal organs ruptured, he's living on a wheel chair right now! His face and nose is caved in and his chin is pulverized…He can't talk or chew food for the rest of his life! Then after that, Maru-chan kicked that Teacher's crotch really hard so he had his testicles removed and his anus replaced with an

artificial one? Anyway, he got a body that won't be able to sexually harass anymore so everyone can have a peace of mind…!!!」

Everyone's dubmfounded…Yukino and Yamamine-san too.
Endou's not just sweating but also has runny nose…
He's completely teary eyed.

D-Did they really go that far?
T-They might've really done it.
If it's these people…!

「I also burned down the kendo grounds, it became an incident after all. Also, Maru-chan had a wound on her cheek…that's when I joined her!!」

Natou-senpai talks about it radiantly…
All of the first years are frozen…they can't move.
For the first time in their lives , they have met something really frightening…

「Err, let's go back to the story…Endou-chan?」

Natou-senpai returned her glance to Endou.

「…W-What?!」

Endou…is helplessly tremlbling!

「You're playing baseball aren't you?」

Senpai smiled.

「…If so, what would you do?」

Endou's pretending to be tough…but his whole body is sweating already.

「You see…when you get fractures…the length of the right and left foot would differ. Endou-chan has long legs so it's fine if your other leg's shorter by five centimeter's right?…」

Senpai's angelic smile gave Endou a notice of Fear!

…S-Scary!!
A person who can say those with this smile on her face…is seriously dangerous!!
Endou's…trembling in fear…!
…He's too uncool!!
Yukino stares at Endou with tears on her eyes!!

「You see, you said that I was unrelated to this incident a while ago right? That's not true at all! I like Yoshida-chan you know. Well, it's just once sided but anyway, I like him. Quite a lot…!」

The angelic smile changed to a smile of the devil!

「That's why, it can't be helped you know…You injured my cute Yoshida-chan…! There's no other choice isn't it?」

Senpai breathed in deeply, then declared to the other students!

「…For your information , Endou-kun's friends have the same offense! If ever you tried to ally yourself with Endou-chan and tried to give an unfavorable lie to the teachers about Yoshida-chan, I'll definitely punish you along with Maru-chan…okay?」

Everyone's still frozen hard.
Senpai returned to her angelic smile again.
「…Geez, don't make such a face! I'm not telling you guys to turn the tables and lie for Yoshida-chan!…I'm just asking you all to tell the truth you know when the teachers asked you! Got it?!…Will you listen to Senpai's request?!」

What is this loveliness that melts away everything…!!

「…Your response?!!」
「…Y-Yes!!」

Everyone except Endou and Yukino answered Natou-senpai.

「Unun, Good, looks good, looks good!!」

Senpai seems to be delighted..

「Now then, I finished my greetings with Endou-chan…Then,

should we go, Yoshida-chan?!」

Senpai looks at me laughingly…!

「Eh…W-Where?!」
「My…didn't you promise me that we'll skip school and spend time on the rooftop?!」

D-Did I?
But…the eyes of the class is…
She's such an excellent beauty and yet, Senpai is a devil in such an angelic face…anyway , they want her to get out sooner.
Those kind of eyes approaches me…!
Everyone's seems to be unable to follow Natou-senpai's high tension…!!

…Haa.
…It can't be helped.
I skipped class the day before yesterday.
I didn't attend class yesterday afternoon.
…I'm already a heading to the delinquent road.

「…Yoshida-chan, you got the 『snacks』 from Katsun right? Bring those…!」

…Katsun?
Oh, Katsuko-san?
I see, the thing I got before coming to school…
That means, it was Yuzuki-sensei's plan for me to skip classes with Senpai on the rooftop from the start.

「…Got it. Let's go!」

I took out the package from my bag and take my leave.
The whole class vomit a sigh.
However…!

「…Wait!」

Yamamine-san called out to me?

「…Y-You can't go, Yoshida-kun…You must take the class!」

When I turned around to her in surprise…
Yamamine-san stood up and lowered her head towards Natou-senpai!

「…Natou-senpai, please. Yoshida-kun's a member of this class. Please let him attend the class with everyone!!」

…Senpai's face bloomed.

「…I'm…not fond of being instructed by other people though!!」

Yamamine-san looks up and told Natou-senpai straight!!

「…Please don't involve Yoshida-kun to bad stuff! I can understand that Natou-senpai expressly came to this classroom to help Yoshida-kun from his troubles. I think that you're a good person. But…if he goes with Senpai, Yoshida-kun will become a deliniquent. He might be misunderstood by everyone in the class. That's why…please don't take Yoshida-kun…!」

…Yamamine-san.
…She's really a good girl.

Natou-senpai gently smiled towards Yamamine-san's words.
Should I say smile…or rather she walked determinedly and stood in front of Yamamine-san…?!

「…You're good!」

Senpai put her hand under Yamamine-san's chin and lifts her face…!
Yamamine-san got startled but…She let Senpai do what she want.
Senpai looks at Yamamine-san's right and left face while holding up her chin with the right hand…!
She slowly observed her eyes, frame and ski.

「…Good! Absolutely good!!」

…W-what?!

「…Err, Yamamine-chan? What's your first name?」
「…M-Megumi」

Yamamine-san is completely surprised from being touched by Senpai.

「…Megumi-chan. I quite like you!」

…L-Like?!
…Senpai, what on earth is this?????!!!

「…Your character is good too! You're gentle, courageous!! That's great!!! On top of that, you look great too!! Or rather…Isn't this quite a lucky find? You're trully good!!」
「…Uhm, Natou-san?」

Ignoring Yamamine-san's question, Senpai turned to me…!

「…Yoshida-chan, this child would be a beauty if we polish her! That Shirasaka Yukino there won't be a match! This child will change amazingly! This'll become amazing if I just get my hands on the root!!」

…W-what?
…W-what are you saying so suddenly?!

「…Anyway, her face is perfect! If we just change the makeup and her hairstyle, she'll become such a beauty! Her height is tall too, her body's slender, her legs is slender too…her chest is a bit lacking but this is an individuality! Rather, it's great that she has none! It's obvious that her sensitivity is great!!」

Senpai's rushing recklessly…!!
Is there no breaks? Does this person have any breaks?!!!

「…Megumi-chan, I've got a request!」
「…W-what?」

Yamamine-san is completely stunned.
Of course…She's being suddenly praised…!

「…Marry Yoshida-chan!」

…Ha?
…W-w-w-w-w-w-w-w-w-w-w-w-w-w-w-w-w-whaaaaaaat?!!!

「…Hey, Yoshida-chan, ask her too! There's not much girls with such beauty, kindness and guts! Say『I'll protect you forever so stay by my side』Or rather, say it already!」

…N-Natou-senpai, w-w-w-w-what are you saying?!!
Wawawawa…Yamamine-san's bright red…!!

「…Hurry up! Kneel on the ground!!」

I-I don't get it!
Anyway, I kneeled on the ground…!!

「…Sorry! Yamamine-san, I'm sorry for now!!」

Somehow…I can only speak apologies…
Anyway, I'll say sorry…

Or rather, Natou-senpai looked towards the class this time…!

「…Okay, everyone! Listen! Attention!! From today onwards, Megumi-chan is Yoshida-kun's! She's his waifu! Lawful wife! A married lady! That's why other boys shouldn't lay their hands on her okay?! I'll kill those who does!!」

…W-w-w-w-what are you saying?!
Waa…Yukino's looking!
She's glaring at me …!
…That's not it!!
…That's not how it is!!

「…Un, un! That's good, isn't it?! Megumi-chan, let's play next time okay?! I'll be teaching you how to use makeup! Oh right, I'll also give you western clothes that suits you! I'll give any clothes Megumi-chan wants! oh right, even accessories!. There's also a cute ring but…Yoshida-chan should be putting that on Megumi-chan!! Unun! Let's do that! Okay?!」

Don't say「Okay?!」!!
Everyone's hardened in different meaning since a while ago!
Yamamine-san's flustered and her face is red.
She's completely teary eyed…
Well, she's certainly cute but…

Senpai looks at me with teasing eyes.
…That's cruel. Natou-senpai.
You're doing it too much…!!

「But, Megumi-chan, don't worry…I'm only cherishing Yoshida-chan like my lil brother so I'll be the Onee-chan, I won't steal Yoshida-chan from Megumi-chan～! That's why you two can take your time getting along!!」

Yamamine-san's face is too red…ah, she cried.
Y-You made her cry, hey!
W-w-w-w-what should we do?!!!

「I see, you're so happy that you cried! Unun! Then it seems that the marriage is decided, should we go to the roof then? My cute little brother, Yoshida-chan～! Don't forget the food…!」

Senpai's really enjoying this.
Should I say that her character is bad?…
Well, everyone around Yuzuki-sensei is right that but

「Sorry…Natou-senpai's just making fun. It's just a joke」
「Eeh, I'm serious though! You're already married! You two are a couple already!!」
「…Shut up for a moment!!」

When I told Natou-senpai 「Shut up」Everyone in the class raised an 「Oooh!」voice
…That's not it!
…We don't have that kind of relationship!!

…A-Anyway…I think that everyone here won't be able to concentrate on their class when i'm here…I'll be going to the rooftop with Senpai for now Yamamine-san, I'm sorry that you had to go through this…!」

I told Yamamine-san.
Yamamine-san's covered her face with both of her hands and cried calmly!

「…Yoshida-chaaan!…That's not it right?」

Natou-senpai looks at me…!

「…What?」
「…You should say your thanks right?!」

…That's right, Yamamine-san.
…Objected Natou-senpai for my sake.
…She's the only member of the class who spoke frankly!

「…T-Thanks, Yamamine-san!!」

Yamamine-san who lowered her face while crying looks up at me slowly.
With eyes of surprise…!
Our eyes met…

「Thank you…really, thank you…!」

…I feel Yukino's eyes.
…Yukino's glaring.
…Yukino is.

---

1. 200 chaps later, this line will make sense ↩
2. Sasuga Ainz-sama ↩

32. You're 『Broken』 aren't you?

I went out of the classroom with Natou-senpai…!
We went up the stairs and to the rooftop.
When we're at the third floor, Natou-senpai suddenly stopped.
When I take a look…There's a third year walking cheerfully in the classroom…
Among them is Iwakura-kaichou.
Ah…she noticed us.
Shit…Iwakura-san's Yukino's ally so she must be having antipathy against me.
And when I was thinking about that…?!
Iwakura-san, bowed her head towards Natou-senpai…
Then, she left the scene in a hurry…!

…Could this be?

「That kid always salutes at me whenever we met…I wonder why?!」

Natou-senpai's on her usual smile…

「…Senpai, you do know Iwakura-kaichou, don't you?」
「Un, at least her face!」
「Have you talked with her?」
「…Not even once」
「Eh…Iwakura-san's the 『Fourth』 isn't she?」

…Yuzuki-sensei's 『Toy』
『First』 is Katsuko-san
『Third』 is Margo-san
『Fourth is Iwakura-kaichou』 …
Natou-senpai is the 『Fifth』

「It seems so」
「…It seems?」
「Look…that child is from a different genre isn't she?」

…Genre?

The delinquents; Margo-san and Natou-senpai and, the honor student Iwakura-san?!

「We are the exact opposites so it's better if we don't meet as much」

Saying that, Senpai walked up the stairs lightly…
I run after her.

The wind was strong on the rooftop.
But, the weather's clear.
Rather, the feeling of the breeze feels refreshing…

「Let's take a seat here! Yoshida-chan, take out the snacks Katsun made!」
「Sure sure」

I opened the parcel Katsuko-san gave me this morning…
What's inside is three French toasts and and curry bread.
Then three tea pet bottles…
Huh…Why three?

「Un, looks delicious!」
「Right」

When I was about to reach out for the curry bread…

「Oh right!」

Suddenly, Natou-senpai spoke out!

「What's wrong?」

When I asked her…Senpai took off the buttons of her blouse from the top…!!
…Eeeeeh?!
I can see her white bra…!
…Huh?
Senpai…is wearing a golden pendant?!
A crossed shape pendant head shines in between Senpai's breasts.
Natou-senpai placed her hand behind her neck and took off the pendant.

「You see, this is a very important pendant for me!」
「Ah, is that so?」

For the time being, I nodded.

「Un. Ojii-chan made it to commemorate my birth…take a look, my name's here isn't it?」

Certainly there's a 『NEI』 engraved on the surface of the cross…1

「It's true. You have this since you were born?」
「Right, this is my treasure for always…」

Natou-senpai approached the wire net of the rooftop while saying so.
…Then.
Then she threw the pendant towards the sky with all her might!!

…EEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEHHHHHHHHH?!!!!!!!!!!

The golden cross and chains flew out and shine by the early summer's sunlight…!

「Wai…Senpai?!!!!」

The pendant went beyond the wire net then fell behind the school building…!!
I run towards the wire net in a hurry.
The pendant fell on the flowerbed on the backyard!
It's the third from the right…!
I clearly confirmed where it fell!!

「…Yoshida-chan, go get it!」

Senpai ordered me strongly…!

「…Okay, I'll pick it up!」

I run towards the iron door of the rooftop then Senpai called me out again…?!

「…Wait, yoshida-chan!!」

「W-What?!」

I stopped and turned back

「…Buy me a Pingray juice on your way!」

Senpai's eyes were serious.

「…Pingray?」
「Pink grapefruit juice…they sell it on the vending machine just before the backyard!」

…aaaaaahn?!
…I don't get it but anyway, I should just buy it!

「…Got itt!!」
「…Dash! dash!」
「…I'll be back!!」

I dived through the iron door and ran!!
Dadadadada, I ran towards the first floor in a dash…!!
I passes through the corridor that leads to the backyard.

Oh…This is the pingray vending machine Senpai was talking about.
But, let's do it on the way back.
Anyway, let's look for Senpai's pendant…

I went towards the flower bed…!!
…However.

…Huh, I thought it fell towards here?

I can't see the gold pendant anywhere!!

…No way! Was it buried from the shock of the fall?

I tried to dig up the soil that became dented with my hand!
On the back of the budding grasses…
The concreate and the gap of the soil too…
I even looked around the flower bed once again…!
…It's not here.

…Wasn't it from the third from the right?!

I searched the flower bed next to it too…
I overturned the leaves…
Dug up the soil…
And the flower bed next to it too…

…I can't find it.
…What should I do?

「…Are you looking for this?」

A voice from the back…
I know this voice.
When I turned around…Margo-san on white dress and light jeans, smiled.
On her hand is the golden cross pendant of Natou-senpai.

…I'm glad.

I sat down on place weakly…
Sweat gushed out from my whole body.
Margo-san took out her phone and called someone…

「…Nei, you saw?」

Margo-san looks up the roof of the building while talking.
What's there is Natou-senpai waving her hand over the wire net.

『…I saw all of it!』

I can hear Natou-senpai's sweet voice leaking out of Margo-san's phone.

「Then…Nei, what do you think?」
『Yoshida-chan did you buy the pingray?』
「No…he came straight here and looked for the pendant. He ran with all his might!」
「Then, he passed. What about Maru-chan?」
「He also passed for me」

…P-Pass?

…What's going on?

Margo-san dusted off the mud that stuck on my pants.
Then…she told me.

「…Let's talk about the details after returning to Nei!」

◇ ◇ ◇

I went to buy the pingray on the way and…I went back to the rooftop with Margo-san.
I washed my hand on the drinking fountain.

「…Yoshida-chan, sorry bout that」

Natou-senpai holds my hand smilingly…!

「Here's the pendant And here's the pingray…!」

I don't get it but I handed those to Senpai for the time being.

「Ooh…Thanks, thanks」

Senpai put the pendant aside and hugged the pendant with both hands tightly.
Then he pressed her lips against the golden cross pendant.

As expected…that was important.
Why did she threw such a thing?!

「Hmmm…It's really helpful to use something that you treasure a lot when you test people!」

Guessing my expression, Natou-senpai explained…

…Test?
…I'm being tested…

「…Anyway, let's take a seat and eat bread while we talk?」

Margo-san suggested.
We pulled the chair and sat down…

「…It's something we agreed with Yuzuki-sensei…Whenever Sensei picks up a new member, they need to take our approval test by any means」

Margo-san explained while taking the tea pet bottle.

「…The new child won't become a member unless we give our approval!」

Natou-senpai says while munching the French toast. Of course, her drink is the pink grapefruit juice.

「Even if I say us, it's just me, Nei and Katsuko. Iwakura-san is in a special case…」

As expected, it seems that Iwakura-san has a wall between the delinquents…

「To be honest…Yuzuki-sensei fails a lot too you know! Things doesn't always as Sensei's planned」
「There will always be a miscalculation…that's why we perform a check on the new member by twofold and threefold」
「Look, I talked in the classroom about the case two years ago right? Yuzuki-sensei pulled a teacher from the music club to be a dick slave! Then that guy rampaged while Sensei's not looking!」
「During those days, the old school building is being demolished so the monitoring system is not complete.」
「Then…that guy raped schoolgirls without Yuzuki-sensei knowing…!」

…Oh, the chorus club!

「Ah, it's not me! I'm still a virgin! But I really got in danger~ Really, if Maru-chan didn't come to save me, I might've been killed…!」
「…I had no choice but to paralyze him to shut him up… If we use a hallucinogen, they can still tell the difference between reality and delusion. Everything he blurts out are all his delusion, it's to make Yuzuki-sensei unrelated…」

…I-Is that so?

…That's very terrible.

「In the end…A perverted man with savage hobbies is no good becoming our member!」
「At least…we need to make sure that it's someone we can rely on」
「Unun…Right, as expected!」
「But…Yuzuki-sensei's good at finding people with strange hobbies…」
「That person doesn't understand the good and bad qualities of human after all…」
「Un, certainly, she doesn't have the ability to judge character…」
「…Specially her eyes towards men is catastrophic!」

…U-Uhm, Natou-senpai…

「What's wrong, Yoshida-chan? Why are you so nervous?」
「…Perhaps, Yuzuki-sensei's listening to this conversation」
「Isnt' that obvious?…She's listening to what we're saying!」
「You should remember this…if you got complaints to Sensei, just do it」
「…W-Would that be fine?」
「It's fine! We're always saying this as much!」
「Well, Sensei's reflecting by herself too…」

I-Is that so?
S-She won't come here suddenly?

「It's fine, it's' fine!…Sensei's busy on other things at this time!」
「I don't think she has time to come here from our sarcasms…!」

…Then it's fine.

「By the way…We've been examining you all this time!」
「…Do you understand?」 2

Un…I get that.
Both their aim and purpose…

「Then, I want to interview you…you okay with that?」
「Ah…okay. Go on」

…Natou-senpai began her questioning.

「Then, first would be…I told you to get my pendant a while ago didn't I…? Did you think that being told suddenly is being 『Bothersome』 or 『Irritating』 …??」
「…Because, isn't that Senpai's treasured pendant?」
「But, I just threw it out suddenly?!」
「I thought that it's strange but…But, Senpai told me that it's 『An important pendant Ojii-san made』」
「…I might've been lying? Haven't you thought of that?」
「Well, I've thought of it…But」
「…But?」
「I just thought that I should just pick it up…!」
「I might've just been teasing you?!」
「If so then it can't be helped…it's not that I move my body freely, when Senpai told me to 『Get it』 then I'll go everywhere」

I answered honestly
Well, it's not that what I'm saying is so important.

「But…You ran with all your might」

Margo-san joins the interview…

「Why? There's no need for you to hurry up that much, isn't it? It's in the middle of the class, and there's not much people going to the flowerbed on the backyard right? Shouldn't you have gone down the stair slowly?」
「But…there's still the ifs. Also, it's someone's treasured stuff so I thought that I should better hurry up…!」
「Nei told you to buy a 『Pink Grapefruit Juice』 from a vending machine on the way right?…!」
「…Yes」
「…What did you think?」
「I just thought that I should just buy it…!」
「Nei told you to 『Buy it on the way』」
「But, the pendant is much more worrying…!」

Margo-san looked at Natou-senpai and nodded.

「There's no problem…Though there's an unnecessary order given,

he's not confused. He properly understood the priority and has the ability to handle it reasonably…!」
「…Un. Just as I thought!」

Natou-senpai looked at me and smiled…

「Yoshida-chan…you're『Broken』as expected!」

…B-Broken?
…Me?
…Well, certainly, I don't think that I'm complete…

「Do you remember yesterday…When you and Nei walk in the middle of the red light district and moved towards the four hoodlums?」
「…Ah, yes. I remember」

There's no way I could forget something as fearful as that…!

「Nei used her stun gun on one of the hoodlum and then…you were ordered to 『Hit him hard』weren't you?」
「…Yes」
「Then, you hit the hoodlum with the blackjack…!」

Un…The heavy response from that still remains.

「…Why did you hit the hoodlum with that weapon at that time?」

I do not understand the meaning behind Margo-san's question

「That's because…I was told to 『Hit him』 We're in an actual trouble too…!」
「You never thought that I'd come to save you? You should've seen it with the attack on the delinquents on the car in front of the station right? I will come to save whenever Nei's in trouble…you should know that there's such plan like that, right?」
「Well, I do but…but there's still the ifs…or rather, when I was told to 『Hit』by Natou-senpai, my body just reacted…!」
「Have you never thought that the hoodlum might retaliate after you hit one of them?」
「I've thought of it but…But I promised to follow Yuzuki-sensei's orders…so I prepared myself since I promised. Even if it's scary, or I

might get hurt…or at worst, die…!」
「Is that so…as expected you 『Don't value yourself』…!」

…I don't value myself?
…Me?

「『I don't care whatever happens to me』…Is your assumption in life Isn't it?」

…Is that so?

「Yoshida-chan…normal people would never be able to hit the hoodlum in that situation! Especially with such a heavy blunt weapon like blackjack.」
「…Is that so?」
「That's right! As expected, they'd think a lot of things for the moment and they'd lose the timing! There's no person like Yoshida who would really attack at the moment they're shouted with 『Hit him』! Of course, it's different on those professionals. But Yoshida-chan's a normal high school student!」 3
「…You're a bit abnormal」

No, even if you criticize me like that.
…I'm I such an abnormal?

「Then! Last night, we slept like the river(川) character, right?!」
「Ah, yes」
「…And all of us were naked down there!」

…Oh right
Only wearing pajama on top and naked down…!
Senpai and Margo-san was lewd…!

「I even pressed you against my breasts…!」
「Then my breasts hit your back…!」

Isn't Margo-san strangling me?!

「Why did you not do anything in that kind of situation?!」

…Eh?
…W-what

「Yuzuki-sensei told you right?… 『It's fine to have sex with them but don't get them pregnant』 You don't want to have sex with Nei?」
「I'm I that unattractive?!」

…Eeeeh?!

「…No , because, Natou-senpai said that 『I'm feeling sleepy so I'll sleep』 Then you slept…」
「I was awake that time!」
「Me too, I just pretended to be asleep」

…S-Seriously?!

「If you were just a simple perverted man…then you should've molested us while we're asleep. Your hands were free after all…!」

…No, that's right but.

「Have you never thought of massaging our breasts or touching our asses? Or even sneak a kiss…!」
「No , I thought of it but…!」
「Then, why did you not…?!」

…Err
…That's

「I-I thought that I might be hated…」
「…Eh?」
「…Natou-senpai and Margo-san too…」

I spoke honestly.
Senpai and Margo-san looked at each other.

「That's why…you're 『broken』」

Margo-san spoke calmly.

「What did you do to the girl named Shirasaka Yukino?」

…Yukino?
…Me?

「You stole her virginity and raped her while she's restrained… furthermore, more than ten times in one night」
「Unun, that was terrible」

…Sorry
…It's twelve times all.
…Also, another one inside the car.

「Didn't you even raped her a lot of times after she got unconscious?…And yet why did you not do anything to us?」

Certainly…why did I thoroughly rape Yukino and yet I didn't lay a hand on Senpai.

「Well…Actually, if you did something, Maru-chan would just choke you…!」

Eh, that choke sleeper was serious?

「Then, you'd be disqualified as a candidate and would be erased immediately」
「That's the same on the time with the delinquent hunting…If Yoshida-chan didn't sprinkle the gasoline on the delinquent's car or escaped alone…Maru-chan would dispose you」
「Un…Yoshida-kun would be sent to the hospital along with those guys…!」

Eh…was I crossing such a dangerous bridge all this time?
I was being tested by these two all this time?

「Uhm…since when was I being examined by Senpai?!」

Natou-senpai frowned!

「Isn't that obvious that it's from the start?!! We've always been watching since Yuzuki-sensei called out to you!!」
「We can use the monitoring system of this school too…!」

…Ueh!
…F-From the very beginning?!

「Or rather…it's enough. I'll tell you everything. You were the third

male candidate!」

…Third.
Then that means, the men before me…!

「Yuzuki-sensei always wanted a male…a penis in charge as a member. There's only women after the case two years ago. There's two people Yuzuki-sensei selected and tested last year. Just like you…she invited them on a condition of raping a schoolgirl he's interested in…!」
「…T-Then what happened to that person?」

Natou-senpai leaked out a sigh…

「…The first guy is no good at all. Too stupid. As soon as Sensei and that guy were alone, he got full of himself and pushed Sensei down, Maru-chan who's hiding instantly killed him!」
「What happened to that person afterwards?」
「He transferred schools to run away! Maru-chan gave her a thorough body blow so he kept peeing blood for ten days…!」
「I intended to do it on the degree he won't die but…」

T-Too dreadful…!

「Then, the second child had the girl caught safely and it finally was about to enter the rape! That's great until there…!」
「…Why?」
「…You see, it didn't stand up」

…stand?
…Erectile Dysfunction?
…Impotence?

「According to Sensei…it's not that unusual」
「That's right! Men have quite a delicate spirit, he's filled with intention to rape the girl that was captured and yet, their penis won't stand when the moment arrives」
「Their head might be thinking of rape but their body seems to have rejected it」

…No, uhm…the two of you are beautiful when you look normally.

…Saying such things as rape and penis.
Are you people talking like this all the time?

「…On that case, Yoshida-chan's amazing!」
「Un, that was splendid」
「A virgin boy raped the virgin girl!」
「Furthermore, he even let it out inside without any hesitation」
「Normally, men would be scared!」

They'd turn back from the chills on their spine.
Uhm…Onee-sama?!

「Could it be that you were watching?!」

The two older blond beauties nodded…!

「…Of course!」
「We were watching from a monitor from a different room」
「It might be the penis that would break my hymen so I of course would watch!!」

…Is that so?!
…I-It's embarrassing!!
What's why this shame play?!!

「Anyway, Yoshida-chan's amazing! Normal men won't' be able to rape even if they're told to 『Rape』! Even if you tell them to 『Cum inside』 they won't be able to cum because of the fear of getting the girl pregnant! In the end, You came inside the virgin child ten times, right?」

Like I said, it's thirteen times…!

「There's no way you'd find such a absurd brutal kind of person like that in this world!」

…Un, I think so too.

「I thought that you might be too talented so Nei and I began to worry. You went too far. You were able to have sex for the night and it's not dependent. If ever you're just a pervert with sex mania then we just have to bind you. There's the incident with the

rampage of the music teacher before so we were being careful…!」
「It's not impossible that you'd do something after all…!」
「We told our worry to Sensei immediately. That's why Sensei introduced Nei to you…」

…That's right.
I met Natou-senpai yesterday afternoon…!

「Nei would make a judgement and if ever you were a danger, I intended to dispose if you immediately. Seriously」
「…But, that didn't happen! The Yoshida-chan I met is such a mentally normal child, I can't see anything strange at all…!」
「Next…we observed you as Katsuko-san was going to participate in your sex. As expected, your sex is reckless but…you didn't rampage. You obediently followed Katsuko-san's guidance and didn't go against it. Even when Katsuko-san invited you, You didn't force Katsuko-san to have sex…」
「That's when I noticed…Yoshida-chan's embracing Shirasaka Yukino with such a strong passion but, you can definitely control your lust」
「Katsuko-san also praised you」
「Un. Yoshida-chan , Katsuko-san drank your semen this morning right?」
「It's unusual for her to do that, right?」
「Or rather, I think it's the first time she did it herself! Doesn't she usually hate it when Sensei orders her?!」
「It seems that she likes you quite well…!」
「Then…Me and Maru-chan wanted to test Yoshida-chan in full scale…!」
「That's last night and…」
「This morning…the incident on the classroom and this pendant right now.」

Haa…I've been in the middle of a test all this time.
…I didn't notice it at all.

「Then…we reached to our conclusion」
「Yoshida-chan…You're 『Broken』!」
「Just like me, Nei, and Katsuko-san…!」
「What's different from the normal people…what's damaged…even we don't know!」

「We've always felt this all this time…!」

Senpai's blue contact lens looked at me…then she said.

「Yoshida-chan…you were thrown by your family right?」

…I!!

「…Just like us!」

---

1. It's in English alphabet ↩
2. Margo is speaking in Katakana ↩
3. Just like our favorite Kamijou "Normal High School Student" Touma ↩

33. Ties and bonds1

「Children who were abandoned by their family…strongly endures aren't they? You need your heart to be more durable…」

Natou-senpai spoke sadly

「But…A child who can endure an unbearable situation, is abnormal as expected」
「You see, humans say 『I'm lonely!』 when they're sad, say 『It hurts』 when they're in pain, 『I don't want it』 when they don't like something, they say 『I'm hungry』 when they're hungry, If they don't have someone to tell their feelings honestly…when enduring it has become normal, their hearts would be numb as expected! They'd go crazy!」
「…Then, they'll break」
「Just like you!」
「…Just like us」

Margo-san and Natou-senpai's eyes were lonely…

…Err
…I
…I see, I'm broken…

「It seems that you haven't noticed it yourself?」

Margo-san smiled wryly.

「Y-Yes…I'm sorry」

「You have three symptoms showing up…First is what you just said, 『Not refusing whatever is instructed』」
「Of course, in Yoshida-chan's case, it's only the 『People who you think you like』!」
「You calmly accept the possibility that your body or environment would be hurt in the future. You're not hesitating on the possibility that you yourself would suffer a loss…!」
「In other words you see, you don't have anything!」

I…don't have anything?

「Normal people you see, thinks of their current self, what composes him as a human as very important. That's why, they'd protect that above everything!」
「Their own dream, or their hopes for future, a beloved family, or friends…」
「But you see, Yoshida-chan doesn't have any of those!」
「…That's why you can move your body calmly in such a dangerous situation. You don't have any fear of losing the current environment or your hope for the future…」
「Yoshida-chan…you normally think that 『I don't care what happens from now on. No one would be troubled even if I die』… don't you?」
「You're nihilistic…or should I say that you're already at the farthest point of despair…」

Certainly…I live with that kind of feeling.
There's no way my life would be happy ahead of this…
Having sex with Yukino is probably my highest point in life.
And…This shouldn't continue forever.
It's special case right now and there's now way this will continue…
There's no way for me to be always lucky happy.
I'll get caught by the police eventually…or get killed by Endou.
Or maybe Yukino…
The remainder of my life will surely be miserable…
I'll just writhe and die in the depths of despair…
But, that's fine…
In exchange…I was able to embrace Yukino…!!
I have no regrets…!

「…Well, I have the same symptoms after all!」

…Natou-senpai?

「…Me too」

…Margo-san too

「You see…I can go and walk around the place in Tokyo where there's a lot of people, naked and pee there when Yuzuki-sensei

orders me! I don't care even if it's broadcasted worldwide…
Because, I don't care about my future anymore already」
「Me too…I can hurt anyone as long as Sensei orders me. I won't hesitate to kill either. Even if it's the president of America…as I don't care about my life anyway」
「If I say in reverse…I can somehow live by having Yuzuki-sensei take out various orders…!」
「Right…I don't have any will to do anything. I don't care about anything at all. There's nothing important to me at all…!」
「…Yoshida-chan's the same right?!」

…Natou-senpai smiled gently.

「No…Yoshida-kun's case is 『Break』 is much more intense than us. It shows remarkably on the second symptom…!」

Margo-san looked at me…
Like a scientist who's experimenting…

「…You don't tell a lie…to anyone 」

…Eh?!

「No…Uhm, even I can tell a lie!」

Margo-san swing her neck from my rebuttal.

「You…have you ever lied to me or Nei?」
「No, but that's…there's not a day passing yet…」
「…Usual boys would lie a lot for the first time they met me. They arrange words without their mind on it. They talk about their grandiose pride, or try to make me laugh with such a made up lie… Yoshida-chan never did that at all」
「…That's because…I don't have anything I can be proud of…Isn't my story such uninteresting?」
「You're very interesting…Everything that you're thinking shows on your face. You don't hide a thing at all」
「Really! A child who can't lie, right?!」
「Even if you tried to lie, everyone would know that it's a lie immediately…Thus your lies won't be able to pass…」
「Or rather…wouldn't Yoshida-chan's face show up 『Sorry, I

lied』 on his face if he lied?!」

Haa…Speaking of which, It might be.
Because I'm dull and bad at lying, I thought that my words don't come out immediately but…Certainly, I notice that 『This is a lie』 by myself.

「A person who doesn't lie is afraid that other people might lie to them! They don't want to hear other people's lies so in projection, they force themselves to not lie to other people!」

「…Haha」 a strange laugh leaks out of my mouth…

「…I'm a completely broken guy…!」

「That's right…You're 『Broken』 That's why, the third symptom is a problem…!」

…Third?

「Yoshida-chan, Why are you so deeply attached to Shirasaka Yukino?」

…Y-Yukino?
…Attachment?!

「You do know that it's not love isn't it?」

…That's right, this isn't love.
…I don't think that Yukino would come to like me from the beginning.

「…For example, have you imagined the two of you watching a movie, going to karaoke, or going into town to buy clothes?」

…That's.

「…I-I can't」

There's no way I can.
A man like me…going out on a date with someone like Yukino…!!

「Right? That's not serious love isn't it?!」

…That's right, an honest love can't be formed between me and Yukino.
…That's why I raped Yukino!

「…And yet, why did you rape that child?」

…???!!!

「Normal people won't rape people they love! They would wish for their happiness!…Even if that child won't go out with themselves!」

…T-That's.
…I think it is!!

「…When you heard that she had a boyfriend…Yoshida-chan wasn't able to endure it, did you? You raped her forcibly and wanted her to be yours…!」
「But…No matter how many times you rape her, she'll never become yours…」
「That's why, as the number of sexual intercourse increases, the contents escalates steadily too!」

…… ! ! ! !

「Why are you so obsessed with Shirasaka Yukino?…You should think about it at least once…!」

…That's!

「…That's, uhm…I like Yukino! That's why…!」
「…Yoshida-chan, what do you know about her? Do you know what kind of food she likes? Do you know her hobbies?…You're not interested in those right?!」

…Natou-senpai?

「…You liked her body or her face?!」

…Margo-san?

「…T-That's not it. That's not…really it, I do like Yukino! It's no good if it's not Yukino!!」
「I told you…it's called obsession…!」
「In the first place, Yoshida-chan…do you even know what's romantic love(恋) or desire(愛)?」

…I don't know.
…Probably.
…Romantic love or Desire.

「Why don't you organize your thoughts first?! Yoshida-chan, have you thought of wanting to have sex with me?」

Natou-senpai made a pose presenting her outstanding figure to me.

「…T-That's」
「Answer honestly! If I pressed saying 『I want to be embraced by Yoshida-chan!』 would you have sex with me?」
「Perhaps…I will. Natou-senpai's charming after all…!」
「Thanks!……But you see, when we're already both naked and at the time when you're about to put your penis in, then I would whine saying 『Let's stop!』…What would you do? Your penis is already rock hard, it's in a helpless state!」
「…Perhaps, I'd give up」
「…You're fine stopping sex?」
「…Yes」
「……Why？！！！」

No…You don't have to be that angry

「I'm not angry!…I'm surprised! I'm shocked!!」

…What

「Nei, you're too agitated. Yoshida-kun…what it's not Nei but『Her』, what would you do? Would you give up midway sex?」

『Her』…Shirasaka Yukino
If Yukino suddenly refused in the middle of the sex…!

「No…Perhaps, I won't be able to endure it」

I…Would still continue by force.

「Right. If it's you, you would still force to have sex no matter how much she cry or beg. You even made it this far…」

That's right…That's how I raped Yukino…

「Then, why were you able to hold back when it was Nei? Does Nei have less sex appeal than her?」
「Mu…That's rude Maru-chan!」
「Sorry sorry, that's a joke of course…!」

That's right…Natou-senpai has a stronger sex appeal than Yukino…
Blond beauty…
She has deep clear features carved that are more beautiful than Yukino…
Even her proportion is men's ideal for an 18 year old girl.
Simply comparing them as women, Natou-senpai would win against Yukino…

「…In short, you're not a sex maniac. You have it different from the pure sexual desire, you desire Shirasaka Yukino…!
「To be honest…Yoshida-chan, what would you like to happen to that girl?」

Yukino…『What do I want to happen』…?!!

「…Do you want to go out with her as a lover?」

…Impossible. That is.

「…Do you wan to marry and have a happy family with her?!」

…I can't do that!!

「…Do you want to eat lunch with her and talk happpily?」

…No good. I don't know what I should talk about with Yukino…!
…Rather than that Yukinoi would never want to talk to me!!
…There's no topic we can talk happily…!!

…I'm startled.

…I shivered.

I…can't spend daily life with Yukino…!

「That's why…you can only make contact with her in the worst form of rape.」
「Uun…Rather, since you know that rape is the worst way for communication, you went to it」

…That's no good.
…I'm the worst.

「…I thought that I wanted to continue raping Yukino for as long as possible… Of course, I think that it's impossible to be forever…I might get caught, die…I know that the end would come eventually… But…I want to continue embracing Yukino forever and ever…!! Aaah, what's with me?!! What's with me?!!!! I'm the worst…This is…!!」

I don't even understand myself…!!
Anyway…I understood that I've done something terrible to Yukino…

「I think that your heart is helplessly obsessed with 『The girl named Shirasaka Yukino』 as a compensation act of releasing all of your negative part as a human being… Why has she become the target, you're the only one who can understand that…!」

I…am obsessed with Yukino to relieve the stress in my heart…?!

「…It seems to be the only one」
「But…I really like Yukino!」
「I told you…That's not romantic love!」
「Nei…Shut up for a moment…!」

Margo-san stops Natou-senpai…

「Could I ask another thing…? You're in a sinking ship right now. A rescue boat arrives but there's only one other person that can be helped… It would be you, Nei, and 『Her』, who would you save…?!」
「…I'll save the two and I'll die」

I answered immediately…

「Sorry…My way of asking was bad. It's already certain that you will die by drowning and there's only one of the two that can be saved, who would you save?」

…I was lost in thought for ten seconds.

「…Natou-senpai. I think I want Senpai to survive…!」

That's my honest feelings.

「…Shirasaka Yukino doesn't need saving」
「…Yes」

Even I am surprised.
I'm shocked…
I…don't love Yukino…

「It seems that you understood the difference of love and obsession」

But…If so, just what are my thoughts about Yukino?!!
I…Why do I want Yukino?!
Why do I want to monopolize Yukino…!!

…My heart's beating fast
….I feel dizzy.
…I feel my stomach getting sick…!

「Calm down Yoshida-chan!…It's fine! It's not that we're persecuting Yoshida-chan…!」
「Yeah…Nei and Me…are just seeking if you have the same 『Dangerous darkness』 in your mind! And make you aware of it!」
「That's why, we now know Yoshida-chan's current state…!」
「We've passed through what you're experiencing right now…!」
「That's right, I'm Yoshida-chan's senpai! I'm your Onee-chan!」

…Natou-senpai…?!
…Margo-san…?!

「Your 『Obsession』 is another type of 『Darkness』 …」

「We also can't escape from our own 『Darkness』…!!」

…Both of them are my senpai?2

「…In my case…I'm attacked by a terrible destruction impulse multiple times every month. I can't help but to hurt someone unrelated, an unknown person…!」

Margo-san confesses with a pained expression…

「…Could that be like last night?」
「Last night was different…Last night's patrol was an irregular to check Yoshida-chan」
「…My real 『Hunger State』 isn't like that…」
「…Preventing the enemy from moving and then continuing to gradually torment them…!」
「The impulse won't stop for several hours…!」

Margo-san grips her fist with power…!
Perhaps…the cursed fist bathed in a lot of people's blood.

「This impulse can't be cancelled with just normal sports or martial arts…I don't fight with people stronger than myself. I want to torment people weaker than me…I want to do nothing but bully them…!」

Margo-san…has a dark smile.

「…You see, I want to set fire. I want to see big fires… I want to burn all!」

I recalled the burning car last night…
That's right…Natou-senpai's eyes looking at the flame were abnormal…

「…Katsuko-san is suffering from the impulse of wanting to be raped intensely by a man…!」

…Rape wish?
…Katsuko-san?

「Katsun's sexual impulse is the same as self harm…!」

「…That person thinks of sex as suicide. Forcibly raped by men repeatedly…she wants to be killed by sex…」
「Katsun…even though she's having a hard time to deal with sex…」
「She's mentally unstable, a danger…Thus Yuzuki-sensei observes Katsuko-san's state continuously」

…So that's why Katsuko-san is a maid in Sensei's house.
Actually, Sensei's the one watching over Katsuko-san…!

「Right now, 『I want to open a bakery in the future』 is the fake wish Yuzuki-sensei gave her so she's quite stable…」
「Un… if Katsun stopped making bread, she'd go mad, I'm sure…!」

…Fake wish
…A constructed hope
That's why Katsuko-san's immersing herself on making bread.

「Yuzuki-sensei herself is also carrying her own 『Sorrowful darkness』」

…Eh?

「That person has making other people unhappy as her reason for living…」
「But actually, Sensei is thinking that 『herself should be unhappy』 …」
「But, that 『Dark belief』 is being swallowed everyday…!」
「She's creates a lot of schemes every day to make herself unhappy…!」
「As a result, she has gathered children with high risk just like as who is a similar existence as herself…!」
「…Sensei's wishing for 『Destruction』! Social, human, including everything that one holds since born…!」
「But, that person's ability is too high. If she can't do 『Destruction』 anywhere…Sensei would spread out her 『Dark world』 steadily」
「…Sensei is going to change this school into 『Hell』 …!」

…That's right.

…When I first met her.
…Sensei said that!!!
『I'll make this school hell』…!!

「…Everyone of us have a psychological disorder. We can't live with a normal person. Hurting other people, making them unhappy…it'll crush one's heart」
「…Un. The dark part of your mind has to be set free! You have to We're cursed after all! We're living like vampires who victimize other people…!」
「…But, Yuzuki-sensei said that we have worth in living」
「This world has has the law of the jungle! We're born to prey on other people, raised…and as a result, we've been distorted in this way…!」
「Even we…have the right even if we victimize someone. Even demons, devils, are born and have the right to live…! That's what Sensei taught us…!」
「『You'll live as my own victim and you should live with me as your victim』…!」
「『Just like how I'm living by eating other sinless people, you should live by victimizing other people too. I'll be the one to forgive your sins. My sins will be forgiven by the devil』…!」
「That's why it's fine…I'll hit someone who's innocent once I can't endure it! I'll hit because I want to…and yet, I'll live!」
「Even me…if I'm not able to endure it anymore, I'll burn something! I'll burn everything! But I'll live! I'll keep on living…!」

…Just what are their pasts?
Perhaps it's a lot of sorrow, sadness, and hate…
Because of someone heartless…these girls have lost their choice on their way of life…
That's not just for Natou-senpai and Margo-san.
Yuzuki-sensei too, Katsuko-san too, and Iwakura-kaichou too…
…And then, me.

I…will I know their story someday?
I…will I talk about myself to these people?
…I don't know for now.

「Yoshida-chan…you're in the 『same family』 as us. You're accepted as the 『seventh』…!」

「Me too…I'll be Yoshida-chan's onee-chan!」

Still…the two senpai have accepted me for the time being…

「If ever your libido isn't enough for only just Shirasaka Yukino… you can use my body anytime…I'll meet any of your demands」
「Ah…Of course, even Onee-chan can give her virginity to you! I'll do anything!」
「If ever you want to rape another woman, just tell us…I'll make her faint and bring her to you…!」
「Geez, Maru-chan…Don't resort to violence, Yuzuki-sensei or I can just trick them to come. Katsun's there too…!」
「…In exchange, cooperate with us!」
「Un…I want us to be together and do a lot of 『Bad things』…!」
「Hurt people who're innocent, dirty their minds…to clear out the darkness in our hearts…!」
「Let's do a lot of terrible things…I'm sure it's fun!」
「Yeah, Let's be together as much as possible…!」
「…You're our 『companion』!!」

…I
…I
My answer has come out a long time ago.
I…am the same as these people…
Hurting normal people to please the darkness in my heart…
… 『Devil』

「…Best regards!」

Natou-senpai's face is wrapped in delight…!
Margo-san showed her white teeth too…!

…They're the same as me.
…I don't think this will continue for all the time.
…Still,I'd want to continue to taste the joy of hell for as long as possibile…!
Remodel the school building…
Gather the problem students…
Then…continue to bring trouble by oneself…!
Very well…I'll become one of those 『Devils』

A made 『Companions』…for the first time in my life.
…I'm glad.
…I'm really glad.

…But

Yukino…?
What would happen to her after this…?!

◇ ◇ ◇

Afterwards…I talked to Natou-senpai and Margo-san while eating the remainder of the bread.
It's not a scary talk anymore.
It's not the story of the past or about the darkness of the heart anymore.
Just some foolish conversations…
『Friend』-like…

Like the story of Katsuko-san failed mail order of a cooking tool…
Or Margo-san teaching children martial arts twice a week…
Or Natou-senpai's brand of cosmetics she's using…

「Yo-chan…you should be changing that 'Natou-senpai' soon…!」
「Eh…Then, what should I call you then?!」
「…I want you to call me 『Onee-chan』!」
「…That's a bit」
「What?…Embarrassed?!」
「…Yes」
「Then 『Nei-chan』 is fine. It sounds like 『Onee-chan』 after all…!」
「T-That's the same…!」
「…You don't want to?!」

Please don't glare at me!!

「『Nei-san』…Is that still no good?」
「Eh, that feels so formal!」
「But…You're older, and a senpai…!!」
「『Nei-san』, 『Nei-san』, 『Nei-san』, 『Nee-san』, 『Nee-san』3…Well, that evolves to there! I'll allow it for now!」

…Haa

「…You see, Nei had a little brother」

Margo-san muttered.

…『Had』?!

「…He died, ehehe」

…Shit
Nei-san's eyes has tears accumulating…

「Sorry…that was a taboo」

Margo-san apologized in a hurry…

「Geez…I remembered it because of Maru-chan…!!」

…Shit
She'll cry if this continues!!
…I tried to change the talk in a hurry.

「Oh right, Can…I call Margo-san 『Maru-san』?」

Margo-san's face stiffened…!

「Yoshida-kun…If you say that again, I'll crush your balls…!」

I-I'm very sorryyyyyyyyyyyyyyyyy!!!

While we're having that talk…the chime for the first lesson's end sounded.

「…Yo-chan, what would you do? Would you attend the next class…?!」

…What should I do?
It's troublesome to meet Yukino and Endou…
The people in the class might be having rumors about me…

「I'll be going back to the mansion soon. I can't be here since I long graduated from the school after all…!」

Margo-san says so then stood up…

「I intend to stay here but…I can give you at least a fellatio!」

N-Nei-san?!

「…I want to have my virginity taken with everyone looking! I want Katsun to take a photo too. You want a commemorative photo too, right, Yo-chan? 」

T-that's…certainly.

「That's why, I'll give you only fellatio now. Ah, but, It's my first time giving a fellatio so don't have a lot of expectations…!
「…Your first time?!」
「Un…I've seen a lot of people do it a lot of times so I know the ropes at least…!」

…N-no way!

Nei-san opened her lips and took out her red tongue…
This tongue would lick it…!

「Hey hey, Nei…I think you should get a kiss before doing fellatio」
「Ah, Oh right…I still haven't given my first kiss yet…!」

…Nei-saaaan!!

When I thought of it…!
The iron door opened suddenly…!!
Appearing from the inside is…

Yamamine-san breathing heavily??!!

「…Yoshida-kun, you're still here…!」

Yamamine-san runs towards me!
Aside from Nei-san in her uniform…She flinched from the foreigner Margo-san with a scar on her face.

「…Hello. I'm a last year's graduate. Have you ever heard about the

American student Margo Starkweather from anyone? 」
「…I know. Good day Senpai 」

Like a member of athletic club, yamamine-san politely bowed to Margo-san.

「Un, good day 」

Margo-san returned a bow to Yamamine-san too.

「Then…what's wrong, the second class is about to begin right? 」

And when I asked Yamamine-san…
She presented me a bunch of papers with writing on it…

「…T-These are the notes from the first lesson. I also made Yoshida-kun's copy. If you don't get something, just ask me…! 」

The slit eyes forced a smile…
She's really a good child.
…A gentle person.

「…Natou-senpai, if you're finished with your business, please return Yoshida-kun to the classroom. Please…! 」

She bowed towards Nei-san deeply…

…For my sake.

---

1. 33．縁と絆 ↩
2. Once you see that you're not alone, you'll feel relieved – Yuzuki-sensei ↩
3. 『寧さん』、『ネイさん』、『ねいさん』、『ねえさん』、『姉さん』 ↩

◇ Yukino Rape -Arc III

34. To the principal's office.

「You're really cute!」

Nei-san looks at Yamamine-san with gentle eyes…

「…I'm not cute at all」

Yamamine-san blushes.

「Hey, hey…Megumi-chan, do you know Yo-chan's home?」
「…What?」

Nei-san…w-what are you saying?!

「You see, Yo-chan's parents divorced this spring vacation and her mother went out of the house. Her father is originally mentally collapsed so he went missing at the day of the entrance ceremony! That's why Yo-chan's alone in his house right now…!」 1

Nei-san, why do you know…?!
Yuzuki-sensei investigated…then she read that?

「…Is that so?」

Yamamine-san looked at me with a surprised face.
…It can't be helped.
I nodded small.

「That's why…Yo-chan's always gloomy in school, right? Megumi-chan, sorry to ask you but could you be friends with Yo-chan?! Get along with him! Then if possible marry him too!」

Nei-san said while laughing.
Yamamine-san…looks at me.

「…Marriage is impossible」 2

Yamamine-san continued to speak while looking down.

「I, intended to be friends with Yoshida-kun…we're classmates

after all」

…… !

「Sorry, I've never noticed that Yoshida-kun's having a hard time」

Yamamine-san bowed to me…
At that time, the next chime rings…

「…No good, I have to go back」

Yamaine-san reaches out for my hand and…looked at Nei-san saying 「Can we go now?」
…Nei-san.

「Megumi-chan, go back to the classroom. Just give me a minute. I want to have some private talk with Yo-chan」
「…But」
「It's fine, I'll return Yo-chan to the classroom properly! Believe your onee-san」

Yamamine-san looks at me worriedly.

「I'll follow you so…don't worry, Nei-san's really a gentle person」
「…Got it, I'll be going ahead. I'll just tell the next teacher that 『Yoshida-kun went to the toilet, he'll be back soon』」
「…Thanks」

Yamamine-san bowed to Nei-san and Margo-san once again then went out of the rooftop in light footsteps…
That back figure and delicate body.
The skin that's healthy and smells like the sun…
Black hair that sways with the wind…

「Yo-chan…Want to have sex with Megumi-chan?」
「…Eh?!」
「You want to, right?」
「…Uhm」
「Onee-chan will let you do it okay?…!」

Nei-san's eyes are shining suspiciously…

「…Nei-san?」
「Un…That child's good」

Margo-san too!

「Yo-chan…you do remember that you and that child are the class rep, right?!」
「Well…That's what Yuzuki-sensei decided」
「You do know how to decide the representative of class during the first term right?」

…Well
We still don't know each other yet.
The homeroom teacher looks at the result of the entrance exam from the middle school and decides it.

「The homeroom before Yuzuki-sensei had a different boy with her as the representative right?」
「Yes…」
「Then, she remained as the female class rep and the guy was changed to you」
「That's right」

Margo-san seems to know everything about me too…

「Yuzuki-sensei never does anything without meaning…」
「Un, Sensei's actions always has meaning!」

…Then?!

「That's right…Yamamine Megumi is a candidate. As the『Eighth』」
「From the start!」
「That child has a same kind of 『Darknes』as us. The dark side of her heart…!」

◇ ◇ ◇

In the end, I returned to the classroom five minutes late…
The male teacher from Japan History scolded me but…Yamamine-san faced me with a relieved face.
When I looked at Yukino…She ignored me and looked the other

way.
Endou's glaring at me.

The second hour ended safely.
Even during the break, the whole class isn't as noisy as usual.
Everyone's paying attention to me and Endou.
They're whispering at each other.
Yukino's looking at me with cold eyes.
Yukino's silently reading out a fashion magazine.
Endou's laughing with his baseball club's friends loudly on purpose.
To turn over…Endou impresses with small articles.

The third hour is math.
The male gray haired teacher about to reach the retirement age is writing an expression on the blackboard.
At that time…an event happened.

Suddenly…The classroom's door opened.
It was the principal.
Our school's principal is a fifty year old fat and short old man, he looks like Manager Maradona from soccer[3]
But his nickname inside the shcool has been 『JB』 or 『Geropa』.
I don't get the reason.

「Ah, Sensei, can I have a moment…」

The classroom has become noisy from the sudden visit of Geropa…

「Endou-kun, Yoshida-kun, and Shirasaka-san, raise your hands…」

Geropa looks at us who raised our hands

「Please come to the principals office…」

◇ ◇ ◇

We were taken by Geropa-kouchou[4] as our classmates looks at us.
Endou's feeling sullen.
Yukino's looking down in dejection.
I…

I'm not nervous at all As if it's someone else's problem, it feels like

it's a world of a movie.
After all, whatever happens will happen.
I know that I will end in 『Ruins』
…There's no need to panic.

Having observed myself being calm…Margo-san is right, I must be 『Broken』

The principal's office was on the second floor at the center of the school building.
Of course, it's my first time visiting…

「…Enter」

Geropa opened the door and invited us inside.
It's a room with a gorgeous carpet spread on the floor…
As I thought…she's here.

「…Oh, you're late」

Sensei's sitting on the chair while eating salted rice cracker as she looks at the monitor of a desktop.
A large scale monitor put on the principal's desk…
What's there is the image of Endou hitting me on top of the rooftop.
It's the video the day before yesterday and yesterday from the hidden camera.
There's only video, there's no sound…

Yukino's trembling.
Endou clicked his tongue…!

「Sit down」

Geropa offers us a seat.
What's there is a pipe chair.
Endou sighed and sat down on the chair in bad manners.
He's already prepared for battle.
Yukino tries to set up her chair far away from me and sat closely next to Endou.
The principal sits on his luxurious leather chair.
I also sat on the chair late…

「I've called you three because of this video」

Geropa talks while wiping his forehead with a handkerchief.

「Yuzuki-sensei submitted this to me this morning. The other teachers haven't seen this yet. It's just me and Yuzuki-sensei. I haven't talked about it with Yamazaki-sensei or captain Kondo either…!」

Endou's spine stretches.
His attitude changes immediately knowing that the situation isn't at the worst yet…!

「For the time being…I want you to explain what happened there first」

Endou answered at honor student mode.

「It's just…a trouble within classmates! We just poked at each other from having different opinions. That's not a big problem」

Endou spoke shamelessly.

「This is a personal problem between students so please leave it between students! I think that there's no need for the school and teachers to enter」
「…You're saying that this is just bullying, not violence?」

Endou's looking at Geropa with a bitter expression.

「Well, normally…when the person concerned yelled 『I've been bullied』, it might just be a fabricated 『Bullying case』. But, that's not true. If you want, you can suit me. I'm completely innocent」
「But as long as we look at the video, we can't see anything but him being beaten by you one-sidedly…?」
「That's…edited in some way. This video is. I don't understand why it's taken out on this sort of time purposely…!」

Endou's glaring at Yuzuki-sensei
Yuzuki-sensei forcibly pushes the crime.
Of course…I've actually never hit Endou even once.

「I certainly hit him but he also hit me too. Both parties are to blame. Therefore shouldn't we just declare it as a draw and forget about it?」

Endou's making a selfish proposal.
But…Shouldn't you be telling that to me not to the principal?

「Oh…It's news to me that you hit Yoshida-kun」

Sensei looks at Endou with ill-eyes.

「…That's the truth!」

Endou rejects it.

「If you want, should I bring witnesses? Please ask Koiju-senpai and Sugiuama-senpai It's just a shove and push, it's not a one-sided beat up, my seniors can testify that」

It seems that the two Senpai have already been talked with money.

「Hmm, are you trying to turn over with false testimony?」

Yuzuki-sensei happily said.

「What about you?! Aren't you just intending to corner me with such an obviously edited video?! Terrible! What a terrible teacher! I'll talk about Yuzuki-sensei to my father…!」

Endou's monkey play continues…

「You did that during the middle school didn't you?」

Endou's face is hit by shock!

「I just looked up to it. Endou-kun also had a bullying event in the baseball club at your middle school right?」
「That's…just a teammate who was envious of me complaining, It was proven that I never done it!」
「…There's no proof. You asked your father's lawyer and had the school and the victim's family persuaded right? 『This won't end well if you take it to the court. When this becomes a rumor at

mascom, it'll become a wound in the victim's future and the school』 he said 」
「…That's a lie! Principal! Yuzuki-sensei's clearly lying!! 」

Endou's desperately refusing.
Yukino looks at the confrontation of the two uneasy.
Geropa-kouchou is completely confused.

「Oh? Could you explain what's the lie there? I've properly made my investigation though 」

Yuzuki-sensei threw an A4 sized envelope towards Endou.
The envelop drops at Endou's feet…it's a document with considerable thickness.
The name of the middle school is clearly printed on the surface of the envelope…
That school must be Endou's alma mater.

「…Tsk, what a pain! 」

The cornered Endou changed suddenly.

「Sorry, please call my lawyer! Could you please talk to my lawyer from now on? 」

Sitting cross legged…Endou approached the principal in an insolent manner.

「Just to tell you, please don't make so much trouble for this school! Principal, how many years do you think this school is working? 」
「…Five years has passed since I started as the principal 」
「Then, you know my father right?. Ah, Of course you know my father, Endou Eiza who's a city councilor. He's a director of this school too…! 」
「…Of course, I do 」
「Then you knw it right? I think you should give me a preferential treatment. Principal is hired by the board of directors, right? It's easy for them to just dismiss you…! 」

…Endou's threat!

「Actually, I don't want to enter this school. But because of the event during the middle school…I don't want to make a buzz for the time being but, my obstinate old man who's the supervisor of the baseball cub endorsed the strength of the baseball club here. Then, well, my uncle came to this high school. Not just my uncle, you do know that Endou house has contributed a lot in this school. You know it right? I don't think you should anger me this much…」

Just like that, Endou faced Yuzuki-sensei next…!

「Yuzuki-sensei…You're going to be banished here. Not just from this school. I'll make sure that you can't step on this land anymore so prepare yourself. I'll use all of my connections at Endou house and I'll get somebody to drive you on the corner! Our acquaintance aren't just the surface people.[5] I send my best regards on the people who'll hang out with sensei! Well, I don't know what would happen about Sensei though!!」

…Uwaa, it's half bluff but it's so cheap!
Is this a delinquent fight?!
Furthermore, he's on a grade school level talking about 「My papa!」
Well, such a threat might be effective on other students…!

「…Is that so? I'm looking forward to it!」

Look! Yuzuki-sensei's looking happy…!
She's happily laughing at Endou's declaration of war…!

「A young woman like you cannot do anything against the power of Endou hosue[6]…!」

Endou shows another threat…
Endou doesn't know.
This teacher is more than what you see, just what kind of dangerous human she is…!

「…Stop this already. Kenji」

Yukino whispers to Endou.
Yukino knows how dangerous Yuzuki-sensei is.

She knows that Sensei's mansion controls the shadow of this school.
She's obviously frightened.

「Fufufufufu…ahahahaha…!」

Looking at the frightened Yukino, Yuzuki-sensei laughed…!

「……N?!!!」

Feeling the danger of Yuzuki-sensei's expression, he went to threaten Geropa once again!

「Either way, principal…the summer meet is about to begin so please make the investigation held inside your chest? If a fuss of this level happens right now, the students would be uneasy right?! Everyone from the baseball club would be involved too…!」

Haa. Because his bluff towards Yuzuki-sensei misfired, he toned down his words.
Your idiocy is exposed…Endou

「But it's not a case that I can hold off for a long time」
「I know that! Anyway, I'll consult my father and uncle's lawyer so could you please wait for a while before you consult the advisor of the baseball club?…!」

Geropa-kouchou thinks for a while.

「…Anyway, tomorrow's golden week. Even if it's reported to the school's board of directors, it's impossible because of the consecutive holidays. Yuzuki-sensei, please talk to the people concerned. Then, please report the conclusion to me I don't mind if it's just after the holidays…」

The principal answered like it's bothersome.
Actually, it seems that he doesn't want to be involved with trouble.

「…That's fine! Then, that's decided!」

Endou…Shouldn't you be saying 「Thank you very much」?!
He's an ungrateful man…!
Still, Endou looks happy

If there's time during the break, he thinks that its possible to construct it to the way that it would become advantageous for him.

「Uhm…we should be returning soon okay?!」

Endou's attitude is bad until the last minute.

「Yes, I don't mind. Our time with you has ended」

The principal answers Endou

「Let's go, Yukino!」

Endou called out Yukino then stood up from the pipe chair…!

「…Wait.「」We still have something to talk about with Shiraska-san and Yoshida-kun…!」

Endou and Yukino stiffened from the principal's words!

「Yukino, what talk?」
「It's another case…it's a problem of student's privacy so it doesn't concern you」
「Right. While you were having such a trouble with Yoshida-kun, Shirasaka-san and Yoshida-kun also have a problem occurring between them. Isn't it…Shirasaka-san?!」

Sensei intervenes from the side.
Yukino's trembling.

「If it's just your case with Yoshida-kun, don't you think that it's strange for the principal to call for Shirasaka-san too?」

…Certainly.
Yukino's an outsider on my case with Endou.

「…W-What?! What does this mean?!」

Endou's looking at me and Yukino.
He's completely suspicious of it…

「Don't talk about it! It's related to Shirasaka-san and Yoshida-kun's

privacy!」
「Are you saying that you can't tell me, Yukino?!! 」

Endou presses Yukino!

「…What would you do, Shirasaka-san? Should I speak in your stead?」

The devil laughs…!

「…P-Please stop!!」

Yukino rejects.

That's of course.
The event that occurred between me and Yukino…
That's, virgin rape…!
I broke her virginity and poured in semen inside her womb a lot of times…
It's a brutal sex crime beyond comparison to Endou's violence…!

「K-Kenji…I'm fine. It's not that serious. You can go back to the classroom before me!」
「…But you see」

Endou's glaring at me…!

「Anyway…please come back to the classroom. Or could it be that you want the baseball club's teacher to see this?」

Endou has no choice but to follow Yuzuki-sensei…!

「I-I get it!…Yukino, I'll hear about this later!」

Endou left with a parting threat…he left the principal without giving a bow.
The splendid wooden door shuts with a bang!
…He's rude until the last moment!

We were left in the room…
Somehow, the glance got focused on Yukino…
Yukino's body started to feel tension

「Now then…Shirasaka-san」

Suddenly, Yuzuki-sensei started the conversation.

「The report of your event isn't only reported to the principal, it's also reported to the chief director of this school!」

Yuzuki-sensei's cold eyes is coldly distorting.

「Isn't it?…the first year female student was raped by the guide of a teacher! I feel sorry to have just us enjoy this, isn't it?…!」

Yukino's surprised and looked at the Principal's face.
Geropa had a vulgar smile floating on his face.
…He knows.

「…Please call the chief director」

Principal ordered the clerk by the inner line.
The chief director is perhaps waiting in the reception room.

Yuzuki-sensei took out a pamphlet then showed it to Yukino.

「That's the school's entry guide. Shirasaka-san saw it too when you submitted your application right? Take a look at the board of directors…There's a 『Chief Director: Kuromori Kuoichiro』 right? This person was the chief director until last year. His chronic disease got worse then was changed this year」

…Then , it's another person now?
Sensei continued talking…

「Oh right…I'm using the name 『Yuzuki』 in this school but 『Yuzuki』 is the family name of my mother. My real name is… Kuromori…」 7

…No way?!

「…Kuromori Kouichiro is my father」

…Knock
The principal's office door is knocked…!!

「…I've brought the chief director」

The female clerk's voice is…!

「Come in…!」

With Principal's approval, the door opened.

…I
…I know this person!

A young woman wearing a black suit and tight skirt.
A rich proportion like a Caucasian model.
A surprisingly huge breast, thin waist and round ass…

「…Chief Director, Takanashi Katsuko!」

The 『Sex Beast Katsuko』 has entered the principal's room!!
Katsuko-san's the chief director?!!
Yuzuki-sensei don't want to become the director to replace her father so she pressed it to Katsuko-san!

「Principal, it's this child! It's the raped schoolgirl!!!」

Katsuko-san suddenly reports to the principal…!
「Hiiii!!」 Yukino's face stiffened…!

「Her body was forcibly restrained, raped her virginity and had her womb filled with semen again and again! Car sex during the morning and took a class with an air of innocence while having semen inside her, a perverted woman. She's a pervert who wished for fellatio herself, pleased from being showered pee, and even pleaded to have her peeing appearance be seen!」
「Is that so?…As expected」

Geropa smiled.

「To top it all, she's a shameless, limitless bitch who desires to become Yoshida-sama's 『Sex toilet』! This girl is a sex enthusiast, pervert, lecherous, semen toilet!!」
「Hohoo…That's amazing!」

…Yukino.
Is trembling from the terror of the situation in front of her!
She's frightened form the nightmare!!
Yuzuki-sensei spoke to Yukino…!

「Sadly, Shirasaka-san. You were fooled once again!」

Katsuko-san on the doorway.
In front, Geropa-kouchou.
Left, me.
And in diagonal right, Yuzuki-sensei.
Yukino's completely cornered…!

Katsuko-san slowly approached Yukino…!
The sound of the high heels' footsteps is steady…!

「…Now, should we begin today's training?」

Yukino's confined in the locked principal's office…
She's going to be violated again…!!

「Today, we'll have the principal watch Yukino's sex…!」

Yukino's back felt chills…!

…W-Watch?
……Are we showing our sex, Katsuko-san?

Katsuko-san looked at me and smiled.

「Don't worry…principal will only just watch. He'll never interfere. Yukino-sama is Yoshida-sama's private 『Sperm Toilet』after all…!」
「Yes, sadly, I don't have my genitalia anymore…」

Geropa confessed something unexpected.

「That's right…principal doesn't have his penis anymore. He's being fooling around too much before so I cut it off and fed it to the dogs…!」

…Yuzuki-sensei!

「Yoshida-kun, the principal would be troubled from now on. You don't mind if it's just showing your sex right?」
「Yukino-sama, you have to get used to other having sex in front of other people!」
「Isn't it the most effective just to show Shirasaka-san is yours by having sex in front of them?」
「That's right. Please enjoy the superiority complex of embracing Yukino-sama in front of other men!」

The devil and sex beast worked together…!

「…No! T-That's, in front of the principal! I don't want it!」

Yukino rounds her body and resists…!

「…Oh, is that so?」

Yuzuki-sensei operates the principal office's computer…
The image appearing on the screen…is!!

「…Aahn!…Aaah!…Auu!…Aaaaah!!」

The naked me raping Yukino video!
This was the record from the 『Night Duty Room』 last night…!

「Hohoo…This is quite wonderful!」

Geropa loosened his cheeks and sticks to the video…!

「…Please stop it! Don't look at it! Don't show it!」

Yukino shouted!!

「This…we can broadcast it in the whole school you know?! What would you do? Do you want the whole school watch your sex?」
「That's great! Let them see! Yukino-sama's vaginal opening overflowing with semen, it's perfectly captured!」
「How beautiful…It's so lewd!」

Sensei, Katsuko-san and Geropa-kuouchou torments Yukino!

「What would you do? I'm sure that Endou-kun will watch it from

the classroom!」
「Show it to them! Have the men in the school masturbate while watching Yukino-sama's sex! Even women!」
「Ooh, a young schoolgirl's body is trully beautiful! N…Ah, it seems that she had semen ejaculated inside her vagina, hahahaha…!」

Yukino's heart bursts…!

「Stop it!!…Don't look! Don't broadcast it…Don't do it…!」

Yukino's crying again…
I got erect from looking at Yukino's tears.

「I'll do it…here…in front of the principal…I'll have sex…I'll have sex!!!」

Yukino breaks down.
Katsuko-san spoke to her…!

「Then take off your panty and roll up your skirt!…Show your lewd pussy that just lost it's virginity in front of the principal」
「…Now then, Shirasaka-san, do it…!」

Yukino stood up trembling.
Her hand, inside her skirt…

「Hurry up…else we'll broadcast it!」

Inside her skirt uniform…her ass was released from the panty!
It passed under her thin leg…then foot.

「Now, Yukino-sama…please raise your skirt」

Her trembling ears slowly turned up her skirt.
Her face is dyed red in shame…

「Greet the principal…『Please take a look at the pussy that lost its virginity just a day before yesterday』」
「Yoshida-sama too, please take a look at Yukino-sama」

Being told by Katsuko, I turned to Yukino's front and crouched!

Her skirt is lifted.
Her thin white legs…even her thighs are exposed…!
…I-I see iiit!
Yukino's crack that's closed tightly.
On top of that is her thin pubic hair!!!

「P…Please take a look, at the P-pussy that lost its v-virginity J-Just a day before yesteday…!!」

Yukino's eyes had grains of tears spilling and falling down…!!

---

1. The "My parent's aren't home" extreme version. ↩
2. lol. You're cute Megumi ↩
3. Diedo Armando Maradona, A retured argentine professional footballer. He has served as a manager and coach at other clubs as well as the national team of Argentina ↩
4. Principal ↩
5. Lol Endou, you don't know who you're talking to ↩
6. Hahaahaha ↩
7. Told you guys, don't fuck with black forest! ↩

35. Humiliation interview.

…It seems to be Munch's(ムンク)『Puberty』
The naked girl sitting on the bed had a look of despair in her eyes.
The picture of that munch…Yukino's eyes looks just like the girl in the picture…

Inside the principal's office…Yukino sits down like a schoolgirl taking an interview.
Yukino sits on the pipe chair that's in the middle of the room.
At the wooden desk in front of her are Geropa, Yuzuki-sensei and Katsuko-san…
I…shrink next to Katsuko-san, watching

Yukino's half naked.
Her blouse is opened…her bra is rolled up exposing her pretty breasts and nipple to the eyes of the people.
The lower half had her skirt tucked up, as she show her genital in between her M-legs.
Dyed with despair and shame…a sorrowed face.
Tears collect in her eyes.

「Well done!」

Katsuko-san sets up her camera to capture.

「Katsuko…use the camera」
「Yes, Ojou-sama!」

Following Yuzuki-sensei's orders, Katsuko-san started capturing.
The red lamp in the camera is lit up

「Please start, principal」

Yuzuki-sensei grinned and ordered the principal.
The fat principal talks to Yukino…!

「…Then, we'll begin the interview. Please answer my questions with the truth and nothing but the truth. …Are you ready?」
「…Y-Yes」

Yukino is forced to answer in her shameful figure while crying…
The ugly dark skinned middle aged teacher…Geropa-kouchou's
『Shame Interview』 begins…!

「…Your name please」
「…F-First year, Shirasaka Yukino, seventeen years old」
「Shirasaka-san…are you a virgin?」
「…N-No」
「Do you have experience in sex…?」
「…Yes」
「Please answer concretely」
「…!」
「I want to hear a report form your mouth saying 『I've had sex, I'm no longer a virgin』」
「I-I have experienced sex. I…I am no longer a virgin…」
「…How many people have you done it with?」
「O-Only one person…」
「…How many times you had sex with that person so far?」
「I-I think it's twenty times」
「…Who's your sexual partner?」

Yukino's eyes looked at me with hatred.

「My classmate…Yoshida-kun…」
「Are you going out with him?」
「…No」
「…Did you seduce him?」
「…There's no way I will!」
「I heard from Yuzuki-sensei that you sold yourself though?」
「That's…!」
「It seems that there's money transferred to your bank account…?」
「……!」
「Isn't that money earned from sex?」
「…No it's not!」
「Then, why are you having sex with a schoolboy you are not going out with?」

Yukiuno's eyes had tears collecting in them…!

「I…I was raped…Yoshida-kun has raped me…again and again!」

「…Did he use any contraceptives?」
「……!」
「…I'm asking whether he has used condoms or not」
「No…!」
「…Did he ejaculate outside your vagina?」
「…!」
「I'm asking whether the semen was released outside your body」
「No…It's always inside me…!」
「…You're saying that it's intravaginal ejaculation?」
「That's right…Uuu!!」

Unable to endure, Yukino's tears leaked out

「…How does it feel to receive sperm in your womb?」
「I-It feels disgusting. I thought that I wanted to die…」
「I'm not asking about your feelings…I'm asking you to explain the situation when semen is poured inside your uterus」
「It feels like hot water is poured in my deepest part…!」
「Have you felt your womb swallowing the semen rhythmically after you get the ejaculation?」
「……!」
「Please answer. Is there…or is there none?」
「…There is」
「Your body has accepted his sperm then」
「No…There's no way…!」
「Do you love sex?」
「…I hate it」
「Why?」
「…There's no way I'd love being raped!」
「But…you got used to sex already?」
「…?!」
「You had sex with him a lot of times right?…Don't you think your body has gotten used to sex already?」
「……!!!」

Yukino falters then Yuzuki-sensei spoke from the side.

「Answer…Shirasaka-san」
「I-I think…I got used to it…!」
「Have you experienced sexual climax?」
「…!」

「Please answer…Have you cum when you had sex with him?」
「…Y-Yes」
「To be clear, say it properly…who had sex with whom and what happened?」
「I…Yukino, had sex with Yoshida-kun…and came…Aaah…I don't want it…Even though I hated it!!」

Between Yukino's crotch that's shaped M…
Yukino's crack became loose before one's aware…!
The inside is moist…!

「When did you lost your virginity?」
「…Last night before yesterday」
「Please speak what kind of situation it was concretely」
「…I was bound on a chair on Yuzuki-sensei's house…then I was raped」
「Please say it clearly…who raped whom?」
「Y-Yoshida-kun…raped…raped Yukino…」
「What's your impression when your hymen was torn…?」
「I-It was painful…It's like a burning iron stake was shoved into my body…!」
「Please be clear…」
「My legs were opened…opened wide like a frog then…Yoshida-kun forcibly went inside my body! It was painful, it huts a lot…!」
「Were you not happy?」
「…Why?! There's no way I would!」
「…Haven't you thought of 『I want my first experience to be rape』 when you were a child?」
「No! I'm not such a child!」

With Yukino's objection…the sex beast Katsuko spoke.

「Say that you're glad you were raped!」
「…N-No way!」
「Say it!…Do you want to experience something scarier?」

Yukino can't go against the sex beast.

「I-I was glad being raped!」
「Please answer concretely…Be raped by whom?」
「Yukino…is glad to be raped…by Yoshida-kun…I was glad…aah

no I'm not…this is ridiculous!」

The light reflects between Yukino's legs.
I saw it…!
Yukino's love nectar…is dripping from her vagina!

「Please remember…the moment Yoshida-sama's penis entered Yukino-sama for the first time! Remember the moment when your hymen was broken!」
「…No that was so…painful…scary…miserable…!」
「You were glad aren't you?」
「…Nooo」
「Say that you're glad…say that you were overwhelmed with happiness when your hymen was torn…!」
「There's no way I can say that!」
「Say it! You toilet!」
「…Uuu…I-I was glad, I was glaaaaad…!!」
「Remember that moment in your head!! Say it properly while remembering…hurry up!」

Sex beast Katsuko has trained Yukino's 『Mind』!

「…Y-Yoshida-kun's…penis…entered inside me, forcibly, pushed itself in…it hurts…At first, it didn't come too deep but…suddenly, it broke through…went deeper…it hurts like I was hit by a lightning…like my body's being pulled out…the pain hurried… perhaps at that time…my hymen was broken…」
「…You were happy that it was broken right?!」
「…I-I was glad…!」
「…Then, what happened after that?」
「Y-Yoshida-kun…e-ejaculated…inside me…!」
「…Were you happy?」
「There's no way I am!」
「Then, how did it feel…?」
「I look forward pale…I'm scared, I'm fearing that I might get pregnant…disgusting…I feel hopeless…!」
「Please remember that moment well…look, inside Yukino-sama's stomach is hot liquid poured in…spreding out」
「I don't want to remember…noooo…!」
「…Scared?…Frightened?…Disgusted?…Helpless?」
「I'm scared…I feel disgusted…Help me…!」

Yukino's falling into Katsuko-san's dark suggestion further…!
The effect of aphrodisiac shows up I guess…
Yuzuki-sensei intervenes from the side.

「Your feeling right now…that is 『Happiness』…!」
「…Eh?!」
「Right now, the gloomy feeling swirling inside Shirasaka-san, say that it's 『Happiness』…!」
「…?!」

Katsuko-san further spurs Yukino's heart…!

「Now, you hopeless girl…say it…You're 『Happy』!」
「…I-I'm happy…!」
「How does it feel getting ejaculated inside?!」
「…Uuuu, Happiness」
「How does it feel being embraced by Yoshida-sama?!」
「I'm glad…I was happy」
「Yukino-sama loved being raped by Yoshida-sama right? You're glad aren't you?」
「N-No」
「Answer properly you toilet bitch!」
「…I-I'm happy!」

Yukino's crotch is soaking wet.
Her genital is dripping with love nectar!
Her whole body is sweating hard.
Her flushed body…is so lewd!!!

「Shirasaka-san, did you notice it?…Your pussy has become a disaster」

Yuzuki-sensei laughs maliciously

「Certainly…it's a really terrible state」

Geropa-kouchouo is having a vulgar smile.

「Yukino-sama…please explain to everyone what's happening to your pussy…!」
「…Noo」

「…Do it!」

Yukino looked up and reported!

「…It's wet」
「Who's wet?」
「Y-Yukino's pussy…My pussy is w-wet…!」

First, Yuzuki-sensei cross-examines it…

「Why is Shirasaka-san's pussy wet? Is there a reason behind it?」
「…That's, I don't know」

Following, Geropa-kouchou…

「You, want to do it right now, don't you?…Sex…!」
「No…I'm not…!」

Lastly, Sex beast Katsuko…!

「Your body wants to do it that you can't endure it anymore right?…You want it right? A man's penis…?!」
「That's…not…that's not what it…」

The sex beast gives her next order to Yukino.

「Stand up you semen toilet!…Stand up and lie down on this desk…!」
「…Hiii!!」

Yuzuki-sensei smiles coldly…

「Shirasaka-san…it's rape time again…!」

Yukino's attacked by strong adult glances.
Yukino…can do nothing but follow.
Yukino lied on her back on top of the principal's desk…
Yuzuki-sensei and the principal looks from around he…
Katsuko-san took off the camera from the tripod and records Yukino by hand.
Yukino…seems to be a sacrifice on an altar.

「…We maid you wait, Yoshida-kun. You can do what you want now」

Yuzuki-sensei…called me.

「Now, Yukino-sama, beg Yoshida-sama…『My body's aching so much it can't be helped…please violate me like usual』…!」
「…There's no way I can say that」
「Say it!」

The sex beast's scolding is sharp!!

「Hiii!…Y-Yukino's…body…Yukino's body is aching so much it can't be helped…R-Rape me! Please violate Yukino like usual!」

I take off my belt and dropped my pants.
My penis is already frozen solid…

「Ooh, this is envious」

Geropa saw my erection and muttered…!

「…N-Noooo!」

Yukino felt fear from the penis approaching her body!

「Yukino-sama…have this」

Katsuko-san showed a small table to Yukino.

「You want this right?」

That's the fake contraceptive.
The false drug Yukino took from Iwakura-kaichou,『Three ejaculation contraceptive』
It's actually an aphrodisiac that provides arousal…!

「…I-I wan it! P-Please give it to me!!」

Yukino shouted

「Take out your tongue」

Hearing Yuzuki-sensei…Yukino took out her red tongue.

「…Here you go」

Katsuko-san put the tablet on her tongue.

「…Drink it」

Just like a computer swallowing a disc…Yukino's red tongue with the tabled on it entered her mouth.
She swallowed it along with her saliva!

「Then you're save with this Shriasaka-san…safe to be raped!」
「…T-That's!」
「That's right, Katsuko, give that to Shirasaka-san」
「Right away!」

Katsuko-san took out something black.

「Use this…you'd feel more with this」

Katsuko-san handed Yukino a…black eye mask.

「…It's a blindfold」
「…Blindfold?」

Yukino's frightened.

「Don't worry. Have you ever heard of Blindfold play? This'll create the atmosphere」

When Yuzuki-sensei explained that, Yukino stared at the mask given to her…

「…Hurry up」
「Blindfold!」

Urged by two beauties, Yukino finally prepared herself.

「…Okay」

Yukino put on the eye mask…
She can't see anything…

「Open your legs wide…then prepare yourself to accept Yoshida-sama…!」

In front of me…the blindfolded Yukino's, opened her legs wide…!
On top of the principal's desk , Yukino's lying down making an M legs.
Her pubic hair under her genital is already wet.

「Touch yourself with your finger and confirm your own state…!」
「…Okay」

Yukino's white thin fingers…caresses her own slit.

「…Yukino-sama what's going on there?」
「I-It's wet…it's wet」
「…Yukino-sama, where do you feel it the most?」
「H-Here…」

Yukino's finger opens up the fold with her finger and exposes her clitoris…!
The small bean…is already enlarged!

「…Touch it with your finger and show it properly」
「Okay…Aaaaaaaaaahn!」

Yukino caresses her own clitoris!
Love nectar oozes out again from her crack due to pleasure…!

「Does it feel good when you touch it there…?」
「Y-Yeeeeeees…!!」

Yukino kneads it with her finger.

「Araara…your crack's open completely right now」

Yukino's genital that should be closed intact is slowly loosening.
Her half naked skin is dyed pink…
…She's craving!
While being in an abnormal blindfold state…Yukino's heart is completely caught by Katsuko-san!

「Spread it yourself and show it…present Yukino-sama's genital to

everyone」
「…Okay」

Yukino opened her crack with both of her hands…
I can see clearly from the entrance to deep inside.
Her hymen…is no longer there.

「As expected, a first year's hole is beautiful…there's no distortion」

Geropa states his impression

「It's already used to Yoshida-sama, it already changed to a wonderful sperm toilet…Yoshida-sama, are you ready?」

I can't endure this anymore.
My erect penis approached Yukino's vagina…!

「Now…Yoshida-sama's going to rape you again…are you happy?…Say that you're happy…go」

The wet slit is inviting me…!

「…I-I'm glad」
「Yukino-sama, beg Yoshida-sama…『Please ravish me…please dirty Yukino agian with Yoshida-sama's penis』…!」
「…P-Please rape Yukino…please soil Yukino's body with Yoshida-kun's penis!…I want to be soiled again!」

At that moment she shouted, hot liquid dripped from Yukino's vagina again…!
…I'll thrust it in!!
Jupuri, my penis entered her wet honey hole…!
The wet vagina flesh met my glans!!

「…Aaaah! It came! It's coming inside Yukino again!!」

I turn my hand on Yukino's back…then hugged her thin body tightly!
My glans made a kiss on her uterus immediately…!
The insides of the melting vagina, is so slimy, wet…and hot!!

「…How far, how far is it going in?」
「D-Deep…It's coming in the deepest part of me!」
「That's the entrance to Yukino-sama's womb, isn't it?! Yukino-sama's being violated until her womb!」
「…I'm being raped…n-Noo…aahn!」
「You're glad aren't you…?!」
「…There's no way…I'd be happy with this…!」
「No…even if your mind says no, Yukino-sama"s body is this glad…please try saying that you're glad…」

I slowly begin my piston…!
Zun!…I pierce Yukino's deepest part!

「…Aah!」

Once again…Zun!

「…Aah…I'm happy」

Zun…Zun…

「I'm happy…I'm glad…Aaahn…It feels good…!!」

Yukino's being raped.
Once again, I'm having sex with Shirasaka Yukino!!

「How's it…Sex feels good doesn't it?…Your body feels glad doesn't it…?」

Katsuko-san whispers at Yukino's ears like a magic incantation…

「…Pleased…I'm feeling pleasure…my body…feels good…It feels good…this is pleasant!!」

I use my waist hard…then rub Yukino's walls with my penis.

「Aaaaaahaan…it feels gooood…!」

Yukino who's raising a lovely voice…is already indulging herself from the pleasures of sex.

「This first year is amazing…「」」

「…As you can see, she's pleased, a perverted girl」

The principal and Yuzuki-sensei are having such a talk…!

「…How is it?…Having other people watch you have sex feels good doesn't it?…Yukino-sama, say 『Look at me more』… 『Everyone, please take a look as Yukino's being ravished』… 『Watch Yukino being raped and masturbate』…!」

Katsuko-san's finger is already between her crotch.
Katsuko-san's coveting Yukino's' mind while masturbating…!

「Aaahn…Look…Please take a look…Everyone, please take a look as Yukino's being ravished…! Everyone masturbate while Yukino's being raped…!!」

Aah…I kissed Yukino while swinging my waist.
Yukino opened her mouth immediately and intertwine her tongue.
The blindfold…interrupts Yukino's repulsion to me
She's allowing my lip just for the sake of pleasure!!

「Yukino-sama…it's no good if you're just being ravished…please wiggle your waist too…Have the penis hit the places inside your body that feels good…!」

The sex beast gives a new instruction…!

「…L-Like this?!」

Yukino's waist pushed up and down…!
My penis is rubbed recklessly!
Kui, kui…my glans is rubbing on folds that"s been different so far…!

「…Think on how to feel more pleasure…and move your body according to your body's desire!」

Yukino's body…shakes…tangles, moves up and down…!
Her clitoris and pubic bones is rubbed to me steadily…!
She's already leaving everything to the pleasures of sex…!

「What's this…it feels goood! This feels gooood…!!」

「Try tightening your anus then loosening it…!」

Ah…Yukino's pussy tightens!
My erect penis is being strangled!

「Good…this is great!」
「What does Yukino-sama want?…What does Yukino-sama's body wants…?」
「I…my body…my breast…please hold Yukino's breast tightly…!」

I gripped Yukino's breast with my right hand!
I gripped it!

「Stronger!…Squeeze it…Suck it out!」

I gripped her breasts tightly!
Does she feel it when I crush it with all my might?!

「M-My nipples…pinch my nipples…stir it with your fingers!!」

Yukino's firmly erect nipples is pinched by my finger!
I knead it with the pulp of the finger…!!

「G-Good…That feels goood!!」

Aah…This feels good!
Yukino's body drowning in sex is great!!

「Place your hands on Yoshida-sama's back…embrace him…that feels even better!」

Yukino's thin arms embraced me tightly!
Her white fingers cuts into my back!
Her soft breasts presses against my body!
I can feel her nipples with my skin!
Aah…I'm embracing Yukino…!!
Yukino's embracing me!
I…Embraced Yukino hard too!
Gatsun, gatsun, my waist thuds!
It's pushing up inside Yukino…!
It's stirring her up…!
Ravish!…Ravish!…I'm ravishing her!!

Yukino's body shakes freely…it's wriggling!!

「Aah…It's coming…it's coming…It's coming again!!」

Yukino's climax is close…!
Me too

「Yukino-sama…are you cumming? If you're going to cum, then shout 『Cumming』 『It feels good』 『I'm glad』 …!」

Katsuko-san's instructing Yukino while comforting herself…!

「aaah…It's coming…it's coming…It's coming!!Cumming… cumming, cumcum, I'm cummiiiiiiing…It feels goood!!!」

Yukino's body convulsed.
Her back bent like a bow while still embracing me…She's pressing against my crotch!
The inside of her vagina is tightening so hard!!

「…Cummiiing!!」

…Dobyuu! Dobyuu!!

I began ejaculating inside Yukino.

「T-The hot stuff is coming in!!」

Yukino's arm embraces me stronger…!
Her uterus wombs rhythmically!
Gokuri, gomari…it's drinking the semen in…!

「…It's coming out…it's coming out…It's drinking it in…!」

Yukino's climax continues!
She's already half frenzy

「Yukino-sama…are you happy having ejaculated a lot? Say that you're happy…!」
「…I'm glad…I'm happy!」
「What are you happy about?」
「…Sex…Aahn!」

「Does sex feels good?」
「…Sex feels gooood!」
「Do you love being raped?」
「…Love! I love it!」
「You're unbearably glad from being violated right?!」
「Aaaahn! Being ravished feels good…I'm glad! Cumming! I'm cumming again…I'm glad…I feel happyyyyy!!!」

Yukino's hand hugs me tightly again…!
Once again, Yukino convulsed.
It seems that she came again…!
Her shrinking vagina squeezes out my semen until the last drop…!

「…Hmm, is that so?!」

Yukino's hand stretched towards Yukino's face…
The eyemask…is removed smoothly…

「…Ue?」

What's there is…Yukino's face that's engrossed in sex…
Eyes melting in pleasure…and skin that's completely flushed.
There's no feature of a cute intellectual girl at all.
A lewd woman's face that's drowning in pleasure of sex…

…Pashin!

Yuzuki-sensei lightly slapped Yukino's cheek!
…At that moment!
Yukino's vigor returned!

「…I?!」

Yukino's embracing me voluntarily, half naked.
While our lower half is still connected…!
Wet from the sweat, love nectar and semen…!

「…What's this…Why am I…?!」

She's suddenly pulled by to reality from the sexual pleasure suggested by the effect of the aphrodisiac…
Yukino's petrified…!

Yuzuki-sensei sharply whispered in Yukino's right ear…!

「…Lewd」

On her left ear, Katsuko-san…!

「…Perverted slut!」

Yukino's face sinks in despair…
Tears spill out of her eyes…
I licked those tears…
…Bitter
Yukino's tears is salty…and a bit bitter
I mutter while I lick Yukino's face.

「…I love you…I love Yukino's despaired face the most…!」

Yukino answered while loosening her arm.

「I hate you…I hate Yoshida-kun so much…!」

Geropa-kouchou, slowly clapped his hands…

「Bravo, Bravo! That's wonderful! What a beautiful rape! I was moved!!!」

Yuzuki-sensei answered Geropa coldly.

「…It's too early to give an applause!」
「…Yes Yoshida-sama's stamina isn't like this !」

…That's right.
My erection still hasn't lost it's strength inside Yukino!
Rather, it got even harder after tasting Yukino's tears!!
Once again…I moved my waist!

「…Nooo…No more…please stop this…Ahn, ahn, aaaah!!」

I didn't stop my waist until I ejaculated inside Yukino again…!!

36. In the middle of the stairs

After ejaculating inside Yukino again, I made her do fellatio…
Yukino sucks my penis in front of Geropa.
I sat on the edge of the principal's desk and Yukino kneeled in between my legs.
Principal stood from his sit and looked at Yukino's mouth uniting with my penis.
Yuzuki-sensei gracefully sips her kofi…
The third class has already ended and it's about to enter the fourth class…

「Very good…It's a tongue skill you won't think coming from a sixteen year old」

Geropa pushes out his face and praises Yukino's sexual skills

「It's thanks to Katsuko's guidance…」
「Thank you very much, Ojou-sama!」

Katsuko-san obediently took the praise.
She presented teacakes to Sensei.

「Also…as expected, Yoshida-kun 『Loves』 Shirasaka-san, don't you?」

The devil teacher suddenly let out a word worst matched to her.

「Yoshida-kun…you do love Shirasaka-san, don't you? How many times have you masturbated to Shirasaka-san since the entrance ceremony」

Sensei inquires me.

「…E-Every day」

The roughness of Yukino's tongue as she licks my glans upwards… feels good!

「…How many times a day?」

「T-Three times up to five times…uu!」

Yukino's finger is gently caressing my balls!

「You wanted to embrace, to violate Shriasaka-san that much?」
「…I-I wanted to violate her!」
「Right, Yoshida-kun's always watching Shirasaka-san after all.」
「…Yes」
「You're using your imagination or a photo for masturbation?」
「Uhm…the class photo during the entrance ceremony…」
「You don't have any big photos of Shirasaka-san?」
「I tried to take one with my phone but I didn't have any chance.」
「…Do you want the embarrassing photos of Shiraska-san we took so far?」
「I-I want it!」
「Then I'll give it to you…Katsuko give what Yoshida-kun wants」
「Certainly!」
「…T-Thank you very much!」
「But…You can't masturbate to that photo, okay?」
「…W-Why?」
「You should let out all of your semen inside Shirasaka-san…don't waste a drop」
「…O-Okay」
「If you want to do it then you can have sex with her anytime, anywhere…isn't that right, Shirasaka-san?!」

Yukino…can't answer as her mouth is filled with my penis.
She's just looking up at Sensei with sorrowed and hateful eyes…!
I stretched my hand and reached out for Yukino's breasts that's sticking out of her blouse.
Yukino's beautiful breasts that fits the palm of my hand!
I've massaged this multiple times, it's swelling red from my fingers…!
I enjoyed the feeling of her breasts again…!
I enjoy the hardness of her nipple…!
I love this breast.

「…It's about time you move up and down more intensely! Yukino-sama, think of your mouth as your pussy!」

Katsuko-san leaded her…!

「That's right…the class would end if you don't hurry up」

With Yuzuki-sensei's words, Yukino's moved faster while having tears collect in her eyes…!

「That's right! Yukino-sama! Stroke the penis with your mouth more! Your mouth pussy! Is it like a mouth pussy!」
「Please show it to me…The moment a man spits out his stinking semen inside the mouth of the freshman student!」

Katsuko-san and Geropa fans Yukino…!
Yukino desperately sucks my erection while having a pained face!!
She vacuumed tightly!
She licks the glans clean with her tongue!

「…I-I'm cumming, here we go, it's coming out…1」

The hot stuff rises from my my waist to my penis!

「Uuu, take this…Yukinoo!!」

Thinking that I'm almost bursting…the flood gates of my vesicle opened and it was released in a dash!!

…Dooppu!

The white bitter liquid gushes into Yukino's mouth like a flood!!

「…Nguuuuuuuu!!」

…It must be bitter.
…It must be disgusting.
Tears fall down from Yukino's pained eyes.

Chupon, Yukino pulled out her mouth from my penis.

「Now Yukino-sama…Open your mouth wide then please show to the principal how much was let out!」

Yukino opened her mouth wide while teary eyed.
The bubbly white sperm and saliva mixed inside her mouth

「…Drink it」

Yukino drank the semen by Yuzuki-sensei's orders.
…While crying

「…Delicious?」

Yukino can't answer…

「Say that『It was delicious』!『Yoshida-sama's semen is very delicious』…!」

Urged by Sex Beast Katsuuko…Yukino finally opened her mouth.

「…I-It was delicious. Yoshida-kun's semen is very delicious…!」
「Say your thanks to Yoshida-sama!」
「……!」
「…What's wrong?」
「…T-Thanks, Yoshida-kun」
「You're going to drink such a delicious sperm everyday, right?!」
「…… ! !」
「…Your anwer?」
「I-I'm going to drink it every day from now on!」

The half-naked Yukino burst into tears from the humiliation.
White semen drips down from her mouth…

「It's no time to cry! You still have to clean the penis!」
「…?!」
「You're going to use your mouth and tongue to clean the entire penis again! Suck the tip and suck out all of the semen remaining in the urethra! It's a clean up fellatio!」

Yukino once again made her tongue crawl in my penis while crying.
Chupachupa…I can hear wet sounds…

「Wonderful…I think this child would become a first class meat toilet Yuzuki-sensei!」

Looking at the beautiful humiliated appearance of the first year…
the aroused Geropa told Yuzuki-sensei.

「Well…I think that she's much more talented than Iwakura Yukiyo!」

At that moment Geropa spoke of Iwakura-kaichou's name, Yukino's eyes opened wide suddenly…!

「Iwakura-kun's fellatio is very splendid.…Of course, sex with her is good too. Iwakura-kun's big breasts is hidden after all. The feeling when I hold it is unbearably good…!」

Yuzuki-sensei spoke to the surprised Yukino.

「The principal cooperated in training Iwakura-san two years ago. In those days, he still had his excellent genital…!」
「No, that's regrettable…if I still have my penis, I wanted to taste this child…」

Geropa's hand stretched towards Yukino's ass…
That hand was slapped off by Katsuko-san!

「…You can't!」

Geropa fell on his back!
Pokan, he opened his mouth wide.

「Principal…Shirasaka-san is Yoshida-kun's exclusive toilet. I'd be troubled if you lay a hand on her…」

Yuzuki-sensei's cold eyes pierces Geropa.

「No…I just…」
「Last time, I let you off with just your penis removed…what do you want next?」
「…Uhm」
「It won't end with you being erased in the society…If I recall, your recently married daughter just gave birth right?…There's an organization wanting a baby in US, should I introduce her?」
「P-Please…don't get my family involved」
「Then…endure with just watching. I'll give you something once there's an opportunity」
「…T-Thank you…Thank you very much…!」

Geropa prostated himself in front of Yuzuki-sensei.
Sensei drinks her ko-fi silently…

「Principal…I'm already okay with it so raise your head. You too… get on your clothes and return to the classroom」
「I thank you…You have my gratitude…Kuromori-sama」

Geropa-kouchou called Yuzuki-sensei 『Kuromori』
Yukino and I fixed our clothes.
Yukino wore her bra again and pinned her buttons in her blouse.
I…went to get my underwear and pants that I took of messily…

「Still…You got another beautiful first year. Let's make this child the next student council president after Iwakura-kun…Hahaha」

The forgiven Geropa spoke to Yuzuki-sensei with a forced smile.

…Yukino's gonna be the next student council president after Iwakura-san?
Does Yuzuki-sensei have that kind of plan?!
She's going to let Yukino rule the whole school?!

「No…I don't intend to let Shirasaka-san become the student council president. In the first place, I'll make Shirasaka-san leave the school next year…!」

…Leave?
…Could that be?!
Yuzuki-sensei turned towards the surprised Yukino.

「Then…how about being sold off to a dark organization on some other country?」
「…No way」

Yuzuki-sensei laughed.

「I won't do that to such an important schoolgirl…It's just a simple maternity leave」
「…Maternity leave?」
「Yes…Shirasaka-san will surely give birth one year later!」

Yukino's eyes is overshadowed with despair!

「…Katsuko」
「Yes, Ojou-sama」
「Is the fertility drug available?」
「It's consecutive holidays today so if I order it…」
「…It's fine even after the end of Golden Week」

The devil teacher smiled towards Yukino.

「Shirasaka-san…do you know fertility drugs?」

Yukino shook her head…

「It's a drug wanted by married couple who wants to have a child… if you drink that medicine, the womb is forced to ovulate so pregnancy is definite when you have sex…!」

…Pregnant!
Yukino's body began to tremble…!

「It's better to know what day you're going to be fertilized when you have sex right? Teach your children in the future okay?…!」

Yukino's ovulation day is on the consecutive holidays!
She'll definitely get pregnant she's going to have sex on that day!
No, she'll be made pregnant!!

「Shirasaka-san, you'll definitely going to give birth with Yoshida-kun's child…prepare yourself!」

The devil gives her brutal verdict to Yukino…!

Yukino is…!

◇ ◇ ◇

Several minutes after we left the principal's office…
There's still half an hour remaining on the fourth lesson.
The two of us walk through the corridor with Yukino ahead looking down…
Inside the campus at Saturday morning.
I can hear the voices of the teachers from the classrooms.
From outside the window, I can hear the sound of the whistle of the

PE instructor…
Are they doing a 50 meter race?

Yukino's still not used to having sex it seems.
She's walking bowlegged while holding her waist.
Though she doesn't look like she's in pain anymore when we have sex…

Before long, we appeared in the stairs.
Yukino, walks down the stairs bowlegged.
I watched her charming ass and thighs…her back while waking down the stairs.

「…Don't look」

Yukino sayw while facing ahead.

「…What?」

I answered back instinctively
It would be strange not to look at something so erotic in front of you

「…Don't look, I beg you」

At the moment Yukino said that…!
White liquid drips down from Yukino's thighs.
That's my semen overflowing from her vagina!
She…tries to prevent the sperm from dripping down her vagina, so she's making a strange walk!

「I told you to look, didn't I…!」

Yukino took out a handkerchief from her pocket and wipes the sperm dripping from her crotch.
I looked at her state from under.
No matter how much she wipes it, semen still drips down.
Yukino applied the handkerchief between her crotch and panty.
Her white panties are seen clearly…
That white cloth is wet with love nectar and semen.
Yukino's white skin and thin pubic hair is seen through…wet.

I squat down in the middle of the stairs to look further inside her skirt.
With my both hands under the stairs I looked up Yukino's lower half from below.
I can see the ass I violated a lot of times!

…Amazing, what a nice view.

Yukino ignores me and continued to wipe her vagina with her handkerchief.
No matter how much she wipes, the white liquid oozes out.
Before long…!

「…I hate this!」

Yukino threw the handkerchief to the wall!
The handkerchief that's heavy from sucking the sperm out sticks to the wall, then falls…!

「There's no way I can stand this! I hate this, no more!!」

Yukino who's on the stairs turned to me.
She's looking at me with hatred.

「Yoshida-kun…do you love me?!」

Yukino asks me.
Intense eyes, severe face…!

「If you love me then help me!」

…What's this?
…What's this?
…What's this?

Shirasaka Yukino is this kind of girl?

I…know that she's looking down on me.
Even though I violated her a lot of times…
Yukino still thinks of me only as 『Yuzuki-sensei's underling』…
She thinks that I would obey her if she threatened me…
She thinks that I'll listen to her…

She's thinking of me as a human lower than her…!

I…!
I took off my fastener and exposed my penis.
…My penis is already erect.

「…W-What are you trying to do?! I-I'm going to scream!」

Though Yukino's daunted…She still tries to control me.

「…Shout if you want. Yukino's the only one who'd feel ashamed being seen by people. This isn't an attempted rape. Everyone would know who's already violated…my semen's dripping from Yukino's ass after all…!」

I spoke to Yukino so calmly that even I was surprised…

「I'm not scared at all. I'm long prepared to be busted by police or get my life ruined…But, You're the same Yukino. I'm dragging you with me!」

For the first time…Yukino feared the human called me.
I finally…became independent from Yuzuki-sensei and Katsuko-san and will violate Yukino by myself.

「If you want, should I be the one to scream?! Want me to scream『I rapepd Shirasaka Yukino!』 I'm sure everyone would get out of their classrooms…!」
「S-Stop it, Yoshida-kun」

I walked up the stairs and approached Yukino…
Yukino's' feeling the fear and tries to run up the stairs!
I dashed and captured Yukino!
…I embraced her from behind in the middle of the stairs.

「…R-Release me!」

Yukino's fearing body is in my arm＝!
…She's trembling!
…She's frightened!
This thin and soft…Yukino!

「…W-What do you intend to do?」

I licked Yukino's ears from the back!

「…Hiii!」

Yukino's body that I'm embracing tightly, trembled!
I whispered in her cute ears.

「Let's have sex here. In this stairs…!」
「…We can't. Someone might find us here」 1
「It's fine…we still have thirty minutes before the fourth lesson ends」

I made Yukino stand on all fours in the middle of the stairs.
My left hand rolls her skirt while I hold her body with my right hand.
When I tried to remove her panty, Yukino's legs closed up desperately, trying to take it off!

…Dammit, too troublesome.

I moved the crotch part of Yukino's panty…!
Then I made my penis entered while we're having a doggystyle pose!!

「That's…while I'm wearing an underwear…!」

I don't care about Yukino's protest!
Her vagina is still wet from the lingering sex from a while ago…!
I screwed in to the root and moved my waist…!

「…Hyaan!」

Yukino pants.

「Don't make much noise or someone would come to ook!」

I whispered to Yukino…
Yukino bites the sleeve of her uniform and endures leaking out her voice…!

「…Nnn…nnn…nuu…nn…aaa…uuun…!」

It's already noon at the end of April.
The refreshing early summer sunlight pours down from the window.
The stairs in the school used every day.
The usual stairs where hundreds of students go up and down.
Yukino and I go through these stairs every day to go to our classroom.
In the middle of that…!
I'm violating Yukino in a dog posture!
My desires are accepted deeply in the bright light!
I will remember Yukino whenever I go through these stairs…
The time when I violated her in the middle of these stairs…
That will happen.
Every time I pass these stairs, I'll remember Yukino's secret meat.
I'll surely get naked.
I'll engrave this memory in my heart…!
…Definitely!

I stretched my hand and unbuttoned Yukino's blouse.
I rolled up her bra!
I enjoy the feeling of her spilling breasts!
The feeling of her breasts while connected from the back is unbearable!
I sped up the movement of my waist!
Pan! Pan! Pan!…My crotch bangs Yukino's ass.
The sound echoes in the stairs!

「Muuun!…nun!…Uuu!…Muu!…Mmuaaan!!」

Yukino's voice is gradually rising though she's biting the cuff…!
I licked Yukino's nape.
Both of my hands is gripping Yukino's breasts and I pierce her waist hard…!
The aphrodisiac Katsuko-san made her drink must still be working…!
Yukino's rising up to the climax…!

「…Hey, cum! Yukino! Cum while being violated like a dog in the stairs!」

I whispered on Yukino's ears while breathing out hot pants…!
I stretched my right hand towards the connecting part and stimulated Yukino's clitoris just like how Katsuko-san did it before.

「…Nunununununununun!!」

Yukino's body is trembling from the pleasure…!
…At that moment!!

「…Nnn!!…Nnnnnnnnnn!!…munuooooooon!!」

Biting her cuff, Yukino's body curved.
Her whole body convulses!
The inside of her vagina tightens firmly!!

「…Nnnnnnnnnnnngu!!」

Yukino's cumming…cumming intensely!!
M-Me too…!

「…I"m cumming…I'm going to let it out again!!」

I pressed in my glans against her womb and poured it inside!
Once…twice…thrice…!
The hot white wave is washing Yukino's womb! It's reaching!

「…Aaaaah!」

Yukino instinctively separate her mouth from the sleeve due to the shock of hot fertilization…

「…I'm glad, I'm happy, I'm happyyyy!!!」

Katsuko-san's 『Imprint』 is perfect
It's possible that Yukino would always shout 『I'm glad』 in any kind of situation, even if she's 『Impregnated』 …

「…Haa, haa, haa, haa…」

We fell down on the middle of the stairs and stayed connected for a while.
Yukino's quietly crying.

I enjoyed the feeling of Yukino's breasts.
I pulled out my penis and faced Yukino.
I licked her nipples…!

「…Uhm, Yoshida-kun…I got a request」

The crying Yukino talks to me while looking up the ceiling, teary eyed…
While I'm licking her nipples

「…Don't say anything to Kenji. Keep everything a secret from Kekji. Please let him continue playing baseball…please」

…Even this is still for Endou?
I bit her nipple.

「Nn!…Don't tell anyone either. Keep it a secret to everyone…that I was raped by you , that I'm no longer a virgin…Ahn!」

Saying that, Yukino cries again.
Yukino's breasts is sticky with my saliva.

「…You have to beg for it properly! From the bottom of your heart!」

Yukino looks at me.
A face holding back tears. This is also cute.
I love her teary face next to her despaired face.

「Please…I beg you」

Yukino bowed to me.
Of course…I won't promise easily.
Let's be a bully!

「…Then, you're going to have sex with me anytime?!」

Yukino trembled.

「At most, if you don't have sex with me a hundred times in one week then Yukino won't be free, right?」

That's Yuzuki-sensei's promise to Yukino…
Yukino looks at me with …eyes of exhaustion, and resignation.

「U-Understood…I'll just have sex with Yoshida-kun, right?… 」
「Reply clearly and concretely! 」

I approached Yukino by imitating Katsuko-san.

「Y-Yukino will have sex whenever Yoshida-kun wants to…I will have sex! 」
「Then bear my child by next year! 」
「Uuu…I'll bear it…I'll give birth okay! 」

Yukino with sperm discharged on her crotch and nipple exposed… breaks down in front of me.
I spoke to Yukino with a smile.

「Very well…Then I'll keep it a secret to Endou! 」
「T-Thank you very much …uuu 」

With this…I finally turned to a 『Human』 from a 『Tool』 in Yukino's head.
A promotion from 『A human vibrator that emits semen』 to 『A threatening rape demon』
It's still far from the position of Katsuko-san and Yuzuki-sensei

「It's not time to cry 」

I scolded Yukino
「Eh? 」, Yukino looked at me

「You have to clean it with your mouth afterwards, right?…! 」

I pushed out my penis dirtied with sperm and love nectar towards Yukino's face.

「…O-Okay…I'lll clean it up 」

Yukino's tongue touched my glans!
She's licking up the penis with semen and love nectar on it…!!

◇ ◇ ◇

When we returned to the classroom, it's two minutes before the fourth class ends.
What's the deal with health being the last class on Saturdays…The teacher in charge, Yamaguchi is a stubborn person so when he's at loss at explaining, he'll just open the door saying 「Oh well」
Yamaguchi looks at me and Yukino.

「Oh, I heard it from the principal. It seems that you two have taken some ability test」

With the word『Ability test』, the whole classroom became noisy

「Well, I'm specialized in physical edutaction so I don't know well but…get on your seats 」

I see…Yuzuki-sensei doesn't make any mistakes.
Endou's glaring at me with hostile eyes.
Ooh, He's not noticing Yukino who's walking bowlegged. Even though Yukino's crotch is soaking wet with cloudy liquid.
Yamamine-san is looking at Yukino with worried face…

The chime for the end of class sounds immediately
When Yamaguchi went out of the class, Endou immediately calls out to Yukino.

「…Yukino, what's the test?」
「…Eh? Ah…Just a character assessment test…The principal said that we're just in time so he asked for our cooperation… 」
「…Really?!」
「T-There's no way for me to lie to Kenji… 」
「I see…then that's fine」

Yukino told Endou a lie again.
Yukino's making more lies because of me. She's becoming good at lying.
The Yukino I hold dear…!

「Sorry, sorry」
「It's fine, it's not something Yukino should apologize for」
「No…Sorry」

Is Yukino apologizing for lying to Endou?
Or could it be for letting me do her body…?
Then…Yuzuki-sensei entered the room fro the return homeroom.
No…not just Yuzuki-sensei?
…Geropa-kouchou too?

「Everyone…can I have a moment?」

Geropa-kouchou entered the platform and talked to the students in the classroom.
Yuzuki-sensei waits in the door of the classroom.

「I heard it from Shirasaka-san a while ago but, Yuzuki-sensei seems to have been forced the students with some excessive guidance…」

The classroom became noisy.
Everyone's glance gathered at Yukino.

「I'm surprised on how this turned out but…for her to ban relationships between students…」

The students bite Geropa's words.

「Of course, that's unfair guidance to disturbed the freedom of the students. I think that Sensei has gone too far in guiding her students. Using sexual harassment like guidance, it's a terrible guidance that must be denounced. I'd like to ask everyone to not worry about the problem of Yuzuki-sensei's guidance. I'd like you to disregard it…!」

「waa!」a shout of joy echoes in the classroom.

「I strictly scolded Yuzuki-sensei. Though she'll be punished by the school somehow in the future, it's Saturday, so the decision will be postponed until the return. However, it's intended for the former teacher, Saegusa-sensei to return to this class…!」

Geropa, talks about it indifferently.
Yuzuki-sensei is having her usual deadpan face.

「Yuzuki-sensei is still a young teacher. She's thinking about the

students too much that she did such an excessive guidance. Everyone, please don't blame Yuzuki-sensei…Sensei, do you have anything to say?

Geropa looks at Yuzuki-sensei.

「…It was a short time but I was happy being in charge. Goodbye everyone」

Yuzuki-sensei's remark was only that.

「But…Yuzuki-sensei's guidance is radical, however, the school side doesn't recommend relationships either. Please keep a clear relationship like high school students It'll be consecutive holidays starting tomorrow so please don't act without restraint!」
「…Yes, understood!」

Omiya who's an easily elated person played a joke over Geropa's words.
The whole classroom made a laugh.
The one's not laughing are…Yukino and me, and…Yamamine-san?

「After that, Shirasaka-san and Yoshida-kun.」 I feel sorry to take the opportunity but thank you for cooperating on the ability test. Thanks for the hard work. Thanks to the two of you, I got good data」

Then, Geropa reinforced Yukino and my alibi.

「…Oh right, Endou-kun」

Geropa suddenly talked to Endou.

「…What?」
「The school side doesn't want to make this matter big. I'm extremely sorry but could you keep this a secret from your father and your uncle…?!」

…Geropa's monkey play
But, Endou…is misunderstanding this as 『his violence incident』 and 『Yuzuki-sensei's excessive guidance』 barter.
When he threatened the principal 『I'll make Yuzuki-sensei's

guidance public』…as a result, his own violence incident was cut off…!

「…Got it! Roger! I'll be keeping this matter closed in my chest!」

Endou smiled vulgarly…
The boy who's making a fool of this world…is intoxicated on his own victory.
A genuine idiot is really something else.

「That's everything from me. Then, everyone…please spend your consecutive holidays happily. I hope to see you attend school cheerfully after the holidays…Good bye!」

Saying that, Geropa went off the platform
The tension in the class was relaxed instantly
…Then

「Oh, wait a moment」

Yuzuki-sensei uttered as if she suddenly remembered something.
Just like that, she went towards Yukino's seat…
The students were surprised.
Yuzuki-sensei took out the liquid crystal badge she presented to Yukino this morning…!

「This, I double checked it with Iwakura-san and it's really yours」

Yuzuki-sensei smiles delightly towards Yukino.
Yukino's having a frightened expression.
…The classroom fell silent.

「…Thank you very much」

Yukino…accepted the liquid crystal badge.

「I was told to wear it on your chest when you're at school…」
「…O-Okay」

Yukino placed the badge on top of the pocket of her uniform.
The figure showing up on the liquid crystal is…『72』!

「Huh, isn't that 『76』 earlier this morning?」
「Is that so?」
「Un…it lowered by 4」

The students mutter.
The number has decreased…by the number she had sex with me.
The number of times Yukino accepted my semen…!
There's still 70 times more remaining!

Looking at the number on the chest, Yuzuki-sensei spoke to Yukino…

「By the way, Shirasaka-san…Are you still a virgin?」

Sensei looks down at Yukino with sneering eyes…!

「Well, it doesn't matter to me anymore whether you're a virgin or not…!」

Yuzuki-sensei looked around the classroom.

「But, everyone must pay attention whether Shirasaka-san is a virgin or not…!」

「Hahaha!」 Yuzuki-sensei left the classroom while laughing loudly. Geropa can't be seen anywhere either.

「…What was that?」
「Should we really appeal to the board of education?!」
「Isn't that fine? She's not our teacher anymore」
「Right」
「Rather than that…Thank you, Yukino-chan!」
「Un, thanks to Yukino, the 『Love ban』 was abolished!」
「Haa, we can now have relationships with this!」
「What's with that, haven't you been doing it as a secret until now?!」
「The feeling is different…Yuzuki's monitoring is lost!」
「Really…it's all thanks to Yukino-chan!」

The students surround Yukino.

「I…Didn't do anything…」

「What are you saying, didn't Yukino-chan negotiated with the principal and made this happen?!」

…This is also a part of Yuzuki-sensei's plan?
Endou called out Yukino who's surrounded by our classmates.

「…Yukino, let's eat! You're hungry aren't you?!」
「Ah,…okay」

Yukino stood up

「Arara, her boyfriend has come!」
「Well, it can't be helped…love lots!」

One of the schoolgirl pushes Yukino's back

「Kenji…What about practice?」
「I can change my clothes at 1:00…But we still have time to take meal in the school canteen!」
「Un…I'll go with you」

Yukino grasped Endou's hand…
The hand touched my penis just moments ago!

「We still have to plan the date …I'm hungry!」
「Me too! Then, the practice ends by 4:00」
「Un…I'll get back home, take a shower and change clothes」
「I brought plain clothes with me…!」

The two walks holding hands.
Looking from the outside, it's a well matched beauty and handsome couple.
They're innocent lovers.

But…Yukino's womb is filled with my semen right now!
My semen drips on her thighs right now.

…Shirasaka Yukino is mine!!

---

1. Wow, Yukino you sound like a girlfriend trying to deny her boyfriend outdoor sex. lol ↩

37. Saturday noon incident

Now then, should I take lunch too?
Or rather…Is Yukino really going to have a date with Endou tonight?
From their talk earlier, she said that she'll go home and change them meet up.
She doesn't intend to have sex with me today anymore?[1]
We already had sex four times and there's still 72 times remaining in seven days.
I think it won't suffice at all…
Even though it's consecutive holidays starting tomorrow…doing 20 days on the last day, no way.
I want to digest the numbers as constant as possible.

While thinking about it…my phone rang.
Unknown number…Or rather, this phone is registered to my father who disappeared from the house.
This phone isn't registered to any of my classmates nor I've told anyone…
Then…Who's this?
I cautiously answered it…

『You're late! Yo-chan, you should answer calls faster!』

Nei-san…?
But, from this tone…she's watching me from somewhere?

『Geez, it's already lunch! Go to the principal's office!』

…Principal's office? The one a while ago?

『Katsun is preparing lunch so hurry up and come!』

◇ ◇ ◇

Arriving at the principal's office, I knocked but there's no response.
Now then, what should I do…When I thought of that, my phone rang again…

『Did you arrive? Then just get in!』

I entered being told so…
The room where I had sex with Yukino earlier.
There's no one here…
…Then.
The bookshelve on the wall of the room slides.

「Come here!」

Nei-san smilingly beckons me from the inside
…What the hell's that?
The interior of the bookshelf in the principal's office has stairs dropping down.

「This is a maisonette style. It's a room under the principal's office but you can only enter from the principal's office. Ah, there's other ways from the outside of the school though! The only way in here inside the campus is through the principal's office!」

Walking down the stairs…Certainly, there's a room with the same area as the principal's room upstairs.
But there are no windows.[2]
Instead, half of the wall of the room is loaded with lots of monitors.
Various locations at school were projected at real time simultaneously…
I wonder, I feel I've seen this somewhere…
Ah, I remember…The secret base on batman movie.

「Yo-chan, You saw the 『English Prep Room』 didn't you? That's a sub of this. This is the main monitoring room. It's the pivot of the monitoring system in the school」

Surely, the number of the monitors, the size are clearly exceeding those at the 『English Prep room』
Half of the room is buried with monitors and computer apparatus.
And the other half of the room…
A big bed surrounded by a lights and camera…
This is already a spectacle seen on studios of adult videos.

「This room is an exclusive room for 『Yuzuki-sensei's toys』! Even

if there's a bed here, you can't just bring in that woman here okay?! 」

Nei-san refers Yukino as 『That woman』…

「I'll be cuddling Yo-chan on that bed okay?! 」

Nei-san told me while having an angelic smile.

「But this is the first floor of the school isn't it? Is there no one noticing that there's a space under the principal's office? 」
「You see, it's well hidden between the pumps, the storage, and the toilet's plumbing that even the contractor won't notice 」

…Haa, is that so?

「The front of the principal's office doesn't have much people passing by, so there's no one that's going to nocie you coming in and out of the principal's office especially in the middle of the class. Then, there's a safe room underground and a passage to outside the school! 」
「…Underground passage? 」

When Nei-san pointed it, I see…there's a stair under the bed that leads to the undergound.

「That's right, this is connected to the parking lot for the school personnel. That's why Maru-chan is coming to this school through that route. Maru-chan would attract a lot of attention when she goes through the main gate right? 」

…Certainly.
That would be the case for a blonde foreign beauty with a wound on her face.

「Okay, come here, lunch is ready… 」

I was surprised from the sudden voice…
Then…Katsuko-san appeared from the stairs connected to the basement!

「Oh, the underground room is exclusive for Katsun! 」

「…Exclusive?」
「Un. It's a storehouse for the camera, machine parts and kitchen!…Yuzuki-sensei always takes meal here」
「Hey hey! Eat now talk later!」

Katsuko-san seems to unbearably love letting people eat.
She puts a platter on top of the table.
I thought that it'll be sandwich again, but it's not…!

「…I made pizza for today!」

That's a freshly baked pizza.

「Ooh!」

Nei-san clapped her hands.
I followed her.

「It's the underground so the heat's not good enough…but since we have brick oven in the mansion, we'll make genuine pizza next time!」

Katsuko-san is really good at cooking…
…But

「N?…Is there anything wrong?!」

Why is Katsuko-san…wearing our uniform?

「Ah, this?! Just a suitable costume when I'm at this school. I won't get suspicious even if I hang around the campus don't you think?」

No…it's suspicious
Rather, I can feel it's strange.[3]
A twenty-one year old girl that has a proportion that would put Caucasian models to shame.
Explosive breasts, and an impactful ass and perfectly tight waist.
Even her face looks like an intellectual baby-face beauty…she's filled with adult charms…
There's no way a female high school student like that exists!!
It's impossible even in AV!!

「Yada! Does it suit me that much?! Yoshira-sama, are you aroused?! Is it erect?! But let's leave sex after meal! Pizza's not delicious if they're cold」

…Katsuko-san
Why is the normal you a regrettable person…?

「Geez, Katsun, you're too greedy! Yo-chan's completely pulling off!」
「My…I apologize!」
「That's right, I'm here too so if you're going to do it…let's do it with the three of us!」

…Nei-san too!
I see, everyone's 『broken』 after all
There's no concept of virtue between 『Toys』 …

「…Oh my, that looks delicious」

Yuzuki-sensei comes down from upstairs.

「Yes, I made three kinds so please take a bite! Raw Ham, Margarita, and anchovy!」

Katsuko-san carries plates from the basement one after another.
Nei-san and Nei helped out too.
There's salad and mashed potatoes prepared too.
Preparations for lunch…complete
Yuzuki-sensei, Nei-san and me surround the table.
Katsuko-san serves the table, standing.
It seems that she's sticking as a maid in front of Yuzuki-sensei.
She'll never eat with her together.
Nei-san told me that they surround the dining table with Margo-san when Sensei's not around.
Katsuko-san's pizza is the real deal.
I haven't eaten pizza from the home delivery so I can't easily compare it but, it's delicious.
From the pizza dough and the cheese, I can already feel that it's special…
The ingredients too

「…Katsuko-san, what's anchovy?」

I haven't eaten such a thing in my entire life.
…Is it something like a fish?

「It's called sardines!」
「Oh…on what language?」
「It's english. In French, it's called Anchois. In Italian, Accigua. Even if you say it's sardines, it's Japanese anchovy variety of fish. At most, eighty percent of the anchovy eaten in the world are made and peru and called anchoveta. That's probably what's used in this pizza…」 4

Yuzuki-sensei taught me.

「…Hee.」
「What's wrong, Yo-chan, making such a strange5 face?」
「No…I just thought that it's the first time I learned some knowledge-like thing from Sensei…」

「…Pu!」 Katsuko-san is about to laugh!
Sensei glanced at Katsuko-san
Katsuko-san endured her laughter…

「…I'm very sorry, Ojou-sama」

Katsuko-san poured in wine on Yuzuki-sensei's glass
That's right, Yuzuki-sense and Nei-san are drinking red wine.

「Drinking wine at noontime…it's like Italian」

When I say that, Katsuko-san laughs again as if I hit a bull's eye.

「Yo-chan, wine and pizza is the best even for non-Italians!」

Nei-san says while licking theglass.

「Yoshida-kun is still 15 years old so you can't drink wine yet…!」 6

Sensei told me.

No…But, Nei-san's drinking it?

Nei-san's a minor, isn't she…?
When I make that kind of face.

「…Nei is already 18 so she's fine」

Sensei said.
But…isn't liquor allowed only on 20 years old?!

「The drinking age for Europe is 18 years old!」

Katsuko-san laughingly told me while looking at my face.
No…This is Japan.[7]

「France and Italy allows 16 years old to drink…Yoshida-kun, you can drink as much as you like on your birthday」

Sensei answered
Well…I'm fine with that
I'm not that interested in liquor…

「hey hey, Yo-chan This is Basil[8], and this is rucola[9]!」

Nei-san pointed on the leaf of the salad and told me.

「Haa…I heard about Basil but, is this real? Also, it's my first time hearing about Rucola」

…Rucola
It feels like a name appearing out of Gundam.[10]
Perhaps, it has a yellow Mono-eye.[11]

「I cultivated this rucola in the mansion!」

Hee, Katsuko-san's gardening?

「Is Yo-chan's mother not interested in making food?」
「…Ah, yes」

Un…my mother is a person that never cooks.
Our daily food is frozen or supermarket dish…

「You're going to eat lots of delicious food with Onee-chan from

now on, okay?!」

…Nei-san!

「I'll teach lots of various food to Yo-chan! I'd be glad to teach Yo-chan lots of things」

Nei-san's pleased with that.

「Oh my, I'll be the one to teach him when it comes to dishes!」

Katsuko-san participates the war.
Well…Certainly, Katsuko-san's the one cooking.
Nei-san's only eating.

「It's fine! I'll be teaching about the meals! Katsun's the one to teach Yo-chan about sex!」

Katsuko-san's eyes rounded from Nei-san's suggestion.

「…I, to Yoshida-sama?」
「That's right! Yo-chan begins to roll the numbers but he still haven't done it with other but that woman, right? Katsun will teach him the various pleasures of sex!」

…Katsuko-san's going to teach me about sex?
Katsuko-san's face reddened then looked at Yuzuki-sensei…
Yuzuki-sensei smiled and answered…

「I think that's a good idea… Katsuko, you've been always a sex slave, raped forcibly, you've always served a man. With this 『I'll teach you about sex』 experience, I think it'll be good for you…!」
「…Ojou-sama!」
「As my 『First』, what do you think on Yoshida-kun who's the 『Seventh』?」

Katsuko-san clearly answered Yuzuki-sensei's question…

「I feel that he's a little brother. I think he's so adorable…!」

…Katsuko-san.

「Then you don't mind, do you? You don't need to serve Yoshida-kun. You don't need to be raped either. You can just be an elder sister who's teaching his dear little brother the splendor of sex. That would be enough…」
「But…Ojou-sama. I don't have experience other than being a sex slave. Can I do it…?!」
「You do know that Yoshida-kun's a beginner in sex…?!」
「…That's, already」

That's right. Katsuko-san watches as the photographer since my first sex.

「When you look at Yoshida-kun having sex, have you ever thought that 『It would better if you do this』, or 『If it was me, I'll do this』…?!」
「…I always do」
「Then shouldn't you just teach him gently…that's easy isn't it?」

Katsuko-san's face shines with hope suddenly…!

「Yoshida-kun, ask Katsuko too. Have her teach you sex. You can't rape her, don't make her serve you either…just get yourself taught…okay?!

Yuzuki-sensei…is going to use me to let Katsuko-san experience sex not as a 『Sex Slave』
Perhaps, she believes that it'll be a good experience for Katsuko-san. In that case…I'd gladly become the test subject.

「Sure! Katsuko-san, please teach me about sex!」
「If you're on the learning standpoint, you'll do anything Katsuko tells you. Can you promise not to not do anything selfish and not do your desires?!」
「…Promise!」
「Katsuko…Yoshida-kun's requesting you this much but, what about you…?」

Katsuko-san had tears on her eyes.

「If you're fine with a woman like me…!!」

Thus, Katsuko-san became my sex teacher…!

「Well then! After Katsun has taught you about sex…Make me feel good okay?!」

Nei-san smiles…!

「Katsun will teach Yo-chan about sex then Yo-chan will have sex with me! Then, I…!」

The angel smiles…!

「I'll become happy with Yo-chan!」

What a chain of happiness…!
That's great if it happens.
…Really
The me right now doesn't feel it yet.
I don't have confidence…that I'll become happy.

「Katsuko…enlarge the fourteenth image…!」

Suddenly…Yuzuki-sensei gives Katsuko-san an order.
I can't see it as it's hidden from the long black hair but it seems that Sensei's watching the campus with an earphone on her all the time…

「Okay, I'll enlarge 14…!」

The image of the school canteen is reflected on the biggest monitor on the wall…!
Endou and Yukino at the center!
Yukino is on the same state from the classroom this morning.
She's flirting with Endou a lot…
Talking in loud voice and laughing.
Her expression is gay[12]…But it feels a bit strange[13]
She looks like she's forcing herself to smile…

「…Katsuko, play sound」

The tapped voice flows from the speaker…!

『…Then you see, mama and my lil sis…!!』
『Ah…Yukino, I have to go to the club soon』
『Eeh? Can we stay for a bit longer?!』
『No, it'll get dangerous. My seniors would gather if I don't change my clothes sooner』
『Geez, you're so boring』
『Actually, the first years have to be on the ground earlier but…I'm decided to become a regular, the supervisor seems to be pleased with me. That's why I can leave it to the other first years. Thus I was able to chat with Yukino until now!』
『…But～』
『The first years are my underlings so what I want will happen but…that won't do with the seniors. I may have been a regular even though I'm a first year but their pride would be hurt…On top of that, Yukino's here too』
『…Me?』
『That's right. When I began dating such a beauty like Yukino, they're all jealous! Well, I don't mind about those guys who don't have talent and unpopular saying something but…But, I don't want to be targetted on practice. I don't want to be strangled behind the supervisor after all…!』
『…Right』
『You too, try to be friendly with the seniors. Especially the captain, Ataka-san and the Ace, Takimoto-senpai. You won't be able to survive the baseball club when you got hated by those. Both of them are the types that can do baseball but not women, anyway, you should just smile on them』
『…Got it』
『Everyone in the baseball club are virgins so they'd already go hands down when someone like Yukino smiles at them Maybe if Yukino shows her legs, those guys would nosebleed and collapse?』
『…Gees, baka』

Both of them are laughing.

「Endou-kun's amazing. He's saying all of that even though he's a virgin too…」

Sensei mutters.

「Eh, is that so?」

「Every year, on the night where the new members of the baseball club's training camp, after the new members introduce themselves, they have to express whether they're a『virgin or not』」
「…Could it be that too?」
「I recorded it properly. The scene where Endou-kun announces that he's a『virgin』 On that place, there's a new member who came from the same middle school as Endou so there's no mistake. There's a rule that if you tell a lie, you'd be ostracized by the club…」

Haa…Endou. Even though you're a virgin, you're getting carried away just because you have a girlfriend.
No…he's being proud because he's a virgin

『Oh right…Yukino. Wait in front of the ground by 4:00. I want to show off your casual clothes the guys at the baseball club. Then let's hold hands going off to the date. Is that fine?』
『Un…Okay』

Yukino smiles towards Endou.
What's with this baka kappuru…!14

『Then, I'll get going!』
『Un…Do your best in your practice!』

…Then, Endou left.
Yukino was left alone in the school canteen.
Yukino sucked strawberry milk from the paper carton with a straw.
Puffed up lips…
The lips that fellated me an hour ago…
Yukino had a worried face and let out a sigh…

「How about we try shaking her up a bit…!」

Yuzuki-sensei took out her phone.
When she pushed her phone…Yukino's phone rings…!
Yukino got startled…
She answered the phone timidly.

「…Hello, Shirasaka-san? It's me, Yuzuki」

Yukino's surprised!

『…How?』
「How? It's not strange for the teacher to know the phone number of the students, is it?」

Or rather…Yukino had her phone left in Sensei's mansion for one night.
All of the information in her phone might've been taken during that night.
That night, in that mansion, Katsuko-san, Nei-san and Margo-san were there…

「By the way, Shirasaka-san…About today's sex club activities」
『Today…please let me off the hook today』
「Are you sure?…There's still 72 runs remaining」
『I'll do that share…tomorrow. That's why, please let me free for today…!』
「Well, if you're fine with that, I won't force you. It would be holiday starting tomorrow so you might make time if you get ravished from morning till evening」
『Anyway…please spare me for today…!』
「…Got it」

Sensei hung up the phone.
Yukino on the screen shows up a relieved expression…!

「Katsuko…how do you analyze that?」

Sensei asked for Katsuko-san's opinion.

「Her emotional ups and downs is too intense…she looks like she's planning something」
「You think so too?」
「Yes」

…Huh?
In the monitor…there's another person approaching Yukino's table…?
A tall girl dressed on the athletic club's jersey…
That's…Yamamine-san…!

『…Yukino, do you have a moment?』

Yukino turned her eyes away from Yamamine-san.

『…What do you want?』

Yamamnie-san turned to Yukino's front and spoke.

『Yukino's acting strange15 for these past two to three days. Did something happen?』
『…That's unrelated to you』
『If you want, you can talk to me…I can help』
『…I told you that you're unrelated to this! Leave me alone!』
『I can't leave you alone…!』

Yamamine-sans's long and narrow eyes looks at Yukino lonely…!

『Please stop acting like a good person!』

Yukino shotued…!
The school canteen became noisy…!

『…Yukino』
『Don't call me by my name! We don't have that kind of relationship!』
『…But, Yukino's Yukino. For me…』
『I told you not to call me by my name didn't I?! I don't want my name to be called by a person like you!』
『…But!!』
『Shut up!!…I hate you! You hypocrite! Liar! You're the kind of woman I hate most!』

She's already in hysteria…!
The negative emotions that were accumulated inside Yukino…the extreme anger and hatred, was thrown at Yamamine-san…!

『Yukino…I just…I just want to get along with you!』
『Don't joke with me…! A daughter of a foul woman shouldn't be talking to me openly!』
『…Don't talk about my mother』
『What? Your mother is a prostitute!!』

…Pashin!

Yamamine-san…slapped Yukino!
Yamamine-san's crying

『…No , my mother's not like that!』

Yukino just holds the slapped cheek and glares at Yamamine-san with hatred…!

『Hmm…You're going to raise your hand when I talk about the truth! You're the worst! A vulgar mother has a vulgar daughter after all…』
『…Yukino!』
『I told you not to call me by my name didn't I!? You're living because of my father's pity, you're getting full of yourself…You shouldn't have been born!』

Yukimno's words struck Yamamine-san's chest!

『…Don't talk to me anymore! Don't get close to me! Don't even approach my vision!』

Saying that, Yukino threw the half-drunk strawberry milk pack towards Yamamine-san…!
The pack hit Yamamine-san's face and broke!
Yamamine-san's face got sticky with the strawberry milk.

『…You're cruel』
『…The cruel one is your mother! Disappear from my world! I'm going crazy from being on the same class as you! Stop going to this school! Go to a different one!』
『…I wanted to make friends with you, in this school…!』
『Don't make me laugh! Who'd do that…die, idiot! Go and die alone on a mountain! Just like your mother!』

"Waa"…Yamamine-breaks down

『…No…My mother died from an accident…she didn't kill herself…!!』

The school canteen fell silent.

Yukino felt awkward so she stood up and left the canteen.
While everyone in the canteen is paying attention to her…
Yamamine-san who's left behind didn't stop crying…
One of her friends from the athletics club wipes Yamamine-san's face that's painted with milk…
The other girls gives comforting words to Yamamine-san.
Still…Yamamine-san doesn't raise her face and just continued crying.…

Just what's the deal with Yukino and Yamamine-san?

「…Yoshida-kun, do you want to know about her?」

Yuzukii-sensei asked me.
Sensei surely knows about everything.
…But

「No…I don't think it's good to know it in secret」
「…Is that so?」
「…Yes」

Even I don't want them to know about my family.
That's why…I
Nei-san embraced me from behind…
Her rich breasts hits my back…!

「Onee-chan loved that part of Yo-chan!」

Nei-san whispered to my ears.
…Nei-san.

「Oyaoya, it seems to be an uproar on the school canteen…」

Looking at the source of the voice…Margo-san is going up from the basement's stairs.
I see…that's the passage to outside.

「Margo-san, well done…how was it?」

Margo-san answered Sensei's' question.

「Yes, as expected, Nagisa-san's got into trouble…」

「…She's being standoffish. She could've just consulted us if she was in trouble」

Sensei muttered.
…Nagisa-san, who?

「Nagisa-san is our senpai…The『Second』!」

…Second!
Could that be…the 『Toy』who was released after giving birth…?!

---

1. I love how you think Yoshida. so honest to desires ↩
2. Kuromori confirmed applefag ↩
3. Dormammu ↩
4. The more you know ↩
5. Dormammu ↩
6. Dammit, why do I feel so defeated?! ↩
7. And you're reading it in English, amazing isn't it? ↩
8. https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Basil ↩
9. https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Eruca_sativa ↩
10. Told you guys, Yoshida's way of thinking is funny ↩
11. http://gundam.wikia.com/wiki/SD_Gundam:_G_Generation:_Monoeye_Gundams ↩
12. Happy ↩
13. Dormammu! ↩
14. Idiot couple ↩
15. Dormammu! ↩

◇ Nagisa and Misuzu Arc

38. Margo Highway

「As for the trouble…?」

Yuzuki-sensei asked Margo-san.

「It looks like a local Yakuza. Yakuza wants the rights to Nagisa-san's shop…」
「She's being marked…」
「…It seems so」
「…Nagisa-san's a beauty after all」 1

Nei-san added.
Nei-san, seems to have met Nagisa-san…the 『Second』

「Though you said Yakuza, they're underlings, aren't they? They don't know Nagisa's shop's relation with me after all…!」

Sensei asked Margo-san.

「That's right. It seems that they're people who recently came from Kansai」
「…Do you know the 『Boss』 of those?」
「I already checked it out.」

Margo-san handed sensei a small memo.

「Oh, they're with them. Got it. I'll talk to their 『Boss』 …smash those Yakuza's thoroughly. We have to let the people from the underground to know the danger of interfering with this land once again…!」

Just who is Yuzuki-sensei?
Is she acquainted with Yakuza…?

「Anyway, Margo, go to Nagisa and tell her to not worry about it…!」
「Right, I will」
「Uhm…Ojou-sama!」

Katsuko-san who's listening with such a worried face asked Sensei.

「…What?」
「Uhm…Could I meet Nagisa too?」

I see…Nagisa-san's the 『Second』 so she's at the same age as Katsuko and must be a close friend.
Katsuko-san must be anxious from her friend's crisis.

「You can't…Katsuko always loses her cool when it comes to Nagisa…!」
「But…!」
「Anyway, not today. You have to set up the next 『Trap』 with Nei, don't you?」
「…Yes」

…Next 『Trap』 ?!

「Yoshida-kun, go with Margo」
「…Yes?」
「It's a Yakuza shop but you don't mind it, do you?」
「Well…I don't」

I don't care about Yakuza in particular.
Rather than that, I…Uhm

「Oh, you're curious about Shirasaka-san? It's fine, just return to school by 4:00 p.m. She's going back to her home, wash her body and change clothes anyway…fufufu」

Sensei's laughing unexpectedly…?

「Do you think that Shirasaka-san still uses that ridiculous syringe to wash her vagina? Perhaps she still does, she has that kind of character after all… She's going to do it immediately when she comes home. Even though it can't dig up your semen deep in her womb…!」

Sensei laughed loudly.

「I'll do something about it so it's fine to leave Shriasaka-san. For once, we can always know the contents of her calls and her

location…I'll be tracking Shirasaka-san so don't worry」

If Sensei declares that far, it'll probably be fine…

「Then let's go…Katsuko-san and Nei, I'll drive you halfway…」
「Maru-chan, you came here in a car…?」
「Yeah」
「The blue or the white?」
「The blue one」
「Yay!…I'll get in then! Katsun, let's ride that car!」

Nei-san calls out Katsuko-san in delight.

「Please wait a moment…I'm going to change clothes!」

Oh right…Katsuko-san's dressed in forbidden uniform2

「Ah, then I'll change clothes too…! There's some clothes for me underground?!」
「Yes. I laundered it and dried it up…!」

◇　◇　◇

We went down from Yuzuki-sensei's secret room to the basement. Certainly, there's a passage leading to the depths in the room. Margo-san and I waited in front of Katsuko-san's exclusive room as the two change their clothes…

「Do you remember when I talked about Nagisa-san running a flower shop after being released as 『Sensei's toy?』」

Margo-san talks to me…

「Yes」

Un, I think there was that talk.

「A flower shop you see, it looks like calm and gets entangled with lots of concessions」
「…Concessions?」
「Un. For example, wedding halls, or funerals, or an exclusive contract, it's certainly earning a lot of revenue. There's a lot of

places needing flowers throughout the year」
「Oh, I see」
「That's why there's a fair number of Yakuza running a flower shop as side business. Because those people would really get into those people celebrating something」
「I see」
「The flowers used on the entrance ceremony and graduation ceremony in this school are all from Nagisa-san's shop」
「Then, the concessions Yakuza is aiming at…!」

Margo-san laughs.

「There's no such thing! The flowers the school wholesales aren't worth much!」
「…Then it's not?」
「Several years ago, there was a big hotel at the station, right?」
「…That 20 story building?」
「Un Nagisa-san's shop is contracted to that hotel…Yuzuki-sensei's major shareholder of that hotel」

Sensei does that far even for the 『Toy』 that retired…

「Mihano will never throw away her 『Toy』 For her, she has to support the 『Toy』 she has created even if it parted from her」
「…Is that so?」
「A 『Toy』 and a 『Child』 at the same time. Yuzuki Minaho is a person who wants to be a mother」

…Mother?

「Katsuko-san's a maid, Nei-san wants to become an elder sister」

Everyone of them has something they wish for?

「Ah, remember this. In this school, only this underground passage has no hidden camera nor microphones. No one but us can use this. If ever you had something that you don't want Minaho to hear, do it here…keep it short so you won't get doubted」

Margo-san told me laughingly.

「…Thanks for the wait～!」

The two of them came out from Katsuko-san's room.
Nei-san's wearing a show through pink dress and a shopping bag.
Leather sandals on her foot.
It feels like she's a cute beauty model walking around.
Maybe her clothes are branded from France or something.
She looks so mature but there's the freshness of a high school student too…
This person's fashion sense is outstanding…!

「What do you think? Does it suit me?」
「Yes, it suits you very much」
「Nn! Yo-chan, I love you!」

N-Nei-san, don't embrace me…
I beg you.

「How about me…?!」

Katsuko-san is wearing a black pants and white shirt.
She's wearing a big turquoise necklace on her neck
Her feet is wrapped in black pups as expected…
This person basically loves black and white.
But her figure is different from her usual maid clothes, it's my first time seeing her looking like a 21 year old woman.
Somehow, she's like a very smart woman from a university…This is good too!

「It suits you Katsuko-san, I think you should wear that more」

When Margo-san said that, Katsuko-san:

「Then how about Margo-sama wear skirts more!」

She retorted.

「I don't think that it's good to expose my muscular legs…!」
「That's not true…! Maru-chan has it tight like an athlete so I think that you should show it off! Don't you think, Yo-chan?!」
「…Ah, yes」

Un. I think that's cool. Like a spy woman in an action movie.

「…I give up」

Margo-san looks embarrassed but she doesn't look dissatisfied at all.

◇ ◇ ◇

The underground passageway has low ceiling and narrow road.
Well , it's approximately two meters so there's no need to lower our heads.
The tall Margo-san walks with care.
The width is about one meter? It's impossible to walk with two people side by side.
There's a step light turned on every five meters.
When we finally reached our destination…we got off on the storehouse near the parking lot for the school personnel
Inside it is a secret garage.

…hey?
…What's with this high quality sports car?

「It's this one! Maru-chan's blue car…!」

What's there is an aerodynamic sharp gar enshrined.

「This is my favorite car, Maserati Granturismo S…!」 3

「…It's amazing isn't it?」
「No, there's no other choice when it comes to speed and letting four adults in. In my case, I can't use a car that can't load luggage and two people in it」

Margo-san said it as if it was natural.

「Ferarri only has two seats after all」
「That said, Benz and BMW is too common that it's boring」
「Oh my, my BMW is the best!」
「Katsuko-san…don't lump motorcycles and cars together」

Margo-san gave her honest opinion to Katsuko-san.

「Anyway, get in, Yoshida-kun and Katsuko-san on the rear seats. Nei's on the shotgun」

「Yay～!」

It's four-seater but it only has two doors, Katsuko-san and I entered first.
I'm on the back of the driver's seat and Katsuko-san's behind the shotgun.
Fixing the seat, Margo-san and Nei-san took their seats too.

「Wait a moment, I'm confirming how it looks like outside first…」

Margo-san checks the state outside the garage with an in-vehicle-monitor.

「Un, there's no one here…Let's go」

The shutter of the garage opened through the remote control
The light from outside is so bright!

「…Let's go!」

Douruuruuruurun!!!!
Guaaaaaaa!!
Gyaruuruuruuruuru!!

「…Uhiiiiiiiiiii!!」

…G-God!
Why is everyone around Yuzuki-sensei doing accelerated start?

◇　◇　◇

The car immediately went through the school grounds and forward to the town.

「Then…where's Katsuko-san's target now?」

When Margo-san asked, Katsuko opened her laptop.

「Though we'll be meeting at the station at 1:30…ah, I got the location of her phone. It's in front of the fashion mall」
「Roger!」

Margo-san runs the car in that direction
There's a lot of pedestrian during Saturday afternoon…
Nei-san's looking around restlessly from the passenger seat…!

「…Ah, there she is!」

It seems she found out her target

「Yoshida-sama, please hide yourself for a moment」

Katsuko-san covered me with a thick blanket and pushed me to the back of the driver's seat.

「…Wait, Katsuko-san?」
「We can't show you from the outside…」

Katsuko-san handed me a small monitor.
I see, the state outside is reflected.
It seems that there's a pinhole camera on Katsuko-san's necklace.

「…Maika-chan! Come here!」

Nei-san shows her face from the passenger seat's window and waved her hand!

「Ah…Nei-saaan!」

…N?
From the other side, three middle school students are walking lightly!
Their uniform is…is from the famous Ojou-sama middle school that even I know.
Old style thin colored sailor blouse. Green scarf.
The three of them are a bit grown up, they folded up their skirt on their stomachs and make it look like they're wearing miniskirt.
Their socks are navy blue, and they have a badge coming from their school.
The shoes are black leather.
The three of them are cute, but the child named『Maika-chan』is exceptionally cute.
Indeed a beauty.
Her hair is braided and fastened with a yellow ribbon.

Her eyes are big and her nose is well shaped.
I'm sure she'll be a beauty in the future…
Her breasts is still small as expected…

「Ehehe, I brought my friends」

The girl named Maika-chan told Nei-san laughingly.

「I don't mind it at all! I love cute girls after all!」

Nei-san talks to her intimately.
…What's their relation?

「That's amazing, is this car from Nei-san's family?」
「You see, this is Maru-chan! I told you about her before, didn't I? She's my best friend…」
「Margo 『Highway』 Starkweather…Nice to meet you little misses」
「So stylish! A foreign!」

The middle school girls cheered at Margo-san on the driver seat.
Of course, Margo-san's a beauty. She's tall. A foreigner. She's a sportswoman.
The wound no her face makes her look like a soldier, that makes her gallant and cool.
I think she'll be popular to the middle schoolgirls.

「Hello, Maika-chan…and her friends」

Katsuko-san comes fromt he seat and says hello to the middle school students.

「Ah, Katsuko-san, good day. Emi-chan, Yuu-chan, this is Katsuko-san」
「Uwaa, she's really a super beauty!」
「Then what about me?!」

Nei-san looks angry at the middle school sltudents.

「Because, isn't Nei-san super cute?! Then Katsuko-san's super beautiful and Margo-san is super cool!」

Maika-chan made a follow up.

「Uh-huh, It's great that you get it!」

The middle school students laughs with Nei-san.
Oh…Nei-san's the type loved by younger girls.
Somehow, it's a new refreshing aspect.

「We only have two hours for today but me and Nei would teach you a lot from fashion and make-up!」

Katsuko-san said smiling.
As for this person…when it comes to middle school students,
Katsuko-san would be a adult they'd long for.
Beautiful, gentle, bright…

「Thank you very much…Uhm, what about Margo-san?」

Margo-san answered Maika's question fluently

「Sorry. I still have work left to do Maybe next time」
「Then, Maru-chan. Thank you for sending us off!」

Nei-san opened the door and get off the car.
Katsuko-san knocked over the seat then went after her…

「Then, take care Nei. Katsuko-san, I'll leave her to you」
「…Certainly」
「Maru-chan, later~!」
「Margo-san, goodbye!」

Margo-san starts the car.
She let the engine make a huge bururururun sound on purpose.
The middle school students shouted happily.
Margo-san accelerates the Maserati after hearing their voice.

Thirty seconds later, Margo-san stopped the car…

「You can get out now. It must be hot under the blanket」
「Yes, it's hot」

The weather at the end of April…is quite difficult.

「Get in the shotgun…it would be hard to talk if you're in the back」

Being told so, I moved from the rear seat to the passenger seat.
Of course, it's impossible to move inside this sports car so I opened the door, went out and took a seat.

「The child earlier, don't you think Maika-chan's cute?」
「She's really cute…who's she?」
「You don't know?…Who do you think she looks like?」

…Err
…Certainly, it's a face I've seen before.
Wait, who's someone as cute as her?
I don't know celebreties…

「That child's full name is…!」

Margo-san smiled.

「…Shirasaka Maika!」

Wait…
Yukino's…little sister!

「Right, they look alike don't they?」

C-Certainly…now that I'm told, they really do look alike!

「Eh…What does this mean?」

I asked Margo-san instinctivley…

「Three days ago, Nei and Katsuko-san met her by chance…Of course that's planned though…then, they became friends」

Three days ago…that's the day Endou hit me…
I haven't raped Yukino yet that time…
Yuzuki-sensei's moving her plan already from such a time…!

「By the way…are you okay with Lolis?」
「…What?」

「Right, High school first years and middle school second years only have two years difference so it would be strange to call it Lolicon…!」
「…What do you mean?」
「It's about having sex with that child…!」

…Eh?
Having sex with a middle school student…Yukino's little sister?!
That small child…!

「It's fine. You can already have sex once you're thirteen years old. My first experience was when I was twelve after all…!」

…Margo-san

「You see…I was raped. Captured by three men…I was gangraped」

Margo-san turns forward and drives

「…Is that so?」
「…Un. That's why, I'd like you to be gentle with Maika」

Just like that…the silence inside the car continuned
For a while, I watched the hustle of the town outside the window.
…Before long.

「…Got it」
「…Eh?」
「I just need to have sex with that child, do I? Sure. I'll do it」
「…Are you sure?」
「I promised Yuzuki-sensei that I'll follow any or her orders…I'll rape anyone. I'm already prepared」
「…Is that so?」

The car made a curve…

「…You really don't want to hear the reason?」
「…What?」
「Why is that child's the target, or why do you need to have sex with her…you don't want to know it?」 4
「I'm sure that there's a lot of reasons…if it's better to tell me then

someone would tell me, if there's no need then I think that I don't need to know」
「Are you sure about that?」
「…Yes. I'm not good a thinking after all. Even if I get talked to, I might not get it…I think that it's better to let me take time to understand it」
「I see…so you think like that」

Margo-san seems to be lost in thought.

「You, really don't question anything about us…are you not interested in Nei, Katsuko or my past?」
「I can't say I'm not interested. But…I don't think that I should be the one asking. Even I have some things I don't want to talk to other people…」
「But, we know everything about you. Your house. I've read Yuzuki-sensei's investigation…」
「But…reading from a written document and hearing the story from the person directly is different. If the person himself talks, you'd feel the pain and the actual emotions」
「You think so?」
「…Yes」
「…You see…I like that part of you」
「…Margo-san?」
「Only foolish men would ask too much. They're misunderstanding questioning women as gentleness. 『Which country did you come from? Do you like Japan? You look buffed, are you doing sports? What's with that wound on your face?』…They'd ask, then they'd press and show that 『I'm interested in you』…That's disgusting」

Margo-san…as expected had some various hardships when she came to live in Japan coming from another country?

「You're that kind of child so Minaho didn't make you a dick slave but the 『Seventh』 You're someone we need right now…」

…Need?
…Me?

「Nei's frequently asking to have 『Sex』 with you, isn't she?」
「…Yes」

「Don't take her seriously…Don't force yourself on her」
「Ah…Okay」
「…You see…Nei has androphobia」

…Androphobia?!
…Nei-san?!

「…That child's almost raped by a man three times. She was always saved on the last moment…the most recent one was someone I shot dead. With a pistol」

…Margo-san murdered?

「That's why…Nei's still a virgin, she haven't even kissed a man. It's a really severe androphobia. Talking to men, even being on the same space as them…is painful for her

…Nei-san?!

「I…should I be with her?」
「She's quite used to you so I think she's not scared anymore」

Could that be she's not seeing me as a man?

「You see, Nei's a child who really can't live in a community. That child is too beautiful that she stands out. When Nei-sits down on a classroom, men would come near one after another and make advances at her… Even girls, those with normal looks would be jealous of Nei's beauty that they'd do terrible things…insult her, hide her stuff…!」

…It seems so. I can imagine it.
A too beautiful girl living in a society named school would be fairly difficult.

「That's why…Minaho could help but protect Nei」
「…Could that be?」
「That's right. Her blond hair and contact lens, the bad rumors about being a delinquent are all means to defend Nei from everyone. It is to isolate Nei from the normal student…」

That's why Nei-san is.

Always alone.

「Nei can't live with normal children…I'm the same though. But that girl is really a gentle one. That child's bright and frank character is matched with her blond hair and blue contact lens, she made that herself…!」

Margo-san smiled sadly…

「Whenever Nei has to go out, there's definitely someone with her…Just like how Katsuko-san is with her right now. That child is still afraid to walk alone in the town because of men. There's someone observing her in the school. We're always watching each other, helping each other. Nei towards Katsuko-san and me. Katsuko-san towards Nei and me. I towards Nei and Katsuko-san. We're watching over one another so that one won't be broken」

They're complementing each other like that…
Huh, wait a moment.
Then who's watching over Sensei?
Also, Iwakura-kaichou?

「But, Nei's already 18, so we can't leave her like this, don't you think? That's why Minaho chose a boy like you, someone Nei won't be afraid of」
「Am I that docile?」
「Un. You're honest, obedient, you won't do something that Nei would hate. …Nei talked about her little brother, didn't she?」
「Yes…the one who died」
「Un. I can't talk any more than this but…Perhaps, Nei won't be able to love anyone other than her brother…」

She can't love anyone other than her brother

「Hey…You've already given up on your life. You said that you don't care whatever happens from now on, right?」
「Yes」
「Then…how about becoming Nei's little brother? Of course, it's not just a metaphorical question. A true brother. Becoming her little brother throughout your life…until you die」

That's…taking responsibility for Nei-san for the rest of my life.
Can I even do that?
I don't have anything to take responsibility for myself.

「…I'll think about it」
「Un. Think about it carefully」

Margo-san's eyes were serious.

「…But, that's slightly regrettable」
「…what is?」
「If I ever become her little brother…I won't be able to have sex with Nei-san」

I leaked out a sigh and Margo-san smiled.
Of course…I intended it as a joke

「…What are you saying?!」

…Shit. I overdid it.
Margo-san's angry.

「Nei can't have sex with anyone other than her little brother! Being Nei's little brother means that you'll have sex with her for the rest of your life」

T-That's…!

「Well, I think that Nei would allow you to marry and have sex with other woman since you're her little brother. It's just that you need to have sex with Nei for the rest of your life…」 5

Nei-san, throughout my life?!
What kind of nirvana is that?!
No…that's not it
…It's a lifetime thing.
You can divorce marriage but being a little brother is forever.
Then…I should live for Nei-san…!

「Anyway, think about it. Oh, keep this talk a secret from Nei, okay?」
「Ah, of course」

「In exchange, I'll tell you one of my important secrets…」

Margo-san's secret…
Then…the talk about her being raped when she was twelve is not a secret at all?…

「You know that I have an American Indian blood, don't you?」 6
「…Yes」
「In our tribe…children born will have a nickname of the thing first saw when born. The first thing you'd see after being evicted from your mother's stomach That's why, depending on the house, you prepare a gold coin, or show the blue sky outside the window. Then, you'd have 『Gold』 or 『Blue Sky』 as your name」
「…I see」
「…You see, my birth was sudden. Indian settlements don't have a proper hospital so I was labored on the way to the town…That's why I was born in the middle of the highway. In short, the first thing I saw when I was born is a straight road paved with asphalt… Highway. That's why I'm Margo 『Highway』 Starkweather」

Margo-san said then laughed…

「…This, is really a secret you can't tell anyone but a close friend」

---

1. A hot MILF to boot ↩
2. Forbidden because she's too lewd ↩

3. ↩
4. It’s sex, is there a need to ask? ↩
5. DEAL! ↩
6. Trump deported her to Japan ↩

39. Nagisa's Pauline[1]

Nagisa-san's shop is in the front of the main street's station.
A simple and elegant three story building.
It has a fairy tale design which reflects an image an old folk house on Europe, the wooden frame is combined with a geometric white wall.[2]
The first floor is the flower-shop, the second floor is an office and a flower classroom, the third floor seems to serve as the home.
The name of the shop is…『Schwarz Wald』[3]

「…That means 『Black Forest』in German」

Margo-san told me.
The car stopped in front of the parking meter of the road…

「The local Yakuza avoids the shop with that name but…the other guys from outside don't know about it…」

It seems that the name 『Kuromori』is famous in the underworld…

「…Let's go」

Margo-san gets off the car…
The shop is considerably prosperous.

「…Welcome～!」

A cute voice suddenly showers Margo-san and me suddenly.
The clerks are…One, two, three, four…five people.
Wow…they're all cute girls.
From a child doing part time job in high school to a young lady on her twenties…

「…I came here for Nagisa-san」

Then…When Margo-san said that, the interior of the shop.

「Ah, Margo-chan!」

Looking at it, there's a three year old girl running towards this way.
What's with this fairy?!
The little girl on a white cotton dress runs and lets her fluffy hair wave like the wind.
Her bangs is ordered straight.
The hair on her right ear is fastened and dangling.
Her eyes are very big.

「Mao-chan, it's been a while…you've grown a lot」

When Margo-san said that, the girl pouted

「Mao's not a big girl! She's the smallest in the nursery school! 」
「…Oyaoya」
「…Mao. It can't be helped, the nursery gathers all ages after all. Isn't Mao the biggest among the children of her age?」

A woman appeared…
An intellectual beauty in glasses∽
Her black hair is tied up and gathered at the back.
A patterned blouse opened around the chest and an active looking pants…her charming legs is coming out clearly.
She's generally slim but her height isn't so tall.
Her breasts…she's got some. Bigger than Yukino.
That woman had a calm and bright atmosphere but I can also feel her charisma as the owner of this shop.
Perhaps, she's Nagisa-san.
She's the same age as Katsuko-san so, she's 21 years old.
And, a mother of one child…

「I came here thinking that you might need some help」

Margo-san smiled at Nagisa-san.
Nagisa-san sighed.

「Yuzuki-sensei knows everything as always…let's talk in the upper floor」

Nagisa-san invited Margo-san and me inside…
There's a stairs to the upper floor there.

「Miyuki-chan, I'll leave the shop to you…Just call us when something happens」
「Yes, Tenchou4」

The beauty in ponytail responded to Nagisa-san.

「Mao, come with us…you want to talk with Margo-onee-san, don't you?」
「Yaaay~!」

Mao-chan followed Nagisa-san's back…

「Children are so cute…」

Margo-san muttered to me…

◇ ◇ ◇

We didn't go to the second floor but towards the third floor which is Nagisa-san's residence.
The living room is settled cleanly.
A set of building blocks for Mao-chan is queued up on the side of the table…

「It was a mayhem since it was the first time they looked after her…」5

Nagisa-san talks while carrying apple pie and tea.
Margo-san holds Mao-chan and pats her head.

「But, isn't she so cute?」
「Un, Mao-chan's cute! Lots of fathers on the nursery school keeps praising me, saying that I'm cute…!」

Un. Certainly…I really think that she's a cute girl.

「Geez, Mao. …This child goes to other children's father coming to get their child then asking everyone of them 『I'm I cute?』 You're making your mama embarrassed!」
「It can't be helped, Mao's cute after all…even Mama is being told like that!」
「…What about Nagisa-san?」

Margo-san asked Mao-chan.

「You see…Mama is always being praised by various Oji-san, saying that she's 『Beautiful』 on nursery, on the shop, or even on the floral market!」
「…Mao!」
「Fufuun! You're popular as ever」
「…Geez, don't say that…You're embarrassing mama!」
「Okaaay～!」

Mao-chan laughed.

「But…you got involved into something troublesome this time, didn't you?」
「…Right. You do know that the flower shop goes to the market to stock every morning, right? If it's there, I'll be meeting the other shop traders…」
「…Hashizawa firm, was it?」
「You already know everything…That's right. A flower shop Yakuza runs.. They're telling me to hand over the contract with the hotel entirely. Taking the opportunity, hand over my body too. They seem to have a woman as a leader」
「…We'll settle all of it tomorrow. Minaho already gave her consent. We'll crush them thoroughly!…」
「…Margo-san always helps me」
「Don't mind it. Nagisa-san is the 『Second』 and I'm the 『Third』 It's normal to help each other, don't you think?」
「I'm no longer the 『Second』 I should've become independent from Yuzuki-sensei and yet…in the end she always takes care of everything, every time…I really fell sorry」
「It's fine. Even if you're retired, Nagisa-san will always be the 『Second』 for Minaho. It's fine to depend on her. Minaho would be pleased that way」
「…But」

Mao spoke while eating the apple pie wide mouthed.

.「…Mao hates Yuzuki-sensei!」
「…Mao!」

Nagisa scolds her daughter!

Margo-san holds off Nagisa-san…

「Why do you hate Sensei, Mao-chan, could you tell me?」

Then, the little girl spoke gently…

「…Yuzuki-sensei gave Mao a weird name! I like Mago-chan! You gave Mao the name 『Mao』」

…Eh, what does this mean?
Hahaha, Margo-san laughs then looks at me.

「…I'm Mao-chan's godparent」

Hee…Is that so?

「Just on the time when I was having a crash course on Japanese Kanji…her mother's name is 『Nagisa』, isn't it? Then, I looked up on a CN-JP dictionary to look for the same radical kanji!」

…Could it be?
…Thus, it's 真『緒』6

「By the way…when I suggested it, Minaho said that she prefers 『Inoshishi(Wild Boar)』…!」
「…Eh, she's joking isn't she?」
「No…She's serious. That person's naming sense is strange. When she was a child, she named a bird she was keeping 『Tobu(Fly)』 her pet dog 『Hoeru(Bark)』
「…That's why Mao hates Yuzuki-sensei!」

…Well, certainly
…Such a cute child could never be a 『Wild Boar』…

Margo-san embraces Mao-chan's angry face gently, then she kissed her forehead…

「You can't say that…Mao-chan, who gives you birthday presents?」
「…Yuzuki-sensei」
「Who gave you Christmas presents?」
「…Yuzuki-sensei」

「Who gave Mao-chan new year presents?」
「…Yuzuki-sensei」
「Who's the one giving you all the clothes and dolls?」
「…Yuzuki-sensei」

Yuzuk-sensei's doing that far?!

「You see…Minaho always worries about Nagisa-san and Mao-chan. She loves both of you. She's slightly mean sometimes but… she's a kind person」
「That's right. Isn't that what I'm always telling you? If Yuzuki-sensei wasn't there, mama will never become happy with Mao. Sensei took care of mama. Mama's always grateful to her…that's why, you must not hate Yuzuki-sensei」

Mao-chan looksk up at Nagisa-san and Margo-san.
Then she smiled at the two gently…

「…I'm sorry Mama. Mago-chan…I'll try to love Yuzuki-sensei…!」
「Thanks…Mao-chan's a good girl」
「Mao…everyone, loves you」

Nagisa-san embraced Mao-chan tightly.
…What a good scenery.
A beautiful mother embracing her cute daughter.
That's surely impressive…!
…Err.
…Should I be here?

「…Uhm, Margo-san?」
「What's wrong?」
「I'm not introduced yet…!」

Or rather…there's no apple pie nor tea for me.
Somehow, I feel like I'm treated like 『air』 by Nagisa-san and Mao-chan…

「Ooh, sorry sorry, I forgot…Nagisa-san, this is Yoshida-kun」
「…Hello, I'm Yoshida」

I bowed towards Nagisa-san…

Nagisa-san stares at me…

「Margo-san…I've been wondering about this since earlier…」
「What is it?」
「I think that it's wonderful for Margo-san to have a dick slave at last… I'm really glad that Margo-chan who's a man hater is finally awakened to the pleasures of sex. It makes my chest hot. …But you see, I think that there's a much better dick slave for Margo-chan instead of this boy….」

…Uhm
…Hey

「…No, Nagisa-san…he's not like that…!」

Margo-san denies it desperately…!

「Could it be that it was forced by Yuzuki-sensei? If so, then I'll talk to Sensei. A much older and tolerant dick slave is much better for Margo-chan!…That's a definite!」

…What's a tolerant dick slave?!
Or rather…Nagisa-san, I don't think it's good to repeatedly say 『dick slave』 in front of your daughter…!

「No…He's not…! He's not my dick slave!」

…Even Margo-san!

「…I see! It's Katsuko! In Katsuko's case, she likes younger men! Oh, so he's Katsuko's dick slave…I get it now! Yes!」
「…No. I'm not like that」

Somehow feeling embarrassed, I declared it myself.

「Eh…Could it be Nei-chan?! Uwaa , Nei-chan should've been a virgin and yet now she's having this kind of man as her slave?! She's gotten bold!! I thought she's not that kind of child!!」

Nagisa-san's surprised.
No…I'd be most surprised if so.
Or rather, Nei-san's still a virgin.

「Nagisa-san…You seem to be misunderstanding things…!」

Margo-san leaked out a huge sigh…

「Yoshida-kun's…the 『Seventh』 He's one of us…He's Yuzuki-sensei's 『Seventh Toy』 …!」

◇ ◇ ◇

「I'm sorry…I was sure that… 」

Nagisa-san bowed and apologized to me.
Of course, an apple pie and tea was prepared before me.

「It can't be helped. Nagisa-san's already retired when Minaho started searching for a male member… Also, we just approved Yoshida-kun just a short while ago」
「…Everyone's 『Approved』?」
「Un. Yuzuki-sensei picked him, Katsuko-san, Nei, and I approved of it. Of course, it was judged after some tests」
「Everyone has approved of it then this means that he's a child with quite a character」
「I think he's talented」
「…Is that so?」
「He's a virgin three days ago…he's a virgin and yet, he raped the girl he liked for long…then raped her thirty times in this three days」
「Eh…the same girl all this time…?!」
「Un, that's right. Furthermore, no contraceptives」
「…My, wonderful」

…What kind of conversation is this!
Or rather, when I hear it again…I'm such an absurd rapist!
Ah…Mao-chan's looking at me with a dumbfounded face.
Sorry…Onii-san's a rapist.

「Is that so…I'm really sorry I was rude to such a person」
「No…It's fine. Don't mind it
「No… 『Toys』 are on equal footing. Such rudeness can't be excused」

Uwaa…This person is tangled with lots of things in her mind…
She's beautiful…gentle…and a good mother, and yet.

「…Oh right, did you see the girls from the shop?」

Nagisa-san said that suddenly.

「Yeah, all of them are cute. I can tell that this shop prospers with those personnel around」

Margo-san speaks out her impression…

「I was always with Yuzukii-sensei during my high school days…
My eyes have become discerning and I won't employ anyone other than a cute girl」
「Nagisa-san…recently, men」
「…Not at all I've never done it since I gave birth to Mao-chan. I specialized with women for all this time」
「Then, the children of the shop?」
「Yes. Everyone's my pet…! Furthermore, their hymens are still intact!」

Nagisa-san turned around to me excitedly…!

「…Yoshida-kun, was it?」
「Ah, yes」
「You can have sex with any of the girls there! It's fine even if you do all five! Un, let's see! Let's use this chance to break all of their virginities!」
「…Eh!?」
「There's two high school students, two university students and one employee. Who are you interested in? I think I have here a photo I took from a social gathering but…should I close the shop instead and call them here? Let's get them all naked then you can rape the girls you like in turns! I'll allow you…!」

Nagisa-san's going out of control…
Now that you mention it, this person…
Is Katsuko-san's best friend, isn't she?…
Uwaa, Mao-chan's mood is ruined.
It must be her first time seeing her mother like this.

Then…At that time, a phone rings…

「…It's mine」

Margo-san took out her phone and answered.

「…Hello, It's Margo…Yes I also thought that it's about time」

Margo-san smiled then passed the phone to Nagisa-san.

「…It's Yuzuki-sensei」

Nagisa-san's startled…

「Margo-chan, could it be that what we're talking just now is…」
「It can't be helped. Sensei told me to do it by all means!」

The conversation here is being heard by Sensei?
Margo-san must've put mic somewhere on her clothes!
It's connected to a different phone…then relayed to Sensei!!

Before Margo-san handed the phone to Nagisa-san, she pushed the loudspeaker.
Thus…I was able to hear Yuzuki-sensei's voice too.

『…It's been a while, Nagisa』
「I-It's been a while…Sensei」

Nagisa-san's already on the point of crying.

『I'll say this first…Refrain from speaking vulgar words in front of my cute Mao. What would you do if Mao grows up having a strange sex outlook?』
「…Y-You're right」

Nagisa-san bowed her head. She's lowering her head while holding the phone.

「…Mao won't become a strange kid!」 7

Mao-chan sulks again.

『Right. Mao won't become a strange kid. I'll raise you to become a

splendid lady! That's what I decided already…』

Snesei…What's『That's what I decided』?
…Somehow, she sound like a stubborn grandparent.

『…By the way, Nagisa』
「Yes, is there anything you need…?!」
『I overheard this a while ago but it seems you haven't done sex for a while, have you?』
「Y-Yes…That is right」
『You're completely specialized on women recently?』
「…Yes」
『…Well, I won't say anything about your hobby but…do have sex with a man too! This is why you're being taken advantage of third-rate Yakuza. Your body doesn't have any scent of a man so they're thinking that you're a cheap sexually frustrated woman…!』
「…That might be the case」
『Women's skin needs to bathe on men's semen regularly, else the gloss disappears. You do know that right?』
「Well…Yes」
『…That's why, I had Yoshida-kun there today』

…Eh?
…yes?
…M-Me?!

『…Yoshida-kun, sorry to ask you but please have sex with Nagisa. Make her womb drink lots of semen』

Nagisa-san's eyes shine suddenly.
The beautiful eyes under the glasses…looks at me once again…
I'm going to have sex with this beautiful lady?
With a young mother I just met for the first time…!

『…Nagisa, I think you heard it from Margo earlier but, Yoshida-kun has experience with only one person』 Furthermore, she was a virgin…So you should teach him the goodness of a well trained woman…!』
「Sensei…My body's already retired…」
『You're just 21…! It's too early to retire. This isn't an order. It's a request. Yoshida-kun's not a slave. He's a full fledged 『Seventh』

It's fine to help your junior's growth for a bit, don't you think?…I'll leave the method to you』

When Sensei said 『Request』, Nagisa-san's heart was gently soaked…!

「…Right away! Katagai Nagisa will do her best to assist 『Seventh's』 education…!」

Nagisa-san is saluting to the phone for some reason…
What's that…or something like that, or maybe like that…8
As expected of Katsuko-san's best friend.
She's a beauty and yet…she's a disappointment in some ways.

『Yoshida-kun…are you listening?』
「Ah…Yes」
『Your first partner was a girl what was aimed and prepared before hand, right? Try not to imagine the second person like that and is a stranger to you. Your attitude in sex would change…!』

Snesei…It was her plan in the first place to release Nagisa-san's frustration and educate me, two birds in one stone.
Haa…She's quite a scary person.

『Then…Enjoy. Margo, play with Mao-chan on the next room. Try not to let Mao-chan see something strange』
「Roger…Minaho」

Then…she ended the call.

「Then, Mao-chan…should we play on the next room?」
「Yaay～, Mao loves playing with Mago-chan! What should we play?!」
「Anything Mao-chan wants. Now…let's go. Mama's going to have some adult exercise for a bit…!」

Margo-san wined at me and led Mao-chan to the neighboring room.
Then…Nagisa-san and me were left behind the room.

◇　◇　◇

「I'm sorry…It must be boring for you to play with such an old

woman like me, don't you think? 」

Nagisa-san's body approaches me.
A fragrant adult perfume surrounds me.

「 No…Nagisa-san's the same age as Katsuko-san, isn't it? Aren't you still young? 」
「 Is that so…That must be in your case but everyone who gives birth to a child is already an aunt. 」
「 …That's not true at all 」
「 Ufu…Thanks 」

Nagisa-san smiled bewitchingly

「 …I'll strip you off 」
「 …Eh 」
「 Leave this to me 」

Nagisa-san's white finger is stripping off my clothes.
The uniform…then the shirt.
She grasped the belt of my pants…

「 Ah…That's! 」
「 What's wrong, are you embarrassed? 」
「 …Yes 」
「 Idiot…It'll become even more embarrassing from now on. 」

My pants were taken down…
My penis under my underwear is already erect.

「 It's already this hard… 」

Nagisa-san caresses my penis over the underwear.

「 …Ua! 」
「 How's it's…Does it feel good? It's been a while since I felt this 」

As expected of a woman trained well along with Katsuko-san.
She's used on handling penises…that her finger's are exquisite.

「 …Can I take a look? 」
「 …Yes 」

The penis that would pierce the heavens appeared…

「My, how cute…How does it taste?」

The 21 year old young mama's lips stuffed my erection.…!
Her tongue stimulates the glans…!
…Shit!

「Nfu, it's delicious. It's been three…no, four years. I never had sex since I got pregnant with Mao. I thought that I'd get bad since it has taken so long but, allow me to do my very best…!」

No, it's good enough…!
Katsuko-san's fellatio has the force and power pressing felt with it but…Nagisa-san's fellatio has technique specialized.
She's stimulating the good spots precisely…!

「」I'm sorory, I wanted to drink it but…I can't endure anymore

Saying that, Nagisa-san began to unbutton her blouse.

「Ejaculate inside me…hey, it's' fine isn't it?」

Hot eyes…hot sigh…
Inside her blouse is a light blue bra with a lace showing up.
…Looking at it closer, It's bigger than I thought.

「It grew bigger when I got pregnant with Mao. I had an inferiority complex with Katsuko on the size of our chest on my days but…it disappeared after that. If it was a year earlier, there would've been breast milk coming out…」

Her huge breasts is pushed onto me.

「…Strip me, please undress me」
「…Eh?」
「I want you to strip me」

I turned my hand on Nagisa-san's back.
I removed the hook of her bra.
Her suppressed huge breasts became free…!

「Nfu, I'm going to gym and performing muscular workouts…so that it won't sag」

The big breasts with good shape has it's pink nipple pointing hard.

「Eat it…it's yours…!」

I buried my face under Nagisa-san's chest.
I sucked the hard tip of the soft and warm meat mountain.

「Ufufu, You're like when Mao-chan was a baby! More, do what you want…You can bite it…Ahn…As expected, it's different from when women sucks it. Boys are so violent…It's good…Nn!」

While I am attacking her nipples…Nagisa-san's already taking off her pants(I was told later that it was Sabrina Pants)
Her panty is already dripping wet.

「…I want it」

Nagisa-san gently caress my penis.

「Can I put it in? Can Nagisa's lower mouth eat this? I want this so bad I can't endure it…!」
「…Me too, I can't endure it anymore!」

Nagisa-san lied down on the floor of the living room.
Her panty is tied up by a string on the side.
Nagisa-san laughs fufufu…while pulling the string on one side…
The wet panty was turned over…
Then…the vagina glittering with love nectar is opening it's mouth.
Nagisa-san opened her thin legs wide and invites me in.

「…Welcome. Come inside Mama!」

I covered Nagisa-san's soft body!

「You don't need to hurry up…I won't run away」

I pushed my penis into her vaginal opening.
Nagisa-san embraced me…
We're being connected on the deepest part!!

「Good…as expected, it feels good being ravished by a man!」

The feeling of Nagisa-san's vagina is entirely different from Yukino…!
It's warm, wrapping me gently…and still, it's clamping my penis tightly.
…What's this…her inside…is surging

「Stay still for a while…I'll make you feel good」

Nagisa-san slowly moved her waist…while embracing me from under.
Nagisa-san's movement…is so lewd…it's playing with my penis…!

「…aaaa…W-What's this, it feels so good…!」
「Nfufu…I'll teach you the true goodness of women!」

Nagisa-san from under moves her waist, pushing up…!
Even though I'm the one on top…It feels like I'm being violated by Nagisa-san.

「N-Nagisa-san…I-It feels good…!」
「Ahn…You're so cute…You're making such a pleasured face…so cute…I'll make you feel even more…!」

Nagisa-san's inside shrinks. It's squeezing me.
Her waist shakes…feels good, this feels goood!!

「…Nagisa-san, I'm about to!」
「No need to hold back…let it all out inside me!」
「…aaah!」

…It's coming out!
…Dokun! Dokun! Dokun!

「…Aaaahn, your hot stuff is spreading inside me.」 This is great, as expected…sex is delicious…It's delicious!!!」

Nagisa-san gets drunk in pleasure and seems to be satisfied.

「…I'm sorry, I came ahead」
「Geez…You don't need to worry about that. You're still young」

Nagisa-san gently caress my face.

「You're really cute. I get the reason why Sense sent you to me」
「…Is that so?」
「Un. A young beginner like you will let me have sex on my pace. You're obedient and cute, you're even guaranteed as a trustworthy person by Margo-chan…my body's allowed to feel safe right now, we're both 『Sensei's toys』after all…」

Nagisa-san told me kindly with a flushed face.

「You still have ways to go…but I'm sure you'll grow well. Even with our sex just now, if you were able to endure it a bit longer then I think we could've climaxed together…!」

Nagisa-san said to encourage me…!

「Yes, I'll do my best next time!」

I began to move my waist back and forth…!

「…Eh, next?!」

Nagisa-san panics!

「Please don't worry. My erection won't go down with just one shot」

I began my earnest piston…!

「Wait a moment…ah, ah, ah, aah…!!!」

The vagina wet with love nectar and sperm is being stirred by a hard penis!

「…What's this…It feels good…Aaaahn…It feels goood!!!」

Nagisa-san removed her hair pin and the hair that was bundled became free!
The soft damp hair spreads softly!
She took off her glasses and threw it near…!
The woman connected to me had another face rising in her…!

「Iyaaan~!…It feels good…Ravish Nagisaaa…Make me feel good…!」

The intellectual beautiful manager that was here a while ago…the firm mother…those faces disappeared…!
What's here right now is a normal 21 year old woman.
She's not a Mama, not a manager…Just a woman that's being pierced intensely by me.

「More…More, get more violent! Ravish me! Violate me thoroughly!!」

I throw in my waist…ram it in! shove it in! pierce it in!
Nagisa-san also grinds her waist to match with my movements…!

「Ah…I'm about to cum…Nagisa's cumming! I'm cumming…Make me cum!…Can I?!」
「…YES YOU CAN」 9
「Ah, ah, Aaah!…I'm cumiiiing!!!」

Nagisa-san's whole body shake…then embraced me tightly!

「…I'm cummiiiing…Nagisa's cumiiiing!!!!!」

My face got buried under Nagisa-san's rich chest…and I reached my limit too!

「…Nagisa-san, me too…!」
「…Cooomee…Let it ouuuut…Make Nagisa pregnant again!!」 10

My second shot blew out!

「…aaah, I'm going pregnant…Nagisa's being impregnated again…!」

Feeling the hot cloudy liquid inside her womb…Nagisa-san convulsed again…!
Her womb is drinking in my semen…!

「…Haa, haa, haa, haa」

In Nagisa-san and Mao-chan's living room.

In the room where the young mother and child lives…we're connected naked…
Looking at it…the blocks and picture book of Mao rolled to the side.

「…Hey」

Nagisa-san embraced my head while we're still connected down there.

「…I wanted to get pregnant again」

…Eh?

「This time I want to get pregnant knowing who's the father…!」

The 21 year old woman is looking at me with hot eyes.

「Make me pregnant with Mao's younger sibling…!」

---

1. 39．Nagisaのポーリーヌ, I don't get it too ↩
2. I don't get the second sentence:　ヨーロッパとかの古民家をイメージしたメルヘンチックなデザインで、白い壁に木の枠が幾何学的に組み合わされている。 ↩
3. Raw Says シュヴァルツ・ヴァルト, but a comment did say that it's "Wald" not, "Barth" ↩
4. Manager ↩
5. 「今は、一番手が掛かる時だから大変なのよ……！」 ↩
6. 渚 Nagisa, 真緒 Mao ↩
7. Mao-chan, come and learn mystic arts!! ↩
8. 　どういうアレなんだ……アレっていうか、ソレっていうか……。 ↩
9. Top ten Obama Quotes ↩
10. Top ten Trump Quotes!! ↩

40. Mama will give you her pets

「I'm sure Yuzuki-sensei noticed it…That I want a second child… 」

I lost power after ejaculating and Nagisa-san's soft body holds me. My penis that let out lots of cloudy liquid got small inside Nagisa-san's vagina and it it was ejected out from the pressure of the vagina.
The semen also overflowed from the entrance and spills on theh floor…

「…You see, when I gave birth to Mao, I left Sensei's mansion and opened this shop…I've been always seeking a man, asking…would someone be able to love this me?…would there be someone wanting to become Mao's papa?… I'm registered in matrimonial agency and I've been searching for a marriage partner… 」

Nagisa-san speaks her suffering for these four years…

「…But it was no good. No matter what kind of man I meet, they won't love me…no, there was someone who did…but it's impossible to have sex 」
「…Impossible? 」
「You see, men wants sex. I thought I'd be able to respond to that, I gave it several attempts but…I wasn't able to 」

Nagisa-san laughs sadly.

「As expected…the sex on the mansion four years ago was too much… You see, when I got my virginity stolen and until I got pregnant, I haven't done anything but abnormal violent sex. I noticed that my body won't be satisfied with a normal man and normal sex… That's not all. I'm scared that the man would know my true character above anything…! 」

Nagisa-san looks up the ceiling…

「…I'm a lewd person. Strange. Frenzied. Once I lit up, it won't stop. My dirty body is indulged in sex, greedily… I can never expose this embarrassing part of me on a normal man… No man

can let my mind free. Thus…I gave up on marriage
「…You're not lewd. Nagisa-san, you're a very lovely woman」

I think so from the bottom of my heart.
Nagisa-san, spoke while caressing my hair.

「…Thank. But, when I became unable to do men, in the end, I lured in younger women…then made this small castle. In the end, I cannot win against my sexual desire. I was able to expose myself in front of the delicate girls. …I look like an idiot」
「…That's not true. Everyone loves Nagisa-san, isn't that why they're in this shop?」
「Un. They're all good and cute children…they're my precious pets. Those children devotes themselves to me and I show my love to them too. Just like how Yuzuki-sensei does to us…!

…I see
…Nagisa-san wants to become like Yuzuki-sensei.
Just like how Yuzuki-sensei gathers 『Toys』…
Nagisa-san gathers cute girls as 『Pets』…

「Isn't it normal for children to imitate their parent…?」

Nagisa-san smiled at me…

「…But, it's useless. I am no match against Yuzuki-sensei. I can't reach her at all」

Nagisa-san sighed.

「When I got independent from Sensei, I didn't think anything but to get myself stand on my own…Yet, I only imitated Sensei…! And yet, Yuzuki-sensei is always thinking carefully about this idiotic me…This me who got away from Sensei's place…this ungrateful me…!」

Nagisa-san's eyes had tears on it.

「I was able to have sex with a man once again…Sensei knows that it would be useless unless it's a child like you. That's why she brought you here…!」

Her thin arms clings to me.

「…Was a man like me…useful?」
「That's right! It would be no good if it's not you」

…Eh?
…W-W-W-W-why?

「…You're 『Sensei's toy』just like me. You're someone I can expose my true lewd character. We're relatives after all. No matter how disgraceful I expose myself, I won't be ashamed at all! Rather I'd thought that『Take a look at the real me, look!』

…I-I see
This is why Sensei sent me here.

「But you see…That's not all」

…Yes?

「I thought that having sex with men…is a bargain」
「…Bargain?」
「That's right. Both mixes the truth and lies…act, play, say unexpected things on purpose…flatter each other's hearts, hurt, make light of…that's how men raises their lust…」
「…Somehow, it looks troublesome」
「Well yeah…while having sex, you have to think of 『What should we do next』, 『If my partner demands this then I have to do it this way』or 『This is an unexpected development』…You won't be able to take a rest」

Nagisa-san smiled then…it turned to a serious look.

「But…That's the sex that was taught to me and Katsuko in the mansion. We were thoroughly taught the techniques on how to make men feel good. We're machines to please men…!」

…Speaking of which.
When I was having sex with Yukino, Katsuko-san feels like she's a coach.
She gives precise instructions and always anticipates our state, observing it…

Katsuko-san's sex beast mode isn't a natural born thing but…was instilled by somebody…?!

「A complete sex slave behavior is ingrained in our body…Our first round of sex was a bit of an act from me. I spoke lines that would arouse you on purpose…I stimulate and invited you in…!」
「…Is that so?」

Even though it's said to be an act…men would yield to it.

「I thought that Yuzuki-sensei sent you to me to study such techniques…but, that wasn't it!」

…It wasn't?

「The second round earlier…you!」

Nagisa-san kissed my lips!

…Eh?

「Geez!…You blew everything away, be it my bargain or acting!」

Nagisa-san showered my face with kisses…!

「You made me feel very good!」

No…There's no way.

「Uhm…I'm really a beginner…I think that I'm not good at sex at all.」

Un. I don't know anyone other than Yukino.
In the first place…it's nothing but rape.

「Ufufu…! Technique or experience doesn't matter! You only think of sex when you're having sex!」
「…What?」
「You see…men are humans that would think of another woman while having sex. Men shut themselves in their husk and masturbates by having sex. But, you're different…You're concentrating on sex when you're doing it! You're having such an

intensely serious face! Gasping on my body, it's so cute…!」
「…I-Is that so?」

What would men think being told that they're 『Cute』when they're having sex?

「Furthermore…You're not looking at anything but your partner when you're having sex! You're wanting my body with such ferocity! You're devouring me greedily! Your eyes shine with 『I want to let it out!』 『I want to let it out!』 all this time!」
「…Somehow. I'm being a dog in heat」
「That's what's great! When I thought that my body is being wished for seriously, it made me really happy! Aha…I feel it! It's not the usual madness…It felt good as if the sky is clear, without a single cloud! I felt lhat everything became better…I…I…!」

Nagisa-san's tears spilled…!

「Nagisa-san!」
「Embrace me! Kiss me!」

I embraced Nagisa-san…I kissed her.

「…Thank you!」

She also gave me a hot kiss…!

「When you ejaculated inside me…It felt really good! I felt that it was really wonderful…I became happy with as the hot semen pours in my womb. This is my first time! It my first time in my life feeling cheerful as a man ejaculates in me! Thank you! Thank you! Thank you!」

Right now…The naked 21 year old woman is embracing me.
She's just an ordinary woman.
A cute and beatiful…21 year old's face

「…I want to give birth to your child!」

Nagisa-san looks at me with hot eyes.

「…Can I?」

…I
I'm just a 16 year old…dumb kid…

「I'll raise it up. I won't trouble you any further. I won't tell you to become Mao's Papa. You don't need to stay in this shop with me…!」

She's looking at me with serious eyes.

「I'm fine being next to Katsuko,Nei-chan or Margo-chan. I'm fine being just an extra for you. That's why…it's fine doing it once a month. Embrace me. Have sex with me. Thenm I want to get pregnant if possible…!」
「…Nagisa-san」
「I…want to make a child properly once again. Making me feel pleasurable sex, I decided to get pregnant from the start…I want to deliver it with happy feelings…!」

Tears spilled again.

「When I got pregnant with Mao, I was filled with gloom…so I was troubled if I want to give birth or to abort. When I gave birth to Mao, I was feeling gloomy, "What will happen to my life from now on?"…I wasn't able to give blessings from the bottom of my heart during her birthday…!」

The naked 21 year old…is crying in my arms, like a child.

「I kept that in my heart…I always thought that I did bad towards Mao…! That's why, when I get pregnant with my next child, I thought that I want to feel bright giving birth on my child, feeling excited with Mao…! I though of it!!」

I embraced Nagisa-san's body tightly.

「…You see, I wanted two child all this time! Yuzuki-sensei knows this feelings! She knows it, so she made you come here…That's why…that's why, please…!」

…I think it's very lovely.
I thought I wanted to realize this person's wish.
But…

「…I'm still just a kid…I can't take any responsibility, I can't make any promises. I just met Nagisa-san today…would I be useful?」

To my question…Nagisa-san…!

「…It's fine if you just get me pregnant!」

Nagisa-san clings to me…!

「I've been always lonely alone! Scared! Sad! Please, please embrace me whenever I'm lonely! It's fine if only when I can't endure it anymore! I just want you to be with me…!」

This person…has always endured it.
As a single mother…as the manager of the shop…
She's lonely all this time…
She wanted a family…!

「…Got it, if you're fine with me」

Nagisa-san's lips gently overlaps with mine…!

「I'm happy!…I'm glad…!」

The naked 21 year old woman…cries on my chest…!

◇ ◇ ◇

Nagisa-san cried for five minutes more…then she finally calmed down

「…Ehehe, I'm sorry. I look like an idiot now.」
「That's not true」
「But…I'm serious, okay?!」

Suddenly…the door connected to the next opened wide.

「…It's about time, isn't it?」

It was Margo-san

「…It's fine. Come in」

Margo-san entered the room.
Err…Nagisa-san and I are still naked.

「Ah, don't mind it」

Margo-san told me…anyway, let's hide our dick

「…Where's' Mao?」
「She's taking a nap…I read her a sleeping book then she slept」
「…Marg-chan, you were listening aren't you?」
「Well yeah, halfway through」
「It's embarrassing, geez…!」
「Nagisa-san's trying to play it cool all the time…that's why I think being honest like earlier is cute」
「That's only when I have sex with him! I'm usually a cool woman when I don't snap off!」

Nagisa-san picks up her glasses.

「…That's just an ornament glasses, isn't it?」
「That's right. Because I have a baby-face, I won't look like an adult if I don't use this kind of stuff. This is needed for a lone woman managing a shop…!」

Baby-face…You're still 21 years old you know?!
I see…this person started this shop when she was 18…

「Then, how's it? Interested about Yoshida-kun?」
「…Isn't that obvious?」
「I want to hear your impressions from your mouth」
「……I love him」
「What?」
「…I fell in love with him!」
「Ooh, I didn't think that Nagisa-san would fall that much」
「…I'm the the first among the『Toys』ain't I?」

In other words…those who had sex with me.

「Un, that's right.」
「I wonder why Katsuko didn't do it sooner?…If Katsuko had sex with Yoshida-kun, I think that her heart would be freed in various

ways…!」 1
「Well, Look…Sex with Katsuko is a bit too wild…!」
「…Right, Yoshida-kun's still not used to have sex after all…his body might not be able to keep up if he suddenly does Katsuko」
「Katsuko-san's a nonstop violence express after all」 2

…Katsuko-san
Somehow, they're saying something terrible at you!

「Thus…I'm the first?」
「Nagisa-san's delicate so you won't have sex until Yoshida-kun breaks…at most」
「…What?」
「I never thought that Nagisa-san would be this cute」
「Geez…Don't say that!」

Nagisa-san blushed;.
…C-Cute!

「Anyway…I'm fine if you can embrace me at least once a month. I won't be using contraceptives so I'd be glad if I get pregnant. Do you mind…?」
「Yoshida-kun, if you're fine with that…」

Both of them look at me…

「No…Uhm…Yes Best regards」

I don't have any anwer than that.

「…I'm happy~!」

Nagisa-san jumps at me!
She's still naked so her rich big breasts presses against me!

「Oh right, I have to report this to Yuzuki-sensei…!」
「It's fine, that's Minaho's intention from the start.」
「I'll be coming to the mansion one of these days…I'll properly say my thanks then」
「Un…That's better. Minaho would be glad too」
「As expected…I'm no match against Sensei」
「Well, she's our 『Teacher』 after all!」

Yuzuki-sensei's 『Second』 and 『Third』 …Both of them are smiling.

「Right…By the way, Margo-chan」
「What?」
「You talked about it earlier but…Who's the child Yoshida-kun raped when he was a virgin and kept ravishing for three days?」

…Yukino?
Nagisa-san's curious about Yukino?

「Well, a fairly cute child. But, that's all to her. Yoshida-kun's very infatuated to her though」

For Margo-san, she can only see Yukino that way…
Well, Nei-san's much more beautiful than her, Margo-san's much more dignified, she'd lose to Katsuko-san when it comes to sexiness.
If it's a beautiful and gentle onee-san, it would be Nagisa-san…
When you talk about a beauty senior honor student, it would lbe Iwakura-kaichou.

「…Yoshida-kun, you should already make that child your pussy slave」
「You see…that child's stubborn and her pride is quite high. Her nerves are cheeky, or should I say that no matter how much Yoshida-kun violates her, her mind doesn't break…She's quite peculiar」

Margo-san…Sorry. Please don't ask me that.
I haven't done anything but rape Yukino…
I don't know how far does a normal child's mind breaks.

「…Would she become a good pussy slave?」
「I think it's impossible. Her material is slightly bad. She's a child that's inedible even if you bake or boil. For once, Minaho respects Yoshida-kun's feelings but she intends to throw her way in the end…」

…Eh? Yukino's that useless?
Margo-san's evaluation for her is too low…!

「…Un,, I decided!」

Nagisa-san turned to me with a smile on her face

「I'll give Yoshida-kun a pussy slave as a present!」

…Whut?!3

「As expected…for Yuzuki-sensei's 『Seventh』 to grow, you need a pussy slave whom you can ejacualte into whenever you want in your daily life!」

N-N-N-Nagisa-san?!

「…Right. Yoshida-kun should be learning how to handle slaves soon. It won't be good if he only does that Yukino…!」

M-Margo-san too?!

「With that decided…Yoshida-kun, It's better if you get a cute pussy slave!」

Nagisa-san takes the receiver of the telephone…!

「…Hello, Miyuki-chan?…How's the shop right now? There's still some time before the busy night isn't it?」

…Err?
…Could it be that Nagisa-san's implementing the stuff she talked about earlier?

「…Then, could you go with Misuzu-san and go up to the third floor? It's an important talk…」

Nagisa-san hang up with a satisfied laugh…!

◇ ◇ ◇

「…Manager, we came」
「Come in!」

Though she said, Nagisa-san's naked, only wearing a white linen bathrobe.

Furthermore, the left side is open and her abundant chest and genital wet from sex is exposed…
Or rather…I'm also in underwear and gown[4].
Whoever sees this could imagine what Nagisa-san and I did…

「…Excuse me. Kyaa!」

The two girls who entered the room screamed as expected…

「Try not to shout, okay…!」

Nagisa-san told the two in a strong tone.

「…O-okay」

The senior on ponytail named Miyuki, answered.
The other girl has her mouth flapping open and close in surprise.

「You promised that when you come into this room, we're no longer 『Manager and clerk』 but 『Owner and Pet』, didn't you?」
「…Yes, I'm very sorry!」

Miyuki-san immediately stood upright.

「…I'm very sorry!」

Misuzu bowed too…

「…Then, do your usual greetings!」

Nagisa-san's order, Miyuki…!

「…Let me say my greetings」

She kneeled before Nagisa-san and kissed the tip of her foot.

「…Lick here」

Nagisa-san opened her legs.

「…Excuse me」

Miyuki-san kissed Nagisa-san's genital

「It tastes different from the usual love nectar, isn't it?…That's semen…It must be Miyuki's first time?」
「…Yes」
「What do you think, is it delicious?」
「Yes, It's such an honor to taste something as delicious as this…!」

Miyuki-san's completely trained as Nagisa-san's pet!

「…Next, Misuzu」
「…Yes!」

Misuzu kissed Nagisa-san's foot

「…Here too」

Though Misuzu hesitated…she steeled herself and kissed it.

「More…lick it!」

Misuzu-san closed her eyes and made her tongue crawl over the genital. Her small tongue is cute…!

「Ahn…Good. What do you think? What's the taste of a man's semen?
「…It's a bit bitter」
「That's a man's taste…say that it's delicious」
「…It's delicious」

Misuzu-san ended her 『Greeting』 …while holding back her tears.

「Then, I'll introduce her again…This is Margo 『Highway』 Starkweather-san. I'm always talking about her, she's Yuzuki-sensei's 『Third toy』 …One of my beloved friends」
「…Hi」

Margo-san bowed to the two

「…H-Hello, I'm Miyuki! I've heard about you from gossips!」
「…I'm Misuzu. H-Hello」

The two girls weren't able to see her because they they suddenly started with a stimulating scene.

When I looked at them again…!
Miyuki-san's almost the same age as Nagisa-san, I think she must be the sub leader of this shop.
Her build is tight and her movements and speech are brisk.
It feels like she's an onee-san that's affiliated with sports.
Of course, she's beautiful too.

Misuzu-san on the other hand, is she a part-timer high school student?
But, I think that she's older than me. She must not be a first year.
Her long hair tied up with a crimson colored ribbon on her back.
She's on a culture type, I guess?[5]
Her delicate body doesn't have any built up muscle. But, her legs are long.
Her chest's growth is normal. It's not big but there's enough coming out.
And…she's disgustingly cute![6]
Her course is different from the clear beauty Nei-san.
Nei-san's beauty is like a model for artistic photographs on Europa.
But, Misuzu-san…doesn't have such an atmosphere of coming from Japan or a foreign country, a model or an actress of some kind.
Her cuteness…is like a princess brought in a secluded room…no, coming to this domain, she's like a princess on fairy tales.
She's like a newborn puppy…so lovely, and innocently attractive.

「Also, this is Yoshida-kun. She was chosen by Yuzuki-sensei as the 『Seventh Toy』, I've been embraced by him right away… It was such a pleasurable sex. It was my first time feeling that…」

…Nagisa-san, you're exaggerating!

「…Do you get it? I feel very refreshed right now」
「Yes, you're having such a refreshed face」

Miyuki-san answered.

「Is that so, Miyuki?!」
「Yes, your skin has become fascinating too」

Speaking of which…I feel like she's being glossy or something.
It seems that it's true that 『You'll become beautiful with sex』

「That's right. I feel grateful to Yoshida-kun…as a sign of my affection, I intended to give him one of my two pets as a present…!」

Nagisa-san just told the two something they least expect..

…Uwa, she's serious.

「N-No way…I hate men」

Misuzu said with a stiff face.

「Is that so…Very well then. Misuzu, thanks for your hard work until now. I don't want to see your face anymore. Please get out」

Misuzu-san's breath is taken away.

「…Please don't say that1 Misuzu is Nagisa-san's pet! Please let me stay as a pet! Please don't throw Misuzu away!」

She desperately clings to Nagisa-san…!
Nagisa-san glared at her.

「You see…I promised Yoshida-kun that I'll give my most treasured pet to Yoshida-kun. That's how much I like him. Yuzuki-sensei is the one I love and respect most in this world, so I have high expectations to Yoshida-kun…!」
「…I'm expecting a lot from him too」

Margo-san added from the side.

「Among my five current pets, the two most important to me is Miyuki and Misuzu. I'd be very in deep regret in losing the two of you but I don't have any other method. Any of the two can do, just please become Yoshida-kun's pet!」
「…I'll do it!」

Miyuki-san answered immediately.

「…Are you sure Miyuki? Becoming Yoshida-kun's pet means that you'll give your virginity to Yoshida-kun, and will have sex whenever he wants to, it means that you'll become a pussy slave.

You will never have sex with any man other than him for the rest of your life. If he wished for it, you'd be giving birth to a number of babies…are you sure?」
「Yes, I don't mind!」

Miyuki-san answered clearly.

「…That's! Miyuki-san's the sub-leader of this shop! Right now, if she gets out of here, everyone from the shop would be troubled!」

Misuzu-san told Nagisa-san, all shook up…

「But, it can't be helped…I promised Yoshida-kun that I'd give my most important pet to him」
「…But!」
「You don't understand…It would be rude for me if I don't give my most important one, don't you think? Do you intend to trample my sincerity?」
「That's not it…I don't mean that way, but」

Misuzu-san is at loss.
Miyuki-san's standing at attention.

「…Nagisa-san, how about we do it this way?」

Then, Margo-san suddenly sends help.

「…Instead of giving your pet as a present to Yoshida-kun…how about lending them?」
「Oh my, what do you mean by that…?」

Nagisa-san shows a face of interest.

「There's rental pets, aren't they…That's the feel. Either of the two stays as your bet and Yoshida-kun would rent them. The owner of the pets would still be Nagisa-san. Normally, they'd continue working on Nagisa-san's shop and they'd be rented out whenever Yoshida-kun calls for them」
「…That's a fascinating proposal」
「Yoshida-kun's the only customer of the rental though. Other people won't be able to rent. It's forbidden to sublet them to anyone other than Yoshida-kun. That would become prostitution after all」

…Margo-san thought of something amazing.

「On the old days, Yuzuki-sensei had a pussy slave like that…If I recall, there's a an original of the contract of the rental on the computer in the mansion.」

Margo-san faced the computer of the room.

「…Nagisa-san, is this computer connected to the mansion?」
「It is, use it as you want」

Margo-san spoke to me while hitting on the keys.

「Yoshida-kun, you'd like it that way, don't you? Even if you suddenly get a pet, you don't have anywhere to keep it. And if the clerk decreases here, it might make a blow on Nagisa-san's shop」
「Certainly it is…Yoshida-kun, what do you think?」

…Y-You're throwing it to me?!

「I-I'm fine with that」

Nagisa-san smiled.

「Then, that's decided. Miyuki and Misuzu, what do you think? You don't need to resign in the shop and you can stay as my pet. Yoshida-kun will rent you as his pet when he wants it. I'd be satisfied if Yoshida-kun likes my most important pet」

The two nervous girls draws closer to Nagisa-san!

「…Are you fine with that?」
「Yes, I don't mind!」

Miyuki-san answered immediately again.

「…What about Misuzu?」

Misuzu-san…

「Uhm…any of the two of us would be rented out, am I right…?」
「That's right, just one. It's better if it's a motivated child」

「If it's motivation, then I have it!」

Miyuki-san declared strongly.

「Right…Miyuki's always so cheerful. Misuzu too, you should try to be like her」

Nagisa-san compares the two.
She looked at Misuzu and leaked out a small sigh.
Miyuki felt the despise so she smiled at Misuzu-san.
Misuzu-san is just uneasy…!

「Then…Misuzu, what about you?」

The lovely beautiful girl drank her saliva…

「…U-Understood…I-I'm fine with it too」

She's about to cry.
Her body's trembling.

「Is that so?…Then let's have Yoshida-kun decide which child he'll do」
「…T-That's?!」

Misuzu-san looks at Nagisa-san with a teary face…!

「Yoshida-kun, which one do you want? Miyuki or Misuzu?!」

Nagisa-san smiled broadly and asks me…
That's obvious from the start.
Or rather…You already arranged it in such a way!

「…I want to rent Misuzu-san!」

The lovely face of the beauty is drawn in fear!

…Jowa!
A hot flow steams and spreads through the floor.

…Misuzu-san
Peed herself from too much shock at that moment…

1. Kaihou! ↩
2. Where can I buy tickets for that! ↩
3. Nanu?! ↩
4. Bathgown, most likely ↩
5. Sports – Culture. I think that's how they categorize clubs in school in jp, then he's talking about her looks matching the culture one. ↩
6. Danbooru Pool:903 ↩

41. Sacrificial lamb

「I'm sorry, I'm sorry, I'm sorry…!」

Misuzu-san desperately wipes her own pee with her a dustcloth…
Her shop uniform (A pink apron skirt with matching white blouse) is dripping wet.

「I'm sorry…Yoshida-kun, this child was pee disciplined」

Nagisa-san made a wry smile.

「…Pee discipline?」
「That's right. I trained her to endure peeing as much as possible, and when it's about to leak out…she's going to do it in front of me, if I don't give her my permission, she'll never pee…」
「…Wow, that's quite a lot piled up」

…It feels like a a litter of bottled water was spilled out.

「I'm sorry, I'm sorry, I'm sorry…!」

Misuzu-san wipes the floor half crying, while her face looks red.
Miyuki-san draws water into a bucket from the bathroom. There's two, three dustclothes.
It seems that she knows Nagisa-san's residence well.
She wet the dustcloth with water then squeezed it.
Miyuki-san begins to water wipe the place Misuzu-san had already wiped her pee off…

「I'm sorry…Miyuki-san」
「It's fine, Misuzu-chan. I'm a senior pet so this much is nothing to me!」

The sports oriented ponytailed girl smiled and squeezed the dustcloth.

「Ah, I'll do it too…Can I use the dustcloth on that bucket over there?」

THen, when I asked…Nagisa-san

「Don't…Yoshida-kun must not help them」
「…But」
「If the master helps, they won't be disciplined」
「That's right, it's fine to just look」

Margo-san told me.
…But

「No…I think that we should finish cleaning faster」

I picked up the dustcloth and helped with wiping.

「…T-Thank you very much」

Misuzu-san who's on all fours, gave me her thanks.

「Don't mind it…」

I answered that way…on a girl that's perhaps older than me.
I got on all fours too and wiped the floor.

「…Yoshida-kun」

Nagisa-san talks in a low voice…as expected, she's dissatisfied that I'm helping?

「Ufufu…Raise your head slowly and look up」

She whispers to my ears.
…Eh, what do you mean?
Then, when I raised my head.
A meter ahead of me…Misuzu-san's ass ass is turning towards me as she wipe the floor…!
Soft looking thighs inside the skirt…!
Her white panties are exposed…!

「…It's a nice view, isn't it?」

I swallowed my salvia instinctively!
The panty wet with pee is transparent…I can se the form of Misuzu-

san's cute slit…!
Surprised for a moment, I looked at Miyuki-san then she holds her ass with her hand so that I won't be able to peek up her skirt.
Miyuki-san knows men's eyes but…Misuzu-san doesn't even notice.
In short, Misuzu-san is an…!
…Airhead!
She's not used to the glances of men, she's a daughter brought up on closed doors…!

「…You can pierce that hole as much as you want!」

Nagisa-san laughed.
That…got me erect again…

「…It's fine already, Miyuki, Misuzu」

Nagisa-san tells them to finish cleaning.

「I think that it would stink for tonight but I'd endure that…!」
「I'm really sorry…!」

Misuzu-san's forehead touched the floor she just wiped as she apologizes to Nagisa-san.

「Misuzu…throw that water away. Just put the dustclothes in the washing machine」
「…Yes」

Misuzu-san leaked out a small voice then lifts the bucket.
Then she went towards the bathroom…
A slender girl's body…doesn't have muscles as expected. Must be heavy for her.
She's only carrying a water bucket and yet, she's already saying, fuufuu[1]
Meanwhile, Nagisa-san calls out Miyuki-san.

「…Miyuki, well done. You're always moving as I thought. You're really a reliable pet」
「I'm Nagisa-sama's first pet after all. It's my joy to follow Nagisa-san's wishes」

Nagisa-san's 『First pet』…

In the end…Nagisa-san's does is only a reduced copy of Yuzuki-sensei…

「Miyuki…I'll play with you a lot tonight as a reward. Stay overnight」

Miyuki-san's filled with delight from her words!

「…Thank you very much! Nagisa-sama」

Then…Misuzu-san returned.

「…I've put things in order」

Nagisa-san faced Misuzu-san and Miyuki-san..

「Is that so…Then, Miyuki can come back to the shop. Sorry but I'll as you to do the usual」
「Yes, Certainly」
「Then…Misuzu. Let's hold the first ceremony of you becoming Yoshida-kun's rental pet from now on…」

Nagisa-san smiled.
It's as if she's like Yuzuki-sensei.

「Have sex in front of me! Give your virginity to Yoshida-kun」

Misuzu's face shook her head sideways.

「I-I can't!」

Miyuki grips her shoulder hard.

「You can do it Misuzu-chan! If it's you, you can do it!」
「…Miyuki-san?」
「You were chosen as the representative among the the five of Nagisa-sama's pets! Didn't Nagisa-sama say this a while ago?… She'll lend her 『Most treasured pet』 to Yoshida-sama!」
「…Nagisa-sama's…Most treasured, pet」
「It's frustrating but it was you! No, you should meet Nagisa-sama's expectations as our representative since you were chosen! Hold your head up high, have some confidence and serve Yoshida-sama

with all your power!」
「…but」

Misuzu-san's confused, she still can't consent being loaned to me.
Well, that's the normal one.

「Thank you, Miyuki-san…I'll do the rest. You can go back…」

Nagisa-san thanked Miyuki-san

「Yes, Nagisa-sama!…Misuzu-chan, I'll tell the other three that you were chosen to be rented. Right now, You're going to become a 『Woman』 in front of Nagisa-sama…!」
「…Miyuki-san?!」

Miyuki-san's thoroughly cutting off Misuzu-san's way of escape…!

「…Isn't it wonderful to have your virginity be taken in front of Nagisa-sama?! What a lucky child! I'm so jealous! I'm sure that the other pets would think the same. You should feel honored that you were chosen!」
「B-But…!」
「…Do your best! Everyone's going to support you!」

The clerk senpai embraced the partime high school girl.
Then, she separates with a smile.
Ponytail Miyuki turned to me and bowed her head.

「…Please take care of Misuzu-chan!」

Then, Miyuki-san…left the room.
The door closed down…
Nagisa-san locked the door…!

「…!」

Misuzu-san's face turned pale in a dash
She can't go away from here until she loses her virginity…!!

◇ ◇ ◇

「Uhm…I, I'll do anything else…But please spare me from lewd

stuff! Please! I beg you! Please spare me from that!」

The girl on a lovely apron dress desperately begs Nagisa-san.

「What do you mean by lewd stuff…what are the things you have done until now then?」
「That's…because Nagisa-sama's a woman…my purity was protected. I…cannot lose my purity by all means!」
「…Why? Please explain the reason…!」
「Nagisa-sama…already knows it!」
「That's right, I know it. But, shouldn't you better explain it to Yoshida-kun and Margo-san with your own mouth? I don't intend to take time for those kind of things」
「…I-I'm sorry!」
「…You can explain by yourself, can't you?」
「Yes…Uhm, I!」

Misuzu-san looks at Margo-san…
She's not looking at me.

「I…I'm a christian!」

…Christian?
Why is a Christian not allowed to do lewd stuff?

「Our whole family is reigned over by my grandfather, so we're all christians! We attend masses on Sunday without fail!」 2
「…Catholic or Protestant?」

Margo-san asked Misuzu-san.

「…Presbyterian」
「……Presbyterian Church ?」
「That's right」

I don't get what Misuzu-san and Margo-san are talking about…

「It's a sect of protestant on old days. It has a lot of church on America. It's not a new strange religion so don't worry」 3

Margo-san explained to me.

「That's why…I need to keep my purity until I get married!」

Misuzu-san desperately insists with teary eyes.
Nowadays, there's not much beautiful girls who'd think of protecting their virginity until they get married…
It might be specific to protected species.[4]

「…Oh my, you want to get married?」

Nagisa-san asked Misuzu-san coldly.

「That's…because…」
「Then you just don't get married!」

Nagisa-san asserts is lightly.

「…But」
「I'm telling you that you don't need to! Be my pet for the rest of your life!」
「…Nagisa-sama!」
「I'll keep you forever so…there's no need for you to get married…!」
「…I'm very grateful. Thank you very much. …But!」
「…But what?」
「I…I have a fiancé…!」

…Fiancé?
What's a fiancé?
It sounds like words from a footballer…?!

「Fiancé is a partner whom you made promise to marry」

Margo-san explained for this idiot me.

「…It's a partner my Grandfather has decided when I was born. I thought that I would marry that person ever since my childhood…!」
「…Misuzu, do you like that person? Do you love him?」

Nagisa-san asks.

「I…I'm not good at dealing with men. But, Takahiko-san is a good

person. I yearn for him like an older brother since then…!」
「Is that so…then, who would you chose, me or that person?」

Nagisa-san demands a cruel choice from Misuzu.

「…I can't choose!」
「Pick one…Misuzu…!」
「…I can't! I'm sorry, I'm sorry, I'm sorry…!」

Misuzu desperately begs.
But, Nagisa-san is…

「If you can't choose then I will be the one deciding…」

Nagisa-san's mouth distorts.
It was a devilish smile…just like Yuzuki-sensei's.

「Misuzu is gonna get raped by Yoshida-kun…it can't be helped if it was a rape.」 Your purity will be stolen away against your will. I'm sure that even your fiancé would forgive you…!」
「…I can't do that!」

Misuzu's body is trembling in fear
It's as if she's like indoor dog, a Chihuahua…

「It's not that you can't do it…you're forced to…」

Nagisa-san approaches Misuzu-san then embraced her delicate body…

「Trembling this much…you're so cure. Mama's going to hug you…」
「…Nagisa-sama…?!」

Nagisa-san kissed Misuzu-san's lips…!
At that moment…Misuzu's trembling stopped.

「Misuzu…this is a chance」
「…Chance」
「…For you to slip out the spellbinding of your house…!」
「…House」
「You would be free from the weirs that bind you from your

Grandfather, father, mother, and your Fiancé, while we're at it」
「Nagisa-sama…!」

Nagisa-san kissed her again.
Misuzu-san's eyes is melting away…

「…Let's go to that sofa」

Nagisa-san carried Misuzu-san to the sofa.
Misuzu-san's burying her face on Nagisa-san's bountiful chest while clinging tightly…

「You're really a spoiled child…You're the most spoiled one among my five pets, Misuzu. You're much more hard to deal with than Mao…」
「…I'm sorry.」
「It's fine. This is why you're cute. You're my most treasured… Misuzu. You're my best pet among the five」
「…Nagisa-sama」
「That's why I want to make a mess out of you…!」

Nagisa-san's fingers stretched towards Misuzu's crotch!

「…Ah, y-you can't!」
「I want to break your mind, your body, your life, I want to make a mess out of everything you have…!」

Her long fingers attacks one place continuously!

「Such a place…I-Iyaan…Ahn~!」

The pretty girl gasps from the pleasure…!
Nagisa-san made her hand crawl to Misuzu's chest…!
She licks up her nape…!

「…Ah…Ah~…Nagisa-sama…I love you! I love youuuu…!!」

While both hands are caressing Misuzu…Nagisa-san looks at me with bewitching eyes.

「Yoshida-kun…Misuzu is a genuine Ojou-sama. Her house is from a distinguished family that came from the Meiji era…They have a

lot of politicians, or owners of a big company as their relatives…!」
「…Aaahn…Nagisa-sama…love…I love youu~!」
「Misuzu's father is a high ranking official of Ministry of Education, Culture, Sports, Science and Technology. You get it? She's from a very polished house…!」
「…T-That's…Aaahn, I'm feeling it…Misuzu's feeling it…!」
「She went to a famous ojou-sama school since her elementary… she grew up without making any contact with a boy」
「…ahaaan~!…Good…I love it there…!」
「She's a daughter of a house with a good standing, it's normal for her to have a fiance…But, as expected, this kind of child-raising is wrong. In her loveliness and dignity…is a gloomy desire collected… she's a poor thing…」
「…Nagisa-sama…Nagisa-samaa…Amazing…Misuzu's feeling so good…!」
「You see, I found this child on the classroom of my teacher in flower arrangement. I understood it when I first saw her. This child has a stockpiled a lot…she's a suffering child from her ties obligations. Enduring too much that she's about to explode any moment…!」
「…Aaaahn…I'm leaking out…overflowiiing…Nagisa-samaan~!」
「That's why I thought of having her let it all out…Ufufu, when she became all naked, I never thought that she'd be this lewd…」
「…No…I'm not…Misuzu's not a lewd child…!」
「Even though you're dripping wet like this…you're so cute, Misuzu…!」
「…Iyaaaan…So embarrassing…Don't say that…!」
「I had troubles drawing in this child but…the teacher trusts me. I had the teacher convey to her mother that it's 『Make her work part time on an environment where there's no one but women』
『It's a very good opportunity to study society』 …!」
「…Aahn! Nagisa-sama! Misuzu is Nagisa-sama's pet! A lewd pet! I'm sorry! I'm sorry!」
「Then…I ate her on the first day she came for her part-time job! Misuzu is just like what I thought…A very lewd, pet of mine…!」
「…That's right, Misuzu's a lewd pet! Eat me more! Make a mess out of Misuzu!」
「Hey, show more of Misuzu's embarrassing figure to Yoshida-kun! Plead him to take a look!」
「…Look look look! Take a look at this lewd Misuzuuuuu!!!」

「…Cum, Misuzu!」

Misuzu-san reached the climax in Nagisa-san's arm…!

「…Aaaaaaaaaaaaaahn!! Nagisa-sama, I-I'm soryyyyyyyyy!!!」

Misuzu-san came while shouting words of apology…!

「…I'm sorry, it felt so good…I'm sorry…goood…!」

Her delicate body is trembling…

「How's it Misuzu?…Did it feel good, you came…?」
「…Yes, Thank you very much, Nagisa-sama…!」

Misuzu-san answered Nagisa-san while her red face breathes heavily.
Nagisa-san kissed her gently once again.

「…ufufu! Misuzu's prepared now…!」
「…Prepared?」
「That's right…This time, Yoshida-kun will eat you!」
「…… !」
「It will be fine…Mama will be together with you」

The owner embraces the frightened pet tightly…

「…I'll be scolded by my father」
「Mama will apologize along with you」
「…I'd feel sorry for Takahiko-san」
「That's…Yoshida-kun will apologize for that」

Eh…Me?

「…I'll be driven out of my house. My father would disown me」
「I told you to live here, didn't I? Do you hate living with me and Mao?」
「…It's not that I hate it」
「Then its' fine」
「…but, I won't be able to marry if I lose my purity…even a child…!」
「You don't need to marry. Just stay here. It's fine if it's about

making babies. Give birth to Yoshida-kun's baby」
「…That's!」
「Misuzu's baby will be raised by Misuzu and me. Mao would be pleased if she gets a sibling…!」
「…But」
「There's no need to worry…Misuzu, do you love your own house?」
「…I don't like them that much」
「What about your father and grandfather…?」
「…I respect them. I'm grateful that they've been raising me」
「Then, do you want to live the live your grandfather and father have decided until you die…!」
「…That's!」
「It must be suffocating isn't it…You want to be liberated…I know that!」
「…Nagisa-sama」
「It's fine for Misuzu to be more happy…Mama will make you happy」
「…Aah!」
「That's why…get ravished by Yoshida-kun…!」

…The room quiets down.
A cold blooded, unreasonable silence…
But, Nagisa-san takes it as a matter of course and told Misuzu-san.

「Throw both of your ties and virginity…and be reborn!」
「…Reborn?」
「Misuzu…You were born to be treasured as a pet. Your cute face and delicate body is for that…!」
「I'm better as a pet?」
「That's right. Choose the life as a pet…!」
「But…But…」
「…What's wrong?」
「…I feel sorry…to God」

Nagisa-san laughed and rubbed her cheeks against Misuzu-san…

「…Idiot. Gods will always forgive you」
「…Really?」
「God is here in order to forgive people's sins…!」

Misuzu-san's eyes opened wide…!

「That's why commit a sin!…Have your purity soiled…You're a dirty human so that's why God saves you」
「amen, Nagisa-sama…!」 5

Misuzu-san's mind has completely been controlled by Nagisa-san, it fell!

「…Take off your clothes. Showcase your body that's still pure and clean to Yoshida-kun!」
「…Understood」

Her trembling hands removed her buttons one by one.
Her apron dress fell on the floor.
…The body of the beautiful girl wearing only snow white underwear becomes bare!

「…It's embarrassing」

The pure and beautiful girl turned red in embarrassment.

「Nagisa-san, can I borrow the camera?」

Margo-san points at the digital camera on the desk.

「You're gonna take photos?」
「I'm not as good as Katsuko-san though…Won't you feel sorry if we don't record it?」
「Right…It's a lifetime thing for Misuzu after all. Then, please」
「…Roger」

Margo-san took the camera and turned towards Misuzu-san.
Two, three times the shutter's pressed in her underwear.

「Misuzu…take off your underwear」
「…Eeeh?」
「Take it off yourself…!」

Her trembling hands unhook the back of her bra.
It maybe small but this breasts won't lose with its beautiful form, it's jumped when it's lost its restraint.

I see her pink nipples!

「…Kyaa!」

Misuzu-san covers her chest with both hands in a hurry.

「Don't hide it…show it」
「…U-Understood」

Misuzu-san timidly lowers her hand.

「It's beautiful…don't you think, Yoshida-kun?」
「…Yes」

I answered immediately on instinct…
Her beauty isn't just her breasts.
The woman named Misuzu who's enduring the same is also beautiful.
How lewd…!

「You see, this child just gets even more beautiful when she's feeling ashamed…! She really is born to become a loved pet…!」

Misuzu-san trembles every time Margo-san takes a photo…
Her panty is already dripping wet with love nectar before one's unaware…

「What's wrong, Misuzu…You peed again…?」
「…T-This isn't pee」
「Then what is it?」
「That's…Misuzu's…lewd syrup…!」
「Really…Misuzu's an easy to wet child. Show to Yoshida-kun how much it's overflowing…!」
「…Nagisa-sama!」
「Take your panty off!」

Trembling bit by bit…Misuzu's hand hang over her panty.

「Drop it off in one go!」

Her panty was taken down smoothly, following her order…!
At that moment…Misuzu's love nectar drops down and traces her

thin legs…!
She's amazingly sensitive…what an easy to get wet body…!!

「…Come here」

Sitting down on the sofa, Nagisa-san beckons Misuzu-san.
Attracted like a magnet…Misuzu-san's naked body went towards Nagisa-san.

「Sit on my knee, facing backwards」

Misuzu-san sits down…

「…Kyaa!」

Nagisa-san gripped Misuzu-san from the back and opened her thin legs wide with both arms…!
Like a mother making her child pee…!
Misuzu-san's virgin vagina…is exposed to me!
Misuzu-san doesn't have pubic hair growing out!
Between her child-like slippery crotch is a crack that's slightly open, spilling transparent juice.

「Now…Yoshida-kun. Go on, do what you want! Take the virginity of this beautiful girl!」

On the back of Misuzu-san's frightened face is Nagisa-san's smile…!

「It's a genuine sheltered girl who's obedient to her father and grandfather. She's a girl who's forced to a fate of marrying a fiancé while virgin. Make her life a mess with your penis! Soil her purity!」

Misuzu-san's trembling from Nagisa-san's words.
The body of a girl trying to escape from fear is being embraced by Nagisa-san from behind.
Then…the beautiful girl's crack has love nectar spilling out again.
Even though she's this afraid…Misuzu-san's aroused!

…But.
…Is this okay?

Having such a good ojou-san raped in such a shape…!
Misuzu-san has a fiancé too!
A sweet girl having thoughts of『I can't marry when I'm no longer a virgin』will be raped by me…This person's life would be driven mad…!
Is that okay for me to do that…?!!!

「…Now, Misuzu, say『Make my body unable to become a bride』…!」

Nagisa-san tempts me…!
Misuzu-san's face is shaken in fear…!
Misuzu-san's genital is wet from arousal…!
I…!
I…!!

「…Nagisa-san, that's no good!」

Margo-san who's holding the camera intervened from the side…!

「Nagisa-san's training style is suitable for a girl like Misuzu. It's perfect…But, you can't use the same method on Yoshida-kun…!」
「…What do you mean, Margo-chan?」

Nagisa-san, asked Margo-san while holding Misuzu-san…

「Yoshida-kun's not a dick slave…He's someone on our side. It's not a『Lion』eating a『Lamb』…He himself is a『Lion』…!

Margo-san looks at me.

「Yoshida-kun…if there's a『Feast』in front of you, then eat it. Eat now think about the problems later. Or else, the『Feast』in front of you would disappear. Someone might steal it away from you. This chance might not come again!『If you feel like eating then follow your desire and eat』…That's the iron rule Minaho taught me…!」

…Eat?!
…On the spot?

「Take a look at Misuzu-san!…She's beautiful isn't she?! She's cute, isn't she?! Don't you want to eat her, Yoshida-kun?!」

A delicate naked body in front of me＝.
Cute and lovely breasts…a soft looking stomach…navel.
A cute girl that's like a puppy is presenting her virgin vagina in front of me.
Still a virgin…
A pure body that no man hasn't taken a bite yet!!

「…I-I want to eat it!」
「What do you think of Misuzu-san?!」
「…She's very cute!」
「What do you want to do with her body?!」
「…Ravish and make a mess out of it!」
「Then, eat…!」

…Taberu[6]
…I'll devour Misuzu-san's virginity.

I took off my bathrobe.
Cast off my underwear!
My penis…is perfectly towering!

---

1. She's breathing deeply ↩
2. Nice definition of a christian you got there lol ↩
3. Hahahaha, dammit Yoshida-kun ↩
4. Misuzu is a rare specie! ↩
5. No, the raw doesn't say amen, it's just a normal "Hai" ↩
6. Sorry, I can't resist putting a kofuku graffiti reference here ↩

42. Misuzu's loss of virginity!

「Kyaa!」

Misuzu-san screams when she saw my penis standing straight[1]…!

「Misuzu, take a look! This is the penis that would make you a woman!」

Nagisa-san forces Misuzu-san to open her eyes…!
The beautiful girl fears the penis…[2]
That expression arouses me even more[3]
More, I want her to feel more fear…!
More, I want her to tremble more…!
More, I want her to cry more…!
That's my desire towards the girl named Misuzu-san!!!

I approached Misuzu-san's naked body…

「…Don't come near me!」

Trembling…she's trembling like a puppy…how cute…!

「Yoshida-kun. Kiss her first…make Misuzu's lip dirty」

Being told by Nagisa-san, I closed up to Misuzu-san's face…!
Misuzu-san keeps shaking her head, saying 「No, no!」…So I hold her head with both of my hands.
I kissed her lovely lips.

「…Uuuuu!!」

Misuzu-san struggles violently while I'm kissing her…
Her body stiffened and she endured it desperately.

「Misuzu, it's your first time kissing a man, wasn't it…?!」

Tears like a pearl spill down like rain…!

「Next would be her breast…make it soiled」

I opened my mouth wide and gulped down her right breast!

「…Hiiiiiiii!!」

I enjoy her left breasts with my left hand…I knead her nipple.
It's growth is slower than Yukino? It's a bit firm to touch.
But that being the case, her skin is tight…moist, and white.
I suck…then lick her right nipple!

「…Ah!…Aaahn!」

Bite…I'm eating Misuzu-san's breasts![4]
After that, I made my tongue crawl on her navel…!
A soft stomach without any muscle.
But, her waist is firmly tight.
Ooh, sleeping with this stomach as a pillow might be pleasant.

「Lastly…that place」

My tongue moves to the lower part…!
My tongue arrived at her genital without me ever feeling gritty pubic hair.
Un…having no hair is good on it's own way too.

「…Uaaaah…!!」

Misuzu-san's genital is positioned a bit lower than Yukino…
I think it would feel good when I insert while carrying her.
The slit was made to cum by Nagisa-san once so it's slightly open…
It's filled with lewd drool.
I licked up the opening.
Sucked it out…
Misuzu-san's love nectar is slightly more sour than Yukino.
But, delicious.
So women have different tastes…!
Opening the meat fold hiding the clitoris, I made my tongue lick it clean…!

「…Hii, hiii, hiiiiiiiiiiiiii!!!」

The slit secretes love nectar again…
She's quite a juicy one.

「Yoshida-kun, is the pussy open? I want to take an image of her hymen…!」
「…Sure」

In response to Margo-san's request…I opened the slit wide with my hands.
The depths of her vagina…Oh, I see it, a pink and white thing…!
This is…Misuzu-san's hymen!

「…I-It's embarrassing!…Don't take pictures…!」

Misuzu-san's protesting but Margo-san presses the shutter in sequence!

「Misuzu, let them capture it…it'll be torn soon enough」

Nagisa-san whispers to Misuzu-san from the back
Margo-san's not just taking a close up, she's also taking photos of Misuzu-san's face dyed in shame. Her whole naked body is reflected…
This is…the last photo of the virgin Misuzu-san…!

「Thanks for the wait…Yoshida-kun. You can eat now!」

I fit in my erect penis on Misuzu-san's vaginal entrance.
My heart's' beating wildly…!
I'm much more aroused when I was with Yukino!
That's how lovely Misuzu-san's naked body is…
I'll violate the body of the girl I met just a while ago…!
My hot penis is throbbing on a rhythm matching my heartbeat…!
The glans shining with precum…is making contact with her!

「…I-I'm scared!」
「It's fine, Mama will watch you, okay?」

Nagisa-san whispers to Misuzu-san while embracing her.
But…Misuzu-san.

「…As expected, I don't want this!…I can't do this…This is something God won't forgive!」 5
「It's fine…God will always be watching you…even at the moment you lose your virginity」

I…don't care about God or anything…!
…I want to ravish!
…I want to pierce Misuzu-san!
…I want to inseminate this lovely body!

I pushed out my waist!!
…zugu!
The glans is digging in her small genital!

「…Ooouch! It hurts!!」

Misuzu-san desperately tries to run away but…Nagisa-san's embracing her from behind, she simply can't move!
My bulging glans…only has half of it inside Misuzu-san's wet genital!

「…It's impossible! There's no way it would go in! It hurts! It hurts so much!」

Misuzu-san's blushing and spilling tears like rain!
My penis won't enter any further…!
Her hymen…is blocking my penis' invasion!![6]
Right now, my glans is making contact with a wall of flesh…this is her hymen!!

「…M-Misuzu-san…My penis is hitting Misuzu-san's hymen…Hey, can I break it? Can I break Misuzu-san's virginity?[7]」

I unconsciously blurted that out…!
Is it okay…to leave everything to passion and make this body defiled?!
The final hesitation in my mind occurs!

「…You can't…s-spare me…please let me go already!」

Misuzu-san's…pleading while crying!
She's closing her eyes strongly…and on the edge of the closed ears are tears spilling out…!

「…I'm scared!…Misuzu's scared!」

The beauty shouts her fear of her first sex.

「…Misuzu. If you hate it then look at Yoshida-kun's eyes and ask properly. It's rude to turn your eyes away, isn't it?」
「…Nagisa-sama, please help me! I really don't want this! I'm scared!!」
「Open your eyes! You have to look at him!」
「…Uuu!!」

Misuzu-san's eyes slowly opened.
Her big pupils…are looking at me…
Speaking of which…this might be the first time she looked at me properly.
Misuzu-san who's not used to men is always avoiding to look at me all this time.
With both of us naked…my glans is making contact with her hymen…she looked me in the eye for the first time.
Misuzu-san with a crying face…Those pupils reflect me who's about to violate her.
A face of an ugly man only pressing for his lust.
This won't do…!
I can't embrace Misuzu-san with that kind of face…!

「…You have to look properly on who you're going to be connected with!」

That's the words Nagisa-san fired to Misuzu-san…
Those words pierced my heart.
I looked at the girl in front of me again.
It's a pretty girl who's about to be violated by me right now.
A lovely face like a puppy…is wet with tears.
Her delicate body…it's small but still a beautiful breast…her flushed, warm skin.
The fragrant smell of her love nectar…her sweat that smells like milk.
She's looking at me…
She's looking at me with her black quartz eyes…!!!

…Cute.
Everything about her us cute!
What a lovely girl…!

Once again, I thought from the bottom of my heart.

Look at each other's eyes, and stare…
I want to embrace this girl.
…I want to have sex with her.
…I want to devour this body.

「…I love you!」

Those words instinctively come out of my mouth…

「…Eh?!」

Misuzu-san's looks surprised!

「…I like Misuzu-san! Please have sex with me!」[8]

It's not some words you can say while you're both naked, and have your glans rubbing her hymen.
But, that's what I thought.
That's what I thought from the bottom of my heart…!

「…I want Misuzu-san's body!!」

Misuzu-san who had a surprised face slowly breathed in while still looking at me…!
Then…she slowly breathed out…!
The stiff body of Misuzu-san who's rejecting me slowly relaxes…!
Her shoulders, her stomach, and her trembling waist too…
Then…her stiff vagina too.
…It's slightly melting.
Her hymen's tearing off…!

「…Hyaa!」

Misuzu-san opened her mouth wide while looking at me…!

「…Uuuu!!」

The pleasure is transmitted through my glans…!
My penis is slowly going deep…!
It's penetrating her hymen…!!
Slowly, it's slowly getting buried…!

「…I-It's splitting…It's splitting apart…!」

Misuzu-san endures the pain…while still looking at my face…
…I can tell.
…I can feel it!
The feeling of my penis going through her hymen…I clearly felt it.

「…O-Ouch…it hurts…it really hurts!!」

Every time her tears spill…My penis invades deeper and deeper!
Finally…the tip of my glans kisses the wall of flesh on the deepest part!
I entered everything completely everything to the root inside Misuzu-san…!
…Her virginity was lost forever.

「…Congrats, Misuzu. You became a woman right now」

Nagisa-san whispers to Misuzu-san and kissed her nape.

「The person you're looking right now is your Master…!」 9
「…Misuzu's…Master…?!」
「That's right…it'll end soon so endure the pain for a bit okay?」
「…N-Nagisa-sama?」
「Yoshida-kun. It would be painful for her so end this as soon as possible…!」

…End?
In other words…?!
…Ejaculate!
…I'm going to send it inside Misuzu's womb!
…It won't end if I don't ejaculate
…I want to let it out!
…I want to ravish her!
I began to slowly move my waist back and forth…!

「…O-Ouch…It hurts!…It really hurts…please spare me!!」

Misuzu-san screams.
Her small breasts is shaking…
Misuzu-san's white skin is gradually sweating.

Her face from being violated by me is dyed red hot from the pain and embarrassment she's enduring.
…Cute.
What a lovely person…!

「It'll be fine…it'll be okay, It'll end soon…Mama will embrace you!」

Nagisa-san is holding MIsuzu-san's body from the back firmly…
With this, no matter how strong I pierce, Misuzu-san won't be able to escape!
My waist is already unstoppable!
My penis is spreading the virgin soil of Misuzu-san…!
It's changing to my shape…!
Her body's mine!
I'll put in my scent!
I'll pour in my seed!

「…O-Ouch, it huuurts…G-God!!」

God's not here…!
No one's going to come to help her…!
…Violate!
…I'm ravishing her!!
It feels good…a virgin's vagina is firm…!
I gripped Misuzu-san's naked ass and pierced even deeper!

「…Stop, help me, no more…!」

Misuzu-san's body slowly shakes.
The feeling of her delicate body is great!
Under my arms…Misuzu-san's whole body is wrapped in my arms!
…Ah, aaah!
The hot lump of passion boils down deep in my body!
…Aaah, No more!

「I-I'm releasing it…Misuzu-san!」
「…W-What is?!」

Misuzu-san's big pupils are looking at me in surprise…!
She's looking at me with an expression of not understanding what's

what…!
Cute…what cuteness!
Looking at her lovely eyes…I released it…!

「…Cumming!」

…Byu, byu, byuyuyuyuyu!!
Hot liquid poured into the depths instantly

「…H-Hot!!」

Misuzu-san's eyes that's looking at me had tears spilling out again.

「…The hot stuff spreads in my stomach…!!」

…I'm letting it out…It's still coming out…!
I'm injecting cloudy liquid from the entrance of her womb!!
…Aaah!
I broke Misuzu-san's purity…dirtied her.
I defiled this body!
This pure body is being dyed white from the outside…!

「…I'm sorry…I'm sorry…I'm sorry…!」

Misuzu-san apologizes in low voice while receiving my sperm in her womb…
Who is she apologizing to…I don't know.
I came to love her so much that I embraced her tightly.
Then pushed in my penis deep once again…
I released inside Misuzu-san's womb to the last drop…!

「…Haa, haa, haa」

I feel like I've run a ten-thousand meter dash with all my strength…
Misuzu-san and I are completely drenched in sweat…

「…It seems it's done」

Nagisa-san whispered.

「…I-It's done?」

Misuzu-san who's being embraced by Nagisa-san from the back, and me on her front, is having a blank face.

「Yoshida-kun, ejaculated inside Misuzu」
「Ejaculate…?」

The ultimate cased Ojou-sama finally noticed the severity of the situation…!

「…You'll get pregnant!」
「Right…I'd be glad if you do」

Nagisa-san caressed Misuzu-san's cute stomach from behind…

「Let's raise them together okay…Misuzu」

Misuzu-san's tears spilled again with those words

「I…can no loner return」
「That's right, it can't be helped. Misuzu-san is a traitor after all… to her father, grandfather, fiance, and god…!」

The pretty girl had despair in her eyes.

「It'll be fine. I'm here for you…Yoshida-kun will be your new owner」
「…I can no longer live but as a pet, can't I?」
「That's right…Yoshida-kun will cherish you from now on」

The violated girl steels her heart.

「…Yes, Nagisa-sama」
「Now, give Yoshida-kun a kiss…a kiss from you」

Her eyes caught me…

「…Please let me kiss you」

Misuzu-san's lips approaches.
Her big eyes are looking at me…
Both lips piled up.
I put in my tongue inside MIsuzu-san.

Misuzu-san accepted me and intertwined with my tongue…
My penis that's still inside her lost its power…

「…Yoshida-kun, take a look at the place you're connected with Misuzu-san」

Margo-san who's taking photos on the side told me.
I lowered my eyes towards the part where I'm connected with Misuzu-san.
…I'm surprised.
Our genitals is bright red with Misuzu-san's blood!
There's not much of that blood when I did it with Yukino!

「The bleeding from losing virginity is varied per person…Misuzu-san's case is slightly terrible」

Saying that, Margo-san presses the shutter again.

「…Sorry. Misuzu-san, it hurts, doesn't it?」

I asked such a thing carelessly.
Nagisa-san laughs.

「Misuzu. Your master is a really pleasant person isn't he?…!」

Misuzu-san looks down quietly.
As expected…Just getting the penis in is painful already?

「I'll pull out right now…!」

I pulled out my penis.

「…Ouch!」

Misuzu-san frowned in pain.
When I pulled out my penis, the sperm and the virgin blood spilled out her opening together…
The white and red mucous mixed together and became pink…

「Yoshida-kun, get away for a moment…I want to record this too」

Being told by Margo-san, I separate my body from Misuzu-san.

「Misuzu-san. I think it would be embarrassing but look this way. It's a souvenir picture of your dear virgin loss. Ah, don't close your legs…open it as much as possible」

The camera records the naked body of the violated beauty.
The expression of shame and despair.
A flushed and sweaty body that just finished having sex.
Red blood and white semen drips from her genital.
Everything is recorded with a title of 『Misuzu's virgin loss』…

From a bit far away…I look at the girl I just raped…
A sense of guilt boiled inside me.
Of course, what I told Misuzu-san was true but…
Yukino's face surfaced in my mind.

This…is cheating isn't it?

I'm not going out with Yukino.
I just raped her one-sidedly.
Yukino's going out with Endou.
…And yet.
Why is it that I feel 「Sorry」 to Yukino?
…Strange.[10]
I didn't feel this when I embraced Nagisa-san earlier…
When it's with Misuzu-san…why do I feel this way?

「Un…let's end the photo session now」

Margo-san finished her filming.

「Misuzu…drink this」

Nagisa-san brings a water bottle and a white tablet.

「I really want to see Yoshida-kun and Misuzu's child as soon as possible but…I don't think it's time yet…!」

Nagisa-san told Misuzu-san gently.

「…It's an emergency contraceptive. For now, you won't get pregnant when you drink this」
「…Nagisa-sama!」

「There's no point for you to get pregnant earlier than me…But, promise me. You'll get pregnant with Yoshida-kun's child after you graduate high school」

Nagisa-san's eyes are warm…and harsh.

「…Understood. I'll give birth」
「I'm sure that it'll be a cute child…I'd prefer a child!」
「Yes, definitely!」

Misuzu-san drunk the tablet
She gulped down the water in a dash.

「Don't worry, that drug's real…!」

Margo-san whispered to me.

「Look, I have the same drug here」

Margo-san took out a small plastic with a white tablet out of her pocket and showed it to me.

「…Women don't know when they'll get raped, don't they? That's why we're bringing this medicine by all means. Nei and Katsuko-san also has this…!」

…Is that so?
Margo-san was raped when she was 12 years old…
The 『Toys』 are always assuming the worst situation possible…

「Margo-chan…is Ikeda-sensei well?」

Nagisa-san asked Margo-san.

「Un. The business is still open…」
「…Can we take Misuzu to the clinic after this?」
「Oh, it's fine!」

Margo-san consented brightly.
Nagisa-san placed her hands on Misuzu-san's shoulder.

「Ikeda-sensei's a female doctor. Though she's a bit old, she's a

competent doctor. I was indebt with her on the old days. We're going to have your body checked after this…!」
「…My body?!」
「That's because there might be damage on your vagina during the loss of your virginity…This is a body Yoshida-kun will be showering love from now on. You have to get examined properly. Also, we're getting pills from Ikeda-sensei」
「…Pill?」
「Contraceptives…a good medicine with few side effects. Ah, insurance isn't needed…Margo-chan would deal with everything else」
「Un. You don't need to worry!」
「Take care of your body…Misuzu's body isn't your body anymore. It's your Master's…it'll be cherished by him always…!」
「…Yes. Thank you very much!」

Misuzu-san embraced Nagisa-san…while crying.

「Geez…Don't cry. You really are important to me…I love you…!」

Nagisas-san caresses Misuzu-san's hair…

「That's why…I want to give you to Yoshida-kun. Ufufu, I'm sure that this is how it feels giving your daughter as a bride…!」

The two embraces each other naked.
…But
『Kuromori』 has a tight system for contraception…
They have decided a specific clinic…
And yet…Why did Yuzuki-sensei doesn't give Iwakura-kaichou and Yukino genuine contraceptives…?
…Why?

「Yoshida-kun…Get along with Misuzu, okay?! Make sure you shower your pet with love!」

Oh right…Nagisa-san rented me Misuzu-san.
…as a Rental Pet

「…Y-Yes, I'll make her happy!」

Nagisa-san and Margo-san laughed at my answer.

「…Idiot. You're the owner so you just take care of her! It's the pet's job to make the Owner happy…!」

Nagisa-san looks at Misuzu-san's face while laughing.

「Misuzu…make Yoshida-kun happy!」

Misuzu-san looks up at Nagisa-san's face…!

「Yes…I'll do all of my best!」
「Un, great! Mama's very happy!」

Then…Suddenly, the door on the interior of the room opened!
What appeared is…the small Mao-chan…!

「…Mama, pee」

The fairy with an absentminded look calls out to her mother.

「My, my, you're awake…okay, let's go to the toilet」

Mao-chan who's rubbing her eyes looks up at us.

「…Huh, why are you all naked?」

…Uwa.
That's right.
We're all naked aside from Margo-san.

「Onii-chan and Onee-chan's going to shower…!」

Nagisa-san spoke to me while taking Mao-chan to the restroom.

「…Yoshida-kun! Clean the body of your pet, that's your job as her owner!」

◇　◇　◇

I take the shower and waited for the water to become hot.

「Misuzu-san…come here」

It would be serious when Misuzu-san gets her hair wet so I put on a shower cap.
It seems that the bathroom is already prepared when I embraced Nagisa-san.

「…Is it hot?」

The lukewarm water sprinkled to her bloodstained genital.

「…Ouch!」

Did it soak on her wounds? Misuzu-san trembled.

「Are you okay?」
「…I'm fine」

I rinsed off the blood and semen that's on her thighs…
And her ass after that…

「Un…It's clean now, Misuzu-san」

When I say that, Misuzu-san is…

「…Please call me 『Misuzu』」
「…Eh?」
「I will call you 『Danna-sama』 as well」

D-Danna-sama…?

「…That is to make it feel natural that you're the 『Master』…!」

…W-What?
Eh…W-What?!!

「Danna-sama…I'll be washing off Danna-sama…!」

Misuzu-san said that then took the shower head from me
Her cute hand grips my penis and made the shower hit the places painted with blood and semen.

「…Misuzu-san!」
「It's…Misuzu!」

…She's washing it.
…This cute beauty, my penis.
Throwing hot water while combing down my pubic hair with one hand.
Lifting my balls with one hand and made water flow on the back too…
…Her hand feels good.

「M-Misuzu…!」

This is my pet…
My cute pet…!

「…Danna-sama, I have a request」

Misuzu spoke to me while washing my penis.

「Please meet up with Misuzu's fiance…Takahiko-san」

…Eh?
I was pulled from the pleasure to the reality in a dash…!

「I can't talk to my grandfather and father yet, but…I think you must talk to Takahiko-san…tell that Misuzu's body can't be a bride anymore…!」

…Right.
This person…is an 『Ojou-sama』 who believes she can't marry anymore when she's no longer a virgin.
Then, the fiance her grandfather has decided is…

「I absolutely need to talk to Takahiko-san that I won't be able to become his bride anymore. But, I'm scared to go alone…!」

…Un.
…This is my responsibility.
…Nay, since I made her my pet…I must solve all of her suffering.
…That's a necessity!

「…Got it. I'll talk to Takahiko-san. I'll tell him that Misuzu's mine…!」

Thus must be how it feels to 『Take a leap in the dark』…[11]
Am I gonna get hit or kicked?…Anyway, I just have to bow down…
I'm prepared.

「…Thank you very much」
「…Stand up」

Misuzu-san stood in front of me.
Her lovely face…beautiful eyes…

「I'm going to kiss you」
「…Go on」

I kissed my cute pet.
I embraced Misuzu's naked body…!

「…How old is Misuzu?」

I whispered in her ears…

「Sixteen years old…second year in high school!」

…It pierced my heart.

She's a year older than me…!!

---

1. I want to put in "Like the tower of babel" for laughs but I thought that it's going a bit too far on putting what I want on it, so I just stick to the original ↩
2. Mwahahaha! Fear me! For I am the penis that would break a thousand virgin blood! ↩
3. Sadist Yoshida is best Yoshida ↩
4. Not literally! ↩
5. Don't worry, having sex is something God did when he can't forgive Adam and Eve ↩
6. Onwards to the new land! ↩
7. What a gentleman ↩
8. Wait, you're skipping too many steps Yoshida-kun! ↩
9. I will not retain the Goshujin-sama here because it's a title, later, she'll call him Danna-sama, which means both Master/Husband, depending on who's being addressed and who's the

speaker. Anyway, I just want to clear that out ↩
10. I know, but who am I to judge? ↩
11. 『清水の舞台から飛び降りる』 ↩

43. Fierce animals running through a town

When we got out of the shower…Nagisa-san handed us bath towel and clothes.

「I'll be bringing Misuzu's clothes from the shop so wait a moment!」
「…Thank you very much」
「You can rest from the shop today. After Margi brings you to Ikeda-sensei's clinic, go back home. Your curfew is 6:30, isn't it?」
「…Yes」

Misuzu's curfew is that early?!

「Your panty's already soaked wet with pee so I'll lend you mine. It's being washed right now」
「…I'm sorry」
「Just tell your mother and nanny that you changed clothes because you spilled water from the vase. They would be surprised to see a sheltered daughter coming back home with a different panty, wouldn't they?」
「…Yes」

So she has a 『Nanny』…

「Ah…Danna-sama, Misuzu will wipe you」

Saying that, Misuzu opens the bath towel

「No…I'll be wipint Misuzu-san」

Somehow…it's a bit embarrassing.

「Geez…you two are getting along already. How about you two just wipe each other?!」
「…Yes」

Misuzu-san wipes me…and I wipe Misuzu too.

I thoroughly enjoy the softness of her breasts and ass over this linen cloth.
Misuzu's towel is wiping my crotch…

「Oh right, I'll give this to the two of you…」

Nagisa-asn took out a red leather chocker and a metal bracelet.

「This looks like a choker but this is a collar. Look, there's a chain that can be attached here, and here's the chain. Put this on when you're together」
「…Okay」
「…Yoshida-kun, put it on her」

The leather choker was handed to me.
The light leather ring…somehow feels very heavy.

「…Please, Danna-sama」

I coil the choker on Misuzu's thin neck.

「That's right, you make it snap on the back…」

The metal fittings locked…!
Misuszu's…attached with a collar.

「This is for everyday use. This isn't a bracelet but an anklet. If it's an anklet, you can hide it in your socks and it won't be found on clothes inspection. Misuzu's school has quite strict regulations after all」

Saying that, Nagisa-san handed the metal ring.

「This anklet is made of titanium so it's fine when taking a bath since it won't get rust. Oh, the latch is a number lock. You won't be able to take it off unless you have the combination. Yohsida-kun, pick your favorite number…and don't tell Misuzu」
「Okay」

I squat down and put the anklet on Misuzu's right ankle…!
The combination is 『0428』…
That's the day when Misuzu and I first met…and the day when

Misuzu lost her virginity.[1]
Click…the titanium leg ring is now stuck on Misuzu's foot.

「How does it feel being Yoshida-kun's pet for real…Misuzu?」
「…Yes, I'm very glad」

When I looked up, it's Misuzu's smooth crotch.
There's love nectar leaking out from her slit…
It seems that Misuzu's aroused from me attaching a collar and anklet on her.
Really…an easy to wet, cute pet.
Nagisa-san seems to have noticed it too…she laughs.

「Ah , I forgot this…Yoshida-kun, take this」

Nagisa-san took something with a size of an armful from the shelf on top of the washing machine.
That's…an adult diaper…!

「I intend to use this for training Misuzu…This child's doing pee-training after all. I'll leave the continuation to Yoshida-kun」
「Eh…Diaper training?」
「That's right…Yoshida-kun will be changing Misuzu's diapers. This is a really a good absorbent and good at preventing leaks so she can urinate anytime anywhere!」

Nagisa-san's grinning.
Uwaa, that's…also great!

「Misuzu…can I?」
「Yes…Danna-sama」

I attach the diaper to Misuzu while being taught how to put it by Nagisa-san.
A lovely beautiful girl…diaper.
Woah…this is somehow very lewd…

…Pinpon
The chime at the entrance rings.

「…Ah, someone brought Misuzu's clothes」

Nagisa-san went to the entrance immediately…

「…Eeh, could this be?!」

A delicate middle of green and gray…but a most elegant colored sailor blouse.
A deep maroon colored scarf…
Could this be…that one called as the best Ojou-sama school in Japan…Uhm!

「Nfufu, didn't I tell you? Misuzu's a genuine 『Ojou-sama』…!」

Yukino's little sister, Maika-chan's wearing an ojou-sama middle school but the ranks are different.
Maika-chan's school on the middleweight division and Misuzu's an open weight division with champions and gold medals.
It's incomparable.
It's the number one on the list of 『If you're gonna become a bride, then graduate at this school』 since the pre-war era…!

「Hurry and dress up」

Misuzu who changed to her super-ojou-sama school uniform…her grace and loveliness trippled
What's this…she's super cute though?
The red collar matching her elegant sailor uniform is…!

「What's wrong, Danna-sama?」

Misuzu smiled at me.

「…Can we kiss?」

I blurted out those words instinctively.

「Yes, go on」

I embraced Misuzu and kissed her.
Ah…somehow, I'm overwhelmed.
Misuzu's kiss tastes like sweet lemon.
Different from Yukino.

「I'll take care of you!」
「Yes…please cherish me forever…」

◇ ◇ ◇

Returning to the living room, Mao-chan and Margo-san are drinking Calpis2 water on a paper carton.

「…Want to drink, Misuzu-chan?」
「Thank you」
「…Ehehe!」

Mao-chan smiled and poured Calpis on Misuzu's glass

「Oyaoya, You're not going to pour one for Yoshida-kun?」

When Margo-san said that, Mao-chan…

「…Because」

She looks at Nagisa-san with a troubled face.

「Oh my…I forgot」

Saying that, Nagisa-san comes over to me cheerfully.

「…Yoshida-kun」
「…What?」

Nagisa-san kissed me in front of Mao-chan…!
Mao-chan smiled immediately.

「You see…Mao won't talk to anyone I haven't kissed!」

…What kind of education is that?
Or rather…she won't open up to any person to any people other than those her Mama kissed…
That's how much Nagisa-san distrust the adults of the world…

「…This person is also Mama's friend?」
「That's right, Mama's friend…an important person. He's called Yoshida-kun」

「…Yoshidakun?」
「Un. Also, she'll be coming here from time to time to play so get along with him, Mao!」
「…Okaay～!」

I'll come here occasionally…right.
Mao-chan smiles at me.

「I'm Mao! Nice to meet you!」
「Yoshida…best regards」
「…Un!」

Margo-san poured in my share in Mao-chan's place.
I gulped it down…
I was really thirsty.
Misuzu's at the same state too.
The glass was emptied immediately and we asked Mao-chan to pour again…

「You see, Yoshida-kun's got a good present for Mao!」
「Eh, what is it?」
「…What do you think?」
「Uun…Picture book?…A doll?」
「It's what Mao wants the most!」
「…What is it…Mama, tell me!」
「…A sibling!」

…Bu!

「You see, Mao will have a sibling as a present!」
「Eeh, yaaay!!!! When, when, when will it be coming?!」
「Right…the fastest would be around next spring」

Nagisa-san's full of motivation on getting pregnant…

「I want it sooner! I want it on Christmas!」
「Uun, that's a bit impossible since it's too premature…the baby needs to grow up slowly on Mama's stomach to be healthy. That's why you can't hurry it up」
「I can't hurry it up…Un, got it!」
「Then, Mao should ask Yoshida-kun too…tell him, please make a

healthy baby」

The fairy-like Mao-chan looks up at me.

「Yoshidakun…please! Mao wants a lil bro!」
「…Un, I'll do my best」

I answered like that for the time being.

「Now then…we won't make it in time if we don't go soon」

Margo-san looks at her watch.
The time is 3:32

「…Four o'clock, in front of the baseball club grounds」

…Oh right!
That's the time Yukino's meeting up with Endou…

「Anyway, we'll go by car…Misuzu-san will be brought to the clinic too」

◇ ◇ ◇

We went to the first floor of the shop.
It's early afternoon so there's not much customers as expected.
Miyuki-san's the only one serving the customers.
The three clerks gather around Misuzu.

「Congratulations…Misuzu-chan!」
「…Is your body okay?」
「Yes…Danna-sama's gentle with me」
「Uwa, she called him Danna-sama!」
「I wish you happiness!」
「Serve him as an honor of being Naigsa-sama's pet!」
「Un…Do your best!」

When the pets talk to Misuzu in sequence, Nagisa-san laughs and spoke.

「Geez! Misuzu's not going anywhere! She's going to work on this shop even after this so get along…!」

「Yes, Manager!」
「Very well…! Then, Margo-chan, Yoshida-kun, later. Misuzu, take care too…!」

We bowed and then left the shop.
Misuzu also bowed to her companions.
Miyuki-san who's serving the customers waved her hand laughingly…

Once again…Margo-san's Maserati.
Misuzu bought minieral water from the vending machine before we got in.

「Get on the back…You guys want to make out, don't you?」

Margo-san says that but…

「Yes. Thank you for your concern!」

Hey…Misuzu?
Misuzu held my hand and we went on the backseat.
Misuzu closes to me while gripping my hand…
The fragrance of her hair stimulates my nose.

「…Then, let's go」

Buwaaaan…! The engine roars!
Maserati began to run.

「…Yoshida-kun. Do you have a moment?」

After a while…Margo-san talked to me.

「Yes, what is it?」
「You see…It's my old story」

Leaving a space in her words, Margo-san continued.

「…You see, when I was 12, I was in a facility, protected for three years」

12 years…the age where Margo-san was raped.

She was sheltered after that event…

「It was a Christian church managed facility…the Facilities' Priest, Nagano-sama breeds a lot of small birds there. He's very caring and he treasured those birds he raised」

From the backseat…I can only see Margo-san's blonde bangs on the rearmirror.

「You see, that priest gives one small bird when a new child comes to the facility…he makes the child chose the one they like」

Misuzu opens the mineral water bottle and drinks it…
She presented it to me but…I refused as I don't need it.

「That's the way of doing things on that facility there…Everyone's a child, including me, everyone's thrown away by poor parents. We can't take care of pets. There's children forgetting to give bird seeds, or cleaning the cage too…that kind of child won't be able to have dinner as punishment. The priest said…『That small bird is your small bird. It would die if you don't feed it. It would get sick if you don't take care of it. I don't intend to give meal on those who don't look after their small bird…』」
「…That's an amazing education」

Misuzu told Margo-san.

「But, everyone's a child with wounds on their heart…they're not children who can raise small birds. There're children who released them to the sky, thinking that it's troublesome. In the end, there's children who let them weaken and die too. The child who had his eaten by a stray cat was careless. The most cruel one had killed the bird by himself…」
「…My」
「Still…That child was made to choose another small bird by the Priest. He gives them birds…again, and again. One day, I happen to meet the priest burying the small bird that died on the backyard… the child that killed the small bird refuses to bury it」
「…That's cruel」
「The number of birds that child has killed is three. That's why, I told the priest…『Why are you still giving that child a bird? Priest,

aren't the birds pitiful with that child?』」

Misuzu's also listening to Margo-san's story with interest.

「Then…the priest answered me. 『It's pitiful. I love small birds.[3] As much as the children in this facility』…I said. 『Then how about you give something trivial than your important small birds?!』」
「…What did the priest answer?」
「He said this… 『It won't have any meaning if I don't give you my most important one』…!」

There's no meaning if it's not my most important.

「Yoshida-kun…I saw the priest's behavior overlapping with Nagisa-san. Nagisa-san gave her most important pet to you. If not, it would just be meaningless…」
「…Why is it?」

I asked Margo-san.

「If it's a boring woman…you'd embrace it two or three times then throw it away. A child with a foul mind would look at you with cruel eyes, it won't hurt your heart in particular but…Nagisa-san doesn't want you to experience that, I think」

That's why…Nagisa-san…Gave Misuzu.

「…Whoever man it is, if Misuzu-san's a good child, there's no way you'd throw her away, right?」

I look at Misuzu.
Cute like a puppy, a lovely girl.
An elegant, honorable ojou-sama.
A devout Christian who thought she won't be able to marry when she's no longer a virgin.
On her neck…is a red collar.
Her life's been broken by me.
Form now on…I'm sure that she won't be able to love…
As the pet's owner…I have the responsibility and obligation.

「Yes…I'll take care of her.」

Misuzu grasped my hand tightly.

「Un. I'll take care of her…so Nagisa-san won't feel sad」
「Yes…Thank you very much」

The car moved to the main street then towards my school

「By the way…Yoshida-kun, what do you think of Nagisa-san's shop?」
「Eh…It's a very splendid shop, it's prospering well…!」
「I'm not asking about that… What do you think about Nagisa-san making all the clerks of her shop her pet?
「…Err」

I look at Misuzu

「You only need to answer honestly…I want to hear your honest impressions」

Margo-san's voice is serious

「…I thought it's like Yuzuki-sensei」

To be accurate…Yuzuki-sensei's sub-version?

「Un…I think so too. That's why, Minaho can't free Katsuko-san or Iwakura-san」

Margo-san's words surprised me…!

「…That street Nagisa-san's in basically has gentle and docile people. That's why Minaho's has peace in her mind and let Nagisa-san be independent. …And yet, as soon as Nagisa-san became independent from Minaho, she began to gather her pets. It became five before we noticed. If that happened to Nagisa-san, then what do you think about Katsuko-san?」
「…W-What will happen?」
「…You can take a bet. When Katsuko-san begins her bakery, she'd have 20 people as her pets within one year. I don't know whether she'll gather boys or girls but…Anyway, she'll go and gather cute children…!4」

…Ah
Certainly…that 『Sex beast』is likely to do it…

「…Iwakura-san's the same」
「Iwakura-san…pets too?」

Margo-san laughed.

「If it's pets, she already had three captured…the guys on the student council are all Iwakura-san's slaves…!」

Eh…that serious person?
The colleagues at the student council…are her sex slaves?!

「Didn't she…say that she has a boyfriend on university…?」
「Accurately, there's also a boyfriend on university…I think? Well, she may be playing with the children on the student council and the university guy was the real one, but」

Iwakura-kaichou's that kind of person?!

「You see, Iwakura-san…once she's released from Yuzuki-sensei's mental domination, she'd be unexpectedly cruel. Yoshida-kun, you've heard about it, didn't you? The talk of Iwakura-san on the student council room with Shirasaka Yukino…!」

…Right
I was listening to it with Yuzuki-sensei.

「I also heard it from under the principal's office…there are some lies mixed on it.」
「…Lies?」
「Yuzuki-sensei's not the one who forced Iwakura-san to prostitute herself…Iwakura-san's body is already dyed to compensated dating before she met Yuzuki-sensei…!」

…That's?!
She's selling herself willingly…?!

「…She's a genuine slut」
「Then…the one where she said that Yuzuki-sensei forced her to prostitute herself on various people?!」

「…That's coping treatment. Making her experience a helpless, cruel and painful sex, her desire for prostitution was eliminated」
「…Even going as the student council president?」
「That's right…Iwakura-san's a child who wants to attract other people's attention subconsciously. She blew off her desire on an adult compensated dating before. That's why…Minaho let changed her prostitution acts to student council activities to release her desires. As long as she's controlling the student council , her desire would be filled for the time being but still…having the student council children eaten by her, Iwakura-san's so sinful」
「…Could it be that Iwakura-san's not taking-in proper contraceptives?」
「Un…When she was given the『If you drink this, you won't get pregnant for 24 hours』drug, she'd go to the town and sell her body. That's why, Minaho passed only one emergency contraceptive fake to her. That marble chocolate…can give her a peace of mind only once but…if there's only one…she won't act rashly, don't you think…?!」

For Margo-san who's always carrying an emergency contraceptive, it was persuasive.

「Uhm…the other medicine given to Yukino…the one that can prevent pregnancy until three ejaculations?」
「Oh that drug?…You see, Yuzuki-sensei gave that to Iwakuta-san on that day. For her to hand it over to Yukino. 『This medicine isn't compatible to Iwakura-san's body』she said. Well, when you tell her 『This is a contraceptive that I can't say that it's certain, you're fine with three shots but you might get pregnant with the fourth』Iwakura-san will never use it for herself…」

Her sharp eyes in the rearview mirror is looking at me.

「…Iwakura-san aborted three times so far. She has the most fear towards pregnancy more than anyone else…so it seems that she usually use contraceptive films and condom together」

Haa…That person.
Huh?!…Wait.

「…Compensated dating, and abortion…!」

That's the rumors about Nei-san!
Most of the students believes that Nei-san is such a person…!

「Un…Iwakura-san's actions were being showy so we had to do something before it was turned over to the police…but, it became a rumors among the students. Saying that there's a 『Queen of Compensated dating』 …That's why we set up Nei to that legend…!」
「…Why?」

Why is Nei-san…being spoken ill of everyone?!
That bright and gentle person…Why?!

「You see…it was just in time when Nei were also gathering quite a lot of trouble… Anyway, Nei took all of Iwakura-san's evildoings」

…That's right, at that time
When I was on the way to the roof with Nei-san to skip classes…!
When Nei-san and I were on the way to the rooftop to skip the first class…!

「I want you to wait until Nei speaks about the details…That's something I can't speak of…!」5

If Margo-san says so then I won't force to ask for now.

「Anyway…let's return」
「…Okay」
「Us, members of Yuzuki-sensei's picked up 『Toys』 are all 『Fierce Animals』 …!」
「… 『Fierce Animals』 ?」
「That's right…same as tiger and lions…we can't live when we don't slaughter those poor 『Lambs』 」

… 『Lamb』
Misuzu here is also one.
A poor lamb sacrificed for me.

「To make the tiger and lion stop eating meat…we can't live unless somebody's sacrificed for us…on the society, we're existence they'd shoot once found…!」

Margo-san's eyes in the mirror looks at me sadly…

「We're mistaken existence that shouldn't stay. But…we were born into this world. Since we we're born…we must continue living desperately until we die…by sacrificing someone…!」

Katsuko-san torments people by sex…
Margo-san uses violence…
Nei-san sets fire…
Yuzuki-sensei wishes nothing but people's misfortune…

「Yoshida-kun…you're the same」

That's right.
I slaughtered Yukino…Misuzu too!

「Minaho's trying to make a place where we can live. Minaho herself is fighting her desire for her own ruin…!」

Sensei…she and her 『Toys'』 predation territory, while ruling the school…
At the same time, she's scheming so that her own domain won't extend.
…Contradicting actions.
On one side, there's an increase of victims…on the other side, the damage is prevented from increasing.
Still…she can't avoid doing that for the sake of protecting her 『Toys』
School is not a zoo. The students are normal students.
『Toys』 aren't put on a cage. 『Fierce Animals』 are 『Fierce Animals』 are punished when they run free on a human town.
Furthermore, Yuzuki-sensei herself is a blood thirsty 『Fierce animal』 too…!

「Minaho has her own suffering…please understand that」
「…Okay」

I obtained Misuzu…I must feel the weight of the obligation and responsibility of an owner…
Yuzuki-sensei's…feeling the obligation and responsibility for us

『Toys』

…But, wait.

Then…how about the 『Lambs』 sacrificed for us?
The victims slaughtered by us…are just left like that?
…IS that okay?

「…Margo-sama」

Suddenly…my 『Lamb』, Misuzu spoke up.

「Our priest have told us before… 『Human's are living being that cannot live unless they trouble someone else. But, you must work hard to reduce the trouble as much as possible. That's love of neighbors』」

…Misuzu?

「Then, he also said this… 『It is fine to trouble the people you love. It's fine to depend. That's why, if you trouble someone, think of yourself as loved』」

Misuzu's smiling at me.

「That's why, Danna-sama…please trouble Misuzu a lot. Please depend on me. Misuzu wants to be loved by Danna-sama…!」

Misuzu holds her hand and made me touch her red collar.

「Misuzu is happy as a pet…!」

…My lamb…is a really good child

「hahaha…You really got a good pet」

Margo-san says laughingly.
I grasped Misuzu's hand.
Misuzu leaned on me…
My dear pet…

…And yet, I'm that 『fierce animal』

I'm thinking about how I will meet Yukino from now on…
I remember the feeling of Yukino's body…
The feeling of skin different from Misuzu…
A different taste of vagina…
I want to violate that body soon again…
I want to see Yukino's crying face…
I want to make Yukino cry from intense sex…!

…I
…I
…am a『fierce animal』
Just like how Margo-san said…
……wait?

While I was looking at the blue sky out of the window…I suddenly thought.

Let's calm down and think again.
Let's go backwards Margo-san's talk earlier…
I…might be overlooking something important!
…I arranged everything that I knew so far in my head![6]

When I arranged all of the things I knew in chronological order…

Six years ago.
□Yuzuki-sensei started her job. Katsuko-san and Nagisa-san entered the school. And became 『Toys』
※Katsuko-san and Nagisa-san were trained in sex quite intensely…

Five years ago.
□Reconstruction of the high school begins.
※Yuzuki-sensei's monitoring system was installed in the school.

Four years ago
□Nagisa-san got pregnant. Was freed from being a 『Toy』 Opened a flower shop.

Three years ago
□Margo-san entered school.
※However, Margo-san knows Yuzuki-sensei from America so I think she's already a 『Toy』 before this

□Mao-chan's birth

Two years ago
□Iwakura-san and Nei-san entered school.
□Iwakura-san became a 『Toy』 first year's spring
※She's been doing conpensated dating before that.
□Iwakura-san's training was until autumn…She then received remodeling to become the student council president afterwards.
□Nei-san got attacked by the music teacher dick slave, Margo-san helped her.
※The time when Nei-san became a 『Toy』 is unknown…
※Iwakura-san aborted three times.
※The time when Nei-san took Iwakura-san's evildoing is unknown. She dyed her hair blonde and started wearing blue contacts.

One year ago.
□Nei-san got absent from school for a long term between second and third semester so she has to repeat the class for another year.
□Nei-san was in chorus club until last year. (There must be a reason for her to quit)
□Iwakura-san was elected as the president of the student council in autumn.
□There were two candidates on becoming a dick slave but both failed.
※Why was there a sudden need for a dick slave? Occasionally trained by Katsuko-san and Iwakura-san, there wasn't anyone troubled with sex. Since the recklessness of the music teacher two years ago, why are dick slaves gone?
This year
□I became the 『Seventh Toy』…

I still haven't met the 『Sixth toy』…
Margo-san's not saying anything so I don't ask.

Anyway…everything seems to have started five years ago7
And it's certain that something big happened two years ago.
And after that…Nei-san one year ago too.

I still don't know everything about 『Kuromori』…
It seems that Yuzuki-sensei and the 『Toys'』 past are still a secret…!

「…Danna-sama is there anything wrong?」

Misuzu-san looks at me with a worried face.

「No, it's nothing…」

I embraced Misuzu's body…!

「Kyaa…Geez, you surprised me!」

Misuzu-san's body is warm.
I kissed her red collar.
Misuzu's my cute pet…!
Inside me…there's a desire to be gentle with Misuzu…and to be cruel with Yukino…
It's fighting intensely…!

I'm a fierce animal.

「We're about to arrive」

I look outside from Margo-san's words…
The Maserati has entered the school…

---

1. Yoshida's weak at passwords ↩
2. Japanese milk based soft drink, it's also another term for semen, but Mao-chan's drinking it so it should be the first one ↩
3. He's a love liver. Small bird = Kotori ↩
4. Just like your shota doujins ↩
5. Margo-san is that friend who spoils you the ending but won't tell you the details when you ask about what happened that resulted the ending ↩
6. Oh shit, Sherlock! ↩
7. Nope, this started longer than you think ↩

44. A big triangle on the baseball field

The ground of the baseeball club is on the west side of the high school.
The first base of the ground touches the site of at school and was surrounded by a wire netting afterwards.
In short…outside the fence is outside the school.
There's a rule that students not wearing uniform can't enter the school…If Yukino goes home to change up for her date, she should be outside this fence.
The baseball club's ground is shaped like an earthenware mortar.
On the right side of the ground is a bank-like slope, a neighboring old man watches the exercise of the baseball club.
Margo-san stopped the car on the shadow of the old storage just a bit ahead of the ground…

「I'll be waiting here…this car stands out after all」

Margo-san turned around from the driver's seat and told us.
Certainly…This Maserati is too showy.
When I get down of this car, there's no doubt that Endou and the members of the baseball club will suspect something.

「Nei's coming here soon I think」
「Nei-san?」
「Un, I talked to her while you two were taking shower. Katsuko-san sent Shirasaka Yukino's little sister home. Nei's going back first…」

…Right.

「Misuzu-san, you heard about Nei from Nagisa-san, didn't you?」
「Yes, I heard that she's a very beautiful person…」
「That's great, go with Yoshida-kun and introduce yourself to Nei」

Margo-san smiled to Misuzu.
Oh right. I have to report that Misuzu became my pet…
Would Nei-san be pleased?
I think that she heard the rough situation from Margo-san through

the phone.

「Yes…I'll say my greetings」

Misuzu nodded at Margo-san like a bride who's going to meet her mother-in-law

「Oh right …Nei loves cheerful children. Whatever she ask you, just answer with a loud voice!」[1]
「Yes…I'll do my best!」
「Un. Then, take care」

Saying thanks to Margo-san, Misuzu and I got off the car.
The two of us walked around seven- eighty meters.
Misuzu's nervous? She's not letting go of my hand…
Looking at Misuzu's face in worry…She's forcing herself to smile.
My cute pet…
Her red collar shines vividly along with the super ojou-sama school's blue and emerald uniform.

「Danna-sama…My heart's throbbing that I might pee…」

Misuzu's face is red and spoke in a low voice.
Speaking of which, she's been drinking water in the car.
She also drank several glasses of Calpis at Nagisa-san's house…!

「It's fine. Misuzu's wearing a diaper」

That's right, Misuzu was made to wear an adult diaper by Nagisa-san.
…By my hand.
Towards my unkind words, Misuzu…!

「Yes…I can pee anytime as long as you order me…!」

My pet's too lovely!
I thought of instinctively pushing Misuzu on the nearby grass…!
…But.

I saw Yukino.

We're walking on the right side of the baseball club's ground.

The slope was quite steep outside the wire net.
Yukino's is on an elevated concrete behind the backstop.
Our distance is around thirty meters, I think…
She doesn't notice me or Misuzu.
She's watching Endou on the ground.
She's smiling just like Endou told her.

Yukino's…wearing a pure white dress.
A neat and tidy image…it's as if she's an ojou-sama on a holiday resort…
But, isn't the cloth too thin?…The lines of her underwear is transparent
She's wearing sandals. She's holding a cute cloth bag.
Her hair is bound with a big white ribbon.
It's clean yet, sexy clothing…!
Perhaps, her clothes would look lovely when she's still a virgin.
But, Yukino right now has erotic feel vivid on the lines of her body and bare legs.
That's right…she's a woman who already knows a man…

The baseball club's practice seems to have ended.
There's no figure of the supervisor and coach. Most of the seniors too…
The ones on the ground right now are mostly first year members… eagerly tidying up the tools and doing maintenance on the ground.
The upperclassmen has around fifteen of them gathered on the bench and laughing out loudly.
Perhaps, they're the watchdogs…and will stay until the first years are done cleaning.
Endou…even though he's a first year, he's sitting with the seniors on the bench!
He's sitting on his seat firmly…!

「…Hey guys, hurry up and finish this! Senpai won't be able to go home unless you guys finished this!」

If you're going to shout that then you should try helping too…!

「That's right! Endou's making his cute girlfriend wait for her all this time!」

The pimple faced senior shouted at them.
A loud laughter can be heard from the bench…!

The bench Endou's sitting at is the first base side…
We're entering the third base outside the wire netting…
Yukino's behind the backstop…
We're placed in a triangle with delicate distances…

The talk Endou's having while they laugh…of course, we can't hear it.
Yukino can't hear it too.

…Wiiin, wiiiin!!

My phone suddenly vibrates.
Looking at the display…It's Yuzuki-sensei…?!

「…Hello, it's Yoshida」
『…That's great that you comforted Nagisa. It seems that she's pleased.』

…Comfort
Well, that's how it is.
Certainly, she looks happy…

『…Still, it seems that you got such a cute pet…』
「Yes. Ah , but, it's mine…I won't give this one to Sensei」
『Don't worry. I won't do that…Nagisa would cry out if you harm that child. I also love cute children…!』

…Fuu
I'm a bit relieved.

『Rather than that…I'm listening to something very interesting. I'll let you hear it too…!』

…wiretapping?!
After hearing some beeps…the phone's tied to another line.
…That's
Endou's conversation with the people on the bench…!

『…Still, Endou's woman is quite cute』

『Isn't she? She's head over heels for me!』
『Is she a virgin? Is she really a virgin?!』
『Isn't that obvious!?…Yukino came from an all girls middle school. She said that I'm the first guy she went out with…!』
『…You still won't do her?!』
『Not yet!…I can't waste my stamina until the end of the next practice game!』
『Well, they'd decide whether you'd become a regular or not on the test pitch』
『You got it…I'm seriously doing my best!』
『When you say that, Endou-chan…might've been hiding it from us and have been banging her a lot already』
『I haven't! You also know it don't you! I bet that I'll get Yukino's 『virginity』 on the later half of the Golden Week…!』
『That makes us feel relieved…you're not going to do it out tonight?』 2
『I won't!…If I get discovered, I'd be hit hard by Captain Ataka!』
『What day did the Captain bet on her virginity loss?』
『If I recall, it was May 4…!』
『Then, Endou…Let captain take the credit, break it by 4th!』
『Un. That's fine by me. That's for the peace of the club too』
『…Fourth?…I'm setting it on the third of the fifth though…!』
『Anything's fine…do what you want』
『Yeah, how many days are left for that girl's virginity…?!』
『Endou…when you get tired of her body, how about you give her to us?』
『Wait Senpai…please spare me from that』
『Ah, I see…You were a virgin. You don't want that on your first girl?!』
『I wonder? You two would be sticky during the summer vacation and the consecutive holidays i may but…won't you get tired of her body when it's around autumn?』
『…Oh, a talk from experience?』
『Well yeah…it's a season before women gets used to sex. The most fun season is during when you forcefully slam it in even if it hurts』
『I want to have sex with women who's used to it though. There's no future troubles』
『Then, Endou…When her pussy got loose already, pass her to me』
『Eeh, that's a bit…!』

『I'll wait until autumn…at that time, you'll get tired』
『If so…then』
『Ah, me next!』
『I'll also join in』
『Rather, should we make it a batting order?』
『Idiot, that would make me the last!』
『You guys, don't get he pregnant before my turn!』
『Isn't that great? Become the father of that child』
『Don't fuck with me…If you get bored then bring her to me. Okay?』
『Geez…can't be helped. I get it. But only when I get tired, okay…!』
『You'll get tied with her…once the summer vacation ends, there would be first years that would turn to beauties. I think that will make you distracted』
『Issat so?』
『Un…Endou's a capricious after all』
『Well…I'm really capricious』
『Look!』
『Anyway, don't forget to take a photo as a proof you got her』
『You have to make her face clearly seen too…okay?!』
『Yeah, in exchange record her body well. Her pussy dripping with semen』
『…I get it, Senpai』
『I'll be waiting for her 『Sex video』 !』

The members of baseball club laughs out loudly…

Haa…This is the conversation of the baseball club members at my high school?
Should I say it's wretched, or something…
They're not a baseball club aiming at Koshien3, they actually might be just like this…

…Endou
…In the end, he doesn't love Yukino that much.

Just a mere fashion…he seduced the cutest girl in the school year…
Just because she looks good.
Just because he wants to do it
Just because he wants to get her virginity.

Worst…I can't say that.
For me who actually violated Yukino.

But…
Yukino's not noticing Endou's intent?!
She's smiling and looks at Endou from a high ground…

Yukino is there as Endou's 『Girlfriend』
But, the members of the baseball club is only seeing her as a 『Prey』 for Endou to eat soon…!

『…Hey…take a look there, that uniform!』
『Ah, Seriouslhy?…Why is such a superior ojou-sama school child in this kind of place?!』

Uwaa…the baseball club noticed Misuzu.
They're pointing at this direction!

『Uwaa!…That child's super cute isn't she?』
『Un…Much more cuter than Endou's woman!』
『Three times cuter at least?』
『There's no way that is! Yukino's much more beautiful』
『Nono, Endou…take a look! She's not a half-hearted beauty!』
『Un…she's beautiful and elegant』
『It feels like she's a real 『Ojou-sama』 』
『That classical uniform is arousing…!』
『I want to strip her off!!!』
『…Or rather, who's the guy next to her? He looks like he's on a call. He's wearing the uniform of our school though…?!』
『Huh…He's holding her hand?!』
『No way!?』
『No, take a look!』

Their glances gathered to me…!

『Isn't that…Yoshida?!』

Endou who noticed me stands up from the bench.

『…Endou, you know him?』
『Yes, he's a bastard from our class』

『What, he's a first year?』

Since the baseball club got noisy, Yukino noticed us too…
The beauty on clean white dress noticed Misuzu and me.
Our hands holding tight…

「…Found you guys!」

I turned around to the loud voice…!
Nei-san's there.
Blonde hair and blue contacts…Nei-san's beautiful as usual.

『Huh…That's Natou?』
『That delinquent?』
『The top delinquent in the school…She's doing compensated dating』
『Eh, how much?』
『Idiot, she's only doing Yakuza and the rich guys, she won't do anyone from the school!』
『But…she's a super beauty isn't she?』
『Un…If it's just beauty, she really is』
『Well, she's an untouchable woman…!』
『…What's Untouchable?』
『Once you make a move on her, you'd be sent to the hospital…!』
『She's paired with a foreign woman who's at school last year, isn't she?』
『Yeah…that monster』
『Right now, it seems that they're kicking around delinquents and hoodlums…』
『Scary!』

It seems that Nei-san and Margo-san's notoriety has reached the seniors.

「Hello! I'm Nei! Are you Misuzu-chan?!」

Nei-san…why are you speaking out in a loud voice again?
Her voice is clearly echoing on the whole conical ground!
Look, the first years who are cleaning up stopped and looked this way.
Everyone's paying attention to us!

「…Nice to meet you! I'm Kouzuki Misuzu!」

Uwaa…Misuzu's also shouting out loud, she's hooked by Nei-san…!

「Un! I heard it from Maru-chan from the phone! You already had sex with Yo-chan?!!!!」

…N-N-N-N-Nei-san!
…The entire ground of the baseball club got frozen hard…
…It looks like Ice age has come.
…Everyone of them except Misuzu.

「…Yes! I offered him my virginity!」

M-M-M-Misuzu too?!
I felt frightened from the glance of the baseball club members.
But…Misuzu's gripping my hand so I can't get away…!

「…Did it hurt?!」
「…No! He was very gentle!」
「Since it's Yo-chan, he creampied you?!」
「Yes, he released a lot inside Misuzu's womb!」

The pimple faced baseball club member next to Endou…spout a nosebleed!
Everyone's dumbfounded…he's not even wiping the blood.
They look like they had a nightmare…they just look up this way.

「Have you done fellatio already!」
「Not yet! I'll definitely do it on the next opportunity!」
「Drink Yo-chan's sperm okay!」
「I will! Misuzu will drink all of it!」

Yukino's looking this way too.
Her eyes says that she can't believe what she's seeing.

「I'm jelly of Misuzu-chan! I also want to have sex with Yo-chan!」
「Is that so?!」
「Un! Can Misuzu-chan be there when I get to have sex with Yo-chan?! Let's have sex with the three of us! I'm sure it's fun!」
「Sure! With pleasure!」

A blonde beauty and a sweet beauty wearing an ojou-sama uniform…!
With that view…two more members of baseball club got nosebleed knockdown!
As for the first years, there are those holding their crotch…
Ah, one of the senior rushed to the restroom.
That's going to masturbate on his cubicle…

「…You're a good child as I've heard!」

Nei-san embraced Misuzu-san tightly…!
…With a smile on her whole face

「…Nei-sama?」
「You can call me『Nei-san』…You're Yo-chan's pet aren't you?」
「Please call me『Misuzu』then too」
「I want to call you 『Mi-chan』though…is that okay?」
「…Yes! Uhm, Nei-san」
「…What?」
「You're really beautiful…it's just like how Nagisa-sama said it!」
「Mi-chan too, you're really cute!」

Nei-san laughs and separates the hand she's holding…!

「By the way Mi-chan…did you notice?」
「…Yes?」
「Right now…Yo-chan and you are attracting everyone's attention right now…!」

With those words…Misuzu finally noticed her surroundings.
The baseball club members on the ground…nearly thirty people are looking up at us with their mouth wide open…
Endou too…

Yukino who's behind the backstop is also looking this way.
She's looking at me with eyes of hatred.

Yukino…What are you thinking right now?
What do you think about me embracing other women?
And this child's talking about having sex with me happily…

I want to know.
Yukino's feelings…
What Yukino is thinking of…

「…Ahn!…I'm so embarrassed…!」

Misuzu got red from the gazes of the men gathered at her.
That kind of face is also lovely…
The members of the baseball club shouted 「Uuooo!!」

『No…Is this some kind of mistake?』
『Un, I think this is a hallucination!』
『That cute child won't have sex right!』
『Or rather, that child doesn't have a hole. She's an angel!』
『Un, everything's just misheard!』
『That's right…of course it is…ahahaha…you should've said sooner!』
『Or rather…there's no way that first year would have such a delicious feast!』
『That's right, of course it is!!』
『This is strange! I'm sure this is wrong』
『It's a dream…it's a dream…I'm sure it's a dream!!』

I can hear the voices of the baseball club seniors from my phone…
Endou's not participating in the conversation.
He's just looking at me with a silly surprised face.

「Then, we should finish this off soon!」

Nei-san spoke to us while having a prankster smile.

「Mi-chan…kiss Yo-chan in front of everyone!」
「…Eh! T-That's!」

Misuzu's embarrassed.

「…You can't?! Embarrassed?!」
「No…I'll do it!」
「Then, do it!」
「…Okay!」

Nei-san shouted towards the ground!

「Everyone! Mi-chan's going to kiss Yo-chan!」

The baseball club grounds is shaken!!

『…No way!』
『Stop that!』
『Don't taint our angel!!』
『Someone, kill him!』
『Rather, kill meeeeee!!!』

I turned off my phone. Then put it on my pocket4
I don't want to hear their screaming voices as I kiss Misuzu.
I just want to indulge myself on a sweet kiss…
Misuzu…approaches me with a nervous face…!

「…Danna-sama, I'm about to wet myself…!」

Misuzu's slightly trembling from the hot glances of the men.

「You can pee now…rather, leak it out Piss yourself while kissing me…Misuzu!」

Misuzu's eyes shined from my order!
Misuzu's aroused!

「Yes…Danna-sama!」

Misuzu jumps into my chest!
The men on the ground shouted 「Oooooh!」

「Misuzu's offering her lips!」

Misuzu's lips is strongly pressed against mine!!
I embraced Misuzu's body tightly!
I gripped her soft ass with my right hand!

「…Ah, Ahn!」

Misuzu panted lightly while we're kissing.
Her eyes are entranced.
Misuzu's charming waist…and ass…are trembling!!
…She's urinating!

Misuzu's peeing on her adult sized diaper while people are watching her!!
While embracing and kissing me…!
My hand that's holding Misuzu can feel the warmth of her pee…the physical vibration at the time of urination…I know all of her body!
Misuzu who let out everything shouted in delight while embracing me!

「…Aaahn! Love! Love! Love!…I love you!!」

Then, another hot kiss…!

「Me too! I love you Yo-chan!!!」

Nei-san embraced me from the back and kissed my cheek…

The baseball club members looks at me in blank surprise…
Those who's blood is dripping from their nose…
There are guys who are crying too…
Endou's face has turned from surprise to anger.
Yukino's…looking at me with eyes of hatred.

「Now then…Let's retreat!」

I got startled by Nei-san's words.

「Later then, baseball guys…bye bye!」

Nei-san laughs and began to run

「Hey, come here!」
「Wait, Nei-san wait a moment!」

Misuzu follows Nei-san while holding down the diaper that became heavy from urinating…
I looked at Yukino who's glaring at me…then began to run…!
I grasp Misuzu's hand firmly…!

◇ ◇ ◇

We run after Nei-san.
We entered the shadow of the second physical education

warehouse.
This place isn't visible from the ground anymore.
There doesn't seem to be any member of baseball club who run after us…
Nei-san went further east of the school.
Huh, this direction is…

「Nei-san…Margo-san's waiting on the other side with her car though?」
「Eh! Is that so? I was sure that she's on the parking lot of the school personnel!」

Nei-san took out her phone.

「Hello, Maru-chan, sorry! Where are you right now?」

Nei-san confirmed Margo-san's current location.

「…Got it! I'll bring Mi-chan there!」

It seems they've come to an agreement
Nei-san ended the call.

「…She moved on a slightly father place from the baseball club, let's go there!」

Sure sure…I'll follow Nei-san anywhere!

「Huh…Mi-chan, you okay?」

…EH , Misuzu?
Looking at her, she's panting out loudly while still holding my hand.
She's dead tired and sank on the edge of the road…!

「Nei-san, please wait a moment…Misuzu's in pain」
「Okay…sorry…!」

Misuzu who's not sports oriented seems to be out of breath from just a small run.
That's another cute part of her though

「Sorry! I haven't thought about Mi-chan! I ran with all my best…!」

Nei-san apologized to Misuzu.

「Just…just let me take a rest for a moment…!」
「Want me to buy you a drink? Should I go buy something?」

When I say taht.

「No, please stay here…please just stay by Misuzu's side」

…The sweaty hand is clenching strongly!
The feeling of her hands is so lovely.

「…Yoshida-kun, what's wrong?」

Suddenly, a voice comes from the back…!
From the outside of the school…who?!
When I turned around…It was Yamamine-san.

Yamamine-san seems to be in the middle of roadwork of the athletic club.
Running shorts…!
The antelope-like legs of a sports girl is shining like the sun.
Her bob-cut hair, long slit eyes…a healthy beauty…!

「Oh, if it isn't Megumi-chan! What a coincidence!」

Seeing Yamamine-san, Nei-san smiled at her…!
Yamamine-san had a slightly troubled face…
Still, it seems that she's worried about the exhausted Misuzu.

「…Is she okay?」

Misuzu smiles at Yamamine-san while still fixing her breath.

「…I'm fine! It's' just hard since I suddenly moved」
「…Is that so?」

Yamamine-san looked at me.

「Un…I think that it's fine if she just takes a rest」
「Then that's fine」

Yamamine-san noticed my hand holding Misuzu's.
Yamamine-san's surprised.

「…Is she Yoshida-kun's girlfriend?」

…Err
…How should I answer this?

「…No I'm not!」

Misuzu answered in my place.
…Yamamine-san forcibly smiles!

「You see…I'm not his girlfriend!」

…Un
She's my pet

「Ah…I'm sorry」

Yamamine-san awkwardly apologized.
But her eyes are still stuck on our hands that's holding each other…

「Ehehe…Megumi-chan, are you that worried about Yo-chan?」

Nei-san pokes Yamamine-san.

「…That's not true!」

Yamamine-san's face turned red.

「Ah. Misuzu. She's our class rep, Yamamine-san. Oh, I'm also a class rep[5]」
「Nice to meet you, I'm Kouzuki Misuzu!」

Misuzu-san bowed her head to Yamamine-san politely

「…Yamamine Megumi」

Yamamine-san bowed to Misuzu too.

「Oh right! Megumi-chan, get along with Mi-chan!」
「…Mi-chan?」
「She's Misuzu so Mi-chan…I made it!」
「…I-Is that so?」

Yamamine-san seems to be weak at getting on with Nei-san…

「Mi-chan's going to come to this school to play from time to time…!」
「Yes…Yamamine-sama, best regards!」

There's no person who won't be moved by this innocent smile of Misuzu.
A lovely smile just like a newborn puppy…

「S-Sure…best regards…!」
「Mi-chan. 『Yamamine-sama』 sound strange! Mi-chan's a senior after all!」
「…A year higher than me?」
「Un, Megumi-chan's a first year. Mi-chan's a second year!」
「Ah, I'm sorry…I was rude!」

For Yamamine-san that's from the athletic club, seniority seems to be absolute.

「…Please don't mind it. We're from different classes」
「…But!」

It seems that Misuzu's condition has calmed down.
She smiled towards Yamamine-san.

「Is it okay for me to call you 『Megumi-san』?」
「Ah, yes. Go on」

As soon as she knows that Misuzu's a senior…Yamamine-san got overwhelmed by the dignified smile.

「I don't mind it if you call me 『Misuzu』…!」
「T-That's…!」
「Geez, you're too formal! isn't it great 『Miichan』 and 『Megumi-chan』」

Nei-san interrupts their talk forcibly.

「…Oh right! Megumi-chan, you're free right now?」
「…Err, do you need me for something?」

Yamamine-san's having a suspicious face.
Well of course…the one she's talking to is the worst delinquent in the school.
At least, Yamamine-san's thinking that…

「Hey, didn't I promise you last morning…I'll teach you how to use make-up!」

Yamamine-san's face…gets gloomy.

「…Uhm, that kind of things aren't suited for me」
「…Why?!」
「I…I won't be cute even if I use make-up…!」

Yamamine-san muttered sadly

「…That's not true!」

Misuzu shouted loudly…

「Megumi-san is cute! You'll get cuter when you use make-up!」

…M-Misusu?

「That's right! Megumi-chan has a good foundation! She's really a beauty so it's too good!」

Nei-san insists passionately!

「I…am not beautiful」
「No, Megumi-san's beautiful! I can tell」

Misuzu pushes from behind strongly.

「That's right, come here tomorrow…you free?」
「Yes, if it"s during the day…Tomorrow's a holiday…」
「Yo-chan, you okay with it?」

「Ah…Yes」

I don't have any plans originally.
When Nei-san tells me to 『Go』, I'll go even in hell…

「Megumi-chan will go together with Mi-chan and Yo-chan, won't you?」
「…But」
「Do you have something you really need to do?」
「…That's not the problem. There's no practice on the athletics club」
「Then, isn't that fine?! That's decided then!」
「Okay, I'll bring my own make up, all of it! There's a lipstick that suits Megumi-san!」

Misuzu's frolic.
Her glittering eyes is snapped into Yamamine-san.

「…Understood.. If Misuzu-san and Yoshida-kun is there」

Finally, Yamamine-san yielded.

「Then let's meet up at the main gate of the school by 10:00 tomorrow!」
「…School?!」
「Un, my friend's house is near the school!」

Nei-san's…going to bring Yamamine-san to Yuzuki-sensei's mansion…!

「…Got it, Ten, o'clock it is」
「Un. You don't need to worry about lunch, that house would just put out something…!」
「Eh, that is…!」
「Donmai donmai6…They'll make something delicious!」
「…But」

Misuzu charges at the troubled Yamamine-san.

「Oh right, Megumi-san!…please exchange mail addresses with Misuzu!」
「I'm doing a a run right nos so I don't have my phone」

「Then, I'll be writing my mail address right now!」

Misuzu writes down her address on her notebook then hold it down.

「Here you go! It's my first time having a mail of a friend outside the school!」
「…Friend?」
「…we're already friends!」

Misuzu blooms with a smile.
The two look at each other's eyes
Yamamine-san accepts the memo in silence…

「…I'll mail this later」
「Yes, I'll be waiting!」

---

1. Knowing what will happen, I can't stop laughing ↩
2. I don't get the sentence: 『そうやってオレたちを安心させておいて……今夜辺り、除膜式とかじゃねぇの？』 ↩
3. The stadium where the national high school baseball tournament is held ↩
4. Damn, that looks so cool when you imagine it ↩
5. I forgot, teheepero~ ↩
6. She's saying Kinishinai = Don't mind, well, let's just put donmai, it's a eng-slang for japs when they say Don't mind ↩

45. Stick of Sorrow

The meet up location assigned by Margo-san was near the east gate.
Margo-san's Maserati is parking on an alley with almost no pedestrians.
The driver's seat window opens.
Margo-san waves at us laughingly…

「I'm sorry Margo-san…!」
「Sorry Maru-chan…I misunderstood the escape route」
「…Margo-sama, thank you very much!」

We separately apologized to Margo-san.

「I don't mind it at all…Thanks to the transfer, Katsuko-san joined us」
「…Eh, Katsuko-san?」
「Katsun's here?」
「…Minaho contacted me. It seems that the one in charge has been replaced」

Margo-san points at the other side of the road.

「…Look, she's' here」

When we looked at it…what's with that white minivan…?

「AH, Maru-chan's white car…!」

Nei-san seems to be a bit disappointed…?!

「I don't want that~! It's so ugly…!」
「Don't say that. That van and this Maserati are both my treasured cars…!」
「…we got work?」
「Un. The Maserati is used for a bit confident company and that car's for complete backdoor works. A shite commercial vehicle is ordinary so it's easy to use」

What's coming is…the Japan's number one automobile maker's

business purpose minivan car.
Certainly, this car can go anywhere in the town…
Katsuko-san on the driver's seat is looking at us smilingly.
The white van stops right beside the Maserati…
A big black text is painted horizontally on the car…
『(Kabu1)Maruko Electronics?』?!

「Ah, Yo-chan, you see…this is magnet!」

Nei-san's puts her finger on the 『(Kabu)Maruko Denki』and peeled it off

「…There's other like 『Maruko Liquor Shop』 or 『Maruko Delivery』, 『Maruko Service』, and 『Maruko Real estate』」

Margo-san got off the driver seat of the Maserati and went towards the white van.

「We can change them anytime…there's also several plate numbers prepared」
「Everything's a Magnet」
「It's the same car used for filming TV dramas. Actually, this van's document is named at the rental firm that lends on those drama cars…」
「Even if the police searches us, we can just make an excuse of 『It's a car used by that company』」

Margo-san and Nei-san taught me proudly…
…Amazing
…As expected of crime organization.

「…It's called a 『Drama used car』!」

Katsuko-san steps out of the car.
She's wearing her 『Chief Director mode』black suit.
It looks luxurious…I'm sure that it must be a famous brand overseas.

「You see, Minaho said that if MIsuzu's going back to her home, Katsuko better do it instead of me. Certainly, I look like a delinquent foreigner. Also, Katsuko-san is good at dealing with the

upper class…」
「After all, she's a famous one on Kouzuki house! If it's me, I can say that I'm a close friend of Nagisa」

E…Is Misuzu's house that amazing?!
I'm about to calk with Misuzu's fiance soon.
It's someone Misuzu's grandfather decided for her so it's sure that his family also has an amazing social standing.
Uwaaa…My stomach hurts.
Well…I promised Misuzu so it can't be helped.

Misuzu bowed to Katsuko.

「Nice to meet you, I'm Kouzuki Misuzu! I've heard rumors about Katsuko-sama from Nagisa-sama!」
「Takanashi Katsuko…It's Nagisa so she must've told you that I'm just an outrageous lewd woman, didn't she…?」
「No…Uhm…I heard from her that Katsuko-san's skillful at sex…!」

…I feel that it's not different from telling that she's a 『lewd』 one.

「I just lost my virginity to day…so I don't have any confidence in sex! If it's alright with you, Katsuko-san. Could you please teach Misuzu about sex?」

…M-Misuzu?
You…what are you saying to the 『Sex Beast』 …!

「Oh my, Yoshida-sama. Is it okay for me to teach her…?!」

Katsuko-san looks at me grinning.

「Uhm…Katsuko-san please don't teach her anything extreme. I think that Misuzu's good point is her being pure hearted…!」
「Right…Misuzu-san, what kind of sex do you want to do?!」

Misuzu…answered with a blushing face.

「Misuzu…wants to be ravished by Danna-sama a lot…!」

…H-Hey!

「Oh my…You're calling Yoshida-sama, Danna-sama!」
「Yes…Misuzu's a pet so I'm calling him Danna-sama!」
「Ufufu, you're really cute. As expected of Nagisa…her eyes are great!」

Katsuko-san seems to have liked Misuzu too.
No…is it okay for Katsuko-san to like her?!

「Misuzu-san…what about pain and heat?」
「Uun. I'm not good with that」
「How about being violated by force?」
「I have only done it once so I don't know well…」
「…Are you coming to like sex itself?」
「Yes. It hurts but, when I accepted Danna-sama inside me, my insides went Pyuu, it felt good so I came to like it…!」
「Right…then, do you have anything you hope for?」
「Misuzu…wants to do a lots of embarrassing and forbidden stuff for Danna-sama!」
「Then, shame play is good for you. Strolling outside naked then having sex, what do you think?」
「Ah, I want to try that…!」
「Putting chains on your collar and being violated like a dog from behind?」
「Uwaa, that looks fun!」

Misuzu's eyes are melting…

「Misuzu is Danna-sama's pet so…I want to be inseminated outside!」
「Un, that's decided…then when can we make a concrete plan?!」

…Err
How long will this conversation continue?!
Or rather, I'm the one going to do it right?!
No…Of course, I'll do it.

「Sorry but could you leave that for now? Katsuko-san's going to bring Misuzu-san to Ikeda-sensei's clinic and to her hosue so…how about you just talk in the car?」

Unable to stand any longer, Margo-san butts in

…Yeah, of course.
Even though there's no people here, it's troubling of they keep just talking forever on the streets…!

「That's right! You two shouldn't be talking lewd stuffs or Yo-chan's gonna stand up!」

…Nei-san?
Am I standing up…?
Yes…it really is though.

「I'm sorry! Misuzu's going to take care of it immediately!」

…Eeeeeh!

「Then, you can use that van. Katsuko-san and I will be making the future arrangements in the Maserati」

…M-Margo-san?!

「Anywya, you should be taking off Misuzu's diaper…it's your job as the owner to take it off」

Well…that's true but.

「Oh right…Misuzu-san's going for an examination later so you must not have sex Her hymen just broke so her vagina might have lacerations」
「Okay～, Misuzu will be using her mouth then!」

Misuzu…I think Margo-san's addressing me.

「Yoshida-sama. I'm very sorry but we don't have much time. Should I extract it?」
「…Katsuko-san's on a briefing session with me!」
「…Geez, Margo-sama's a bully!…Yoshida-sama, well then, please do it yourself while looking at Misuzu-sama's body. Katsuko's fellatio course will be done on the next opportunity…!」
「Understood! Katsuko-sama please teach me by that time!…Now, Danna-sama let's go!」

Misuzu pulled me towards the white van[2]

Misuzu's filled with motivation.
Geez, it's already settled?
Are we really doing it?!
Uuuu…I love you Misuzu!

「Maru-chan, can I watch where Yo-chan release his semen?!」
「…Go on. Yoshida-kun, try to finish it within ten mintues」

Geh…We really don't have time.

I excitedly went to the rear seat of the white van…
Misuzu and Nei-san entered too.
Margo-san and Katsuko-san went in the Maserati.

It's wide since it's a commercial vehicle…it's hollow as there's nothing inside.
I knock over the seat and made it a flat stand.
Misuzu lied down there…!

「I peed earlier so…I think I'm a bit wet!」

She's rolling up her own skirt!

「Waaa! Mi-chan's legs are so beautiful!」

Nei-san's moved by those beautiful legs!

「…Thank you very much!」

Before long…on the tip of her thighs is her small waist wrapped in diaper…!
Un…The diaper sucked out a lot of pee so it's heavy.

「…I'll take it off, Misuzu」
「Yes…Danna-sama.」

…Periperiperi!
Misuzu's hairless crotch becomes exposed!

「…I'm sorry Danna-sama. It's smells like pee, doesn't it?」
「Un, But, that's good…!」

Nei-san's also looking at Misuzu's genital.

「Hee. Mi-chan's doesn't have a single hair there! So cute!」
「…Please don't say that. It's embarrassing!」
「Should I shave mine too?!…Yo-chan, which do you prefer?」
「…Nei-san's best being natural」
「Oh, that's a good line! Yo-chan I love you!」
「…Misuzu's fine like this too」
「That's why I'm interested being Misuzu-like!」
「Yes! Thank you very much!」
「Hee…Mi-chan's pussy is very beautiful! It's not loose at all, it looks like it's still a virgin」

…Misuzu's cute vagina.
Though it just lost its virginity…the slit is perfectly closed.
The mound of Venus that has no hair has a beautiful slit like it was cut straight by a knife.
No…there's love nectar spilling out between the meat fold!

「…Misuzu's aroused?」
「…Yes, Danna-sama」

She looks at me with passionate eyes

「I love doing forbidden things with Danna-sama. My heart's beating so fast that I can't endure it!」

「Look, Yo-chan…hurry up and show your dick!」

I-Is this okay?
In front of such two beauties?

「Hurry up…or should I strip you off?!」
「It's fine, I'll take it off myself!」

Whatever…I took off my belt and lowered my pants!
I dragged out my penis from my brief…!
…Misuzu's looking at my erection with melting eyes.

「I wasn't in a situation where I can look at it properly…so it has this shape」
「…Misuzu, it must be disgusting, isn't it?」

「That's not true, it's cute! It's Misuzu's…Danna-sama's thing after all…!」
「Hey, Yo-chan, stroke yourself!」
「…Okay!」

I stroke my penis in front of the two beauties.
While looking at Misuzu's wet genital…!

「Amazing, the skin moves that much!」
「Un. It's my first time seeing a guy masturbate!」

The girls stare at my penis passionately!

「…Misuzu, can I take a look at your breasts?」
「Order her to show it to you!」
「…Misuzu, show me your breasts!」
「Yes. Danna-sama…!」

Misuzu rolls up her sailor uniform while still lying down.
Her cute navel…and breasts wrapped in bra, I can see it!
Misuzu turned up pher bra.
Her cute breasts…pink colored nipples appear!

「…It's embarrassing. Danna-sama…I'm very aroused!」
「Misuzu…can I lick your breasts?」
「It's yours…you can eat it anytime」

I suck Misuzu's nipples while stroking my penis!

「…Aaaah, it feels goo !」

I lick it over!
Her nipples got hard…it's pointing out!
Misuzu's very sensitive!

「…Kiss me…please kiss me…Danna-sama!」

I lie down next to Misuzu and kissed her lips!
Our tongues entwine!
Cute…Misuzu's face is so cute.
Red collar…My pet

「Geez, it's unfair that you're only focusing on Misuzu-chan!」

…Eh, Nei-san?

「Yo-chan, look look, this way!」

Nei-san also had her blouse opened…!
Nei-san removed the front hook of her bra and her big breasts spilled out!!

「Oppai attack!!」

Nei-san pressed her prided breasts on my face!
My cheeks are wrapped in warm and tender meat…!
…Ah, this bump is her nipples!
…Geez!
…My head's boiling!
A wave of pleasure gradually generates from the lower area of my backbone!

「I-I'm…about to cum…I'm going to cum!」
「Ah, please wait, Danna-sama!」

Misuzu took out a white laced handkerchief from her pocket.
She then spread the handkerchief…!

「Please release it on Misuzu's hand!」

My glans is wrapped with Misuzu's handkerchief!
The surface of my glans…is stimulated by the rough feeling of the lace!

「…C-Cumming!」
「…Please give it to Misuzu!」

My glans wrapped by the feeling of Misuzu's handkerchief on her hand.
The tip of my penis is gripped!
That's…!
…I'll ejaculate! I'll ejaculate! I'll ejaculate!!
While Nei-san's embracing my head tightly on her naked breasts…!

「S-Something hot is coming out! Danna-sama's…so wonderful! Your penis is twitching!…It's so mysterious and cute!!」

Misuzu feels the pulsation of the penis as it ejaculates with her hand…!
Misuzu's cute face that looks happy, enjoying…but is melting on sexual arousal…!

…Haa, haa, haa, haa.

Misuzu's handkerchief is soaked wet!
Misuzu sniffed her handkerchief…!

「Ufu…It's Danna-sama's smell. This hankerchief will be Misuzu's treasure!」
「Geez Mi-chan…It's fine even if you don't treasure that. You can just let Yo-chan release a new one!」
「But…I'll treasure this tonight!」

…M-Misuzu, tonight?

「…Danna-sama. Misuzu will be comforting herself while thinking of Danna-sama tonught…is that okay?」

…That is
…Good of course!!!

◇ ◇ ◇

In exchange for the diaper I took off…Misuzu wore the panty she borrowed from Nagisa-san.
It's regrettable but it can't be helped.
Also, she can't go home with this red collar attached to her.

「…Please remove this」

I…removed her collar.
Somehow, I felt my bond with Misuzu is lost…it feels regrettable.

「…Best regards for tomorrow」
「Un…I'll be holding to this」
「Please put it on your side all the time. Please think of that collar

as Misuzu… 」
「 I will 」
「 Please don't make such a sad face! Misuzu still has her anklet! 」

Saying that, Misuzu made my hand touch her ankle…
Certainly it's there…a round titanium ring.

「 Look, Misuzu's properly connected to Danna-sama! I'm your pet! 」

I kissed Misuzu as she's too lovely.

「 …Uu. Somehow, I'm jelly. Should I also get Yo-chan attach a collar on me?! 」

Nei-san's saying that behind us.
I imagine a big breasted girl with a collar[3]
I feel that collar won't look good on Nei-san…

Fixing her clothes, Misuzu went towards the Maserati.
Margo-san passed the key to Katsuko-san.

「 Katsun! Drive carefully okay?!…I love that car! 」

Nei-san said it anxiously.
Speaking of which…when I rode the motorcycle with Katsuko-san, that was a cruel experience.

「 It's fine…I won't drive recklessly when I'm in this dress 」

Katsuko-san had a cool face.
Well…she sent Iwakura-kaichou and Yukino to their home last night properly…

「 …Then, excuse us. Margo-sama, Nei-sama, thank you for various things today. Please guide me from now on. My best regards 」

Misuzu bowed to the two

「 Danna-sama…I love you. Please cherish Misuzu all the time from now on 」
「 Ah…Un 」

I embraced and lightly kissed Misuzu.

「I'm very sad to separate with Danna-sama…」
「We'll meet tomorrow」
「…I want tomorrow to come sooner」

Misuzu returned a kiss to me.

「Can I call you when I get lonely?」
「Un…I'll wait for it」

Misuzu entered the passenger seat of the Maserati happily…

「…Later, I'll join everyone later tonight」
「Katsuko-san…I leave Misuzu to you」
「I know…!」

Maserati starts running lightly…
Misuzu kept waving her hand until I can't see her when they turned on the street.

「Still, she was really born to be a pet…Mi-chan is」
「But, isn't that great that she's compatible with Yoshida-kun?」
「…Is that so?」
「That's right, Yo-chan…If that cute child got involved with a strange man, she'd become a mess」
「Un. I can understand that Nagisa-san took care of her」
「…But, aren't I quite a mess too?」
「Eh, where?…Yo-chan's a super cutie, isn't he?!」
「…What?」
「That's right. Yoshida-kun, you never did anything that Misuzu-san would hate. Rather, you did everhting that would please Misuzu-san…!」
「That's right! I'm a bit jelly!」

…N-Nei-san, jelly?
Margo-san's having a 「Oya, oya」face then told Nei-san.

「…Nei, want to be Yoshida-kun's pet?」
「Uuun…I'd rather want to be the onee-san than a pet!」
「Then, an elder sister shouldn't be jealous of her younger brother's

pet!」
「…Uuuuu. I get it」

Margo-san laughs.

「Now then…should we move too?」

We entered the white van…

「…Endou-kun and Shirasaka Yukino's moving right now. They're moving to the port they talked about this morning」

Margo-san explains
There's a computer sticking on the dashboard of the van.

「Ooh. This is like a computer stick to the navigators of a rally cars used on a race.」
「It's cool isn't it?」
「Thanks…The location of the two are being grasped by the GPS information on their phone. There's no way that both of them left their phones at the same time…!」
「Then…should we go after them?」
「…I think we should let them free for at least one hour」
「Let them free?」
「It would be troublesome to follow them all the time…It's also absurd just following someone else's date. If it's just grasping the location, Minaho's on it already」
「…But」
「Yoshida-kun, have you ever gone to a date with a girl?」
「…Never」
「No way! Then let's have a date next time!」
「Geez…Nei, shut up for a moment…!」
「…Okaay~!」
「For example…the girl wants to make an important talk with the boyfriend. At what stage of the date you think she'll talk about it?」
「Uhm…I don't know」
「Do you think that she'd have a serious talk immediately after meeting?」
「…I don't think so」
「Then how about we leave the first to second hour as open? She'd chose a place where they can talk by themselves secretly…!」

「…I see」
「That's why, while we see their location…it's fine to let Shirasaksa-san look for that place freely. If we followed them through each of their window shopping, we won't last」
「…Got it」
「Remember this…you're going to have lots of work to do from now on…」

…Right
I'm a member of the crime organization 『Kuromori』
In exchange for the help I received to rape Yukino, I also got Misuzu as a pet to top that…I must help them on their work too.
There's no way that I'll be the only one to profit here. I cannot be.

「That's why, we'll do preparations for tomorrow on the open time」

Margo-san started the van…!

「…Tomorrow?」
「We promised Nagisa-san didn't we? We have to end Nagisa-san's fight with the Yakuza by the end of tomorrow」

…Oh right.
Haa…I'm going to fight Yakuza
Really…it's not always good stuff.

「I've made arrangements with Katsuko-san a while ago」

…I see

「The opponent's background, the yakuza shop's office, and the location of the flower shop the Yakuza is managing are already identified」
「Hey, Maru-chan…are we going to burn that office? Are we going to burn it?」
「…Of course we will. But, Nei, that's for tomorrow」
「Eeh, I want to set those on fire today!!」
「Nope! If we don't do it at the same time, they'd get cautious, won't they?!」
「…Uu, that's regrettable!」

Uwawawawa…The arson's already decided.
They're really going to crush them thoroughly…

「That's why…today, we're going to buy a weapon for Yoshida-kun」

…Weapon?

「Could that be something like a pistol or a Japanese sword?」 4

…The opponent's are Yakuza.
Margo-san laughed out loudly

「No way…Even if we prepare that, Yoshida-kun can't use it, can you?」
「…Yes, you're right」
「Well, I'll be teaching you how to use guns but…you won't be able to do it tomorrow」
「Un! Maru-chan's skilled on shooting! When I was about to be raped, she shot him dead…!」

S-Seriously…?

「That's why…you should leave that one to me…」

No, I'll leave all to you!
Or rather, I don't have any choice but to entrust it to her…Yes.

「Your weapon is the one you can use normally…Nei, it's around here isn't it?」
「On that corner over there, take a look at the signboard!」

…That's
A shop for golf equipments…!

We stopped the car on a parking lot then went inside.
Margo-san and Nei-san goes straight to the 1,000 yen uniform bargain sale section.
Golf club…I saw Woods do it.

「Maru-chan, is this one okay?!」
「Let's see…let's take that」

Both o them chose one wooden club.
What would we do with this?

「Then, Yoshida-kun, buy this」
「…Ah, okay」
「Minaho gave you money, didn't she?…Use that to buy this」
「…What?」
「That money's used for this kind of things…」

I don't get it but I went to the cash register.
Certainly, the money I received from Yuzuki-sensei the day before yesterday was left untouched.
I pulled out a thousand and bought the club.

Returning to the parking lot, Margo-san took out a metal use saw.

「…Let's cut this to half」

…Could this be?
The one I used when we ran wild on the town…
『Beat up Stick』…![5]

「Cut it off the same length as your upper arm. This is so you can hide this 『Beat up Stick』 under your sleeve…!」

…As expected

「Make your weapon yourself…also, you should better process a weapon that's not yourself to make it yours」

Anyway…I cut the club in half.

「Reinforce the shaft, cover it with this vinyl pipe…the shaft's unexpectedly easy to break. After that , wind up with vinyl tape to reinforce all of it. Coil it around with vinyl tape until it fits yoru hand perfectly」

I completed my 『Beat up stick[6]』 as I was directed.

「Un…That looks good. Conceal it on your sleeve…grasp the head by your hand and hide it…!」

I concealed the 『Beat up stick』 in my school uniform.
I hold the head with my hand and hid it…

「…Then slide it, grip the handle and swing it!」

…I
Let the 『Beat up Stick』 slide from my sleeve!
I gripped the handle and raised it to the air…!
…Uwaa, this looks painful.

「Okay. That's how it is. Try practicing it. Enemies can make a surprise attack any time. …Always carry your 『Beat up stick』 Put it in your bag when you have it. You must devise it yourself so you can pull it up quickly at any time」
「…Got it」

Un…I have to practice to be able to assure it.

「That's right, Yoshida-kun…remember this at least」
「What is it?」
「We must use anything, no matter how underhanded it is for us to win. We'd die if we lose. Nei might be violated…!」
「…Okay」
「In your case, there's no need for you to attack your enemy unreasonalbly. You should just chip your enemy's mind. It's fine if you surprise them. It's fine as long as you can make a gap in their attack…!」

Margo-san speaks to me with a serious face.
That's why, I'm listening to it seriously too.

「If there's someone near, then we'd be giving you support…you just need to pierce a gap on your enemy. It's fine for you to use that gap」

That's…my role as 『Kuromori』

---

1. Stump/share ↩
2. Yoshida's gonna get Hi-ace'd ↩
3. author wrote Kyouryuu, which means Dinosaur, but I don't

think Author thinks of Nei as a dinosaur. lol ↩
4. Yoshida-kun, can you even use either of them? ↩
5. Yay, terereren teren! Yoshida-kun equips 『Beat up stick』 Attack ＋3 ↩
6. 『Reinforced Beat up Stick』 Attack ＋5 ↩

◇ Yukino Rape -Arc□IV

46. Mission: Impossible

「Tailing and follow-up is a patience job…You must observe the turn of events patiently」

…I see, Margo-san is right.

Yukino and Endou's just lazing around the fashion mall along the sea.
Roundabout for…around thirty minutes?
Our minivan is waiting at the parking lot.
As a scout, Margo-san's disguised…
Or rather…Neither Yukino nor Endou knows Margo-san's face so I don't think there's a need for it.

「It would be fine on the first time but won't my face be remembered immediately?」
「That's right! Maru-chan stands out a lot after all…!」

Certainly…Margo-san's a tall foreigner with a good build.
A genuine blonde European.
I don't want to say it much but her cheek has a scar too…

「It's a good opportunity so I'll teach you about disguises too…」

Margo-san wore a black wavy wig and glasses.
Jeans and black shirt on top…and a skirt with long hem down.
Un…Her body line has disappeared in the clothes.
Also, she's carrying a soft electric guitar case…
When you take a glance at her, you can't see but a college onee-san who's going a rock band.

「What's important is to look like a human from anywhere else. Also, you need to change to an image that matches the general people. Try to express yourself as simple as possible…!」
「Express as simple?」
「What do I look like right now?」
「A band onee-san」
「That's' right…you only need to get through. If you look like that

then they'd think you are. If you devote on disguise too much and added too much visual information, the other party would imagine various stuff that they'd become cautious」

…Umu
It's difficult in various ways.
…But.
Margo-san's guitar case has a big sticker with an illustration of a red tongue sticking out…
Isn't this going to stand out…?「」

「Margo-san…there's this big sticker」
「Un…It's this!」

Margo-san touches the red mouth sticker happily.

「…What kind of mark is this?」
「Hey hey…You don't know Rolling Stones?」
「Ah…Sorry」

Margo-san sighed softly.

「Well fine…This seal stands out right? You think that it's too much?」
「…I do」
「That's the next point. As a whole, you"d want to make a simple image that can blend to the ordinary but…you should purposely make one big characteristic that everyone would notice」
「A characteristic…on purpose?」
「How about describing me right now?」
「Err…A band onee-san with a guitar case that has a big tongue sticker on it.」
「That's the one big characteristic, that's one strong imression that dims the other information. The trivial details won't remain in their memory」
「…Ah, I see」
「If ever something happened like 『Where's that woman with the red sticker』 and they'd search? We can just throw away the guitar case somewhere…」

Uun. It's well thought.

「Then next…wear a sporty feel clothes…then bind the beck with a running wear towel. Then, cover yourself with a green baseball cap…then, the impression would be unified as a 『A jogging woman with green hat』 If it's an amateur, they won't notice that the 『Band Onee-san』 from earlier is the same person」
「…Amateur?」
「When it comes to pro, their attention on looking at people are different…!」

In short…Margo-san's not an amateur.

「Then, I'll be going…!」
「Maru-chan, bring me souvenirs!」
「…What do you want?」
「Uun. Ice Cream!」
「Yoshida-kun's fine with the same?」
「…Ah, yes」
「…When it comes to this, it's best to enter a building. Natural actions makes reality, doesn't it?」

Saying that…Margo-san smiled and went out of the van.

「…Somehow, Margo-san knows a lot」
「Un, Margo-san studied psychology on university after all!」
「Eh, she's a university student?」
「Well, she's hardly there though. She's just registered. Maru-chan can speak English so Japanese University examination is easy for her」
「Is that so?」
「Japan's weak on blond foreigners after all! In the end, when you get in some trouble saying that you're a 『University Student』 is quite convenient, isn't it?」

It's an activity for the sake of 『Kuromori』 in the end?

「But well…psychology is a study of individual. She read amazing lot of books…Japanese books, foreign books. Maru-chan's a real hard worker」
「Speaking of which, her Japanese is so fluent」
「Un. It's not four years since she came to Japan and yet she knows more kanji and proverbs than me!」

「…Four years?」
「Yuzuki-sensei acquainted with her at US when she was fifteen years old. Then, she came to Japan and entered our high school, graduated spring this year…something like that!」
「…Haa」

Living on an Indian colony until twelve years old, entered a Christian facility after that, then got acquainted with Sensei…that's the order?

「You know that Maru-chan's an Indian, don't you?!」
「Well, I've heard it a lot of times」
「Yo-chan, have you ever thought that it's strange?」
「…What is?」
「Why is an American Indian blood having blond hair and blue eyes?」

…Speaking of which
Isn't Indian a yellow skinned race…?!

「Even though it's called Indian settlement, there's a lot…Indian settlements who show their lives to the guests, or there's one that opens a casino too…There's a lot of helpless villages far away that are assisted by the country financially. Well, the whites stole the good lands and forced them to harsh lands forcibly but, it's an Indian settlement, it can't be helped. Maru-chan's hometown's that」
「…Is that so?」
「Also…the assistance money given to the village coming from the country are all received by the people appointed by the country. That means, half-Caucasian half-Indian…The country would never give a hundred percent to the Indians」
「Why?」
「First, is racial discrimination as expected…The contact of the country is a Caucasian isn't it? That's why those who had their blood would receive favorable treatment. The other one is to divide the Indian community…the half-group and the pure-blooded group would fight. The half-blood who holds the assistance money gets arrogant, and the pure-blooded people would be 『Those aren't Genuine Indians』 and would rebel won't they?…This is the cause on some colony all the time. They're always fighting…!」

「Then…Margo-san?」
「Maru-chan's a half…surely」
「…Surely?」
「Her father and mother seems to be pure Indian. Or rather, both her parents seem to think so but…isn't 'that just atavism? Maru-chan who's born with blond hair and blue eyes is thought to have inherited a trait from a Caucasian blood…!」

Nei-san's making a sad face…

「But her father doubted that her mother had an affair with a Caucasian so…Maru-chan was thrown out of the group from the pure-blooded since she was born. Well, in the end, Maru-chan's family got tormented by both groups…!」

…Margo-san was raped when she was twelve.

「She said that she hated her blond hair and blue eyes since childhood…She's always putting mud on her head to hide her blond hair. When she met Yuzuki-sensei…she has come to accept her own appearance…she said」
「Nei-san…dyed her hair blonde and put on blue contacts is because…!」
「Un…I wanted to make friends with Maru-chan. Having the same look and same thoughts…Of course I can only be fake but still…」

…Nei-san.

「…Well, apart from that」

…What?

「We should disguise too! It's our turn when Maru-chan comes back!」

…Uee!
…Seriously?

「Yo-chan, take off your uniform and wear this」
「I'm going to change clothes here?」
「That's right…Embarrassed?」
「…A bit」

「Are you saying that to the person who you showed your penis ejaculate earlier?」
「…Sorry」

Still, I feel embarrassed so I turned back.
The clothes handed by Nei-san…feels somewhat Hip-Hop.
Un…I would not wear this normally.
Everyone who knows the man named me would think so.

「…Then, put on this hat and sunglasses」

The hat is absentmindedly knit…the sunlg;asses is huge and the color is light.
When Nei-san brought out her hand mirror…Oh, I see. This kind of man. A misunderstood fashion, it feels like a countryguy. Unun. I'm sure that fashion mall has this.

「I'm going to change too!」

Nei-san took off her clothes magnificently in front of me.
She unbuttoned her blouse…I can see her bra!

「…Wait Nei-san, I can see it!」
「I'm showing it off! Oh right, I have to change my bra too」

Nei-san removed her bra…!

「…Why are you turning that way?」
「No, because」
「Yo-chan, look this way!」

Turning around…I can see a naked upper body.
Nei-san's big breasts and…cute nipples

「Ehehe. I'm doing muscular workout so that it won't sag」
「…It's beautiful, Nei-san」
「Yo-chan, do you like my breasts?」
「I like everything about Nei-san…from head to toe!」
「Ufufufu…Thanks!」

Nei-san took out three bras from her back while still naked.

「Then, Yo-chan chose my bra…black, light blue or stripes, which do you like?」
「…Then, the stripes」
「Uun, Yo-chan likes cute girls as expected! Okay, then let's use this!」

Nei-san handed me the striped bra.

「…What?」
「Yo-han, put it on…!」

…I
Applied the bra on Nei-san's breasts…!

「Then, make sure that the breasts enter the cup properly. You have to lift it with your hand!」
「…Then, excuse me」

Nei-san's raw breasts…are lifted by my palm and made to match with the cup of the bra.
The softness and the weigh of her breasts are clearly felt.
And…Nei-san placed her hand on top of my hand

「…Nei-san」
「You can massage or tease it and yet…You're really a good child!」

Nei-san's lips kissed my cheek…

「Hey…Can you tell? My nipples are standing up…!」
「…Yes」
「…Lick it」

I took Nei-san's nipples in my mouth.

「Ufufu…It tickles」

I rolled her nipples with my tongue…

「…Ahn…It feels good…Yo-chan, I love you~…!」

At that moment.

Nei-san's phone rang!
The ringtone's melody was…Wagner's 『Ride of the Valkyries』 1

「Geez…Maru-chan, I was at the good part!」

Saying that…Nei-san took answered her phone.

「Hello…What's wrong? You coming back or we joining you? Got it. We're still changing so give us ten minutes. Food court, second floor, okay!」

Nei-san who ended the call turned to me.

「We have ten minutes so we'll dash after changing clothes!」
「…Okay」

Nei-san took off her skirt immediately…and worked on her panty…?!
She handed the panty she took off to me…?!

「Here, take this Yo-chan!」
「…Eh?!」
「I took this off so I'll give it to Yo-chan!」 2
「…Ho?!」
「…You don't need my panty?!」
「I-I'll take it, I'll be taking it, please give it to me!!」

I accepted the panties that still on body temperature.
Nei-san smiled…!

「I love that part of Yo-chan!」

Nei-san wore a matching bra and panty…and wore a soft white dress. The skirt is so long that it even hides her ankle

「Today, I'm like a forest girl!」
「…Forest girl?」
「『A forest feel』 women fashion! There's none actually…!」

Somehow…this is too difficult for me that I don't get it.
Nei-san's wore a shawl on her shoulder as expected…
She covered her head with a long black wig…

…Uwa, she's really beautiful in black hair.
Nei-san who's already beautiful…looks even more elegant and graceful

「…Yo-chan, do you like black hair more?」
「I like the blond Nei-san but…the black hair is beautiful too」
「Do you think that the black is superior?」
「To be honest…I think that black hair suits you more」
「…Is that so?」

Nei-san was lost in thought for a moment.

「Then, I'll get black hair when I give my virginity to Yo-chan!」
「…Eh?」
「You can request anything you want…I'll give my virginity to Yo-chan on your liked situation」
「Ah…Okay」
「In exchange, can I request one thing?」
「…What is it?」
「When we're going to have sex…I want you to call me『Onee-chan』!」

I remembered what Margo-san said…!
『I think that Nei won't be able to have sex with anyone other than her little brother』

「You see…I want to be called 『Onee-chan』by Yo-chan…!」

…Nei-san.

「Ah, right…Yo-chan, get that sandal there…the brown one」
「Ah, this one?」
「I'll put on make up so put it on for me」
「…What?」
「I want Yo-chan to put it on……!」

Saying that, Nei-san pushed her foot to me.

「…Got it」

Nei-san laughs.
As expected, this smile of Nei-san is the best.

「Hurry up!」

I touched Nei-san's foot.
I took off her school shoes…and her socks with the school badge.

「Should I give you this socks?」
「…No, it's fine」
「You don't have that kind of fetish, I see…you purely love sex」
「…I love Nei-san」
「Uwa, saying such things…Yo-chan grew up!」

Nei-san's feet…the pink fingernails are cute.
I put in the sandals…how's this held?
…Ah…there's a clasp here?

「Uwaa…Katsun said that you'd feel it when boys touch your feet but, It's real! I'm feeling thrilled! You should try this to Mi-chan and Megumi-chan too. I think that both of them would get wet when you touch their foot!」

…Eh, I get Misuzu but why Yamamine-san?

「Yo-chan…do you want to have sex with Megumi-chan? That kind of slim and sports type of girl is very tight and it feels good to embrace you know!」
「…Err」

I remember Yamamine-san healthy limbs…
Certainly, her tight ass is charming.

「You want to? If you do then answer!」
「…I want to!」
「Un! Then let's do it! Onee-chan's going to let you do it!」

Nei-san said that easily…

「Okay…makeup done!」

Looking up…Nei-san, what"s with that makeup?!
She put on red makeup stickily…somehow, it looks like a huge mouth…

「I'm not trying to look like beautiful, it's fine just for the disguise's sake!」

Certainly…if she's more beautiful than usual…all of the men would look at her.
Far from disguise, they'd be the highlight of everyone's memory for today.
Then that would make the disguise meaningless.
Haa…A makeup to lower the beauty on purpose…
In addition, she wore simple glasses.
Un…a somewhat beauty but it doesn't stand out very much.
Well, it lowered to the level that it won't be strange even if she enters a fashion mall.

「…Then, put this on the head.」

Hey…Nei-san?
Isn't that from a certain American huge amusement park's…!
A horseshoe shaped mouse ear…?

「Look, if I use this, they will definitely think that I returned from an amusement park, don't you think? This is the first day of the Golden Week」

No…it will be but.

「I also have the bag」

Then , nei-san took out a paper bag with the logo of the amusement park and the character on it.
It looks like a souvenir…

「Okay, Yo-chan's share is here!」

Then, what appeared is another horseshoe shaped ear!
…I'm putting it on too?!

「Heey! We're matching now!」

I don't want this match!
…But, it can't be helped so I put it on.
Un…How nerdy

But, fine.
An out of fashion couple that were earing those mouse ears from the high tension after returning from the amusement park.
It is indeed a disguise for couples…!

「…Then, let's go?」

Nei-san got out of the van.
I asked Nei-san while we're going to the shopping mall…

「Nei-san, do you like that amusement park?」
「I hate it…!」
「…Why?」
「Because, that amusement park has that mouse coming out wherever you go…furthermore, it's the same mouse…!」

Even if you say that…!

◇ ◇ ◇

We came to the food court on the second floor as appointed.
Yukino and Endou's there.
Facing each other, eating something…
Yukino's eating hamburher or something.
Endou…why are you slurping ramen?
Yukino's on her white dress just like what I saw in the baseball grounds.
Endou's…wearing a replica uniform of a blue European soccer team on top of his half-pants.
Is that okay? You're a baseball club member though?!
Shouldn't you be wearing a Major League there?

「…Don't stare at them!」

Margo-san came straight and warned me.

「When they noticed your gaze, they'd be able to notice and you'd always be in their view」
「…Okay」
「Here…Ice Cream」

Margo-san remembered the promise from a while ago.

She offered ice cream to us.

「Thanks Maru-chan!」
「I'll be coming back to the car and change to the next disguise… watch them both of you. It's Yoshida-kun's first time. Also, Yoshida-kun has a habit of watching Shirasaka Yukino so Nei, watch over him」
「Roger!」
「…Do I have that habid?」
「You don't even notice yourself? That's amazing. You got lots of time where you just stare at her absentmindedly」
「Really…I don't get what you like about that girl!」

…Is that so?
I didn't notice it at all.

「Yoshida-kun, don't leave Nei alone.」 She'd definitely be hit on here」
「Ah, got it」
「…Since the change time is unknown. Having someone tail you for thirty minutes is strange isn't it? If it's not noticed, then being on that location on the same disguise is more natural. But, if ever you noticed that the other side 『Might've noticed it』 even for a bit, report immediately. I don't mind if it's just a suspicion of 『Possibly』 It's scary to lose the opportunity to change」
「Got it」
「…Then, I leave it to you」

Margo-san left.

「Then, let's do our best for the time being…O-Onee-chan」
「Eh…What's wrong, Yo-chan?」
「We're in disguise so…it's strange for me to call you 『Nei-san』 … no good?」
「It's fine!…Rather, the best! Call me even more!」
「Okay」
「Can I call you 『Kei-chan』?」
「…Kei-chan?」
「Un…That's the name of my late brother」

…Little brother

「It's fine. You can call me anything!」
「Then…Kei-chan…let's go」

After that…for around one hour.
We kept tailing them.
Certainly…this is some tiresome, plain work.
Yukino and Endou's looking around the shops while laughing, Nei-san and I follow them…
What's so interesting?
I think that there's not much change on the stores…

「Hey hey…Kei-chan, isn't this cute」

This person…is acting from her disguise too?
I can't see her enjoying shops normally though.

「Kei-chan doesn't come to this place much?」
「Yes…I'm not interested in fashion」
「Then, go here some time again…with me」
「…What?」
「I'm telling you that let's have a date…I'm sure that it's fun walking together」
「Ah…Got it」

It looks like I've made an appointment.

Yukino and Endou went to the game arcade on the fourth floor.
Endou…why are you playing a batting game there?
You know that you're good at baseball…
Oh boy, Yukino's smiling.
It's not 『Homerun!』…Seriously

「Kei-chan, have a race with Onee-chan!」

This person too!
…I'll do it though

Then, Endou and Yukino finally went out of the fashion mall.
Fortunately, they don't seem to notice that we're tailing them.

「Hello Maru-chan? We're exiting out of the north side 2 of the building. We're facing the beach park!」

Nei-san contacts Margo-san.

『Roger…I'll be moving there too. Also, Katsuko-san joined』

I can hear Margo-san's voice coming out of Nei-san's phone.

『Tell Yoshida-kun. Misuzu's examined but there doesn't seem to be any abnormalities on her body. She's prescribed with a pill so you can creampie her a lot』
「…You heard?」
「Yes」
「…Isn't that great?」
「…Thank you very much」

Nei-san laughs.
Dammit…This is somewhat embarrassing.

「Maru-chan, target went to the main street sea side. As expected, they're going to the park I think」
『Roger…I'll search the park's map. I'll be entering the park on the other side from you』
「Roger…What about Katsun?」
『She's on her car and joining you now』

…Now then, the encirclement is being narrowed!

---

1. ↩
2. Freshly work panties! ↩

47. Night Park…

「…Nei-sama, Yoshida-sama!」

I was surprised from the voice calling us from the back…!
When I turned around…It was Katsuko-san
…But, K-K-K-K-Katsuko-san
What's with that look…?!

「…What do you think? Don't you think it's sexy?」

Katsuko-san's…wearing a showy red and white bustier and a miniskirt showing her navel…
She's like a captain girl or something, a race queen or something…
…Why does she have the same red and white umbrella.
…What does this mean?

「…It's disguise! Disguise!」

That's what Katsuko-san said…
Well, it looks good with her so it's okay…
…But you see

「Katsuko-san…What's with that 『GABIN』 written on your chest?」
「Dunno, it's some kind of brand name but I don't get it too!」

…Dahell is that?

「Isn't that a manufacturer name?!」
「That's different in spelling. It's 『…BAN』!」

A party of two middle-aged worker happen to point at Katsuko-san.

「…Oh, Shige-san, there's a Race Queen at such a place!」
「Huh?! Wasn't the cigarette company not doing races anymore?」

Hearing that, Katsuko-san whispered to me.

「…It seems that it's Tabaco?!」

「Katsun, you just picked up a suitable picture on the internet and made it?」
「Ehehehe, but, it looks good doesn't it?!」

The old men comes near to Katsuko-san.

「Oh, nee-chan, do you have cigarette samples?」
「Sorry, I'm not affliated to that company…!」
「Eh, what do you mean by that nee-chan?」
「Hamamura-san, that person's 'that'. A shop child!」
「Yes, a race queen pub!」
「What…you don't have any samples?」
「I have some bread though!」

Katsuko-san took out a plastic bag with a bread in it.

「It's a Uguisu[1] bread I made this!」
「T-Thanks nee-chan! I'm interested, where's your shop?」
「Well well, Hamamura-san…Sorry, we don't have money today. Next time maybe」
「…I'll be waiting!」

Katsuko-san waves at the two office working leaving with a smile…
Un…this is a magnificent disguise coming to existence…I guess…?!
…Well fine.

「Now then, let's continue our pursuit…」

Looking at the road, we can still see the backs of Endou and Yukino.
The race queen joins in and three people resume the pursuit…!

「Here, have some…!」

Walking briskly, Katsuko-san gave us bread and paper carton drinks.

「When it comes to tailing, it should be bean-jam bread and milk!」[2]
「Thanks! Katsun!」

Nei-san munch down at once.
Yukino and Endou entered the park.

Us too…
Nei-san's phone rang…

『We can see the target here too …they're walking up the observatory』

As expected of Margo-san…she works fast.

「Observatory!…That one!」

Nei-san reads the guide map at the entrance of the park and confirms the position.
There's only one staircase to the observatory…!3
We can isolate them if we block there…
We went towards the stairs to the observatory with quick steps…
Ah!…The two targets are rediscovered after walking up the stairs.
Oya?…There's one strange tall onii-san beckoning us under the stairs…?!
Could this be…Margo-san?

Margo-san had her feminine body line hidden with just a jacket…
When I approach, I was surprised.
…What's with that flashy embroidery?

「…It's Gorgon isn't it?」
「It's Medusa」

…It's the same.

「This is a brand that's loved by the Yakuza」
「…Haa」

Margo-san holds her blond hair up together and covered it with a baseball cap with showy gold letters on it.
Her eyes are hidden with teardrop type sunglasses.
And…a blonde fake mustache.
The wound on her cheek matches the sunglasses…I see, I can see a quite rich hoodlum onii-san.

「We should go as couple on top…Nei, let's go」
「I'll go!」

There's no way I can let Endou and Yukino make a love scene at the observatory!4
If so, I'll break it.

「You can't…We don't know when the blood in Yoshida-kun's head would rise. You have to wait in Katsuko-san's car」
「…But」
「I got a pinhole camera and a mic so we're going to relay the situation up here to the car」

Saying that, Margo-san handed the reception monitor to Katsuko-san.

「The car's stopped right around the entrance…so you can see it right?」

Turning around on the other side of the lawn, I can see a white van over there.
Margo-san handed the key to Katsuko-san.

「We'll be going then. Nei, you don't need this anymore…」

Margo-san removed the mouse headband from Nei-san and handed it to Katsuko-san.
Katsuko-san smiled and put it on her head…
Meanwhile…Margo-san holds Nei-san's shoulder and rise to the observatory like a couple.

…Dammit
I'm going to wait…?!

「Now, Yoshida-sama! Let's go to the car!」

Being urged by Katsuko-san…we jogged towards the van.
The characters of the car has changed to 『(Kabu)Maruko Entertainment industries』
Entering the car…Katsuko-san immediately started the computer onboard.
The broadcast image is reflected on the screen…!
The observatory is clearly seen even though it should be dark in the night.

「It's a camera that's using a night vision!」

Katsuko-san explained.
It seems that Nei-san has the camera.
Margo-san dressed like a hoodlum is reflected on the screen…
The top of the observatory is quite wide…I can see several couples.
Margo-san stared at each of the couple she pass through…!
The couples ran away from the observatory hurriedly from being pushed by her strong glance.
Except one couple…!

That's Yukino and Endou.
Engrossed with each other that they don't seem to have notice the abnormality on the observatory.
The angle of the camera changes.
Aah!…A close up with Yukino!
Nei-san, Good Job!
Nnn?…She's saying something!
The voice…it's so small that you're able to hear it somehow…I can't hear it!

「…I'll amplify it!」 5

Eh, you can do that?!
Katsuko-san pressed some buttons…!
Ooh…I can hear it!
Yukino's clear voice!!

『…It's been a while since I had fun like today. Recently…I've been uneasy』
『It's about Yuzuki-?…Don't mind it Yukino. She's no longer out homeroom teacher. The principal also said that she'll be disposed after the holiday』
『…Un』
『I'll talk to my father tonight too. I'll negotiate with my director uncle and have her driven out of the school…!』

…Endou
In the end, it's your father's power…

『Speaking of which…It's my first time having a date with Endou

not wearing a Uniform!』
『…Well, it really is』
『We've just looked around the shops and walked together but…I really enjoyed it…I'm happy. Ah, thanks for this』

Yukino…showed the forefinger of her right hand to Endou.
There's something shining in the darkness.
…A ring.
Endou…You bought Yukino a ring?!

『I'm really happy that you bought me something this pretty… Thanks』
『It's fine, it wasn't expensive…』
『That's not true…this is gold』

Gold…ring

『Look…It's our commemoration』
『…Commemoration?』
『…Wasn't it last saturday when Yukino answered me? You see, I was really happy…I was really worried that you might possibly refuse me last week…I was really daunted you know』
『…Is that so?』
『That's right! But, you answered yes…I was really happy. I thought that I must do it as a commemoration…!』
『It's my first time having a gold ring… It's great isn't it? Gold would never rust. I have several silver ones but it turns blackish immediately when you put in your finger…』
『Take care of it…I'll buy you something this christmas』
『…Un』

Yukino looks happy
Dammit…That ring!

『Right…I answered Kenji last Saturday. It's not yet one week and yet, it feels like old times…』
『I don't feel like it at all. I'm really happy…shocked』
『Shocked?』
『We kissed at that time, didn't we?』
『…Ah, yeah. Un…We did』
『Rather than a kiss…it felt like just a moment of our lips touching

each other…』

It hasn't been a week since Yukino and Endou kissed…
I have kissed Yukino dozens of times on the last three days…
Furthermore, I've licked her lips to the inside of her mouth…
I see…Endou doesn't know. The wonderful feeling of Yukino's tongue…!
Somehow…I feel a slight sense of superiority to Endou…!

『I'm your first kiss, ain't I?』
『Un…That's right』

…I take back what I said.
I feel strong resentment to Endou!

『This night harbor is beautiful isn't it?』
『Yeah, it is』
『There's a lot of stars shining, and the sea breeze feels good.』
『…Un』

…Yukino turned to Endou.

『…Hey, Kenji, can we kiss?』
『Eh?』

…Yukino faced Endou and closed her eyes.

『Embrace me and kiss me』

…Yukino!
…Yukino!
…Yukinooooo!!
You're the one presenting your lips to Endou?!

『…Yukino』
『…Kenji』

Hey, don't do it Endou!
Yukino…Don't touch Yukino!
Don't embrace her!
That's mine!
Yukino's mine!

…Both of their lips pile up.

What's with that…?!
I feel that I've been betrayed really hard.
No…I know it.
Endou's actually Yukino's boyfriend…
I'm nothing to Yukino.
Far from nothing…I'm a sex offender.

…But
That body's already mine…
I've been convinced from the bottom of my heart…
…I believed.
…Even though I believed it!

『…I'm happy』

Yukino mutters while being embraced by Endou.

『…I'm the same. Yukino!』

…Dammit!
If only a lightning just strikes and kill only Endou…!
Or rather, Die!
Commit Suicide!

『…Hey, Kenji』

Yukino whispers to Endou with a hot breath…

『I'm fine coming home late today…』
『…Eh?』
『…I can return by 11 o'clock…That's why』

…Yukino
…You're

『Kenji…I'll give it to you…!』
『…Yukino』
『I want to do it only with Kenji…five or six times』
『…Idiot, I can't do that much 』
『You're lying…Men always do it don't they?』

『We don't…where did you hear that from?…』

…That's..
Because I've been doing it multiple times every time…

『But please…do me at least four times』

Yukino said

『Four…? Why?』
『…Just please』

Four times…That's.
That's the effect of the fake contraceptive Iwakura-kaichou gave Yukino…
It prevents pregnancy until the third ejaculation but you'll definitely get pregnant on the fourth…
Of course, that's all just bullshit…
Not knowing that, Yukino…
Is seriously trying to get pregnant!
With Endou's child…!!

The dark feelings run inside my gut…!
Suddenly, Katsuko-san held my hand…

「…Calm down. It'll be fine!」

Katsuko-san's smiled kindly.
…But!

『You can't do it four times with a virgin…you don't get it Yukino. Women's first time hurts you know』

You're the one who don't get it…!
Yukino has already experienced that pain long time ago!
She's already beginning to feel the pleasures of sex!!!

『I'm fine with it so…do it. I want only Kenji to do it. Today's a safe day so you can cum inside…!』

The color of Endou's eyes changed from Yukino's words.

『A-Are you sure…Yukino?!』
『It's fine…You can cum all you want…it's fine no matter how many times…』

Yukino whispers to Endou's ears…

『Let's go to the hotel after this…okay?…!』

Yukino invites him
Yukino's wishing to have sex with Endou.
She wants to be pregnant with Endou's child.
Not mine…but Endou's…!!
…Dammit!
…Bastard!!

But…what about Endou?

『W-We can't Yukino…』

Yukino's eyes opened wide in surprise
…Eyes of confusion!

『…Why?!』

Endou's making an awkward face…

『I'm really happy that Yukino says that…』
『…Embrace me…let's have sex…!』
『…It's bad todoay』
『Why is it no good?!』
『That's because I need to be early tomorrow I've got morning practice』

…What's that?!

『Then I'll wake you up in the morning. Let's stay in the hotel. I've withdrew money so don't worry. I'm fine anywhere as long as I'm with Kenji…!』
『That's overworking isn't it?』
『You see…I'm fine dropping out of school…I'm fine leaving it!』
『Wait…What are you saying, Yukino?!』
『It's fine! I already had enough!…As long as I have Kenji…!』

『No, wait…!』
『I want to be embraced by Kenji!』

…Yukino shouted.
…She's about to cry.
Still, Endou…

『…Anyway, let's stop for today』
『…Kenji doesn't want me?』
『I-I want to…I want to but…But, even if you tell me that suddenly…!』
『Then, let's do it! Embrace me!』
『N-No, but…But…I…!』
『…But what?! What's with that!』

Yukino spoke to Endou looking furious.

『I promised my seniors that I can't have sex with Yukino until the next practice game is over…!』

Endou…you're saying that here?

『…Even I want to have sex with Yukino! I really want to embrace Yukino!…It really makes me happy that Yukino's saying those stuff, I'm really grateful. But, right now, I can't break my promise with my seniors! I'm gonna become a regular even though I'm a first year! The game is close…!』

No…Endou
That's not the reason, is it?
You're thinking about your bet with your Seniors!!!
The foolish bet about when you're going to take Yukino's virginity!

Yukino's looking at Endou with dark eyes.

『…Is that so? Baseball is much more important to Kenji than me…』
『Don't be ridiculous! It's not something comparable!』
『…I know, just please…I want to be embraced by Kenji!』
『Understand my feelings too!!!!』
『You should be the one understanding my feelings!!!』

『I wont get it!!! You're telling me that so suddenly!!!』

Tears collect on Yukino's eyes.
Even seeing those tears…Endou's mind won't change.

『Anyway, we can't do it today…Open your schedule by May 3 or 5. I'll do it by that day. I'll embrace you that day. No, let's do on both days. Come to my house. I won't let you come home until morning…!』

He's an idiot.
Really…In all respects.

『…That's too late!』

Looking at the calendar…there's four to five days until that day.
But, with that much time…Yukino's training would advance surprisingly.
Yukino knows the change in her own body!

『It's not too late! It's soon! I'll be embracing you so wait for it… okay, Yukino?!』

Yukino shook her head.

『Enough…Kenji no bakaaa!!』 6

Yukino shouted with a tearful face…!

「…It's about time!」

Katsuko-san next to me took out her phone.
…Eh, Katsuko-san?
Katsuko-san made a call land Yukino's phone across the screen rings!

『…Hey, it's ringing』
『…Un』

The couple's in an awkward state.
The lifeless Yukino answered the phone.

「…Heeey, toilet bitch! Do you know who I am?!」

Yukino's face over the screen distorts to fear.

「How's the night view from the observatory? The port at night is really beautiful isn't it?!」
『…H-How?』
『You don't get it? You're being observed!…Take a look at your back in a way Endou-sama won't notice』

Yukino turned around quietly.

「The one on your back is Natou Nei-sama…do you remember her breaking into the classroom this morning, don't you?!」

Yukino confirmed Nei-san's figure…

「The one next to her is a Yakuza. He's a third dan in karate…I've ordered him to break Endou-sama's arm if you make any strange movements」

Taking a look at Margo-san from the darkness…She certainly can be seen as nothing but Yakuza.

「You're listening now?…When you get down the observation deck, there's a public toilet on the left side. Go there」
『…U-Uhm, please wait』
「We can forward your lewd photos on the phones there you know?! Do you want it to spread at the station?」
『…I-I get it』
「Then, do my orders within one minute…okay?!」
『…Y-Yes』
「Un…good child!」

Katsuko-san ended her call…

『…Who called you?』

Inside the screen…Endou asks Yukino.

『A person related to work with my mother. Someone I'm indebt to…』

Yukino explains vaguely
She's clearly nervous.
There's a lot of sweat…

『Kenji…I'm going to toilet for a moment…』
『…Eh?』
『I'll come back immediately…!』

Saying that…Yukino tried to leave the observatory.

『Hey , wait a moment…Yukino?!』
『I'll come back…!』

She descends the stairs!

「Now then…Let's go? We have to be on the restroom before her」

Katsuko-san smiled at me.

「It's Yoshida-sama's favorite rape time!」

◇ ◇ ◇

We arrived in front of the public restroom ahead of Yukino.

「Yoshida-sama, could you hide on the other side of the bench?!」
「…Eh?」
「Just do it!」

…Katsuko-san's planning something I guess.
Anyway, I hid myself in the shadow of the park bench as I was told.[7]
Yukino came over immediately.
She ran down the stairs…

「…Good evening. Semen toilet girl」

Katsuko-san on her race queen look laughingly meets Yukino.

「W-What do I have to do…?」

Yukino seems to be very cautious.

I look at the state of the two from the gap of the bench.
Katsuko-san handed Yukino something black.

「…This is?」
「You used it earlier didn't you?…It's an Eye Mask」

The one used on the blindfold play!

「Listen. You're going to be a public toilet from now on…enter the rightmost cubicle on the men's room」
「…Cubicle on the men's restroom?」
「That's right. Wait for your customer wearing that eye mask there」
「…C-Customer?」
「The customer will come in immediately…then, say this…!」

Sex beast Katsuko's face distorts…

「『Customer…please violate this lewd me without reserve』…!」

Yukino's eyes sinks into despair…

「Since that person has only said 『I'll wait for a high school girl prostitute inside the public restroom』…get teased a lot. Ah I've told him that it's 『Okay to creampie』!」
「…T-That's!」
「Because…You want to have sex by all means today, don't you?… You wanted lots of sperm inside your womb, don't you?!」

The sex beast laughs…!

「…You can run if you don't want it…In exchange, we'll hurt Endou-sama's body just for a bit. But it can't be helped. At least two or three bones would substitute for your body…!」
「…I-I get it」

Even though Yukino's body is shivering…She steeled herself…

「Good…try not to make a failure to the customer. It's just a forty year old office worker that doesn't know your situation. You have to play like a high school girl prostitute, okay?」
「…Yes」

「When you're having sex you have to say『It feels good, Papa』
『Pierce me more, papa』 That person likes to be called 『Papa』 by girls」
「Understood…Uhm」
「what?」
「…Can I drink medicine?」
「Of course. You can!」

Yukino took out a tablet from her bag.
Yukino's still drinking the fake contraceptive.
That's just an aphrodisiac.

「Then…do your job. You want to hurry up and go back to Endou-sama, don't you?」

Yukino…entered the public restroom silently.
Katsuko-san signals me…
I dashed out of the bench and went to Katsuko-san…

「Enter after a minute!…You must never let out your voice. That girl thinks that she's doing it with a middle aged man!」
「…Okay」
「Yoshida-sama…please take a look at her true character!」
「…True character?」
「That girl is just a sex loving bitch…!」

Katsuko-san says.
But, I.
For me, Yukino is…

「Okay, one minute has passed…please enjoy!」

My back is pushed by Katsuko-san and I entered the restroom at the park…!
An old fashioned concrete restroom.
It's dark …the smell of ammonia prickles my nose.

The rightmost cubicle.
I knocked it lightly…
I opened the door…

Yukino who shrinks her body…is wearing an eye mask inside it…
She's nervous?…She's wet with sweat.

Yukino…spoke to me in hoarse whisper.

「…Good evening, customer. Please violate this lewd me without any reserve…!」

My Yukino is…
Acting like a high school prostitute!!

---

1. Japanese Bush Warbler, it's a bird ↩
2. She's referring to those tailing detectives or something ↩
3. That's bad, what will you do in case of fire or earthquake? ↩
4. No, it's not sex, just romantic scenes ↩
5. CSI level of investigations ↩
6. I mean, do I really have to explain what baka means? ↩
7. That's some Dishonored level of stealth there ↩

48. Prostitute in the public restroom

My Yukino…she knows that I won't let any man have her body.
…Unfaithful
…You cheater!

She's actually not cheating…!
I'm not Yukino's lover. and I'm still the one who'll have sex with Yukino right now so this looks like she's cheating but she's actually not.
Even I don't know what I'm saying but…Anyway, it's the truth that this is not cheating.
But still…for me, it's nothing but 『Yukino's adultery』…!

Yukino is thinking of me as a forty year old office worker, a perverted old man who paid for a high school prostitute.
Even though she's ordered by Katsuko-san…Yukino's opening her legs for an old man.

…Yukino, weren't you my exclusive sperm toilet?!
…Were your oath before just a temporary measure for you to say?!

Right now, I can understand why Katsuko-san planned this rape situation on purpose.
Katsuko-san told me to look at 『Yukino's true character』

In the end…Anyone's fine for Yukino.
It doesn't matter who it is as long as she can protect herself and Endou.
She'll sleep with anyone as long as Katsuko-san and Yuzuki-sensei orders her.
She's that kind of woman.

…It doesn't need to be me.
For Yukino…I don't matter…
Yukino…doesn't recognize me as a man nor a human…

That's right…Yukino rather intended to get pregnant with Endou's seed than 『Get pregnant with my child』 tonight…!

The dark cold sorrow and irritation is running around my intestines…!
…The feelings of being betrayed.
…I won't forgive.
…I will never allow this.
…How should I throw out this feelings?!!!

「P-Please…Customer」

Yukino calls out to me who's being silent and not doing anything.
Acting as a high school girl prostitute…she's using a sweet coaxing voice.
She's not making this kind of voice when she's having sex with me!
Thinking that the partner is a forty year old office worker…you're going to wave your ass to invite him?!
I touched Yukino's face under the eye mask…
Is she nervous? Yukino's cheeks feels cold.
Yukino's body smells like perfume.
She put this on to provoke Endou!
The fragrance of the perfume mixes with the smell of the restroom and it stimulates my lust
…I'll violate you!

「Customer…if possible, please end this as soon as possible…!」

Yukino's making Endou wait…
She told her lover that she'll go to the toilet and she became the toilet herself.
A toilet bitch that accepts white sperm!
I'll make you a real toilet!!!
…Dammit!

「…Also, please be gentle as much as possible」

…Like hell I'll be gentle!
I'm going to kiss Yukino.
Did she notice? She's maing a 「…Uu!」but she's not refusing
Even though she's violently refusing me!
I cancelled the kiss before our lips touched.
Her plump red lips.
This lip was dirtied by Endou a while ago…

I can't kiss it anymore!
I take off the button of Yukino's blouse by tearing it forcibly…!

「Aaah~…PLease don't be so violent!」

Her white bra appears!
There's a pink ribbon sticking to her chest…
Yukino intended to have sex with Endou tonight…
This is a victory underwear Yukino chose for Endou's sake.

…Dammit!
…You traitor!

I rolled up her bra forcibly!
Her beautiful breasts spilled out!
Her nipples are already hard…!
Yukino's aroused!

…You lewd woman!

I sucked Yukino's nipples!

「…Ah, Ahn~!」

I'm the only one who knows this taste!
This nipple is mine!

…Not yet?

I shivered instinctively…
Yukino…
This woman, if you leave her alone…won't she just hook with one man after another?
Not just Endou…anyone.
Should I monitor this woman for the rest of her life?
Or should I imprison Yukino somewhere?

「…Ah, Ah…That's good…Papa, Papa…I can call you Papa, right?!」

I pulled the hem of Yukino's dress…!
I made my finger crawl on her panty violently…!

That place is already dripping wet…!
…Yukino!
Were you wet since Endou kissed you…?!
Or could it be that you got aroused when you discovered that you're going to be violated in the public restroom.

…Lewd.
…Lewd.
…Lewd!!!
It's just what Katsuko-san said.
Yukino's a bitch that loves sex!

「…Ah…H-Hurry up…Hurry up Papa…You're making me wait… hurry up and end this…!」

I made Yukino face back forcibly…
Placing her hand on the restroom's wall, rolled up her skirt and pushed put her ass…!
I lowered her panty to her knees…!
Under the dim light of 60 watts…I can see the anus and the wet slit on the white ass
I slapped that white ass with all my might…!

…Pashin!

「…Ouch!」

One more, Pashin!!

「…Ouch! It hurts papaa…forgive me, Papa!」

…Haa, haa, haa.

I unfastened myt belt and took out my erect penis.
It seems that Yukino has sensed what's going on with the clattering noise.

「…H-Hurry up…Hurry up and do me…Papa」

This is a public restroom.
It's normal to expose the penis.
…I'll thrust it in!

…I'll discharge it out!
I'll make Yukino my toilet!
…Here we go!!

「…Ahaaan!…It came in!」

Yukino pants from the feeling of insertion…!
I pushed in my penis inside her wet meat folds…!
It reached her uterus immediately!
Yukiono's vagina is no longer resisting an entry of a man!
Her wet mucous membrane coils itself around the glans…!
It's an indecent honey pot that doesn't want to separate with the penis that it took in…

「…Pierce me…Papa…More, pierce me more…hurry up…faster, end this…!!!!」

…Doryaaaaa!
I gripped Yukino's waist and fling my hips voilently…!
I don't have the composure to enjoy this slowly!
I pierce Yukino deeply!
…Pierce!
…Pierce![1]
Pan, pan, pan, a sound of skin clashing echoes in the small cubicle…!

「Aaaaah…Good…it feels good…Papa, hurry up…Faster…!!!」

…Dammit!
…Dammit!
…Dammit!
I'll violate you!
I'll release it outside!
I'll ejaculate inside Yukino!
I'm going to let it all out!

「…Hurry up…Let it out…make this end…!!!」

I embraced Yukino's body from behind!
I gripped her naked breasts with both of my hands!
I confirmed the feeling of her hardened nipple with my finger!

…Nunununununununu!
The impure white heat is rising up from my body!
…Dammmiiiiit!!!

「…Ah, Ah, Ah! Your hot stuff is coming in! It's inside! It's reaching it!!…It's reaching deep inside meeee…!!」

…Dokun…dokun…dokun…!

My penis pulsates inside Yukino and it keeps releasing white semen intensely!
My semen is painting the inside of Yukino's body…
I'm markning my smell on it…

「…It's still coming out…it's already a lot…!!」

My irritation goes away rapidly as I inseminate Yukino.
I embraced Yukino once again while we're still connected.
Yukino's body is filled with sweat…
I kissed her nape.
This body exists only for me…
My…Yukino.
I won't hand her over anyone…she's my woman!
I indulge myself in the sense of unity while connected with Yukino.

…And yet.
…Yukino said.

「…Uhm, are you done already?」

Yukino under the eye mask shows me a fake smile.

「…You've already finished, haven't you…customer?」

…Yukino!
Do you want to return to Endou that much?!
…Bastard!
I pulled out my erection from Yukino's inside!

「…Ahn!」

My penis isn't withered yet!

I made Yukino stand on her knees and pushed out my erect penis to her face.
My penis touched Yukino's cheek.
It seems that she immediately understood what it means.

「…I really don't have much time…please release everything soon…I'll drink all of it…!」

Yukino opened her mouth wide and sucked the penis.
Yukino uses her tongue and desperately stimulates the glans…!
She's stroking it with her lips…!
…Lewd mouth.
Yukino has already mastered fellatio before I noticed.
…Lewd.
She'd get herself ravished by an old man she doesn't know as long as she's ordered.
She would suck penises of old men she doesn't know.
…A sex loving bitch.
But…I love the face of the one sucking my penis.
…I think it's cute.
Still…I
I want Yukino.
I love Yukino's body.
…I want to make this woman only mine.
I want to make this woman's body an exclusive sperm toilet for me to release my sperm anytime I want!!!

I hold Yukino's face and made a piston!
Yukino's face looks in pain!
That face looks good!
I'll let it out!
I'll spit it out in this cute mouth!
…Here we go! I'm cumming! I'll let it out!!!

…Dopuuuuuuu!

I fired my second shot inside Yukino's mouth.
Topu, topu, topu…My penis jumps inside Yukino's mouth…!
Yukino says 「…Bitter」!!!
Still, I continue the piston on Yukino's mouth!
I'll use it to the last minute…!

When I let everything out, Yukino opened her mouth wide.
On top of Yukino's tongue is my thick semen.
Yukino closed her mouth and swallowed it.

「…Papa, I'll clean it」

Once again, Yukino put the penis in her mouth…
Sucking the glans and drinking the semen that got stuck in the urethra…
…A trained bitch.

「Okay, it's clean now…customer」

Yukino under the eye mask spoke with a smile.

…Yukino.
…You don't really know?
It's my usual taste.
It's my semen.
Even though we've done a lot…you still don't know me?

Suddenly…the door on the cubicle was knocked.

「Customer…it's almost time!」

It was Katsuko-san's voice.
The cubicle was opened…
Katsuko-san looked at me and smiled.

「Thank you for your patronage…Were you able to enjoy it? It's a genuine prostitute!」

Katsuko-san's hand directs me to go out.
I went outside the cubicle.

「…Thank you very much!…You can take off your mask!」

Katsuko-san spoke to Yukino inside the cubicle.
After that, Katsuko-san took out several bills from her pocket.
She purposely crumpled the money and hurdled it at Yukino's feet.

「…Pick it up」

Katsuko-san spoke laughingly.

「That's 50,000 yen. 30, 000 for the intravaginal ejaculation and 20,00 for the drinking the semen」

There's no sign of Yukino moving inside the cubicle.

「Pick it up…It's the money you earned by your body just now!」

I heard a sound of rustling.
It seems that Yukino got down on the floor and picked up the 50,000 yen…

「Aren't you glad?…How about having a dinner with your boyfriend?」

Katsuko-san smiles mishievously…

「…Can I go back now?」

I can hear it from the cubicle…Yukino's voice seems to be tired.

「I'll be taking photos so stay still for a while! Don't fix your bra either…your nipples need to be seen!」

A flash and shutter sound can be heard from the cubicle!

「Raise your skirt up and show your pussy dripping with semen… Hurry up!」

I can hear more shutter sounds!

「…Okay, that's done!」

Katsuko-san lowered her camera.

「This is the end isn't it?」

Yukino's relieved voice can be heard from the cubicle…
But, Sex Beast Katsuko is.

「…What are you saying?! You just finished your first customer, didn't you?」

「……Eh?」
「Put on your eye mask…the next customer is waiting you know?!」
「…But?」

Yukino's making Endou wait by saying that「I'm going to the restroom」…It's already been fifteen minutes.

「It's fine…There's only one guy left. If you do your best then you can make him cum in five minutes」
「…Are you sure that there's only one left?」
「Hurry up and put on your mask!」

Katsuko-san winked at me…!
I'm going to do another round with her I guess…!
Very well…I'll do it.

「Oh I forgot…The next customer is on the women's toilet. I'll be guiding you so come with me!」
「…Wait a moment!」
「Don't ever take off your eye mask! If you do, It'll be throwing you to be gang-raped by the homeless!」
「…I won't, I won't take it off!」

Being led by Katsuko-san…Yukino came out of the cubicle blindfolded.
Holding her dress on her chest with one hand…she's covering her nipples.

「Okay…It's here…Ufufufufu!」

With Katsuko-san's lead, we appeared outside the public restroom.
…Then, Margo-san dressed like a Yakuza is standing there.
There's a barricade saying『Cleaning – Off limits』
I see…That's why there's no one coming in the toilet.
Margo-san waved her hand to me smiling.
Is Nei-san still in the observatory?
I went towards the ladies' restroom…
Though it's a ladies' restroom, it still stinks as it's an old restroom.
It's just that it's in a bit better state than the men's restroom.
Katsuko-san had taken Yukino on the hand-washing area…

「I'm sorry to make you wait…Customer. This is the high school girl prostitute you asked for!」

Yukino under the eye mask is trembling.
She must be thinking that the next customer is in front of her.
It's actually me again though…2

「Hey, introduce yourself! What's your name…?!」
「…U-Uhm!」

Yukino falters…!

「Idiot. Since you're a prostitute, you should just make a fake name. You don't need to say your real name. You can use your friend's name…!」

Katsuko-san whispers at Yukino's ear.
No…I can hear it though.

「Now…Introduce yourself to the customer!」

Yukino bowed tremblingly…

「…I-I'm Yamamine Megumi!」

…Yuino used Yamamine-san as a false name
…W-Why Yamamine-san?!

「…Okay, Megumi-chan, how old are you?」
「Megumi's 16 years old, first year in high school」
「…How many people have you experienced sex with?」
「…T-Two people」

It seems that the 『Forty year old office worker』 have been carved into Yukino's memory.

「You just had your second person today, don't you?」
「Yes…That's right…」

Yukino's voice became tearful…

「You had lots of semen injected inside your womb, don't you?」

「…Yes」
「…It's a sperm of whom?」
「A forty year old office worker…」
「This customer is 50 years old. He's a gentleman that loves violating high school students. When a high school girl is usually gangbanged, he's coming second…」

…Is there really a guy with that hobby?
…I don't know.

「He has a bit of perverted hobby but, this customer is a boss of Yakuza so don't ever fail this…! The Yakuza that was watching Endou-sama outside is a follower of this person. That's why, if ever you made him angry,m Endou-sama might not be able to come back safe…!」
「…I-I get it」
「Oh right, young boss loves the 『I'm sorry Onii-chan』 play! Now, get spoiled like a little sister! Apologize to your onii-chan…!!!」

Saying that, Katsuko-san pushed Yukino's body to me!

「…Hii!」

Yukino who was pushed away suddenly jumps into my chest!
I hold Yukino's whole body!!

「…I'm sorry, Onii-chan」

Yukino starts her play.
I pushed Yukino's body on the sink!
I placed Yukino's ass on top of the sink…!
I pulled off the panty that was taken half-off a while ago!
I put her panty on my pocket…!
Tonight, she'll go commando!
I opened Yukino's legs wide…!
The crack on the center has love nectar and semen dripping down.

「I'm sorry, Onii-chan…Megumi's pussy is dirtied by another man's semen, I'm sorry…!」

I took out my penis once again.

My erection never dies3
There's no way it'll wither!
It's standing erect!
I'm going to have sex for the second time pretending as another person…!
Would Yukino still not notice until the last minute…?!
She's not going to notice me?!!4

I ram in my questions1

「 Aah…I'm sorry! I'm sorry! Onii-chan!!! 」

She's shaking her waist back and forth…!
I opened her dress and rubbed her breasts!
I sucked her nipple…!

「I'm sorry…Megumi is sorry!! 」

…Why Megumi?!
Do you intend to soil Yamamine-san!
The tip of my penis grinds the entrance of her womb!!

「Aaaahn…Please pierce Megumi very deep, Onii-chan!! 」

I push in my piston!
I'm stirring Yukino's womb!

「Iyaaaaa, don't do that…I'm sorryyyyy…Onii-chaaaan! 」

…Yukino's blindfolded.
…Yukino's thinking that she's being violated
Yukino's intensely wet.
…She's panting.
…She remembers the pleasures of sex.
She's intoxicated on the 『Onii-chan play』
A lewd body with no way of saving.

…Lewd…slut…pervert…bitch…meat toilet…!
Even if I add all those boos…I can't express those to Yukino right now…【】
She's a helpless…sex loving bitch.

That's my first love.
I fell in love with such a woman.

My tears are spilling over.
I'm crying…while violating Yukino.

「Uuuuu…uuuuuu…uuuuuwaaaaaa…!」

My voice…my crying voice can't be suppressed…!!

「What's wrong…Onii-chan…hey, onii-chan…?!」

Still, I didn't stop thrusting inside Yukino…!
…I'll violate her!
…Until I release it inside Yukino!

「…I'm sorry! It's my fault isn't it?! I'm sorry, I'm sorry! Onii-chan, I'm sorry…!!」

…Yukino apologizes to me.

「I'm sorry…I'm sorry for being me…Onii-chan, I'm sorry!!!」

…She's saying「I'm sorry for being me」

「…I'm sorry! Megumi is wrong! I'm sorry for bring this kind of little sister!!」

…You're not 『Megumi』
…You're Yukino

In the end…this is just acting.
A play forced to her in sex…
It's not Yukino's real intention…

I shake Yukino's body stronger and faster!!!

「…Aaah, good, it feels good…I'm sorry, Onii-chan, Megumi's feeling good…I'm sorry!」

Yukino's drowning in sex.

「…It's about time」

Katsuko-san mutters while watching us have sex…
Katsuko-san took out her phone…

「…Hello, Nei-sama Thank you for waiting. It's time!」

…Nei-san?
…Where is Nei-san right now?
Nei-san's voice leaks out from Katsuko-san's phone…!

『Okay, let's begin then』

…Begin?
…Begin what?

Such question enters my mind while I hump Yukino.
Immediately after, a sharp voice can be heard from Katsuko-san's phone…!

『…Hey hey, even if you wait there, your girlfriend won't come back!』

…Nei-san?
…She's talking to Endou?!

『Mufufufu!…Endou Kenji-kun! Your girlfriend, Shirasaka Yukino is being raped in the public restroom right now! She's being surrounded by men!』

Yukino who's drowning in sex has returned to herself!

「…Eh…W-What's going on?!5」

Nei-san's voice from the phone goes further…!

『It's me, Me!…Look, the one that barged in your classroom this morning? The delinquent Nei-san~! Your girlfriend's an eyesore so I had everyone rape her! Hurry up and save her or she'll get pregnant you know?! Ah…It might be late though!』

Yukino's body trembled in fear.
The blood in her face fades away quickly.
The inside of her vagina tightens firmly!

「…You must be lying?!」

Katsuko-san laughs.

「Sadly, this is not a lie!」

In addition, Nei-san reports to her phone…!

『Endou-kun's going there right now!』

…Yukino's petrified.
…I
…Resumed the intense piston!!

「…No! Don't do it right now! Kenji…Kenji's coming over!!!」

I embraced Yukino's body and pierced her whole body!!!

「…I'll be seen by Kenji…I can't allow that to happen!!!!」

Hot feelings run inside me…!
I licked the sweat that's flowing on Yukino's scruff to her chest…!
Being shaken intensely by me, Yukino's body trembles violently!
…Yukino!
…Yukino!
…Yukinoooooo!!

「…You can't…I told you that you can't…!!!」

Before long…I can hear an angry voice of a man from far away…!

「…Hey! Yukino!! Yukinooooooooo!!!!」

A voice of an ugly man appeals for Yukino's name
That's…Endou.

「K-Kenji…Help me…Kenjiiii…!!!」

Yukino's body began convulsing…!
Her vagina tightens firmly…!
…Aaah!
…Yukino's about to climax soon

「…Yukino, are you there, Yukinoooo!!」

Endou's shouting right before the public restoom!

「Hey hey…Can't you see that this is 『Closed to Public』…?!」

That's Margo-san's voice…!

「…Yukino, if you're there then answer! Hey, Yukino!」

…I ram in my last thrust!
My limit's close…!

「…Don't enter without permission!」

I heard a sound of an impact…then a sound of something falling to the ground!
Perhaps…Endou was hit by Margo-san…!
Endou's crawling on the ground…!
…Ahahaha.
…fuahahahahahahahaha!!!

「…Aaaah, Kenji…Kenji…I'm sorry…I!!!」

The pleasure of sex and the image of violence carries Yukino to the stage of delight immediately!
Her whole body's sweaty…and a lightning hits her body…!

「…Cumming…I'm cumming!!!」

Her body bent like a bow…!
Yukino shouted in a loud voice…!!!

「…aaaaaah! Aaaaah! Cum! Cum! I'm cumiiiiiiiing…!!!」

It was a voice of great pleasure if it's heard from outside by Endou!
I'm also cumming!

「…Hyaaaaaaan! It's coming out! It's coming! It's coming inside me!!!!!」

I can hear Endou's yell from outside the restroom…!

「…Yukino…Yukino…Yukino…Uooooooooo!!!」

Endou's sorrowful voice doesn't reach Yukino who's drowning at the pleasure of the climax…

---

1. Gae Bolg ↩
2. You thought you fucked two other guys, but it was ME YOSHIDA! ↩
3. Dick of the game! ↩
4. Hello, you two are of the same year, of course she won't notice ↩
5. And I say, Heyyyyy, Heyyyyyyyy! ↩

49. Katsuko High Tension

「…Yukinoooo…Yukinoooo」

I can hear Endou's groan from outside the toilet…
Katsuko-san pats my shoulder as I breath roughly after ejaculating inside Yukino.
The beauty with a nice body in a race queen suit, smiles at me.

「Customer, I'm very sorry. There's a trouble outside. I will deal with it so please hide yourself in that cubicle」

Katsuko-san pointed at an open cubicle.
She must be planning something…
I did what I was told in silence.

「Hey…Toilet girl! Remove your blindfold! I'll buy you some time so fix your clothes!」
「…Eh?」

Yukino's cofused voice…

「You don't want your boyfriend to know it right?…Being a prostitute」
「…Yes」
「I'll lie to him so get out immediately and match with my story! You can do it right? You're an honor student, aren't you?」
「…G-Got it」
「…Where's your gratitude?」
「T-Thank you very much」
「If he's deceived then cancel the date for today. Once you separate from him, call me on the number I used a while ago…!」
「…There's more?」
「You're in the middle of having sex with the leader of Yakuza aren't you?…If you get him angry, it's not just your life in danger, I'm also the same!」
「…I-I'm sorry」
「In the first place…do you intend to continue your date with your boyfriend while smelling sperm all over your body?」

「…Uuuu」
「Anyway…I'll play with the child outside so fix your clothes and come out immediately!」

…Then
The heels of the race queen Katsuko-san can be heard from the restroom…!

「…Hey, it's noisy! We can't let a weird voice come in the video!!!」

Katsuko-san's loud voice can be heard from outside the public restroom.
…What does she intend to do?
If I recall, Endou still hasn't known Katsuko-san's face…

「I'm sorry Nee-san…this fellow is being a nuisance!」

Margo-san plays along with Katsuko-san.
It seems that they have arranged this beforehand…

「What's with this boy…?」
「…Y-Yukino, where's Yukino!!」

I can hear Endou's voice from a lower position.
He's crouching on the ground…or could it be that he collapsed?
Margo-san hit him once after all.
It was an awful pained voice…

「Haan?!…Who'e Yukino?!」

Katsuko-san plays dumb

「Y-You guys…y-you're raping Yukino there aren't you! Aren't you, hey!」
「What's that…I don't know anyone named Yukino. Do you?」
「No, Nee-san…I haven't heard about it」
「You're lying! I heard it! Right now, I head a girl's scream inside the restroom! You guys are fucking Yukino…aren't you!!!!!」

…Endou, that's not a scream.
That's Yukino's voice of delight from reaching climax.

「…It's noisy isn't it? Make it quiet」
「Yes, Nee-san」

I heard a dull sound…!

「…Uga!!」

Endou seems to be hit by Margo-san again.

「It seems that you're misunderstanding something…boy[1]」

Katsuko-san threatens Endou with a low voice…!

「The ahn, ahn voice you just heard now…it was me![2]」

…Katsuko-san![3]
…Do you intend to persist this insane high tension?!

「『Race Queen Katsuko's complete 100 Masturbation set!』we're on the 250th shot as commemoration…」

Ah…She's serious
She intends to push it even though it's unreasonable…
No, please…dash through this quickly…
I can hear the sound of heels steadily walking on the pavement of the road.

「You see…you ruined my important recording!!!!!」

Ga! I hear a striking sound…!

「…O-Ouch! Don't step on me…d-don't step on meee!![4]」

Katsuko-san is stepping on Endou that's lying on the ground…?!!

「…Furthermore, it was the best climax seen then an unknown voice came in…you brainless! Trash! Ao Byou tan!」

…Katsuko-san.
What's Ao Byou tan[5]…?!

「…Ouchouchouchouch!! Stop it! Don't grind it!!」

Endou shouts and writhes in pain…!

「I have to record it from the start again…You idiot! Bell pepper bastard! Your mother is a athlete's foot fungus!!!」

…I don't get it anymore!

「Are you making fool of my great sacred masturbation?! I have 600 fans around the world you know! There's 18 people who has a complete copy of my 『Masturbation fighter』! You! You! You! You! Youuuuu!!!!」
「Ouch! Ouch!…I'm not making a fool of it…I don't know about it either!!」
「…Is that true? You're not making fool of it?!」
「I don't! I really don't!」
「…Then, you're going to buy my videos too?」
「I will! I should just buy shouldn't I?! I'll buy the whole volume!」
「…Then say 『Masturbation is Justice』 6!」
「…Haa?」
「That's the catchprase of my videos! It's a catchphrase between fans! Here we go…Masturbation is?!」
「…Justice」
「More, shout in a louder voice!」
「Masturbation is justice!」
「More!」
「Masturbation is Justiiiiicceeeee!!!!!」
「…Uuun, as expected we need the 『Nari』 as sentence ender!」
「…What?」
「『Justice Nari』 …try shouting it!」
「…Eh?」
「Hurry up!」
「Masturbation is Justice Nari…?!」
「…Louder!」
「Masturbation is Justice Nari…!!」
「…Shout from the bottom of your stomach!」
「Masturbation is Justice nariiiiii!!」
「…Katsuko's masturbation is the world's best!…Go!」
「Katsuko's masturbation is the world's best nariiiii!!!!!!!」

…Foolish
…What kind of stupidity is this

…Hey, Endou

「Very well, I'll forgive you! I'll record it again so take look at my masturbation! ufufufu!」

Endou who was made to shout a lot has been coughing.

「…Haa, haa,…wait a moment…T-Then…Where did…Where did Yukino goooo?!」

Endou's sorrowful voice echoes hard in the public restroom…

「…Nee-san, by any chance」

Margo-san and Katsuko-san begins a not so good play…

「…What?」
「Nee-san, did you check the cubicles before starting your recording…?」
「I haven't」
「……Uhm, it might just be but, there's someone who entered the cubicle before Nee-san started recording…!」
「There's no way that someone's here?」

The sound of the heels entered the bathroom again…

「There's no way I would fail! I'm the 『Masturbation Fighter』 Katsuko-nee-san! There's now I would make such an amateur mistake when I masturbate outside…nnnnnu?!…w-who are you?!」

W-What a poor acting…
It's too bad…!
Or rather, you're enjoying this aren't you…Katsuko-san!

「…Why is a young lady like you in a restroom like this?!」

Katsuko-san pulls out Yukino from the restroom…!

「…Yukino」
「Kenji…Are you okay?!」

Yukino runs after Endou who fell down.

「…What about you?」
「I-I…when I entered the cubicle, strange people suddenly entered and began letting out strange voices…I'm so scared that I can't get out…!」

Yukino's making a lie again…

「Really?…There's really nothing that happened to you…?!」

Then…that's when.

「…Ahahahahahahah! Idiot! Idiot! You got pranked!」

A loud laughter can be heard from the back…!
That's Nei-san's voice!

「Dammit! I got pranked!」

Endou got further in the trap with Nei-san's words…
Endou's being fooled by everyone right now.
…Even Yukino!

「Ooops! That Onee-san is really a friend of Yakuza though! I don't care if you get into trouble! By then!!!! Ahahahahahahah!!」

Nei-san seems to be escaping with a laugh…
Yukino spoke to Endou…

「…Anyway, I'm fine」
「…I see…that's hot it is…」
「…Sorry…Sorry, Kenji」
「I-It's fine…As long as Yukino's safe…ouch…」
「…Where does it hurt?」
「My stomach and face…my back was stepped on too…」
「…Are you okay?」
「Sand entered my mouth…it tastes like blood. I can't smell anything at all . It seems that my nose is paralyzed…」

Margo-san seems to made him lose his sense of smell on purpose.
Even though Yukino stinks, Endou won't know the smell of the sperm and semen.

「Oh my…It seems to be a mistake on my part, young lady got involved with it. I'm sorry boy. Should I call you an ambulance?」
「No…it's fine There's no need」

Yukino strongly refuses.

「I-I'm fine…!」

Endou doesn't seem to want to get involved with Yakuza any further.

「Is that so…Then, I'll give you taxi fee and treatment costs! Are you okay with 30,000 yen?」

…30,000 yen.
That's the price for Yukino having sex with a 『50 year old Yakuza』 a while ago.

「Here…I'll give it to you, pick it up!」

Katsuko-san seems to have hurled the money to Yukino again…

「…Now, I'll return to my recording! I'll leave you to guard!」
「Yes, Nee-san!」

The sound of Katsuko-san's heels steadily came back to the restroom…
She then knocked on the cubicle I'm hiding at.
Opening the door…Katsuko-san jumped into my chest!

「…I'm sorry, Katsuko's aroused right now!」

Katsuko-san kissed me.
Her tongue licks inside my mouth!
Katsuko-san's in an abnormal state…!
Is her switch flipped when she was acting…?!
The sex beast has awakened…?!

「Aaaahn! I can just have sex can't I?!」

Katsuko-san lowered her panty…
She opened her vagina under the black pubic hair.

It's dripping with lover nectar.
Inside the dark restroom…Katsuko-san's eyes shine suspiciously.
The scent of a female stimulates my nose…!
The train has it's brakes broken…
Katsuko-san's libido is unstoppable already!
…I

「…Please. Violate Katsuko! Violate me intensely so that child can hear!」

…Yukino
…Make Yukino hear it!

Katsuko-san's delicate finger stimulates my penis.
Her tongue is attacking my mouth intensely…!
Her plump breasts surrounds me…!

「Look…Yoshida-sama's penis is already this energetic!」

Katsuko-san made my penis hit her opening…
Violated…
Rather, I'm gonna get ravished by Katsuko-san…!!!

「…I'll be eating then!」

My penis is sucked into the wet meat…!
We're having sex by embracing each other…standing…!
Katsuko-san's ravishing me!!!

「…aaaaaah, deliciouis! It's been a while since I had this!!!!」

…W-What's this?!
Katsuko-san's interior is different from Yukino, Nagisa-san and Misuzu…!
It's fleshy, wet, and rough…and clamping!!!
It's a female meat pot that's been trained thoroughly…!!!

「…Good! This is great!!!! Aaaaahn, it feels good! It feels goooooood…!!!」

Katsuko-san uses her waist intensely…!
This is a female beast…her lewd waist dances wildly!

Eaten…
Eaten…
I am…!

「…Aaaahn!…nufuu…feels good! Deep…I can feel it deeeep!!」

I can hear Endou and Yukino's voice from outside the restroom…!

「Amazing…she resumed. That perverted woman」
「…Let's go Kenji…can you walk?」
「…Y-Yeah」
「Hold onto me…let's go」
「…Ouch…Dammit!」
「…The game's close, would you be fine?」
「…This will get better after a good night sleep. Just let me take some rest…I can't really move right now」
「Un. Let's return by taxi…I'll ride it until halfway」
「…Yeah」
「I'm just until the station…Kenji should just get on it and go home」
「It's fin…I'll send you to your house」
「B-But…L-Look, aren't we in opposite directions?…Anyway, Kenji should just let his body rest sooner」
「…Right…of course」
「…Of course it is」
「…I was worried you know. Yukino took her time in the toilet after all」
「T-That's…because that suddenly came in…」
「That…Mens?」
「…U-Un. Then, while I was doing it…That person began doing that strange thing…」
「You can just tell me through your phone…then I would've come to help you immediately」
「Sorry…I was scared」
「I see…Well, that's normal」

Katsuko-san's devouring me greedily

「…Aaah!…Good!…piere me!…violate me! Make a mess out of Katsuko!!」

She took off her race queen bustier…Katsuko-san's big breasts is pushed to my face

「…Lick it!…Suck it…Slurp it!!!!」

I licked her nipples…sucked…bit!

「…Aaaaahn!…Good! Katsuko's weak on her nipples!!!」

Endou's amazed from outside the restroom.

「Still…That's a really loud voice. She's like a beast」
「…Hurry up and let's go」
「Yukino won't make that kind of voice, would you?」
「…Geez, Idiot」
「But you see, Yukino got her mens today…we can't do it anyway tonight, can we?」
「…R-Right」
「Or rather…Since your mens started today…It would last until May 3 or 5, won't it? That continues for one week, doesn't it?」
「I-It's not that heavy for me. It's already fine on the fourth day」
「Haa…Then, five days. Let's do it on the 5th. Anyway, I want do it it when it's clean」
「…U-Un.」
「But you see, it's not a safe day when the mens just ended won't it…should we use at least a condom?」
「…It's fine. Don't use it. Kenji wants it that way don't you?」
「Idiot, let's use it…A spem lives on a woman's body for at least one week. As expected, it's scary if you get pregnant」
「…Thanks, Kenji」
「What are you saying? Isn't that obvious?」
「…Yes yes, thanks, Kenji!」
「Yukino…why are you crying?」
「…I don't know, I don't get it either!」
「Well…a lot happened. I can move now…Let's go」
「Un…Kenji, I love you」
「Yeah, same…Yukino」

Then…the two of them left
I can hear the voice of the two as they go away.
…Yukino

…Yukino
…Yukino!!!

「…Hyaaaan! The penis got bigger inside Katsuko! Great! Rub it! Rub it more inside Katsuko!」

I greedily devour Katsuko-san's body!!!
…Dammit!
…Dammit!
…Dammit!

「…Good! More! Violate me! Do me violently!」

I pierce deep inside Katsuko-san…!

「…Good!」Good! A boy's body is so delicious!!

…Yukino
…Why are you!
…Why won't you become mine?!
…Aaaaaah!!!
…Bastard!
…Bastard!
…Bastard!!!

…Then

「…You can't have such a sad sex like that…Yo-chan」

My back seems to be sprinkled with cold water…
When I slowly looked back…
Nei-san has a sad face…squatting down at the entrance of the restroom…
Katsuko-san violated from below looks up at me.

「You'd be a slave to sex just like Katsuko if you do that…!」

…Nei-san

「When you're having sex, you have to look at your partner…I think that you should cherish your partner from the bottom of your heart. That's Yo-chan's sex, isn't it…?」

…That's right.
I'm blowing off my feelings for Yukino…I'm not looking at Katsuko-san whom I'm connected right now…!
I wasn't embracing Katsuko-san from the bottom of my heart just now…
…I'm the worst.
I can't do such sex!

「What's wrong?! Pierce me, pierce me more!…Please ravish Katsuko! I love it when it's intense!!」

Katsuko-san's wriggling her own waist…
Her eyes looks like it already came.
Katsuko-san's mind isn't here…
Right now, she's having sex with someone not me…

「Yo-chan loves Katsun?」
「…I do」
「Then, you do know what to do, don't you?!」
「…Yes, Nei-san」

I embraced Katsuko-san's voluptuous body tightly…!
Then I whispered to her ears gently…!

「Katsuko-san…It's me! Yoshida![7]」

Katsuko-san's still indulging herself in the pleasures of sex right now.

「Katsuko-san, thank you for always! Thank you for doing it for my sake! Thank you for making me delicious bread! The pizza lunch was also delicious! Thank you very much! Thank you! Katsuko-san, Thank you! I'm grateful to you! I'm grateful from the bottom of my heart!」

The words Katsuko-san always say…
…Words of gratitude.
Katsuko-san got startled…!

「…Eh?!…Y-Yoshida-sama?!」

She returned to her consciousness immediately.

「Katsuko-san…I love Katsuko-san Always bright, gentle, good at cooking, just like an elder sister, I love you very, very much…!」

Even I don't know what I'm saying…
But…I just thought that I wanted to let out my feelings to Katsuko-san firmly…
I throw out all of my emotions without telling a single lie…!

「You're a bit naughty, playful and have some insane parts but…I love Katsuko-san…!」
「…Yoshida-sama!」
「Also…I love Katsuko-san's body. It's very sexy…I want to embrace it all the time. When I was holding behind you on the motorcycle, I got erect. Katsuko-san is sexy. Wonderful. Cute. I love it…!」

Katsuko-san looked at me and laughed.

「Me too…I love you Yoshida-sama is so cute like a real little brother!」

Our genitals are still connected…
My penis is wrapped in Katsuko-san's vagina…
And yet…we
We're just confirming our love even in such condition…

「Katsuko-san's inside feels good. It's very warm and wrapping me gently…」
「Yoshida-sama's penis feels good too…It's knocking on my uterus」
「…I want to cum inside Katsuko-san. I want to have lots of sex with Katsuko-san. Is that fine, Katsuko-san…?」

We're already having sex though…
I still wanted to get Katsuko-san's permission.
Not the 『Reckless Libido』…
I want to embrace Katuko-san properly…

「It's okay…I also want to do it…!」

We look at each other while embracing…

Katsuko-san kissed me

「I love you…dear」

Katsuuko-san didn't call me 『Yoshida-sama』 but… 『Dear8』

「…Can you call me 『Katsuko-nee』 instead of 『Katsuko-san』?」
「…Katsuko-nee」
「…More」
「…Katsuko-nee」
「…One more」
「…Katsuko-neesan」

Katsuko-nee's vagina tightened firmly…
Her love nectar begins to spill out…!

「I'll be a woman only for you 」

Katsuko-san's waist began to move again…
I also resumed the rhythm slowly…

「I won't sleep with other men anymore…I won't sell my body…I'll become a woman just for you…!」

Katsuko-nee is looking straight to my eye…
That's why…I also look at Katsuko-san's eyes.

「…I'll do anything. I will die for your sake. In exchange, can you listen to my only request…?
「…I'll do anything」
「Whenever I get crazy…when I lose to the impulse of sex…when I become helpless…I want you to violate me…」

『Reckless Libido』 …is always tied up with Katsuko-nee all the time.
Katsuko-nee suffered from the fear of not knowing when it will rage.
Then…I'll be taking care of all her pain…

「Got it…You don't need to endure it. I can always go with Katsuko-nee anytime!」
「…That makes me happy!」

Katsuko-nee sped up the movement of her waist…
Her vagina moves windingly…
Perhaps…Katsuko-nee's insides are the one called 『Meiki9』
It feels good…
What a pleasurable body…!

「…In exchange, can you listen to my request?」
「…Anything's fine!」
「Please make delicious bread…and delicious meals everyday…!」

Katsuko-nee's face is wrapped in delight…!
Katsuko-nee trembles intensely…
It seems that she reached a light climax…!

「Aaah…I love you! I love you!」
「Can you be my gentle Onee-san for always…?」
「I won't let go anymore…I'm, already your woman」

Katsuko-nee keeps kissing my face.

「…Can I lick your breasts?」
「You don't need to ask each and everything…It's yours!」
「I want Katsuko-nee to say 『Yes please』 though!」
「Geez…You're so spoiled…yes please, do what you want!」

Katsuko-nee's abundant chest is so soft and warm!
I sucked her small nipple…!

「Aaaahn…You're like a child…You're so cute! Too cute!」

Katsuko-san embraces me…!
Aah…I'm about to reach climax…!

「Katsuko-nee…I'm about to…!」
「Wait…I'm near there too…!」

Katsuko-nee winds her waist…!
I also push up her womb steadily.

「Look at mu cumming face…I want you to look」
「I'm looking…I'm watching you Katsuko-nee!」

Then…Katsuko-nee reaches the climax…!

「…Aaaaaaaaah…Cumming…!!!!」

The cumming Katsuko-nee…has a sexy face.
Those eyes are looking at me.
My face is being clearly seen…!

「…I'm cumming too!」
「Let me see…Show me your cumming face!!!」
「…Cumming!!!」

I released my cloudy liquid deep inside Katsuko-nee!!!

「Ah, it's flowing in…It's coming inside me!…Cute! You're making a cute face when you cum!…This is my first time!」

Katsuko-nee embraces me tightly…!

「…I'm happy!!」

I lost strength under Katsuko-nee's arms…

---

1. It sounds sexy when Katsuko-san says Bouya(Boy) ↩
2. DIOOOOOOOOOO! ↩
3. Jojooooooo!! ↩
4. Awaken! Masochism! ↩
5. 青ビョウタンて ↩
6. It's no longer flat chests! ↩
7. It's me! Mario! ↩
8. She says "Anata" which means "you" normally, and "Dear" in romantic ↩
9. Excellent artice ↩

50. Sensei and I1

…Clap, clap, clap, clap!

I hear a sound of applause from the back…
When I turned around…!
Yuzuki-sensei was standing there…

「…Congratulations, Katsuko」

Sensei spoke to Katsuko-nee with a cold smile…

「Get pregnant with Yoshida-kun's child in two months and…retire. I've already searched for a list of properties for your bakery. You can make the shop anywhere you want. I'll negotiate with the nearby elementary school so you can wholesale your bread as a lunch for them. Of course it'll be our co-op selling it…we can just hire professionals when it comes to management and legal affairs so you don't need to worry about anything」

Sensei recites her plan as if she has planned this all this time.
It might be like this when Nagisa-san opened her flower shop too.
Katsuko-nee smiles at me.

「…I'm sorry, let's separate for a moment!」

Kissing my lips…Katsuko-san pulls out my penis from her vagina…
Just like that, she kneeled in front of Yuzuki-sensei!

「Thank you for your kind offer Ojou-sama…But please allow Katsuko to take contraceptives…!」

…Katsuko-nee!

「…What do you mean? Weren't you always wanting to get apart from 『Kuromori』?」

Katsuko-nee looks up to Sensei…!

「I'm Ojou-sama's first 『Toy』…I'm the elder sister of all the

『Toys』so I don't intend to separate from 『Kuromori』until all of my sisters become happy…please let me stay as Ojou-sama's maid for a little longer…!!!」
「…Katsun!」
「…Katsuko-san」

Not just Nei-san, Margo-san has also entered the restroom…

「Also, Ojou-sama…Katsuko wishes for Ojou-sama to be from the bottom of her heart!」

The restroom quiets down
Yuzuki-sensei was silent for a while.
…Before long.

「…I'll give you three years time. Stay beside me until Yoshida-kun graduates from high school. During that period, when you don't want it anymore, I don't mind if you separate from 『Kuromori』anytime」
「…Yes, Ojou-sama」
「But, after three years, get pregnant with Yoshida-kun's child without fail…okay? promise me」
「…Yes, I'll give birth with pleasure!」

Sensei looks at me…

「…Yoshida-kun. Put your dick away and come here
「…Ah, sure」

Right…My penis is exposed all this time
I pull up my underwear in a hurry.

「Katsuko, Nei, and Margo, get on the white van and follow the target…That child's about to contact you but, you have to go ahead and calculate the location of the phone」
「…Certainly!」
「Yoshida-kun will go with me in the Maserati…make a face that it's your first time seeing Shirasaka-san tonight…!」
「Okay, got it」
「Nei and Margo too?」
「…Of course?」

「…Nfufu, I'm looking forward to it!」

Sensei replied with a smile…towards all members of『Kuromori』
Sensei also regained the devil smile…

「Then…Let's go? Let's finish up tonight…!」

◇　◇　◇

Before we come out of the park, Katsuko-san's phone rang
…It was from Yukino.

「…Station it is. Wait at the rotary. We'll be meeting you immediately」

Katsuko-san orders Yukino.

「Then, later…Yo-chan!」

Nei-san, Margo-san and Katsuko-san enters the white van…!

「Katsuko…do as scheduled」
「Roger…Ojou-sama!」
「Then, we'll be going ahead Minaho」

The white van began to run…

「Katsuko stopped the Maserati on the parking lot ahead of this…」

Sensei confirmed the position of the parking lot with her phone…
then walked.
I also followed from behind.

「…Yoshida-kun」
「…Yes?」
「…Thanks」

Sensei said those things suddenly while turning her back on me.

「…I think that Katsuko's liberated from hell even a little」
「…Sensei」
「…That child's didn't become a 『Toy』 because she like it… I

forcibly dragged her to 『Kuromori』 I've ruined her life and heart…!」

The two people walk on the main street beside the unpopulated seaside park…
The night shines in the dark sky

「…When Katsuko and Nagisa entered first year, they suddenly were pulled into the world of darkness. Those children had dreams and hope…Yet their virginity was violated and entrusted their body to a lot of men. Those children were just new students then…the teacher me had raised them to be prostitutes of 『Kuromori』…!」

…That's Katsuko-nee and Nagisa-san's past.

「Those children doesn't like to be embraced by too much various men. There were people that are too good in sex. Rich people too. A real sadist, masochist, pervert…those children had been taken into the darkness of sex in the end. Their body cannot endure having normal sex…! No…They hated their own dirtied body and drowned themselves in sex without being saved. Otherwise, their heart won't be stable…!」

That's…the reckless libido.
It's not just Katsuko-san…Nagisa-san also had five pets.
If they don't keep a mountain of pets…they'd be unable to endure it, to their desire.

「That's why, I thought that a non-high school student would not be good to let those children start over…! That child must be kept company with a normal high school student just like when they were normal high school girls. An adult man would only eat into their hurts further…leading to their state deteriorating even more. Thus I looked for a boy meat slave starting last year to release Katsuko and Nagisa's desires」
「…That includes me?」
「You know it don't you?…You're the third candidate」

…That's right. I am.

「But you're much more than I expected…You didn't just satisfy

Katsuko and Nagisa's desires but also stabilized their hearts. Thank you for making those children experience normal sex…
「That's…please stop. I'm the one who should be thankful to Sensei…!」

Yuzuki-sensei turned back to me with a surprised face…

「Thankful…to me?」
「Yes, I was abandoned by my father…I thought that I should just better die in desperation. But, Sensei…gave me a point of living」
「…Is that so?…I wonder if that's so…?!」
「That's how it is!…I'm really thanking Sensei from the bottom of my heart…!」

…Yuzuki-sensei.
Kukuku, she laughed.

「…Sensei?」
「It's…my first time in my life being told 『I'm thankful』 by a student…!」

Sensei laughed even louder.

「It usually is 『I won't forgive you for the rest of my life』 or 『I won't forget this even if I die』 I hear nothing but words of curse and hatred」

…Is that.
…I wonder if that's how she's seen on her job as a high school teacher?
…Umu

「…But, everyone's thanking you from the bottom of their hearts. Katsuko-nee, Nagisa-san, Margo-san, and Nei-san too…!」
「Margo and Nei is fine…When I met those children, they were already in the bottom of hell. What I only did was to pull them up from the bottom most part to the a bit lukewarm part of hell…」

I somehow heard about Margo-san's past.
But…What about Nei-san?

「But, Katsuko and Nagisa are different They were brought up from

a normal house, trying to have a happy high school life…I made them fall to hell. I had no choice but to do that. That's why I always want to do something about it. I wanted to compensate…!」

…Sensei?
It wasn't Sensei's will to pull Katsuko-san and Nagisa-san to 『Kuromori』?!

「I used Nagisa being pregnant as a reason to make her retire and it made me feel relieved when she opened the flower shop. That child is much calmer than Katsuko that's why I thought that she'd get married with a normal man and find happiness…But, that child built her own harem immediately. Imitating me…furthermore, she's already gotten tired of men so she crowded herself with cute girls…!」

Nagisa-san's five pets.

「I despaired. I've completely destroyed their hearts. Just like a drug addict…they seek a much more thrilling sex…But they can't get satisfied always…they drown themselves to their desires like being thirsty for water…there's no end…!」

Sensei…Is seriously worried about Katsuko-nee and Nagisa-san…!
All these years.

「That's why…Please, be gentle with those children…!」
「Of course…Everyone's important to me. Not just Katsuko-nee and Nagisa-san, Margo-san and Nei-san too…And Yuzuki-sensei, you're important to me too」
「I…am a woman whom you don't know when she will betray you…!」
「That doesn't matter…I'm fine being betrayed…if it's Sensei…!」
「…Is that so? Thanks」

Sensei sadly muttered.
There's one doubt that come out of me…

「…Uhm, Sensei?」
「What?」
「Iwakura-san wasn't in our talk earlier…?!」

That's right…what does Yuzuki-sensei think about Iwakura-san?
As the 『Fourth toy』…

「…Iwakura Yukiyo is a special case」

…Special case

「Yukiyo's living in the hell from the beginning…furthermore, she's a helpless child that enjoy being in hell. She's beyond saving…just like me」
「…Sensei」
「That's why 『Kuromori』 is monitoring Yukiyo strictly…to make sure that the damage is kept to the minimum…She and the 『Sixth』 are special cases…!」

…『Sixth』
That person is the same as Iwakura-kaichou…

「Don't let your guard down by all means…if you show any chance, she'll definitely attack…!」

Saying that, Sensei fell silent…
What kind of person is the 『Sixth』?!
Also, what's Iwakura-san's true nature…?!
There's a lot of things running in my head…

Margo-san's Maserati was put on the corner of a 24 hour parking lot.
Sensei on the driver seat and I'm on the passenger seat.
The Italian engine roars violently…!
The blue sports car dashes on the night town at full speed…

「…By the way, Yoshida-kun」
「Yes?」
「…What do you want to do with Shirasaka Yukino? Do you still want her?」
「……」
「You do know that child would sleep with anyone, don't you?」
「…Yes」
「She even tried to get pregnant with Endou-kun's child…」
「…I know」

「A foolish child…she hates being forced against her will so much. To rebel against me…thinking of beating me even just for a bit… she tried to get pregnant with Endou-kun's child. She's just a foolish woman with an excessively large pride. She's gone lower than being a sex doll…」
「…She is」
「Do you still like her even when you saw her real nature?」
「…I do…but」
「…But?」
「Yukino doesn't need me. She's fine opening her legs to other men, isn't she…?!」

Sensei leaked out a sigh.

「I give up…you're really a child. Well, Yoshida-kun's age makes an excuse」
「…Sensei?」
「Yoshida-kun…After you have experienced sex, your judgement on women have changed, no?」
「…Yes?」
「Before…have you not imagined lewd stuff with the girl in front of you…?」
「…Speaking of which, I might」
「You're aware aren't you?」
「Yes…now that I've clearly felt and known the feeling of a woman's naked body and breasts…I intentionally think『How does this girl look like when naked?』 or『Is her breasts soft?』or 『How good is the shape of this girl's ass is?』」
「When you have experienced it with Shirasaka-san for the first time, have you ever thought that it's fine to have sex with only Shirasaka-san for the rest of your life?」
「…I did」
「And yet…today, you had sex with three new women, haven't you?」

That's right.
Even though I hate Yukino being embraced by other men…!
I had sex with other women…

「…I'm the worst, aren't I?」

Sensei burst into laughter.

「…Don't think that you're special. It's normal for humans to want to have sex with other after doing it once. For men, and for women !」
「…Is that so?」
「Yes. Once you've experienced it, it's in the instinct that you'd want to experience a different one. Just like how you want to experience other body except for Shirasaka-san, Shirasaka-san wants to be embraced by other men than you…!」
「That's…Endou?」
「…That's a charming body in front of her」

…Is that so?

「Having repeated sex with you…Shirasaka-san's lust has risen. Furthermore, she doesn't love you. A woman who had repeated a sex without love will lose her brakes…if the condition fits, she'd sleep with anyone. She'll become a woman that drowns in pleasures of sex…!」

Then…won't she become the same as Katsuko-nee on her reckless state?

「If this continues…Shiraska-san would become no good soon. Like Katsuko and Nagisa, the discord would continue on a child with a strong will. That's the suffering in hell but, it's possible to keep living without managing to lose one's humanity. But, it's impossible for Shirasaka-san. She's not that strong. Rather, she's as weak as her big pride. She'll easily fall into a lewd woman that's a sex maniac…!」

…That's.

「I know that I'm selfish, but…still I want Yukino to be only mine! I want Yukino to have sex with only me…!」
「…Then, imprison her?」

Sensei said something obvious.

「You can just confine Shirasaka-san, never let her meet anyone…

and have sex when you want to. Katsuko can just carry her meals. As for the confinement room, there's a lot in the mansion」

…But, that's

「…If you want to carry out your will, then that's the final method」
「…yes」
「There's still some time…think about it on these consecutive holidays. What do you want to do? I'll respond to any conclusion you come up to…!」
「…Got it」

Sensei had a somewhat lonely face.

「…Yoshida-kun, you see」
「…Yes?」
「I'm fine as long as Shiraska Yukino becomes unhappy」
「…Sensei?」
「It was a coincidence that I noticed your existence…our target since the entrance ceremony was Shirasaka Yukino all this time」

…Yukino was aimed at?

「No, we constructed the high school in a way she would wish to enter our it before the entrance exams. I did everything to drag that child into my den」

Yukino's reason to come to this school…
The event in the basketball club at her middle school…

「It was a plan of 『Kuromori』 to make Shiraska Yukino fall. …I discovered Yoshida-kun when I was monitoring her. You had a promising talent…thus I called out to you…!」

Sensei was tailing Yukino from the start…and as a result, I was found?
Then, Sensei had me rape Yukino's virginity…and continued to make her suffer all this cruel experience?!

「That's why, I'm sorry. I will make Shirasaka Yukino fall no matter what shape it is. That's our purpose since the start. But, I want it to

meet your request as much as possible. If you're going to cooperate until the last, I won't let Shirasaka-san be raped by other men. I promise that… 」

…Sensei

「 After everything has ended…If Yoshida-kun still wants it, I'll give you Shiraska-san. If you're fine even though she has completely fallen…! 」

Yuzuki-sensei…won't be satisfied until Yukino's completely fallen.
Perhaps…Yukino's body and mind would be destroyed.
If so…I want to do it by my hand.
I don't want to entrust it to other men…

「 On the contrary, just tell me if you don't want her. If so, I'll dispose her using the first plan 」
「 …How would you dispose her? 」
「 …I've said it before. Sell her on a brothel on the slums on South East Asia then throw her away to a garbage box 」

…Why does Sensei hate Yukino that much, I don't know
But…I know that Sensei has a reason on why she does.
Yuzuki-sensei's also a 『Broken』 person
…Just like me.

「 …Whatever happens, I will be the one to take care of it. Please give me Yukino 」
「 Got it…I'll have Katsuko clean up the confinement room… 」

As expected…that'll be the end?

「 …I'll do it…Let me clean it 」
「 Is that so?…Got it. Let's have you do it then 」

The car runs on the night road.
The blue Maserati dashes in the night town…!

◇ ◇ ◇

Right in the middle of the night town…
We met up at the entrance of the sex industry district.

Yukino has already been picked up by Margo-san on the white van at the station.
The white van's name has already changed to 『(Yuu) Maruko Advertisement company』
I approached the van with Sensei…with a face just arriving from school.
The door from the back was knocked and it opened.
Margo-san from the driver's seat and Nei-san on the passenger seat has returned to their usual clothes.
However…They're wearing a leather jacket of 『Kuromori』
That's their attire in this town I guess…
Katsuko-san is still wearing the race queen outfit.
And…Yukino
Y-Yukino's also a race queen?
Just like Katsuko-nee…There's 『GABIN』 written around the chest and a miniskirt that shows up her navel?!
It's not as attractive as Katsuko-san as expected but…
Just like a high school cheerleader, this is good on it's own…

「…D-Don't look」

Yukino hates my glance.

「What are you saying?! Hora, hora, take a look!」

Katsuko-nee rolls up Yukino's skirt…!

「…Hyaa!」

Thin pubic hair and a pink line…!
Yukino's going commando!
Right, speaking of which…
Yukino's panty is in the pocket of my pants!

「…please let me wear a panty」

Yukino requests Katsuko-nee

「You can't. A child like you is ten years too young to wear panties!」

As usual, Katsuko-nee says something unreasonable.

「Katsuko-san, take this」

Margo-san handed Katsuko-nee something.
That's…a mask sold on the festival.

「I-I…I'll take this girl!」

Katsuko-nee chose a pink haired cartoon character.

「Hey, which do you want?」

Katsuko-nee offers Yukino the remaining mask.

「What about Alien? We also have a monster!」
「…What are we going to do with this mask?」

Yukino asks in fright.

「What are you saying? You're going to parade in the town showing your ass of and yet you don't want to hide your face…?」
「…Eh?」

Yuzuki-sensei spoke to the surprised Yukino.

「Shirasaka-san…we'll have you show your embarrassing figure to the people in the town…!」

◇ ◇ ◇

In the end, Yukino chose a cat character mask.
Right now, she's holding a placard with trembling hands while hidden under the mask.
The letters on the placard are 『New product…GABIN!』
I seriously don't know what's the new product.
But since she's holding the placard up high, Yukino's naked ass is exposed.

「…Now, take care!」

A parade at the red light district.
The two race queen on the center…Yukino with her exposed ass and Katsuko-nee.

Yukino who's covered with a cat mask hesitantly walks while having the placard.
It must be unbearably embarrassing to walk with your ass exposed.
On Yukino's side is Katsuko-san hidden under the mask waving to the pedestrians…
She's making herself pleasant to everybody with a loud voice.

「New product! Please take a look!」

Margo-san and Nei-san wearing a black jacket are walking along with the two race queens as their guard.
Both of them are holding a metal baseball bat…
From time to time, they threaten a passerby or a clerk at the red light district…

「Hey hey, what's with that advertisement?」
「Is that really an advertisement? It looks strange though?」
「…What's GABIN?2」
「…Dunno?」

There's a lot of traffic in the red light district as it's Saturday night and the first day of the consecutive holidays.
Though men turn around to the abnormal advertising parade…the delinquents of the town when they saw the two with 『Kuromori』 in them.
They have learned it from experience that it would be dangerous if they get involved…

I'm running after them from the back…
I'm wearing a black mask with a character 『Yoshi』 on the forehead part.
I'm hiding my 『Beat Up stick』 under the hem of the jacket…
I'm keeping a watchful eye so I can move immediately when something unexpected happened…
Yuzuki-sensei doesn't participate the parade.
She's waiting by in the Maserati.

「Hey, that child holding the placard…isn't her ass exposed?」
「Oh, it's true, she's not wearing anything!」
「Hey hey, Are you serious?!」
「Is this an AV or something?」

「Let's take a look from behind!」

Men follow us one after another.

「…Hey hey, Nee-chan. What shop are you from?」

One drunken office worker talks to Yukino.
Nei-san holding a bat on cuts into the frightened Yukino.

「Hey hey, You can't speak to our dancer!」
「Go back if you don't want to get hurt…!」

Margo-san pokes the chest of the drunken man with the bat.

「W-what's with you!?」

The startled office worker told Margo-san.

「…Crime Organization 『Black Forest』」

The blonde onii-san from the nearby sex club rushes up and separates the office worker from Margo-san.

「Customer, it's better if you don't get yourself involved with these people. These people are seriously dangerous」
「…Eeeeh?」

Nei-san answered laughingly.

「That's right! We're the real deal…!」

We've already arrived at the deepest part of the red-light district.
The men who followed us exceeds 20 people…

「Well then, Yuki-chan's sex show's going to start!」

With Nei-san's words…Katsuko-nee pushed Yukino the wall of the building…!
Margo-san continues to watch the surroundings.

「Now…push your hands on the wall and show your pussy to everyone!」
「…Iyaaa!」

「…Do it! You toilet bitch!」

Trembling…Yukino hidden under the mask puts her hand to the wall and pushes up her ass high…

「Amazing…She's wet , look!」
「That's child's a high school student isn't she?!」
「Uwaa, it's dripping…isn't she soaking wet?!」

Yukino's wet!
She's aroused from parading with her ass exposed.

「Oh my, as expected, Yuki-chan's a lewd girl isn't she?!」
「Iyaaa…Don't look…don't look」
「Yuki-chan's a bad child, isn't she?…You sold yourself to two old men just earlier, didn't you…?!」

Nei-san attacks Yukino with words…!

「Eh…That child's that kind of child?」
「She's a prostitute?」
「How much, how much?!」

The men's voice pierces Yukino…!

「I'm not a prostitute!」

Katsuko-nee slaps Yukino's ass

「…Ouch!」

The white ass had a red hand-print on it…

「But, Yuki-chan…You just sold your body earlier, didn't you?!」
「…T-that's…I was forced!」
「You even accepted the money, didn't you?…How much did you get?」
「…That's」
「Answer!」

She was slapped again…!

「Ouch!…Please stop…!」
「Then say it. How much did you get?!」
「…80,000 yen」

The spectator had 「Oooh!」voices rising…!

「…What's the breakdown?」
「…Sex two times and one fellatio」
「The sex was a no-condom creampie wasn't it?」
「…That's right」
「What about the fellatio?」
「…He ejaculated in my mouth…and I drank all of it」
「What did you drink?」
「The customer's…semen…aaah, don't make me say it」

Love nectar is dripping from Yukino's genital.
No, it's not just love nectar.
My semen from a while ago too…!

「Oh my, it seems that you want it again…」

Katsuko-nee walked in front of me and…kneeled.

「Please thrust it in that child!」

Katsuko-nee pulls my zipper and exposed my penis.
…I
…I

「Okay…Rape-her! Rape-her! Rape-her!」[3]

Katsuko drives the spectating men!

「That's right, do it, rape her!」
「Fuck that girl up!」

The men are completely aroused…
I face Yukino's body…

「Wait…Yoshida-kun…I don't want to do it with these large number of people watching me…I don't want thiiisss!!!!」

I gripped Yukino's waist…!
My erect penis pushes into Yukino's slit!

「…hiiiiiiiiiiiii!!!」

Yukino's vagina…it wants men that it completely melted.
…Lewd!
…Lewd!
…Lewd bitch!!

「Shit…he's doing it raw…!」
「It's completely in until the root!」
「Even though she's such a young child…!」

I began my piston…
While feeling the hot glances of the men…!

---

1. Watashi ↩
2. He's the lord and savior of PC gaming ↩
3. O-ka-se! O-ka-se! O-ka-se! ↩

51. Carved seal of Shame

I'm violating while being exposed to the glances with carnal desires of twenty men.

「…Nooooooooo!!! I don't want this!!」

Yukino shouts but her genital is dripping wet.
She's gradually moving her own waist while being violated from the back…
…Lewd.
…A pleased bitch from being violated.
That's Shirasaka Yukino right now.

「Don't looook…don't looook…Nooooo…I'm being seeeeen…!!」

Yukino with her hands on the wall is looking up the world in between her crotch in reverse.
Yukino's looking at the connected genitals, the penis that goes in and out of her vagina.
And, the spectators with a vulgar face behind me that surrounds us…!
She who's having sex…being raped is seen…!
There's warm drops from Yukino's inside overflowing again…
The love nectar she's secreting is making a small puddle on the asphalt road surface…
Sweat is coming out of her whole body…
Yukino's body started convulsing occasionally…!

「…Ahaa…ahaaaaaa…Aaaaaaahn!!!!」

With the violent motion of whole body, and the rapid increase of heat…Yukino finally turned incoherent.
She's only panting…like a beast!

「…Aaaauuuu…Ahaaaaa…Uuuuuu…Aaaaaaaaaa!!」

「Amazing…she's being aroused from being seen!」
「What a huge pervert…A perverted female high school student!」
「She's going to cum…!!!」

The spectators drank their saliva…!

「The climax is near! Everyone clap your hands and cheer!」

Katsuko-san started the clapping herself and the men were agitated…!

Clap!…Clap!…Clap!…Clap!…!

「Okay…Cum inside!…Cum inside!…Cum inside!」[1]

The spectators also clapped their hands too!!!

「…Cum inside!…Cum inside!…Cum inside!…Cum inside!」

Yukino's inside tightens…her womb demands sperm…it's sucking my penis in…!

「Aaaaaah…it's strangee…I…doing this…aaaaaah…!!」
「…Cum inside!…Cum inside!…Cum inside!…Cum inside!…!」

I…I can't hold it anymore!!!

「I-I'm…cum, cumcumcumcumcumiiing!…Hyaaaaaaaaa!!!!!」

Yukino's body convulsed intensely…!!!

「…Flyflyflyflyfly…Pierce me! Pierce me!!!! Pierce Yukino with your hot stuffff!!!!!!!」

My hot liquid…pierces and exploded in the deepest part of Yukino!!!!!

「…Ooooooooh!!!!」

The spectators erupt!
Applause and cheers!
There's a person who whistled too!
There's a man who shouted 「Bravo」…!

「I-It's coming…Inside me…it's burning…it's melting…aaaah… delicious…it's so deliciouuuuuuuuusssss!!!!」

Yukino's vagina has completely learned the taste of a man's sperm
I pour in Yukino's womb until the last drop…

「Whoosh, Finish!!」

I pulled out my penis from Yukino along with Katsuko-nee's shout…!
When my penis came off, the white semen drips out…!
Yukino's thighs is completely syrupy with semen and love nectar…

「Hey hey…It's seriously a creampie!」
「Uwaa…It's completely open and dripping」
「Isn't the white stuff coming out one after another…?!」

Yukino's pussy is exposed to the indecent eyes of men

「Hey, this child costs 80,000 yen…?!」
「Let me do it too!」
「No, me first!」

Men who lost their cool are going to attack Yukino.

「…Okay, Yoshida-kun」

Margo-san handed me the 『Beat up Stic』
…I!
I hit the nearby vending machine with all my might!!!

…Bako!!

Making a dull sound, the center of the vending machine became dented!
The men quiets down instantly…!

「…Sorry but this child isn't for sale」

I clearly said to those people.
My dick's still exposed though

「In exchange, we'll give one another extra for everyone!」

Katsuko-nee spoke to the dumbfounded men

Katsuko-nee hits Yukino's ass

「Hey…You toilet girl! Show how you pee to everyone!」
「…?!」
「I'm telling you to stay like that and pee!」

Katsuko-nee hits Yukino's ass once again…!
The men's glance went to Yukino's crack once again…!

「Hey…Hurry up!」

…Before long.
Yukino's lower lips…has hot water gushing out of it.
The transparent pee draws an arc and washes the night asphalt…

「…Don't look…Don't look…don't looooooook…!!!!」

Contrary to Yukino's words…the men's eyes are glued to Yukino's urine…

◇ ◇ ◇

On the way back, Yukino's forced to walk using the placard she was holding as a substitute to her skirt.
With her genital exposed dripping with love nectar and semen…
Yukino paraded on the red-light district once again.

「By the way…What's with this 『GABIN』?」

Margo-san looks at the 『New Product…GABIN』 placard and asked Nei-san.

「Ask Katsun…Katsun's the one who made that and that clothes too!」
「Hmm. Katsuko-san, are you a fan of Jean Gabin?[2]」
「…Who's Jean Gabin?」
「This GABIN is not Jean Gabin?」
「Like I said…Who's Jean Gabin?」

Margo-san and Katsuko-san's conversation doesn't match.

Without having any problems on our way back…We have come

back at the entrance of the red-light district.
From the white van and blue Maserati…Yuzuki-sensei met up with us.

「…Well done. Katsuko and Nei, get in the Maserati and return to the mansion. Margo and Yoshida-kun, come with me and we'll send Shirasaka-san home…」
「Eeh, I want to be with Yo-chan!」
「…Katsuko and you have important jobs to do」
「Eh, eh…what?!」
「…I want you to make meals. Everyone's already hungey」

…Speaking of which
After eating pizza at lunch…I haven't eaten anything but the Ice Cream Margo-san bought and the bread Katsuko-san gave us.

「Okay, Katsuko will come back and cook a meal immediately!」

When she heard about making a meal, Katsuko-nee smiled…!

「Nei-sama, I ask you to please help me too…!」
「Geez…It can't be helped!」

The two of them got in the Maserati…

As soon as we entered the white van…Yukino started crying.
The shame and regret began to spout from the bottom of her heart…
Margo-san on the driver's seat…Sensei on the passenger seat.
In the wide compartment of the van…Yukino and me.
So awkward…
Yukino who's clothes still haven't changed…continues to cry on the seat…on her race queen outfit…

Hearing a creaking sound of the tire, the white van made a big turn.
Sensei and Margo-san already knows the position of Yukino's house.
Margo-san moved the steering wheel without any hesitation…
…But, huh?
Isn't this the park from a while ago?
On the unpopular road along the port…Margo-san stops the car on the shoulder…

「I think that it's fine already…There's no people turning around this area. Even if it's loud here, there's no one going to hear it」
「…It seems so」

…Eh, what do you mean?

Yuzuki-sensei and Margo-san opened the door and went outside…
Then, they turned to the back of the car and opened the door!

「Yoshida-kun…take a hold of her!」

With Margo-san's word…I throw myself at Yukino!

「…W-What?! What's going on?!!」

I somehow managed to suppress Yukino who's hating it and…
Margo-san jumps!
She pointed a stun-gun before Yukino's eyes!

「…Behave yourself! You don't want to be shocked electrically don't you? > 」

The stun gun sparks and crackles…!
Yukino…lost her fighting spirit from seeing the spark in front of her…

「Yoshida-kun take the steel pipe there
「…This one?

There's a steel pipe with around 120cm length lying down on the side trunk…
Both of the tips have a ring on each and it takes an appearance like a bone of dog food.

「Yoshida-kun…is there a rope hanging on the corner of the ceiling of the trunk on the door…just beside your head?

Oh, this one with the knob?

「There's the chain connected on the steel pipe…chain your feet. The end has a latch on it…fasten the other side of the pipe on the handle of the window over there」

I hang the steel pipe on the chain.
I dangled one side of the steel pipe horizontally on the trunk of the minivan.

「Push that pipe on her head…just a bit」
「…Like this?」
「Shirasaka-san, raise your hand…!」

…Yukino's frightened.

「Raise your hand!」

With Margo-san pressuring her spirit…Yukino raised her hand.
Then…Margo-san took out handcuffs and put Yukino's right wrist in.
The other side of the handcuffs is placed on the ring of the pipe…

「…Eh?!」
「Don't move!」

Her left wrist was done after…Yukino's tied to the steel pipe with handcuffs…!

「We got another one here」

Margo-san took out another steel pipe.
Both her ankle was tied up with a handcuff.
Yukino had two steel pipes…opening her arms and legs wide, she's crucified.

「…What are you going to do with me?」

Yuzuki-sensei outside the car answered the trembling Yukino.

「Shiraska-san…it seems that you tried to sell your body to Endou-kun, didn't you?」

Yukino holds her breath suddenly…!

「…I didn't intend to sell my body」
「You can't lie…You promised that you'd have sex with him in exchange for the ring, didn't you? Those kind of things should be

said on compensated dating…!」
「No! This ring is…!」
「…That ring costs 19,800 didn't it? You're selling yourself very cheap. Your prostitute price should be 30,000 yen on intravaginal ejaculation and fellatio for 20,000 yen. It would be troublesome if you sell yourself cheaply…!」

Sensei smiles.

「But well…Shirasaka-san's a lewd person so when she's left alone, I think she'll start to sell herself individually without permission. It can't be helped, you're a sex loving bitch after all, you're a woman who can't rest unless she's raped everyday…!
「I am not that kind of woman!」
「Shirasaka-san…do you know how many times you have sex everyday? Even a popular girl on a soapland is not working everyday. You're definitely the number one high school girl prostitute with when it comes to dealing with numbers!」
「I'm not a prostitute…!」

She's having a half crying face…But, Yukino's glaring at Sensei with strong eyes.

「I wonder how long can you keep being stubborn. Anyway, we can't have you sell your own body without permission…!」

Sensei winks at Margo-san

「Yoshida-kun, take this」

Margo-san handed me something…that is
…A safety razor and shaving cream!!!

「Yoshida-kun…sorry to ask you but can you remove all the hair of Shiraska-san down there?…!」

Yukino who's still on her race queen outfit…
She's not wearing anything under her skirt.
I dive under the steel pipe and turn into the front of Yukino's body.

「Shaving the hair…that's…!」

Yukino with a horrified face…shakes!

「Oh my, all women in Greece have their pubic hair shaved you know. Have you ever heard about Aphrodite3 of Cnidus」

Sensei…enough with the trivia.
I roll up Yukino's skirt…
The stinking smell of sex…Yukino's pussy have discharged love nectar and sperm has become awful.
Thin pubic hair on her crack.
This will be gone soon…

「Let's take a souvenir picture before you shave it…!」

Margo-san took photos of Yukino tied up and opening her legs wide apart.
Yukino twists her body in hate…!
But her body's fixed with handcuffs and she can't do anything…!
There's only the clanking noise of the chain in the car…!

「Okay…Yoshida-kun,, you can do it now」
「…Stop it…Yoshida-kun…don't do it…!」

Ignoring Yukino's plea…I released the shaving cream to Yukino's pubic hair.
I entangled Yukino's pubic hair with my fingers…
I applied the safety razor on Yukino's skin!

「…Hiiii!」

Zozozo…Shave!
The soft black grass is harvested and the earth of fair soft white skin spreads…!

「…How…can you do this…!」

Is it very humiliating to have your pubic hair shaved by me?…
Yukino's eyes are dropping tears like rain.
Sweat began to ooze out of her whole body again…
Beads of sweat spill out of her forehead…
Love nectar began to drip out of her slit again…

Yukino…is aroused from the humiliation!

Before long…Yukino's pubic region has become slippery.
It's like a young child's…

「…This is cruel」

Yukino muttered.

「Shirasaka-san…where's your thanks to Yoshida-kun?」

With Sensei's words…Yukino looked down the other way and told me.

「…Thank you very much」

Sensei confirms the shave with her finger…

「It'll take at least a month until it grows to what it was before…
Shirasaka-san, what would you do? You promised Endou-kun to have sex with him by May 5 didn't you? If Endou-kun sees your pubic hair shaved, how would you explain it…?」

Sensei laughs…
Yukino cried quietly

「At most…When Shirasaka-san becomes a lascivious, it might not be good to shave your hair. After all, your sexual desire is abysmal. You might pretend that you're hairless by nature and still sell yourself to Endou with a calm face…!」

Yuzuki-sensei said that then…she took out some triangular plastic case with a vivid green liquid in it.

「…Do you know what this is?」

The demon smiles…

「You see…it's an easy to use tattoo kit」

Tatoo…That tattoo!?

「We'll be putting in a tatoo on Shirasaka-san's body so you won't

make a mischief selfishly!」

Yukino's distorted in fear!

「…N-No!」

Yukino rages…the steel pipes, chain and handcuffs make a clanking noise!!!

「Don't worry…this is a natural material colorant, so if done properly, this can disappear. This is the type that doesn't leave a mark on your skin. Have you ever heard about Henna tattoo?」

Sensei approaches Yukino…

「Normal henna tattoo takes one to two weeks to disappear naturally. This is a pigment specially made for me so it won't disappear for your entire life unless you use the special chemical…!」

Yukino trembles…!
Her molar's making a clattering sound!!

「It's a stencil plate that's been made for your sake」

Saying that, Sensei took out a pattern paper…It has 『Yoshida』 written on it

「Don't move…if the pattern slips off, it'll become disgraceful for the rest of your life…!」

Yuzuki-sensei put the 『Yoshida』 pattern paper on the mound of Venus, the part where it was shaved.
Then, she took off the lid of the plastic case and drip down the paste liquid on the paper pattern…!

「…N-No…This is…cruel…too cruel…!」

Yukino can do nothing but cry.

「I use this tattoo for obstinate girls all the time…this emerald green color is so dense that you can't even hide it even if your pubic

hair grows. You originally don't have a lot of hair though…!」

Sensei confirms the state of the tattoo…

「Your skin feels tingling hot doesn't it?…The liquid of the tattoo penetrates your skin…it'll harden very well…!」

Yukino's pubic region…has a 『Yoshida』 engraved on it…

「Let's have Shirasaka-san stay still until it completely permeates… Margo, start the car. We're heading to Shirasaka-san's house…!」

◇ ◇ ◇

The car run in the night town for approximately 30 minutes.
It's dark inside the car…the streetlights of the town lights up the body of Yukino that's tied up in the steel pipe…
Her womanly body line appear in the light then disappears.
Yukino's no longer crying…
She's just looking at the night sky through the window quietly…
I was staring at Yukino's figure all this time.

As expected…I think Yukino's a beauty.
I think she's cute.
I want this body.

「…We've arrived」

…The car stops

「That big house over there is Shirasaka-san's house」

The house Sensei points at…is certainly big. It's three stories.
If I recall, Yukino's father is an advertising agency director and her mother is a cooking adviser.
There's lights up on her house…
Her mother and her little sister, Maika seems to be home…

「It's already enough isn't it…please let me go」

Yukino muttered in a hoarse voice.

「Yoshida-kun…tear off the paper pattern from Shirasaka-san…do it slowly」
「Okay」

I peel off the paper pattern that's placed on Yukino's abdominal region.
On top of her genital…is a vivid emerald green 『Yoshida』 engraved.
Today, Endou gave Yukino a gold ring as a present.
Then Yukino…had a 『Yoshida』 marking on her pubic region…

「Shirasaka-san, wear this large panties from now on. A small panty would make those characters visible…!」

Sensei laughed loudly.

「It was the right choice to send Katsuko and Nei back…if those children saw this…」
「『I also want to have a Yoshida-kun tattoo』 They'll spin around in delight…!」

MArgo-san said calmly.
Un…right, those two.
I imagine the 『Yoshida』 tattoo on Katsuko-nee and Nei-san's abdominal region.
That's unbearably attractive on it's own.

「With this, Shirasaka-san can't have sex without permission. There's Yoshida-kun's name on top of her genital after all. Any man would lose their want to have sex. Endou-kun might commit suicide if he sees this…4」

With this…Yukino can no longer have sex with Endou
This body is mine.

「…I'll never forgive. I'll curse all of you throughout my life…!」

Yukino looks at the letters on her own body and mutters in a low voice.

「Go on…That's not the first time that has been said to me. And this will not be the last…!」

Sensei answered with a cool face.

「If your rebellious manner is changed, I'll be removing the tattoo…but it's no good right now. How about trying to become a bit modest and reflect on yourself?」
「I don't have anything to reflect on!」
「You're really stubborn aren't you?…Now then, how about we conclude our day now? Shirasaka-san, do you have your stamp card?」
「…It's in the house」
「Right… Of course, you can't bring it on your date with Endou-kun. I thought of it so I prepared a new one. It's already stamped till there's 72 remaining」

Sensei presents the card…but Yukino bound5 can't accept it.
Sensei ignored it and looked the other way.

「Oh my, it can't be helped…Yoshida-kun, how about you stamp it in Shirasaka-san's place?」
「…Got it」

The stamp was handed to me.

「Two intravaginal ejaculation in the park and one semen drinking. This is all from prostitution so you put three 『Sell』 stamps…also, one time from Yoshida-kun earlier」

The remaining stamps are…68!

「…There's still a lot remaining…Shirasaka-san, what would you do?」
「…I don't know…I don't care about anything already…!」

Yukino who had tattoo carved into her seems to gave despaired a bit.

「Is that so…You don't care about it anymore…!」

Sensei looks at me…

「Yoshida-kun…you can still have sex at least one more time don't you?」

Yukino had an astonished expression…!
Yukino's womb has accepted three ejaculations inside already.
The fourth ejaculation…
For Yukino…it means 『Definite pregnancy』…!

「…No…No more…!」

The frightened Yukino told Sensei…

「Shiraska-san, didn't you tell Endou-kun in the park earlier? 『I want at least four times sex for tonight』…! You wanted to get pregnant by all means don't you? I'll give it to you…get pregnant with Yoshida-kun's child…!」

…I
…I

「…Yoshida-kun, please…stop…!」

I lowered my pants and exposed my penis.
I approached Yukino who's legs are wide open!

「…Yoshida-kun, you see, this is the road Shirasaka-san walks when she goes to the station. This is the place where Shirasaka-san uses to go to school and goes home everyday…」

I'll violate Yukino in that kind of place!

「Shirasaka-san…you're going to remember this every day you're walking at this road…you got raped here and became pregnant…!」

Yukino rages…!

「…Nooo…I don't want that…You can't do that…!」

My penis touches the entrance of Yukino's vagina…

「Shirasaka-san, you're raising a loud voice selfishly…do you want everyone in the vicinity watch you having sex? If you want then we can call your mother and your little sister to…!」

Yukino holds her breath
The trembling of her body stopped…

「If you want Yoshida-kun to violate you gently then say it yourself…Yoshida-kun might shout and gather spectators you know…!」

Yukino's eyes looked at me.

「…Please violate me gently」

I…!
I entered Yukino…!
I'll embrace the body with a 『Yoshida』 name on it…

「…Ah…Ah…Aaah…Aaaah…」

Yukino muffles her own voice and pants small…
Every time I pierce her, the suspension of the car sinks in.
My second time having sex with Yukino in a car

「…Iyaan…aaahn…Good…it's good…」

I rolled up Yukino's bustier…
I licked her breasts…
I sucked her nipples…
The sixteen year old tight body.
No matter how many times I embrace it…I think it's a good body.

「…Aaaaahn…this is no good…I…I'm feeling good…」

Yukino's body is being developed rapidly…
No matter how much her mind hated it…her body cannot conceal the joy anymore.
After I have ejaculated in it a lot of times…
I won't easily ejaculate.

「…Aaaah…Aaaaah…it feels…goooood…!!!」

After 20 minutes…I've violated Yukino plenty.
I'm rubbing against every point of Yukino's inside…
From the entrance, to her uterus…I'm brushing her all over with my

glans…
Yukino's womb tightens really hard…and reached her third ejaculation…!
…Then, I finally.

「…Cumming…I'm cumming…Yukino, cumming!!!」

Even though it's not a lot…I sent my scorching semen to her uterus…!

「…Aaaah, it's hot…it's coming inside me agaiiiin…!」

Yukino's spilling tears of joy…!

「…Haa…haa…haa…haa…haa…haa…haa」

Soaked in sweat…the me who lost power leaned on Yukino's breasts…

「…What should I do…What should I do…what have become of me…!」

Yukino's small voice continues muttering.

「Congratulations Shirasaka-san…you're definitely getting pregnant!」

Yuzuki-sensei spoke to Yukino coldly…

「…Medicine…please give me the medicine」

Yukino begged for Sensei's mercy while still breathing roughly.

「Medicine…which one?」
「The emergency contraceptive…please give me the emergency contraceptive!」
「…I didn't bring any!」

Yukino's eyes of despair!!

「Don't worry. That medicine can prevent pregnancy for within 24 hours after you were raped. If you become a good girl…then I'll

give it to you at school tomorrow. Let's see…go to the principal's office at 11:00 Okay?」
「…Yes, I understand」

Yukino's tears spill like rain again…

「Right, I have to pay you for the sex just now…!」

I talked to the laughing teacher.

「No…I'll pay the current share…」
「Is that so…then go on」

I took out 30,000 yen from the envelope I got from Yuzuki-sensei before.
Just like how Katsuko-san did it in the public restroom, I crumpled it to a ball and threw it at Yukino's feet.

Yukino got pregnant with my child for 30,000 yen…!!!!

---

1. Nakadase! Nakadase! Nakadase! ↩
2. https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Jean_Gabin ↩
3. Venus ↩
4. Nah, He'll chase Yoshida and try to beat him up again ↩
5. Use that item to get Yukino Unbound. This is a Hoopa reference ↩

52. The place each has to return to.

「Yoshida-kun, here you go…all of the handcuffs have the same key」

I took the key to the handcuffs from Margo-san.
I took off the handcuffs fixed on both hands and feet of Yukino one by one.
The scratch formed on her wrist…is painful to look at.
Yukino who had her body released breathed deeply.
Then, she cried again.
Yukino's body and mind are worn out.

「Hurry up and change…do you intend to go home looking like that?」

She can't go home on a race queen outfit as one might expect

「Here's your clothes」

Margo-san takes out Yukino's white dress.
Yukino takes off the bustier while crying inside the van.
She didn't put a bra under her bustier.
Yukino who's naked on the upper body…she's only wearing a very short miniskirt right now.
The panty she was wearing when she went out of her house…is inside my pocket.
Though, Yukino's thinking that it was taken by the 『Customer』 from the public restroom in the park

「…This kind of thing!」

Yukino threw out the bustier on the wall of the van with all of her strength.
I picked up the bra from Yukino's clothes.
It's an underwear with a cute design of having a ribbon in the chest part.
Yukino chose this for Endou's sake…

「…Don't touch it」

Yukino spoke to me with cold eyes.

「I paid 30,000 yen so I'll take this as a bonus」

I glared back at Yukino
Yukino ignores me and wore her dress while naked on the upper body.
She took off the miniskirt.

「Yoshida-kun can take everything, not just the underwear…!」

Sensei laughingly said.

「As a commemoration for tonight…show it to your children. Shirasaka-san, you have tell your child 『When your mama was wearing this, I was raped by your papa and you were made』…!」

Yukino finished lacing her sandals while trembling.
She must bve thinking that she'd be forced to do something humiliating if she tried to retort.
She silently endured Yuzuki-sensei's abusive language…!

「…I'll go back」

Yukino who finished her preparations looked at Sensei

「Margo…Open the door」

Margo-san goes out of the driver's seat and opened the sliding door from outside the van.
It seems that it's you can't open it from the inside except from the driver's seat.

「Shirasaka-san…later then. Let's meet at school」

Yukino steps out of the car silently

「…What about your response?」

Yukino slowly turned around to Sensei…and her eyes is filled with hatred!

「You're going to do what you want with me anyway!」

At that moment, Margo-san slapped Yukino's cheeks!

「…Hii!」

Yukino's frightened!

「…How about you try to understand what you are in now?」

Margo-san holds Yukino's chin and raised it…!

「Margo…back off」
「But, Minaho…!」
「Just do it…!」

Margo-san separates from Yukino

「If you got a complaint then go to the police right now. I think they'll wash your vagina at the hospital. I wonder if they'll give you emergency contraceptive too? In exchange…it will be known by the whole society that you were raped, but you don't mind it do you…?!」

Sensei's laughing…

「We'll be releasing all of your photos and sex videos on the internet. We'll also be putting your personal information as a set… Not just who you are and where you live but the contact addresses of your parents and family, and even your e-mail address!」
「…Oni, devil!」
「That's right…I'm a devil. I'm living in the world of darkness…!」

Yukino's frightened from Sensei's composure.

「Shirasaka-san…take good care of your body for tonight. It's not yours alone anymore」

Blood disappeared from Yukino's face

「…How does it feel to have a child in your womb?」

Yukino put her hand on her waist silently…
The place where the tattoo 『Yoshida』 was engraved.
The abdomenal region…the position of her womb.
That's where my sperm is clogged in.
It's going to combine with Yukino's ovum…!

「…Please. The medicine…give me a contraceptive」
「It's 8:30 now…the emergency contraceptive will take effect in less than 24 hours.」 Take a warm bath today and sleep well…then try to think what's going to happen to you from now on」

Yukino's enduring it…but still, she's glaring at Sensei.

「…Goodbye, Shirasaka-san. Let's see each other tomorrow.」

Yukino begins to walk to her house while enduring her tears…
I see off the small back…
The silver moon shines in the sky…

◇ ◇ ◇

We returned to Yuzuki-sensei's house by 9:15.
As appointed…Katsuko-nee and Nei-san cooked dinner and waited for us.
The meal was curry and salad.

「Sorry, I cut corners for today and made a simple curry. Next time I'll cook a real indian curry…」

Katsuko-nee apologizes but…I don't know what's been omitted.
It looks an excellent and very delicious curry.
…By the way, where's the rice?

「This is a nan[1, Flatbread in Central and South Asian Cuisine]」
「…Nan?」
「Nan's easy isn't it?…You can make it without fermenting」

…In Katsuko-nee's world, curry doesn't go with rice.
Well…this is something that looks like bread too.

「Yoshida-kun, is this your first time seeing a Nan?」
「Yes」

「You see, this is best eaten when you tear it off then put it on the curry!」

Nei-san showed an example to me

「Nan isn't delicious when it's cold so you have to eat this while it's warm!」
「Okay…itadakimasu[1]」

I placed the Nan on the curry and…Un, it's springy and delicious. Well, I'm quite hungry…

「Katsun doesn't make anything but chicken curry!」
「I also make green spinach curry!」
「Not that, curry is also delicious with seafood as ingredients!」
「Seafood is heresy on curry!」
「That's not true! Don't you think, Yo-chan?!」
「…Haa」

Katsuko-san looks at me[2]

「…If you want then I can make you any kind of curry!」
「That's right, what kind of curry do you want?!」

…What kind of curry? Even if you ask me that.

「Uhm…I haven't eaten anything but the lunch curry and beef bowl in the school canteen」
「…Why, isn't that just National staple food?!」
「Your mother's not making curry at your house?」

Nei-san and Katsuko-nee looks at me with a surprised face…

「Ah…My mother doesn't cook at all」
「Eh…Then…How does Yo-chan eat at his house?
「Both of my father and mother eat out all the time」
「They don't eat meals at house?」
「Yes, both of them seems to be very always busy…」
「What about New Year or Sundays…?」
「My mother own a shop so Sunday doesn't matter to her. I occasionally go to a family restaurant with my father. On New Years, Mother travels abroad with the regular customers of the shop

without fail…so I'm always with my father」
「…Yo-chan's father can't cook too?」
「Yes」
「…My」
「That's why…truth to be told, I'm the only one in the family eating in the house… My grandmother on my father's side has always been making it when I was a child but…she died when I was in my first grade at elementary school…」
「Eh, eh, eh?! Then what happened since then?!」
「Mother puts in money on the dining table when I was in second grade…buy something by your own…so my main is the frozen food from the supermarket. But there's two or three days where my parents don't come home so I try not to spend my money as much as possible. Also, my father's emergency provisions is a box of instant noodles…」
「That's what you always eat?」
「No, I was in a dorm for my three years in junior high…but, it's an all boys dormitory, and the meals aren't delicious. There's only ten kinds of repertoire meals. The ten dishes comes out in turns… Oh right, it's definitely a curry rice at Saturday night. I don't know why but it seems that it's a school tradition」

…Huh?
…Why is Nei-san and Katsuko-nee at loss?

「…Okay, Onee-san will go and you and『Try all the delicious foods at restaurants around the country』!」
「Ah, Katsun, I'll go too!」

…Eh, why?
Did I say anything strange?

「Guys…It's fine to visit all shops but, shouldn't you teach Yoshida-kun the 『Taste of home』?」

Margo-san told the two while drinking wine

「…Certainly! It seems that the time for Katsuko to show her skill in cooking has come…Mufufu!」

Ah…Katsuko-san had a strange switch flipped inside her…

「I'll show my secret recipe book later so just tell me if you want to eat anything you want! Onee-san will make anything that you want to eat!」

Katsuko-nee says happily as she jumps up and down…!

「…Katsuko. I don't think that Yoshida-kun will have an idea which is delicious even if you show him the recipe and the photo now. Make him eat the dish you want him to eat for a while. I think that's better」

Sensei advises Katsuko-nee

「Certainly, Ojou-sama!」

Katsuko-nee bowed to Sensei.

「Hey hey, Katsun…!」
「…What?」
「…You see, could you teach me your cooking?!」
「My teaching is Spartan method!」
「It's fine to be severe…I also want to learn how to cooking!」

…Nei-san again.
I remembered my family, and got startled.
Right…I have to come back to the house soon.
I might get a contact from my MIA father…

「…Sensei, Uhm」

I called out to Sensei.

「…What?」

Sensei looked at me with her usual cool-headed eyes.

「I…I think that I have to come home at least once…!」

I told Sensei

「…You can't」

Eh, why?

「Yoshida-kun…you're still thinking that 『Right now, if I wake up, it might be all a dream』 from the bottom of your heart?」

…That's

「『There's no way this is happening to me』…」

Sensei looks straight at me…

「Yes…I do」

That's right…I have companions.
I have Katsuko-nee, Nei-san, Margo-san…and a pet Misuzu.
I had sex with Yukino who's an existence I longed for a lot of times.
That kind of things…can never happen to me.

「Right now, in this place if I say 『I'm sorry, everything's a lie. Everyone's fooling you』…you're going to accept it calmly, don't you…!」

Un…Im sure I will
Even if this is all a fake…I'll accept it.
Even if everyone's lying to me…even if I'm betrayed…
I think I can forgive them.

「But…sadly, this is reality. You can no longer escape. I don't intend to let you go either」
「…Yes」
「Accept reality…Yoshida-kun」

…Sensei said.

「…It's fine to become happier」

The meaning of those words…
The me right now can't understand.

「Anyway…stay in this mansion for a while. Okay?」

Saying that, Yuzuki-sensei went out of the dining room.

Margo-san approached me.

「…Yoshida-kun, did you notice it?」
「…What?」
「We talked to you about never leaving Nei alone?」
「…I do remember it」
「We have someone to be with her to monitor her…especially Minaho pays attention to her state with extreme caution」

…Right
Even at the park tonight, Sensei apeared when Nei-san became alone.
Sensei must've been watching our state from a slightly remote place all this time.

「Then…Yoshida-kun. Minaho's worried about you the same」

…Eh?

「There's always someone with you all the time in this past few days」

Speaking of which…!!!

「Right now, you are very unstable…even more than Nei」

…Me?

「I think that Minaho's considering that it's dangerous to let you come home and be alone…」

◇　◇　◇

「Use this room…this is your room from now on!」

I was guided to a room 6 tatami room by Katsuko-nee.
It's a simple room with a bed and a small desk…

「There's also shower and toilet along with the room. It's on that door」
「…Oka」
「…Let's sleep together?」

Katsuko-nee says that but…
Today, I'm tired from having too much sex

「I'll sleep alone tonight」
「Un…please let me embrace you until morning!」

Katsuko-nee said that and kissed my lips.

「Oh right, the photos until now are printed…the album's on the desk there」

There's a white album put on the desk…

「Let's print photos of your sex with me tonight…it's fine isn't it?!」
「…Okay, got it」

Katsuko-nee embraces me…

「I love you…good night!」

Katsuko-nee went out of the room with a smile.
Then…I'm alone.

I sat on the desk and opened the album…
Yukino's first rape to the photos in the park.
There's also photos of Misuzu's loss of virginity…

This…I did all of this.

I'm surprised once again on what I did…and shivered.

What's going to happen from now on…me?
What will happen to me!

Suddenly…my phone rang
Looking at the caller…it was MIsuzu.

『…Hello, is this Danna-sama? It's me, Misuzu!』
「…Ah, un」
『Uhm…That, Danna-sama』
「…What's wrong?」

『Misuzu…wants to pee…is that okay?』

…Nnnnn?
…Naze? Howai?!3

『Misuzu's Danna-sama's pet…I can't pee unless I have Danna-sama's permission…!』

…Oh right.
…Nagisa-san said that Misusu's doing 『Pee Training』
That means…I have to succeed in training?!

『I'm sorry…Misuzu's about to leak!』
「…Hurry up and pee…it's bad for your body!!!!」
『Yes…I got permission, Thank you very much!』

Then…from the other side of the phone…
I can hear the sound of water sprinkling

『…It's coming out…Misuzu's peeing right now…Danna-samaaa…!』

Misuzu's calling from the restroom?

『It's coming out…the stink spills a lot…Danna-samaa…!』

This…Misuzu will do this every time she's going to pee…
Un…This is no good if I don't do this.

『Haa, haa…I let out everything』

I can hear a sound of flushing from the other side of the phone…

『Thank you very much, Danna-sama!』
「Misuzu…try not to endure much from now on. If you want to pee then contact me immediately…okay?」

It would be a problem if she gets cystitis.

『Okay!…Misuzu's happy to be loved by Danna-sama…!』

Misuzu…

It's really hard to keep a pet…

『Today, after I was examined, the doctor told me…』
「…Un, what is it?」
『The hymen was just torn, if you don't have sex after a while, it'll get clogged again』
「…That's right」
『That's why…Danna-sama, please have sex with Misuzu again tomorrow. So that the membrane won't block it. I've already taken my pill today so please ejaculate a lot. I'll do my very best…!』
「That's…don't force yourself」
『I'm not forcing myself』

Misuzu…paused for a moment then spoke

『I'm worried』
「…What are you worried about?」
『Can I be this happy? I think』

…Eh?
…Even though she's a pet of a man like me?
…Misuzu?

『…Please…Danna-sama Please be Misuzu's owner for always…!』

Misuzu's voice is serious.

『Please don't throw Misuzu away…』

…I

「I get it…I promise to take care of you. Misuzu will always be my pet.」
『…Danna-sama!』
「I'll never let you go」

I promised.
It might be called an oath…
I'll shoulder her life.
I can longer run away.

『I love you…Danna-sama!』

「Me too…Misuzu's important to me… 」
『Can Misuzu have Danna-sama in her dreams tonight?』
「…Yeah 」
『See you tomorrow…I'm looking forward to be embraced by Danna-sama. Good night…!』
「Yeah…I look forward to it too. Good night, Misuzu 」
『I love you…I love you…I love you…!』

Then, she hung up the phone.

Alone in the room…Yukino's panting face is reflected on the album on the desk…

---

1. I don't think there's a need to explain this one ↩
2. Author really keeps shifting from Katsuko-san to Katsuko-nee ↩
3. Why, Why?! ↩

★ April 29 Sunday (Showa day)

53. City of Flower

「Good Morning…It's already morning! Wake up!」

Katsuko-nee's voice wakes me up…
She's on her usual maid dress but…she's using a usual household apron.

「What time is it…?」

It's somehow dark outside the window…

「It's 5 o'clock!」
「…Why 5 o'clock?」
「Because…it can't be helped」

Katsuko-nee smiled

「Flower market is early in the morning!」

…Flower market?

「The Yakuza is also involved when Nagisa goes to the market… isn't it worrying?」

…Right
Nagisa is being threatened by the Yakuza running a flower shop as a side business.
You tell me that we're going to meet the Yakuza at the flower market?…

「Well…I am」
「Margo-sama said that she wants to confirm the faces of the other party…」

I see, then it would be dangerous if we don't go…

「The selling at the market starts at 7 in the morning so we have to arrive sooner」
「Got it」

I rubbed my sleepy eyes and got up

「…Nfufu!」

Katsuko-nee kissed my lips…!

「Look…you're awake now, aren't you?」

No…something else woke up.
Katsuko-nee looked between my crotch…

「We don't have much time this morning…rather than that, try to save up a bit. You'll ejaculate a lot for today…!

Katsuko-nee grins…
She's entirely different from yesterday morning.
The Katsuko-nee until now forcibly grabs and sucks my penis…
What's with this composure…?!
Katsuko-nee who's going to charge lewdly at you when you show a chance…is really stable.

「I'll look forward to the lewd stuffs later!…Well, breakfast's ready!」

Un…If Katsuko-nee says that then I'm sure she will

「I brought your change of clothes!」
「…Change?」
「It's golden week today! It's strange to be on your uniform isn't it? Especially on a flower market…!」

…Certainly.
If I wear my school uniform, the Yakuza would know which school I go…

「With that said, try wearing this!」

The wagon Katsuko-san brought from the corridor is…a patch for work.
A blue and white vertical stripes work clothes.
On the back, there's a 『Schwarz Wald』 written on it.

「…What's this?」
「Un. The name of Nagisa's shop. If you wear that, they can't see you as anything but a part-time worker on Nagisa's shop, don't you think?

Katsuko-nee smiles.

「I see…but isn't this a bit loose?
「That's…I don't know the size well. I don't get men that much…
「Speaking of which…the disguise from the park last night, that was a loose hip-hop stye…
「That's right…I thought that it would be safer it was bigger… Tell me your size later…Ah, don't I'll be measuring it. With a tape measure」
「…Got it」

Un…It would be troublesome if it's always loose.
Or rather, Hip-hop is also good…

「Also, I washed your underwear too!」

Saying that…Katsuko-nee took out a shirt and underwear which are folded neatly.
It was the underwear I wore on the day I violated Yukino for the first time.
I was provided with a new one on the next day. That was perhaps something bought from the convenience store.
It was the same yesterday morning…

「…What's wrong?

Katsuko-san looks at me in wonder as I stare at the folded underwear.

「No…I…it's been a while for my clothes to be this folded this neatly after being washed」
「…How long was your previous one?」
「When I was living with my grandmother…it's around nine years」

Un…I was turning the washing machine by myself when I was on

my second grade already.
Folding each and every one of them is troublesome so I always just throw them in the cardboard box…

「Your mother's not washing your clothes?」
「Yeah…Even my mother's clothes are all being sent to the laundry shops」
「…Her underwear too?」
「Yes. My mother has said that her underwear has a lace in it so it can't be washed in the home laundry」
「It should just be handwashed…」
「No…I don't know how it is」
「How about your father's clothes?」
「My father washes his own shirts. His underwear has always been washed together with my underwear but…when I entered the dorm, I think he washed it himself」
「…Why?」
「No, even if you ask me…I don't understand anything other than our house. Anyway, that's the rule in our house…!」
「…What about cleaning?」
「Cleaning…once or twice a year, my mother brings cleaning experts to clean things up…」
「…How do they clean it?」
「Let's see. My mother directs those people and things in the house are just thrown away」
「…Thrown away?」
「Yes, My father and I have the rule of 『Have one cardboard box and have anything you want left in there』…Those that aren't in there are all disposed」
「…Only one cardboard box?」
「That's right…It's the same box I used since I was in second grade」
「Won't the important stuff be able to enter that box?」
「Because…I don't have anything much」

Right…everything always fitted into the cardboard box.

「Eh…You don't have any books or manga or games?」
「Ah, we can't have those in or house…I was told that it was a 『Instruction policy』」

「…You don't want it?」
「Because, I can't even buy this even if I want it… My mother will just throw away anything that she doesn't like. Even my notebook at school, once I left it alone, it'll be thrown away immediately. When I was in elementary, the manga I brought from my friend was thrown away so I can never bring anything on my house anymore」
「…Hee」
「Yes」
「…On top of that, they'll call the cleaners and throw away anything on your house?」
「Well, the cleaners come twice a year」
「Then what?…After the cleaners have done their work, the members of that house only have one cardboard box left?!」
「There's no way that could be. My mother never throws her stuff away」
「…What did you say?」
「Our house has six rooms but three of those rooms are for my mother's clothes」
「…Three rooms?」
「Yes. My mother's a shopaholic…Anyway, she got a hobby of buying clothes and bags」
「…She's just gathering her own stuff and throws away you and your father's stuff?」
「That's right」
「…What about the remaining three rooms?」
「The living room and my father's bedroom and…」
「…Your room?」
「No. It's my mother's bedroom」
「…Where's your room?」
「There's none…look, I was in a dorm on my junior years」
「…But, you're returning home during the summer vacation at your school right?」
「When I returned to the house during my summer vacation in my first year at middle school, I already don't have anything. Everything was thrown away. That's why, I lived in the sofa at the living room for one month. I was told to 『don't come back』 at my second and third year in middle school so I was always at the dormitory. Even at summer vacation or New Years…!」
「…Why? You don't want to return?」
「Because I've been told to 『not come back』 …it's tight in the

dorm but they provide you meals」
「…But, your high school began last month」
「Yes I've been sleeping in the sofa at the living room…
「But…if I recall…the rooms should be empty in your house now isn't it…?」

That's right…My mother had divorced father this spring vacation and went out of the house.
Before I came back from the dorm middle school…
Without leaving any words.
My father disappeared at the day of the entrance ceremony in high school. He left one memo in the company.
As expected, there's no message left to me.
I became alone at the same time I entered high school…

「…Katsuko-nee knows about my house, don't you?」
「…Ojou-sama showed her investigations…you're anxious about your father aren't you?」
「Well, I think he's fine somewhere」

Right, I wish.
But my father's timid.

「Won't the rooms be open if your mother has left the house? You can even borrow your father's bed too…」
「That's…My mother left all the luggage as it is」
「…All of the three rooms?」
「With her bedroom, four rooms」

Katsuko-nee was at loss for words…

「Seriously, mother should've brought her stuff when she divorced and left the house…but, she'll probably get angry if I move it up without permission. Or rather, I never went inside my mother's room since childhood」
「…Never?」
「Yes I was told 『Don't enter』 I haven't entered my father's room without permission too」
「Then…this whole month」
「Yes…It can't be helped, I've been on the living room this whole time」

Katsuko-nee's eyes became a dot.

「Hee…Is that so? That's hard…!」

Huh…My house was strange as expected?
Un…Perhaps it's strange.
But…I don't know any house other than mine.
Katsuko-nee's face turned grim instantly…

「…Hey…how many pairs of shoes do you have right now?」
「Err…my usual sneakers, a formal leather shoes, and the indoor shoes at school, three pairs.」
「You don't need to count the slippers at school!」
「Okay…Then it's two」
「…With the numbers of your shoes, that means that you don't have any clothes at all…?」
「Yes…Basically, I spent my middle school in jersey. Going to shop on the neighborhood, it's the same appearance. But, I have a single clean shirt if ever something happens」
「…What kind it is?」
「What kind…It's a shirt, so isn't that obvious that it's white…!」

K-Katsuko-nee?」
Why are you trembling…?

「Enough…Onee-san will buy you clothes later. I'll buy lots and lots」
「That's…I don't need it!」

Katsuko-nee embraced me tightly…!

「You don't need to force yourself to stuff it all in one cardboard box…become even happier! I'll make you happy…Okay?!」

Katuko-nee…why are you crying?

「Stay here forever…No, live here. Together with Onee-san…」

Katsuko-nee says that but…

「Please…don't spoil me… Also, that's my house.[1, House/Home/Family are all written as "家 -Ke" I will be writting House whenever

Yoshida refers to his family's house because it's never been a home for him, though the home/house doesn't have distinction in the kanji used] I need to wait for my father…Mother's likely to come back for her clothes too…」
「Geez…Bakabakabaka…you're an idiot…!」

That's when Nei-san comes in.
Nei-san is wearing the patch with the name of Nagisa-san's shop just like me.

「…Katsun, just how long are you going to wake Yo-chan up? Everyone's waiting to eat you know? Leave the naughty stuff later, we're busy this morning!」
「…Un, we're coming now」

Katsuko-nee says that and then released me…

◇ ◇ ◇

The breakfast was croissant, and ham and eggs and tea.
I talk to Nei-san and Margo-san while eating.
Katsuko-nee is talking to Yuzuki-sensei about something while standanding.
Well…When Katsuko-nee is on her maid uniform, she'll never eat with us so it can't be helped.

「Then, the four of you go to Nagisa…Katsuko will be taking the command on-site. Margo's the support. Nei and Yoshida-kun will be sticking to Nagisa…okay?」

Sensei seems to be staying on the mansion…
She must be preparing something for the next training…
Well, we got a promise to Yamamine-san and Misuzu so…we have to go back before 10 o'clock

We got on Margo-san's white van and left the mansion;.
The characters on the body is now 『Schwarz Wald Car 2』

「Why it's not 『Maruko Flower Arrangement shop』?」

When I asked, Margo-san

「We're going to the flower market so…if the person from the market checks the property of the customer, they'll know immediately that the name of the shop doesn't exists」
「Is that how it is?」
「That's right. They should know everything from the new shops to the discontinued ones…the market doesn't sell to the general customers after all」

Ah, I see.
There's no one but the flower shop coming in so they can identify the name of the shop.

「…Also, if the market has a lot of people coming in and out, it's likely for bad people to come to a place with a lot of money like the market. Shoplifting or luggage thief. That's why, they're always checking if a suspicious person or car is in the market!」

Katsukon-nee understands it.
Right now, Katsuko-nee is on her black pantstuit.
She looks like a businesswoman…she's got an air of dignity.

「That's why, try not to make a fuss in the market…it's fine for us but it would be bad for Nagisa to lose her reputation. She must be in a good relationship with the flower market all the time!」
「…Got it, Katsuko-nee」
「Nei too…even if it's a Yakuza, try not to set fire on their car!」
「Got it…I'll do something other than arson」

Our car arrived at the market by 6:30.
Nagisa-joined us immediately after.
Nagisa-san came with a big van too.
It's not just Nagisa-san, the sub-leader Miyuki-san also came.

「Good morning Yoshidakun!」

…Mao-chan too

「Mao-chan's an early bird so I brought her with us. There's no nursery that's open this early in the morning」

Nagisa-san told us smiling.

「Nei-chan too, morning! Mago-chan too, morning!」
「Morning! Mao-chaan!」
「Morning」
「Mao-chan, it's been a while…!」
「Waa…Katsuko mama!」

Mao embraces Katsuko-nee

「You look fine…Katsuko」
「You too…」

Katsuko-san and Nagisa-san embraced each other…
They're two beauties so they look attractive.
No…what are they doing in front of the market though

「Katsuko also did it with Yoshida-kun…haven't you?」
「I never thought that Nagisa would beat me to the punch!」
「…How was it?」
「I'm fine being his for my entire life「」」
「…I was thinking the same thing. Let's do it together next time」
「I thought that Nagisa would say that!」

Err…
They're ignoring my will…yes

「Right…We have to let Misuzu join in too」
「The girl from yesterday…was a good girl」
「She's the best pet…! Yoshida-kun seems to have taken a liking at her!」

Nagisa-san looks at me.

「Ah…Yes. She's a really good girl」

Her character…her face…her body…

「Dammit!…I'll get a girl that's at least like her and give her as a present to you!」

Eh…Katsuko-nee?

「Just a cute girl will do no good. Misuzu was a virgin…!」

「Uu, anyway…I'll find one!」
「Ah, Katsun, I'll join in too! The one who gives the pet better than Miichan will be the victorious!」

…Nei-san too

「Right…Yoshida-kun, will decide which child feels the best to have sex!」

…N-Nagisa-san

「Hey hey…Mao's not good…?」

Since everyone seems to be enjoying it,, Mao-chan breaks in without understanding what's going on…

「…Mao…You need to be at least ten, no, around twelve years to join」

Nagisa-san's face is slightly complex.
Mao-chan's still a three year old girl…
Or rather…it would be troublesome for me if you press a pet that much.
Misuzu alone is quite the responsibility already…
Just when I was thinking that…the phone ringed.
As I though…It was Misuzu.

『…Good morning, It's Misuzu!』
「Morning」
『Danna-sama…Uhm』
「…What's wrong?」
『Can…Misuzu pee…?』

Then…I heard the sound of her pee coming out from the other side of the phone…
It's really hard to keep a pet.
…Living is difficult isn't it?

「…Then, Margo-sama and Nei-sama please confirm the target I will be guarding Nagisa and Mao-chan」

Katsuko-nee issues her instructrions.

「…What about me?」

Katsuko-nee smiles,

「You will be helping Miyuki!」

◇　◇　◇

「Okay, please load this next…」

Miyuki-san pushed the cart.
I load the baggage to Nagisa-san's van.
…I never knew.
Flowers are jammed into a cardboard box.
It smells like flower but the flower from a while ago can't be seen.
They're just pilled on the cardboards.

「…Thanks. It's always been me alone」

Miyuki-san gave me a canned coffee.
I opened it and drank from it…

「It's always been like this?」
「Today's Mother's day so the amount is bigger」

Oh, I see…there's this event too.
I never cared about it so I didn't notice.
If I recall, normal family's give flowers to them…

「We usually get help from the traders to deliver when the quantity is too large but…the flowers are cheap today」
「Does the price change that much?」
「Flowers are living beings after all」
「…Living?」
「The producer has a fixed time on harvesting but…from time to time, there's days where's the temperature's really high isn't it? They have to harvest the flowers and pack it in a case and they have no choice but to ship it」
「Thus…it's cheap today?」
「Yes. Right now, they're having auction inside isn't it?」
「…Yeah, there's a lot of people gathered in it. It's like a theatre… or something like an assembly ground」

「The seller are below and the flower shops are on the steps. Nagisa-sama's participating the auction right now…auction on the flowers are the opposite of the normal auction」
「…By opposite you mean?」
「Normally, auction does increase the price steadily」

Un…there's that image.

「In flower markets, it becomes cheaper」
「Eh…why?」
「Right now, all the flowers in the market were received last night. Then, what kind of flower and how much are they would be shown on the internet during the night. The market would set the price by then. Even with that price, if there's a flower shop that wants a large amount by all means, they'll purchase it by early morning」
「…Haa」
「Then…the flowers that weren't sold at the net price would be sold at the auction at 7 in the morning. If the flowers aren't sold by the end of the day…it would just become worse in the packaging, and new flowers would arrive by night. That's why the flowers must be auctioned by the end of the day and they'll sell it if there's a person who'd tell 『I'll buy it at this price』
「That's how it is?」
「It's just right for who put out flowers as service goods…it would be troublesome to buy too much but now, flowers would sell a lot」
「Nagisa-san's going to buy a lot…!」
「It's a profitable day to attack after all」

…Then the flowers packed in the cardboard box reaches one after another.
All of this will be loaded?
That's a big tree branch? It's reaching a bamboo though…

「Ah, this will be used by Nagisa-sama as a decoration at the lounge of a hotel」

So she had that kind of job…
But, where should we put this?

「Oh, it'll be tied up at the roof of the car so just leave it please」
「…I-Is that so?」

「But, this kind of moments really helps that there's a man」
「Ah…No, this is the only thing I can do」
「When are you coming at the shop?」
「…What?」
「You're going to live with Nagisa-sama, aren't you…?」
「N-No, but」
「Huh…I surely thought that you're going to be living together with Nagisa-sama」
「No no…that's not true」
「Don't say that…please come. Nagisa-sama, seems to like you very much…」
「…No but」
「You can embrace me or the other children whenever you want, not just Misuzu!」
「…What?」
「We're all Nagisa-sama's pet. We all are not good with men but yesterday, we were all aroused when we were told that『Right now, Misuzu's upstairs and will lose her virginity while being watched over by Nagisa-sama』『I want to try that kind of sex』they said…!」
「…Err」
「Yoshida-san's type is a cute girl like Misuzu isn't it? Actually, I'm aiming at a customer of our shop…she's a high school student but she's really cute. Can you violate that child along with me?」

I now understand why Yuzuki-sensei wants Katsuko-nee to be independent somehow…
The domination infects.
Yuzuki-sensei who rules over Nagisa-san is ruling over Misuzu and Miyuki-san and Miyuki-san tries to rule another girl…
Just like the child mimicking their parent…The ruled tries to imitate their ruler.
They're trying to become the ruler themselves

「…Hey wait Miyuki-chan. You need to wait for your turn for Yoshida-kun! You're going to have your turn so you should line up properly」

Haa…Nagisa-san and Katsuko-san came back.

「Where's Mao-chan?」

「She's walking in the market with Margo-chan. That child loves Margo-chan. Margo-chan's camouflaged with Mao. I've already bought everything I need so we're done with the auction…by the way」

Nagisa-san looks at Miyuki-san

「Miyuki-chan, the girl you're aiming at is…the young lady of Koyanagi-sama isn't it?」
「Yes…Nagisa-sama」
「You really got a good sense…I think that child would be a good pet. Got it, I'll help you」
「…Thank you very much!」
「In exchange, I will be participating when you're going to be violated along with that child okay?!」
「Yes, best regards!」

It's outside my will again…
I feel that some unexpected decisions are accomplished.
Is this the "You think you lose"?

「Ah, me too, me too…!」
「…Katsuko-nee too?!」

I instinctively let out my voice

「Oh my…Katsuko's being called 『Katsuko-nee』 by Yoshida-kun?」
「That's right…Nagisa's normally called 『Nagisa-san』 aren't you?」

As expected, they began some strange dangerous fight…

「If you don't want it…what does Nagisa-san wants to be called?」

It's troublesome so I spoke frankly and asked.

「Let's see… 『Nagisa-chan』, 『Nagi』, 『Na-chan』 …or something like that」

Nagisa-san's worrying.

「How about『Hey, Nagisa』? You're going to be called 『Hey, Nagisa』all the time!」
「II don't want that…that looks like he's a dominant husband. It doesn't match with Yoshida-kun!」
「Then how about 『Nagibu』」
「Katsuko…I'll get angry!」
「Ehehehe!」

They're really in a good relationship.
They're best friends during high school…?

「Oh right…I want to be called 『Nagisa-senpai』before」
「Senpai?」
「Un…Look, Katsuko- and I went out of the high school during our first year. I was never called 『Senpai』」

That's…
They were taken by 『Kuromori』when they were first years.
Katsuko-san and Nagisa-san…were trained to be high class prostitutes…

「Okay…Nagisa-senpai」
「It's okay if you don't do it here…do it when we're alone next time!」
「Hey Nagisa1…we've got some uniforms at our high school. Let's wear those and have a 『Senpai play』 A situation where a senpai teaches a pure kouhai lewd stuffs…!」
「Katsuko…You're really a genius when it comes to lewd stuffs…!」
「…You want to? don't want to?」
「…I'll do it!」
「Can I go too?」
「Isn't that obvious! Let's both be Yoshida-kun's senpai!」
「Nagisa…I love you!」

Onee-sama…
Do what you want.
I look inside the market…
The auction still continues inside but…the customers are scattered in the hall.
There's a person who checks the flower they bought.

There's also a material shop buying vases, ribbons, or laces.
There's a lot of people in here…
This is all from flower shops…
Looking at this…even flower shops have a lot of various people.
There's also people dressed up this early in the morning…
On the contrary, there's an old man wearing a jersey and his hair is still a mess.
There's people with the cutting edge fashion sense, is that from an art related flower shop?
There's also a greengrocer aunty from the malls too…
There's a gay like beautician old man who's walking pigeon toed…
Wherever you look at, there's no man who looks like a Yakuza…
Are Yakuza going to come here…?

「…Oya oya, there's a lot of beauties gathering this morning again!」

Umu. A purple suit came from the floral market, what kind of person is this?
The necktie is also floral design…
Curly men's hairstyle2, and blue sunglasses.
I think that it won't understand the quality if they're wearing colored glasses.

「…How about we hear your answer soon, 『Schwarz』-saan?」

The Yakuza's calling Nagisa-san by the name of her shop.
The accent is a bit strange.
For some reason, he raises the last word.

「Our 『Flower Shop Tulip』 has just made a branch from Kansai… we would like to make a joint business with 『Schwarz』 by all means」
「We've talked about this before, our shop will be on our own. We won't join with anyone」

Nagisa-san refused flatly.

「Is that so? Don't say that…please think of joining us as an act of kindness. Isn't it lonely to have only women?」

The Yakuza tries to put his hand on Nagisa-san's shoulder…
I reached over the 『Beat up Stick』 concealed under the car.
…Then

「…Hey hey, oji-san!」

Nei-san came.

「What's with you?…You're also a child from 『Schwarz』? You're quite quite too?!」

The Yakuza's interest changed from Nagisa-san to Nei-san…

「That yellow green Porsche there…isn't that Oji-san's?」
「Yup, that's right. What, want to get on? Want me to drive you somewhere?」
「That Porsche's been played by strange onii-sans!」
「…What?!」
「The bonnet guys scribbled it with 10 yen coin」
「…Hey hey hey hey!」

The Yakuza ran towards his car!

「Ehehe! Maru-chan said that to not burn is so I did a prank instead!」

Nei-san laughs!

「…Did you damage the body?」
「Un. I drew doraemon's face. While I'm at it, I blew out his tires too!」

The Yakuza return running!

「Dammig! They got me!…Nee-chan, who's the bastard that did this?!」
「…You see. He's tall and thin, wearing a red vest, blue shorts, there's a wound under his left eye and wearing a straw hat3」

…Nei-san.
Isn't that person aiming to be the pirate king?

「I'll kill that guy if I find him…for him to make an ultraman graffiti on my Porsche…!!!!」

The Yakuza runs angrily!

「…I drew doraemon though」

Nei-san's bad at drawing.

---

1. The earlier one is (Oi Nagisa), this one is (Nee Nagisa) ↩
2. Usually associated with Yakuza ↩
3. You can take a guess now ↩

54. Puppy's waltz

「Sorry. I wanted to invite you for a tea but we have to go back to the shop immediately to arrange the flowers, or else we won't make time on the opening by 11:00!」

Nagisa-san come out of the window of her van and told us.
The compartment is fully loaded with flower's cardboard box and bamboo on the roof
Nagisa-san is on the driver's seat. Miyuki-san is on the passenger seat. Mao-chan's on the child seat, blocking the flower boxes.

That's amazing…That's the car Nagisa-san's driving everyday…!
She's really a manager of a flower shop.
Even though she's so young, that's amazing…

「Yoshida-kun, sorry for making you do the labor. It really helped us…!」

Nagisa-san told me.

「No, I can always help whenever you want」
「…Really?!」

Nagisa-san's eyes shined!

「Mao! Yoshida-kun will working on the flower shop!」
「…Yay!」

…Wait wait.
…Nagisa-san.

「Nagisa…you're being hasty. It's fine to just let him help from time to time, isn't it? If he goes to the market every morning, he won't be able to go to the school!」

Katsuko-nee buts in before I could deny it

「Oh my…that's troublesome」
「You want him to graduate high school, don't you?」

「Right…we weren't able to graduate from high school after all」
「That's right…also, he'll be working on my bakery after he graduates…!」

…Eeeh??!

「That's what I promised Ojou-sama…! I'll wait for him to graduate and he and I will begin a bakery together!」

No…I wasn't included in the promise!

「Wait wait, Katsun! Isn't that strange?!」

The furious Nei-san joins in…!

「Yo-chan's going to live with me on a small house on a steppe!!」

Err…how should I tsukkomi here?

「…What's a steppe?」
「Well…the air's clean, the view's good, and there's a hot spring, and the fishes are delicious, it's good everywhere!」

…Nei-san
That's no longer a steppe

「But, I have Yo-chan and Maru-chan! We'll live just the three of us!」
「Oya oya, what about me?」

Margo-san laughs.

「No way…I'll make my bakery a four story with an outdoor hot spring on the rooftop! I'll prepare Nei-sama and Margo-sama's room so how about you people come to my place? You can eat breads all you want everyday!」
「…Eh, really?」
「I'll also make three meals everyday!」
「Uwaa…that's tempting! What should we do, Maru-chan?…Should we go with Yo-chan and live on Katsuko-san's bakery?」

Why I'm included in the set?!

「If so, then I'll extend my own shop! I'll turn it into five stories! It'll have the best view! While we're at it, I'm also going to make Misuzu's dog house! Yoshida-kun, if you come to us then you can do Misuzu as much as you want! I'm gonna do my best to be a top breeder!」
「Mama, do your best!」

Mao-chan's smile is so cute.
But you see Mao-chan…Your mother's trying to increase something outrageous.
Or rather…I'm a stud dog?

「I remembered Misuzu-chan but…Katsuko-san, we'll be late for the meeting. We should go back and make preparations」

Margo-san asks Katsuko-nee while smiling wryly.

「Ah, that's right…I have to change clothes!」

Katsuko-nee panics

「Oh right, I have to return to the shop soon.」

Nagisa-san starts the engine…

「Later…thanks everyone. It helped me. Normally, that person would be nagging us for an hour」

Oh…The Yakuza earlier.
It looks like it was worth getting up early as we're able to properly guard Nagisa-san. Un.

「It's fine…we're going to dispose the ringleader by the end of the day」

Margo-san declares…
In short…the Yakuza would be beaten up by the end of the day.
…Haa
It can't be helped…it's for the sake of helping Nagisa-san.

「…Please」
「Leave it to us!」

「Don't worry」
「It's for Nagisa's sake after all!」

Everyone smiles at each other…
The 『Toys』of 『Kuromori』…

「Yoshida-kun…you're welcome to come over and play with us during the consecutive holidays!」
「Yes, I'll visit」
「Ah, but before that, we're going to meet at Misuzu's Presentation!」

…Presentation?

「My…you haven't heard about it? It's the presentation of Misuzu's Japanese traditional dance. It's on May 2」
「Is that so??」
「Yoshida-kun's going to watch it, of course?」

Well…I have no choice but to go as the pet's owner.
I don't get what Japanese traditional dance is.

「Yes, I'll be going」
「Misuzu will surely be pleased…Then, later everyone!」
「Later!」

Mao-chan waved smilingly.

「…Take care」
「Bye bye!」

Nagisa-san's car went out of the market…

「Now then…should we go back?」

Margo-san said that and we boarded the white van…

◇ ◇ ◇

It was half past nine when we arrived at the mansion.

「Let's go to the garage」

Margo-san said.
…It's my first time going to the garage.
It's always been Katsuko-nee or Margo-san's car letting me off on the entrance and boarding it.
…But
The garage at the back of the residence was the size of a small gym.
There's 20 to 30 cars parked inside it…
The garage door was opened and we entered while inside the car.
Katsuko-nee jumps down from the van and begins to take off her clothes.
Her huge breasts wrapped in black bra shakes well…

「…I have my maid clothes here and other places in case when an unexpected situation happened!」

I see, she took out a cleaned maid clothes put in a plastic bag from the nearby shelf.
She changed clothes in an amazing speed…

「I'm fine in this clothes! You're also fine with it aren't you, Yo-chan?」

Nei-san…in the first place, we don't have a change of clothes here.

「Then…I'll be preparing for the Yakuza」

Katsuko-nee reacts to Margo-san's words.

「Margo-sama,. please leave the Benz!」
「Got it, I'll borrow Minaho's green van」

Margo-san opened the box on alongside the wall and took a car key.

「…Then. I'll be going. We're scheduled to attack tonight. I'll talk about the details of the plan later」
「Bye then, Maru-chan!」

Margo-san boards the car and left.

「Thank you for waiting! Let's go!」

Katsuko-nee seems to have finally ended changing clothes too.

We boarded the Benz.

◇ ◇ ◇

「Misuzu-sama's supposed to be meeting us at the station…」

Katsuko-nee drives the Benz…!
Right, our school has a bit of distance from the station.
I think that it's a bit harsh for the students walking from the other school.

「What time is the meetup/」
「…9:45!」

Five more minutes.

「Well, we have a lot of time」

Katsuko-nee stepped on the accelerator…!

…We arrived in three minutes.

「As expected, a large scale Benz is best! Other cars hold back and make way for you!」

…Is that so?
I think that it's being quite forceful…
…Ah!
Misuzu's already at the front of the station.
She's wearing the same ojou-sama uniform just like yesterday…!

「…Mii-chan, here!」

Nei-san on the passenger seat opened the window and shouted!
Misuzu noticed us.
She ran up to our car just like a puppy…!

「…Good morning!」
「Good morning Misuzu-sama」
「Un, good morning!」
「…Good morning, Misuzu」

It's somewhat embarrassing.

「Huh, why is Danna-sama and Nei-sama wearing the same clothes?/」
「Ah, this? We helped Nagisa-san earlier and went to the flower market! Look! Look!」

Nei-san showed the logo of Nagisa-san's shop on her back to Misuzu.

「My, it's true. Must be nice, I also want to go…!」
「But, we woke up by 5:00 today!」
「Then, when Misuzu called Danna-sama earlier…?」
「Un. We're already at the market」
「Ah, I'm sorry for calling at such a busy time!」
「It's fine. If you want to say something then you can call me anytime」

…That's right
I'd be troubled if her she got sick from enduring the urge to pee.

「Misuzu-sama, please get on sooner…we don't have much time until the promised time to meet with Yamamine-sama!」

Oh right…we have to meet Yamamine-san at the front gate of the school at 10:00

「Ah, I'm sorry!」

Misuzu gets in the rear seat of the Benz cheerfully.
…She sat down close next to me

「…Lets go!」

The car began to run once again…

「Uhm…Danna-sama!」

Misuzu whispered

「…What's wrong?」

When I asked, Misuzu blushed…

「Misuzu hasn't made her morning kiss yet…」

Eh…we're going to do it here?
Katsuko-nee and Nei-san are here though…!

「Don't mind us!」
「Yes…Go on Misuzu-sama!」

Hey…

「I also did my morning kiss earlier…!」

K-Katsuko-nee…!

「Eeeh, Katsun you sly fox! I also wanted to do it!」
「…Nei-sama, in the first place, you still haven't done your first kiss, have you?」
「Un…yeah, but」

Misuzu's surprised.

「Nei-san, is that true?」
「Un…Actually, I'm still a virgin. I promised Yo-chan that I will give it to him sooner or later…!」
「…Are you still scared?」

Katsuko-nee asked Nei-san.

「I'm used to Yo-chan. Or rather, I trust him. He will never do anything cruel to me. I'm fine being seen too. I'm also fine being touched or clinging to him But, I'm still scared to accept his penis…!」
「…I was also a virgin yesterday but, once you've done it, it's not scary anymore!」
「If you want, can I watch Yo-chan and Mii-chan's sex closely? I'm used to watching it on the monitor but, I've never been in the place where there's sex」
「That's very welcome!…Isn't it, Danna-sama?!」

…Isn't it, you ask.

…Well, they're watching anyway.
…We've been seen all this time.

「I'll show how I have sex with him! Or rather, I'll teach you! The wonders of sex!」

Uwaa…The specialist participated in the war.

「Rather than that…Misuzu-sama. Your morning kiss」

Misuzu looked at me…

「Danna-sama…is that okay with you?」
「…Un, of course」

Misuzu and my lips piled up…while we're inside the car.
Misuzu's face turned red.
She turned her arms around my back and embraced me tightly.
Misuzu's tongue entered my mouth
Misuzu's tongue is sweet.
It stimulates my tongue…
I sucked Misuzu's tongue too…
…Before long.
Misuzu separates her lips.

「…My heart's throbbing!」

Misuzu's eyes is melting.

「Danna-sama…Misuzu's wet…」

…Misuzu.

「The amount of Misuzu-sama's nectar is so huge that it's trouble isn't it?…There's a paper diaper on the bag on the back!」

As expected of Katsuko-nee…you're prepared!

「Then Misuzu…should we change you into diapers?」
「…Yes, Danna-sama」

Misuzu rolled her own skirt from the back of the Benz.

Misuzu's silky smooth legs…
The white panty ahead of it is already wet.

「…Misuzu's embarrassed」
「It feels good being embarrassed isn't it?」
「Yes…Danna-sama」

Nei-san looks at us interestingly from the passenger seat…

「Mii-chan, you're having Yo-chan put on the 『Diaper』 to you?」
「Yes…I pee whenever Danna-sama wishes me to…」
「Uwa, that looks fun! I want to try it too!」

Katsuko-nee rebukes Nei-san.

「Nei-sama…please do that kind of play when you're not a virgin anymore You'd just be a pervert if you do that kind of strange experience when you're still a virgin!」
「…Uuuuuu!!!」

No…Katsuko-nee.
This is already perverted.

I took off Misuzu's panty…
Misuzu floated her waist when it crosses over the mountain of the soft ass.
The panty slid from her thighs to her foot…
Misuzu's hairless mound of Venus…
The love nectar dripping from her slit.
Misuzu's genital is cute.

「…Please don't look that much」

But…I want to look forever

「Misuzu-sama, you said it wrong…You have to say 『Please enjoy the view without reserve』!」

The demon coach's education enters…

「Okay…Danna-sama, please take look. It's for Danna-sama.
Misuzu's body is all Danna-sama's property…!!!」

It's dripping with love nectar again.
Her skirt would get dirty if this continues.
I spread the diaper under Misuzu's ass in a hurry…

「…You're cute, Misuzu」
「…Please cherish me forever」
「Yeah」
「Please cherish me forever…please don't throw Misuzu away」
「I'll take care of you」

I kissed Misuzu again…!

「Hey wait! Yo-chan, you haven't told me that!」

Oh…Nei-san starts to rage.

「Nei-sama…those words are words told to people whom you gave your body to!」
「…Even if you say that!」
「I've already dedicated myself to him so…you love your onee-san, don't you!」

Katsuko-nee's taking advantage.

「…I love you Katsuko-nee」
「You're going to take care of me too?」
「Un…I will」

Eh??…Misuzu's face says.
Katsuko-nee spoke to Misuzu while driving.

「Misuzu-sama…I was also embraced by him yesterday」
「My…Is that so?! Congratulations!」
「Think of me as your elder sister from now on…we're bring loved by the same man after all」
「Misuzu sends her best regards!」
「Let's get along okay?」
「Yes!」

Nei-san's irritated…

「You guys are cruel! Completely ignoring me!」

「That's why…just throw it away sooner!」
「…Even if you say that」
「If you're that scared to have sex by your own will then how about being violated? Should I bind you in a restraint machine in the mansion」

…Ah. The one when I first violated Yukino.

「No. I don't want to be raped…I want to have normal sex」
「Then it's no good for Nei-sama who can't muster up her courage[1]」
「I get that…but」

I finished putting the diaper on Misuzu while they're talking.
Misuzu once again embraces me to get spoiled.
She rubs her cheeks against mine…

「…I love you Danna-sama!」

I got erect.
The sharp Katsuko-nee noticed the event immediately.

「You haven't released it since this morning…!」
「…Is that so?」
「Yes…I thought that I should present the first one to Misuzu-sama」
「Thank you very much!」

Misuzu lowered the zipper!

「I'll be serving you…Danna-sama!」
「No, wait…Misuzu!」
「Uwaa…it's so big!」
「We don't have much time」
「Right, we don't have much time for sex…We only have five minutes till the meetup time…!」

Katsuko-nee says while looking at the clock at the dashboard.

「Please do it by hand…because fellatio when driving is dangerous. You can kiss the penis when there's a red signal!」
「Okay…I understand!」

Misuzu's thin fingers caresses my glans.

「Danna-sama…does it feel good?」
「…Misuzu」

I groped Misuzu's body.

「Aaahh…please touch me more. Do as you please with Misuzu's body…!」

Misuzu pants…

「Uwaa, they really started doing it!」

Nei-san's eye rounded as she looks at us.

「You see…Misuzu」

There's something I really want to ask Misuzu.

「Misuzu…are you okay with me having sex with other girls?
「…I don't mind
「…Why?」
「Danna-sama doesn't have sex with someone he doesn't really love?」
「…Un」
「If it's someone you really want to do with then it can't be helped…!」
「But…」

Is that okay?

「My grandfather…」

Misuzu smiles at me.

「Have multiple mistresses. But, he treasures everyone. My grandfather told me…」
「…What is it?」
「『Even the lowest men won't be able to understand women unless they embrace a hundred』」 I want Danna-sama to become a splendid man. That's why, please have sex with more girls. I'll

cooperate…!」

Misuzu's grandfather…!
I don't get how the rich and powerful people think…!

「Misuzu…are you fine with that/」
「Yes. I'm Danna-sama's pet! Danna-sama's happiness is my happiness!」

…But

「You see…I was told by Yuzuki-sensei yesterday」
「…What is it??/」
「When men experienced sex, they'd want to embrace various women…when women get used to sex they'd also want to be embraced by other men…」
「…Unn?」
「Misuzu might be the same. You might want to have sex with other men than me…6」

That might be normal.
Misuzu…got angry.

「Geez!…Misuzu is only for Danna-sama!」
「…Misuzu?」
「Misuzu is Nagisa-sama's pet, I think you know it but…if you ask, we prefer women than men…!」
「…Eh, but」

Right now, she's stroking my erect penis…
Even though Misuzu's angry, her caressing hand is not stopping.
Rather, it became violent…

「Yes, Misuzu's fine with only Danna-samal. I'll have sex with only Danna-sama. I want to have sex with only Danna-sama!」
「…Misuzu」
「But in the future…If I felt I want to have sex with someone other than Danna-sama…I will report to Danna-sama immediately」
「…Report?」
「Then, Danna-sama can bully Misuzu without reserve. Make a mess out of me. Please fill Misuzu with Danna-sama's semen so that

I can no longer think of other men…!」

…!!!

「It's enough for Misuzu to have Danna-sama her only man in her life. That's what I decided!」

Misuzu strokes my penis with strong power…!
Gradually stimulating the glans…!
Ah…I'm near cumming…!

「I love you…Danna-sama」

Nei-san looks at us quietly with serious eyes on the other side of the mirror.
Katsuko-nee too…
Misuzu kissed my lips…!
Ah…I'm…going to cum!!

「…We've arrived!」

Katsuko-nee's voice.
The car stops…!
When I noticed, we're at the front gate of the school…!
Ah…Yamamine-san's here…!

「…Misuzu, I'm about to cum!」
「…Please order Misuzu to drink it」
「…Misuzu, drink…drink it!」

Misuzu responded with an entranced face.

「Okaay…Danna-sama…!」

My glans filled Misuzu's small mouth…!

…Bububbu□!!!

Katsuko-nee pushed the horn!
Yamamine-san that's in the front of the gate noticed the car we're in…!
She's coming here smiling…!

I'm ejaculating Inside Misuzu's mouth…
While taking a look at Yamamine-san's smile!!!

---

1. Ask the Zeppeli to get courage ↩

55. Song

「Misuzu-sama…open your mouth wide and make him confirm that the semen is there!」

Katsuko-nee coaches Misuzu.
Misuzu who received semen in her mouth for the first time opened her mouth wide.
There's liquid on the tip of her pink tongue.
I nodded…

「Then, please swallow it. Dilute it with your saliva and it'll be easier to drink!」

Misuzu's mouth went "Kuchukuchu"
Then, she swallowed.

「…Thanks. That was cute」

I instinctively patted Misuzu's head…!

「Ehehe…Semen is really bitter isn't it」

Misuzu smiles at me.

「Men have quite the different tastes!」
「Eh, Katsun, is that so?」
「They might be similar but the taste differs from the physical condition…when you're used to it, you can understand their health condition」
「Then, Misuzu will be drinking Danna-sama's semen to check him!」

Misuzu says that then Katsuko-nee.

「Eeh! That's what I thought I should be doing…!」

Misuzu had a 「My my」face

「Then Katsuko-sama will do the health check. But…Misuzu would

be glad if you can share the half of what Danna-sama released…!」
「…Misuzu-sama」
「I'm fine even with a third of it…!」

Katsuko-nee's face loosened from Misuzu who appeals with puppy dog eyes.

「Geez…it can't be helped! we'll do it in turns!」
「Okay! Thank you very much!」

Katsuko-nee…that turns means that you're going to do it alternate everyday?
There's no way they would do this for everyday continuously…?
No, don't think about it.
I feel that I'd lose when I think…

「In exchange, I'll be training you hard in fellatio! I will be teaching Misuzu-sama with all the techniques I know!」
「My best regards!」
「Penis is an organ that women don't have. Therefore, you have to gather the knowledge and technique on how to make a man feel pleasure! Do you follow!」
「Yes」

Somehow, this master and student relationship is dangerous…!

「Eeh! You two looks like you're having fun! Katsun, let me join in too! Teach me how to do fellatio!」
「I won't teach the virgins!」
「…Katsun's a bully!」
「A virgin who knows how to fellate is heresy![1]」

Un…Certainly.
I feel I want Nei-san to experience normal sex.
Or rather…I feel that in Nei-san's case, once she gets into a heresy of sex once, she won't be able to leave that…

「Also, uhm, Katsuko-sama」

Misuzu once again talks to Katsuko-nee that's on the driver's seat.

「What is it?」

「…Please teach Misuzu techniques in sex」
「That's no good!」

Katsuko-nee said it clearly.

「…Why?」
「Sex is different from fellatio, you can't prioritize the technique. What's important is the matter of the two hearts mixing together!」
「…I see」
「Misuzu-sama is an innocent who just lost her virginity., It's not time to teach you about techniques. It's just enough to only make your partner feel good…yourself feeling good, feeling the wonders of having sex using your own body. It would be thoughtless to teach you excessive education at the current stage!」
「…Right」
「Rather…it's important to serve with the mind of『Dedicating one's fresh body』!」
「I get it! Danna-sama…please paint Misuzu with the color you want! Please turn Misuzu to a woman of your preference! Misuzu will do whatever you wish for me to do!」

…Misuzu
Why are you so cute…!

「Its fine. The current Misuzu-sama. Is very lovely!!」
「…But, I don't have the adult charm like Katsuko-sama…I'm not as beautiful as Nei-san. I want to at least change into something Danna-sama likes!」
「…Mii-chan?!」

Nei-san was surprised from what Misuzu said.
I embraced Misuzu's body silently.

「I think that the current Misuzu is very charming. I love you」
「…Danna-sama」

I smacked Misuzu's lips.

「Hey hey…what about me?」

Katsuko-nee interrups the two people's atmosphere.

「Of course I love you too! I like how Katsuko-nee is right now!」
「…Good」

Nei-san sighed alone then spoke to me.

「It's good and all but…Yo-chan, you should hide your penis soon. Look, the signal's changing…!」

Shit…My dick's still out.
By the way…we've been talking for very long…
Our car has stopped just on the other side of the road…and yet, the girl named Yamamine-san is an honor student that waits for the signal to change even in the street that there's not a single car passing through…!
When the signal changed…Yamamine-san walked in the pedestrian lane.
I hid my penis in a hurry and spoke to Nei-san.

「But…I also love Nei-san
「…Eh!

Nei-san turns around to me…!

「Since I first met you at the roof at school…I've been in love with Nei-san all the time」
「Of course you do…Nei-sama is always gentle!」

Katsuko-san buts in.

「…Yo-chan, do you think of wanting to have sex with me?」
「There's no man who wouldn't want to have sex with Nei-san!」
「I don't care about the other men…What does Yo-chan think?」
「I want to」
「…Really」
「Yes」
「…You want to violate me? You want to thrust it hard? Want to let it out inside? Want to get me pregnant?」
「…That's not it」
「Then, what?!」
「I want the two of us sleep properly while hugging each other tightly. We did it with Margo-san the other day, didn't we? I want

to embrace and sleep alone with Nei-san」

Nei-san's backbone jumped…!

「…What should I do Katsun?!」
「What's wrong?」
「…I got weeeeeet!」
「Like I said, just have sex with him already!」
「That's right! Nei-san! Do it! Misuzu will be watching!」

While we're making noises…Yamamine-san on her uniform had arrived.

「…Good morning」

Yamamine-san's a bit nervous.
Of course…She promised yesterday that 『She'd come to Nei-san's friend house to learn make up』
She never thought that she'd be picked up with a Benz…

「…Good morning! You're Yamamine Megumi-sama, aren't you?! I'm Takanashi Katsuko!」

Katsuko-nee comes out of the driver's seat and introduces herself refreshingly.

「Ah, yes…I'm Yamamine Megumi」
「My!…You're really cute just as I've heard from Nei-sama and Misuzu-sama!」
「…That's」

Yamamine-san's embarrassed.
With Katsuko-nee's preemptive strike, Yamamine-san got even more nervous.
Misuzu whispered to my ears…

「…Danna-sama, please attach the collar to Misuzu」
「Eh, here?」
「Yes…I want you to put it to me in front of Megumi-san」
「…But」
「……Megumi-san is Misuzu's rival」

I-I don't get it…
Anyway, I should just attach it
I took out Misuzu's red collar.
Then turn it to Misuzu's neck…!

「Please get on the car…Ojou-sama's waiting in the mansion…!」
「…Ojou-sama?」

Yamamine-san makes a suspicious face.

「I told you yesterday didn't I? We'll be going to my friend's house!」

Nei-san shows her face from the window and spoke to Yamamine-san.

「Come here」

Katsuko-san on her maid uniform turned to the rear seat door and opened it…!
Inside the car is me attaching a collar on Misuzu's neck…

「Good morning, Megumi-san! Please get in, there's nothing to worry about!」
「M-Morning…Yamamine-san」
「…Good morning. Misuzu-san, Yoshida-kun」

Yamamine-san's puzzled by our appearance…

「Please go in!」
「That's right, hey hey, Megumi-chan, get in!」

Katsuko-nee and Nei-san urged her and she gets in the car unwillingly.
The door closed…
Katsuko-nee returned to the driver's seat…

「…You had that choker yesterday, am I wrong?」

Yamamine-san asks Misuzu.

「It's not a choker…It's a collar!」

「…Collar?」
「Yes!」

Yamamine-san had a questioning face but, Misuzu's smiling calmly.

「Ah, don't mind it! Mii-chan's just getting sticky at Yo-chan when left alone!」
「…Uhm. Misuzu-san's not going out with Yoshida-kun, are you?」
「Yes, I'm not going out with him!」

Misusu declared clearly to Yamamine-san

「It's not just Mii-chan who loves being sticky to Yo-chan…Katsun's also being sticky with him…!」
「Yes…right now I'm holding the steering wheel so it can't be helped but, I look towards Misuzu-sama from time to time and think『Dammit』and want to but in…!」
「Ah…I'm sorry Katsuko-sama」
「It's fine it's fine! I'll go stick with him a lot later!」

Katsuko-nee steps on the accelerator!
The Benz accelerates fast!
Once again, the car arrived at the mansion…!

「You see, I also cling to Yo-chan hard!…Everyone loves Yo-chan after all!」

Nei-san on the passenger seat says that.

「…Yoshida-kun…you're popular aren't you」
「Un…I don't get it but…it seems so」

Actually, I don't get it…
Why did this happen?

「That's why, Megumi-san, it's fine! You can also stick to Danna-sama!」

Hey…Misuzu…!?

「…Eh? Danna-sama?」
「Yes…Misuzu's Danna-sama!」

Misuzu leans on me…

「…You're really not going out with him?」
「Yes, that's right」

Yamamine-san's face has a 「????」storm…

「Mii-chan's calling Yo-chan 『Danna-sama』 That's all!」
「…Something like a nickname?」
「Nnn□, something more like a affectionate name?!」
「…Haa」

Yamamine-san looks at me and Misuzu…and Misusu returns her usual lovely smile to Yamamine-san

「Well…that has nothing to do with me…」

Yamamine-san says that and turned her eyes away from Misuzu.

「Oh right. Yo-chan, Katsun and me went to help a flower shop friend in the flower market a while ago! Mii-chan's working part time on that flower shop」
「…Flower shop?」
「The 『Schwarz Wald』 in front of the station!」

MIsuzu answered.

「Ah, I know that. It's a very stylish flower shop…Misuzu-san's working at such a wonderful shop?」
「After school at Tuesdays and Saturdays…on the other days, Misuzu has her lessons!」
「…Lessons」

I asked it instinctively.

「Yes, I do my Japanese traditional dance practice on Monday and Friday, flower arrangement on Wednesday, piano lessons on Wednesday…!」
「…You're studying that much?」
「Nagisa-sama spoke to the flower arrangement teacher」

…Oh right. I remembered.

「Uhm…I heard it from Nagisa-san, you got a presentation of your Japanese traditional dance?」
「Yes! It's on May 2!…I thought of telling you about it later today」
「Is that so?」
「Danna-sama…could you please come and see Misuzu's dance?」
「Un, I will. I promised Nagisa-san after all」
「I'll also go! Megumi-chan, go there too!」
「…I」

Yamamine-san's unable to speak…

「Misuzu-sama…where's the venue?」

Katsuko-nee asks while driving.

「The national theatre!」

National theatre…is that the theatre for the country?[2]

「Uwaa, Mii-chan's dancing at such an amazing place!」
「It's not that amazing! It's available for the public other than the day scheduled!」

No…It won't be lent to normal people.
No matter how you think about it…

「Who's Misuzu-sama's teacher at Japanese traditional dance??!」

Katsuko-nee asks from the driver's seat.

「Konpeki Nadeshiko Sensei!」

Katsuko-nee's astonished!

「That person…could she be the head of Konpeki house?…」
「Yes…the headmaster of the school!」
「Eeeh! Misuzu-sama's being guided buy the head of the school directly?!」
「Yes, I am…?!」

Misuzu's making a 「What about it? expression…

「Katsun, do you know that person?
「Konpeki Nadeshiko-sensei's a living national treasure!」
「…Living national treasure?」
「She's the treasure of the country even though she's alive!」
「Yes, Nadeshiko-sensei's dance is said to be the 『Angel's advent』」

In case of that person's presentation…I can understand why's the venue the national theatre
But…

「But, the one doing the presentation is Sensei's class. Sensei would dance on the end but, it would basically be the students like me dancing in turns. Children from six years old and first years who just began to take lessons too…it's a normal presentation」

No…Just putting in that head of the school is already an extraordinary celebrity?
Children from normal houses can't enter there…

「But I'm glad…Danna-sama's going to come and watch…! Misuzu's Grandfather, father and mother would be there too…!」

Ah…I became depressed in an instant.
I'm going to meet Misuzu's family??
How should I greet them?
『I'm Yoshida, the one who stole Misuzu's virginity and made her a pet…!』
I could never say that…
…n
…Wait

「Misuzu…could it be…」
「Yes…Takahiko-san, Misuzu's fiance would be coming on that day too…!」

…As expected.

「Misuzu-san, you got a fiance?」

Yamamine-san's surprised.

「Yes…It's a fiance my grandfather decided, I have one for now…」

Misuzu emphasized the word 「For now」
…In short.
I need to bring and end to that…
On that day…with Misuzu's fiance.

「Un…Got it」

Oh…I feel overwhelmed.

「Please…Danna-sama!

Misuzu grips my hand…
I also grasped it.

「Uwaa, I don't get it but it looks interesting! I'll definitely go on that day!
「Katsuko feels that it's somewhat hard so I'll definitely go!」

The two onee-sama are heating up!!!

「Megumi-chan too! Go there definitely!」
「…Y-Yes」

Nei-san made Yamamine-san promise forcibly with her amazing power…

The Benz we're on arrived at the mansion.

◇　◇　◇

…Why did it come to this

In the karaoke room right now, Misuzu's singing enthusiastically『Tsugaru channel winder scene』under the light of the mirror ball…

When we arrived at the mansion…Katsuko-nee led us to the karaoke room for some reason.
Why do we have a karaoke room in the mansion? I don't know…

Anyway, it's a wide party room where it seems 15 people can enjoy it.

「…We'll be making preparations so please relax in here」

Katsuko-nee told us while offering cold drinks.
Of course, Yamamine-san's at loss.
Well of course.
Suddenly brought to a mansion then a karaoke after.
It's normal to start worrying.
Even I was scared when I came here for the first time.
Misuzu's also feeling a bit nervous…
Misuzu must've heard it from Nagisa-san and Yuzuki-sensei but…
her heart must be throbbing knowing that this is the base.
Nei-san's the only one smiling…

Not minding our state, Katsuko-nee does her lecture on how to use the karaoke machine.
Then…she stands on the platform…!

「Then…Katsuko will sing the ball game!」

The introduction flows jingling.
It must be some amazing equipment, the bass coming from the speaker is banging!

「…Please listen to…『My way』!!!!」3

Katsuko-nee began to sing loudly some English song I don't know.
She's amazingly good!
It's good but…
What's with this strange air…!

「…Katsun got a lot of old men as partners, she can't sing anything but old songs…but she's good」

Nei-san commented.
No…I don't get it well.
Anwyay, Katsukon-nee finished the 『My way』song with amazing power…!

「Uwaa, Katsuko-sama, you're so skilled!」

Misuzu claps her hand in pleasure.
Neiu-san's clapping too…
Yamamine-san is…

「…You're good at pronouncing English」

You're going to praise that one?

「Ehehe…Thank you very much. Then, I will be preparing the lunch so I'll be leaving. …Nei-sama, it's your turn!」

With Katsuko-nee's nomination, Nei-san stood up!

「…It can't be helped! Katsun's English still has ways to go. Hear my home trained English song!」

…Then, the tune starts.
I know this song.
『Stand by me』…!
Nei-san begins to sing.
G-Good!
She's good at singing but…her pronunciation of English is amazing!
She's really an American person…
She said that it's 『Home-trained』…
Nei-san's 『Stand by me』is…
It pierces the heart for some reason…
It feels very painful…
Misuzu's crying…

…The song ends.
We gave Nei-san an applause…
Yamamine-san's no longer nervous.

「It was really good!」

She told Nei-san.

「Then…Next would be Misuzu-chan!」

Then, the song Misuzu chose…
『Tsugaru Channel Winter Scene』…4

Err…To be clear
…It was perfect.
It's outrageously good…
I think she can debut as a singer of Japanese traditional ballads…

The song ended…
Everyone listened to the song wholeheartedly.
Misuzu bowed deeply…then we applaud to her presentation from the bottom of our hearts.

「…Thank you very much. It's been a while so I'm nervous」
「You're good! Mii-chan, do you like this song?」
「My mother likes it. And me too…」
「Hee, so that's why!」
「Last year, we really went to go and watch the tsugaru channel! I wanted to see the scenery on the song!」
「With your mother…??」
「No, mother, me, Gondou-san the secretary, and the driver Yasuhara-san, and the body guard Shimatsuka-san, it's the five of us!」

Let's stop asking about Misuzu's house.
It's getting even scarier…

「Well then…Megumi-san, please!」

Misuzu tries to hand the mic to Yamamine-san…!!
But…Yamamine-san

「I…about singing…!」

---

1. They should be burned at the stake! ↩
2. You don't say? ↩
3. ↩
4. ↩

56. Yamamine Megumi

「Eh, what's wrong?! Please sing, Megumi-chan!」

Nei-san asks Yamamine-san who refused to hold the microphone.

「I'm bad at it」
「You don't need to mind it!」
「But…Everyone's good at it」
「Geez!…Maru-chan should've been here!」
「Eh…Margo-san, could it be?」
「That's right, Yo-chan…Maru-chan's such a hardcore rock girl, but she's really bad at singing!」

Oh, though she had a guitar during the disguise, it seems that she really likes it.
Un, she surely seem to match rock.

「She's good at instruments though!」
「Electric guitar?」

When I asked.

「No no, Clarinet!」
「…Clarinet? Could that be the 『The claarineet I got from papa…』 something like that?」
「That's right, that clarinet!」

However…I don't know what kind of instrument was that.

「She said she took lessons when she was in the institute in the America, they have such an educational program there」
「Oh, I see.」
「The teacher in charge pushes musical instruments just because he sees them as kids… 『Hey you![1] You learn this today! You're a big one so learn this! The small one there learn this piccolo!』 she said」
「…Hee」
「That's why, Maru-chan's good with clarinet but…she can't adjust her voice when singing! Whatever she sings will always come out as

a death metal!」

Uuun. Margo-san's voice is low though…

「In case of clarinet, does she perform classical music? Like Mozart?」

Misuzu asks Nei-san

「No, Maru-chan's the type who'd like Jazz. Look, there're are jazz artists that are good in clarinet aren't there?」
「…Benny Goodman?」

Yamamine-san unexpectedly joined the conversation…

「Right, Maru-chan likes his performance!」
「Benny Goodman is amazing isn't he…?」
「Oh, Megumi-chan's informed! Do you like Jazz?」
「…My late mother's doing a vocals on Jazz.」

Yamamine-san's…mother has passed away…

「Oh right! Me too, I don't have my parents anymore!」
「…Eh??」
「…Ehehe, they were both shot by a burglar when we were in US」

Nei-san…is that so…?

「When I was six…me and my bother were watching it…!」
「…Is that so?」

Yamamine-san's face turned gloomy.

「My mother committed suicide. When I was 12」
「Is that so? Megumi-chan had a hard time…!」

Nei-san embraces Yamamine-san's shoulder quietly.

「I'm fine. My adoptive parents are taking good care of me…」

Misuzu opened the karaoke list and spoke to Yamamine-san.

「Uhm…Megumi-san. Do you sing Cole Porter's 『Night and Day』

2?」
「…Yes, I know it」
「Please sing along with Misuzu!」
「…Eh?」
「…Misuzu loves 『Night and day』」
「…I also do」
「Then, lets sing it together!」
「Ah, me too!」

Nei-san too…!

「…Err, it's in the karaoke isn't it!
「Yes. If I recall, it's in the Jazz page!」

Nei-san and Misuzu registers the music…!

「Yo-chan, want to sing too?」
「No…I don't know that song」
「Then, Yo-chan should listen to the three beauties singing!」
「…O-Okay」
「Hey hey, Megumi-chan, stand up!」
「…But」
「We're all singing together」

The jazz performance plays gently.
Then…the three sings.
Among the two microphones, Nei-san monopolizes one of them.
The other one has Misuzu and Yamamine-san drawing their lips close to each other…!
The English song unknown to me…!
Is a sorrowful and gentle…jazz melody…
Nei-san and Misuzu are smiling at Yamamine-san.
Yamamine-san…returned a smile…
Slowly…the wall in her heart melts.
The three of them sings happily…
Before long…the song ends.

I clapped my hands for the three of them.
The girls looked at each other and smiled once again…!

「Yamamine-san…aren't you good at it?!」

「Un, it was a really beautiful voice!」

Nei-san and Misuzu praises Yamamine-san's singing voice…

「No…I'm bad at singing…」
「That's not true! Look, everyone give Megumi-chan an applause!」

We clapped our hands for Yamamine-san.
…That's when.
Another sound of applause comes from the outside of the room…!

「Everyone's good at singing. I'm jealous」

A tall woman in black clothing enters from the door…!
…Yamamine-san's surprised!

「…Yuzuki-sensei!」

The teacher laughs.

「…Sensei, why are you here?」
「This is my house…」

Nei-san spoke to the stiffened Yamamine-san.

「Didn't I tell you? We'll be going to my friend's house…!」
「…But」
「I'm sensei's friend!」

Misuzu stepped forward and bowed to Sensei.

「Nice to meet you…I'm Kouzuki Misuzu!」
「…Is your grandfather well?」
「Yes I was told to 『Send my regards to Kuromori-sama』…!」

…Eh?!
Misuzu's grandfather knows Sensei?
Not just that but also 『Kuromori』…?!

「Tell him『I'm very sorry for the long silence』…!」
「Yes, I understand…!」

Sensei once again looked at Yamamine-san

「Yuzuki is my mother's family name…That's what I use at school, my true name is Kuromori…Kuromori Minaho…!3」
「…Kuromori?!」
「Yes…I'm the current head of Kuromori house. Welcome Misuzu-san. Also…Welcome back, Megumi…!」

Megumi-san's long and narrow eyes gradually opened wide!

「…We're finally able to meet」

◇ ◇ ◇

「…Everyone, meal's ready!」

Katsuko-nee jumps in the intense atmosphere!

「Katsun! Where are we going to eat today's lunch/」
「Since the weather's good, I've prepared it at the terrace!」
「Ah, that's good!…Hey, Misuzu-chan and Megumi-chan, let's go!」

Nei-san calls her out but…Yamamine-san is still looking at the teacher stiffened.

「…Let's have a meal first. We can just leave the complicated talk later right?」
「Yes…got it」

Yamamine-san who had a gloomy face were pulled out by Nei-san and Misuzu…
We come to the terrace facing the backyard of the mansion…
The garden surrounded with high tree has good air.
There's a big table in the terrace and a white tablecloth hung in it.
On top of it are a lot of platters…

「I was wondering if I'd go with Chinese or Italian but…I focused no making a pasta buffet today. Please take what you like and have a feast!」

I see, there's different kinds of spaghetti in the platter. There are salad dishes too.

「Ojou-sama, would you want white wine?」

Huh…the butler on white hair I haven't seen for a while appeared with a wine.

「…I'll leave it to Morimoto」

The butler poured in wine glass for several number of people.

「…Please」

He poured into each glass in sequence, starting from Sensei.
Lastly, the butler poured into Yamamine-san's glass…

「This wine was bought when you were born…Megumi-sama」

Yamamine-san looks up at the butler…

「Your mother was a very splendid one…I heard your singing voice a while ago but Megumi-sama's voice resembles Emiko very much」
「Do you know my mother?」
「Yes…I know Megumi-sama's experience too. I was the one who delivered you to Yamamine-sama's house when you were a young miss…!」

Sensei spoke to Yamamine-san.

「You don't remember since you were still small…I was a high school student back then」

Yamamine-san's eyes…have tears shedding like rain.

「…I do remember. That's right…It was you. The one who spoke to me with a very gentle voice inside the car…also, this scenery…I remember…!」

Sensei pours in two more wine glasses…

「Morimoto, Katsuko, take these glasses…we'll all toast for this」
「…Ojou-sama!」
「I don't mind…our cute daughter came home. Everyone must give

her blessings…!」

The butler Morimoto-san and Katsuko-nee took the glass…and we too…

「Our Megumi has grown up healthily and beautifully…Cheers to Megumi's return!」
「…Cheers!」

Everyone drinks their wine.

「…Now, I'm hungry! Megumi-chan, what pasta do you want to eat? I'll get it for you!」
「…No, I'll do it myself」

Nei-san embraces Yamamine-san who's still crying…!

「Katsun and I are children of this mansion too. That's why we're Megumi-chan's onee-san! Ah…I came here latter so Megumi-chan's the onee-san…?!」
「…Uhm, everyone's…a『Kuromori』?」

Yamamine-san looks at us timidly

「Misuzu's not…!」

Misuzu answered radiantly.

「Misuzu's Danna-sama's pet…!」
「…Pet?」
「Yes, I'm being cherished by Danna-sama!」

Yamamine-san looks at my face in surprise!

「Wrong, wrong!…Yo-chan's not a『Guest』Yo-chan's a member of『Kuromori』One of Sensei's『Toys』…!」

Nei-san explains laughingly

「…A member of『Kuromori』? Is that so? Yoshida-kun?」
「Un…I became one before I noticed」
「…Is that true?」

「I am Yuzuki-sensei's 『Seventh Toy』 A member of 『Kuromori』 …!」

Saying it with my own mouth…feels strange.
But…there's no regret.
It turned this way…it has come to this.
This is my fate, I think.

「That's right! Everyone's Megumi-chan's ally!」
「Megumi-sama…please think of me as your onee-san!」
「Ah, you're so sly Katsun! Megumi-chan's my little sister!」

Misuzu spoke to the frolic Nei-san and Katsuko-nee.

「Uhm…is it no good to be a little sister of the two?!」
「Ah, As expected of Mii-chan, you said something good!」
「Then, Nei-sama…let's have it like that!」
「Un, Katsun…you're our little sister!」

Nei-san jumps around Yamamine-san in pleasure…!

「Oh right oh right…let's make Mii-chan our little sister while we're at it!」
「You can't, Misuzu's Danna-sama's pet!」
「Isn't that fine?! Yo-chan's pet and also our little sister!」
「I don't want that!…Danna-sama's the only one for Misuzu!」
「Uwaaa, Mii-chan declined!!!! Yo-chan, cheer me up!」

Nei-san clings to me this time!
My face got buried under her huge breasts!!

「Aah, Nei-san you're so sly! Danna-sama, me too, me too!」

Misuzu clings to me too…!
Ah, her small beautiful breasts is hitting me!!!
Though the feeling of Nei-san's huge breasts is good…
I can't just throw away the elasticity of Misuzu's breasts…!

「Hey, the two of you! We're in the middle of the meal! It's bad manners!」
「…Katsun scolded meeeee!!」

Nei-san pressed her breasts even further!

「Megumi-san…I can't become Megumi-san's sister. I don't think of wanting it either」

Misuzu smiles and spoke to Yamamine-san…

「In exchange…let's become close friends throughout our life…!」
「Misuzu-san…!」
「Now…let's eat!」
「Un un, meal meal!」
「Please eat…!」

The meal finally started.

「Danna-sama, which pasta do you like?? Misuzu will feed you!」

Misuzu spins the pasta on the fork and holds it to my mouth.

「Okay…Aaahn!」

…M-Misuzu.
T-This is embarrassing.
Everyone's looking…

「…please, Danna-sama!!!」

No good…I can't stand against this lovely face!
…Aaahn.

「Ufu…Is it delicious?」
「D…Delicious…!」

Ah, when I look at her…Nei-san's eyes is burning!

「Mii-chan…I'll do it too!」
「No, that kind of job is for the Maid Katsuko!」

Katsuko-nee interferes…!!

「Then…Let's do it in turns. Nei-san, Katsuko-sama…!」

Ah…Yamamine-san's looking at us in amazement.

No more, I'm giving up.
Sure sure, I'm such a shameless man…!!

The racket with me at the center finally settled after a while.
Right now, I'm eating between the happy girls.
I took a look at the wine in my hand from a distance.

「All of the spaghetti is delicious. Are this all Katsuko-sama's cooking??」
「That's right! Katsun's very good at cooking!」
「If you want then I can teach you anytime you want!」
「Please teach Misuzu! Hey, Megumi-san, let's learn together!」
「…yeah, sure」

She's still awkward but still, Yamamine-san seems to be able to blend with the girls somehow.
Or could it be that she's still minding Yuzuki-sensei?…She's looking at Sensei from time to time.
Sensei kept eating while talking to the butler…

「…You're still worried?」

Nei-san whispered as she saw Yamamine-san's state.

「…No, I」
「Don't mind it, donmai…We'll be taking care of Megumi-chan's anxiety ahead!」

…Anxiety??

「The 『Kuromori』 right now is no longer a prostitution section… That's why I'm still a virgin…」
「…Eh?!」

Yamamine-san's surprised.
Those words seems to be shocking for her…

「Katsuko too, she's not inviting a visitor for nearly a year too…!」
「That's why, Megumi-chan will never have to be taking care of a guest from now on. Don't worry!」
「…But」
「Don't worry. The current head of 『Kuromori』 is Ojou-sama…!」

「Un. Sensei would never do anything that we'd hate!」

In other words.
The head before Yuzuki-sensei…forced Katsuko-nee, Nagisa-san and Iwakura-senpai to prostitution.
It was overturned one year ago…
At those days when Yuzuki-sensei's the actual head…?
Sensei's listening to the conversation of the girls?…She stood from her seat and came to me.

「…I have to explain to Yoshida-kun and Misuzu-san…Megumi's mother, Emiko came to this mansion a decade ago. My father was the head of the at that time. Emiko got pregnant here…and gave birth. Then, the two of them lived here until Megumie became 6 years old…」

Yamamine-san's lost mother…was a previous generations 『Kuromori』 member.
Having her pregnant here means…Just like how Nagisa-san got pregnant with Mao-chan, Yamamine-san's mother got pregnant with a 『Guest's』 child…?!

「I played with Megumi a lot when I was young but…Megumi doesn't seem to remember me」
「…I'm sorry」
「It's fine…I've also changed a lot since the old days」

Sensei…wasn't like this before

「…Kuromori-sama」
「Please stop calling me that formal…Megumi, do you remember how you call me before??」
「…Minaho-san」
「That's right. That's better…use that please」
「…Okay」
「Megumi…Was everyone from Yamamine gentle to you?」
「Yes…I was raised like their real daughter」
「I'm glad…I was worried all this time. About you」
「…I'm sorry for making you worry」

Sensei paused for a moment…then spoke

「Megumi…You can freely decide what you want to do from now on」
「…Eh?」
「I know the talk about you coming out of Yamamine house towards Shirasaka house. You can ignore that…!」

…Shirasaka house?
…Yukino's house?
Speaking of which, there's the talk of Yamamine-san being in a distant relative of Yukino…
Why is Yukino's house involved…?/
Yukino's house…is related to 『Kuromori』 too…?!
Oh right…Yukino?!

「Katsuko-nee…what time is it?!」

Katsuko-nee took out a wristwatch for women that seems expensive when I asked her…

「…12:23!」

Yesterday…Yuzuki-sensei told Yukino that they'd meet at school at 11:00!
Where is Yukino right now!?

「Yoshida-kun…calm down. There's nothing for you to worry about…」

Sensei told me as she look at my panicking face.
Sensei's not saying 『Yukino's』 name on purpose.
To not let Yamamine-san know.

「Megumi…I'll be making the road for you. You can choose the road by your own will…」
「My will…」
「Yes…you can live as the child of Yamamine-san. I can return your Hashimoto family name as Hashimoto Emiko's daughter. You can live outside the residence just like the old times…If you want to live outside then I can rent an apartment. I will bear all the school expenses before graduating, your living costs and also university. You don't need to worry because it won't trouble Yamamine-

san…!」
「…Minaho-san」
「You're Emiko-san… 『Kuromori's』 daughter but, you don't need to become a member of 『Kuromori』 You are yourself. But…I have the responsibility of protecting you in Emiko-san's place. I will solve all of the problems you are feeling right now. …You're free! You can freely choose your future!!」

Yamamine-san shook her head greatly…

「I'm not free」
「…Megumi?」
「I…I understood it from Minaho-san's talk right now. It was Minaho-san who sent the expenses to Yamamine house for my upbringing, isn't it」
「…That's right. Your real father refused. Everything about your upbringing」
「I…was abandoned?/」
「No…That person doesn't mind the burden of money at all, he opposed you leaving the mansion. He thinks that you being here would be a drawback for 『Kuromori』 Thus, he pushed you to Yamamine-san…」
「…Yes, I know that」
「That person entrusted you to Yamamine-san's house and is still thinking that he's ruling you」
「That's what I think too…if you think of that person's relation to Yamamine house…!」

Yamamine-san's eyes had tears spilling.
Just what the hell happened
Yamamine-san's past…?!

「Megumi-chan, stay here! Together with us!」

Nei-san embraces Yamamine-san's shoulder…!

「Katsuko will be making you meals everyday!」

…Katsuko-san too

「…I feel sorry for Megumi-san!」

Misuzu clings to me and bursts into tears…
…I

「Yamamine-san, fight! It's no good to give up! If you don't you'd just regret it for your whole life!」

Yamamine-san got startled with my words then she looked at me.

「…Yoshida-kun?」
「I don't get it but…But, I don't think that you should entrust your life to someone. You have to get hurt to gain it…!」
「…Is that okay for me? To fight」
「…Isn't it Yamamine-san's life?!」

I shouted.
I don't know why…
That's right, I can't help but shout…!
Yamamine-san turns around to Sensei!

「Minaho-san…I!」

Yamamine-san said it clearly…

「I…I want to avenge my mother…!」

Sensei's surprised!

「…Megumi, you!」
「I could… never forgive that person!」

Yamamine-san shouts while grasping both her hands tightly…!

「Are you sure Megumi?…You're going to fall to hell you know…!」
「I don't mind…!」

Yamamine-san's eyes are determined.
Sensei opened her mouth.

「The current 『Kuromori』 are all acting only for revenge. Your revenge would be included in that revenge. That's why, there's no need for Megumi to defile her body… You can stay as clean as you

were…!」
「I don't want to just watch! If Minaho-san gets dirty, then I'll get dirty too…! I'll follow you until hell!」
「…Megumi」

Nei-san spoke quietly.

「Sensei…Sensei's revenge is our revenge. Sensei didn't just drag us…we're all fighting the same fight」
「That's right, Ojou-sama…Ojou-sama released Katsuko and the others. Ojou-sama's pain is Katsuko's pain1」
「I'm sure Maru-chan would say the same thing. If we're not called out by Sensei, I think we might've been killed by those people…!」

Sensei looked at me and Misuzu.

「Sorry…Yoshida-kun and Misuzu-san's not related here. Especially Yoshida-kun…you were just dragged into this plan of mine…」

…I see
Sensei's plan was towards the Shirasaka house since the beginning.
She just chose me as a piece to make Shirasaka Yukino fall.
…But
The me right now…

「No…I'm also Sensei's 『Toy』 A member of 『Kuromori』
Sensei's revenge will be my revenge…I will follow everyone to the end…!」

Misuzu jumps at my words!

「That's my Danna-sama! Misuzu is everyone's ally! I love you everyone…!!!!」

Misuzu smiles…
Nei-san and Katsuko-nee too…

「…Everyone」

Sensei looks at Yamamine-san
Yamamine-san looks straight at Sensei…

「Megumi…Are you really going to do anything for the sake of revenge?」
「I will…」
「I won't go easy」
「I'll do anything Minahio-san orders…」
「…You might get prostituted?!」
「…I'm ready for it」
「…You might even kill a person」
「I'm fine…I'll endure anything」
「…Got it」

Sensei embraced Yamamine-san.

「…Megumi, from now on, you're my 『Eighth toy』…!」

---

1. This is in katakana english ↩
2. ↩
3. My name's Bond. ↩

57. Past and Present

「Minaho-san…What should I do?」

Yamamine-san asked Sensei with sincere eyes.

「Right…First, let's make you beautiful」
「…Eh/」
「Rather than making you beautiful…let's have you regain your original beauty…!」
「I'm not beautiful」
「Megumi's mother was very beautiful…!」
「My mother's different from me.」

Sensei caressed Yamamine-san's cheeks as she look down…

「No…You're Emiko's daughter. That person's beauty was inherited properly…!」

The butler Morimoto-san comes…

「Ojou-sama…Yuuka-sama, Hidemi-sama, and Tamayo-sama has come…!」
「Oh my, they're all here now」

Sensei turned to us.

「Now, let's go…we'll be introducing you to your seniors…!」

From the terrace of the mansion…
We passed through a room that's like a hall.

「It's been a long while…Minaho-sama」
「How are you? Minaho-san」
「It's been a while! Minaho-chi!」

Three women were there.

「Good day…Yuuka-sama, Hidemi-san, Tamayo」

Sensei greet the three women.
The women are all beauties with good style but their age is inconsistent.
『Yuuka-sama』 who's long hair is tied up is on her second half in thirties. She's wearing a low cut dress.
『Hidemi-san』 should be around thirty/ She's wearing white clothes and having short hair.
『Tamayo』 -san looks like she's around mid-twenties. Checkered hat and sunglasses. Wearing a jeans and stylish jacket.

「These three people here were already here since the late head of the family. They're all independent now. Yuuka-sama's managing a hair salon.」
「…Hello everyone」
「Hidemi-san is on a beauty salon」
「…Hello」
「Tamayo's a stylist…」
「…Sup!」

Haa…Everyone's working and had a success.

「Of course, Katsuko knows all of them」
「Yes, I've been in debt with them since I came here…!」

That overbearing Katsuko-nee is completely grateful…!

「Oh right, Katsuko-chan who just came here cried a lot, didn't she…?!」

Yuuka-san speaks nostalgically.

「Right! She said she can never get good with fellatio…Hidemi-neesan trained her intensively…」
「Right, Katsuko-chan can't bring herself to drink semen by all means…I trained her a lot so she fell to a slave of penis」
「As a result, she became the fellatio master when I got out of this mansion!」
「She really has grown…!」

Katsuko-nee's face turned red…
Haa, Katsuko-nee also had that time.

「I'm really indebt to everyone for those times…!」

Katsuko-nee lowered her head.

「Next to Katsuko is my 『Fifth toy』 Nei…」
「Hello! I'm Nei!」

Nei-san bowed.

「Nei, you know Yuuka-san don't you」
「Yes, I'm always getting a cut at Yuuka-san's shop!」

…Is that so?/
Nei-san's blond hair is dyed at Yuuka-san's hair salon.

「You're welcome to my beauty salon! I'll do a whole body care! A cute child like you is very welcome!」
「Geez, Hidemi-nee, you don't have resistance on cute girls…!」

The older sisters laughs.

「Next to Nei is Yoshida-kun…My 『Seventh toy』」
「Hello…I'm Yoshida」

Uwaa, I'm so nervous

「Oh, he's not a dick slave!」
「I never thought that Minaho-sama would make a boy 『toy』」
「But…he's a bit unrefined」

Well…
I'm just an indecent child anyway

「That's why…I made you came here today」

Sensei told the three girls.

「Everyone, please refine Yoshida-kun…!」

Their eyes shined…!

「I see, that's how it is Minaho-san!」
「I was contacted by Minaho-chi beforehand so I came with dress

patterns appropriate for this boy!」
「What kind of concept should we make?」

Katsuko-nee answered Yuuka-san's question.

「Eeh, please make him popular on middle school girls…!」

Eeeeeeh??!
Katsuko-nee…why is it exclusive on the middle school girls?!

「That's because the next target would be a middle school student…!」

Could that be?
…Yukino's little sister, Maika?

「Right, if it's just a middle school girl, then it would be easy on the hairstyle and clothes…!」

Tamayo-san said it heartily but…is that how it is?

「But…I didn't bring a lot f beauty treatments for men today.」

Saying that, Yuzuki-sensei answers Hidemi-san.

「Oh…It's not Yoshida-kun that everyone's going to polish. This child please., It's Megumi. She just became my 『Toy』」
「Nice to meet you…I'm Megumi」

Hearing the name Megumi…Yuuka-san and Hidemi-san was surprised!

「…You're Megumi-chan!」
「That's right, Yuuka-neesan! There's no doubt, it's Megumi-chan!」

…I see
Yamamine-san lived in this mansion until she was six…

「Do you remember me?」
「Yes. I do…!」
「Eeeeh, then what about me??」

「…Somehow」
「Somehow??…Dammit!」
「…I'm sorry」
「Don't mind it, Hidemi has changed a lot since then」
「Is that so?…Yuuka-neesan」
「That's right. Ten years has passed since then!」
「Right, it was a sudden increase from teens to late twenties after all. Yuuka-neesan changed from thirties to fourties so there's not much change!」
「Hey, Hidemi…I'm gonna get angry!」
「…I'm sorryyyy!!」

Tamayo-san asks Yamamine-san who's surrounded by the two.

「Yuuka-neesan…what kind of girl is she?/」
「Oh right, Tamayo-chan passed by her…There was Emiko-san in this mansion before. Megumi-chan is Emiko-san's daughter. She was here until she was six」
「…Emiko-san really took care of us」
「She was a good person. I'm really grateful for Megumi-chan's mother」
「…Thank you very much」

Yamamine-san says her thanks to Yuuka-san and Hidemi-san's praise.

「Ah, I just remembered! We didn't pass each other! It was at the time I just entered the mansion…right right, you were there! If I remember, your mother suddenly died…!」
「…Tamayo-chan!」

Yuuka-san scolds Tamayo-san!

「Ah…Sorry」
「It's fine…I'm really glad that everyone remembers my mother. I think that my mother would be glad…」

Yamamine-san's words…turned the place solemn.

「But, Minaho-san…It's good that Megumi-chan's back but…if Megumi-chan's going to entertain a 『Guest』 then\」

「That's right…We will never let this child experience what we had…!」

Yuuka-san and Hidemi-san presses Sensei

「Don't worry. 『Kuromori』 right now is no longer a 『Prostitution Section』 I never intend to sell Megumi's body…!」
「But…Minaho-sama made Megumi-chan your 『Toy』?」
「I'm the one who asked for it」

Yamamine-san told the two.

「I…want to avenge my mother…!」
「…Megumi-chan」

Yamamine-san's eyes are sincere…

「I think that you two have heard the rumor already but…I've abolished the 『Prostitution section』 of 『Kuromori』 one year ago…and there are other prostitution organization starting in replacement of 『Kuromori』」
「Yes, I know…that man came on my beauty salon. 『Do you want to return』 he asked. Of course, I refused.1 The man's aim isn't me, but the knowledge about my customers」
「It also came to my hair salon…The reason why I came here today is to check Minaho-sama's real intention. That man has said that he's like the legitimate successor of 『Kuromori』 after all…!」
「Eh eh eh?! Nobody came to me though…Yuuka-neesan, that man means that, isn't it?」
「…Isn't that obvious, Tamayo」
「Uwaa, that's dangerous…!」

I don't get it well…
There's a guy who';s trying to bring back the prostitution organization 『Kuromori』 without permission…?!

「I want to crush that person's plan completely. And, I want to end the existence of 『Kuromori』 itself in the end…!」

Sensei informed everyone…!

「…You're prepared aren't you, Minaho-sama?」

「…We're all Minaho-chi's ally!」
「Yes, if Minaho-san wasn't there, we couldn't have come out of here…!」

The three onee-sans grasped Sensei's hand…!

「…Could I ask for your cooperation?」
「Of course. Minaho-sama」
「I'll be telling the old members of the mansion who survived…!」
「No, we can't tell them immediately! That man's definitely observing the other girls…!」
「Right…Akiko-chan and Yukari-chan's clinging to that man after all」
「Got it…I'll chose the people we can trust」
「Right, I will be investigating about Akiko-chan」
「Please…everyone」

Sensei bowed to the three

「By the way, Minaho-san…there's still another one you haven't introduced to us yet…」
「As expected, Hidemi-neesan loves cute girls!」

Hearing Hidemi-san and Tamayo-san's voice, Misuzu comes forward.

「…I'm Misuzu. Nice to meet you」
「Hello…Is Misuzu-chan also Minaho-san's 『Toy』?」
「No…Misuzu is Danna-sama's pet…!」

Saying that, Misuzu grips my sleeve tightly.

「Oh my…he's not just what you see. As expected of the 『Toy』 Minaho-san chose, making a cute pet like her!」
「Misuzu-chan, is your Master gentle to you?」
「Yes, I love him!」

Yuuka-san asks then Misuzu answers laughingly as she cling to me. Yamamine-san looks at our faces in surprise…

「Misuzu-san is Kouzuki-sama's grandchild…」

Sensei explained to the onee-sans.

「Eh, Kouzuki-sama…that Kouzuki-sama?!」2
「Tamayo, you're too surprised…!」
「Sorry…But, are you sure? Doing this to a Kouzuki ojou-sama?」
「The person herself says that it's fine so it's good」
「Yes…Misuzu's happy for being made pet by Danna-sama!」

Misuzu stated it clearly…
But…Kouzuki house, is it that amazing?3

「We're really indebt with Kouzuki-sama. I also received help in the management of the salon. I'm grateful to him from the bottom of my heart. Please tell him that I'm sorry for the long silence」

Yuuka-san bows to Misuzu.

「I've kept him company for two, three times…It's really nostalgic」
「Ah, Tamayo was embraced one time too…just one time」

Eh…Misuzu's grandpa had sex with all of these onee-sans?
What a stud…!4

「I've also kept him company! Of course Nagisa too」

Katsuko-nee and Nagisa-san too…!

「The women of 『Kuromori』 had been enjoyed by Kouzuki-sama briefly…but, she's usually Yuuka-neesan's 『Guest』」

Sensei seizes them.
Uwa, all of the women in this mansion…!

「…Grandfather has been indebt with everyone. Especially, Yuuka-sama, he's still taking about you even now」
「…Is Kouzuki-sama healthy/」
「Yes. He's in good health!」
「Is that part is still active?」
「…Yes」
「We're already aunts in age but…would Kouzuki-sama still hold us…?」

「My grandfather will surely be pleased…!」
「Right. I got a young and lovely pet…Kouzuki-sama's favorite type. I'll take that child and call him some time…」
「Okay, Yuuka-sama…we will be waiting!」

Misuzu talks as if it's a normal conversation…
Is the upper class such a world
Yamamine-san who's brought from the normal family is in blank surprise.

「…My grandfather isn't a person who'd treat his granddaughter specially. When I told that I want to work on Nagisa-sama's shop, he should know what would be the result. He knows but…he sent me off」
「But he shouldn't expect that Misuzu-san would become Yoshida-kun's pet」

Sensei told Misuzu.

「Yes. I think that my grandfather thinks that my virginity won't be taken even if Nagisa-sama teases me. My grandfather has decided to let me marry my fiance while still a virgin…」

But…Nagisa-san handed Misuzu to me…
I stole Misuzu's virginity.

「It's my first time betraying my grandfathers expectations. But I don't regret it. Misuzu's very happy right now」

I've done something serious to my pet girl.
Nagisa-san's line 『I'll give you my most treasured pet』 was true.
Nagisa-san might be punished by Misuzu's grandfather depending on the circumstances…
Prepared for that…Nagisa-san handed Misuzu to me…

「…Misuzu will definitely be happy」

Only those ordinary words came out of my mouth…

「Geez Danna-sama! Misuzu's already happy! Also, the who should be making the other happy is the pet Misuzu! Danna-sama should just love me as much as you want!」

Misuzu embraces me…
I also embraced Misuzu…

「Danna-sama…Misuzu will surely make you happy…!」

◇ ◇ ◇

Un…Certainly, I'm happy, but.
Why did this…

I'm sitting on a chair right now, having my hair cut by Yuuka-san…
As expected of a beautician, the feeling of their skill is really good, it's shown in the ticktacks of the scissors.
That's good…from time to time, Yuuka-san's breasts is pushed on my head but that's still within expectations.
The problem is…
Why are you sucking my dick…Misuzu?
Misuzu is kneeling betwen my groin sitting down the chair…!

「It's intensive training on fellatio!」

W-With such a radiant smile…Ah, there's saliva dripping from her mouth…

「Misuzu-sama, you have to hold the penis on this angle…!」

Katsuko-nee too…!
For Misuuzu, it's a field exercise…!

「Oh my, Katsuko-chan's now the teacher…」

Yuuka-san continues to cut calmly…and I

「Hey hey, don't move…!」

My head was made to hit Yuuka-san's big breasts again.

「Danna-samaaa, please looook…!」

Looking down, Misuzu licks up glans as she looks up at me.

「That's right…when in the middle of fellatio, look up at your

partner's face as much as possible…you can confirm whether it feels good where you're stimulating.」
「Err, here?」

Misuzu licks the back of the glans…!
…ah, it feels good!

「Ah, Danna-sama, it feels good here isn't it?! I'll be licking it more!」

Her small red tongue moves!
…It feels good!

「Misuzu-chan, it's no good to just lick. Take out your breasts to stimulate the man's sight」

Yuuka-san advises Misuzu while cutting my hair…

「But…Misuzu's breasts is small」
「It's not a problem of size…ask him」
「Danna-sama…do you like Misuzu's breasts?」

Misuzu looks up at me…

「I like it…it's not tiny. It maybe small but it's as cute as Misuzu. It's beautiful and the elasticity feels good…」

Misuzu smiled.

「Then…I'll be showing it…」

Misuzu took off her uniform. She threw it to the chair on the side… then she took off her bra.

「It's embarrassing…」

Misuzu's healthy naked chest is exposed before me.

「Misuzu-sama, do you know Paizuri?」

Katsuko-nee asks Misuzu.

「No, I don't」

「It's a technique where you sandwich the penis between your breasts to stimulate…」
「Is there something like that?」
「Yes, there is」
「But…Katsuko-sama has bountiful breasts so it's possible but…it's impossible for Misuzu's chest」
「You don't need to force and sandwich it…Misuzu-sama, please put your nipple on his glans」
「Like this?」

Misuzu's aroused nipples run over my glans!!!

「Does it feel good?…Danna-sama」
「Un…it feels good Misuzu」
「This also makes me feel good too!」

Misuzu's face blushes…

「Right now…I'm very wet」
「I'm about to finish cutting so wait for a bit」

Yuuka-san told Misuzu.

「…Okay」

Misuzu sticks to my penis like a hungry kitten again…

「You should make noise on purpose, like bad manners when fellating!」

Katsuko-nee's guidance enters.

「Is that so?…」

Pichapicha…chururu…pechopecho…!

Misuzu's making wet sounds on purpose as she suck on my dick…

「That's right…You're doing well Misuzu-sama…!」
「Thank you bewy muff!」

Misuzu…don't speak while your mouth is full.

「Please lick the bag down there…this part」

Katsuko-nee's caressing my balls

「Here?」

Misuzu licks my balls's surface.
…Uu!

「Ah, Danna-sama twitched! Ufu, so cute!」
「Misuzu's multiple times cuter…!」
「That's not true…」

Misuzu's sucking the glans again!
…Oh, that feels great!

「Look…Danna-sama's much cuter」

Dammit…I can't move during the haircut…!

「Misuzu…I'll tease you a lot later」
「Yes…please tease Misuzu under Danna-sama's arms!」

Misuzu put my dick inside her mouth while having a red face
While looking up at me with enchanted eyes…
Cute…My pet is really cute.

「My my, I'm envious of your innocence…」

Yuuka-san told us without any hesitation

「You two are so cute. I love it. I want to teach you two anything I know…my treasured siblings!」

Katsuko-nee says that but…

「Right…these children will be the last generation in this mansion. They'll be the youngest brother and sister we will have…」

Yuuka-san says so too

「Okay, done…both of you should take a a shower because there should be hair sticking on your bodies. It's fine to take it slowly…

Misuzu-san, you're dying to have it inside you don't you?? If you want to have sex then do it!」

Eh…Yuuka-san?!

「Yes, thank you very much」
「Katsuko-chan, get in there too」
「…Is that okay?」
「Yes, we'll be waiting, drinking tea. I'll be cutting Megumi-chan's hair after Hidemi-chan finishes her makeover anyway. I also want to talk to Minaho-sama more…」

◇ ◇ ◇

We were taken by Katsuko-san to a large indoor bath.
This mansion was built for high class prostitutes before.
That's why it seems that there's also this facility.
If I recall…that one's a decoration in Arabian harem.
Even the dressing room is wide.

「Danna-sama, Misuzu will take off your clothes!」
「Wait wait, this is the job of the Maid Katsuko!」
「Then, I'll leave Danna-sama to Katsuko-sama. In exchange, Danna-sama…please strip off Misuzu…!」

I'll do it…let me do it!
I took off her clothes…then her diaper.
Since her collar is made of leather, I also took it off.
But …the titanium anklet on her leg remains.
Misuzu…my pet.

It's my second time seeing Misuzu stark naked…
Delicate body…beautiful small breasts.
A hairless genital.
Everything about her is cute.

「Ehehe, it's embarrassing if you look that much…」
「Then, should I stop looking?」
「Iyan~…Please look. Please touch. Everything is owned by Danna-sama!」

…Misuzu!

「…*Cough*」

Katsuko-nee clears her throat.
Sorry, it's not that I forgot about Katsuko-nee…

「Please take a look at Katsuko's naked body!」

Right.
This is my first time taking my time looking at Katsuko-nee's naked body.
It was always busy after all…

Un…If Misuzu's naked body is on the first class idol…
Katsuko-nee's lively body looks like a foreign beauty model…
Her explosive breasts and ass that don't hang down…
Her waist is extremely narrow…

「I'm doing muscle training so my body line is always taken care of!」

Sasuga5 Katsuko-nee…!

「I'm being diligent as a woman of 『Kuromori』 up until now. But, I'll do this for only you know. Katsuko is your woman…」

Katsuko-nee says that and gave my lips a hot kiss.

「Ah, Katsuko-sama, you're unfair!」
「Misuzu-sama's been fellating him since a while ago though」
「Fellatio and kiss are two different things!」
「Misuzu, don't get angry…come here, I'll give you a kiss」
「okaay, Danna-sama!」

I kissed Misuzu too.

「Ufu…I love you Danna-sama」
「Katsuko again!」

◇　◇　◇

We entered the bathroom…
Bright light beams from the skylight.
As expected, the bathroom was decorated in Arabian manner…
The steam is wonderful6…and the temperature is high.
Even if you're naked, it's not cold at all.
Inside the bathroom…
…are naked women.

Yamamine-san who's lying down on the towel naked…and a naked Hidemi-san giving a massage.
There's something like a green oil being applied to her…
Is this beauty treatment?
I don't know how it works though…
And to make it strange, the naked Nei-san is watching over…!
Tamaoyo-san's soaking herself in the bathtub leisurely.

「Oh, Yo-chan…Un, your haircut looks cool!」

The naked Nei-san smiles at me without hiding anything…
My eyes go to pink nipple and the secret place with thin pubic hair…
She's a perfect nude art in Europe as always.
I can feel the divinity…

「Yoshida-kun…?! Kyaa!!」

Yamamine-san who's lying down naked hides her own ass in surprise.

「Don't do that, Megumi-chan…You're already Minaho's 『Toy』 aren't you? There's no secrecy between 『toys』!」

Hidemi-san said while applying oil on Yamamine-san's healthy naked body.
Hidemi-san keeps a perfect body line that you won't think of her as 30 years old.

「…But」
「Don't say But! Megumi-chan's going to have sex with Yo-chan soon!」
「…Eh?」

「Yo-chan, you want to do it with Megumi-chan don't you?!」

Nei-san asked straight.

「Yes, I want to」

I also answered clearly.
I've learned that at such times, it's rude if you didn't answer clearly…

「Megumi-chan's a virgin?」
「…That's right, but」
「Then, can you give your virginity to Yo-chan?」
「…That's」

Yamamine-san's troubled…
Of course, even if you ask that suddenly.

「Nei-sama, I think that you should say that after giving your own virginity…!」

Katsuko-nee told Nei-san strictly.

「Uwaa, I stirred up the hornet's nest…!」
「Get fucked already!」
「…Katsun scolded me agaiiin!!」

Nei-san ran away and dived in the bath!
…Splash!

「Hey! That's bad manners!」

Nei-san was scolded by Tamayo-san in the bathtub this time…!

「I'm sorryyy!」

Nei-san apologized humbly…!

「But…Megumi-sama. Please get yourself ready all the time. If Ojou-sama orders, you're a 『Toy』 so you have to sleep with whoever it is…」

Katsuko-nee told Yamamine-san.

「…Okay」
「Perhaps…Megumi-sama's first partner would be Yo-chan! I don't think that will change!」

Nei-san said while making a breast stroke in the wide bathtub.

「I think so too…!」

Katsuko-nee too…

「Perhaps…that will be」

Yamamine-san muttered weakly
Her hand is still hiding her ass.

「Don't worry Megumi-san. Misuzu just have her virginity to Danna-sama yesterday!」
「Misuzu-san…yesterday?」
「Yes, it's not even a day passing! But Danna-sama's very gentle!」

Misuzu smiled to Yamamine-san kindly…!

「Misuzu will have sex with Danna-sama from now on. I think that if Megumi-san take a look at us, she won't get scared anymore!」

…Misuzu?

The naked and blushing Misuzu spread out her arms in front of me.

「Danna-sama…please ravish Misuzu!」

There's love nectar dripping from Misuzu's legs.
…I

「Wait up!!!」

Katsuko-nee jumps and roars

「I'll join! Misuzu-sama's not the only one who's been enduring all this time wanting to be embraced!」
「…Then how about the two of us be embraced by Danna-sama at

the same time?
「That's what I want! I won't agree otherwise!」

Eh…Misuzu and Katsuko-nee 3P?!

While being watched by Yamamine-san and Nei-san…!

---

1. Why do I imagine Rohan in this particular line? ↩
2. Hehehe, he'll show up later, don't worry, they'll reveal Misuzu's real family later ↩
3. Oh Yoshida. ↩
4. Aahahahahahahahaha ↩
5. As expected of ↩
6. Praise GABIN ↩

58. Happy sex…!

「Anyway, let's take a shower first!」
「That's right!」

Katsuko-nee and Misuzu took me to the shower…
Katsuko-nee holds the shower head.

「Okay…Onee-san will be washing you!」

Warm water sprinkle at my back.

「Ah, Misuzu will also wash you too!」

Misuzu pulls the shower head next to it…and boldly showered me…!
…Uu!
The hot water hitting my erect glans…makes me shiver.

「As expected, it feels good! Misuzu also places the shower on that place and masturbates!」

…Misuzu.
…Is that something you say with a smile?

「Recently…I always shout 『…Danna-sama』 even when masturbating. I carried it thoroughly to make it a habbit. That's why, Misuzu will never have an affair. I'll have only Danna-sama for the rest of my life!」

Misuzu told me with earnest eyes.

「That's why…please believe Misuzu already!」

…Eh?!

「I believe you…Misuzu」
「I know that…But Danna-sama doesn't believe that Misuzu will be on Danna-sama's side all the time, don't you?」

…That's

「Because…Misuzu's very cute. Having such a cute girl as a pet…is like a dream」

…That's right.
This must be a mistake.

「…I'm sure that someday, Misuzu will find some guy that's better than me. Then, you wouldn't want to stay with a man like me. Misuzu's free after all…」

…I can't be convinced otherwise.
I can't bind Misuzu.

「Of course, I'll seriously cherish you as long as you're my pet. I love Misuzu after all. I'll do anything I can. I'm fine being beaten up by Misuzu's fiance. I'm fine being stabbed. Even killed…!」

That's my real intention.

「…Danna-sama」
「…Perhaps, I」
「…What?」
「…A man like me can't make Misuzu happy, I think…!」

I'm just a worthless dumb boy…
I'm not a suitable man for someone like Misuzu…

「…Idiot」

Misuzu whispered in a low voice…!

「Danna-sama no…Baka」
「Un…I think so too. I'm an foolish idiot man…!」
「That's not it!…idiot!」

Misuzu jumps at me and kissed me!

「How many times should I say it to make you understand?! It's the pet Misuzu who should make Danna-sama happy! Danna-sama just needs to be beside Misuzu!」

「…But, won't Misuzu be unhappy with that?」
「Misuzu's happiness is devoting herself to Danna-sama!」

…Misuzu?

「I won't part from you anymore! I'll definitely make you happy!」

MIsuzu's tongue entered my mouth!

「Un, you said something good, Misuzu-sama!…Katsuko-neesan is the same! I'll devote my life to you. I'll be a woman only for you and I'll make you happy!」

Katsuko-nee embraces me from the back!
The naked big breasts is being crushed in my back…!

「My my, just what happened to you…Katsuko-chan?」
「Was Katsuko-san this kind of character?」

The two Onee-sama…Hidemi-san and Tamayo-san are surprised at Katsuko-san's transformation.

「…Katsuko awakened to love!」
「No, Katsuko-nee…that's exaggeration!」
「It's not an exaggeration!」

Katsuko-san took out bubbles from the body soap bottle and paints her own breasts.

「Here, Misuzu-sama!」
「What are you going to do?」
「Isn't that obvious? 『Breast Soap』!」

Katsuko-nee scrubbed my back with her own bubbly breasts!
The feeling of the soft breasts touching my back…!
I can feel the projection of her nipples from in the bubbles…!

「It feels good doesn't it?」
「Yes…It's making me shiver!」
「Ufu…feel more of Onee-san!」

Katsuko-nee took my arm and rubbed it in her breasts…!

「Aaaah, Misuzu, Misuzu will do it too!」

Misuzu applied bubbles on her small breasts and rubbed against my chest…!
Misuzu's popping nipples …feels good…!

「How is it Danna-sama…Misuzu's breasts isn't as big as Katsuko-sama's so I don't think that it feels that good but I'll do my best to serve you!」

As usual, Misuzu seems to have inferiority complex on her own chest…

「That's not true…the elasticity of Misuzu's breasts…is unbearably good!」

I kissed Misuzu's nose.

「Ahhn～…Thank you very much!」

From the back, Katsuko-nee stretches her bubbly hand towards my crotch…!

「Misuzu-sama…stroke the penis with your bubbly hands like this!」

Her white fingers…crawls up and down my pole!

「Oh…That feels too good!」
「L-Like this?」

Misuzu's thin fingers touches my penis…!

「That's right, use an image of a loach slipping out of your hand!」
「…An image of a loach in a hand?!」
「Yes!」
「But, Danna-sama's thing is as big as an eel!」
「Then, use an image of an eel!」
「Got it!…Unagi-san[1] Tsurun![2]」

Misuzu's hand…strokes my penis…!!

「…Unagi goes tsurun!…Unagi goes tsurun!」

Amazing…it's being stroked well!
Katsuko-nee's education is perfect…I-It feels good!

「It's fine to grip it stronger! Faster…!」
「…Errr」
「Please let me do it first…it's like this!」

…sukosukosukosukosukosuko!!!!
…K-Katsuko-nee!
It's too good!

「Is that okay doing that fast?!」
「Rather, it's a disqualification if you don't do this fast!」
「…I'll remember that! I'll master it by the end of the day!」
「Misuzu-sama, please stroke the tip of the penis! Give it a stroke as if you're holding the head and chin of the eel…!」
「Like this…?!」

The glans and the back of it is being rubbed at the same time!
……Uuu, Misuzuuuu!!!!

「Aha, Danna-sama looks like he's feeling too good! So cute!」

The naked Misuzu is smiling like she's amazingly happy…
Beads of sweat flows on Misuzu's nose.…
She's sweating this much…moving her hand for my sake…

「Then, while you're stroking the penis with your right hand… caress the balls with your left hand…Then slide in your fingers inside his anus…!」
「…Like this?」

Misuzu's clean fingertip…pats my anus!
My body trembles…!

「Ufufu, Danna-sama, it felt good having your hole in your buttocks be touched doesn't it? Misuzu will take note of that! I'll do it like this in the future!」

…M-Misuzuuuu!!!

Katsuko-nee whispered in my ears…

「Want to cum outside?…Or do you want to cum inside?」
「…Inside is better」
「Then, order that you want to have sex」
「…Eh?」
「『I want to violate you』Say it…please…!」

…I

「…Misuzu」
「Yes!」
「…Katsuko-nee」
「Yes」
「I want to violate the two of you…I will ravish you two!」
「You have to say『let me do you』!」
「That's right, Danna-sama…」

Shit…My heart's beating so fast already…!

「…Let me do you two! I'll pour it inside!」

Misuzu in front of me opened her legs wide…!

「Yes…go on」

…Misuzu's crack wet with bubble invites me.
I leaned on Misuzu's body like that…!
Katsuko-nee…bind my arms from behind!

「Not yet!」
「…Katsuko-nee?」
「We have to wash off the bubbles properly…Also, Misuzu-sama.
Having sex on tiles is dangerous, you can't move well!」

Katsuko-nee sprinkles hot water shower to Misuzu and me…!

「We got a mat for sex…!」

Katsuko-nee's eyes are burning in lust…!

◇ ◇ ◇

As expected of a bathroom from a prostitution mansion…
It's complete with facilities to cater sex in bathroom…
Katsuko-nee carries an air mat…

「…Nei-sama, Megumi-sama, please come here! We're going to have sex so please observe it closely!」
「…Eh?」

Yamamine-san's cowering

「We're just going to look…it's not scary. Let's watch it!」

Hidemi-san called out to Yamamine-san gently.

「Katsuko-chan, can I watch too?」

Tamami-san rises from the bathtub.

「Of course! Tamami-sama!」
「I'm used to watching sex over the monitor but…it's my first time watching it close!」

Nei-san splashed on the hot water and came over here too.

「Let's go, Megumi-chan」

Is Yamamine-san embarrassed? She's binding her body in an orange bath towel and is brought over by Hidemi-san.
There's spectators around the air mattress…!

「Misuzu-sama…can Katsuko go ahead?」

Katsuko-nee told Misuzu.

「Eh, if we suddenly show Katsuko-chan's wild sex, Megumi-chan would get scared!」

Tamayo-san's voice loudly answered Katsuko-nee…

「That is Katsuko's old image! Katsuko has changed!」

Looking at Katsuko-nee…Misuzu…

「Please go on Katsuko-sama…I'll hand you the first one!」
「…Thank you very much!」

Katsuko-nee lied down on the air mattress!
The naked Katsuko-nee…
Her mountain of breasts is swelling thickly…!

「Eh, Katsuko-chan's the bottom? This child's still inexperienced and it would've been better of Katsuko-chan's on the top banging wildly!」

Tamayo-san gives her opinion again…!

「Outsiders should stay quiet…It's love time from now on!」
「My, love time!」

Tamayo-san laughs.

「…Tamayo, you're laughing too much」

Hidemi-san reproved it.

「Yes, I'm sorry…!」

There's five women around me.
Misuzu's face looks aroused as she waits for her turn.
Yamamine-san as a perplexed face.
Nei-san's…pretending to show a smile for the time being.
Tamayo-san looks interestingly.
Hidemi-san's watching us like a coach of a club activity.

「…Are you feeling nervous being watched by everyone?」

Katsuko-nee on top of the mat asks me laughingly.

「…A bit」
「You don't need to mind them」
「…But」
「Do you love me?」
「…I do」
「I also love you」
「…Katsuko-nee」

「…Take a look only at me…!」
「…Un」

I leaned on Katsuko-nee's voluptuous body.
Katsuko-nee's body is soft…and warm
First, a kiss.

「I love your kisses」
「Same」
「Touch my breasts」

I buried my face in Katsuko-nee's rich chest…
I sucked her nipples.

「…Aaahn…It feels good.」

Roll my tongue on it…

「…Un…This is good…Do you love onee-san's breasts?」
「I love it」
「It's yours…love it a lot」
「…Un」

I touch her genital while attacking her nipples…
The rough feeling of her pubic hair…
The lower spring is gushing forth…!

「Sorry…I want to put it in already」
「Me too…I want to be ravished by you…!」

Katsuko-nee opened her legs wide and invites me…
…I

「…I'm going in」
「…Come」

I won't push it in a dash…
I entered Katsuko-nee…slowly, and slowly.

「…Ah…Ahhh…Aaah…!」

My glans reaches the bottom of her vagina…

「Ufufu…you're inside me」
「Un…It's in to the root」
「Thanks…you come inside me again」
「I'm the one who should say that. Katsuko-nee's insides feels good」
「…Move」
「…Un」

Katsuko-nee's abundant body shakes…

「Ah…Ah…Ah…Aaaaah…!」

The shaking gradually grows greater…!

「…Kiss me」

I intertwine my tongue with Katsuko-nee's
It tastes like sweet honey…

「…I love you…Just you is enough for me」

Katsuko-nee's trained vagina wraps my penis gently…

「…Katsuko-nee…I'm about to…!」
「Wait for a bit…endure it for a bit longer…」
「…Un, got it…!」
「It's fine to cum inside…Can you call me Onee-chan in a loud voice when you're going to let it out…?」
「Un…Got it…Onee-chan…!」
「Aaah…Aaah…Onee-chan's going to cum too…!」

I intensified the movements of my waist…!
I'm already…reaching…my limit…!

「Aaaaaah, Onee-chan…is going to cum too…I'm about to cum… Aa, aah, aaaah, C-Cumming! Cumming! I'm cumming! Let it out! Let it out inside Onee-chan! Aaaaah…Cummiiing…!!!!!!」
「I'm going to cum too…O-Onee-chan!!!!」

Katsuko-nee embraces my body tightly.
Her whole body convulses while embracing me!!!
I'm sending out large quantities of white stuff inside Katsuko-nee's

womb!!!

「…Aaaaaah, the hot stuff came in! I love you! I love youuuu!!!!」
「…Onee-chan, onee-chan, onee-chan…it feels good…!!!!3」

Dokun…dokun…dokunn…
…It was a long ejaculation.
…Haa, haa, haa, haa, haa.

「…Thanks, it felt good」
「Thank you too」

I kissed Katsuko-nee once again…

「…It's my first time seeing sex looking that happy!」

That was Tamayo-san's voice.

「Right…Katsuko-chan grew up. I'm envious as a woman…!」

That's Hidemi-san…
The two of them are holding their crotch.

「…That's sly, Katsun」

Nei-san's voice…
The naked Nei-san…as expected, she's comforting her wet crack…

「I want to be called 『Onee-chan』 by Yo-chan, I want to feel good…!」

Katsuko-nee smiles at Nei-san while still connected to me.

「If that's what you think then throw your virginity already…
there's nothing happier than this」
「…But…I」

Still, Nei-san's hesitating for sex…

「Then…Katsuko will be enjoying this 『Onee-chan sex』 alone!」

Katsuko-nee embraces my head…
I sucked Katsuko-nee's nipple again…

「Ahn…Do you love Onee-chan?」
「…I do」

Nei-san's crotch shows her love nectar dripping out…!

「I want to do it too…I want to be called Onee-chan!!!」
「Then…summon your courage![4]」

Katsuko-nee's gentle to Nei-san at any aspects…!

「…So sex can be this happy…!」

Yamamine-san muttered…
Yamamine-san's stunned by the sex performed before her eyes…
The bath towel she rolled is opening…
The naked, tall and tight body of a sports girl…
Her cute pink nipple is sharp…
Her genital that's wet with love nectar is exposed…
Yamamine-san's the same as Misuzu, they hardly have any hair growing there…

「Sex isn't that happy!」

Misuzu told Yamamine-san…

「Danna-sama is gentle at sex that's why it's happy!」

I kissed Katsuko-nee while she raises her body…

「Misuzu-sama…thank you for waiting…!」

She touched Misuzu's hand…!

「…Substitution!」

Oh right…It's Misuzu's turn next.

◇ ◇ ◇

「…Can Misuzu go under too? I want to be ravished by Danna-sama too!」
「…Un, okay」

Misuzu lied down on the mat.

「Ehehe, it feels nervous being seen by everyone…」
「…Are you okay?」
「If Danna-sama kisses me…I'll be fine!」

I kissed Misuzu's cute lips…

「…I'll be fine now」

I embraced Misuzu's delicate body…

「Misuzu,'s calming down in my arms」
「Yes…I'm a woman who was born for Danna-sama」
「…I love you」
「Misuzu loves you too」

I touched Misuzu's breasts…

「Ahn…it tickles」
「…Should I stop then?」
「You bully…please touch it a lot…it's yours after all」
「Misuzu's breasts fits my palm completely「」」
「Then, I'm really a match for Danna-sama」
「I love Misuzu's breasts. It's cute, just like Misuzu.」
「I love you Danna-sama!」

I licked Misuzu's nipple…!

「…Aaahn…Aah…more, please tease me more…!」
「…Like this?」
「Much more violent…please make a mess out of Misuzu!」

I satisfied myself with Misuzu's nipples…!

「Can I kiss your navel?」
「…Yes」

I kised Misuzu's cute navel.
I licked it over.

「Ahn…don't…lick that place…it's dirty」

「There's no dirty place in Misuzu's body…!」
「I…Ahn…I will always clean up my body…aaah…so Danna-sama can lick it anytime…!!!」
「Un…Do that」
「Certainly…Aaaahn…That place…Iyaaaaa!」

I made my tongue crawl on Misuzu's secret place.
A fountain gushes as I stir it with my tongue…!

「…This part of Misuzu is delicious」
「Don't…say that…aaaah!」

Taking my time…I licked her slit deliberately…!

「Danna-sama…danna-sama…no more…!」
「…You wanted me to make a mess out of you, didn't you?」
「I'm…Already a mess…Aaaaah, more…tease me more…!」

Lastly…I licked up her clitoris…!

「…Don't!…Don't do that!…Misuzu's going white!…It's turning white…I'm flying…I'm scared…I'm scared…Danna-samaaa…!!」

I rubbed her clitoris with my fingers…!

「It's fine…I'm here with you…!」
「Hand…please hold my hand…Danna-sama…!」

I piled up my free left hand on Misuzu's right hand…!
Misuzu gripped my hand tightly…!

「…Danna-sama…Danna-sama…Misuzu's flying!～」
「It's fine to cum…I'm here with you!@
「…Please order Misuzu! Please order me to cum!」
「…Cum, Misuzu's cumming!!!!」
「…Yes…Danna-sama!!!」

While holding my hands strongly…!
…Misuzu's body curved greatly!!

「…Ah, ah, aaaaah!!!」

Her soft looking stomach is trembling…!

「…Misuzu's cumming! Danna-sama! Danna-sama! …I'm scared! I'm flying!」
「I'm here! I'll be watching Misuzu!」

I'll be watching Misuzu cum…!

「…It's true…Danna-sama…Aahn…I love you!」

Misuzu's body's twitching…!
Love nectar that's more than the normal woman wets the mat…
I'm glad we're in the bathroom…
If it's on a bed, the sheets would be soaked…

「Haa…Haa…Haa…Misuzu came while being seen by Danna-sama…!」
「Un…You were cute…!」
「Danna-sama…Misuzu's not satisfied yet…!」

The sweaty Misuzu told me while fixing her breath…

「…Go on…please violate me…Misuzu wants it…I want to be violated by Danna-sama!」

Misuzu slowly opened her legs wide…!

「Your hymen was just torn yesterday so it might still hurt…!」
「It's better if it hurts…make it hurt!」
「…Misuzu」
「I feel that I'm accepting Danna-sama that way」

I pushed my erect penis at Misuzu's entrance…!

「…Please say it just like yesterday」
「…Eh?」
「You told me yesterday when you broke my hymen『I like Misuzu. I want to have sex. I want Misuzu's body』…」

…Oh right.
I certainly said that.

「Do you love Misuzu?」
「…I do」
「Do you want to have sex with Misuzu?」
「…I want it so bad」

Misuzu grasped my erect penis.

「…Danna-sama」
「It's this hard…It helplessly want to enter Misuzu」

Misuzu on top of the bed looks up at me with earnest eyes…

「I…want to be violated by Danna-sama」
「Not sex…but violated…?」
「Yes…Misuzu wants to be raped by Danna-sama…!」

Misuzu's eyes have tears collecting…

「I…in truth, am a shameless and lewd woman…」
「…Misuzu」
「I…was born as a daughter of the Kouzuki house…and usually play as the honor student. Pretending to be a cheerful girl…But I…!

The grains of tears spilled out

「Actually…am a bad child. I can't help but want to do forbidden things. I lived while concealing that all the time…!」

Misuzu's reddened face is filled with tears.
It's not just her body…Misuzu's heart is also bare…

「…Misuzu, you're cute」
「I'm…not cute」
「No…My Misuzu is cute…!」

Misuzu opened her eyes wide…!
I understood what Misuzu is wishing for.

「Misuzu…you're already my pet…!」
「Yes…Misuzu is Danna-sama's pet…!」
「You're…my lewd and indecent pet…!」
「YEs…I'm a vulgar and lewd pet of Danna-sama…!」

「Your usual life doesn't matter…vent out all of your lewd thoughts to me!」
「Yes…I'll show it only to Danna-sama…!」
「I'll do anything you wish for…!」
「Yes…I'll have only Danna-sama do it…!」
「Don't hide anything from me…I'll expose everything about Misuzu!」

Misuzu's eyes have tears flowing like rain…!

「Is that okay?」

For a moment…Misuzu stopped her 『Pet』 act

「Are you really…not going to hate Misuzu…When she shows everything?」

Kouzuki Misuzu…17 years old.
A beautiful girt that's a year older than me.

「I won't hate you…I love Misuzu. I love you so much…!」
「Ah, ah, ah…!」

The woman who threw her heart open…is really beautiful…

「…aaaaaah!」

Misuzu cries loudly…!

「…No more…I love you! I love you!」

The crying Misuzu smiles at me.

「…Misuzu, what do you want?」
「…That's」
「Just say what you want me to do…」

The bare Misuzu…said.

「I want to be raped by you…」
「…In what manner?」
「Push down Misuzu who's trying to run wild by force…even

though Misuzu shouts “No”…violate her forcibly and intensely…!」
「…Then?」
「Ejaculate…inside Misuzu」
「…How many times?」
「…Two…Two would be fine」
「…Anything else?」

Misuzu said while crying.

「I want to make it my lost virginity…」
「Misuzu…」
「Being forcibly raped by you…I want Misuzu to lose her virginity…」
「…Got it」
「Can I think like that throughout my life?」
「…Go on」
「Misuzu was raped forcibly…made as your pet…even though she hates it, she was made to do lewd things everyday…」
「…Then?」
「But, Misuzu can no longer separate from you…she’s together with you forever. She’ll get pregnant with your child…made to do a lot of embarrassing and lewd things…she became a sex slave for the rest of her life…」

That’s Misuzu’s wish.
Misuzu’s always forcing herself all the time…
She was forced to have sex…and our crooked relationship started from that…
I thought that I want to make modifications on Misuzu’s wish…

「Got it…Let’s do that. I’ll keep violating Misuzu for the rest of her life」
「…Sorry」
「Don’t mind it…I love you after all」
「…Un. Misuzu loves you too」
「You can cry and shout and resist all you want」
「…Thank you…make me your sex slave…!」

Misuzu holds my hand.

「Please hit Misuzu’s cheeks…!」

Then puts my hand on her own face…

「…I want you to start from that!」

While being watched by the women…
My pseudo-rape play with Misuzu begins
Once again, I'll steal Misuzu's virginity…!
…I
I slapped Misuzu's cheeks with all my might!

「…Iyaaaa!! It hurts!!! Stop!!! Stoooop!」

Misuzu acts violently and tries to push me out by force!

「Just let me fuck you! Let me fuck you!!」
「…Stop…spare me!」

I kissed Misuzu's lips forcibly!
Misuzu desperately turns her face away but I push my lip by force…!

「Iyaaa…Noo…I don't want this!!!」

I massaged Misuzu's chest and sucked her nipples!

「Stooop…I'm a virgin! Please spare me!!」

Misuzu's resisting…!

「Shut up!」
「Noo! I don't want thiiiisss!!!」

Misuzu bites my arm!

「…U!」

Looking at my suffering face…Misuzu's face looked startled!

「…That's wrong! More! Bite harder! If not, then it won't be rape!」

The rape play continued with my shout!

「…Agu!」

Misuzu bites my arm while crying!
I shook my arm!
There's red blood coming from the teeth mark left on my arm!!!

「…I'll fuck you! I'll rape you! I'll violate you!」
「No…Stop…Don't do this to Misuzu!」

Misuzu tries to escape from my hands with all her effort!
…Like hell I'll let you escape!
…Misuzu's delicate body doesn't have the power to shake me off…

「…Stop…I'm scared…Misuzu's scared!!!」

I made my hands open Misuzu's legs wide!!!!

「…I'm putting it in! I'm fucking you!」
「Stop…please stop that! Misuzu's a virgin! I want to be a virgin until I get married!」
「…I will be taking it then」

I push my erect penis to Misuzu…

「Yadayadayadaaaa…! I'm scared! I don't want to lose my virginity like thiiis!!」
「Look…here I go!」

Misuzu's genital is wet…
Still, a vagina that's yet to accept a man at least once…is tight!
It can't pierce immediately…!
Just like yesterday…it stopped for a moment when the glans was buried…

「…This is your hymen!」

Misuzu's trembling…
She's intoxicated in the reenacting her virginity loss…!

「…N-No…please don't get inside Misuzu any further…!」
「…You should say please, don't you?」
「…P-Please…please spare at least my virginity…!」

「…Dun wanna!」

I told Misuzu.
MIsuzu's face warps in fear…!
She's trembling hard…
Her molar's grinding…!

「…I-I'm scared…!」
「Look at my face firmly…this is the face of the man who will turn you to a woman…!」
「…I don't want to become a woman…Misuzu's still young!」
「…You'll become my woman!」

I looked at Misuzu's eye…!
I pushed into the deepest part quickly…!

「…O-Ouuuuuch!!」

Inside Misuzu's mind…her hymen was torn again!

「…You're my pet! You're going to devote your whole life to me」

Misuzu spilled hot tears…when I told her.

「…Aaaah…God…T-This is too cruel…!」

I began my piston…!
I shove my waist in her very hard…!

「…Ouch!…It hurts!…Ouch!…It really hurts…!」

Every time I pierce her uterus, Misuzu shouts 「Ouch」…!
There's no way it should be…!
Misuzu's vagina's boiling hot…!
Misuzu's shouting 「It hurts」to go against the pleasure…!
I licked Misuzu's nipples…
I kissed her mouth…
I licked Misuzu's sweat on her whole body…!
My tongue's running on Misuzu's whole body as I violate her vagina…

「…Misuzu…can no longer become a bride…!」

Misuzu muttered while having her whole body shaken back and forth.

「Right, you're going to become my sex slave…You're going to be my plaything throughout the life…!」
「…Noo…I don't…want that…!」
「You're my toy…!!!」
「…Iyaaaaaa!!!!」

I sped up my piston…
I fling my waist against Misuzu's hairless pubis…!
Panpanpanpan, a light clapping sound…!

「…Ouch…It hurts…Misuzu…Misuzu's dying…!」

I understand that Misuzu's actually feeling it when I do it violently…!
Misuzu's vagina is clamping my penis…
Perhaps…Misuzu might reach her first climax from sex…!

「…Misuzu, I'm close to cumming…I'm going to cum inside you…!」

I whispered to Misuzu's ear…!

「Noo…Please stop…not inside…a child…I'll get pregnant…!」

Though she's saying no…Misuzu's body is wishing for a man's semen…!
Misuzu's going to cum soon…!

「…Get pregnant…Get pregnant…Have my child…!」
「No way…spare me…spare me…God won't let this happen…!」

Ooh…Misuzu's excitement reaches the top…!

「…Aaahn…You can't…Misuzu's…becoming a bad child…I can no longer to heaven…!」
「…This is heaven!」

At the moment I reached the womb with all my might…!

「…Misuzu's…becoming a bad child!!!!!!!」

Misuzu's body jumps in pleasure!!!

「…Misuzu…Misuzu's becoming…strange…Ah, it's overflowiiiiinggg!!!!!」

Misuzu's mind jumps to heaven…while shaking her body…!!!

「…Misuzu, I'm cumming!」
「…No…No…Iyaaaaaa!!!」

I blow my hot mass in Misuzu's womb!!!

「…I-It's coming in…the hot stuff…I-It's coming inside me…!!!」

Misuzu's watching me…ejaculate.
I'm watching Misuzu be impregnated.
My hand that's holding down Misuzu loses it's power…
Misuzu…bit my shoulder…
…Ouch.
At that moment, the hot semen surges in Misuzu's uterus…!

「…Y-You're cruel…Misuzu's violated…Misuzu was a virgin, and yet…!」

Misuzu's eyes have tears spilling out…
But…
Like hell this is the end…!
My promise with Misuzu is…two times
Misuzu's second virginity break continues…!
I started my piston once again…!

「…Stop…please stop this already!!!」

I kissed and sucked Misuzu's sweat filled neck.
I made a kiss mark.
This body…is completely mine!!
I'll subordinate it!!

「…Not yet…I'm still not done…This time, you're going to enjoy this too…!」

「…T-There's no way…t-this is enjoyable!」

The two of us are already sweating like waterfall…
Every time…Misuzu's small breasts dances…!
Misuzu's soft body that's wet with sweat…I enjoy the skin of her whole body…!

「You're a lewd woman…you're feeling it from being raped, what a disgraceful girl…!」
「…N-No…Misuzu's not that kind of girl…!」
「…But, you're body's being pleased isn't it…it feels good, doesn't it?…!」
「…It doesn't…feel good…it just hurts…!」
「…That pain…feels good doesn't it…?」

…Ha, ha, ha, ha, ha…

I continue having sex by breathing like I'm in a long distance marathon…!

「…T-This…doesn't, feel…good at all…!」
「…It'll feel good…Misuzu…!」

I rolled Misuzu's pointed nipples…
My pubis rubs against Misuzu's clitoris…

「…Ah…Aaahn…I-It's strange…M-Misuzu's body…it's feeling hot…Misuzu's feeling strange again…Ah…!」
「That's right…your body's already converted…Misuzu's now a pervert that feels it from being violated…!」
「…I don't want that…no…and yet…!」
「…Your body will be forcibly remodeled by me…become a woman of my taste…!」
「…No…Misuzu is…aasaah, goood…!」

A body that caught on fire once will reach the climac immediately…
Misuzu's slowly rising to the top again…

「…Aaaah…Uaaaaa…Aaaaah…aaaah…!!!」

…She closed her eyes, and got drunk in pleasure…

「…I-It feels good…!」

Misuzu changed…!
The body that should be refusing me…is slowly melting…!
Misuzu's mind and body…is accepting me…!
Misuzu's insides are melting…!

「…It's strange…this is strange…this…is better than masturbating…much better than Nagisa-sama's hand…what's this…
Misuzu's becoming strange…!!!!」

Misuzu's…already forgotten the pseudo-rape set up…and is drowing in my sex…!

「…Open your eyes…Look at me…Misuzu」

Misuzu opened her eyes.
Her eyes are already hazy…She's melting in pleasure…!
Misuzu who had her mind flew already…recognizes my face…!

「…Y-you…Huh…? Why are you putting all your effort?」
「…I…I want Misuzu to feel good…!」

…Ha, ha, ha, ha, ha, ha, ha…!
My heartbeat's going crazy…
It hurts…!
But I won't stop moving my waist…
Until Misuzu cums…!

Misuzu's looking at me with melting eyes…
The sweat that drops down from my forehead wets Misuzu's cute breasts…
Misuzu……Misuzu……Misuzu…… !
I can't see anyone other than Misuzu…
Misuzu's mouth moved.

「…Aaaah…I…I just remembered…You…you're Misuzu's Danna-sama…Misuzu's beloved…!!!」
「…I love you! Misuzu!!!」
「…Me too…Danna-sama!!」

Misuzu's heart opened up…!

Every corner of her heart…is accepted by the man named me…!

「…Danna-sama…I love you…!!!!」

At that moment…Misuzu's body shook intensely…!
In an instant…a lightning-like climax attacks Misuzu's body…!!!

「…Aaah…Aaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!!」

Misuzu's body continues to shake…as she roars like a beast…!
She's looking at my face well…!
Misuzu was swallowed by the maximum wave for the third time!!!
I ejaculated inside her again…!

Byuru…Byururu…Byuruuruuruuruu!!!

Misuzu's feeling the hot stuff spreading in her abdominal region again

「…Misuzu's filled…I'm being filled…I'm happy…!」

Misuzu embraced and kissed me…!

「…I never knew…this kind of happiness…Misuzu's happy…I found happiness…!」

Something inside Misuzu changed while being her womb's fertilized…
Misuzu's…reborn as a 『Woman』…!

…Haa, haa, haa, haa…!

Embraced by Misuzu…I lost power and leaned on her…
No good…I can't move.
Nothing's coming out anymore…
I-I need water…
I-I'm dying!

Misuzu held my exhausted head with her hands…
Her face is before me…

「…Misuzu?」

「…ufufufu」

Misuzu was a different girl until now.
Her gentle face is filled with affection…
The dark complex feelings hidden in her…have all disappeared.
It's a refreshed face, like an angel.

「…as expected, you…you're my Danna-sama…!」

Misuzu told me smilingly…

「Misuzu's yours…I'll serve you all my life」

The beautiful girl vows her eternal love to me…!

「Danna-sama…I love you, I love you, I love you!!!」

Misuzu rained kisses at my face…
I'm just exhausted…
I let Misuzu do what she's doing…

「…I love you, I love you, I love you」

Misuzu whispered in my ears…

「Misuzu's happy becoming your woman! I'm happy!」

…Happy?
Being embraced by me…
Makes you happy…?!

「…Hey hey…?!」

I can hear a voice I now well from nearby…
That voice…is Katsuko-nee…?

I pulled back…
Five women are looking at us in utter amazement…
Yamamine-san's eye has become a dot…
Well, of course.…
It started from a lovey dovey sex, then turned to a 『Rape play』
then at the end, it reached 『over the top』…

I came twice…And Misuzu thrice…
Somehow, we were absorbed in our own world…

Katsuko-nee spoke to Misuzu.

「…Misuzu-sama, it's not my place to say but Katsuko will say it in behalf of everyone…」

Katsuko-nee cleared her throat…

「You pervert!」

---

1. Unagi means Eel ↩
2. sfx of smooth or slipping/sliding motion ↩
3. Why did Yoshida's voice turn into a shota inside my mind? ↩
4. What is "Courage"? "Courage" is knowing fear and making that fear your own! ↩

59. Fragments

「What…are you?」

Hidemi-san said while looking at me.
As expected…they're disgusted.
I overdid it after all.

「…Sorry」
「Don't say sorry!…Hey, Katsuko-chan!」

Hidemi-san calls out Katsuko-nee

「Where did you find this child…! it's my first time seeing a boy doing his best at sex…!」

…What?

「Un. It's also my first time seeing a boy devoting himself to sex!」

Tamayo-san added.

「Hey, you…!」
「Was it Yoshida-kun…?!」
「…Yes?」

The two elder girls pressed onto me…!

「Doing that way…have you ever thought that it's 『Troublesome』 when the girl requests one thing after another in the middle of sex…?!」
「No…well…if that's what she wants then shouldn't I do anything to achieve that…!」
「…But you seemed to be in pain during the last part…shouldn't you have said 『Let me rest for a moment』?」
「But…since Misuzu's already feeling it…I thought that I should just continue even if my heart stops…」
「There's blood coming out of your arm. There's a tooth mark on your arm…」

Oh…the one Misuzu bit a while ago?
Ouch…It's soaking in.

「…Right」
「…Does it hurt?」
「Well of course it does」
「Eh, could it be that you're a masochist? Do you like being bitten?」
「There's no way…I hate being bitten」
「Then, why did you get bitten!」
「Because…if she didn't bite me, Misuzu won't feel good, would she…?!」
「Eh…You'll do anything for her?」
「No…I don't want to die. But, It can't be helped if I get hurt」
「…Why!?」
「Well, if Misuzu won't feel good, then our sex would be meaningless!」
「…Are you fine not feeling good?」

It's somehow…making me angry.

「This cute girl is having sex with me! I'm already feeling good since the start!」
「…You really love her don't you?!」
「Isn't that obvious! If I don't then I won't be able to have sex with her!」

My answer…became a scene in the bathroom.
Eh…what's wrong?
Did I say something strange?

「…Danna-samaaaa!!」

…Misuzu?
Why are you crying?
Misuzu's clinging to me…!
Hey, wait…!
She's licking the wound in my arm…while crying…

「…I'm sorry, I'm sorry, I'm sorry」
「It's fine…it's when we were having sex…so I don't mind it at

all」
「…But」
「If Misuzu felt good…that's all good」

Tamayo-san leaked out a sigh.

「…There's…this kind of boy」
「Un…it's somewhat absurd」
「But…don't you think it's a bit dangerous?」
「Right…when he's left alone, he'll do absurd things calmly…!」

The two elder sisters answered Katsuko-nee smilingly

「It's fine…We'll be following up!」
「…Right, Minaho-san's watching over so there's no need to worry」
「That's right…I'm sure that he'll grow into an amazing man…!」

Eh…am I being praised?
I just had sex normally though…?!
Tamayo-san bowed to me.

「Sorry…I underestimated you. As expected of Minaho-chi's
『Toy』! You're amazing…!」

I don't know what I'm being praised at all…

「Do you love Katsuko-chan as much as this girl?」

Hidemi-san asks me with a serious face.

「Yes of course」
「You'll do any kind of sex she wants?」
「Isn't that obvious?」
「She may want to get you seriously injured you know?」
「There's no way」
「…Why?」
「Because Katsuko-nee's not that kind of person…!」
「…Are you certain?」
「Yes…Katsuko-nee's very gentle. That's why I came to love Katsuko-nee…!」

…Huh?
It's Katsuko-nee this time…?[1]

「…Geez…don't make me cry…!」

Eh…Why?
It's not something to cry for is it?

「…Misuzu's the same. She just bit my arm by chance today but… that's because Misuzu's always enduring and hiding it…so for Misuzu to let out all in her heart, I don't mind being bitten, hit, or kicked. I'll take all of it. Because…Misuzu's…a gentle girl, and is always taking care of others…a really good girl. I love her…!」
「…Danna-samaaaa!!!」

MIsuzu's crying out loud…!
Wait…eeeh??!
Why are you crying every time I speak?
I'm just saying something that's obvious and that everyone knows…

「…Yo-chan…what about me?」

Nei-san's…sitting on the floor grasping her knees while naked.
Both her hands are holding her kneecaps…
Nei-san who's looking up at me…is already teary eyed.

「…Yo-chan, do you love me?」

I squat down in front of Nei-san.
To match with Nei-san's eyes…

「…There's no one who would hate Nei-san」
「I don't care about the others! I'm asking Yo-chan!」
「…I love you」
「…Which parts of me?」
「You're bright, beautiful, reckless…I thought of wanting an onee-chan like Nei-san all the time…!
「Then, be my lil bro!
「…That's my intention though?
「…Eh?
「I've been living thinking that I'm Nei-san's little brother all this

time though?」
「…No way?」
「I don't understand because I don't have any siblings but…if Nei-san says 『Buy me a cola』 I'll buy it immediately. If you say 『Jump』 2 or 『Melon Bread』 3then I'll dash to buy them immediately」
「…That's not little brother but 『Friend treated as younger brother』 !!!!」
「Then…what does Nei-san want with me? how do I be a little brother?」
「…You're gonna do anything?」
「Yes! If it's for my beloved Nei-san!」

I told Nei-san.

「…Then, kiss me. I want to Kiss Yo-chan…!」

…Nei-san
I approached Nei-san's red lips.
…At that time!

『…Hey, that virgin girl there…stop!』

Yuzuki-sensei's voice came from the speaker…

「Why are you obstructing!!!!」

Nei-san shouted towards the skylight…!4

『Get yourself ready to throw away your virginity if you want to go further…it's not good to lose to the momentum. It's rude to Yoshida-kun…!』

Sensei's been watching at the surveillance camera all this time…!

『You're all taking too long in the bath. Please gather in the hall…!』

Katsuko-nee answered in behalf of all…!

「Okay! Certainly, Ojou-sama…!」

The older girls moved at once from Sensei's instruction…
Katsuko-nee bathes in hot water and washed away the sweat…!

「You two had lots of sex so take shower properly okay!」

After telling Misuzu and me…Katsuko-nee pulled Nei-san to stand up.

「Hey, Nei-sama, hurry up…!」
「Eh…I…!」
「You lost the timing so postpone it to the next opportunity!」
「…But」
「Yeah sure, we're going already!」

Nei-san who's looking at me bitterly…was forcibly taken away by Katsuko-nee…
…My my.
…Well, it can't be helped.
Anyway, if we don't take wash our sweat then it's I don't know why we came to the bathroom…

「…Danna-sama, please come here」
「Un」

Misuzu and I splashes water on each other.
Washing off each other's bodies…

「Nfufu…Danna-sama!」
「What's wrong?」
「I just wanted to call you! My Danna-sama!～」

MIsuzu washes my body joyfully…
We're the only one's remaining in the room before I noticed it.
…No
Yamamine-san is standing in front of the exit of the bathroom wrapped in towel.
…What's wrong?
Is she waiting for us to finish taking a shower?
Huh?…Yamamine-san's staring at me…?!

「…What's wrong, Yamamine-san?」

The long and narrow eyes approaches us timidly…

「…Yoshida-kun…You said that you want to have sex with me earlier don't you?」
「Un, that's right」

I answered honestly.

「…Do you like me?」
「I do」
「…Since when?」
「During the other day…when I was injured…and you went to get a first aid kit from your clubroom」
「…Un」
「At that time…I thought that your back figure when you ran at the corridor was beautiful」
「…Looking at my back figure?」
「Your running back…I thought that your body line is beautiful」

That's right…that figure was beautiful.

「…That's all?」
「Then yesterday…You came to pick me up from Nei-san at the roof.」
「…Un」
「I thought that you're a gentle person」
「…Is that so?」

Misuzu's clinging to my arm
MIsuzu told Yamamine-san…

「I understood it from the first time we met」
「…Eh?」
「Yamamine-san…is the same as me…!」

…Eh?
…What do you mean by that?

「Usually, an excessive honor student type…Misuzu knows that」

Yamamine-san answers calmly…

「Yes…I think so too. I'm the same as Misuzu. I lived thinking all this time… that I have to be a good girl… 」
「Misuzu's actually a bad girl. …I've always been dying to do forbidden stuff all the time…! 」

Yamamine-san also opens up from Misuzu's honest words.

「…I'm also a bad girl…while pretending to be an honor student. I've always wanted to do bad things…! 」

Misuzu smiles like a small devil…!
She licked my lips while still looking at Yamamine-san…!

「…Misuzu-san?! 」

Misuzu reports to the surprised Yamamine-san.

「Megumi-san…Sex is something really bad! Whenever I have sex with Danna-sama…I shiver…! It's so lewd, shameful, and dirty… you'll become a bad child…! 」
「…Become a bad child? 」

Yamamine-san drank her saliva.

「Yes…Furthermore, you can be a bad girl just for Danna-sama. Misuzu can continue being a good girl as always! It's fine to continue the make-believe honor student! Danna-sama will be accepting Misuzu who's actually a bad girl as a whole after all…! 」

Misuzu's tempting Yamamine-san in the world of sinfuls…!

「Hey. Megumi-san should have sex with Danna-sama too. Please come to my world. It's fun you know. It feels really good…! 」

Misuzu who experienced intense sex from a while ago has something changed in her…
I can't feel any thought that she's overdoing it.
She's very natural, free, and even looks so graceful…!

「…I! 」
「…Megumi-san, please take off your bath towel 」
「…Eh? 」

Misuzu makes a lewd demand to Yamamine-san…!

「Please show Megumi-san's genital to Danna-sama」

Yamamine-san trembles…!

「…That's right. That's the feeling. You can feel the chill don't you? That's the feeling of being a bad girl…Now, Megumi-san, become a bad girl too. When you become honest…it feels really good…!」

Misuzuu's words…holds Yamamine-san's heart…!
Yamamine-san's trembling thin fingers…holds to her bath towel…!
The diligent tall sports girl…loses to the temptations of sex…!

「Now…please say 『…Take a look』」
「…T-Take a look」
「…Who do you want to look?」
「Yoshida-kun…I want Yoshida-kun to look…!」

Misuzu looks at my face….
She's saying 『You finish this』……!
…I prepared myself.

「…Megumi, show me your body…!」

Yamamine-san…looks at me while shaking.
Her trembling hand…opens her bath towel…
…My classmate
…The honor student chairman who's kind to anyone
…A tall member of the athletic club.,
Yamamine-san…has a slim and tightened…healthy naked body…
But…her breasts are growing up well.
Pink nipples…with a size of a pinkie finger.
A mons veneris which hardly has any hair…
There's love nectar dripping from the slit…
…Cute

「…You're beautiful, Yamamine-san」
「I'm not beautiful」

Misuzu laughs…

「…Megumi-san, is your heart throbbing?」
「…It does…!」
「…Are you aroused?」
「…Yes, I am」
「…It feels good being a bad child doesn't it?」
「…Aaah, I…I'm becoming strange!」

Misuzu asks me.

「Danna-sama…do you want to have sex with Megumi-san?」
「Yeah, I really want to…!」
「Megumi-san's body…is very lewd isn't it?」
「Un…I want to touch it…!」
「Megumi-san…is that okay?」
「…Eh」
「It's not scary…he'll just touch you. Misuzu's Danna-sama will never do anything Yamamine-san would hate…」
「…Let me touch you…Yamamine-san」

Yamamine-san…answered in a dry voice.

「…If it's just for a bit…then it's fine…Yoshida-kun…!」

I touched…Yamamine-san's nipple…

「…Ah!」

Yamamine-san trembled…!
I reached out towards her wet crotch!
Yamamine-san can't move…she's trembling!

「…I'm just touching it for a bit」

My middle finger traces the line of Yamamine-san's cute slit…!

「…Hyaan!!」

Then…I licked my middle finger wet with Yamamine-san's love nectar…
Yamamine-san's love nectar…tastes like grapefruit…

「…It's delicious, Yamamine-san」

「Don't…say that…!」

Yamamine-san's face turned red in shame…
I closed up my face to Yamamine-san's nipples to lick it.
…But

「…Danna-sama…Let's stop here for now…!」

Misuzu told me.

「…Misuzu?」
「If you show any more than this…Misuzu would want it again…! Also」

…Also?

「…We should tease her up. Let's have Megumi-san accumulate those lewd feelings until it's about to explode…Then corner her when she's barely at her limit…!」

That's right.
It's still too soon.
I mustn't hurry.
I should wait for Yamamine-san's feelings to ripen…

「Megumi-san…is that okay with you too?!」
「…Yes」

Yamamine-san fixes her breathing by inhaling deeply…

「But…Megumi-san, next would be…!」

Misuizu smiled…

「Megumi-san will become Danna-sama's 『Woman』…get yourself ready…!」

Yamamine-san's looking at Misuzu in surprise.

「Just like Misuzu and Katsuko-sama earlier…you'll accept Danna-sama's body, and have hot semen poured inside your stomach… okay…!」

There's a sticky transparent liquid dripping thickly from Yamamine-san's crotch…

「…You'll be next Yamamine-san…you'll be ravished…no matter how Yamamine-san resists…you'll never be spared…I'll do you until the end…I'll make you mine…!」

I conveyed my strong will to Yamamine-san…

「Yes…I get it…I…will be ravished by Yoshida-kun…」

A red face…
Aroused eyes…
She has promised…!

◇ ◇ ◇

Coming out of the dressing room, there's three bathrobes prepared.
It seems that Katsuko-nee has taken the clothes we wore…
There's not even an underwear to change.
We took off the wet bath towel and put on the bathrobe…
…Huh?

「…What's wrong, Danna-sama?」
「No…this bathrobe has the sides open」

That's right…the sides aren't sewn. Or rather, it's lacking clothes.
Looking at Misuzu, I can clearly see her breasts from the side…

「…Well, perhaps」

Misuzu holds my right hand…

「…Misuzu?」

Then put my hands inside her own bathrobe…

「…I think that this hole is for Danna-sama's easier enjoyment of Misuzu's breasts…!」

My hand entered from the side hole and enjoyed MIsuzu's breasts.
I feel Misuzu's cute nipples…

「That's how these clothes work!」

Uwaa, this might be good…
What's with this exquisite design…
When I look at Yamamine-san, her breasts are visible from the side too…
Ah, she's being embarrassed but she stands in a way so I can see it easily…!
Or rather…she's showing it to me…!

『Don't flirt and come here already! Everyone's waiting!』

Ha!…Katsuko-nee's voice can be heard from the speakers up top…!

「…G-Got it!」

The three of us left the dressing room in a hurry.
Err…where was the room a while ago…?!

「This way Danna-sama…!」

Misuzu pulls my hand…

「Megumi-san too!」
「Yes!」

The three on the bathrobe runs tottering on the corridor…!

◇ ◇ ◇

We returned to the hall from earlier…
All of the people at the mansion has gathered there.
Hidemi-san and Tamayo-san who were in the bath are in the same bathrobe figure.
Katsuko-nee's the only one who changed to her maid uniform.

「Megumi-chan, sit here…I'll be cutting your hair」

Yuuka-san beckoned Yamamine-san

「…Uhm」
「I know. I won't be shortening it that much…I'll keep the length

and just adjust the volume. I'll make it beautiful so come here…!
「…Okay」

Yamamine-san sits on the chair in front of Yuuka-san.
A vinyl cloth that takes off the cut hair is rolled around her neck…
then Yuuka-san starts cutting.
Katsuko-nee and the butler Morimoto-san distributed tea to each and everyone.

「…It's been a while since people gather in this mansion」

Morimoti-san told Hidemi-san.
Huh…Sensei's not here?
While I was wondering…the door opens…!
Yuzuki-sensei…Margo-san…Nagisa-san and even Mao-chan…?!

「We picked up Nagisa on the way back…!」

Margo-san said…

「My, Mao-chan…!」

Hidemi-san and Tamayo-san called comes to Mao-chan…!

「It's been a while…Are you in good health?」
「…Un!」
「Onee-sama…it's been a long time…!」

Nagisa-san bowed to the two.

「Nagisa-chan, hello…!」
「Mao-chan got bigger…!」
「…Hidemi-san…is Aki-chan healthy?」
「Very…she's already in elementary school this year!」
「That's fast…what about Tamayo-neesan?」
「My Asuka's growing up healthy too!…She's the queen in the nursery school!」

I see…there's a rule about getting out of the mansion when you get pregnant…
All of them have children already.

「Morimoto…can you take care of Mao-chan in the neighboring room?」

Sensei ordered the butler.

「Certainly…Mao-sama. Which do you want, Ice cream or cake?」
「…Hmm…Both!」
「Mao, you can't go for two!」

Nagisa-san warns Mao-chan…

「Then Ice cream!」
「Hohoho…Then, let's eat ice cream there」
「Okaaay!」

Morimoto-san took Mao-chan and left the room…

「I-I'm jelly!…Nagisa-chan, why is Mao-chan a very perceptive child?!」
「Right…I would like for Aki to be that obedient too…!」
「What are you saying…Aki-chan and Asuka-chan are also very cute!」
「…They're angels when they sleep」
「When they open their eyes, they turn to a small monster…!」
「Really…they take a lot to deal with」

Sensei speaks to everyone…

「Everyone take a seat…we have something to talk about」

With Yuzuki-sensei at the enter, each one of them take their own seat…
The only one standing is Yuuka-san…she keeps cutting Yamamine-san's hair.
Hidemi-san, Tamayo-san and Nagisa-san, the three Mama's sit down next to each other.
Margo-san is sitting next to the sullen Nei-san…
Misuzu's sitting close to me.
Katsuko-nee is sitting on the chair next to me…

「…My…You've become beautiful while I wasn't watching…!」

Sensei told Misuzu.

「Right, your face looks so clear like a man who had sex, felt refreshed and had an evil spirit purified…」
「It's so rare for women to change that much…!」
「Misuzu…Your skin looks glossy!」

Misuzu answers the moms.

「Yes! I've been showered with lots of love by Danna-sama!」
「Katsuko-chan too…Somehow, your pheromones are gushing out!」

Yuuka-san who stopped moving her scissors told Katsuko-nee.

「Ah…you can tell?! Enrichment sex is really important isn't it?」
「…In comparison」

Margo-san looked at Nei-san

「What's wrong, Nei? You look like you're depressed…?!」
「I was made to『postpone』…!」

Nei-san said in a teary voice…

「My my, Nei-sama herself is the one who 『Postponed』, isn't it?」

Katsuko-nee makes fun of Nei-san.

「Maru-chan…Everyone's telling me to 『Throw your virginity already』…!」
「…I think that you really should though」
「…Eh?」
「Nei has already decided to 『Give it to Yoshida-kun』, haven't you?」
「…Un」
「Then, hurry up and get embraced by him already!」
「Uuuuu! Even Maru-chan's cornering me…!」

Nei-san curled herself in the chair.

「…Yoshida-kun, come here」

Sensei calls me out…

「…What?」
「Everyone wants to know Yoshida-kun's story」
「…My story?」
「That's right…When you were having sex in the bathroom a while ago, Yuuka-sama and I are watching here. Everyone's very interested in you…!」
「We're very interested why are you doing such sex」

Yuuka-san told me.

「Un…Certainly!」

Tamayo-san shouted

「…I also want to know」

Hidemi-san too

「But…I'm just a normal high school student. I don't have any story to tell…」
「It's fine…Just tell us your story. How were you raised. What do you like, what do you hate…talk about what you just think. It's fine to do the order you want…!」

Sensei…says so but.

「But…Sensei already knows my survey don't you?」
「I want to hear it directly from your mouth…!」
「…Misuzu also wants to know!」

…Misuzu

「Katsuko…also wants to hear it from you」

…Katsuko-nee too.

「I also want to know…it's about my beloved Yoshida-kun after all」

…Nagisa-san.

「We're friends…so I also want to know about you」

…Margo-san

「But…I really am just a normal boring first year high school student…There's nothing about my story that would be interesting anyway…!」
「It doesn't matter if it's boring!」

Nei-san shouted.

「I want to know…about Yo-chan」

…Nei-san

「…If I tell my story, would Nei-san tell me about hers?」
「…Eh?」
「Even I want to know about Nei-san」

Nei-san's holding a lot of things.
Sensei, Katsuko-nee, and Margo-san…wants to let it out.
But, perhaps…
It's not just something that would be settled by having sex…it's bigger

「…Yo-chan」
「If you promise to talk about it to me… then I'll talk about anything」
「…Even if it's not right now?」
「It's fine to talk whenever Nei-san wants to…But please promise to talk about it someday!」

Nei-san answered.

「Got it…I promise」

Sensei looks at Nei-san and me…

「Then, let's begin…!」

1. The one who's crying ↩
2. The magazine where you can read Gintama ↩
3. The one Shana loves to eat ↩
4. She's shouting to god ↩

◇ Past Arc

60. The boy named Yoshida.

「What should I talk about then?」
「Anything's fine…you can just talk about the things that come in your head.」

Sensei told me…

「Sit here…!」

Katsuko-nee put a chair in the middle of the room…
I sit down there…Wow, everyone's looking at me.
This is somewhat embarrassing.

「Margo…close the curtains」
「Got it Minaho」

Margo-san closed the thick curtains of the room.
The room darkened quickly.

「Katsuko…light only Yoshida-kun」
「Okay, Ojou-sama」

Katsuko-nee operates the console on the wall…
The light from the ceiling concentrates on me.
The lighting is only on front and diagonal top.
It's dazzling that the people watching me disappeared.
This looks like a drama stage.

「Is this okay?…It's easier to talk now isn't it?」

Yuzuki-sensei, that's how it is, but…

「Somehow…I look like a spy that's being interrogated」
「You can have that image too…anyway, it's enough to talk about yourself…Also, everyone will be silent until Yoshida-kun's talk is over. No one must ask in the middle of it. Make him focus in the talk…!」

Sensei warned everyone.

「…Then. Yoshida-kun. Please begin」

◇ ◇ ◇

Err…In the end, I think I should start my story from my grandfather.
My grandfather from the mother side.
It's my mother's father…that's obvious. haha…!

My grandfather…is managing a somewhat big company.
It's a company my grandfather raised. He's the founder.
Well, he did his best, or rather…he built that company in his lifetime.
That's why that person has so much confidence in himself…he's amazingly proud.
Regular customers and business partners are being flattered but…
he's arrogant towards her family and his own company.
Jii-san's favorite phrase is「Don't forget to give thanks at any time」
He's always saying that.
It's written on a huge paper put on the company…and all of the people in the family says that without fail whenever I meet them…
But…Jii-san himself never said 「Thank you 」to another person…
When Jii-san was alive…I've never heard that person say「Thank you」…
In the end, he must be thinking that 「A human should always thank himself」
It's not 「Don't forget to say thanks」but rather 「Thank me」…he was that self-assertive.

Anyway, he's always bragging, stubborn, selfish…that I felt so much pity for my Grandmother.
Even if you're doing something else, when Jii-san calls you out, you need to go to Jii-san immediately.
「Make tea」or 「Bring the newspaper」or 「Change the channel of the television」he's making such foolish orders. He'll never move by himself.
That person really loves ordering other people…
He doesn't like moving by his own will…
That's why…everyone hates my grandfather.
The people in the company…even the family.

That's obvious.
He's always selfish…and just pushes various orders on the other people.;

My mother…was the eldest daughter of grandfather.
My grandfather loves my mother so much that she was raised to be selfish.
Mother had two brothers but those uncles were raised quite severely it seems, but…anyway, mother's the only one spoiled.
Mother loves confident and bossy grandfather…
In the end…she has the same character as my grandfather.

My mother's really bossy…She's using the people in grandfather's company like her own servants so everyone hates her.
Since her character is bad…my grandfather seems to have made her meet marriage interviews several times but all of them refused.
Well…that's of course.
My mother's making fool of every human being in the world.

My father was a person brought up without a father and works to pay his studies…he was an employee of grandfather's company.
He just came from a good national university.
He's timid, taciturn and doesn't meddle with other people…so he caught grandfather's eyes…
The two of them married by my grandfather's order.
My mother was 34 years old and my father was 26 at that time…
I was born a year after marriage.
I think it was when I was at kindergarten…My mother told me this way.

「I gave birth to you to only please father. But, I regret it after all. I shouldn't have given birth」…

When I become aware, my parents are already sleeping on separate bedrooms…
I thought that perhaps, they never slept at the same bed after getting married and pregnant…
Those are my parents.

I lived together with my grandmother at my father's side at that time…Obaa-chan's taking care of me.

Meals, change of clothes, sending me off and back the kindergarten…it's all my grandmother.
Both my parent's never came…
Grandmother does all the work in the family…
But mother shouts abuse at grandmother.
She's like scolding an employee…
「You can't even clean properly」or 「The meals taste bad」…
She's not doing anything…
And yet, father doesn't say anything…
I always felt sorry for my grandmother.
If I complain to mother because I feel sorry, mother will beat grandmother saying 「Your education is bad」…
…She had her ribs broken and was hospitalized.
So father who thought that the situation is indeed wrong…he consulted grandfather./
Then, somehow…it became a ridiculous story…
My mother opened a shop outside…
「It's a mistake to be in this house in the first place」she said.
My grandfather took out all the funds on opening the store.
It's a French food restaurant.
Then, my mother never came back at the house…
She comes home drunk late at night and sleeps until early afternoon, then she comes back to the shop again.
But…she looks like she's having fun.
She looks like she's lively.
Because my mother's not getting angry at grandmother, I felt at ease…
But…one year after that, my grandmother died.
I was at the second grade at elementary school.

At the day of funeral…even though the mother of her husband has died, my mother did not come to the ceremony, saying 「I'm taking care of the shop」
My grandfather too…there's no relative of my mother that came.
My father and I went to the crematory alone…
It was a desolate funeral.

After that, I'm pretty much alone.
My parents comes back home but don't eat there…
My father never came near the house after grandmother died.

I lived alone.
The basic living expenses are put on the table at the living room and I spend them to buy my food.
3,000 yen a week, is put on every monday.
Ah, they only supplement the money that's left from the previous week.,
If there's 200 yen remaining, then only 2,800 yen would be given at Monday.
But…both of them forgets to supplement it often.
There's a lot of 「Bring this or that tomorrow」in the elementary…
With those sudden expenses, there's two or three days where I don't have anything to spend.
That's why…I use money carefully.
Oh right…during the summer vacation on my fourth grade, my father went to a long term business trip…and yet, my mother didn't come home for two weeks…
At that time, I endured the three days eating gummy bears. There's one bag of gummy bears with cola taste so I somehow managed the three days…
It was written on my friend's manga that cola is nutritious.
Then, I bought up only the cola flavor.
Well, even when the food is exhausted, I will be able to somehow survive as long as I gulp down tap water.

Oh, I keep all the receipts of the things I bought and put it on the 『cashbook』to show it to mother.
It's to check if I'm wasting money or not.
That said, my mother hardly looks at the 『cashbook』
But, she's checks it without notice…and if it's not done properly I'll be beaten up every day without fail.
Well, she'll get angry whatever I buy anyway
「You're always wasting money」she said.

That's why, I hardly have any friends at my elementary school.
I don't have money.
I don't have bicycle so I'd just be a hinder to everyone…
I can't play.
Well, it can't be helped.

At my fifth grade.

One day, my mother told me that she'd take me to the shop…
She never brought me there before.
She told me「It's not a place for children to play for」…

Only on that day…I was made to wear clothes I pay respects at New Year at my grandfather's house.
My mother stops at the nearby department store before going to the restaurant…
…She bought me a tennis racket.
Though I said「I don't need this」she bought it and pushed it to me forcibly…
I hold to that racket and was taken to my mother's shop…
That's where I…
Met the cook and waitresses of the shop for the first time…
My mother introduces me every time we meet another person.
Then…my mother says that she's having a hard time taking care of a selfish child.
Saying that she's working on the PTA children association at the town…
Even though she never came at the parent's association at my school…
Finally, she says「This child wanted it so much before so I bought him a tennis racket before coming here」…
「I'm really troubled with his selfishness」…
I never said that I wanted such a thing though…
My mother…is appealing on the people of the shop that she's an『Ideal family oriented mother』
Laughing…
Making an unpleasant smile…
Lastly…My mother went to a strange room called『Manager's room』…
It was a really strange room.
It's a narrow room and yet, there's a luxurious chair and a massager on it.
There's no ledger, note, nor computers.
A young cook on his late 20's was summoned there…
I was there and yet…My mother spoke to the cook.

「…Sorry but I'm living a very happy family life…I don't intend to have someone destroy it」…

The cook made a terrible sullen face then said「Understood」then he went out of the room.
My mother looked at me…
Then said…

「It's really troubling when a young man gets serious immediately…」

I'm my mother's child and yet…
I'm just a fifth grader, and yet…
She's proud being popular…!

I…
I came to hate my mother after that…
I thought that she's not like that before…
That we might possibly be poorer than other houses…
That's why my parents are always working outside…
That I have to stay at home alone.
Because, when I meet my grandfather at New years…he always say.

「Your mother's doing her best so you have to support her with your gratitude」

That's why I believed.
…And yet.
Seeing at mother's 『President's room』…I cannot see my mother working hard at all…!
On the way back…mother took away the racket.
「I'll give this a present to Yasuo-chan」…She said.
Surely it was the name of my mother's next lover…I thought.

I went to a boarding boy's school on middle school in the heart of a mountain.
That's my grandfather's alma mater…
At grandfather's time, it wasn't a dormitory system.
It was merely grandfather's hometown…

Mother sent me there only to please grandfather.
I just thought of wanting to run away.
Mother, father, and grandfather…from that house.
That's why I agreed immediately and entered the dormitory.

But to be honest…it was harsh.
Because bullying where your money is taken is common.
For three years, it felt like a prison.
But…grandfather died the year before last…

Grandfather…was really hated.
He's rich and yet helped no one other than mother.
When he died…the thought of his children thanking him because of the succession of the property anyway…
Grandfather never lent money to his relatives even when they needed it by all means.
He's really stingy to the people of his company…and yet, he lived in luxury.
He's the only one who stayed at a high quality hotel at the company trip, and he purposely eats a special meal on the company's party.
That's why…uncle succeeded the company after father, but nobody from the company would like to follow grandfather's rule at his time.
Thus…the company decided to reform…
My mother got angry because of that.
She stormed into the company. She had a big fight with uncle who's the new president…
Mother has nothing to do with grandfather's company, and yet.
Above that…my father's working as an employee of that company…!

She said absurd things about seeking the succession of the property, and 「Hand over all the stocks of the company」and 「Make her an officer of the company」…
In the first place, she was hated along with my grandfather by the whole clan.
That's why…mother has been completely ostracized from the clan…
The New Year's card doesn't come anymore.
Our family wasn't called though there was a cousin's wedding.

Father…seems to have a good position when my grandfather was alive though.
After mother stormed in…he was demoted and proceeded to a subsidiary company.
He's somewhat pitiful…he was close to 50 and yet all of the

unrelated work has been pushed to him.
He grew old quickly…and became unenergetic.
At the end of last year, when I consulted him about going to high school, he lost a lot of weight…
He said「I'll be taking night shift from the beginning of the year」

So I decided on my high school by myself.
I hated the dormitory life…so I chose a school that I can commute from the house.
I wanted to live with my father.
Mother hardly comes back to the house anymore.
In the end…mother succeeded grandfather's old house.
The house where mother was born and raised.
The land and the building has some worth but…the clan hates grandfather so it was handed over to mother.
Mother seems to have stolen it with her power, and was pleased…

Mother has always been a papa's girl after all.
She never became father's wife.
She never became my mother.
She wants to remain as grandfather's daughter al the time…
She's living in grandfather's house alone now.

They divorced during my high school entrance exam.
Mother suddenly sent a divorce paper to father via mail…
I have a school report…and an interview too…
She didn't mind it at all and divorced…

「I don't intend to meet you anymore. Talk to my lawyer about everything else」…

I never met her after coming home from the dorm middle school.
When I came back, they're already divorced…
Well fine.
I don't want to meet that person again…

And my father.
He had some slightly strange atmosphere…
I thought so…
Well, father…married the daughter of the president of his workplace, he married mother…

Then…he endured it for 15 years…
He endured it being worked around like a servant.
He endured it because he was able to work…
He can't come back to the company like this, can he?
He thought that it's already hopeless…
Then, my father.
Disappeared at the day of the entrance ceremony of my high school.

He left a note saying 「Don't look for me」only in the company…
He seemed to have disappeared from the company in the middle of the night duty.
The person from father's company made a call in the house anxiously…
It was just before I went to the entrance ceremony…

I don't know what I should do.
I was thinking of how should I live after this…
What would I do if my father died…?
What should I do…!!!

But…I have to go to the entrance ceremony anyway.
My heart's beating so fast…
My sweat's not stopping…
My mind's restless…
I want to shout…but the voice doesn't come out…

The ceremony ended, we went to each of our classrooms…it feels unpleasant.
…Then
…That girl
Shirasaka Yukino…called out to me

「What's wrong…are you feeling bad?」she asked.

I was uncertain if I was there until she called out to me.
I felt that the human named me might not be there.
That I'm the only one different among the new students at the entrance ceremony…
What if I'm not a person that's supposed to be here…

But…she called out to me.

「Thus…Oh , I'm here」I was able to confirm it!

I've always looked at her after that.
…I gaze at her.
It calms me down whenever I look at her…!
I forget all the scary things in my head…!

When I return to my house…there's a bank passbook card and a PIN written on a paper placed on the table where the 3,000 yen was put when I was in elementary school.
My father stopped at the house after disappearing from the company.
There was no letter.
Just the passbook.
But…I thought that my father didn't abandonme…
I felt a bit relieved…
When I looked at the passbook…the electric bill and gas rate was automatically debited…so I thought that I'd be able to live in the house for the time being.
After that…I got a call from the current president, my uncle, saying 「We'll treat it as a leave of absence for three months for now」
Father was a diligent person…so he was not hated like my mother.

That's why…I can spend my three months still.
I thought of considering what's next after this…
Thus, I lived alone in the house all this time.
I spent my money little by little just like when I was in elementary school.
Buying food…drinking tap water.
Like that…alone

◇ ◇ ◇

I talked about everything indifferently…
Un…That's right.
That's all.

「…That's the end of my story」

Err…anything to add?…

「And then, last week, Yuzuki-sensei called out to me…and now I'm here」

The light is dazzling as ever.
I can feel everyone's glance but I can't see their faces at all.
It makes me uneasy that no one's saying a thing.

「Uhm…I'm sorry for telling a tedious story. My story is boring isn't it?」

Un…This might be trivial for everybody.

「…Katsuko…keep the lights on」

Sensei stands up from the rays of the backlight.
Because it's the shadow, I don't understand her expression.
I can only see Sensei's tall and thin silhouette.

「…Yoshida-kun, can I ask you something?」
「Yes…go on」
「…Yoshida-kun…what do you intend to do after this?」
「…After this?」
「You intend to wait for your father's return in three months, don't you?…」
「Yes…Uncle promised to pay the salary cutting the salary by a percentage 」
「What would you do if your father didn't come back after waiting for three months?」
「…I haven't thought of it yet. I want to work part time but there's no place that would hire without a guardian」
「…You'll continue high school then?」
「If possible…but I won't force it」

If there's no money then it can't be helped.

「…You don't intend to go to university?」
「Well, no matter how you think about it, it's impossible…I don't have my father. I have to survive too」
「I can take out money for you to go to university you know…!」
「No…That's no good」
「Why?」

「Because…it's irrelevant to Yuzuki-sensei!」
「Aren't you my 『Toy』?!」
「This and that are different」
「…What's different?」
「Sensei has already done me a lot of things… I can't depend on Sensei more than that」
「Things I've done?」
「That's right! I'm here!」
「…Here?」
「If I didn't meet Sensei…I would still be alone in that house. Alone in that dark room. Ah…it's not good to waste electricity so I don't turn on the lights when I'm alone. That was a rule since I was in elementary school」

That's right…
Just being here…makes me happy.
I'm grateful to Sensei.

「I'll change my question…Yoshida-kun, have you thought of your own future?」
「…No」
「You haven't though of anything?」
「Well…there's nothing to think about」
「There's nothing to think about?」
「Since childhood, I never have an image of myself growing up. In my mind, my life would end when I'm around 20 years old…!」
「Do you intend to die by 20?」
「No way…I'll continue to live as long as I do. But perhaps…I think I'll die in a dark place, alone. That's what I imagine. Since I was a child. When I was in elementary school, I cover myself in a futon alone in a dark room…Those feelings rose into me…and I remember grandmother's lonely funeral. It's really scary…but I already gave up. I can't escape from it…」
「…Can't escape?」
「Yes. People would die after all…alone」

I breathed deeply.
What's this…the air's trembling.
Ah…My pulse is fast.

「…Right now, I'm happy every day. I came to love a lot of people.

There are people who says they love me too. That's amazing. It's unbelievable. I'm happy…that's why I!」

The light is dazzling.

「I know that this kind of things will not continue forever. There's no way a human like me can have such happiness…」
「…Are you thinking that we're fooling you?」
「No, no, no!…Everyone's so gentle that I understand! I know! I believe!…but」
「…But」
「I can't repay the favor to everybody…I express my thanks to Sensei. But I can't return the favor to Sensei. I'm grateful to Katsuko-nee. I'm grateful to Nei-san, Margo-san and Misuzu too. I'm thankful to Nagisa-san and Mao-chan. Yamamine-san, thank you for being so kind! Yuuka-san, thank you for cutting my hair. Hidemi-san, Tamayo-san, thank you for listening to a man like me! Morimoto on the other room, thank you」

Everyone, all of them…are gentle to me.
Even though I'm just a stupid man who can't do anything.

「Everyone's so gentle to me, and yet…I can't return anything. I can only do what I can with all of my effort…But that's not enough!」

Un. I have to return what everyone gave me tenfold

「…That's what you really think?」
「I do. That's why…if I trouble everyone, I'll go out immediately. I'm prepared for it always」
「That's not what I'm thinking.」
「Well…Aren't I a nuisance to all?」
「…You're not a nuisance! Who told you that!!!」

Sensei's voice is angry…!
The usual cool Yuzuki-sensei…is scolding me severely!

「My mother has told me long time ago」
「…Your mother?」
「『I would've been free if you're not here. You're an annoying

child…I shouldn't have given birth to you You shouldn't have been born』 she said…!
「When did she tell you that? 」
「When I was in fifth grade…when I was taken to the restaurant by mother while I hold a tennis racket 」
「When your mother used you to break up with her lover…? 」
「Yes…on the way back. Inside the car 」

…I never forgot that.
Inside the car in the night town.
Mother…paints lipstick on her lips, then said it clearly.
That's the only thing I remember from mother's mouth…

「That's why…I shouldn't have been born 」

I hear a switch…then the lights turned on…
The light inside the room has become equal in an instant.

「…Ojou-sama! 」

…Katsuko-nee.
Katsuko-nee spoke to Yuzuki-sensei.

「I've been with this boy for this past several days. But, he never said 『I'm hungry』 or 『My throat's dry』 or 『I want to take a rest』 Not even once. He doesn't even show that he's enduring. And, He'll do anything you say
「…Well, isn't that obvious 」
「After that, he'll never leave anything whatever meal you give him. Delicious, delicious, he'll say…he'll never leave a crumb. Even the bread I make. I purposely made a lot of spaghetti this lunch but this boy did his best eating until the last pasta! 」
「Because…Katsuko-nee specially made a delicious meal! Won't I be incur divine wrath if I leave some alone?! 」
「…Thanks 」
「I'm the one who should say thanks. It was made for me. I only did what's normal so it's strange to thank me…! 」

Margo-san talks to me.

「Yohsida-kun…don't you think that your normal and this world's

normal is different?」
「Well…I've lived how I was told all this time? So I don't know. Anyway, that's the normal for me…」
「…You think that this is no good?」
「Yes…Surely I need to die at least a hundred times to return the favor to Katsuko-nee…! Yuzuki-sensei too, Nei-san, Margo-san and Misuzu…I'm in debt with everyone here! But I can't return it! That's why I must part from everyone someday! This can't continue forever after all」

My heart hurts!

「I…must return to that dark room someday. No, I'll be driven out of that room and will be sent to a darker, more desolate place. Alone. That's a place suitable for me…!」

It hurts…it's painful.

「…Yuzuki-sama」

Misuzu spoke to me.

「…What?」
「Please give Yoshida-san to Misuzu」

Misuzu didn't say 『Danna-sama』 but 『Yoshida-kun』

「…What would you do?」
「I'll marry him. I'll devote myself to Yoshida-kun throughout my life. Misuzu will make him happy」

…Misuzu?

「…Misuzu. Didn't you say that you won't be able to marry throughout your life if you lose your virginity?」

Nagisa-san expresses her surprise.

「…I changed my mind. I'll wait for Yoshida-san to be 18 and put him in the family register」

What are you saying?

「Then…are you going to make him carry the heavy burden of the Kouzuki house?」

Sensei asks Misuzu.

「I'll break off relations with Kouzuki house. We'll live with the two of us. MIsuzu has received 30 million in the bank from grandfather on my 15th year old birthday. How many years we can live with that money?」
「Let's see…Yoshida-kun's used to poor life so I think that you can live throughout your life with that money」
「Then, let's do it. If ever we lack money, Misuzu will work. Yoshida-san will never be having a hardship throughout his life!」

Why are you doing that?!

「Misuzu, don't be selfish! I'll be raising him from now on!」

Nagisa-san said.

「He'll become Mao's brother…I'll become his mother…!」

Hey…wait a moment!

「Right…Misuzu-sama. If it's just 30 million yen, Katsuko has it too. Katsuko's grown up, and isn't tied to a house either. I think that he's better with Katsuko…!」

Katsuko-nee too…!

「Everyone…I think that you should cool off…」

Margo-san calmed everybody.

「Yoshida-kun…you stole Misuzu's virginity, don't you?」

Margo-san told me.

「…Yes」
「Then, take responsibility. Shouldn't you be living for Misuzu-chan until you die?」
「…Hey, Margo-chan?」

「What does this mean, Margo-sama?!」

Nagisa-san and Katsuko-nee protests against Margo-san…

「…I'll leave your complaints later, I want to know Yoshida-kun's answer first」

…I

「Yes…If Misuzu wishes for it. I'll compensate to Misuzu throughout my life」

I can't do anything but that.
Margo-san spoke to Misuzu.

「Yoshida-kun said that but…do you think that he'll be happy?」
「I don't know but…Misuzu will do her best」
「How will you do that?」
「…That's」
「Let's take it from a different angle. Misuzu-san, have you drunk tequila?」
「…No. Misuzu hasn't drunk alcohol yet」
「Can you imagine the taste?」
「I can imagine wine and brandy from sweets…But I don't know about tequila」
「Of course. I can imagine it. Actually, I've drunk it…」

Margo-san looks at me once again.

「Yoshida-kun…is lacking the experience that most of the normal people had. There's a big hole. He…doesn't know the taste of 『Happiness』」
「…The taste of 『Happiness』?」

Misuzu looks at me.

「That's right…he's someone who hasn't experienced happiness, I think that he'll only try to return anything you do with all his effort. He has lived alone until now so he doesn't know how to depend on others」
「…It seems so」
「The current Yoshida-kun…Even if you take him, or even Katsuko-

san and Nagisa-san looking after him, he'll only think that he's a 『Burden』 Then that won't make him happy at all… 」
「 …But, Misuzu will take time…! 」
「 That's right. Take it slowly…you must teach him the taste of 『Happiness』 Not Misuzu alone…but with everyone 」
「 …Margo-sama! 」
「 Isn't it…Katsuko-san, Nagisa-san? 」

Katsuko-nee and Nagisa-san looked at each other.

「 …Right. Nothing will happen if we rush it 」
「 Let's all love him 」
「 I'll cooperate too…Don't you think so, Minaho? 」

Margo-san said.

「 Megumi-san…what do you think? 」

Misuzu asks Yamamine-san.,
Yamamine-san…

「 I…I thought that I've been the most unfortunate person in the world. Yoshida-kun…I'm sorry… 」

Nei-san stands up to her feet from those words.

「 …That's my line! 」

Nei-san approaches me.

「 At least, I had a little brother. Kei-chan was there. Yo-chan didn't have anyone. He's been alone all the time…and yet…!

Nei-san beats my chest…!

「 …Don't make me cry! Why are you talking such a sad story! 」
「 …I-I'm sorry 」
「 Don't apologize! I'm the one who should apologize! Idiot! 」

Nei-san beats my chest repeatedly.

「 …I'm sorry. What should I do? 」

I don't know how to calm down Nei-san's feelings…

「…Cry! Cry at my chest you idiot!」
「I can't cry」
「…Why?」
「Well…there's nothing sad about it…!」

Nei-san began to weep from my answer.
Waawaaa…she sobs.
Misuzu's crying.
Yamamine-san too…
Huh…what's going on?

「…I'll become your onee-chan! That's absolute!」

Nei-san told me while crying.

I'm just at loss.

「…Quiet!」

Yuzuki-sensei scolded Nei-san with a strong tone…
Then…Nei-san's tears stopped.

「…Yoshida-kun」

Sensei spoke to me.

「Thank you for talking. I now what kind of child are you. I think that everyone should consider how they should face you from now on…」

Sensei's pointed eyes look straight at me.

「On top of that…I want to hear another thing」
「…What is it?」
「Yoshida-kun…what kind of existence is Shirasaka Yukino to you…?」

Yukino…to me?

61. Warmth of the blanket

What is Yukino to me?

I thought that she was my first love.
I raped her but I thought that I want to have her.
But, how many times I violate her…Yukino will not become mine.
For Yukino…I'm nothing but a dick slave who's used by Sensei and Katsuko-nee to humiliate her.
She doesn't recognize me as a human…a man.

「You don't love Shirasaka Yukino…do you?」
「…That's right」

If I do…then I won't do cruel things to her.

「But…You like her?」

Sensei asks me

「Yes…perhaps」

That's right…'Perhaps'
I'm not certain.

「Eh?…Yoshida-kun likes Yukino, don't you?」

Yamamine-san said in surprise.

「Well, Yoshida-kun's always looking at Yukino? During the class and break time…!」
「Eh…was I that obvious?」
「We see you…everyone in the class knows. That Yoshida-kun likes Yukino…!」

…No way
No…of course they would.
Certainly, I'm only looking at Yukino for these past month.

「Yoshida-kun, do you know why you're obsessed with Shirasaka-

san?」

Sensei asks me.

「…No」

There's no way I would know

「I somehow understood it from Yoshida-kun's story a while ago…」

Margo-san said.

「…What do you mean?」

Everyone's looking at Margo-san.

「…Isn't that just『Linus' blanket』?」

…Linus?

「You don't know? Snoopy's friend, ther one who's always bringing the blanket?」
「…Sorry, what's Snoopy?」

Margo-san's too knowledgeable, she's always something that I don't know.
No…I don't know a lot of things though.

「Yeah…I guess Snoopy was hard for Yoshida-kun. Got it, I'll change my explanation. It's a young child who's always carrying a blanket like some stuffed animal. Have you seen it…?」
「…No」
「Okay. Then remember at least that」
「Okay」
「It was called a 『Safe blanket』…The young child stabilizes it's mental condition by having that specific thing」
「Is that so?」
「…I see, your sense of 『Ownership』is thin isn't it? That's why you're so attached to Shirasaka Yukino…!」
「…Margo-sama, what does that mean?」

Katsuko-nee asked anxiously.

「When Yoshida-kun was in his very unstable state…In short, when he discovered that his father disappeared and he still have to go to the entrance ceremony…Shirasaka Yukino talked to him gently by chance. Thus her existence has become special to Yoshida-kun…」
「That's all…?」
「Oya oya…Humans are creatures that when someone spoke a gentle word to them, they're okay thinking that they'll devote their whole life to that one. Katsuko-san, why did you come to like Yoshida-kun? Think about the first…wasn't it because he said something gentle to you?」
「Well…certainly, that might be so, but」

Katsuko-nee seems to have an idea.

「It's just that Yoshida-kun isn't a normal boy, with that coincidence, I think that the existence called Shirasaka Yukino has made a very strong imprint in his heart. It was the time when his mental condition is the most unstable in his life…and in addition, there was no one who was gentle to him after all」
「…I see, that might be the case」

Margo-san and Katsuko-nee nod at each other…
I don't understand it at all.

「…What does in-something mean?」

Let's ask about that word that interests me first.

「Imprinting?…Err, what was it in Japanese?」

Margo-san asked Nei-san

「……It's『刷り込み』」[1]

…Imprinting?

「When you show a newborn duck with a balloon, that child would think that the balloon is it's own mother…Have you never heard about it?」
「…Nope」

I feel sorry for Margo-san but I really don't know.

「That's how it is. It's imprinted in your own heart」
「So that's why Shirasaka Yukino's so special to Yo-chan. It just happened by chance…!」

Nei-san's amazing.
She's able to understand what Margo-san is saying…

「…It seems that everyone understands except Yoshida-kun」

Margo-san said.
Eh…I looked around.
Everyone's nodding together…
I'm the only one who doesn't understand?

「Uhm…excuse me」

Misuzu raises her hand

「What's wrong Misuzu-chan?」

Misuzu asked Margo-san

「Uhm…I think that I'm asking this really late」
「What?」
「…Who's Shirasaka Yukino?」

I see…Misuzu doesn't know Yukino.
Including that I'm a mean man who raped Yukino…

「The girl I'm training right now…Yoshida-kun's helping me…」

Sensei said in on purpose so she can take all the responsibilities.
But…I have to tell Misuzu properly.
I don't have excuses to Misuzu.

「No…I'm the one who requested sensei…so I can rape her…!」
「…Danna-sama?」

Misuzu's surprised.
…Of course.

「Yeah…I'm such a cruel man. I don't have any value for Misuzu to be gentle with…

I told Misuzu.
…No good.
…I'll be hated by Misuzu.

「Misuzu's a bit angry!」

Misuzu's angry as expected.

「…Sorry」
「I…Misuzu imagined that there's another sex slave than herself. I'm ready for that」
「…Eh?」
「If there's one then hurry up and say it!」

Wait…Misuzu?

「…I'll get along with her so…please don't throw Misuzu away」

Errr…Uhm

「Misuzu-chan…That's wrong. Shirasaka Yukino isn't Yoshida-kun's sex slave」

Margo-san enters between

「…Eh?」
「Yup…it's different」

…Completely diferent

「So Yukino was really being trained by Minaho-san…!」

Yamamine-san spoke.

「Yes…That's right」

Yuzuki-sensei answered in a low voice.

「I lived in this mansion until I was six years old so I somehow know what 'training' means」

「It's as you expected…She was forcibly raped, stolen her virginity…and was forced to have sex over and over again. We also took her shameful photos and videos. She was raped in the school too…!」
「…When she was called to the principal's office yesterday?」
「Of course」

Aah…I'll be hated by Yamamine-san now.
…It can't be helped.
…I did it myself.

「Un…I raped her. Last night, she was called in a park restroom and was raped too. I violated Yukino in front of her house too…!」

Misuzu reacts strongly to my answer!

「Please wait a moment! Have you done it with that person that much?!」
「…Un」

I'm really a cruel human.

「But…even with that number of times she had sex with Danna-sama…shouldn't she be already a sex slave already?!」

…Eh?!

「Misuzu-san…You see, Shirasaka Yukino is quite unusual」
「Right, she's not normal」

Margo-san and Katsuko-nee says that…?!
No…I think that Yukino's normal.
It's normal to hate the person who raped you after all.
Rather, I think that Misuzu's admirable for advancing and becoming my pet…
Am I wrong??

「Her pride is really strong…She can't accept surrendering to rape. She's indulging into the pleasures of sex even further and yet …she can't see Yoshida-kun at all」

Yuzuki-sensei explained.

「That's strange!」

Strange?…Misuzu?

「There's no woman who can't fall in love with Danna-sama from having sex with him!」

No…I think that's strange.
It's not that I'm saying that Misuzu's strange though.
I think that Yukino's reaction is the normal one.

「Okay. Misuzu-san, how many women do you think Yoshida-kun had sex with?」

Margo-san asked Misuzu.

「…Ten?」

No…Hey, Misuzu!
You're thinking of me that way?!
I'm not that popular you know…!

「Misuzu-chan…why do you think so?」

Margo-san asked further

「Well…Danna-sama's very good at sex…!」

I can do nothing but smile wryly.

「Okay, then, those who had sex with Yoshida-kun, raise your hand…!」

With Margo-san's question, Katsuko-nee strongly raised her hand.
Nagisa-san raised it bashfully…
Misuzu is having a 「Huh?」face…

「The people here, Katsuko-san, Nagisa-san, and Misuzu-chan, that's three…add Shirasaka Yukino and that's four. That's all of the partners Yoshida-kun had in sex…!」

Margo-san laughs.

「…That's a joke?」
「It's not…By the way, Yoshida-kun was on his third day since he lost his virginity…」

Errr, I first raped Yukino on April 26…and today's the 29ht.
Yup…three days hasn't passed yet.

「No way…Danna-sama looks very used to it when Misuzu gave her virginity. He's so composed!」

I'm being praised?
Is this okay?

「No…I didn't have a bit of composure」
「That's not true. It was a very wonderful first experience…!」

No…Even if you say your impressions now.

「Sex isn't all about experience…Yoshida-kun definitely has talent in sex. He has an outstanding talent in a certain meaning. But you see…This kind of talent doesn't show the same effect to any kind of person」
「What does that mean…Margo-sama?」
「…To make it easy to understand, it's about compatibility. Yoshida-kun and Misuzu-chan's compatibility is good. Katsuko-san and Nagisa-san too…But it doesn't match Shirasaka Yukino. They had sex repeatedly after all」

Misuzu stares at me…

「Repeatedly had sex you say…how many times?」

…Err

「…33 times」

Yuzuki-sensei answered in my place…!

「…In three days?!」
「That's right…33 times in three days. She received all of Yoshida-kun's semen. Her womb, her face, and mouth…」

S-Sensei…
Once again, when it's said in front of Misuzu and Yamamine-san…I think that I'm really a terrible man.

「What kind of sex was it, please tell me…!」

Sensei looks at Katsuko-nee when Misuzu asked…

「…Katsuko, tell her」

Katsuko-nee counts with her finger while remembering it

「…Okay…the first rape was violating her while she's bound on a restraint machine. She was kept attacked until she fainted, the fainted Shirasaka-san was violated even further. It was 11 intravaginal ejaculation only at the first day」
「…11 times?」
「To be accurate, it was just on the night!」

Misuzu's face stiffened.

「Then…she was raped from the back while she was taking a shower early in the next day. Car sex on the way to school during the morning. One intravaginal ejaculation on each. In the evening, she was brought in an abandoned school's tatami mat room, was forced to striptease, seven ejaculations inside, one from a fellatio drinking, and two were scattered on her face. Made to bathe in pee and Shirasaka-sama also peed…!」

Yamamine-san covers her face.

「…Yukino…such a thing」

Sorry…Yamamine-san

「Then…On the third day…it's yesterday, she was called in the principal's office during class and had intravaginal ejaculation two times, semen drinking once, and another creampie in the stairs of the school building. At night, two intravaginal ejaculation at the public park's toilet, and drank once. In addition, a public sex in the middle of the crowd at the late night downtown…that was a creampie too. Lastly, though I haven't confirmed it but Shirasaka-

san had intravaginal ejaculation in front of Shirasaka house…!」

…Uwaa, I'm a demon.
What am I thinking?

「In total…33 times in three days!」

Katsuko-nee nodded.

「Doing that much…and she still haven't fallen?!」

Yuuka-san expresses her surprise.
She stopped cutting Yamamine-san's hair…

「Katsuko-chan. If it's this child then that's all sex with all his might?」
「Yes…Hidemi-sama」
「Haa…Is she made of stone?」

Tamayo-san's amazed.

「She's a daughter with very high pride and very strong narcissism…」

Sensei told the older girls…

「Of course…She's Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter after all」

Eh…Nagisa-san?

「Nagisa-san…do you know Shirasaka-san's father?」

When I asked Nagisa-san…Yuuka-san and the others.

「…I know everything」
「…Right」
「…Nagisa-san maybe the most filled with deep emotion among us?」

Nagisa-san sadly smiled.

「Yes…he was the one who raped me」

What…!
That means…!

Before I can speak, Misuzu's voice roared in the room…!

「…Please wait a moment!」

…W-What?

「Misuzu's in the middle of her talk…!」

Ah…Yeah
Speaking of which, she is.

「…Then, Danna-sama had sex with the girl named Shirasaka Yukino 33 times for three days!」
「Un…Sorry」
「…Judging from the flow of the talk, it was Danna-sama's first time too?」
「That's right…that's right…」

Uwaa…Misuzu's seriously angry!

「…Aaaaaah! That's so frustrating!!!!」
「Sorry…I'm a really bad man…!」
「If I met Danna-sama earlier, Misuzu could've taken the first time…!!!」

…W-What?

「Uhm…Misuzu-chan. In that case, I think that Yoshida-kun won't be meeting Misuzu-chan…」

Then, Margo-san retorted…!

「I don't care about that theory! Uwaaan! Iyaaadaaa!!! I'm so frustrated…!!!!」

M-M-M-…Misuzu?

「…Katsuko-sama…Is there a sex Danna-sama haven't experienced yet?」

「There's a lot!…Inside the bathtub, school rooftop, inside the train, naked stroll, public pool, light SM…!!」

Katsuko-nee's sex list continues further…!

「Please reserve it all to Misuzu! I won't hand all the first times to that person named Shiraska-san!」

Aaaaah…uhm.
M-Misuzu-san…?!

「Danna-sama, Misuzu will do more than 33 times in three days!… I'll be thinking about the plans for the training camp from now on!…Megumi-san!」
「W-What?!」

Having her name called by Misuzu suddenly, Yamamine-san's confused…!

「I don't have confidence to do more than 33 times so join me Megumi-san! I'll challenge the thirty times so Megumi-san please aim for twenty above!」
「……Eh, Me?」
「Isn't that obvious!…I'm very interested in the car sex, pee, and public restroom play! I'll be doing that and Megumi-san please take care at school sex!」
「I'll be doing lewd stuffs in the principal's office in the middle of the class?」
「There's also the stairs of the abolished school building! Though the rooftop looks good, I'll hand it over to you!」
「…B-But!」
「If Megumi-san doesn't do it who will?!…I think that Nei-sama still intends to keep her virginity…!」
「…Hey hey hey hey!!」

Nei-san shouted suffering!

「Anyway, Misuzu and Megumi-san will have sex more than that girl! We'll be violated in variety! That's decided…okay?!」

Misuzu-san's menacing look…pushes Yamamine-san out!

「O-Okay!」
「It's a promise! Danna-sama, is that okay?!」
「…Y-Yeah」

Uwaa…I'll be doing it…
Eh…Seriously?!
I'll do 60 times with these two?

「Ah…Katsuko wants to be violated consecutively too!」

Katsuko-nee too…?!

「Nagisa too?」

When Katsuko-nee and Nagisa-san asked…

「I don't care about the frequency…rather than that, I want to have sex with him leisurely. Embracing a lot while connected. Kissing a lot…flirting…talking while having sex I want to have that slow sex」

N-Nagisa-san?!

「Ah, that might be good too!」

K-Katsuko-nee?

「Danna-sama! Misuzu will do it too! Megumi-san will do it too!」

M-Misuzu?
Yamamine-san's red.

「I'm so jelly of everyone…they're excited」
「That's why, please graduate from your virginity Nei-sama already!」

Katsuko-nee's harsh on Nei-san…!

「Errr…Misuzu-chan, shouldn't we return to Shirasaka Yukino already?」

Margo-san suppresses Misuzu.

「Okay go on! It's fine as long as Danna-sama loves me and Megumi-san more than that girl! Isn't that right? Megumi-san?!」

Yamamine-san's confused.,
What are you making a virgin girl promise?…

「But…Is this okay?…I'm a bad guy who raped a girl…!?」

Misuzu made a blank face.

「Well…Danna-sama wanted to have sex with that girl, didn't you??」
「…Yup」
「Then, that can't be helped!」

Misuzu said it calmly.

「…But」
「Even when Misuzu lost her virginity, isn't it Danna-sama raping me?!」
「Well…that's true」
「But, Danna-sama likes Misuzu, don't you?」
「…I do」
「Misuzu loves Danna-sama too! I said it before, Misuzu thinks that Danna-sama needs to have sex with lots of women. I know that you need it to be polished as a man!」
「…Misuzu」
「But…please don't forget Misuzu. Please have sex with Misuzu a lot! Ah, rape is fine too! Misuzu loves being violated by Danna-sama! Oh right…Megumi-san too, please lose your virginity via rape!」
「Eh…Misuzu-san?」

Yamamine-san's face is so red…!

「Megumi-san's the same as Misuzu, I think that you'd like rape more than normal sex! Isn't that right, Megumi-san…!!」
「I…I」

Nagisa-san gave up and helps out…

「Misuzu…do that later」

「Okay, I'm sorry! Then we'll discuss it later Megumi-san! Misuzu will think of a wonderful virgin sex for Megumi-san!」

Misuzu laughs.
Yamamine-san's embarrassed.

「I…Is it decided that I'll have sex with Yoshida-kun?」
「What are you saying this late 2?!」
「…I have to, do I?」

Yamamine-san looks at me.
I…

「Sorry…I want to do it by all means」
「…Yoshida-kun」
「I want to ravish Yamamine-san so badly. I want to ejaculate inside Yamamine-san…a lot of times」

I already throw out all of my honest feelings.

「…Got it」

Yamamine-san, said it…

「I…I'll do anything. You can do anything you want. I'll give my body to Yoshida-kun…

Yamamine-san looks at me…

「In exchange…don't do anything to Yukino anymore」

…Yamamine-san

「You do know that Yukino's going out with Endou, don't you?…I won't condemn you for now. Minaho-san have planned it too…it's not Yoshida-kun alone. But…please stop it already」

…I

「I…I'll do anything instead of Yukino. You may do it 100 times in three days. I'll become Yoshida-kun's toy…No, make me Yoshida-kun's toy. That's why…!」

Before I can answer Yamamine-san…
Yuzuki-sensei spoke.

「I'm sorry, Megumi-san…that's not how it is…!」
「Minaho-san…why?」

Sensei turns around to Yamamine-san…

「Shirasaka Yukino will be impregnated by Yoshida-kun and will give birth to a child…!」
「…Eh?」
「Then, I'll be raising the child she'll give birth to…」

Sensei said it clearly.

「That's…my revenge to Shirasaka Sousuke」

「But…Yukino… Yukino's only his daughter…Yukino got nothing to do with this!」

Yamamine-san's sorrowful cry…

「Right…She's unrelated. I'm the same. I was Kuromori Kouichiro's daughter…and was made to fall in hell by Shirasaka Sousuke」

…Sensei?

「We're the same…we just entered that school and was aimed out…and was made to sell our own body in this mansion」

Hidemi-san said.

「Nagisa and I are the same…we're just first years who just entered the school…!」

Katsuko-nee…!

「Right…Shirasaka Sousuke joins in『Kuromori』, and terrible things comes prevailing calmly…!」

The eldest…Yuuka-san said.

「Katsuko…take off my clothes please」

Yuzuki-sensei told Katsuko-nee

「Yes, Ojou-sama」

Katsuko-nee lowered the zipper of Sensei's clothes.
Sensei's stripped off.
Sensei…isn't wearing any underwear.
Tall height…flat chest
A thin white naked body…
On her stomach is a big ugly scar…

「I got pregnant when I was 16 years old. Because of Shirasaka Sousuke」

…Yuzuki, sensei…?!

「But when I got pregnant…Shirasaka added more guests…and sold me to a sadist monomaniac…this is the result…!」

All of the people in the room paid attention to Sensei's stomach.

「I…became unable to bear a child. That's not all, I can't even have sex!」

…can't have sex?

「My genitals can no longer accept a man…!」

---

1. It's still imprinting ↩
2. –in the novel ↩

62. Black History

Yuzuki-sensei…began to talk calmly without hiding the wound in her stomach.

「My grandfather…Kuromori Kunousuke was born in the red light district of Kanazawa[1] at the end of Meiji Era[2]」
Do you know the red light district?
It's the place for prostitutes…a brothel
The name of the brothel is 『Kuromori tower』…
Kuromori Kounosuke was a lone child born from the master of that brothel and one of the prostitute.
But, he was loved and raised…and was allowed to bear the family name Kuromori

After growing up, grandfather went from Kanazawa to Tokyo to become a trader.
It was the early days of Showa era…he started working by ordering parts of a ship and machines from a foreign country.
Most of his business are at government office and military forces…it was a country related work.
Kounosuke was a political merchant.
Sticking close to politicians and government officials, he's a merchant undertaking work of country.
Then…he succeeded.
He seemed to have gained a lot of profit during the war…
He gained the favor of the officers at the army immediately after war and started gaining influence at the work related to the occupation policy.
He accepted jobs on both US forces and Japanese government.
Kounosuke was a merchant without imprudence…
He had the talent to gain favor of people with power at any times…
One of his business is selling women to men with power…

High class prostitutes…A prostitute only sold to rich people in the upper class.
Kuromori Kounosuke arranged prostitutes to politicians, high class bureaucrat, a large enterprise manager customers.
Of course, the high commission officer on the occupation army

too…
Kounosuke is accustomed to treating women since his birth at the red light district…

That's the origin of the prostitution section of 『Kuromori』

Talent and special education are needed for the high class prostitutes that are going to face people with power.
Just good looking and young is no good.
Of course, it's obvious that they need to be good at sex. They need to have the ability to satisfy the guest all the time.
On top of that…The high class prostitutes are required by the guests to be educated so they can converse on whatever topic.
They have to be elegant and graceful so they won't be embarrassing when brought to a party…
They have to be always considerate of the guest…they need to be cheerful so that the guest won't feel sad.

Kuromori Kounosuke…with such talent, looked for daughters of good families who lost their father in the war and the ojou-sama who lost their powers from the post war.
There are a lot people with good standing but had problems with money after the war…
Instead of selling their own bodies to a brothel, the young ladies can protect their dignities by becoming Kounosuke's high level prostitute that has a good income.
The girls chose to be embraced with man of power than the public.

Kuromori Kounosuke's high class prostitutes became a status of men on upper class in Japan that time.
In that matter, Kounosuke's business front was promoted…his position was raised.

But…At the times when Japan became rich, it has become difficult to look for suitable girls coming from a good family… All of the prostitutes employed back then grew old and retired…
But, Kuromori Kounosuke needs high class prostitutes to maintain his connection to the men of power.
That's why he decided to start bringing up his own prostitutes.

Kuromori Kounosuke's aimed system is an old Japanese red light

district.

…Have you ever heard of the word Courtesan[3], or Siren[4]?
It indicates the first class during Edo and Meiji era.
Prostitutes that deal with feudal lords or wealthy merchants…
Courtesans are raised in various brothels since childhood.
Looking for girls around ten years old, those with good foundation and would become a beauty in the future, then bought from their parents. A lot of them.
Then, they'd be raised for years…to become the best prostitute.
The girl raised as expected, growing up as a beauty, will be dropped on the way as a normal prostitute.
Then, the girls who took labor and time to be raised, are sorted…
will become a high class prostitute.
They're polished perfectly to become an 『Ideal woman for men』
Such prostitute education system…existed in the old red light district of Japan.

Then, the completed girl…are sold to rich people.
Not just on the rich people.
They sell girls only on rich people selected carefully…people with both the position and family social standing.
Upstarts won't be noticed.
People with high position and money competes on who'll take the virginity…
When the first partner has a high position, the prostitute's position becomes high too.
If their position becomes higher, then the price to embrace her rises too.
Then…Most of the prostitutes would be bought by a customer by twenty-five years old.
Most of them are bought by a rich merchant and becomes that person's wife.
It might be strange to think a prostitute being married now but…at those times, customers of the high class prostitutes has a lot of money.
They have both the elegance and education, they're beautiful and can sing and dance…isn't it ideal for a merchant's wife?
Also, all of the guests they kept company are people with position so far…so they know a lot of people They might become good

business partners of the shop's master.

That kind of things are still performed at Meiji era.
Kounosuke who was born and raised in the red light district knows the system of course.
He tried to reproduce it at Showa era…

Therefore…he bought a high school.
In short…our school.

Kounosuke's method is the same as an old brothel.
Looking for beauties with good character from the rural area…and yet coming from a family that's troubled with money, they buying them from their parents.
Then…they're made to enter the school as a scholarship student…
Then would be educated as a high level prostitute…then sold.
This mansion is originally a girls dormitory for scholarship students…this was a brothel.
This became the second 『Kuromori Tower』…

The prostitutes Kounosuke brought so far had pleased his customers even more.
Because he selected his customers carefully…he really became a business dealing with people with social status.
He's protected from gangs and police by dealing with such people.
When a person relies only on one man of power, that person would be crushed along with losing his power.
Kounusuke makes multiple people as his customer to not let it happen.
He's really a person who's not imprudent.

This is a brothel and a social club for men of power at the same time.
The number of the prostitutes did not surpass ten people at maximum either…
But, those ten…are the best prostitutes whom are carefully selected beauties and was given thorough education.
Ten of them was enough…
Rather, if they expand further, the people with the same profession and the underworld would envy them.

Kounusuke had a underworld business to support the surface business.

But…Kounosuke doesn't think the same way.
Kuromori Kouichiro…my father
My father…though of expanding the business of 『Kuromori Tower』 even further
My father had an intense inferiority complex with my grandfather.
He wishes to become better than his grandfather…
But father is lacking with the cunningness and thoughtfulness like grandfather…

My grandfather, Kuromori Kounosuke died 84 years old in 1987.
I was three years old back then…
Father succeeded the surface business of grandfather but…
『Kuromori Tower's』 administration was left to Morimoti who was grandfather's right hand.
He's the Morimoto on the next room.
He was the manager of 『Kuromori tower』 all the time.
That's my grandfather's will.
Grandfather knows that my father doesn't have the ability to manage the prostitution mansion…

Father wanted to steal the management of 『Kuromori Tower』 from Morimoto in one way or another…so he planned for several years.
But, it was impossible with his power alone.
Father looked for a cooperator.
Then, the partner he chose…was Shirasaka Sousuke
…Thus, he chose the worst man.

Shirasaka Sousuke…is a grandchild of a master of a famous newspaper publisher.
He was born a young master.
He lived a comfortable life… with his grandfather's connection he found employment in a major advertising company.
He went in and out of the 『Kuromori tower』 when he was still a student.
Shirasaka's grandfather was a regular customer here after all.
Young customers are normally turned down but…Shirasaka Sousuke was the only exception.

Shirasaka Sousuke's addicted to the girls of 『Kuromori Tower』
Then, the foolish him…wants to make it his.
That person approached the son of the master of the 『Kuromori Tower』…Approached Kuromori Kouichiro.

It was just at the time when the bubble economy failed, and the leaders of the Japanese economic world are substituting one person after another.
The customers of 『Kuromori Tower』 were changing from parents to children.
Taking that chance…Shirasaka Sousuke and Father staged a coup d'etat.
Morimoto…was banished from here.
That was 17 years ago」

A year before I was born…

「…Father and Shirasaka had increased the customers. It's not just the previously carefully chosen upper class people but young upstarts became a guest too.
There were many playfellows of Shirasaka.
As for the women…they weren't raised with effort.
If there's a quite cute girl from the school, they'd just rape her…
Father and Shirasaka were idiots and indiscriminate…
Above that…Shirasaka was a perverted sadist.
He used 『Kuromori Tower』 to satisfy his own crooked sexual desire.
Those years were the most cruel.

It was absurd…
The perverts run the brothel to their desire…
The guests too…perverted sadists like Shirasaka had increased…

I was an illegitimate child of Kuromori Kouichiro
Yuzuki is my mother's family name.
My mother too, she was a woman of 『Kuromori Tower』
My little sister, Naomi…lived with my mother who retired and lived in Chigasaki with my mother's parents' family.
A family of three…they lived happily even if poor.

Shirasaka Sousuke knew mother when she was active.

Then…he though of wanting to violate the daughter of Kuromori Kouichiro who's his friend and the master of 『Kuromori Tower』
He was really a crazy perverted sadist…!

I was raped by Shirasaka when I was twelve.
Returning from the elementary school, I was pushed to a car by force…
I was stripped naked in a mountain…and had my virginity stolen.
After that, I was confined in the underground confinement room in this mansion…and was forcibly violated for a week.
I was violated more than a hundred times.
There's photos and videos taken too…
Then…after being raped completely, I was made to meet father.

Father…was dejected.
But, Shirasaka told father while he ejaculates inside me.

『…Too late. You're too late. Hey, Kuromori-san. You get ready and we'll be doing this kind of business. You obviously can't make an exception on your daughter only!』…
Father can't answer back…
He just quietly watched Shirasaka's penis forced to ejaculate with my tongue.
That's right…My father was aroused.
Watching Shirasaka rape his own daughter…

Then…after that, I became the youngest prostitute of 『Kuromori tower』
My partners are all perverted lolicons…
I was forced to have perverted sex…
But…My father never helped me.

Two years later…when I became 14 years old, Namami, my younger sister was brought here.
My little sister was 11 years old.
Mother died from an illness…that was the first time I was informed of it.
I cried and asked…『Please help at least my little sister』…and yet Shirasaka tore my little sister's virginity in front of me.
Then, he ordered father to have sex with me and my little sister…
Father's completely aroused, he raped me and my little sister…

Father can't endure it anymore.
My little sister and I became father's plaything.

After that, my sister and I continued to take several hundred more guests.
We're both confined so we can only meet when we have sex with a customer.
I grasp my little sister's hand while her uterus is hit with the guest's penis.
Naomi grasped my hand in return.
The warmth of her hand was the only communication and it saved us.

I was 16 and Naomi was 13.
There's a guest that wants to impregnate us by all means showing up…
It was a 60 year old fat bald man.
Shirasaka sold us to that guest. For 20 million.
Father…agreed with it.

Naomi and I were violated earnestly until we became pregnant…
…Like dogs
…Like toilets
Just an outlet of that man's desire…

But…that man's identity was a fraud.
He didn't have a large sum of money such as 20 million yen.

Naomi and I were already pregnant.
Our own body completely felt the state of motherhood.

And yet…Shirasaka
Is afraid that we'll lose product values
We're made to abort.

My sister and I were prepared for it.
We swore to bear the child of whoever man's child it is…!

『No, stop, help me』 my younger sister cries out and yet…
Shirasaka brought my little sister to the confinement room…
Furthermore…Shirasaka hired an illegal doctor…

A mere medical student in ruin…not having a doctor's qualification…
My little sister was 13…her body was so young…!

…That's why she died.
The blood loss from theoperation was so terrible…!

Shirasaka told me.

『Dammit…Naomi had a better income than you! You should've been operated first…!』

Then…I was made to take another guest before the abortion…

A pervert said to want to rape a pregnant girl thoroughly.
That pervert…used a strange medicine on me.
I lost consciousness…
My genital…was ruined…
My womb…became no good.

Shirasaka laughs and said 「It saves me from the costs of abortion」…

…Just after that.
Yuuka-sama and the others who can't endure father and Shirasaka's management talked to the old customers of the 『Kuromori Tower』
They already hated 『Kuromori Tower』 that's managed by father and Shirasaka, most of them aren't coming anymore but…everyone remembered Yuuka-sama and others.
Feeling loathsome from Shirasaka and Father's method, they sympathized with us.
Most of the customers from Grandfather's time are still alive and well…
Everyone still had the power and influence among the people of the upper class…Shirasaka and Father cannot defy them.
Shirasaka's grandfather is among them too…

Then, they brought Shirasaka and most of the new guests were banished.
Some of them were disposed of…

Socially…or sometimes, their existence.
The impostor ho impregnated me and my sister was sunk in the sea of Okhotsk.

Then, father and Shirasaka became unable to manage unreasonably…
But, it's not possible to send those two out completely.
While regaining the appearance of a high level prostitute mansion just like the old times…
They continued to satisfy their sexual desire in the back.

That's why…I decided to turn to the administration side.
My body can no longer take in a guest…

But I was still 17 years old so I do not have the power to oppose Shirasaka and Father.
That's why…I searched for new girls from the high school and took them in by myself.
I made children fall to hell…
But, I need that to let me stay in my position.
To take revenge towards father and Shirasaka someday…!
To take revenge for my little sister…and our babies…
I resolved to become the devil…

After graduating from university…I became a high school teacher.
Father and Shirasaka trusted me the work that much.
I became the admin in charge of 『Kuromori Tower』 alone.
I'm Kuromori Kouchiro's daughter…has experience as a prostitute…
so I know how should I improve the mansion very well.
That's why…I took charge of managing the mansion while consenting father and Shirasaka satisfying their personal desires.
When I managed it, the profit of 『Kuromori Tower』 increased twenty-fold…
The former upper class guests have returned.
Misuzu-san's grandfather became a guest too…

Father and Shirasaka…both just want to do what they want to women…since they're not interested in managing, they lack in people with management skills.
They didn't disturb my management as long as I don't obstruct them.

That way…I ruled over 『Kuromori Tower』little by little…

In exchange…I made my students fall to hell.
Katsuko…and Nagisa.
Yukiyo also took in guests.
With profits as priority…!」

Sensei hesitates to speak.

「But…Minaho-san manages it and the treatment of the girls in the mansion has greatly improved. She even look into them even after retirement…!」

Hidemi-san said.

「I called back the banished Morimoto-san」

Yuuka-san too…

「We had a lot of hardship but…Minaho-chi always help us and our bodies, everyone knows that!」

Tamayo-san…

「I was freed by Minaho-sama when I was 18…I'm grateful for that」

…Nagisa-san

「Ojou-sama's having such difficulties…Katsuko knows it best」

…Katsuko-nee!

「…Thanks, everyone」

Sensei spoke her word of thanks.

「In the end…It took me four years to completely remove Shirasaka and Father. Finally, last year. Father raped one girl… He didn't know that girl was the daughter of the second most powerful gang in Japan… Father ran away to Australia. When he returns to Japan, he'll definitely be killed」

…Speaking of which
Yukino's father should be on a business trip to Australia…!

「Taking responsibility from that carelessness…Last year, 『Kuromori Tower's』 activities had stopped. All of the girls that stayed in the mansion were made to retire. The only one left here is Katsuko. Yukiyo's the only one who regrets the stop of the activities」

Iwakura-san wants to remain as a prostitute.

「There were a lot of women in this mansion but…There's only six who became by 『Toys』 Margo is adopted as a part of the mansion's guard」
「…It's eunuch」

Margo-san smiles.

「In this age, it's not eunuch unless you cut off a man's sexual organs…
Even when he lose his genitals, a man is still a man. She wants to begin a political activity…that's why needs me as guard of the women」
「That's right…we can't oppose when father and Shirasaka goes violent. If it's Margo, she can't just guard the girls but also take care of them psychologically…」

…Right.

「You see!…Before I was taken by a guest, the 『Kuromori Tower's』 activity stopped on the last minute, or rather, Sensei and Maru-chan saved me, or rather…」

Nei-san said.

「Well…a lot of things happened. Last year and the year before that」

Margo-san spoke ambiguously…
She won't talk further than this for now I guess…

「Sensei…who's the 『Sixth』?」

For better of for worse…I asked.

「…Agnes…She's confined underground」

Sensei answered.
So the 『Sixth』 is named Agnes!

「…She's been confined all this time. I'll introduce her to you next time」

Sensei's face looks so lonely.

「…How old is she?」

Sensei calmly answered my question.

「…12」

She's confined even though she's at that age?!

「Agnes…is a child of Shirasaka made to fulfill his desires. She was born in this mansion…And hasn't gone out since. She was educated to live only for Shriasaka…when she grows up」

…That's!

「Shirasaka…brought up Agnes to steal her virginity on her 13th year birthday. When Shirasaka was banished from this residence, Katsuko and I took care of her. Thus she's my 『Sixth Toy』」

In the basement of this mansion…!
There's a 12 year old girl confined…!

「I've been taking care of Agnes-sama since I came in this mansion, I can somehow communicate with her but…Agnes-sama doesn't talk with Ojou-sama yet」

Katsuko-nee said.

「It was no good with me and Maru-chan…she's not speaking at all!」

Nei-san says with a troubled face.

「…He's still under Shriasaka's mind control. Agnes will do anything Shirasaka orders. That's how she was raised…!」

Sensei speaks in pain.

「That's why she can't go out of confinement until it's solved!」

Such a thing…!

「Misuzu will become that child's friend!」

Misuzu told Sensei…

「…Me too」

Yamamine-san too
Sensei looks at Yamamine-san's face.

「…Megumi」
「…What?」

Sensei said.

「Agnes is your sister. Just like Shirasaka Yukino…!」

Yamamine-san's eyes opened wide!

「…That means?!」

When I asked Sensei…!

「Megumi's father is Shirasaka Sousuke…!」

…what?!

「Un…That's right. My mother was a in a music college…was kidnapped by Shirasaka Sousuke…raped here…and I was born」

…Yamamine-san!

「Please wait! That Agne-san is Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter then…that Shirasaka Sousuke is raising her own daughter to be his mistress…??!」

Misuzu asks Sensei.

「That's right…That person planned to make her daughter his ultimate mistress…!」
「That's too cruel! Unreasonable!」
「That's not all…Shirasaka Sousuke is leaving us out and tries to make his own 『Prostitution ring』… And one of his prostitutes will be Megumi…!」

…No way
…That's
…Isn't she his own daughter!

「Yes…It seems that he communicated with my parents. Yamamine house cannot defy the Shriasaka house's head. I was supposed to be taken out from that home at the end of the holiday week…」
「…Yamamine-san…you know what will happen to you?」

I instinctively asked.

「I know…I'm a daughter raised from this mansion after all…」

Misuzu asked her.

「Then…Megumi-san what do you intend to do?」

Yamamine-san shook her head.

「I don't know…I don't know…But, I have to go…I'll only trouble Yamamine father and mother if I don't…!」

…Yamamine-san
The girl that's always gentle and smiles to everyone.
She even pay her regards to a man like me…
That kind of girl…
Has been holding such cruel worries all the time…!

Yuzuki-sensei spoke to Yamamine-san.

「Megumi…stay in this mansion starting today. We'll go to Yamamine house later. I'll be talking to your parents…!
「…Minaho-san, but!」

「It's fine…I won't let Shirasaka do as he likes. Yamamine house won't be troubled too. You're a child of this mansion. I'll definitely protect you…!」
「…But」

Yamamine-san looks down.

「It's fine Megumi-san…if ever something happens, I'll talk to my grandfather」

Misuzu told Yamamine-san.

「…Misuzu-san」
「Kouzuki's house power is far stronger than Shirasaka house! Don't worry!」
「That's…for Misuzu to help me…!」
「…Aren't we friends?!!!」

Misuzu's words touches Yamamine-san's heart.

「Please rely on us…Danna-sama's here too. Isn't that right?!」

Misuzu looks at me with a smile…

「Yup…I'll do anything I can」

When I said that…Misuzu…

「Then, Danna-sama…please promise to cherish Megumi-san along with Misuzu for your entire life!」
「…Misuzu?」
「Please promise that you'll treasure and will never abandon us!」

Misuzu looks serious
…I

「Yamamine-san…look me in the eye…!」

Yamamine-san who's looking down…looked up
Long and narrow…beautiful eyes.
There's tears piling up…!

「I promise…I'll treasure you for my entire life…!」

Misuzu spoke to me from the side.

「…Say 'Throw Yamamine house and stay with me!'」

…I

「…Leave Yamamine house and become mine…Yamamine-san!」

Tears spill out from Yamamine-san's eye.

「But…I don't know what I should do with myself!」

I spoke

「I'll be the one thinking about it. You only need to do what I say… You're already mine…!」

Yamamine-san's eyes…shines with the light of hope…

「…Then, call me Megumi」

…Megumi!

「…I'm already yours after all…!」

---

1. Kanazawa (金沢市, Kanazawa-shi) is the capital city of Ishikawa Prefecture, Japan ↩
2. The Meiji period (明治時代 Meiji-jidai ?), also known as the Meiji era, is a Japanese era which extended from October 23, 1868 through July 30, 1912. ↩
3. 花魁 ↩
4. 傾城 ↩

63. The feeling of a collar

Megumi looks at Yuzuki-sensei.

「But…Minaho-san. Can we not help Yukino by any means?」

Sensei shook her head.

「Megumi…I can understand that you want to object but…I want to make Shirasaka's daughter fall to hell by all means. If not…It would feel inexcusable for my late little sister, and I can't live…!」
「…That's too much…Yukino's so pitiful」

Megumi's still considerate of Yukino…!

「Sorry. But…that's no good. I can't endure the want to hurt Shirasaka's body and punish it…I want to use his daughter's womb in exchange of my lost womb…!」

Yuzuki-sensei rubs her abdomen.
Hidemi-san embraces Sensei from the back.

「I understand it…I was here when Minaho-san lost her little sister. Minaho-san kept hugging Naomi-chan as she cry…」
「I also know it…Everyone was worried if Minaho-san was about to commit suicide…!」

Yuuka-san said…

「Me too…I feel sorry for Megumi-san but, I want to make a mess out of Shirasaka's daughter… I want that man to suffer in hell from the bottom of my heart…!」

Nagisa-san said.

「Me too…I really want that man to experience cruelty」

Tamayo-san said.

「Katsuko too…I can't help but feel happy training Shirasaka

Yukino. Making his daughter suffer the pains I had…!」

Katsuko-nee

「Sorry…I'm the same. Maru-chan and I want that person to have a hard time…」
「Yeah…It's as Nei said. We know that Shirasaka's daughter but… we can't spare her」

Nei-san and Margo-san too…!

「…I'm also Shirasaka's daughter…If you hate Shirasaka then torment me. I'm fine being killed too. That's why…please save Yukino. Please…!」

Megumi…rubbed her forehead on the floor and pleaded.
But…!

「Sorry, Megumi…You're no good…!」

Sensei reported to Megumi.

「…Why?!」

Megumi looks up and shouts…!

「You're a person that belongs on our side…!」

…Nei-san!

「…We're defiled and had our happy life stolen from us…And Shirasaka continued to defend his happy family」

…Katsuko-san!

「…Shirasaka's daughter is the symbol」

…Margo-san![1]

「That's why, we'll break it…we'll make her the same as us… otherwise, I can't die and leave things away…!」

…Yuzuki, Sensei!

「…It's too late, Megumi-san. Yuzuki-sama and the others took years to prepare for the revenge they wanted all this time…!」

Misuzu told Megumi.

「That's right…It's twelve years since my little sister was killed…I finally was able to banish father and Shirasaka from 『Kuromori』, and waited for Shirasaka's daughter's to be 13 and 16 years old. I examined the menses cycle of the two and matches it to the period when they can conceive, and schemed so that Shirasaka must go to Australia…」

…Sensei…made such a detailed plan!
Spending so many years…stealing the control of 『Kuromori』 bit by bit…
Gathering companions she can trust…!

「Please wait…both of the daughters you say?!」

Megumi expresses her surprise!

「That's right…I'll make Shirasaka Maika fall too」
「That's…Maika-chan's still 13 years old!」
「And Naomi was made pregnant when she was 13…and was killed」
「…But!」

…Wait a moment
Could it be that I'm doing it?

「Sensei…do I have to make Yukino's little sister pregnant too?」
「Yoshida-kun…you don't want to?」

Sensei looks at me…

「 …No, uhm…I saw Maika for a moment in the car that's why, I don't know it well but…making such a small child pregnant…」
「…Are you unwilling?」
「…If Sensei says that I have to then I'll do it of course」

I'm Sensei's 『Toy』…
I promised to do anything Sensei orders

…But

「Minaho-sama…I think that the burden on the body of a pregnant girl at 13 years old is too much… 」

Yuuka-san said.

「…You don't intend to make her give an impossible and die? Just like Naomi-sama…! 」

Yuuka-san pierces Sensei's heart…
Sensei looks at me again.

「…Got it. This time, I won't demand for Shirasaka Maika to be pregnant. But, I'll have her become a lewd daughter addicted to sex. Becoming the worst perverted girl when her father turned his eyes away…! 」
「Minaho-san… 」

Megumi looks at Sensei

「Megumi…That's all I can promise. Yukino will definitely get pregnant. I won't have that change. 」

Sensei's decision was set in stone…

「Yuzuki-sama…It's fine as long as Maika-sama turns lewd is it? Have you thought of letting her take guests afterwards? 」

Misuzu asks Sensei.

「I don't intend to make Shirasaka Maika a prostitute…I want to completely crush 『Kuromori』 after all…! 」
「It's fine as long as the father becomes shocked from her lewdness isn't it? Do you wish for her to be raped by two or getting gangbanged? 」
「No…The only one I want to hurt is Shirasaka Sousuke's heart in the end 」

Sensei answered.

「Hearing that makes me relieved…Danna-sama! 」

Misuzu turned to me.

「…Eh, what?」
「Let's make Shiraska Maika Danna-sama's sex slave…!」
「…Misuzu-san?」

Megumi looks at Misuzu.

「Make her a bitch that only takes in Danna-sama's sperm… I think that's the best solution. Don't you think so, Megumi-san?」

With Misuzu's words …Megumi looked at the faces of the girls in the room.
All of them are dyed with hatred towards Shirasaka Sousuke…
There's no one opposing the will.
Megumi deeply sighed…

「…There's nothing but that」

…I
…What should I do?

「Then…Yoshida-kun. I'll order my 『Seventh toy』 Rape Shirasaka Maika. Defile her thoroughly until she becomes a lewd bitch…!」

Sensei orders me on purpose so it can reduce the debt in my heart.
Then…I can do nothing but follow.
I promised her after all.
I'll do anything Sensei orders me…

「…Got it」
「In exchange, when she becomes a sex slave, you can have Shirasaka Maika. I won't care if you want to make Shirasaka Maika happy afterwards…!」

Sensei promised…

「…Misuzu will cooperate. Megumi-san will cooperate too?」
「…I」
「…Are you just going to watch in silence?」

Megumi's heart breaks from Misuzu's question.

「Got it…I'll cooperate…! I'm Minaho-san's 『Eighth toy』after all…!」

Thus Megumi took the path of evil.
A formal member of 『Kuromori』…

「…You're okay with Shirasaka Yukino too?」
「I can't do anything about it anyway」

Megumi's eyes shine sadly…

「Yes…She had 30 intravaginal ejaculation during the period when she can get pregnant. I also examined that there's no problems with Yoshida-kun's sperm. 2 She's almost certainly pregnant…」

Sensei said happily…

「We'll make that probability a hundred percent from now on…!」

…Sensei, could that be!

「Yoshida-kun…You're going to make Shirasaka Yukino completely conceive your child…!」

◇ ◇ ◇

「Sensei…Where's Yukino right now?」

If I recall…Sensei should be meeting Yukino at the principal's office by 11:00
It's already near two o'clock now.

「…Katsuko, display the video」
「Yes, Ojou-sama」

Katsuko-san opened the wall panel and operates it
The lighting of the room disappears again and an image is projected on the white wall…

…… ! ! !

It was an image of Yukino tied up in the principal's office chair.
Her legs are opened wide and her hands and legs are restrained with leather handcuffs.
Her eyes are blindfolded…
There's a ball-gag in her mouth.
Her ears is covered with a headphone.
Her skirt is rolled up and her white panties are exposed.
There's something pink colored coming out of her panty…
Yukino's crotch is trembling bit by bit.
Her panty is dripping wet.

「There's a rotor attached to her clitoris. It's already been three hours. Blindfolded, and she hears her own gasping when she was raped in max volume. Repeatedly…and repeatedly…」

Sensei explained.

「…Aah, Yukino!」

Megumi grieves from the tragic appearance of Yukino…
I…
I stared at Yukino's restrained appearance…

「Geez! Why are you gazing like that! Danna-sama!」

…eh, Misuzu?

「That girl's not even cute! Why are you so attached to her?! Danna-sama no bakaaa!」

W-w-w-why are you angry…?

「He's really unaware…」

Margo-san told me.

「…What?」
「Yoshida-kun, when you look at Shirasaka Yukino, you just stare at her motionlessly」
「…Is that so?」

I never thought it that way.

「That's right…Yoshida-kun's always like that when in classroom. That's why, everyone in the class knows that Yoshida-kun likes Yukino. That's why you were hit by Endou… 」

Eh…Megumi?
Everyone's thinking that way?

「Geez!…Please look at Misuzu with those enchanted eyes from time to time! 」
「My my, Misuzu-chan…You mustn't fight with a blanket 」

Margo-san calms Misuzu's anger.

「…Blanket? 」
「The thing I said earlier… 『Linus' blanket』 Yoshida-kun feels relieved mentally when he sees Shirasaka Yukino. But, that's all to her existence. He doesn't feel anything but just a young child who's fixated on his blanket 」
「But…When Danna-sama looks at that girl…and Danna-sama's head is filled with that woman, I hate it…! 」

Misuzu said.

「I think that when Yoshida-kun takes a look at Shirasaka Yukino, his head goes blank. I think that's why he's unaware of his own actions. Shirasaka Yukino is a key to Yoshida-kun's 『Escapism』 in the end… 」
「…That means 」
「Un…Yoshida-kun doesn't recognize Shirasaka Yukino as a living human being. That's why, he doesn't love her… For Yoshida-kun, she's merely an 『Icon』 that 『Pushes reality away』 」

…Is that so?
…Me?
Is that why I don't love Yukino?
I felt sad when I felt that Yukino doesn't recognize me as a human the other day.
…I felt anger.
But…I also don't recognize Yukino as a human?
Then…What's our relationship!

「…Misuzu-chan, Yoshida-kun's recognizing you as a human. That's why you're valued, and loved…that's what you feel don't you?」
「That's…Misuzu knows it well」
「…Yoshida-kun is properly looking at Misuzu-chan whenever he has sex with Misuzu-chan, he reacts to Misuzu's womanly charm too」
「…Yes」
「It's the same with Katsuko-san and Nagisa-san. Yoshida-kun loves those women and have sex with them with feelings of love. He's using the form of communication called sex properly…But, it's different with Shirasaka Yukino…!」

I'm…different?
…With Yukino?

「When Yoshida-kun have sex with Shirasaka Yukino, the communication is broken. Like a thirsty dying beast, he's having sex with her by forcibly drinking from the spring called her…」
「Am I really like that, Margo-san?」
「…Yeah」
「Un, that's how it feel, Yo-chan」

…Nei-san too

「But, since it's a sex where the communication is broken in any ways, the throat of the beast inside Yoshida-kun can't be filled… thirsty as always…he'll just covet her body earnestly」

…… !

「…Certainly, when I had sex with Misuzu, Katsuko-san and Nagisa-san, I felt really happy… I feel pained when with Yukino. It's so sad. But, I can't stop violating Yukino's body…」

…I see.
I keep violating Yukino like drug addiction.

「Margo-sama…how can we make Danna-sama abandon Shirasaka Yukino?」

Misuzu asked with a serious face.

「A method to tear of the 『Linus' blanket』?… Well, there's only one way」
「What should we do…Maru-chan?」

Nei-san also asked Margo-san with serious eyes.

「Yoshida-kun right now doesn't have a place where his heart can feel peace. His current situation is unbearable for him…that's why the existence named Shirasaka Yukino is the key for his escapism」
「Then…How should we change Yoshida-kun's reality to a good direction?」

Megumi asked.

「It's not that easy…Yoshida-kun had never met a person who he can feel at ease ever since he was born. He might already intend to trust us but…his heart is still alert, strained, and remains contradicting… You remember that Katsuko-san reported that he never said anything selfish, do you…?」

Everyone looks at me.
…Worriedly.
…Sadly.

「Anyone would be fine…as long as they can make Yoshida-kun open up and feel at ease, won't they become the 『Security Blanket』? That's what I think?」
「…Danna-sama, is Misuzu no good?」

Misuzu looks up at me…
…I

「…Misuzu-chan. I'm warning you because you're reaching the limit」

Margo-san told Misuzu with a serious look

「…What?」

Misuzu's surprised.

「Misuzu-chan is a girl who can speak her feelings obediently and

frankly. That's good but…speaking out powerful words will become a bad habbit」
「…Eh, I?」
「For example…just earlier, Misuzu-chan told Yoshida-kun 『I want to have sex thirty times in three days』 And you'll make a training camp to analyze that…do you remember?」
「…I do」
「Do you 『Really』 intend to do that? Or 『It would be good if we can』 …Which is it?」

Misuzu answered after a brief moment…

「… 『It would be good if we can』 I think」
「I thought so…It's fine to say that on someone normal. It can be dismissed as a joke. But in Yoshida-kun's case. …Hey, Yoshida-kun, what do you think?」

Margo-san looked at me.

「…I thought that I really have to do it」
「…D-Danna-sama!」
「It's impossible to do it right away but…I'll make time on the consecutive holidays. You said that you wanted to do all the sex I had with Yukino so…I thought on how should I do it」
「…Yoshida-kun's that kind of guy. Misuzu-chan」

With Margo-san's word…Misuzu's unable to speak and is about to cry.

「Also, Mizuzu-chan…you're saying 『Entire life』 and 『Definite』 too much! For Misuzu-chan who's emotions are too powerful, you might be saying what you're thinking but…Yoshida-kun's going to take all of it seriously. He'll seriously worry about each and every word, he's thinking on how to satisfy Misuzu-chan's expectations. How much of a 『Burden』 do you think that becomes to him?…!
「…I'm sorry Danna-sama…I'm sorryyyyyy…!」

Misuzu cried and kneels on the floor.
Megumi embraces Misuzu from the back…

「Listen to Katsuko-san, Nagisa-san and Nei…They never tell

Yoshida-kun 『Stay with me forever』 or 『Live for my sake』 Don't even try to say 『Die for my sake』 Yoshida-kun will seriously kill himself. His switch might be flipped suddenly…Yoshida-kun right now doesn't have a break in his mind…!」

…Margo-san
Am I that broken?…

「…Right, it's as Margo-chan said. We seek Yoshida-kun…and we should become an existence that Yoshida-kun seeks too」

Nagisa-san said.

「Un…All of the sex I had him is always me wishing for it. He still haven't wished for me」

Katsuko-nee says

「…Misuzu too. During my first time, it was Nagisa-sama's order… Danna-sama has never demanded anything from Misuzu…」

…Misuzu

「Well…The only time Yoshida-kun said that he wants to have sex is with Shirasaka Yukino…!」

All of the women's gaze concentrates on Yukino when Yuzuki-sensei said that…!

「Everyone…Are you okay losing to a 『Security Blanket』?」

The women's fighting spirit fires up from Margo-san's word!

「No way! I…I will make Yoshida-kun feel relieved with my body」
「Katsuko won't lose to a 『Blanket』…!」
「…Misuzu too!」

Misuzu steps forward in front of me and sticks her hand on the floor…

「Danna-sama…please forgive my rudeness I've done…!」
「No…I don't mind it at all…raise your head」

Misuzu looks up at me with a half-crying face…

「Danna-sama…please attach the collar to Misuzu…!」

Misuzu's collar?
Oh right…I removed it when we took bath and left it alone.

「Here you go!」

Katsuko-san brought Misuzu's red collar.

「Misuzu…was conceited. I got impertinent. Please forgive me. Please. Please don't throw me away…!」
「Un…It's fine, I won't throw you away…!」
「Please make Misuzu aware once again that she's Danna-sama's pet…!」

Misuzu…took off her bathrobe and became naked.
Misuzu's delicate body.
White skin…pink nipples…and the hairless pubis became exposed…
She got down on all fours like a puppy…!

「I, Kouzuki Misuzu…is Danna-sama's pet. Your sex slave. Please cherish Misuzu from now on…please!」

Misuzu…presented me her thin white neck.

「Un…I got it already. I love Misuzu after all…!」

I attached the red collar to Misuzu's neck…

「…I'm happy. My Danna-sama!」

I kissed Misuzu's cute lips…
I thought that I want to please Misuzu after doing that much…

「Misuzu said it a while ago, that you're interested in car sex and toilet sex」
「Yes…Misuzu certainly said that」
「I'm also interested in it…I want to do it with Misuzu」

Misuzu's eyes shine brightly.

「…Is that fine?」
「Yeah…I want to have sex with Misuzu…!」

At that moment…
Pee dripped from Misuzu's crotch!
Misuzu's legs became wet with hot urine…
Still…Misuzu's looking at me with an entranced face…

「Danna-sama said that he wants to have sex with me!」

Misuzu embraces me while urinating…Kissed me!
I accepted Misuzu's soft tongue!!!

「My, Misuzu did her 『Happy Pee』…」

Nagisa-san muttered

「When dogs feel happy, they leak out instinctively…Misuzu is already an excellent bitch of Yoshida-kun…!」

The former owner…expresses her parting from ownership of Misuzu.
I embraced the naked Misuzu not caring if I get wet with her pee.

「Misuzu wants to do it thirty times in three days. I want to. Let me do it…」
「…Misuzu」

Megumi and Yuzuki-sensei spoke while looking at us embracing each other.

「Minaho-san…do you still have a collar?」
「…Katsuko?」
「Yes, there is…should I bring it over?」

Megumi spoke.

「Yes…I want Yoshida-kun to attach a collar on me too…!」

…Megumi?!

「…Katsuko, bring the collar I used during the old days」

Nagisa-san asked Katsuko-san.

「Got it…Should Katsuko have a collar fixed on her too?」

As Katsuko-nee tries to get out of the room, Nei-san.

「Ah, Katsun…I want a collar too…!」

Katsuko-nee sticks out her tongue.

「Virgins can't have one!」

Then she went out of the room hurriedly…

「Aaahn! Katsun you bully!」

Megumi spoke to me with a serious face.

「Yoshida-kun…can I also participate the training camp?」

…Megumi

「I only need to challenge 20 times, do I?…」
「Megumi-san…!」

Misuzu looks up to Megumi.

「…I promised it. I'll do it. I won't lie to Yoshida-kun…Megumi's yours after all…!」
「…Megumi」

Then…Katsuko-nee ran back holding a plastic case, she came back breathing hard.

「…I brought the collars!」

She opened the plastic case…!
Inside is approximately 30 pieces of collars just like Misuzu's.
The women crowds at the collar.

「…Uhm, is this okay? The floor's wet with Misuzu's pee though」
「It's fine. We'll just clean it later」

Margo-san answered bluntly.

「…But」
「Everyone's a woman of a brothel…pee play is normal so we don't mind it as long as it's not so dirty」
「…Is that so?」
「Also, we had a rule where the person who made the dirt cleans it up」

Margo-san looks at Misuzu.

「Ehehe…Where's the cleaning tools?」
「Let's leave it for later…Look, everyone's getting crazy nostalgic with the collars」

Margo-san says so and laughs.

「it was popular for a period wasn't it…collar play」
「That's right, everyone did it」
「Nagisa-chan was popular so she was presented to different guests three times」

Yuuka, Hidemi, and Tamayo onee-san are talking nostalgia while looking at the mountain of collars.

「But, my real collar is this one! This is the one I bought myself.」

Saying that, Nagisa-san took an ultramarine collar.

「Okay, put this on Yoshida-kun…!」

I put on the collar on Nagisa-san's neck.

「Uwaa…It's really different when a person you like attaches it to you! It feels amazingly thrilling!」

Nagisa-san looks happy.

「Uuuu, I feel so jelly…I want it too!」
「Ah…Katsuko, did the virgin say anything?」
「Dunno, Nagisa…I can't hear the claims of a virgin child1」
「…Uuuuuuu!」

Nei-san cries from a distance.

「This one's Katsuko's! Ojou-sama gave this to me when I was 17 years old!」

Katsuko-nee's collar is sparkling black.
I also put it on her.

「Aaahn…It feels that I'm being owned!」

Katsuko-nee feels pleased feeling her own collar.

「…This is mother's isn't it?」

Megumi took an emerald green collar from the bottom of the case.
The collar on that side is fundamentally different.
Nagisa-san and Katsuko-nee's collars have a fashionable design that looks like a usual chocker but…Megumi's mother's collar is a fat collar for large dogs.

「That's right…That's Keiko's collar」

Sensei spoke sadly.

「Our collars are for the 『Collar play』 use but…Keiko-san's collar is used to confine her…by Shirasaka Sousuke…」

Megumi handed the fat collar to my hand

「Put this on…Yoshida-kun」
「…Are you sure?」
「Un…It's my mother's after all.」
「…But」
「it's fine. Megumi will become Yoshida-kun's dog…!」

Megumi…took off her bathrobe.
Her thin naked body appears…
She presents her white neck to me.

「…Here」

…I

I attached the emerald green dog collar to Megmi's neck.

「…Does it suit me, Yoshida-kun??」
「Un…You're cute」

Megumi smiled…
What cuteness…
My dog…!

「Can I kiss Megumi?」

Megumi showed a surprised face.

「…You don't want to?」
「No…It's my first time…」

Megumi's first kiss!!!

「Please wait a moment! Katsuko needs to take a picture!」

Katsuko-nee prepares her camera…

「Okay…please…」

The naked Megumi with a green collar attached to her…closed her eyes.

「It's fine…it's not scary」

I embraced the naked Megumi…
I…kissed Megumi's lips…!
Katsuko-nee's camera takes a photo of that moment!!!

「Congrats Megumi-san!…How's the feeling of your first kiss?」

Megumi answers Nagisa-san's blessing…

「…Uhm…I…pee, I leaked out…!」

Looking at it…There's hot water spilling out of Megumi's crotch…!

「Geez…please don't mimic Misuzu!!!」

Misuzu screams

「Hey…the dust cloth and mop are in the locker of that corridor」

Margo-san told the two.
As expected, having two of them pee is amazing.

「You two need to clean up naked as a punishment!」

Nei-san laughs and told the two

「Okaay! Megumi-san, let's clean up naked and bewitch Danna-sama!」

The naked Misuzu runs in the corridor…!

「…U-U-Uhm」

Megumi's still not finished peeing while in my embrace.
Megumi's pee wets my body…

「Sorry…I'm sorry, Yoshida-kun…!」
「It's fine…It's Megumi's pee after all」
「I…I'll become Yoshida-kun's cute bitch okay…!」
「…Megumi!」

I embraced Megumi once again.

---

1. At this point, Yoshida's just pointing on who's talking. That makes it easier for the readers though ↩
2. Phew, that's the only thing that would really go wrong in this novel, MC being sterile. lol ↩

◇ Yukino Rape -Arc□V

64. Shadow in the window

Yuzuki-sensei took off two black collars from the plastic case.
Both are two thick dog collars…

「This is my collar…It was the collar put to me when I was brought here and imprisoned…And this one is on my little sister」

Sensei caresses the collars with deep emotions…

「I'll use this collar on Shirasaka Yukino…」

Sensei said clearly…

「Minaho-sama…are you going to make Shirasaka's daughter completely conceive a child in the future?」

Yuuka-san asks Sensei

「Yes. We'll make sure she's pregnant after today's training…」
「Can I participate that training too?」

…Yuuka-san?

「…I also want to help!」
「…I'm fine looking just close to it!」

Hidemi-san and Tamayo-san too…
Everyone hates Shirasaka Sousuke from the bottom of their hearts

「…I got it. I'll have the elders participate」

Sensei agreed with the participation of the three…

「…Nagisa wants to participate too?」

Katsuko-nee invites Nagisa-san…

「Let's see…Minaho-sama. Please allow me to return as an active 『Toy』 for a short while」
「…I'll allow you Nagisa」

Sensei's hand that's holding the collar, is trembling…

「…This day finally came」

Sensei looks at me.

「Yoshida-kun…Can you, Nei, and Katsuko bring Shirasaka-san to this mansion?」「Okay…got it」
「…Margo, go as a support」
「Roger, Minaho」

Misuzu who's cleaning up the floor naked raised her hand.

「Ah…Misuzu will go too!」
「Then…Me too」

Megumi tries to raise her hand too but Yuuka-san blocks her front.

「Megumi-chan, you can't…you're still in the middle of the makeover」
「…Eh?」
「Once the haircut is over, we have to do the next set…」
「Minaho-chi. There's still 30 minutes before the training begins, am I wrong?」

Tamayo-san begins to talk after Yuuka-san.

「Let's see…I think we have that much time」
「Then, I'll do Megumi-chan's make up. I studied being a make up artist before I became a stylist!」
「…Then please. Make her a beauty that would surprise Shirasaka Yukino」
「Roger, Minaho-san…Since her foundation is good, This child will become an amazing beauty」
「Yeah, she is, Hidemi-san. Let's polish her to become even more beautiful!」
「We'll borrow that room then…」

As expected from the former prostitutes of this mansion. They know the construction of this mansion very well.
The three of them pulled the naked Megumi…!

「Eh…Eh…Uhm…Yoshida-kun…!」
「…Just come here already Megumi-chan!」
「Are my old clothes still there?」
「Katsuko-chan should be keeping it!」
「Can I still wear it?!」
「Hidemi-san should be fine.」
「Isn't it impossible with Tamayo-chan's stomach?」
「I don't want to be told by Yuuka-sama!」

Megumi and the girls went out of the room while making noises…!
Katsuko-nee spoke to me smilingly.

「Now, let's go to the school too…!」

◇ ◇ ◇

I changed my clothes in a hurry
Nei-san and I are in our usual uniform.
Katsuko-nee is in her chief director mode.
Misuzu is wearing the uniform she wears in school.

「Danna-sama…Please…!」

As usual, I'm the one putting the diaper on Misuzu.

Coming out of the entrance, Margo-san's already there with the white van.

「Eh, we're going with this car?」

Nei-san complains as she hate the white commercial van.

「It can't be helped…we're going to to take a girl in after all」

Margo-san laughs and got off from the driver's seat.
…I see, we're going to carry Yukino in the chair.

「Yoshida-kun, do you have your『beat up stick』?」
「Yes…it's here」

I showed the concealed stick under my school uniform to Margo-san.

「Don't hide it there, hide it in your sleeve…you can take it out immediately that way」
「…What?」
「I think that you should be getting your awareness higher even in school too…you're not protecting just your body after all. Get yourself always ready thinking that you have to protect Nei and Misuzu」
「…Got it」
「That's why…Since you're not an expert in fights, you shouldn't approach them head on. You can use anything. It's fine as long as you can make the enemy withdraw」

Margo-san look straight at me and said.

「Always move according to your inspiration. If something happens, contact me immediately. I'll rush in immediately…」

Saying that, Margo-san returned to the mansion.

「Get in…!」

Katsuko-nee says from the driver seat, then we got in the car.
The van took off immediately…

It took five minutes from the mansion to the school.
From the staff parking lot to the underground passage…
Passing through the narrow and low pathway is…Katsuko-nee, Nei-san, Misuzu, and Me.

「Oh…It looks like a secret base, that's so groovy!」

Misuzu is completely amused.

「But, we can't use this on the way back though!」

Nei-san turned back and told me

「Eh…Why?」
「Well, we're going to carry Shirasaka Yukino bound on that chair you know. This way is so narrow that we can't pass through here to put her in the van」
「Then, how?」

「Of course we're going to cover her in a cardboard box cand carry her out from the entrance of the school!」

Uwaaa…we're going to carry her in the corridor.
Though it's holiday, there's still a lot of students on their club activities.
That's quite some work…

We managed to reach the underground of the school building somehow.
The first floor is the monitor room where we ate pizza for lunch…
The second floor is the principal's office…

Just like from what we've seen at the mansion a while ago…
Yukino's blindfolded, gagged and bound on a chair with her legs wide open.
There's a sound of an electric motor vibrating from her crotch.
Saliva's dripping down from the holes of the ball-thing that's opening her mouth.

「This is called Ball-gag It's a tool for SM!」

Katsuko-nee told me.

「The cart is at the warehouse at the first floor, isn't it?」

Nei-san asks Katsuko-nee

「Yes…If I recall, the one used by a supplier. I think that there's cardboard boxes there」

Katsuko-nee's well informed with the equipment in the school.

「Ah, I'll get those」
「Yo-chan, you don't know how to use the elevator don't you? I'll be the one going. Wait here with Mii-chan」
「…But」
「We can't have Mii-chan wait alone don't you think? We can't leave this room open…!」

Un…
Right…

「Then, I'll go back immediately!」
「Wait for us!」

The two of them went out to the corridor from the front door…
Misuzu and I were left at the principal's office.
Then…the restrained Yukino.

「You're looking at that girl with that face again…」

Eh…Misuzu?

「You really don't get it do you…Danna-sama」

Was I looking at Yukino absentmindedly again?
…Is that so?

「…Geez!」

Misuzu clings and kisses me…!
The red tongue licks my lips…

「…Misuzu?」
「Ufu…You finally looked at Misuzu!」

Misuzu smiled.

「Danna-sama…please take a seat over here」

Being told by Misuzu, I took a sit inside the principal's office.
Misuzu rode my knees…!
Holding my head…Misuzu pressed me to her chest tightly.

「Danna-sama…can you hear Misuzu's heartbeat?」
「Un…It's beating」
「Please listen to that sound only…」

I concentrated on Misuzu's heartbeat.
The motor sound leaking from Yukino's crotch…is gradually fading away.
Before long, my ear can only hear Misuzu's heartbeat…

「It's warm and soft…Misuzu」

Strangely, I didn't get erect.
I just have my body embraced by Misuzu's warm body…
The sunlight of the Sunday afternoon lights up softly in the room…

「Somehow…I feel sleepy」
「It's fine…Misuzu will hold Danna-sama in her arms for all the time…」

I almost fell asleep
…At that time

…The door opens!

「Geeeez! What are you doing! Mii-chan!」

Nei-san jumps to the principal's office!

「Tsk, I was almost there…!」
「Mii-chan, I told you to wait but I didn't tell you to have sex!」
「We're not having sex! I'm just hugging Danna-sama!」
「…Hugging?」
「I'm teaching Danna-sama what's motherhood!」

…Motherhood??
…That?

「…Is that so, Yo-chan?!」
「…Perhaps」

That's the only thing I can answer.

「My, I think that Nagisa and I are suitable when it comes to motherhood though!」

Katsuko-nee enters while emphasizing her voluptuous breasts.

「This is why Misuzu's embracing Danna-sama before someone beats me to it…!」
「…Mii-chan's quite a tactician」
「I can't lose to anyone when it comes to breasts and ass!」

Misuzu's still worried…

「Mii-chan, stop it. It's not about winning or losing isn't it? Yo-chan's everyone's Yo-chan…Everyone's going to make him happy!」

Nei-san scolded Misuzu strongly…

「That's right…Misuzu-sama has her own charm. Though we can't let Misuzu-sama monopolize him, we'll definitely give Misuzu time for you two to be alone. There's no need to be impatient…!」

Katsuko-nee reproved her gently

「…I'm sorry」
「In exchange…Katsuko will also have her time too!…Mufufu, what shuold I do?! Should I do 『Baby play』?!」

…Katsuko-nee. You're a mess.

「Uhm…wha about Nei? Nei also have her time doesn't she?!」

Katsuko-nee and Misuzu stares at Nei-san…

「I get it…you're going to tell me that I should throw my virginity away…!」
「…Nei-san, let's sleep together tonight」

I said

「It's fine if we don't have sex…let's just sleep until morning」

Nei-san looks at me with moistened eyes.

「…Yo-chan」
「…Is that okay?」
「Even if we don't have sex?」
「Isn't that obvious?…!」

Nei-san answered with a red face.

「…Got it. Let's hold hands and sleep」
「…Okay」

Katsuko-nee sighed.

「It feels annoying, should we get this baggage out already?!」
「Misuzu agrees…!」

The cart comes in from the corridor.
It's quite a big cart. There's a bar attached in front and rear.
Katsuko-nee and I held Yukino and put in the chair on the cart.

「…Nmumumumumu!!!!!」

Yukino twists her body in surprise but…she's completely restricted to the chair that she can't do anything with her body.
We covered the cart with an extra large cardboard box from the top…
Un…for the time being, it looks like a big baggage to carry.

「Then, let's go!」

I push the cart from behind, Nei-san's on the front, Katsuko-nee and Misuzu are on the side.
I pushed the cart through the corridor…
Fortunately, there was nobody in the corridor in front of the principal's office.
Then we entered the elevator.
The elevator isn't so wide so Misuzu and Katsuko-nee got in with the cart and Nei-san and I will get off the first floor on stairs.
We managed to make it in time before the elevator door opened… phew.
I pushed the cart after that and arrived at the entrance towards the backyard of the school building.

「Please wait in here…I'll be getting the car around here!」

Katsuko-nee goes to the staff parking lot totteringly…

「Ah, Katsun! This entrance is easy to see so wait on that backyard!」
「Roger!」

Katsuko-nee lightly waved her hand…

「Then, Yo-chan get this out and we'll go close to the wall」

Just as Nei-san said…we took the cart that has Yukino on it outside the building.
We carried to her a place that the wall won't be an obstruction…

「Huh…This car's an obstacle!」

When I looked on the way Nei-san spoke…there's one blue car stopped forming along the building.
It's a car slightly ahead.
Err…Skyline…GTR??
It's a somewhat solidly built car.

「It's 34R. This is the car of Physical Education, Yamaguchi-sensei. He always stops this car here because he think that it's annoying because the staff parking lot is far! This isn't allowed though…That teacher's absurdly scary! That's why they other teachers doesn't make complaints! Even though Yamaguchi-sensei's in charge of student's guidance, he can't even follow the rules of his own school…!」
「…You know a lot」
「Well…I'm on my third year in this school after all! I'm still a second year because I repeated a year though」

Nei-san laughs.
Then…Nei-san's phone rings

「Is this from Maru-chan?…No? Who is this? It's number withheld though?」

Nei-san answers the phone feeling doubtful…

「Hello, who's this…What? Who are you? Eh…In front of the staff room?…Hello! Hello!…Huh, it's cut off!」

Nei-san looks at me anxiously.

「…What's wrong?」
「It was an unknown girl's voice…telling to come to the staff room?」
「…Unknown?」

「Un…There's a limited number of people that knows my number though…!」

Nei-san's at loss in thought.

「…What's wrong?」
「…I'll be going there for the time being. If it's in front of the staff room, there should be teachers inside the room so they can't do anything strange」
「…Should I go with you?」
「Are you going to leave such a huge baggage here…?」

Oh right…I can't leave Yukino in the cart alone.
It's dangerous to drag this big cart in the staff room…

「Yo-chan should wait here with Mii-chan…Katsun's going to come here immediately」
「Got it…take care」
「Un…Yo-chan too!」

Nei-san rushes towards the school…

「What was that…I'm a bit worried」

Misuzu told me.

「Yeah」

And then…
As if it was timed…
An angry voice of a man!

「…Hey, that first year over there!!!」

Turning around…there're four delinquents
Yup, a delinquent student you can see everywhere.
Everyone of them aren't wearing uniforms…
The colors of their hair are gold, silver, red, and brown.
Their standing should be on the third year…

「Hey…You, respond!」
「Goraaaa!」

I hid Misuzu behind my back.
I moved slowly towards Yamaguchi-sensei's car so that I won't be surrounded by the four.
The cardboard Yukino's in is sticking to the wall.
They haven't noticed.

「Hey, I heard it from the baseball club…that woman is your sex friend…」

The blond guy told me.

「Let me borrow her…I'll return her after three days!」
「We're better at fucking at that guy!」
「We'll make you cry a lot…You might get pregnant though!」

The delinquents made a vulgar laugh…
Now then…what should I do…
I have to protect Misuzu and Yukino while fighting the four of them alone…?
I remembered Margo-san's words from a while ago…

『…You're not an expert in fights so you shouldn't fight head on. Use anything. It's fine as long as you can make the enemy withdraw』

…I see, then!

I took out my beat up stick from my sleeve and hit Yamaguchi-sensei's car's windshield with all my power!

…*Crash*!!!

The car's windshield opens up a hole along with a loud sound…!

「Kyaaaaaaaa!!!」

Misuzu screamed out loud…!
…Next!
I smashed the windowpane!

…*Smash*!!!!

Then, I crushed the side mirror…!

「…What are you doing!」
「Isn't that Yamaguchi's GTR?」
「You're gonna get killed!」

…Like hell I care!
I beat down the door of the car with all my might!
With the blow of my beat up stick, the metal sheets are dented…!

「Oraaaaaaaa!…!Dorarararararara! Mudamudamudamuda!!!!」[1]

I kept beating the car while emitting strange noises…!
Breaking windows…beating the headlights…beating up the sheet metal…
Ignoring the four delinquents…!

「…H-he's mad!」
「S-Shit…he's dangerous!」

The delinquents are completely scared by my destruction act…!

「…Don't do that, Yo-chan!」

Nei-san appeared.

「…Don't just break it…you have to burn it too!」

Nei-san is holding a bunch of newspaper God knows where she got it from…
She took out a lighter from her pocket and sets fire on the newspaper…!

「Okay…burn!」

Nei-san threw the burning newspaper in the broken windshield…!
The fire spreads in the car's seats…!

「T-These guys are mad…!」

The blond delinquent leader muttered with a face of fear

「That's right…we're mad…~! You're third year Kinoshida-kun? That one's Yamamoto and Tako?」
「…What about it?」

The frightened red hair told Nei-san…

「I can easily check where your houses are you know? Your parents and family…should we burn up your house next?」

Nei-san had a brutal smile floating…
Yamaguchi's car's flames goes stronger…black smoke goes up and the smell hits the nose…
I embraced Misuzu and told the delinquents.

「Senpai…This child and I are members of 『Black Forest』 We won't give you pardon next time you do something at us again…!」

I had decided with my heart…

「…We're going to kill whoever they are」

Nei-san smirked…

「…Don't fucking underestimate 『Black Forest!』」

I smashed the burning car with my stick again!
…Boko!!

「…H-Hiiiii!!!」

The four delinquents ran away…!
I found a fire extinguisher at the corner of the entrance of the school building and got it.

「Eh, we're going to put it out already?」

Nei-san said but it'll become a fuss if we let this be.
If I'm not mistaken, I learned this at the fire training…
Pull the pin, Aim at the fire even if you take off the hose…!
A foam of a white chemical is released to the fire and discharge it towards the fire…!
For some reason…It feels like I ejaculated.

The white foam kills the force of fire…
The fire was put off somehow…
…Now then, what should I do with this fire extinguisher?
I throw the red pipe fire extinguisher in the empty remains of the car…!
Un…it has to be thrown in the garbage2

「…Danna-samaaaa!!!」

Misuzu jumps at me when I finished my work.
Misuzu is completely frightened.

「It's fine…it's nothing to be scared off…」

I embraced Misuzu gently.

「…Danna-sama! I love you! I love you!」
「I'll protect Misuzu…whatever happens…!」

Misuzu twitches in my arms from my words…!

「Aaaah…Danna-sama…Misuzu leaked again…!」

Let's see…I stretched my hand towards Misuzu's ass.
Feeling the diaper in her skirt…Right, it has gotten heavy.
Misuzu peed!

「Please punish me a lot later…!」
「…Yeah」

I licked Misuzu's ears while hugging her.

「Ahn…I'm leaking out again!」

Misuzu's body twitched
…Then
There's a big lump of flesh pushed to my back…?

「…Nei-san, what are you doing?」

Nei-san embraces me from behind.

「Eh, I also want to be comforted by Yo-chan…!」
「Nei-san was the one who threatened the delinquents a while ago though…」
「This is this, that is that!」

Nei-san embraces me strongly…

「Should I pee too?…!」
「It's fine. Nei-san doesn't have a diaper on, do you?」
「I see…I'll do it next time okay?…Ah!」

…?
Nei-san's atmosphere changed?

「…Yo-chan, take look at the third floor window at the school building slowly」

As told, I put my eyes on the third floor of the school building…
A shadow is looking down at us from the window…
I know that face…

「…Iwakura Yukiyo」

Iwakura-san felt that we noticed her? She disappeared from the window…

「It's definitely her who set those delinquents a while ago」

Nei-san whispered to my ears…

「…Okay already?」

I heard Margo-san's voice from the nearby grass?3

「Isn't that fine Maru-chan…Katsun's about to come too」

Looking at where Nei-san is looking…I see, Katsuko-san's coming over with the van.

「…Yareyare, support isn't an easy work」

From the grass, Margo-san in camouflage appeared…

「…Margo-san, you were there?」
「Yeah…I was ordered by Minaho to support, wasn't I? If Yoshida-kun starts to fight the delinquents, I intend to make a surprise attack from the back」
「…Ah, sorry」
「It's fine…the only damage was on Yamaguchi-sensei's car. Well, it can't be helped. Isn't the result good? I think that Iwakura-san won't be able to interfere with Yoshida-kun anymore with this…」
「…Is that so?」
「She's someone who thinks logically…She's worst at dealing with such a mad action that exceeds her frame of imagination」

Margo-san said while looking at the wreckage of the car.

「Iwakura-san's mad when it comes to sex though…」

Katsuko-nee jumps out of the car…!

「What happened?!」

Katsuko-nee asks us as she opens the driver's seat door.

「We'll tell you later! We have to stuff Shirasaka Yukino in the car first!」

With Nei-san's order…we put in Yukino in the car together with the chair.
Lying down facing up…

「Numomomomo…!」 the blindfolded, gagged Yukino tries to resist again but…we put on a blanket on her feigning ignorance
We brought the cart near the entrance of the school.

「Let's go back to the mansion. Everyone's waiting for the baggage arriving…!」

Margo-san looked down at Yukino then said.
We got in the car once again…

---

1. OH MAI GAAAD! ↩
2. Yoshida's so savage ↩

3. Dota 7.00 confirmed. Please giff me arcana ↩

65. Suffering Bride (Part 1)

When we returned to the mansion…
Everyone's waiting for us at the entrance…!

「Welcome…we waited for you guys!」

All of the women have changed to their leather bondage suits.
Yuuka-san is wearing a red corset and black shorts that looks like a prostitute coming from a western bar.
Hidemi-san is wearing a black corset binding rolled in the stomach and her breasts are exposed. Her panty is a string one.
Tamayo-san exposed her breasts too…under that is a black leather hot pants.
NAgisa-san is wearing a small bright blue bikini. Of course, it's leather.
All of them have a collar in their neck.
…Then

「Yoshida-kun…this is embarrassing」

Megumi-san who had her hair cut and have a thin make up…has become an unexpected beauty…!
So she was this beautiful…!
She has the figure of a foreign fashion model, the shape of the bridge of the nose makes a simple and beautiful face…
On her neck is the emerald green collar she inherited from her mom…
Her body…is clamped tightly with a yellow high cut dress…!

「Uwaa, Megumi-san…you're so beautiful!」

Misuzu raised her voice instinctively…!

「My my, everyone's ready for battle! Okay, Katsuko will change too!」
「Katsuko-sama…Misuzu wants to look like everyone!」
「Okay okay, come with Katsuko!」
「Aaaaah, Katsun, me too, me too…!」

Katsuko-nee, Misuzu and Nei-san ran to change clothes!

「…Yareyare, everyone's so noisy」
「Margo-san, you won't change?」

When I asked.

「…Eh, I'm going to wear that too?」
「No…It's fine otherwise」
「Those kind of sexy clothes won't match me…」
「Really?」
「Eh…Yoshida-kun wants to see me wear those?」
「Yes…It brings out your body line clearly so I thought that Margo-san would be sexy if she wears one. Like a leopard…」
「…Mehyo?[1]」
「Oh…what was it in English?…Oh right, Jaga. Jaga!」[2]
「…Jaguar?」
「Err…was it Puma?」
「…Pyuma?」

…Err

「Yoshida-kun, you pronounced it badly. It's not Jaga, but【dʒægwɑ】[3] Also, cougar is a puma in English」

Yuzuki-sensei taught me.
Speaking of which, she is an English Teacher
…She's not teaching the class though
Sensei…is on her usual black clothing.

「Yoshida-kun is saying that Margo's body looks like a wild beast so it's cool」
「But…cool and sexy are different things isn't it?」
「No, there's cool sexy too you know…!」

I insisted strongly…!

「That's right! Margo-chan wear it too! Be the pioneer in cool sexy…!」
「Yup Yup, it's definite!」
「…Come here!」

「Eh, eh…Wait a moment!!!」

Margo-san was pulled by Hidemi-san, Tamayo-san and Nagisa-san…!
Only Sensei, Yuuka-san and are left at the entrance…
Oh right…
Yukino was taken down from the white van and was loaded on a cart from mansion along with the chair…
She was covered with blanket from the head to toe…
The sound of the motor can still be heard from under the blanket…

「Yoshida-kun…can you carry this?」

Sensei called Yukino 『This』…

「Minaho-sama…which room will we do the training?」

Sensei answered Yuuka-san's question…

「…Let's do it at the chapel」

…Chapel?

「That means that we're going to do that?」

Yuuka-san laughed.

「Yes. Let's make this woman taste the suffering of the woman kept in this mansion…!」

◇ ◇ ◇

The chapel is a room surrounded with stained glass. There's a cross in the platform in the front.

「This is not a real chapel so don't mind it…This room is made by Shirasaka Sousuke for his hobby…!」

Sensei said as if she's about to vomit.

「Hobby…Does he like praying?」

Yuuka-san answered my foolish question.

「…That's not it You see, Shirasaka Sousuke…is a man who loves 『Wedding play』！」

…Wedding play?

「He loves raping women wearing wedding dresses[4]…He's going to rape them while making them do an eternal oath…！」

…What the hell!

「…We'll have Shirasaka-san experience the same thing…！」

Sensei muttered coldly…!

「Ah, so you're here! Everyone…it looks like it's going to be done here!」

Nei-san comes in…!
There's a black hat for military on Nei-san's head and leather pants down. She's not wearing anything on top. She's only covering her nipple with a black string suspender.
An arm long gloves…

「…Does it suit me?」
「Yes, it looks cool!」
「Ehehe, Yo-chan, do you know Liliana Cavani's 『The night porter』? I'm copying Charlotte Rampling's clothes…!」
「Err…I haven't watched it yet」
「Then, let's watch it next time!」
「…Nei-san?」
「I've got a lot of movies I want to show Yo-chan」
「Okay…please」

Nei-san smiled at me.

「Hey, Nei…Chalotter Rampling doesn't have any chest you know?
「」」
「It's fine, I just want to wear this!」

Margo-san appeared.
On top is a black tube top bra only, her stomach's coming out and down is a black hot pants.

「…There's nothing that matched my size.」

The tube top is made of rubber…her nipple can be seen clearly.

「It looks bad on someone who has a manly physique, doesn't it?」

Margo-san smiles wryly.

「No…it looks cool, sexy!」

Even if it's muscular…it's still a woman's body.
It really looks like a delicate beast…
I can feel seductiveness in strength…

「Is that so?…Thanks」

Margo-san got embarrassed from my words…

「Misuzu also had only this size…!」

Misuzu enters half crying.
Misuzu's wearing a red micro-bikini on top…and a diaper down under.
The bikini is too thin that her cute nipples are seen clearly…

「Danna-sama…which do you like, this string bikini or this diaper?」

Misuzu showed a too small red underwear and asked.

「…It's fine with the diapers」

I answered immediately!

「Ehehe…As expected, Misuzu has to be with diapers!」
「Un…it's cute. Misuzu」

I embraced Misuzu and kissed her.

「Take a look at Katsuko too!」

Then Katsuko-nee appeared…!
…Eh

…Uhm
…It's a fishnet stockings.
…Or rather, her whole body is net tights…not all of it are covered though
Is it a body suit made from silk?
It's too transparent that nothing's hidden.
Her nipple, pubic hair, and genital, all of them are saying 「Hello」…!
And a leather wide string that covers it tight.
It hides neither the nipple or genital…rather, it's tightening the breasts that it strangles the meat!

「How is it?! Isn't it sexy?!」

Un…It has the fighting spirit award.
It's too sexy that it's going down…

「…Yes, it's sexy」
「Yaaay~!」

Well…it's fine as long as Katsuko-nee is happy.

Meanwhile, all of the other women came in the chapel too.

「…Then, let's start the interview?」

On behalf of everyone…Margo-san removed Yukino's blanket.
Yukino who's dressed in her uniform and was under the blanket all this time is sweating damply…
It may be the result of the rotor vibrating between her crotch.

「…Remove the blindfold, ball gag, and the headphones」

Margo-san follows Sensei's orders.
First was the headphones.
Next is the gag.
Lastly…her eye mask!

「Okaay…Hello…!~」

Yukino who opened her eyes was startled with Katsuko-nee's voice…!

Restrained on a chair, she's surrounded with women with strange appearnces…!

「Hmm. Well, she's not that much of a beauty!」
「I wonder Tamayo-chan…I don't think she's that cute」
「…As expected, she looks like that man. Her eyes and nose」
「Don't you think so, Yuuka-san?…She looks like him in that regard doesn't she?」

Yukino looks at the ladies.

「…W-What?! Where is this?! Who are you?!」

Is it out of fear?…Yukino shouts loudly!
Of course. She was restrained for more than three hours…
Stimulated by a rotor…
The chair has been carried somewhere…
This is too sudden after all.

「…We? We're all women who experienced your father's cruelty!」

Tamayo-san told Yukino

「Papa?…That's a lie!」

Yukino shouted

「Katsuko-chan, please」
「Okaay～」

Katssuko-nee operates the projector with Yuuka-san's cue.
A big image is projected on the wall before Yukino's eyes…
A man raping a young girl…
Influenced by the desire…an ugly face…

「That's your Papa isn't he?…!」

Tamayo-san told Yukino.

「By the way, that was me being raped ten years ago…!」

Yukino looks at the video in fright.

「No…That's not Papa!

Katsuko-nee changes the video.
A girl in her high school uniform being raped by the same man…

「That's me…I was 16 back then. I was raped by your Papa and lost my virginity…!

Nagisa-san told Yukino.
Nagisa-san in the video is crying, shouting…
Nagisa-san continued to cry as the man rapes her while having a vulgar laughter…

「…That's a lie!

Katsuko-nee changed the video again…
An old image with particles on the frames.
The man's features are considerably young too…
The man violating was a young girl in her grade school.

「…Papa…that's a lie!

The screaming girl is forcibly violated by the man.

「…That's me

Yuzuki-sensei said.

「I was raped by your father when I was 12. Again and again. I was forced to sell myself all four years after that!」

Yuzuki-sensei stands in front of Yukino restrained in the chair.

「…That's why…I'll make you feel the same pain, Shirasaka-san…」

Sensei…holds a metal stick in her hand.
Then she applied it in Yukino's foot…!

…Baribaribari[5]

「…Hiiiiiiii!!」

A pale spark flew and Yukino's body twitched!

「Fufufu…It's shocking isn't it? This is a foreign made mob suppression stun stick. Shirasaka Sousuke loves tormenting girls with this…!」

…Stun stick?

「He's shocking the women while forcibly raping them. Your Papa is a genuine sadist…a madman…!」

Sensei told Yukino with cold eyes.

「…Let me do it too」
「…Me too」
「I still have the burn mark left in here」

Hidemi-san, Tamayo-san, and Nagisa-san spoke in sequence…

「There's no way my Papa would do that!」

Yukino desperately tries to deny Sensei's words…

「…Katsuko」
「Yes…Ojou-sama」

Katsuko-nee changes the video…
Inside the screen…is the man using the same electric shock stick just like Sensei's.
He's laughing satisfied while shocking the woman.
He's roaring in laughter…
The man attacked the body of the girl who fainted…!

「…The one being raped right now Is me」

Katsuko-nee said.

「Then…Should we have Shirasaka-san experience the same thing?」

Katsuko-nee handed the stun stick to the ladies…

「Then…Let's change the voltage. Since it's made in foreign countries it's not made to follow Japan's law. Well…we're going to set the current to low so she shouldn't die no matter how many times we do it…perhaps」

Sensei used the stun stick to Yukino once again!

…Baribari!

「…Kyaaaaa!」

Her limbs jumps up while being restrained!
Sensei removed the stick immediately.
Yukino's breathing roughly…
Huge amount of sweat comes from her forehead…

「Margo, remove Shirasaka-san's restraint…」
「Got it, Minaho」

Margo-san removed Yukino's binds one by one…
Yukino who's exposed to high electricity…is unmoving, just breathing heavily.

「…Done!」

MArgo-san removed the last leather handcuff…

「…Stand up, Shrirasaka-san」

Yuzuki-sensei orders Yukino.

「Should I shock her again to make her understand?」

Yukino…stood up though she's staggered.
Her eyes are close to tears but still, she looks at Sensei with the light of hatred…

「…You can run away. I think that everyone would have fun that way」

Yukino's surrounded by the ladies who are holding stun sticks.
If Yukino tries to run away, she'll certainly receive a concentrated

shock attack

「…What do you intend to do with me?」

Yukino spoke with a frightened voice.

「Don't worry…we won't kill you. We're going to make you experience something worse than death. …Katsuko」
「Okay, Ojou-sama」

Katsuko-nee brings out a big iron sewing scissors.

「…Don't move. I'll cut you if you try to do something」

Katsuko-nee cuts off Yukino's uniform with those scissors…
Cut!*Cut*!…Yukino's uniform is cut.

「Nagisa and I went to the same school as Shirasaka-sama. But, we were raped by Shirasaka Sousuke…and had to leave the high school. We were forced to sell ourselves…!」

The pieces of cloth from her torn uniform falls to the floor…
Katsuko-nee cuts Yukino's skirt…

「…We hate Shirasaka Sousuke who stole our happy school life from us!」

Her pure white blouse is cut with her scissors…!
Only the remains of Yukino's uniform is left on her body.
Katsuko-nee severed the string of Yukino's bra!
Yukino's breasts became exposed…!

「…What, isn't that just a boring body?」
「No guest would take that body」
「Yeah, that's no good, her breasts are disappointing…!」
「But…there're mad perverts who would love this dirty body」
「Right…a madman would take this…!」

The ladies speaks ill of Yukino's body…!
Katsuko-nee cuts Yukino's panty.
The vivid green letters appear on Yukino's abdominal region.
…… 『Yoshida』 Tattoo.

「What's that?」
「Pupupu, 『Yoshida』? That's so funny!」

The women laughed.

「This child tried to have sex behind my back so I gave her a punishment. That tattoo will never disappear unless a special medicine is used…」

Sensei explained to the ladies.

「My, I can't live anymore if that's carved on me!」
「Right, I'll die from embarrassment!」
「Hey hey, Minaho-chi! Let's carve some more!」
「Should we carve all over her body?」
「No…Should we just carve just on her pussy?」
「…What should we write?」
「『500 Yen a fuck』」

The ladies laughed.

「That's too high, with this shabby body…it's market price won't even reach a『100 yen each』」

Tamayo-san joked.

「Sorry to disappoint but I won't be selling this girl. Shirasaka Yukino is Yoshida-kun's exclusive sperm toilet」
「Yeah, that's why it's 『Yoshida』…」
「Then, shoudn't we just carve 『Yoshida's restroom』?」
「Don't you think that a straight 『Sperm Toilet』is better?」

Misuzu comes near to me and whispered.

「…Danna-sama, Misuzu wants that too」

…As expected.
I thought that she'd want it when she sees it.

「…Misuzu can't have that」
「Why?」
「…I love Misuzu's secret place being clean for now

「…Eh?」
「Misuzu's hairless, slippery pubis…is so cute. I think that it's sexy right now」

I embraced Misuzu.

「…Danna-sama…I love you!」

Misuzu inserts her tongue in my lips…!
Ah…Megumi is looking at us.

Yukino who's trying to hide her body with only tattered uniform…
you can see her breasts and genital as much as you like.
The senior women…criticizes her body severely…
Yukino's already crying.

「Shirasaka-san…take a seat and open your legs wide…show your genital to everyone」

Sensei gave a new instruction…
Yukino remained standing while crying.
Sensei pushed the stun stick to Yukino's thigh silenlty.

…Barirririri

「Gyaaa!」

Yukino's body jumped up and falls on the floor…!\

「…Shirasaka-san. You really look like you don't have the learning ability」

Sensei spoke to Yukino expressionlessly.

「Sit on the chair and spread your legs…Split it like M…Hurry up!」

Yukino raises her body while crying…and sits down on a chair.
Then opens her legs widely…

「…I-Is this okay?」

Yukino's shaved genital is showed.
The vagina that took three hours stimulated by a rotor is completely wet.
The crack's wet and completely open.

「…What's with this dirty hole?」
「Won't the penis rot if you thrust it in there?」
「Or rather…doesn't it stink?」
「Was is Yukino-chan?…Your pussy smells strange you know?」
「Have you ever been told that your pussy stinks by someone else?」
「Un…It smells」
「Ah, it stinks, it stinks…are you properly washing that?」
「Even if she washes it normally, won't Yukino-chan's smell still remain? Isn't this already a physical defect」
「Wash it with lemon…lemon…!」
「Don't use some cheap cleaners, Yukino-chan's pussy would react and make a poisonous gas after all!」

The ladies laughed…!
Yukino can do nothing but cry at the slander of the ladies…

「Still, what an embezzled hole」
「You had sex with around a hundred people?」
「Eh, this hole looks like it had done 200 though」
「Un, it's been pierced too much that it has transformed already」
「Anyone who sees it will definitely know that it's a strange hole…!」

Sensei spoke to Yukino.

「Shirasaka-san…please tell everyone how many people you had sex with」

Yukino's crying.
Sher's crying quietly.

「…Do you want to be electrified again?」

Yukino answered.

「…Three」

Actually, it's all me.
Yukino's actually thinking that she sold herself to men other than me6

「Eh, she had sex with tree and it already got this dark?」
「It shouldn't spread this much unless it's pierced by various ones!」
「Maybe it's that, Yukino-chan loves doing it herself…」
「Oh, it has gotten dark from groping it herself…!」
「She might've pierced it with something big? Pestle or baseball bat?!」

The ladies continues to speak as they want.

「Shirasaka-san…have you ever masturbated?」

Sensei asks Yukino…

「…That's」

Yukino hesitates.
Sensei brought her stun stick close…

「I'll say it, I'll say it so please stop the shock…!」

Yukino desperately escapes from the stun stick…

「…Then, answer. Are you masturbating usually?」
「…I do」
「How old were you when you first masturbated?」
「…It was in the first year at middle school」
「Why did you start masturbating…?」
「Uhm…I heard it from a friend. When you touch there while thinking about the person you like, it'll feel good when you touch it…!」

Yukino's been masturbating since her first year at middle school!

「Then you've done it all the time?」
「Yes…Once or twice a month」

Yukino answered shamefully.
Yuzuki-sensei had an idea…

「Is that so?…Shirasaka-san, have you masturbated after Yoshida-kun raped you and stole your virginity?」

…Eh?
…That's?

「…What's wrong, Shirasaka-san? Please answer !」

…Yukino answered.

「…I do」

Sensei laughed.

「You're recalling the time when Yoshida-kun violated you…?」
「…Yes. That's right」

Yukino…masturbates using me raping her as material?

「…Just as I thought. Shirasaka-san…You're a genuine pervert…!」

Sensei's words pierce Yukino's heart…!

「Well, I heard it from Hidemi-san…this girl masturbates recalling the time she was raped…!」
「A daughter of a rape monster would like to be raped…!」
「As expected of Shirasaka's daughter…A lewd beyond perversion…!」

…That's right.
The process of making Yukino lewd is progressing certainly…

---

1. Margo misheard how Yoshida said it ↩
2. That's how Japanese read the Katakana Jaguar ↩
3. I'm just pasting what was written by the author ↩
4. Alliteration unintended ↩
5. Electricity sfx ↩
6. Even though Sensei just said that she's not going to sell

Yukino ↩

66. Suffering Bride (Part 2)

「Then…how do you masturbate?」

Yuuka-san cross examines Yukino.
Yukino places her thighs on the armrest of the chair…she's making an M pose.

「…N-Normally」

Yukino answered while enduring the humiliation of exposing her genital.

「We won't know if you say normal. You have to do it!」

Hidemi-san orders Yukino.

「…Eh?」

Yukino's frightened.
Tamayo-san spoke to Katsuko-nee.

「Katsuko-chan! We're going to have this sperm toilet masturbate, go get your camera!」
「…We're recording it!」
「Capture her face too!」

Katsuko-nee took her handy camera due to the demand of the ladies…!

「Haihaihai～, I got the camera!」

The image of the camera is projected on the screen close up., Yukino's wet vagina, her breasts, and her frightened face…is projected in sequence.

「Okay, sperm toilet!! Face the camera and declare 『I'm going to masturbate, please take a look』…」

Tamayo-san slapped Yukino's thighs…!

「…That's!」

Hidemi-san brought the stun stick close to her…!

「Are you unable to do anything unless shocked…?」

Yukino shivered…!

「Hurry up. You don't want to be shocked by two stick at the same time do you? Should we burn up Yukino-chan's nipple?」

Yuuka-san brought the stun stick close to Yukino's breasts…!

「…I'll do it! I'll do it, so please stop the electricity shock!」

Yukino shouted! Her tears spill like rain…!

「If you have time to cry then masturbate already you sperm toilet! Where's your greeting!?」

Tamayo-san hits Yukino's thighs again…!
A red mark remains on her white skin!

「…Masturbate, I'll masturbate!」
「Who will masturbate?」
「S-Shirasaka Yukino will masturbate!」
「Should we watch?」
「Please…take a look at my masturbation…!」

Hot tears from humiliation overflows from Yukino's eyes again.
Yukino…stretched her right hand towards her crotch…!

「Hey, show how you do it with your fingers on the camera!」

Yukino traces her slit with her middle finger.
Her forefinger peeled her clitoris and stir it up.

「…I-I do it like this normally」

Yukino cries while showing her masturbation to the camera…

「…My, you're not shoving your finger inside?」

Tamayo-san asked Yukino.

「I-I don't」
「Why?」
「…I-I'm scared putting a finger in…![1]」

Tamayo-san laughed.

「What are you getting scared of, even though you're lecherous」
「But, Tamayo-chan…it's only been days since she lost her virginity so she might not understood her vagina well you know?」

Yuuka-san said.

「…You might be right. Then, I will teach her」

Hidemi-san sits between Yukino's open legs…!

「Hidemi-neesan, I want to do it too!」

Tamayo-san reports, but…

「Tamayo-chan…you have an artificial fingernail! If you shove that in this girl's stomach would be badly bruised!」
「Oh right」
「On that respect, I'm an esthetician in active service so my nails are always short!」
「…Tsk, that's regrettable」
「Then, Tamayo…do that」

Yuuka-san laughingly said.

「…That?」
「If the vagina's sensation is underdeveloped…there's another hole you know?」
「Oh right!…Katsuko-chan, you got the tools?」
「Yes, I brought the torture tools in the wagon there!」
「As expected of Katsuko-chan!」

Tamayo-san flies to the wagon and looked for various tools…

「Then…we're going to put my finger in! I'll be stirring it!」

Hidemi-san showed her long middle finger to Yukino!

「…Hiii!!」

Hidemi-san enters Yukino's vagina!

「…I-Iyaaaaa!!」

Yukino's abrominal muscles shrink!

「N…I'll be teasing your insides…!」
「…P-Please stop…Aaahn!!!!」
「…Lewd. Aren't you just too aroused?! I can feel it here!」
「…Hyaaaaaaa!!!」

Yukino's body twists from the pleasure!

「Ufufu…G-spot can make you really feel it…!」

Hidemi-san vibrates her finger bit by bit…!

「Take a proper look…Hidemi-san's finger work is the best!」

Nagisa-san whispered to me…

「She's very knowledgeable where to tease to please a woman!」

I stare at Yukino's crotch!

「…Aaaaaaaaah, aaaaahn!…Stooop!!!!」

Yukino sheds tears in pleasure!

「We'll be putting two fingers in!」

Hidemi-san inserts her middle and forefinger inside Yukino's vagina and ransacks it!
The love nectar is making lewd wet sounds…!
Katsuko-nee records that state perfectly too…!

「Now then…we'll be attacking your clitoris!」

Hidemi-san stirs up Yukino's vagina by making a piston with her

middle and forefinger…
At the same time, her left hand's forefinger attacks Yukino's clitoris!

「…Fuaaaaaaaaa! D-Don't! Yukino's dyiiiiiiiiiinggg!!!!」

Yukino twists her body while panting…!

「Then die!」

Hidemi-san attacks her even more using her hand…!!!

「Aaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!! Don't do that!…I'm…cum…cumming…I'm cummiiiiing!!!」

Yukino reaches her first ascension from Hidemi-san's fingers…!
Her whole body is twitching…!

「Oh…This girl's vagina is tightening! Lewd!」

Hidemi-san doesn't stop her finger torture even though Yukino reached the climax!
She kept attacking Yukino with the same intensity

「…Cumming…Yukino's cumming…I'm cumming…stop this already!!!」

Hidemi-san doesn't let Yukino's body rest even a single breath!

「Tada…The next attack will follow! Yuuka-neesan, Nagisa-chan… could you hold her legs?…!」
「…sure sure」
「Hold it down!」

With Tamayo-san's cue, the two ladies pull Yukino's thighs…
Yukino who's straddled on an M-shape…has her anus exposed!
Yukino's…round anus used for excretion…
Tamayo-san took out a resin used stick with the thickness of a magic pen.
It has a glaring pink color.
It's shape is like an extra large asparagus.
The tip is gradually becoming 'boaboa'…2

「Okay, take a look…I will be shoving this vibrator in Yukino-chan's ass!」

Yukino's face trembled in fear!

「Stoooooop…That's impossible…it can't go in!!!」

Yuuka-san laughed.

「…What are you saying, you usually use something bigger than this do you?」
「Loosen up…if your anal muscles are cut, it won't be able to regenerate. You're going to shit with your entire life!」
「It's trouble when it becomes an artificial anus」

Yukino shook her head…

「I-I'm scared…stop, please stop…!」
「…No, we will never stop!」

Tamayo-san pushed the anal vibrator to Yukino's anus…!

「Dameeeee! Dameeee…Iyaaaaa!!!」
「…It's going in!」

The anal vibrator buries inside her anus as it's pushed…

「…Noooo! Nooooo! Not my asssssss!!!」

Yukino's already half frenzy…!
The anal vibrator is half buried in Yukino's ass!

「Okay…let's turn on the switch!」

Tamayo-san…turned on the vibrator!
…Viiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiin!!!
The vibrator winds in a peculiar movement as if it's a unpleasant living creature!!!

「Unununun…nuguuuuuuuuu…Uuuuuu…Iyaaaaa!!!」

Yukino violently faints in agony from the sensation from her anus

she never felt before!

「…Let's scoop it out!」

Tamayo-san released her hand from the anal vibrator!
…Viin, viin, viin, viin!!
Yukino's anus…has a vibrator rotating like a slime clockwise!!!!

「Help me! Help meee…Papaaa!!!! Mamaaaa!!!!」

Yukino opens her eyes wide! She's spilling tears like rain while she's in agony from the pleasure from having her anus violated.
Of course…Hidemi-san continues to attack her vagina and clitoris while her anus is being violated…!

「Uaaaaaaa!! Aaaaa! Aaaaaaaaaaaa!!」

Yukino's vivid screaming echoed in the chapel!!!
Her whole body sweats coldly…!

「Hey, cum while having both your front and back attacked at the same time!」

Tamayo-san lightly taps the anal vibrator that sticks in the ass, accenting the pleasure…!
Hidemi-san kept vibrating her hand inside the vagina while she's sweating intensely…!

「Should I play with her boobs?」

Yuuka-san sucked Yukino's right nipples…
Then grinds the left nipple with her fingers…!

「…Nfufu…fall…become a bitch!」

Yuuka-san licks Yukino's erogenous zone in her neck while whispering…

「Dameeee…iyaaaaa!!!」

Yukino's body trembles in pleasure!

「If you experience this much, you won't be able to have sex normally…!」
「…Come to our world too!」
「We'll be making it feel even more good…!!」

The three ladies' union attack makes Yukino reaches climax immediately!

「I don't want thiiiiiss…Nooo…Aaaaah…I…I'm getting strange agaiiiiiin…I'm becoming straaaaangeeeeee!!!!」
「…Cum!」

Yukino came again…!

「Aaaaaaah…Aaaaaaaa…nugu…nugugugigiiiiiiiii!!」

Yukino reaches climax while raising incomprehensible beast like voice…!!
Her whole body kept trembling…!
The 16 year old girl jumps to the sea of pleasure…!
She's drowning…!

「…Haaa, it's been a while that it feel strange!」

Hidemi-san pulled out her right hand sticky with Yukino's love nectar.
White love nectar…creates a thread…

「Clean yourself…」

Hidemi-san wipes the love nectar on Yukino's face who's still on climax and moving her mouth like a fish on the shore.

「Let's shove it in like this!」

Tamayo-san separates her hand away from the vibrator…
The vibrator kept rotating in between Yukino's crotch while making small vibrations.

「…Apu…apupupupu…aha…!」

Yukino's eyes is swimming in a different world…

Her whole body sweats profusely, and has a dazzling gleam…
Sweat flows like waterfall from her forehead…
Yukino who fell to the pleasure…is still in the far-off world…

Yukino can no longer return to a normal high school student.
After experiencing this much pelasure.

◇ ◇ ◇

While Yukino's tired out…
Nagisa-san removed all the scraps of the uniform left in Yukino's body.
Her socks are taken off.
Yukino became naked.
The vibrator still sticks to her ass, it's still vibrating…
She was made to sit on a chair with her anus and vagina exposed in her M-shape legs…
There's no focus in her eyes.

「…Katsuko, bring the camera to the front」

Sensei ordered an angle to Katsuko-nee

「Yes…Ojou-sama」

Katsuko-nee fixes the camera as told.

「Good…begin」

Nagisa-san splashed water from a pet bottle on Yukino's face dimmed in pleasure!

「…Hyaaa!」

Yukino returns from the coldness of the water!

「Now then, we're going to begin our interrogation!」

Nagisa-san whispered in Yukino's ears
There's a thin whip in Nagisa-san's hand…

「This is a whip used by teachers in Switzerland as a corporal

punishment on the noble families!」

Nagisa-san whipped Yukino!
A sharp sound thwack can be heard!

「…Ouch!!」

Yukino holds her thighs…!

「…It hurts doesn't it? But this doesn't leave a bruise on the skin. It's made from special resin. There's no way they would want wounds on the bodies of students in an ojou-sama school can we? That's why this whip was developed!」

She attacked Yukino's thighs with the whip again!

「…Ouch! Please stop…please don't hit me!」

Nagisa-san laughed

「Then…answer my questions」

Holding the black whip…Nagisa-san looked down on Yukino's frightened face…

「…First, what's your name?!」

Tamayo-san shouts to Yukino's ears!

「…Your name! Name!」
「…Y-Yukino …Shirasaka Yukino!」

Yukino shouted her own name…!
Nagisa-san smiled satisfied.

「Then…what's the name of your father?」
「…S-Shirasaka Sousuke…」
「What is your father's work?!」
「…H-He's working as a director in an advertising agency…!」

Nagisa-san laughs scornfully.

「…That's wrong. That's not it!」

「…Eh?」

Yukino's frightened.

「Your father is managing a prostitution club as a side business. With this mansion…!」
「…There's no way that's true」

Yukino shook her head.
Nagisa-san looks down on the frightened Yukino and said…

「Furthermore, it's not just a prostitution club…He kidnaps and forcibly rape a normal high school students…and force them to sell themselves…!」
「…Taking shameful photos and videos…!」
「And forcing them to perverted plays!」

Tamayo-san and Hidemi-san approaches Yukino from both sides…!

「There are girls who became crazy from the shock…」
「There are girls who became physically strange too…」
「There are girls who were scalded for their entire life too…」

Lastly, Sensei said…

「…There's also girls who died…because of Shirasaka Sousuke」

Yukino…shook her head in terror…!

「…There's…there's no way that's true!…There's no way my gentle papa would do that!」

NAgisa-san took out a white album from the wagon in the back and showed it to Yukino.

「Then…take a look at this…!」

The opened album…
The contents of the album is projected on the wall…

「…Cruel」

Misuzu spoke from my side.

All of the pages has the same man violating women.
There's a lot of raped women…
All of their faces are crying…screaming…

I embraced Misuzu.
When I turned around…Misuzu looks up at the images in pain.
I beckoned Megumi.
Megumi came near be and I clenched her hand.
Megumi clenched my hand tightly…

「Isn't this your father?」
「…N-No 」

Nagisa-san cross examines…
Yukino averts her eyes away from the album.

「…Take a look! Shirasaka Yukino!」

Nagisa-san swings down the whip to Yukino's right nipple…!
…Slap!

「…Hiii!」

Yukino's chest and body jumps!

「…I'll look! I'll take a look so please stop! Don't hit me!」
「Take a clear look!」

Yukino looks down at the album…!
It's a photo of the same man…Shirasaka raping multiple women…

「…You do know who that man is don't you?」

Sensei asked in a low voice.
Yukino answered calmly

「…This is Papa…!」

Yukino recognized her father in the photo in a sorrowful voice.

「That's right…it's your Papa. This is a photo from 17 years ago. Your Papa has been tormenting women all this time. He's a perverted sadist. You're a daughter of that kind of person… Shirasaka Yukino-san!」

Yukino shakes violently from Nagisa-san's wods.

「…Shirasaka-san」

Yuzuki-sensei who's the only woman having her whole body covered among the women in the room…steps forward.

「…Take a look at me」

Yukino looks up at Sensei.
Sensei smiled at Yukino…

「Hey…Shirasaka-san, you bore a grudge at me all the time since this past few days don't you?
…Do you hate me?
Were you mortified that your virginity was taken from you forcibly?
Was it hard to have sex with the man you never loved?
Were you unhappy from being sold in the park?
Were you unable to endure being exposed like a criminal in front of unknown men in a night town?
Were you mad when your pubic hair was shaved and carved with a tattoo?
…That's right, you said this before, didn't you?
『I'll never forgive all of you』…!」

Sensei's dark eyes looks down at Yukino…

「That's what we thought too…
With Shirasaka Sousuke…
Again and again…
We endured humiliating nights…
The same things were done to us…!
By your perverted father…!」

Yukino's body trembled bit by bit.
Her molars are grinding

「That's why…Shirasaka-san.
We made you experience the same thing…!」

Tremblingly…Yukino spoke

「…W-Why me?」

That's…
It's an honest question in a certain meaning.
Yukino is Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter…she's not the person in question.
Even if it's the sins of her father…the daughter shouldn't receive the punishment…

「Right. It's unreasonable, isn't it? I can tell that you feel that it's unreasonable…」

Sensei laughed small.

「But it can't be helped. We all received unjust and unreasonable treatment from Shirasaka Sousuke」

Yukino's in fear from Sensei's words…!

「I was 16 and had a person I like when Shirasaka raped me. I was confined in the mansion, was made to sell myself…and never went to high school…!」

…Nagisa-san.

「I don't have a person I liked back then but I was separated from my family. My father was hospitalized from sickness… Even when father had died, Shirasaka never let me visit!」

…Katsuko-nee

「It's not just them…multiple, dozens…it's not just one album. There's videos too…isn't it cruel? Everyone was a normal girl. Their usual daily life was stolen…raped…and was made to sell themselves…!」
「I hate Shirasaka Sousuke that I want to kill him. No, just killing him won't erase this hatred…!」

「Step on Shirasaka Sousuke's genitals, and cute of all his hands and legs…no. That's too lukewarm…My inside is shouting 『I'll never forgive him』!」
「That's why we decided to make the daughter experience the same thing. Make her experience the same hell. We'll be showing you who became a mess to Shirasaka…!」
「…That's!」

Yukino's at loss!

「Because you were happy all this time! Shirasaka made us fall to hell, played with our bodies cruelly…and protected his own family. He built a happy family…!」
「…That's unforgivable!」
「There's no way it can be…!」

Sensei, Katsuko-nee and Nagisa-san blocks Yukino's front…!
A sorrowful cry.

「We'll destroy it…make it a mess…Shirasaka's happy family…
Shirasaka Yukino…You…」

Sensei turned around…

「…Megumi, come here」

…Megumi's trembling
I embraced her while holding her hand and brought her in front.
Misuzu came with us.

「…Megumi, why are you here?!」

Yukino's surprised with Megumi's appearance…

「You're these people's friends?…You're an accomplice…!」

The depressed Yukino started to be angry as soon as she saw Megumi.

「That's right…Megumi's also a victim of Shirasaka Sousuke…」

Yukino repels Sensei's words intensely!

「No! This girl's mother seduced my father! She poked on the time when Mama was pregnant with me…!」
「…Yukino」

Megumi's eyes are sorrowful.

「Your mother's a prostitute! She must've fooled Papa and got pregnant…just to rip off some money!」

…Sensei took the whip from Nagisa-san!
Then she hit Yukino hard!!!!
…Bishi! Pishi! Pashi! Pan! Pan! Pan!

「Ouch! Stop…please stop!!」
「…You speak ill of Keiko-san! I won't forgive you! I'll never forgive you!」

Sensei who's always suppresses her feelings as much as possible… has anger coming from her whole body…!

「…Keiko-san was a kind person. She was beautiful…」

Yuuka-san looks down on Yukino coldly.

「She always protected us…and helped us again and again」

The oldest, Yuuka-san talks about 17 years ago.

「Keiko-san was a Music college student. Was fooled by Shirasaka… Shirasaka who's working on an advertising agency called out to Keiko-san saying that she'll be introduced to a music office…was abducted and was raped」
「…T-That's a lie!」
「It's not a lie…Katsuko-chan」
「…Okay」

Katsuko-san showed a video on the projector…
A low resolution video from 17 years ago.
But, the sound is clearly reproduced.

『Stop…please stop…!』
『Shut up!』

The young Shirasaka slapped a beautiful woman…!
The man bens over violently and pushes the woman in the bed…!

「…It was Mama」

Megumi cries quetly
I embraced Megumi tightly.

「Lies…that was Papa's voice…?」

Yukino looks at the screen in blank surprise.
The man puts his hand on the woman's skirt and pulled down her panties…!
Making a sound of removing his belt…he took out his erect penis…!

「…Stop, Papa…don't do that…!
「…Mama…My mama is…!

The two girls fall into sorrow from the figure of the father in the past…!

『Ehehe…I'll be taking it!
『Stop it…please…don't take that…!
『There's no way I would stop after coming this far!』
『I have a person I promised with…!』
『I don't care about that!』

In the image…the man violates the woman…!

『Iyaaaaa…I-it hurts!!』
『Hee…so you were a virgin! That's a big hit…!』

The man and woman sways back and forth…!

『Ouch…it hurts…stop…please stop!』
『My wife's just became pregnant…I'll make you pregnant too!』
『…No…Stop…please!!!』
『Horaaa…take this in…!』
『…Noooooo!!!』

…The man's face distorts ugly while ejaculating.
…The woman's face falls in despair while being fertilized.

『…I'll keep fucking you until you get pregnant. I'll confine you here all the time. You won't be able to come back home. Keiko… You'll be my toy until you die…!』

Uwaaaaa, the woman cried.
『Hey…Show your violated pussy that just lost it's virginity…!』

The man pointed the camera on the woman's genital.
The woman's vagina is bloodstained from the violent rape…
There's blood and sperm mixing making a pink color in the entrance…
The man laughed.
The vulgar laughter of the disgusting man and the cry of despair of the woman combines…

Then…the video stopped.

「So I was made that way…!」

Megumi cries quietly.

「…That's cruel…too cruel!」

She's completely depressed from the shock…!

「…I shouldn't have been born!」

I embraced Megumi.

「…Megumi」
「Please embrace me tight…Else, I might disappear」
「It's fine…I'm here」
「…Hey…Yoshida-kun Is it okay for me to live? Was it okay for me to be born?」

Megumi looks at me while crying.

「…Should…I be living…?!」

…I
…I kissed Megumi with all my passion.
Megmi's pointed eyes are melting…!

「…Yoshida-kun…!」

I embraced Megumi with all my heart as hard as possible!

「…Megumi…live for my sake!」

I can say nothing but that.

「I'll take Megumi! I'll take care of you…!」

Megumi looks at me.

「…Un!」

Megumi embraces me…

「Live…for my sake, live…please…please…!」
「Un…I'll live for your sake…Take me…I'll give you myself…I'll become yours…!」
「…Misuzu's the same!!」

Megumi looks at Misuzu.
Misuzu smiled in tears.

「Misuzu also needs Megumi-san! You're Misuzu's imporptant friend…! Please be with Misuzu all the time…!」

Be together…that means

「…Misuzu-san…Are you sure?!」
「…Yes! Let's have the three of us together! Is it no good for the three of us?」

Megumi answered.

「I like it with us three. What about Yoshida-kun?」

…I

「…Okay. Let's all be together」

Megumi's slim body ahead…and Misuzu hugged me from behind…!

「…Let’s become happy! By all means!」

Misuzu said.

「Un…Let’s be happy…For Mama. Yoshida-kun…can you make us happy…?」
「I’ll do anything…anything…!」

I cried while embracing Megumi.

「Then…we’ll also make Yoshida-kun happy…!」
「Misuzu too…We’ll make you happy so…please be happy!」

The three of us embraced each other while crying…

Yukino’s staring at us in blank surprise…!

---

1. Says the girl who was fucked average 10 a day ↩
2. I seriously don’t know what this raw means:　先っぽの方が、ボアボアと段々になっている……。 ↩

67. Suffering Bride (Part 3)

「…You guys are crazy!」

Yukino said while looking at us who are embracing each other.

「In such a place…with such an appearance…you're like idiots… Embracing and saying 『Let's become happy』…You guys are mad!」

Megumi and I…
Because she knows the two of us…Yukino's fear changed to her aggressive instinct.

「There's no way humans like you would be happy! You who raped me forcibly…and the daughter of the woman who fooled Papa…! That's bullshit! So idiotic! Idiotic! So foolish…!」

Yukino snapped off!
She's glaring at Megumi and me with eyes of anger and hatred…!

「My, Yukino-chan…Have you seen the video just now? Your Papa is the one who raped Megumi-chan's Mama! It's your Papa! Your Papa is a perverted man who loves to rape!」

Tamayo-san told the Raging Yukino.

「That's all lies! All of them are fake videos and images! My Papa isn't like that! You all are just fooling me! Doing this foolish thing desperately! Isn't that right? You cowards!」

The half-frenzy Yukino seems to not want accept the truth.
If she admits…the world she believed in until now would collapse…
That's why Yukino can never accept it…!

「My Papa is a splendid person! Gentle, great…the best man!! You all are just being jealous of my great father! You can't help but be jealous of my Papa! Thus you made these fake videos! I won't be fooled!…I would never be fooled by the worst kind of people like you!」

Yukino sets up a firewall in her brain…
Whatever we show…whatever we tell her.
Yukin closed her mind…
She'll never believe the 『Truth』about her father…

「…Yukino」

Megumi spoke while being embraced by me!

「Don't call my name! Daughter of a prostitute!」

Yukino shouts at Megumi!
Yuzuki-sensei raised her whip to hit Yukino…!
Yukino went 「Hiii」and closed her eyes…!

「…Wait, Minaho-san」

Sensei stopped her hands…!
Megumi spoke to Yukino calmly.

「…Yukino, I always thought of this. That I have to talk to you…I was a daughter born from being raped by your father. I'm a daughter of violence, not love」
「…It's not! Your mother seduced my Papa!!」

…Dan!
A water bottle was thrown at the floor near Yukino's foot!

「…… ! ! ! 」

Yukino flinched from the sudden physical violence…
It was Nei-san
Nei-san who's been watching our state by the wall all this time…
walked in front of Yukino…!
She picked up the plastic bottle rolled on the floor and took off the cap…
Then she poured in the water to Yukino…!

「…W-What are you doing?」

Yukino's completely scared from Nei-san's appeal.

「…Megumi-chan's talking isn't she? Listen」

Nei-san told Yukino in a low voice.

「…B-But」

Yukino still tries to resist…
Nei-san gripped Yukino's hair and pulled it up!
She took out a lighter from her pocket!

…Flick, flare!

Red flame breaks out from the lighter…!

「…Should I burn your hair?」

Nei-san's cold eyes…!
Yukino trembles!

「Nei-san, stop that!」

Megumi shouts to Nei-san but…!

「Sadly, it's too late…!」

Nei-san burned up Yukino's hair she's holding!
Yukino's hair burns sizzling…!
The unpleasant smell of protein being burned spreads across the room…!

「Hiiiiiiiiiiiii!!!!」

Yukino's scared from the scorching heat she feels in her head…!

「What?…I just burned your hair for a bit! I wet your hair above so it won't burn up!」

Nei-san said and brings the flaming lighter close to Yukino…!

「Then, want me to burn your face next? Or do you want me to turn your nipples black?!」
「…Stop…please stop」

Yukino feels the heat of the flame close to her skin!

「Then…shut up and listen to Megumi-chan's talk」
「…I-I get it…I get it already…!」

Nei-san closed the lighter's lid…

「…Megumi-chan, go on!」
「T-Thank you very much…!」

Megumi…took a deep breath… Then she continued her talk

「…Yukino. I hate your father. Tormenting Mama…and doing a lot of cruel things. And left her to die in the end…!」

Megumi begins to cry again…
I embraced her with all my strength.

「…Your father's guest made Mama drink some strange medicine… Mama was in pain and yet, your father never took her to the hospital!…So…Mama died. I was next to Mama in her bed, holding her hand and shouting 『Mama, don't die!』 But…it was no use…!」

Sensei catches up to Megumi's story.

「…It was drug overdose. If she was taken to the hospital and flushed it out of her stomach, she might've survived. It she was treated earlier. But…Shirasaka Sousuke prioritizes the guest's safety first. He left Keiko-san to die so that it won't become a police case…!」
「…I was there. Keiko-san's face is pale…she suffered so much an died」

Yuuka-san muttered.

「I was there too…Shirasaka didn't even give a proper funeral… only the women in the mansion gave her a ceremony. Keiko-san was a good person. Beautiful, kind and a wonderful person…!」

Hidemi-san testifies…

「I hate that Shirasaka Sousuke. I always thought that I want to kill him. Even if he's my real father…!!!」

Megumi's tears spill like rain…
Misuzu picked up a handkerchief and wipes her cheek…

「But you see Yukino…I didn't hate you. Because Yukino is innocent from the crime. You're just his daughter…you're unrelated at all…!」

…Megumi.

「After mother died, I was taken over by Yamamine house. Your father forced me to my adaptive parents. Just being pushed…I can do nothing. I feel ashamed with Yamamine house all the time…but my adaptive parents were good people. They loved me like their real daughter. I'm grateful to those people…!」

…So the people in Yamamine house were good people.
…That's great.
Megumi wasn't so unfortunate.

「…But you see, I hated it when they took me sometimes to meet you and your relatives. You always look like an Ojou-sama… wearing beautiful clothes, laughing in a loud voice, and loved by everyone. But, I who's pushed to be accepted, is always put among the relatives' children. Yamamine's house is poor so they can't buy gorgeous clothes…My adoptive parents always feel so sorry… unable to do anything. So I always behave myself in the corner.

…Megumi talks about her past while crying.

「But…I had a dream. Someday, I'll become an adult…find a job and purchase beautiful clothes with my own money. Then wear those clothes I won't get embarrassed and come in front of Yukino, then say that 『I am your sister』[1] I wanted you to come to my wedding as my sister. I wanted to come in Yukino's wedding…I wanted to get along with you all the time…!」

Megumi spits out her passionate emotions that she piled up all this time while crying…!

I rubbed Megumi's back.
Misuzu and I supports Megumi's body that seems to fall down…

「…Don't joke with me」

Yukino muttered.

「I'd rather die than call you in my wedding…You're not my sister! I always hated you…Megumi!」

Yukino looks at Megumi…

「I knew it all this time…You're Papa's daughter! My foolish aunt told me in secret! Then you were an adapted daughter of uncle Yamamine!」

Yukino's eyes…burns in hatred.

「She told me that I have a half-sister…and furthermore, at the same age! Do you think that's permissible!? No way! I'll never allow it! When Mama was pregnant with me, Papa was cheating?! That's ridiculous!…There's no way Papa would betray Mama! That's definite! Papa is being deceived by your mother! I will never think of any other possibility than that!」

Yukino…persists her own 『Truth』
She mocks Megumi's mother so that she won't lose her ideal father.

「Megumi…why are you born! You shouldn't've been born!」
「…Yukino」

Yukino's rampage is unstoppable…!

「I'll tell you then…It's because of me why you're not able to wear beautiful clothes when the relatives gather. I asked Papa. I had uncle Yamamine ordered to 『Never let Megumi wear gorgeous clothes』…! You're like an idiot. You were in your uniform during grandfather's birthday party or the new years! Poor plain-girl-chan!…You're like an insect Megumi! You'll stay plan forever! You should just live plain even if you become an adult!」

Yukino released the fury she gathered all these years…!

「You even tried to copy me going to the basketball club in the middle school…! Disgusting! That's why I ordered uncle Yamamine-san to make you quit basketball club…! That's right, it was me…I'm the one who ordered it! I also made it so you can't go to the school excursion at middle school. I ordered it. You even passed the prefecture at high school were you?…! I'm the one who made you abandon the high school you hoped for and enter our high school…! I won't be able to endure having you study on a school better than me! I asked Papa all of it and made uncle Yamamine do it all!」

This is the girl named Shirasaka Yukino.
Isn't she completely like her father.
She inherited the blood?…
Or could it be that because she looked up at her parents…
Yukino laughs at Megumi…
She laughed madly…!

「Ahahaha…Serves you right! Someone like you…someone like you should just suffer throughout your life! If you don't want that then go somewhere I can't see! Disappear from my world…Someone like you…Someone like you…!」

Megumi stared at the laughing Yukino with straight eyes.

「I know all of it…!」

Yukino's laughter stopped.

「…Eh?」
「I know…the high school I entered now. I will confront you upfront this time…!」

Yukino's laughing at Megumi's resolve.

「…What are you saying! What fighting upfront? Are you an idiot?…Know your place! I'm Papa's real child! Someone like you is just a child made from a mistake! It's unforgivable for you to speak to me! Be grateful to me that you're living! Get on your knees and apologize to me! Say that you're sorry for being born!!!」

Yukino's refusing Megumi till the end.

「…Right. We're different. We can never understand each other…!」

Megumi said sorrowfully.

「Isn't that obvious?! Our standpoint is different! Our value as humans are different!」

In the end…Yukino's Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter…
A clan of a founder of a big newspaper publishing company…
She was raised in such a world…
She believed that her own family is special.
She believes that she needs to have『special treatment』
…Is that how it is?
…Are you that kind of woman?

「…Megumi, are you done?」

Sensei spoke to Megumi.

「…Yes…I'm satisfied. Thank you very much」

Megumi answred quietly.

「Then…we're gong to make Shirasaka Yukino fall to hell…is that okay?」

With Sensei's question, Megumi looked at Yukino once again…and said.

「…Sorry…Yukino. I can't save you…!」

Yukino's face…is frozen in fear suddenly…!

「…… ! ! ! 」

Katsuko-nee pushed the wagon with the torture tools in front of Yukino…!

「There's vibrator, whip, candles…syringe too…!」

「Which is the best aphrodisiac here?」

Tamayo-san looks at the wagon right away.

「…Minaho-san, how many hours should we take?」

Hidemi-san asked Sensei.

「I'll give you two hours…make her fall within two hours」
「Got it…leave this to us」

…Leave what?

「We won't go easy anymore…!」

Hidemi-san smiled at Yukinoi suspiciously.
Eh, they were going easy a while ago?!

「We'll make you pant for two hours! We'll blow your head's screws off and continue to violate you…!」

Tamayo-san took out a vibrator bigger from a while ago…

「You'll continue to cum a hundred times…We'll make your body unable to endure it unless it's not normal sex…let's make you a splendid pervert just like your father!」

Yuuka-san spoke while choosing the whip.
Yukino shivered.

「It's fine…It's a very pleasurable hell」
「I'll teach you the extreme pleasures of women…!」
「We'll make you crazy…torment you and make you scream…!」

Tamayo-san spoke to Nagisa-san.

「Nagisa-chan, you're going to participate?」
「Yes…My specialty is rape play after all」

Nagisa-san faces the wagon.

「…Katsuko, what would you do?」

Katsuko-nee answered laughingly.

「I'm fine…Someone has to take care of the younger ones after all…!」

…Younger ones?
Katsuko turned to Megumi, Misuzu and me.

「Let's go out…This room will become hell after this…」
「…I want to take a look at Yukino」

Megumi pleads Katsuko-nee

「You can't… We want you to be still clean. We don't want to see you become demons of hell…」

…Katsuko-nee

「Right…I don't want you to see the appearance of this girl being tormented」
「Un…please」
「Once it starts…we probably won't be able to stop」

The ladies told us with sad eyes.

「Please…leave us for two hours」

Sensei too…

「I'll be outside too…」

Margo-san said.

「Right…Margo-chan's our cute little sister too!」

Nagisa-san answered in Sensei's place.

「Nei-sama. Nei-sama's my dear little sister too」

Katsuko-nee holds Nei-san's shoulder and take her outside…

「…I get it」

Nei-san reluctantly agreed to go out

「…Megumi…Misuzu-san」

Sensei turned to the two.

「If you're scared…then have sex with Yoshida-kun. Yoshida-kun… Be gentle with the two」
「…Yes, got it」
「If Nei also intends to then have sex with her too…Katsuko will endure because she's onee-san…!」
「Sure sure! We got it already!」
「But…after two hours, Ojou-sama…!」

Lastly, Sensei looked at me.

「I'll call you after two hours…I'll ask you to finish this girl」

In short.

「…We'll make Shirasaka Yukino pregnant today」

Yukino screams…!

「…Noooooooooo! I don't want that!!!!」
「Please go. Leave this to us…」

Urged by Katsuko-nee…Megumi, Misuzu, Margo-san, Nei-san and I left the chapel…
As soon as Katsuko-nee closed the door…!
A violent whip can be heard from the other side…!
And women's violent roars…
And, Yukino's high pitched scream…

◇ ◇ ◇

Katsuko-nee took us to the kitchen.

「We'll be making cake! Please help me!」

Saying that, Katsuko-nee handed me a ball and the whisk with materials.

「Stir it until the cream froths up!」
「…G-Got it」

I don't get it but let's stir it as said.

「Megumi-sama and Misuzu-sama, let's bake sponge cake!」
「Uhm…Katsuko-sama?」

Misuzu asks Katsuko-nee.

「Why are we making cake?」

Katsuko-nee answered laughingly…

「…Shirasaka Yukino will be reborn, in whatever form it is. She has no choice but to be reborn. We must congratulate her. It's cake when you congratulate someone, isn't it?」

…Reborn
…Yukino

「…So it's a cake for Yukino」

Megumi muttered.

「Got it…I'll help」
「Misuzu will help too!」

We began baking the cake.
On the other side of the kitchen is Margo-san drinking coffee.
Nei-san opened a red wine.

「Hey, Katsun…can we play music?」
「Go on!」

Nei-san operated the machine installed in the kitchen and played music…
An elegant, magnificent performance sounds in the kitchen…

「…What music is this?」

When I asked Nei-san.

「Mozart's 『Requiem』[2] It's the eighth piece 『Day of Tears』…[3]」

We continued making cake while listening to Mozart.
Margo-san changed it to rock when requiem finished.
Was it 『Eagles』 or 『Whitesnake』 It was a music from foreign band I don't know.
After that, music from the band named 『Runaways』…
Margo-san and Nei-san matches with the music and shouts 「…ch ch ch ch ch cherry bomb!」[4]
It seems fun so Misuzu and Megumi copies them.
Katsuko-nee too

「…ch ch ch ch ch cherry bomb!」

I was laughing before I noticed.
We spent two hours just like that…
Looking from the window, the sun has gone down…it's almost evening.
…Suddenly.
The interphone in the kitchen ringed.

『…Katsuko, please bring Yoshida-kun here』
「Certainly, Ojou-sama」

Katsuko-nee responded on the phone and looked at me

「…Should we go?」
「Katsuko-sama, can we go too?」

Misuzu asked Katsuko-nee…

「Misuzu wants to watch Danna-sama impregnating that woman」
「Me too…Katsuko-san」

Misuzu and Megumi told Katsuko-nee.

「I think that there's still some reverberations left but I think that it's already safe. Let's all go」

Katsuko-nee said…

◇ ◇ ◇

Inside the chapel once again.
It smells terrible inside…
It smells women love nectar, sweat, and pee…
Yukino leaked…

「…Ufu, it's fine now. It's okay」

Yuuka-san met us with a smile.
The ladies looks completely tired out…
They performed every torture for two straight hours.
Huh…I can't see Yukino?

「Shirasaka Yukino's on top」

Yukino's riding the altar.
She's wearing a pure white bridal gown.
There's a white veil on her head.
Yukino's face completely flew away.
Her eyes looks exhausted that it can't focus…

「Katsuko-chan, take the camera…this will be her first and last time wearing a wedding dress after all…!」

Hidemi-san said…

「…This is Shirasaka Sousuke's favorite play. 『Wedding play』. This room is used only for that sake…don't even try to imitate this play…」

Sensei told Megumi, Misuzu and Nei-san.

「A woman violated in her bridal gown…can no longer wear bridal costumes anymore. They'll remember the time they were violated by all means. That's why, they can never hold a wedding ceremony…they can't! Knowing that, Shirasaka Sousuke made us put on bridal gowns and violated us. Making an eternal oath in front of the altar…I can never forgive him…Never…!」

Nagisa-san spoke in hatred.

「That's why you must not do this play. Please treasure the opportunity of wearing bridal gown on your own wedding ceremony only」

Yuuka-san told the younger girls.

「And…Show us your beautiful bride appearance. Please. We can no longer wear wedding dresses after all…!」

Hidemi-san spoke sadly.

「Hey…Shirasaka Yukino-chan…wake up!」

Tamayo-san pats Yukino's cheeks…!

「…Please no more…Yukino's bad…I'll do anything, forgive me… please stop it…!」

Yukino kept murmuring the same words in low voice…

「What are you saying, we're just about to start the main event!」

Hidemi-san sprinkles water on Yukino's face to make her conscious.

「We did all kinds of torture but the inside of her vagina isn't stimulated. That's where Yoshida-kun's penis would torment!」

Tamayo-sam smiled at me…!

「Yoshida-kun, take off your clothes…!」

With Sensei's words, I took off my clothes…and became naked
My penis is already erect.

「To to Shirasaka-san at the altar…!」

Yukino on her wedding dress lies on the altar.

「No…I don't want to be violated anymore!」

The bride is afraid!!!!

1. Yukino Skywalker: Nooooooooooooooooooooooo ↩
2. ↩
3. ↩
4. ↩

68. Suffering Bride (Part 4)

Tamayo-san handcuffs Yukino's both hands…and restricts it on the iron ring in the altar.

「W-What…No! Please stop…no more!」

Yukino can no longer put strength in her body…
Even though she don't want it, she can't move.

「…Next would be your legs」

Tamayo-san restrains her foot…
The leather handcuffs on her foot is tied to the feet of the altar…

「Nagisa-chan, turn on the switch!」

With Hidemi-san's instruction, Nagisa-san switches the control panel
It made a "Wiiiin" sound and the iron chain winds up…
Yukino's arms and legs are pulled apart…!
She was lying down on the altar earlier but she's forced to stand.
No…Her body is suspended with leather handcuffs on both wrists.
Her ass is barely reaching the alar…

「Hiiiii…Noooooo…!」

Yukino's made to stand in the altar with her legs wide open in an X shape posture…!
The bride in her wedding dress will be raped!

「Shirasaka always do the 『Wedding play』 here, so you're going to make your 『Eternal oath』 here!」

Tamayo-san said while laughing.

「…He'll ask 『Do you swear your eternal love, in sickness and in health?』 and force you to swear. Shirasaka makes women say words of lifetime love on the person they don't love. The man can't help but have fun watching the hateful face of the other…!」

「…He's a goddamn pervert!」

Hidemi-san said mortified.

「But, you don't need to do it. You don't need to promise anything…!」
「…Eh?」

Thinking that she'd be made to do it too, Yukino raised a surprised voice.

「You only need to be violated by him…thoroughly, against your own will…!」

Yuuka-san sentenced her coldly.

「We won't make you do the『play』…This isn't a game. You'll be violated by Yoshida-kun in your wedding dress…and get pregnant with a child, it'll be engraved in your mind throughout your life…!」

Yuzuki-sensei's words made Yukino speechless…!

「…I don't want that! I don't want to have his child!」

Yukino shouted…!

「Enough! I'm fine being violated! Just get me pregnant! I'll do it! I just have to do that right!?…But I definitely don't want his child! Bring some other guy! I'm fine with anyone as long as it's not him!」

Yukino shouts while crying…!
…So you hate me that much?!
…Yukino.
…Yukino.
…Yukuino!!!

「Shirasaka-san…You still don't understand? I want you to be violated. I want your body and soul to be raped. I want to see your face being violated by the guy you helplessly don't want. I want to record you being inseminated while you hate it from the bottom of

your heart. I want to see your worst condition as a woman…!」

Sensei whispered to Yukino…!

「…This will be the true hell…The genuine hell we experienced…!」

Yukino's afraid of Sensei's dark eyes…

「Now…Let's show her pussy before she gets inseminated!」

Tamayo-san rolled up the skirt…!

「…Nooo…I don't want thisss…!
」
Of course, Yukino's not wearing a panty…
It's a thin 16 year old legs…
The pubic hair is completely shaved…
And on top of that is an emerald green 『Yoshida』 tattoo
And, Yukino's vagina that's already wet.
The crack is completely open and is sticky with love nectar…

「Katsuko…take this. You know this best, don't you?」

Nagisa-san handed some small machine to Katsuko-nee who's taking the shameful figure of Yukino with her camera…
Hidemi-san holds the camera from Katsuko-nee and continued recording…
Katsuko-nee checks the state of the machine.

「We'll be using this…!」
「Un…Once she knows the taste of this, she can no longer do normal sex, don't you think?」
「Right…She can no longer return」

Katsuko-nee draws out two electric cords from the machine.
There's a metal pole ahead of each cords.
Katsuko-nee draws it on Yukino's naked ass.

「Un…With her muscle tension condition, it should be here…!」

Katsuko-nee stuck the put the cold metal electrode to Yukino's ass.

「Okay…we're prepared now!」

Sensei looked at me…

「Yoshida-kun…invade Shirasaka-san…!」
「…Okay」

This will be our first time having sex while standing…
I pushed my penis between Yukino's crotch who's standing in an X posture…!

「…S-Stop it!…I hate you! You're the one I hate the most in this world! You should just die! Die right now!」

Yukino spit saliva on my face…!
I accepted the saliva contented.
I know that Yukino hates me naturally…
She has the qualification to hate me…
But…I'll still violate Yukino…!
…Again and again!

I pushed in my penis to Yukino's entrance…!
…It doesn't enter well!

「…Stop it! End this already! I'm already fed up being violated by a person like you! I'd rather die than have sex with you! Kill me! I'd rather die!」

…Dammit!
…What should I do?

「Ah…The angle is different. Onee-chan will lead you」

Katsuko-nee holds the tip of my penis and puts it on the right position.

「Push it up like that…as if you're stabbing from below!」
「…Nooooo, iyaaaaaa…don't!!!!!」

Yukino's afraid from the invasion of my penis…!
Following Katsuko-nee's advice, I pushed my penis powerfully towards the sky![1]

…Nuboo!
The penis slips inside Yukino instantly!

「…Iyaaaaaaaaa! It came in agaaaain!!!! Aguu!!!!! 」

The uterus pushes the glans down…Yukino faints in agony!

「…I'm being violated agaiiin…by someone like him…
bakaaaa…! 」

We're connected while standing…
I hold Yukino's waist firmly.
Yukino's womb is completely polished after two hours…
It's drenched wet…it's on it's best state.
It's clamping to my penis stickily!
…It feels good.
I want to put this in forever.

「…Yoshida-kun, you can stay like that 」

Sensei told me.

「Shirasaka-san will be doing everything after that. She'll swing her waist with all her might until you ejaculate…! 」

Yukino glares at Sensei…!

「Do you still intend to order me?!…You intend to threaten and make me do forcibly do you…?! 」

Sensei spoke to Yukino who's glaring at Sensei with eyes of hatred.

「There's no need for that…Katsuko do it. 」
「Okay…Ojou-sama 」

Katsuko-nee turned on the switch from a while ago!
At that moment…Yukino's waist starts to jump!
Her ass tightened and jumps between my crotch!
Her insides is accepting my penis to the innermost part!
Her vagina's tightening my penis!

「…Aaaahn!…What's this?!…What's going on!…Aaaahn! 」

Yukino's waist is moving on a uniform rhythm!
It's making a piston on my penis!
The small and naked ass is tightening firmly!!!

「…Do you know what this is? It's a massage machine that shrinks muscles using electricity. It's specially made. There was a plus and minus electrode put on Shirasaka-san's buttocks, isn't it?」

Katsuko-nee laughs while saying.
…So that's what it was!
The two electrodes emit electricity and Yukino's ass muscles shrink by itself…!
And Yukino who has my penis pushed inside her vagina…is swinging it automatically!
…It's clamping my penis!

「The pulse of the electricity will make Shirasaka-san's buttocks jiggle by itself, not even caring about her will. We chose the point where it would move just like having sex so enjoy it to the fullest!」

Sensei's voice…sounded low.

「…Hyaaaa…yaaa…ahn…aaaahn…Iyaaa!!!」

It's as if Yukino's moving her waist aggressively…!
But, all of those movements are forced mechanically!

「By the way, we can speed her up depending on the electricity!」

Katsuko-nee operates the knob of the machine…!

Piku, piku, piku, piku, piku, piku, piku, piku…!

Yukino's ass jumps up on the speed that's double of what was before!

「…Yan, Ahn, aaahn, Un, aaah, aah, iyaaa…!」

Yukino's spilling tears of pleasure…
Her body is attacked with the waves of pleasure…!

「Let's increase the electric power!」

Katsuko-nee fiddles another switch!

「…Aaaah!」

Yukino's waist hits even more violently!
The tip of my penis pierces Yukino's womb intensely!

「…Yameteee! I'll die! I'll dieee!!」
「My, who was the one who said 『Kill me』 earlier?」

Sensei laughs…
I pull down the chest part of Yukino's dress…!
Her cute breasts appeared!
I stir around the hardened nipples!

「…Good! That! Ah! Aaahn!」

Yukino is drowning in sea of sex again…

「Then, let's triple the power!」

Katsuko-nee declares…!

「Hyaaaaaaa!! Aaaah! My ass! It's burning! I'm dying! It's killing meeeeeee!!」

Yukino who's receiving three times the electric shock is striking her body against me!
Her whole body is drawn to me…and her waist is waving intensely!
Her vagina's tightening!

「…What's this! I'm! Becoming strange! I'll become no good! I'm being killeeeeeeedd!!!」

Influenced by the electric impulse…Yukino's rising little by little…!

「Okay…Let's speed it up three times with the power increased three times!」

Katsuko-nee…Seriously?!!!

「…Nuaa! Afuu! Aaah! Aaafuu! Iyaa! I'm dying! I'm dying! I!

Aaaah! Help me! Help meee! Hyaaaaaaaaan!!!!」

…I'm about to reach my limit too!

「…Yukino! I'm about to cum!」

Yukino's eyes opened suddenly!

「…Nooooo!!!」

Katsuko-nee moves her hand…!

「…Now, we'll max the power!」

Yukino's waist dances violently while still taking my penis in!
Yukino's electric pulse erotic dance…reaches the climax…!

「…Kyaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!」

Looking at me with her eyes wide open…Yukino faints in agony!!

「Speed: Full throttle!」

…Aaaah!
Yukino's ass is shaking bit by bit!
Her vagina's winding and squeezing while my penis pushes up her womb!

「…Cum, cum, cum, cumming…I'm cummiiiiing!!!」

Yukino forcibly run the stairs to climax from the electric shock!

「…Hiiiiiiiiiii!!! Hiiii! Kill me! Someone kill meeee!!!」

Yukino's shouting 「Kill me」 in madness…!
I fire a hot bullet in Yukino's womb…!!!

「…Cumming! Yukino!!!!」

Byubyu…it came out!
Dobo…it came out…!
Juba, it came out…2
My hot cloudy liquid dips in Yukino's womb…!

「Haaaaaaa! Haaaaaaa! Aaaaaaaa! It's coming in! It's coming in deep inside meeeee…I'm being killeeeeeeeedd…!!」

Even so, Yukino doesn't stop moving!
Her violent erotic dance still continues against her will…!

「…I'm dying! I'm being killeeeeed!…I'm being killeeeeeeeed…!!!!!」

Yukino's trembling ni pleasure while feeling the ejaculation in her womb…!

「…Off!」

I suddenly heard Sensei's voice…?!
The movement of Yukino's waist stopped…
Katsuko-nee turned off the electric pulse?

「…Fuee?」

Yukino is showing a face of not knowing what happened…
Was she unconscious?…She's swinging her waist even though the electricity stops.
She's wringing out the semen out of my penis until the last drop…

「How is it…it feels good, doesn't it? It's fun to have sex while you're recovering…Isn't it, Shirasaka-san?」

Yukino got startled from Sensei's words…!

「…I-I?」

Sensei laughed…!

「ahahahaha! What 『I'd rather die than have sex』?…! Shirasaka-san, aren't you enjoying sex with Yoshida-kun?」
「Ufufufu…She's having sex like a wild beast!」
「A bitch pleased from being ravished…Perverted girl」
「Ahahaha…Isn't she accepting the penis happily?」
「Right, You loved being violated!!!!」

Sensei and the ladies…are mocking Yukino while laughing.

「…G-Get away from me. Hurry up and pull out your disgusting thing away from me!」

Yukino who regained her sanity pulls her waist away from me trying to get away…
…But

「…Ahn!」

Her ass jumps up and Yukino's crotch hits me!
The penis that hadn't withered yet pushes Yukino's womb again!

「You can't separate yet…Don't forget that we still have the electrodes still sticking to you!」

KAtsuko-nee switched on the electric pulse for once.

「…T-This is madness. You people are all mad! You're all crazy!」

Yukino spits out…

「…We're devils. We're living in hell. We'll make this your home…」

Sensei answered.

「By the way…Shirasaka-san, You can tell that Yoshida-kun's sperm is filling up your womb right now do you?」

Sensei told Yukino laughingly…
Yukino's spine froze…

「It has been twenty hours since you had your last sex with Yoshida-kun, isn't it? It's about to reach the deadline soon…」

…Oh right.
Yukino came to the school this holiday to receive the 『Emergency contraceptive』 from sensei
Yukino's been taught that her limit for the 『Emergency Contraceptive』 is less than 24 hours since the ejaculation.
Though the appointed time is approaching…she had received another ejaculation.

「Shouldn't you be asking something from me…or could it be that you want to take time being violated by Yoshida-kun here? Want to be impregnated two or three times?」

Yukino's attitude changed from Sensei's words.

「…P-Please give me the medicine」

…Yukino muttered in a low voice.

「What?…Shirasaka-san, I can't hear because your voice is so small…!」

Sensei teases Yukino on whatever way she can…

「…P-Please give me the medicine…I beg you…!」

Yukino's voice is sorrowful…!

「…You really don't want to get pregnant?」
「I don't want it…definitely not!」
「It's Yoshida-kun's child you know…?!」
「I definitely don't want his child!」

Sensei laughed in a loud voice…
The four previous prostitute ladies of the mansion laughed.
Yukino's stupefied.

「Shirasaka-san…You're still connected to Yoshida-kun. You can say that while having that penis still in your stomach…furthermore, you're in your wedding dress…that's so funny. I've never seen a worthless comedy like this before…!」

The women laughed once again…
Yukino begins to cry.

「Very well. I'll give you the medicine…but, I have a condition」

Sensei erodes Yukino's mind

「…Condition?」

Sensei laughed.

「First…Break up with Endou-kun」
「…Okay, got it」

I was surprised from the too early response…

「Well, it can't be helped…being violated and made to taste a man…you can't come back to Endou-kun looking like his lover…!」

Yukino spilled tears from Sensei's words…

「Next would be…apologze to Megumi」
「…Eh?」

Yukino's face became cloudy.
Megumi from behind is also surprised.

「…If you don't want it then I won't give you the medicine」
「…That's」

Yukino endures.
Yukino's vagina tightened.
My penis isn't withering at all.
It's slipping in the deepest part of Yukino.

「What would you do?…Would you do it or not?」

Sensei…is testing Yukino.

「…I get it! I should just apologize, shouldn't I? I'll do anything just for the medicine! In exchange, give it to me definitely! Promise me!」

Yukino…answered in a neglectful manner.

「Very well…I promise」

Sensei laughs…

「Words of apology…Let's see. You just have to copy what I say… okay?」

「…Got it」
「Then…look at Megumi」

YUkino glares at Megumi…!

「It's useless to glare you know, Shirasaka-san…Megumi watched you having sex. Accepting Yoshida-kun's penis while wearing a wedding dress. Aren't you the embarrassing one? Could it be that you're an idiot? Did you inherit the idiocy from your father…?!」

Yukino wept bitter tears…
I!

「Yoshida-kun…don't ever pull out. Violate Shirasaka-san like that. Shirasaka-san will apologize to Megumi while being violated by Yoshida-kun…Okay? Should we begin…?!」

Yukino faces Megumi while still connected to me.

「Follow me…『Yamamine Megumi-san, I'm very sorry for my rudeness until now』」

Yukino…repeats Sensei's words while enduring the humiliation.

「…Y-Yamamine Megumi-san, I'm very sorry for the rudeness until now」
「『I…Shirasaka Yukino, had been feeling inferiority complex to Megumi-san's beauty and intelligence since before』」
「…Eh?」

Yukino looks at Sensei

「Say it!」
「I-I…Shirasaka Yukino, had been feeling inferiority complex to Megumi-san's beauty and intelligence since before…」
「『Megumi-san…is much more beautiful, better in sports, intelligent than me, Shirasaka Yukino. I felt an intense inferiority complex since our childhood. That's why I did a lot of bad things…!』」
「…M-Megumi-san…is much more beautiful, gentle, intelligent, I felt an intense inferiority complex since our childhood. That's why I did a lot of bad things…!」

Yukino's sheding tears like rain.

「『We had the same father and yet, I, Shirasaka Yukino isn't superior than Megumi-san in anything…!』」
「Even though we had the same Papa, I don't have anything that is superior than Megumi-san…!」
「『That's why I was unkind. I Shirasaka Yukino, is ugly in both face and heart…I apologize to Megumi-san from the bottom of my heart…!』」
「That's why, I…was unkind. I'm a woman ugly in both heart and face…! I apologize to Megumi-san from the bottom of my heart…!」

Yukino's tears doesn't stop

「…Yukino?

Megumi looks at Yukino with a surprised face.

「…That's her true colors.

Sensei told Megumi…

「…If she was confident, she won't be ordering to only Megumi saying 『Don't wear Gorgeous dresses』 Why do you think she wears expensive and gorgeous clothes? She says that Megumi should 『Come on school uniform』, because she thought, whatever cheap clothes Megumi wear, she won't be a match…!」
「…Is that so?!」

Megumi's surprised.

「…Isn't it the same in sports? She thinks that she can't win against Megumi so she asked her father to force you to stop in the basketball club. She won't do that if she's confident in her ability. She should just show her power. Even in studies, when she felt that she's about to lose to Megumi, she didn't allow you to get to your first choice…Really, she has a mass lump of inferiority complex to Megumi. This girl is…!」
「But…I'm not as cute as Yukino! For me to win against Yukino…!」

Misuzu shouted at Megumi.

「No…Megumi-san's beautiful! More than this woman! This woman knows it too! Once Megumi-san is taught how to hairstyle and make up, you'll become a tremendous beauty! That's why she didn't allow Megumi-san to dress up all this time!」

…Is that so?
Yukino's the one with a complex?

「…That's right…Why are you much more beautiful than me?! Why are you better in sports?! Why are you much more intelligent than me?! I'm Papa's real daughter and yet…! I'm the only daughter of Papa…!」

Yukino continued to shed tears of hate.

「I hate you! I hate you Megumi all this time! You shouldn't be here! I always thought that you should disappear!」

…Yukino.

「Enough! Give me the medicine! I'll go back home once I drink my medicine! Then I'll forget all about what happened until now! I'll stop going to school! I won't meet Kenji again! I'll never have sex with anyone again! I won't give birth to a child! I'll ask Papa and I'll go on an unknown town! I'll forget all about you people! I'll even forget all about Megumi! I won't remember all of it throughout my life! That's why hurry up and give me the medicine!」

Yukino screams

「Katsuko…give Shirasaka-san the medicine」
「Okay, Ojou-sama」

Katsuko-nee takes a pill case out of the wagon.
She took a red and white capsule from inside.
I've never seen that before…

「Open your mouth…Shirasaka-sama」

Katsuko-nee presents the capsule to Yukino's mouth.
Yukino…thought for a while…but still opened her mouth.
Katsuko-nee puts the capsule on top of Yukino's tongue…

「…Drink it」

Yukino swallows it
Katsuko-nee pours in water from a pet bottle to Yukino's mouth.
Her throat sounded gulping…

「You drank it…Congratulations, Shirasaka-san…!」

Sensei laughed.

「…Eh?」

Yukino…felt something odd…

「Congratulations on getting pregnant Shirasaka-san…!」

…That means?!

「The medicine just now was 『Fertility drug』…I told you about it the other day didn't I? A medicine to make you absolutely pregnant…!」

Yukino's face became pale…!
Yukino tries to vomit the medicine in a hurry!

「Katsuko…switch on!」

…Bikun!
The electrical pulse made Yukino's waist move again!!!!

「…Hiiii!…Iyaaaaaaa!…Iyaaaaaa!!!!!」

Yukino's ass is moving against her will!

「Yoshida-kun…ejaculate inside Shirasaka once again! Then finish her!」

Sensei smiled darkly…!

「…Iyaaaaaaa!!…Iyaaaaaaaa!!…I don't want thisssssss!!!!」

Yukino's waist is forced to me steadily…!
The insides of her vagina clamps tightly again…!
…It feels good!

「…It's fine as long as Shirasaka-san gets pregnant and gives birth. I will be raising the born child…as mine. You're just merely a machine for sex and childbirth. That's your hell…Shirasaka Yukino-san…!」

Yukino's crying…!
Are those tears from sorrow?…
Is it from hated?…
Or could it be from pleasure?…
I don't know already…
Yukino's falling into the intense pleasure of sex again…!

「…Let's do it more…」

Tamayo-san inserts an anal vibrator to Yukino's anus…!

「…Agaaaa!」

Yukino faints in agony!

「It's your first time in double penetration isn't it?…Okay, switch on!」

The anal vibrator vibrates in Yukino's anus violently…!
The quick and short vibrations is transmitted to my penis…!

「…Afu! Die! I'm! Dying again!!…Aaaah!」

…Aah…
…Yukino who's writhing when violated is really cute.
It's impossible for me to have normal sex with Yukino.
…I don't want to.
I just want to rape Yukino.
Again and again, even dozens of times…
Rape, violate, ravish her completely…!
…Yukino!

I approached Yukino while raping her.
We're this much close…!

「…I'm dying!! Aaahn! Noooo! I'm becoming useleeeees!!!」

Yukino's never looking at me when I violate her.
Even if I enter her eyes…she won't recognize me.
For Yukino, I'm the same as a vibrator.
I'm just a vibrator that would impregnate Yukino…!

「…Yukino!…Yukino!…Yukinooooooooo!!!!」
「…Aaaaah…It feels good…It feels good being violated…!!!」

Yukino's mind is no longer here…

Yukino reached climax three times…
Yukino's vagina that was teased badly has become very loose…
Yukino's womb is lowering, seeking sperm due to the『Fertility drug』
It's prepared to get pregnant…
Confirming that…I ejaculated with my all.

Byurururu…byururu…byurururururu…!
Hot liquid is spreading through the interior of Yukino's womb!

「…Aaaaaah! The hot stuff came iiin! It's drinkning it! My pussy is drinking it!!!!!」

The womb swallows the hot semen.
I can tell that it's gulping it in…!

「…It feels good! It feels good! It feels goooood!」

Yukino had forgotten her fear of pregnancy from the pleasure of impregnation…
All of her feelings were blown off…she only indulge herself on the pleasure of sex.
This woman is no more.
The pleasure of abnormal sex would be engraved to her core.
Yukino can no longer return to a normal girl.

「…haaaaa…aaaa…Good…it feels goood…!」

I released my last drop inside Yukino.

It’s 100% definite that Shirasaka Yukino is pregnant.

---

1. My penis is the penis that will pierce the heavens! ↩
2. These are just all sound effects ↩

69. Pregnancy party

「Ah, wait…let me take a photo!」

Katsuko-nee took a photo of me and Yukino still connected.
Yukino's…just absentminded.

「It's okay now, you can pull out…!」

Hearing Katsuko-nee's voice, I pulled out my penis from Yukino…!
The vagina that accepted two ejaculations…drips white liquid thickly…
Katsuko-nee also took a photo of that state
…I
I stare at the woman I violated…
The sperm entering the ovum inside Yukino's womb…
I realized what I have done again.
The sense of reality I haven't felt so far suddenly attacked me.

I'm going to become a father?
Is that okay for me?

「Ojou-sama, I've finished recording!」
「…Please put Shirasaka-san down」
「Okay!」

Katsuko-nee puts down the camera and went to the control panel…
The iron chain hanging Yukino is lowered…
Yukino's body fall down along with the mechanical sounds.
She sat down on the floor weakly.

「…Remove the leather handcuffs」
「Okaaay～!」

With Sensei's order, Nagisa-san and Tamayo-san holds Yukino.
Nei-san removes the cuffs on Yukino's wrist and ankle…

「…Congratulations, Yukino-chan!」
「…Un, Congrats!」

The two ladies told Yukino really gladly.

「…Eh?」

A gentle smile so different from their atmosphere until now.
Yukino doesn't understand the change of the ladies.
She's just frightened…

「I'll give you a kiss!」

Tamayo-san kissed Yukino's lips.

「Ah, me too!」

Nagisa-san kissed Yukino's cheeks.
Yukino looks up at the ladies flustered.
It's not just Tamayo-san and Nagisa-san…
Yuuka-san, Hidemi-san too…and even Yuzuki-sensei are smiling peacefully at Yukino…!

「Welcome to 『Kuromori Tower』! You're our companion now too!」

Tamayo-san reported to Yukino with a smile

「…I'm…a companion?」
「That's right. Yukino-chan experienced the same hell as us. You're already our companion. You're a member of this mansion…!」

Nagisa-san told Yukino brightly.

「…Don't worry, we won't tell you to take in guests」

Sensei also speaks to Yukino with a refreshed face.

「The prostitutes of the mansion have a rule where they retire when they get pregnant…that's why you will retire without taking any guests」
「…Think about your birth in the future!」
「You can ask us about anything if you're worried about anything」

Hidemi-san and Yuuka-san is being gentle to Yukino as if the people

from a while a go are different people…!
Yukino's confused with the change of the ladies…!
Of course, me too…!

「You can give birth at Australia or Hawaiian hospital. Shirasaka-san will decide which one you want…Katsuko, hand over the documents」
「Okay…I'll send over the pamphlet later!」

Birth…abroad…
The talk's getting even more realistic that it doesn't get it my head.
I'll have a child.
Yukino's going to give birth to my child?
My back felt shivers suddenly…
I haven't thought about it deeply so far.
My life's already helpless so…I thought whatever will be, will be.
I kept ejaculating inside Yukino without thinking about anything.
Of course…I know that a child could be made from it.
But…I always thought that it's not real, that it's an image of a white paper crumpled.
That's why…I was able to do horrible things to Yukino.
But, now that Yukino's pregnancy is reported to be fixed…

…I shiver.

My head is boiling.
Someone like me…
Is it okay for someone like me to become a father…?
I…

「I went to Hawaii when I got pregnant! Hawaii has a clinic that's specific to childbirth. I gave birth there. It was the best. The climate's good, and the nurses understand Japanese too. The meals are delicious too…Also, when you give birth to a child in Hawaii, it'll be accepted as an American citizen…!」

Nagisa-san explains to Yukino with a smile.

「My, I was in Australia but, it's good there too! The doctors are Japanese. It's a branch Japanese Hospital. It's also exclusive for wealthy too. You don't have to worry about your childbirth!」

Tamayo-san talks to Yukino happily
Yukino's making a face not knowing what they are saying, she's just in blank surprise.

「Shirasaka-ssan…It's the end of April so your expected birth will be on February. That's why try not to be absent in class as much as possible. You won't be able to attend on the third semester after all. But, if you do well, then you can be promoted to second year…!」

Sensei told Yukino happily.

「I said it a while ago but it's fine as long as you give birth. I'll be the one to raise the child. It'll be good-bye after your childbirth. You don't need to see us anymore. Go to some far-off town…」

Sensei's eyes shine mysteriously.

「…But, you'll be with us for the coming ten months. I won't remove the tattoo until you finish your delivery. We'll be holding the videos and photos we took until now. I'll hand it to you in exchange for the baby」

Yukino…opened her mouth calmly.

「…Why? Why are you doing this to me…?」

Yukino's mind is confused.

「I…don't want to bear a child. A child of a man I don't like…!」

Yukino holds her own stomach…

「Why…What did I say…I…Yukino…didn't do anything bad…!」

Sensei answered the crying Yukino.

「Oh right…I haven't told Shirasaka-san yet…You see…your father…Shirasaka Sousuke made me unable to bear a child anymore…!」

Yukino raised her face suddenly…
Sensei smiled sadly.

「…When I told you that my body could not give birth for the second time…it wasn't a lie. It's true. Look at this…!」

Sensei begins to take off her black clothes…
Nagisa-san who's nearby helped undressing.
Sensei shows the big wound in her stomach in front of Yukino.

「Isn't horrible? Your father did this…!」

Sensei approaches Yukino…
「Hii」Yukino tries to evade but Tamayo-san holds her from behind…
Yuzuki-sensei takes Yukino's right hand.
Then made her touch her own scar.

「…Look…It's a genuine wound isn't it?」

Sensei also touches Yukino's stomach.

「In exchange of my disabled womb, I'll make Shirasaka's daughter conceive… It can't be helped. Shirasaka Sousuke doesn't have a womb. You can endure for ten months in exchange of your beloved father, do you…?」

Yukino can't answer Sensei.
Yuzuki-sensei continued gently caressing Yukino's stomach…

「My baby's growing inside here…take care of it, Shirasaka-san」

Sensei smiled to Yukino…
Yukino's just frightened…

「Now…Let's go back to the lower room! Let's all congratulate Yukino-chan's pregnancy!」

Katsuko-nee called out everyone with a loud voice.

◇ ◇ ◇

All members sit around the table.
For some reason, the ladies stayed in their bondage costumes.
It's as if it's the official clothes of the 『Women of the mansion』…

Yukino's still wearing her wedding dress. The veil is the same.
Her mind must still be stunned…The breasts that came out when I lowered her dress is still exposed.

「Yukino-chan's the leading lady so sit here!」

Nagisa-san made Yukino sit on the center of the table.

「We made a cake together! This is for Yukino-sama!」

Katsuko-nee brought out the cake.
It's the cake we made earlier.
What's written on top of the cake is…
『Shirasaka-san, congratulations on getting pregnant!』

「Congratulations Yukino-chan!」
「Congratulations on getting pregnant!」

The ladies blessed Yukino once again…

「I'll distribute the tea!」
「Ah, Katsuko-chan, I want wine!」
「Shouldn't we open a champagne?」
「That's good…Minaho-san, is that okay?」
「Let's open both. Katsuko…bring a good bottle suitable for Shirasaka-san's celebration」
「Got it! We'll open vintages!」

Katsuko-nee comes out…

「Then…Just say if you want some tea」

Megumi stands up and serves tea.

「Ah, Misuzu will help too…!」

The two young ladies distributes the tea.

…What are they thinking?
About me impregnating Yukino.
The two look sad but they don't look glad…they just continued working indifferently.

Nei-san is sipping tea with a gloomy face on the endmost of the table…
Margo-san is chatting with the ladies calmly.
The only ones looking down while sitting are…Yukino, Nei-san and me.

「Here you go! I brought the wine and champagne!」

Katsuko-nee returned panting.
She goes next to Yukino immediately…!

「Then, I think that Shirasaka Yukino-san who's our new companion should open it in celebration of her pregnancy!」

Katsuko-nee loosens the mouth of the champagne…

「Yukino-sama, please hold the bottom of the bottle!」
「…What?」

Yukino who's suddenly talked has her mind still not catching up.

「Hurry up…Hurry up!」
「…Ah, Yes」

Being pushed vigorously by Katsuko-nee, Yukino holds the champagne with both hands.

「…Soon, it's about to come!」

Katsuko-nee loosen the mouth even more…
…Then

…Pop!

The champagne's cork flew to the sky!

「…Congrats!」
「…Congratulations on getting pregnant!」

The ladies shouted their joy all at once!
Yukino's pregnancy party…begins.
The ladies talks to Yukino smiling bright.

They talk about their own delivery happily.
Yukino just listens…not knowing what to do.
Megumi's drinking tea calmly
Misuzu and Nei-san…

「Hey, you two…you don't drink the champagne like that!」

Margo-san's warning them…

「It's fine! Leave me alone Maru-chan!」
「That's right. Please leave Misuzu alone!」

The two of them gulped down another cup…
…Are they okay?
Well, Nei-san and Misuzu feels that they can hold liquor just fine…

…Gachari

Suddenly, the door opened…?

「Ah, they're having a party!」

Entering pitter-patter…is Nagisa-san's daughter, Mao-chan.
The butler, Morimoto-san comes from behind too.

「My, Mao…What's wrong?」

Nagisa-san stands from her seat to meet Mao-chan.

「…Mama!」

Mao-chan embraces her mother…

「She took a nap a while ago but…when she woke up she said that she wants to see her mother」
「…Sorry for causing you trouble. Morimoto-san」
「Take a seat too, Morimoto-san」

Yuuka-san calls out Morimoto-san.

「No, I'm a servant of this mansion…」
「I don't mind…it's a festive gathering」

Yuzuki-sensei told Morimoto-san.

「…Mao-chan, we got a cake!」
「Eh, Cake?」

Mao-chan smiled when she heard Katsuko-nee's words.

「Right. Let's cut the cake already」
「Sure sure! Katsuko will be cutting so please pass plates on everyone」
「Ah, I'll do it!」

Megumi takes the lead to help…
Misuzu is still drinking champagne.

「Hey hey…Why do we have a huge cake?」

Mao-chan asks Katsuko-nee

「It's a celebration!」
「…Celebration?」
「It's a celebration for Yukino-chan's pregnancy!」

Nagisa-san told her daughter.

「…Pregnant?」
「It means that she's able to make a child!」

Mao-chan smiled when she heard her mother's words!

「…Wooow! Amazing!」
「That's right, it's very amazing. Mao-chan, congratulate Yukino-chan!」
「Where's Yukino-chan?」
「This onee-san」

Nagisa-san shows Yukino.
Mao-chan walks pitter-patter before Yukino…

「Yukino-chan…congatulations!」

Yukino's surprised at the cute little girl appearing suddenly.

「It's my daughter…She's Mao.」
「Hello…I'm Mao!」

Mao-chan introduced herself to Yukino.

「…Ah, H-Hello」

Yukino looks at Mao-chan while confused.

「This is my child…I got pregnant with her in this mansion. Her father's unknown. I don't want to look for it. It's enough to know that it was someone from my guests…」

Yukino's startled from Nagisa-san's words.
Mao-chan doesn't understand what they're talking about…she's just smiling.

「Yuuka-san, Hidemi-san, and Tamayo-san too. They were brought here by Shirasaka Sousuke forcibly, was made to sell themselves, and gave birth to a child whom father they don't know of. It's the same as you…」

Nagisa-san laughs sadly.

「Okaaay, Mao-chan, here's your cake!」

Katsuko-nee brings a saucer with a cake to Mao-chan.

「Yaaay! It's cake! Cake!…Katsuko-mama's cake is delicious so I love it!」
「…Thank you Mao-chan. I'll give you even more if you're a good girl」
「Okaay!」

Mao-chan bites into the cake while smiling…!

「Isn't she cute?…I was 18 when I got pregnant.」 I was scared about giving birth, worried about everything. Will the child born be loved or not…I was troubled every night. I was asking what should I do if I can't come to love the child I give birth to…!」

Unintended pregnancy.

A child whos father you don't know.
Can it be loved…can you raise it?
Nagisa-san must have been worried.

「But you see…When I gave birth to her, those worries were meaningless. It's a child I delivered from my own womb, it's obvious that I love her. It's my child. I still am glad that I gave birth to her…!」

Nagisa-san's words sinks into Yukino's mind…

「Because of Shirasaka Sousuke, my life has been ruined but I'm living with Mao right now. I'll do anything for Mao. This child gives me courage for everyday…!」

Nagisa-san, looks at her daughter with eyes of affection…tears collect in her eyes.

「…Mama, what's wrong?」

Mao-chan looks up at Nagisa-san while eating up her cake.

「It's nothing…It's just that Mama loves Mao!」
「Mao also loves Mama!」

Mao-chan opened her mouth wide and filled her mouth with a cake. She laughed satisfied…!

「Isn't it good for you?…You know who's the Papa of your child, and he won't do anything groundless. He won't abandon the child you give birth to」

Nagisa-san looks at me.
…I

「We'll be with you…All of us will raise the born child. Everyone will love the child and will definitely make the child happy!」

That's…the decision of the ladies…

「Mao…Who's this person?」

Nagisa-san points at Katsuko-nee

「…Katsuko-Mama!」
「This one?」
「…Yuuka-Mama!」
「This one?」
「…Hidemi-Mama!」
「This person?」
「…Tamayo-Mama!」

For Mao-chan, everyone's her Mama.
The women of the mansion all cooperates and raises the child…!

「…When you give birth to a child, You'll also be called 『Yukino-Mama』」

Nagisa-san told Yukino.

「…Hey hey, Yukino-chan!」

Mao-chan approaches Yukino…

「Are you going to give birth soon?」
「It'll be ahead of time…it'll be after next year」

Katsuko-nee taught Mao-chan

「Eh? Can we hasten it up?」
「No no…Yukino-chan's stomach will grow big slowly, and will give birth to a healthy child…!」

Mao-chan got interested in Yukino's stomach due to Nagisa-san's words…

「Hey hey, Yukino-chan…!」
「…What?」

Yukino answered in a low voice.

「Can I touch your stomach?」

Yukino thought for a while, then answered.

「…Go on」

She rolled the hem of her wedding dress and showed her stomach by her own…
Mao-chan's small hand touches the stomach of the 16 year old Yukino…

「There's a child there right now…」

Nagisa-san taught her daughter.

「…Around here?」
「There's a green letter in that you see?…Down there」

Mao-chan pats the 『Yoshida』 tattoo on Yukino's abdomen…!

「Baby, get born sooner! Let's play together! Mao will give you her toys! That's why get along with Mao!」

Yukino spilled tears.

「Yukino-chan…what's wrong?」
「It's okay. Yukino-chan got happy when she heard Mao-chan say that she wants to get along with the baby…」

Margo-san told Mao-chan.

「Mao won't be fighting…I'll get along. That's why, get born sooner!」

Mao-chan rubs her cheeks on Yukino's stomach…

「Hey hey, Yukino-chan…Have you decided on the name of the child?」

Mao-chan asks Yukino.

「…Eh?」

Yukino can't answer.

「If not yet, then Mao can think about it…?」

Mao-chan looks up at Yukino with a smile.
…The child's name.
Yukino stiffens from the too realistic question given by the little girl…
…Me too

「The name of the child is already decided…!」

Yuzuki-sensei spoke clearly.

「Ueee! Yuzuki-sensei will be the one deciding?」

Mao-chan told Sensei

「That's right…is it no good?」
「…Well」

The young girl who was almost named 『Inoshishi』 before seems to be doubting Sensei's naming sense…

「The name of Shirasaka-san's child will be 『Naomi』…!」

…That means?

「That's right…It's the name of my little sister that was killed by Shirasaka Sousuke. The born child will us my little sister's name…!」

Sensei declared in front of everyone…

◇ ◇ ◇

The party continued with a peaceful atmosphere afterwards.
The ladies and Mao-chan surrounds Yukino and talks lightheartedly.
Yuzuki-sensei and Margo-san is drinking wine while talking.
Nei-san with a dark atmosphere is talking to Megumi-san.
And…

「…Danna-sama, please come with me!」

Misuzu who's face completely reddened from the champagne calls me over.

「…Eh, What's wrong?」
「…Misuzu's about to pee!」
「…What?」

The drunk Misuzu is angry at me!

「Geez! When Misuzu's about to pee Danna-sama has to Shishi!」

…Eeeh?

「Isn't it the Owner's responsibility to take care of the pet?!」

…Ah, yes.
…G-Got it.

I took the drunk Misuzu to the bathroom…
The restrooms of the mansion are somewhat larger than the normal restroom
There's hand-bars here and there…
I guess they're doing sex plays here too.
Speaking of which, I watched Yukino pee during our first day here…

「…Danna-sama, please strip me!」

Misuzu stands before the toilet…
She's making the same appearance the long time before I raped Yukino.
In short, she's wearing only collar and a small bikini on top…and diaper down below.
I removed her diaper.
Misuzu's cute hairless pubis appears…
Misuzu makes a big M legs and sat down on the toilet…

「Danna-sama, can you see it?」

Misuzu's cute slit hasn't been used more than twice…

「Can you see Misuzu's embarrassing place?」

I swallowed my saliva.
In front of Misuzu who's sitting down in the toilet, I crouch down.

Misuzu's naked crotch is in front of me.

「Yeah…I can see it」

Misuzu smiled at me…

「Danna-sama…Misuzu is Danna-sama's cute pet. A shameless vulgar pet. Can Misuzu pee while being watchjed by Danna-sama…?」
「…Yeah, go on」

Water drips from Misuzu's crotch.

「Ah…It's coming out! Misuzu is being watched by Danna-sama while peeing!」

Hot water spills out from her slit…!
She drank too much liquor.
Misuzu's pee smells like alcohol's amonia…

「Ufufu…Looook…Danna-sama, please take a look at Misuzu moreee…!!」
「…I'm looking…I'm watching you…!」

I've witnessed girls pee several times so far but…
It's my first time seeing the pee come out of the slit this clearly.
Women are amazing.
Their pee comes out from such a place even though they don't have dicks.
Before long…Misuzu finished urinating.

「…Thank you very much」
「…Y-Yeah」

I met Misuzu's eyes…

「Danna-sama…kiss me」

I kissed Misuzu's lips;
There's an expensive smell of champagne in Misuzu's mouth
When we finished kissing…Misuzu smiled at me.

「…You finally looked at Misuzu!」

Saying that, Misuzu embraces me…!

「Geez…don't do sex like that anymore…!」

Misuzu whispered in my ears… !

「…Eh?」
「When Danna-sama is having sex with that woman…you look very sad. It's so lonely, painful, and agonizing…and still you continue to have sex forcibly」
「…Is that so?」

I don't know

「Yes. Danna-sama will never be happy when you have sex with that woman」

…That might be the case.
When I have sex with Misuzu, Katsuko-nee or Nagisa-san…It's getting even hotter, and it'll end with gentle feeling…
But sex with Yukino…always ends with dark feelings.

「I…am not jealous of the 『Safe Blanket』 Misuzu will be servicing Danna-sama with Misuzu's mind and body!」

…Misuzu?

「Danna-sama…please strip off」
「…Err, Misuzu?」
「Danna-sama…you still have that woman's juice don't you? Misuzu will clean it upo with her mouth!」

Misuzu smiled gently.
Those lovely lips…!

I stand in front of Misuzu who's sitting on the toilet…and took out my penis.
My penis is lightly erect.

「…I'll be cleaning it」

Misuzu took it in her mouth.
She licks it.
She sucked the glans.
Yukino's love nectar that got stuck to me is being carefully taken out…
Her tongue crawled on my balls and in between the pubic hair.
Her tongue and lips washes my glans and cleans it…

I got erect immediately.
Completely erect…My penis points out to heaven in front of Misuzu.

「Danna-sama…you feel like having sex…?」

Misuzu said while patting my balls…

「…Yeah」
「…You want to ejaculate a lot?」
「Un…I want it so much」

Misuzu stands from the toilet and told me.

「Then…let's go to Megumi-san…!」

…Misuzu?

「You want to have sex with Megumi-san?」

Misuzu whispers to me…

「I do…but」
「Megumi-san's waiting you know?」

…Eh?

「Hurry up and call Megumi-san…!」

Misuzu opens the door…
Me who's naked down was taken outside…!
Misuzu pulls my hand while my erect penis is still exposed and we came back to the party hall…
The door opened…

Then the noisy room becomes silent in a dash…!

「…Uwaa, Yoshida-kun's penis is big!」

Mao-chan say while looking up at my erection.

「hii!」

And Yukino's the only one raising a surprised voice.
The ladies and Margo-san looks at me and Misuzu interestingly…
Nei-san's just surprised.
Sensei's looking at us like usual…
Misuzu then brought me in front of Megumi…!

「Megumi-san…Danna-sama's got a request for you!」

Misuzu told Megumi
Megumi who's surprised from my exposed penis…breathes in

…I

I don't have anything else to do…

「…Megumi!」
「…W-What?!」

Megumi loks at me…!
It's already desperate…!

「Megumi, have sex with me right now! I want to embrace your body! I want to break Megumi's virginity and ejaculate inside! I want to make Megumi my woman!」

I just throw out what I thought from the bottom of my heart…
Tears spilled from Megumi's eyes

Is she afraid as expected?
Of course…I suddenly said that with my penis exposed…

…But
Megumi said

「…If you're okay with me, please embrace me…!」
…Megumi?

「…Please make me a woman!」

♡

◇ Megumi’s first experience Arc

70. Happy first experience!

「Misuzu-san…please watch my first experience…!」

Megumi told Misuzu.
Misuzu smiled…

「I didn't have any regret when I lost my virginity.」 Danna-sama's so gentle, Nagisa-sama watched over me, Misuzu was happy. …
But」

Misuzu pushed my back
I…was made to embrace Megumi…

「…I thought that you two needed to be alone for Megumi-san's first experience」

…Misuzu?

「Megumi-san, please experience what Misuzu wasn't able to…!」

Nagisa-san spoke to us in a loud voice.

「That's right! Misuzu's right! Megumi-chan, please do a wonderful first experience we weren't able to experience!」
「…Un! Make a wonderful memory for us!」

Katsuko-nee told Megumi…
Megumi faced Yuzuki-sensei…

「Minaho-san…is the room where Mama and I lived in still fine?」

The room where Megumi lived during her childhood.

「Yes…it's still there」

Sensei answered.

「The surveillance camera is still on that room?」
「There are more higher-performance cameras installed than the old days…a lot of prostitutes used that room after Keiko-san after

all」
「Then…I want my first experience in that room. I want everyone to take a look at me losing my virginity」

She wants to broadcast her loss of virginity?

「…We'll record it」

Sensei answered.

「Please. I will become a woman while everyone watches over me…!」

Megumi's decision is firm.

「Hey hey!～ What will that onee-chan show us?」

Mao-chan asks Nagisa-san

「It's a time in a girl's lifetime where you must do your very best. Megum onee-chan will do her best with Yoshida-kun! Mama and Mao will cheer for Megumi onee-chan from here!」

Mao-chan nodded big at Nagisa-san's explanation.

「…Megumi onee-chan, do your best!」

Nagisa-san…do you intend to show it to Mao-chan?!
…I-Is that okay? As an education?
Well, there's no better sex education than this.

「Nei…Megumi-san beat you to it」

Margo-san told Nei-san laughingly

「…Shut up. I'll lose my virginity soon! I'll do it…leave me alone!」

Nei-san drinks her champagne in frustration…!

「…Katsuko, guide them to the room. I'll ask you to record it too」
「Yes. Ojou-sama…Then, let's go」
「…Megumi-san, be happy」

Misuzu told Megumi.

「Yes…Thank you very much. Misuzu-san」

Megumi bowed to Misuzu deeply.

「Danna-sama…make her feel good」

Saying that, Misuzu kneels and kissed my erect glans.

「…Don't hurt Megumi-san that much!」

She talked to my penis…!

「…Cheers for Megumi-san's wonderful virginity loss!」

Yuuka-san raised her wineglass…!
Yukino is…
Yukino who's still wearing a wedding dress looks at us with a complicated expression…

◇ ◇ ◇

「Please wait a moment… I'll be taking pictures first[1]!」

I was made to wait outside the door…Megumi and Katsuko-nee entered the room.
They're taking photos of the naked body of the virgin Megumi.
Of course, her genital and hymen are being photographed too…
Megumi feels shy being seen by me so she said「I want you to wait outside」
「We'll be alone later so you can take a look as much as you want…」
With that said…I wait for a while
It feels strange.
I'm being made to wait in the corridor though I'm going to have sex with a virgin girl later.
After a few minutes of wait, Katsuko-nee came out of the room.

「Thank you for waiting! You can come in」
「…Okay」

Katsuko-nee kisses my lips…

「Be gentle and love her a lot…don't do absurd things!」
「Yeah…got it」
「Everyone will be watching in the hall so do your best!」

Saying that…Katsuko-nee pushed me to the room.
…The door closes.
On top of the bed is Megumi only wearing a white bathrobe.
She's wearing the green collar on her neck…
Outside the window is the evening glow…

「The sky's beautiful…!」
「Yup…This window wasn't here when I lived here」
「…Is that so?」
「They might be able to run away from the window or ask for help…That's why the prostitute rooms had no window ten years ago when I was in this room」
「…Is that so?」

We watched the sunset for a while…
Then…

「Yoshida-kun…close the curtains」
「…eh?」
「I want to be embraced under the bright light room by you Just like my mother…」

I see…
Nagisa-san shows Mao-chan our sex as if it's natural because…
Megumi also has been watching since childhood too…!
Her mother having sex with a guest…
Almost every night…!

I closed the curtains.
The lights remained on.
Megumi…sat straight on the bed with her bathrobe on.
And she bowed to me…

「…Megumi will become Yoshida-kun's woman. I may be inexperienced but please love me from now on…!」

It's as if she's a newlywed bride on the wedding night.
…I

「No…you see…Uhm…」

That's the only thing I can answer.
Megumi looked up at me…then

「…Err, what should I do now?」
「…Eh?」

Megumi's face is bright red.

「I've been watching sex since I was six years old… I saw it in the bathroom from a while ago but…I don't really know what should I do after this…!」

…Megumi

「Err…should I take it off myself? Or should I make Yoshida-kun undress me?」

Megumi stands up from the bed and approaches me.
I…adore that kind of Megumi.
I instinctively embraced Megumi's slim body…

「…Yoshida-kun?」
「Just calm down. If you don't know what to do then we should just kiss」
「…Un, that's right…Got it」

Megumi closes her eyes…
I pile my lip to hers…!
I can feel Megumi's heartbeat while we embrace each other.

「Megumi's heart is beating so fast…」
「Of course it will…it's my first time after all…!」

Megumi's eyes are already moist.

「…Are you okay with me?」

I'm a helpless man.
Megumi nodded lightly…

「Yoshida-kun…You see…I always thought when my mother died that 『I want someone to be with me』…」

Megumi rubs her cheeks to mine…

「But you see…after coming to this mansion and hearing Yoshida-kun's story…I」
「…Un」
「I thought 『I want to be on his side』…!」

Megumi looks at me…

「Is it okay for me to stay with you?」
「…That's…saying that you want to be with me…!」

…She won't be happy.

「…I want to make you happy」

…Eh?

「I love you…Yoshida-kun」

This time, Megumi kisses me…

「…Hey…What should I do next?」

My penis reacted to Megumi's bashful words…

「…I want to see Megumi naked」
「…Okay. Look…please take a look」

I took off Megumi's bathrobe.
Megumi's healthy and slim limbs became exposed…

「Sorry for having small breasts…」

Seriously, why do you and Misuzu mind it?

「You see…I heard it from my friend that it gets bigger if you do

lewd things everyday. That's why…Yoshida-kun, do me everyday」
「Yeah…I will. I'll make it big」
「It's a promise…You can touch it」

I touch Megumi's breasts.
It's smaller than Misuzu, but…It's very lovely and shaped well.
The tension of her skin is different from others.
Her skin is thick, strained and smooth.
Do sports girls have different constitution?

「…Can I lick it?」
「…Eh?」
「I want to lick Megumi's breasts」

Megumi answered with a red face while still confused.

「Un…go on」

I stand on my knees…
And lick Megumi's virgin nipple…!

「Naa…!」

Megumi raised a voice…

「…What's wrong?」
「It just tickled me」

I sucked Megumi's nipple even more.

「Aaaahn…Yoshida-kun, you're like a baby…so cute…!」
「Babies won't do this though?」

I rolled my tongue on Megumi's nipple…!

「Hyaaan…Ah, ah…It feels strange…!」

It seems that it's true that girls with smaller breasts are sensitive.
Her nipples are already standing…
I also stir her other nipple…

「Hey…Yoshida-kun」

「…What's wrong?」
「Can I lick it too?」
「…Eh?」
「I have to lick Yoshida-kun's penis don't I?」

…Megumi

「…You can do it next time」
「Eh…Isn't it necessary to lick it first before having sex?」
「…Where did you hear that?」
「My senpai at the club said that the penis must be wet with saliva or else it would hurt when you put it in」

I embraced Megumi.

「That's a lie…Megumi, there's no need for it to be wet」
「…But」
「It's fine next time but not now」
「…Got it」
「Should we go to the bed?」
「…Right」

I made the naked Megumi lie down on the bed.
I took off my clothes too.
My erection is already diamonds

「…Amazing. That big thing will go inside me…!」

Megumi says while looking at my penis.

「It entered Katsuko-san and Misuzu-san…It'll enter me too」
「Un…It's going to come in」
「…Can I touch it?」
「…Go on」

I lay down next to Megumi.
Megumi sat down and reached for my penis…

「Ah…It's warm. It's twitching…!」

Her white thin fingers touch my glans…

「…It's shaped strangely isn't it?」
「I don't know…I've never seen anything but Yoshida-kun's…!」

Megumi wraps my penis with both her hands.

「…I will never see anything but Yoshida-kun's for my entire life」

Megumi caresses my penis gently.

「…It feels good!」
「Really?…Then I'll touch it everyday…!」

Megumi happily said.
Looking up at the ceiling…I discovered the locations of the camera.

「Megumi…Everyone's watching us right now」

Everyone's watching our state in the hall.
Sensei, the three ladies, Katsuko-nee, Nagisa-san…
Margo-san, Nei-san, Misuzu and Mao-chan too…
And, Yukino…!

「…That doesn't matter!」

Megumi smiled.

「I only see Yoshida-kun…」

…Megumi
I instinctively kissed Megumi…
Megumi lied down and I bent over my body…

「Hey…Is it true that men usually get erect even if they're at school?」

Megumi asked while looking up at me

「Un…sometimes」
「You see, my senpai in club…uses her mouth during lunch break when her boyfriend can't endure it…」

Megumi is unexpectedly a girl with lot of superficial knowledge

about sex.

「Yoshida-kun…tell me when you can't endure it. Ah, I have to look for a place where we can do lewd things in the campus first」
「…It's fine. Megumi hates doing that, don't you?」
「I want to do anything for Yoshida-kun!」

I kissed Megumi's lips…then licked the back of her ear to her nape.

「…Iyaan~…It tickles!」

Then, I enjoyed Megumi's breasts once again…
Facing upwards, Megumi's chest became really thin.
But, when I touched it with my hands…I can feel it squishy.
I sucked her pink nipples

「I love Megumi's breasts」
「I'll give my whole body to Yoshida-kun…Not just my breasts …!」

Megumi told me with a soft smile…
My tongue descends from her breasts…
Misuzu's stomach muscle is so amazingly soft but…
Misuzu's stomach is firm.
Her skin's smooth.
I licked her cute navel…

「Don't lick that place」

Megumi's embarrassed…

「I'll be licking more embarrassing places you know…」
「…Eh?」
「Megumi…Open your legs」
「Uhm…Yoshida-kun…Do I really have to show it?」
「…Yup」
「Un…Got it…」

Megumi opens her legs while having a red embarrassed face.

「…Open it wider…wider」
「Aaahn…So embarrassing…!」

「You're cute, Megumi」
「I will never show this to any other man but Yoshida-kun…」

Megumi's genital shows up…
Her pubic hair is thin.
On the bottom is a straight slit as if it was cut by a knife…
There's love nectar oozing out…
Megumi's slit is perfectly closed.

「Is it strange?」
「It's not. It's very beautiful」
「…Thank you, Yoshida-kun…!」

Megumi's vagina is really beautiful.
It's a flawless virgin soil that's not yet touched…

「…You see…I've never touched it myself」

Megumi confessed while blushing…

「My friend told me that it'll feel good when you feel naughty but…I've never done it」
「…Why?」
「Because…I'm just living in the Yamamine house. Even my room is just borrowed so I feel guilty doing lewd things in such a place…」
「…Megumi」
「I won't do it from now on either…I'll have Yoshida-kun when I feel naughty. …Is that fine?」
「Got it…I won't make Megumi masturbate. In exchange…」
「…What would you do?」
「Megumi…do you also feel naughty when you're at school?」
「……Eh?」
「Do you?」
「Hmm…When taking shower after the club activities. I feel that sometimes…!」
「At that time…!」
「…Got it. I'll ask Yoshida-kun to 『do lewd things』」
「…Un」
「You see…I want to be violated in the school's shower…」
「…Megumi?」

「Then…I want to do lewd things in the track and field clubroom…!」

Megumi's aroused. Her breathing is rough.
Her eyes are moist.

「Sorry…I'm a lewd girl」
「…You can be lewder」
「But…it's only for Yoshida-kun. No one but Yoshida-kun. I want to be ravished by Yoshida-kun…!」
「Got it…I will. I'll do anything Megumi-wants」
「Thank you…I'll also do anything. Yoshida-kun can do anything he wants to do with my body…!」
「…Yeah」

I opened Megumi's slit with my fingers.
Her love nectar drips down immediately.

「…Embarrassing…it's embarrassing!」
「…I'll lick it」
「Eh?」
「It'll hurt unless I lick and soften it」
「Un…Got it. Do it…!」

I put my tongue inside her slit and licked it…!
I feel the sour taste of Megumi's love nectar in my tongue.

「…Aaah! Don't! Don't!!」

Is it embarrassment or defense instinct?…Megumi's holding my head with both her hands
But…I didn't stop moving my tongue…!

「…Haaaaan!…Iyan!…What's this?!…Yoshida-kun's tongue…feels good!」

The love nectar increases from the stimulation of the tongue…
Still, her slit's not opening.
I exposed her clitoris.

「…Hyaaan?! What?」
「You don't know? It's your clitoris…?!」

「…I've never heard about it」
「It's the most sensitive spot in Megumi's body…!」

My tongue pecks her clitoris.

「…Hiii! Ah…Ah, aaaaahn!」

I lick up her clitoris!

「Amazing…this…ah, aaahn!」
「…Feels good?」
「…It feels gooood!」
「Then, I'll lick it up more…!」

I use my tongue to lick it up…!

「…aaaa, aaaaah, aaaaaaaahh!!!」

Megumi's slim body twitched…!
She, she afraid of pleasure? Her body's moving away from my tongue though…
I gripped Megumi's waist to not let it go away.

「…Haa! Ah! Aaaaaaahn! It feels gooood!」

Megumi shook her head.

「Yoshida-kun…Please…do this to Megumi everyday! Lick Megumi's embarrassing place everyday!」
「…Okay, I'll do it」
「Aaah…I'm glad! Ah…Ah…It feels strange…I feel my body floating…!」

Megumi who doesn't know the pleasure of masturbation is reaching her first climax right now…
I speed up my tongue's movement…!
I lick up her clitoris then suck it…!

「Aaaaahn!…I'm flying somewhere!…I'm scared! I'm scared! Don't leave me alone…!」
「I'm here, I'll stay with Megumi…!」

I hold Megumi's hand.
Megumi gripped her hard…
It's the last spurt…!
I continued attacking the clitoris with my tongue intensely…!

「Aaaahn! Aaaaah…! Hiihiii…Good!!! It feels goood! Stay here, please, please stay with Megumiiiii…!!!」
「I'm here…I'll stay with you…!」

Megumi's body is sweating damply.
Her skin's flushed.
Megumi's going to fly soon…!

「…Uaaaaaaaaaaa!!!」

Megumi exclaimed…and finished…!
Her whole body kept convulsing…!
Her love nectar's overflowing…

「Haa, haa, haa, haa…!」

Megumi continued her hot breathing…

「…What happened to me?」

Megumi's in tears…

「Megumi came. That's the feeling of cumming」
「…What should I do?」

Megumi cries…

「My body is turning to something that can't live without Yoshida-kun!」

I embraced Megumi's body.
I kissed her.

「…We're going to be together forever aren't we?」
「We will…We'll stay forever…I won't let go!」

I let Megumi touch my erect penis.

「Megumi…the real sex is just about to begin.」
「U-Un…that's right. Hurry…Hurry and ravish me. Make me yours…!」

Megumi's face is burning in passion…
The quiet and gentle girl…
Has this much desire for sex…

「…Megumi's a lewd girl」
「That's right! I'm a lewd girl! But I'm only lewd for Yoshida-kun… Megumi won't show her lewdness to anyone but Yoshida-kun… that's why…!」
「…That's why?」
「…Please take Megumi's virginity!」

…Megumi!
…How cute!
I looked into Megumi's slit once again.
Her slit's opened a bit.

「…Can I peep inside Megumi's pussy?」
「…Un. Look」

I opened her slit and observed her genital.

「…How is it?」

Megumi asks anxiously.

「…What?」
「Is my hymen there?」
「…Eh?」
「Look, isn't it said that girls at athletic club have their hymens broken during exercise?」
「…Is that so?」
「Un. My senpai at the club said that 『It's still there』 when she took photos earlier but…I'm worried」

I spread out her vagina and take a look…

「…Is it there?」

I can see a pink film in the depths of her vagina…

「…It's okay It's still there」
「…I'm glad」

Megumi blew a big sigh.

「…I can properly give Yoshida-kun my virginity![2]」

Megumi blooms

「…Can I put it in?」
「Un!」

Megumi opened her legs wide…
She must still be embarrassed, her face is bright red.
Still, Megumi takes posture to be ravished.

「Yoshida-kun…」
「…What?」
「They said that it hurts at first」
「…Un」
「But they said that it gets better after doing it multiple times…」
「…Yeah」
「That's why…endure it if it hurts」

…Eh?
Megumi, could it be…
That she thinks that it hurts for men?

「I think that I might still be tight but…if done several times, it'll become a perfect fit for Yoshida-kun. I think that it'll hurt only on the first, second or third time. It might hurt at first but endure it. Please…!」

Megumi's look is serious…
I can't answer anything to the Megumi who's too earnest.

「…Got it. I promise」

Those ordinary words went out of my mouth.

「…Un. Yoshida-kun…please」

I apply my glans on Megumi's entrance.
Then…Megumi.

「Suu, suu, haa! Suu, suu, haa! suu, suu, haa…!」
「…What are you doing?」
「I was taught by my senpai. When you breathe like 『Suu suu, haa』 at your first time, it would hurt that much…

Seriously…what are those girls teaching her?!

「Yoshida-kun…When I breathe out, put it in on the next breath… please…」

If you ask me with such eyes…
…I can do nothing but follow that!

「…Got it」

Megumi began her breathing again…

「Suu, suu, haa! Suu suu haa! Suu suu haa…!」

I adjusted the position of my penis.
My glans are touching the opening of Megumi's open vagina…

「Suu suu haa! Suu suu haa! Suu suu haa…!」

…Now!
At the moment Megumi breathes in…!
I push it strongly inside her.
My glans enters the wet vagina!

「…O-ouch!」

At the moment Megumi shouted, the the hardened glans broke the hymen…!

「…I just went inside」

The tip of my penis can feel it clearly.

「…Is my hymen broken?」
「Yup…I broke it」

Megumi smiled, enduring the pain.

「…Thank you Yoshida-kun」
「I'm the one who should say thanks…! Can I put all of it in?」
「…There's still more?」
「I'll thrust till the root」
「Got it…do it…!」

I push in my penis further…!

「Uuuuu…!」

Megumi endures the pain…
The penis invades in…!
The root is buried inside Megumi…
The tip is kissing Megumi's uterus.

「…It's all in」

It might really be painful…
There's sweat floating on Megumi's forehead.

「I can feel Yoshida-kun inside me. It's twitching…!」

…Megumi
…My Megumi
I embraced Megumi's slim body…!
What is this…tears are welling up.

「…Thank you, Thank you, Megumi!」
「Yoshida-kun…」
「Right now…Megumi's here…and I'm having sex with Megumi, I'm really happy!」

My tears fell on Megumi's chest.

「…What's wrong, Yoshida-kun?!」
「I'm just glad! Really glad!」

I rub my cheeks on Megumi's face while my penis is pushed in.
I embraced Megumi's body tight!

「…Thank you, Megumi's mom. Thank you for giving birth to Megumi!」

I shouted instinctively…!

「…Thank you, Yamamine's father and mother. Thank you for raising Megumi!」
「…Don't cry, Yoshida-kun」
「Yuzuki-sensei, thank you!…I really thank you for protecting Megumi!」

…Thank you…thank you…thank you…

「Geez…Yoshida-kun」

Megumi's crying

「All of Megumi's senpai at the club…anyway, I thank all of the people who stayed with Megumi! Thank you! Thank you!」
「…Yoshida-kun」

Megumi embraced me from below!
I also embraced Megumi!
I can feel the life called Megumi with my whole body…!

「…Megumi, thank you for being here! Thank you for being born! Thank you!」
「…Yoshida-kun! I won't let go anymore! I won't!」

We kissed…
A hot, intense, kiss!

「…Megumi, Megumi, Megumi!」
「…Yoshida-kun, Yoshida-kun, Yoshida-kun…」

Megumi's hand caresses my back gently…
I comb Megumi's hair and pat her head…
Aah…I'm not doing a violent piston and yet…!
There's a hot lump coming from my crotch!

「…Megumi…I'm about to cum」
「…Cum?」
「…My semen…My semen's coming out!」

Megumi smiled like an angel…

「…Give it…please let it all out in me…!」
「…Megumi!」
「…I want to bear Yoshida-kun's child!」

Megumi's face looks in pain.
At that moment…!
The hot semen gushes out from my glans!

「…Aah, aaah, Megumiiiiiiiiii!!!」

…Dobyu…dobyu…dopyupyupyu…!!!

Megumi's womb is being dyed white…!

「Ah, it's hot…my insides feel hot…!」

Megumi's feeling the hot semen in her womb…
Coming…coming…cumming…!
Megumi squeezed her ass and it reaches her till the last drop…!

…Haa, haa, haa, haa,

Megumi kissed me from below…

「…Thank you, Yoshida-kun. I love you!」

Megumi's smiling.

「Yoshida-kun's making a cute face when you cum…!」
「…Eh?」
「…You let out a lot inside me. I want to see more of Yoshida-kun's cute face…!

My penis reacts from Megumi's words.
My penis is still not done.

「…Uhm」
「What's wrong…Yoshida-kun?」
「…Megumi, can we do it one more time?」
「…You can do it as many times as you want. Megumi's already Yoshida-kun's…」

I slowly began my piston…

「…Uu, ouch」

Megumi frowned.

「Sorry…if it hurts, should I stop?」
「No…make it hurt. You can hurt me more」
「…Megumi」
「I know that you're gentle with my first」

Megumi pats my cheeks kindly.

「Also…I like it when it hurts a bit. It's my precious virginity after all. Make it hurt so I won't forget it」
「…Megumi」
「Ah…Of course, we can stop if it hurts Yoshida-kun…Does it hurt?」

Megumi's still thinking that virgin sex is painful to men too…

「…It doesn't」
「Sorry…I'll make it not painful immediately」
「Megumi's body feels really good. Even now…」
「…Yoshida-kun's really nice」
「It's not a lie…It feels really good」

I resumed the piston slowly.

「Ah…you're doing it slowly」

I stopped my piston from Megumi's words.

「…How is it?」
「Ahn…This much is good I guess」

We continued that shallow piston for a while…
Megumi's reaction changes bit by bit.

「Ahn…aaah…it seems that my Senpai was lying…!」
「…Eh?」
「It hurts a bit but…when Yoshida-kun rubs my inside…it feels good…It became pleasurable…!!!」
「…Megumi」
「You can do it stronger now…!」
「…Un」
「Ah…Aah…It feels good there…」

Megumi's body is adapting to sex rapidly…!

「I'm also feeling good」
「My friend told me that the feeling when having sex has an affinity…I'm sure that Yoshida-kun and I have a good compatibility…」
「Yeah…I'm sure we do」
「What should I do…I might come to love doing lewd things…!」
「…Then just love it」
「I might not be able to endure doing it once a day…!」
「We'll do it a lot everyday then…!」
「…Really?」
「…Yeah」
「I love you Yoshida-kun」
「I love you too…Megumi」

I stabbed Megumi's uterus…!

「Ahn…That's good!」

I groped Megumi's breasts…
I licked her nipples…sucked it
I stretched my hand towards Megumi's ass…!

「…Megumi, Megumi's ass!」
「…What about it?」
「It feels really good!」
「…Really?」
「Un…it's plump, fluffy, and elastic」

「I've been told by my Senpai too…!」
「…Eh?」
「Iyada~ Of course they're females. They said that girls doing short distance have that kind of ass」
「It feels really good…!」
「Then, touch it…Ahn!」
「…What's wrong?」
「It feels good when you touch my ass…」
「…Is that so?」
「I'm sure that it's because a person who I love is touching it…!」

I can no longer endure it
I gripped Megumi's ass with both hands and pistons intensely!
My fingers dig into the ass with a good feel…I pierce inside
Megumi! Pierce! Pierce!

「Ahn, Ahn, Ahn, aaaaaahn!」

Megumi's already starting to indulge herself in sex too.
She's shouting 「Ahnahn」like a puppy…!
Cute…
What cuteness she has when having sex.
…I

「…M-Megumi」
「What's wrong?」
「I'm about to cum again…!」
「Show it…Show Yoshida-kun's cute face to Megumi again…!」

There's shivering coming from the spine!
Aaaah…I want to ravish her!
I want to completely ravish this slim and cute girl!!!

「…Aaaaaah, cumming! Cumming! Cummiiing!!!」
「…I love you! I love you! Yoshida-kun!!!!」
「…M-Megumiiii!!!」

The cloudy liquid blows up!
…Dokudokudoku!
My second ejaculation attacks Megumi's insides…!

「…Cute!」

Megumi gently pats my ejaculating face.

「Ufufu…I can feel it! Yoshida-kun's hot stuff…I can clearly feel it!」

Megumi smiles at me while being impregnated…!

---

1. But first, let me take a virgin selfie! ↩
2. That's not how it works you shit ↩

71. Bathtime

After I finished ejaculating, I leaned my weakened body on top of Megumi…
Megumi pats my head…

「…Yoshida-kun, you did your best. Thank you. I love you」

……Megumi。
We exchanged a kiss once again.

「…Can I continue being on the athletic club?」

Megumi asks me with a serious face.

「…If Yoshida-kun tells me to stop then I will leave.」
「…I won't say that…but」
「…What?」
「Megumi actually wants to do basketball, don't you?」

Megumi was in the basketball club when she was in middle school. Yukino spoke to her father and she was forcibly made to quit the basketball club.

「…But, I'm already in the athletic club. I don't want to leave it half-finished」

Megumi smiles at me…

「Then you stay…Megumi should do what she wants」
「…Is that okay? Really」

Megumi has lived keeping reserved to others.
She's always thinking about the other party more than herself.

「I would really be glad if Megumi does what she wants to do」
「…Thanks」

Megumi kissed me once again…

…Knock knock!

The door was knocked…

「…It's Katsuko! Can I enter?」

…I see
They're going to take photos of the aftermath.

「Megumi…you're okay with it?」
「Un. I want to leave a photo of when Yoshida-kun loved me…」

Megumi laughs

「Go on! Katsuko-nee!」

Katsuko-nee opens the door and enters the room.

「Ah…You can stay like that. I'll be taking a photo while you're still connected…!」

Katsuko-nee presses the shutter.
Megumi's no longer embarrassed…
She's looking at the lens happily…

「You're not embarrassed?」

When I asked her…

「A bit…but I feel proud」
「…Why?」
「I was able to give my virginity to the man I like…!」

Saying that, Megumi laughs.

「What's wrong?」
「I never though of Yoshida-kun like this yesterday and yet…! It's strange. Right now…I can't think of a life without Yoshida-kun…!」
「…Megumi!」

I showered Megumi's face with kisses…!

「Geez…It tickles, Yoshida-kun!」

Katsuko-nee also takes photo of that spectacle…!

「It's a disaster down there…Nagisa's crying a lot」

Katsuko-nee told us.

「…What happened?」
「Nagisa…we kept silent about it but our first experience was really a trauma. We were forcibly raped by Shirasaka Sousuke. When we watched your sex, we're so moved that the tears don't stop!」
「…My」

Megumi expresses her surprise…!

「I'm moved too…! I've only had harsh experience in my time in this mansion but I saw you two having sex happily, I somehow felt I was saved…!」

…Katsuko-nee

「Katsuko-san can also have sex with Yoshida-kun a lot…Nagisa-san too」

Megumi said it with a smile…

「…Is that okay, Megumi-chan?」
「Yes! Yoshida-kun is everyone's Yoshida-kun!～」

…Megumi!

「Ah…But I'll be Yoshida-kun's only! I would hate it if you don't cherish me!」

Megumi pats my head…

「Misuzu-san's Yoshida-kun's pet isn't she?…Then what would I be? What could be good? I'll be anything, be it a sex slave or a toy!」

Megumi's always being reserved…
She thinks about Katsuko-san, Nagisa-san and Misuzu…She positions herself in the lowest tier.

「…Megumi's Megumi」

I said.

「Megumi's my Megumi. Misuzu too. She's not a pet but My Misuzu」
「…Is that okay?」
「Un…Katsuko-nee is also my Katsuko-nee…!」

When I told Katsuko-nee…

「I'm already your Katsuko…」

I looked up at the camera and shout to Nagisa-san who's crying while watching over us.

「…Nagisa-san too! You'll be my Nagisa-san all the time!」

Katsuko-nee cries…

「I'm sure that Nagisa's wailing in the hall…」
「…Me too, I'm glad! Yoshida-kun!」

Megumi embraces me and rubs on my face…
…I
For Yukino too…
What should I say to her?…
Katsuko-nee spoke to me while I was worried…

「Shouldn't you get out of Megumi-chan?…I want to take photos of the pussy that accepted semen for the first time…」
「Ah…Yeah Megumi, ready…?」
「I want to be connected forever but…We can't have that…!」
「We can just do it again」
「Un…Let's do it next time I'll always be waiting to have sex with Yoshida-kun…!」
「You won't be waiting for so long…!」

I pulled out my penis from Megumi's insides.

「…Aaaahn!」

Megumi's genital is red with blood.
As expected, she was bleeding.
Two shots worth of semen overflows from her slit gently…

「Megumi-chan, open your legs wide and I'll take photos…!」
「…How is it?」

Katsuko-nee continues taking photos of the nude Megumi who just became a woman…
Megumi who exposes her genital to the camera…is happy.

◇ ◇ ◇

We returned to the hall naked under the bathrobe.
Nagisa-san's reallly crying…!
The ladies are cheering her up…

「…Uwaaaaan, Yoshida-kuuuun!」

Confirming my appearance, Nagisa-san embraces me and cries.
I embraced her back too…

「Nagisa-san…let's redo Nagisa-san's loss of virginity next time」

I told Nagisa-san

「…Eh…Is that okay Yoshida-kun?」
「Yes. Nagisa-san can choose the situation and the place!」
「Yoshida-kun! Thank you!」

Nagisa-san gave me a passionate kiss…

「I would want a hotel where we can see the ocean! I want to embrace you romantically while watching the sun set on the ocean!」

Nagisa-san says her wish immediately.

「Mama…What about Mao?」

Mao-chan looks up at Nagisa-san…!

「Right…Mao should come too! Would you watch Mama being loved by Yoshida-kun?」
「Un…Mao will watch!」

Mao-chan smiled…

「…I-Is that okay, Nagisa-san?」
「It's fine, it's bad for mother and daughter to keep secrets from each other!」
「YupYip, It's bad!」

Mao-chan nodded at her mother's words…

「When Mao turns 15…No, when she's 14, she'll have sex with Yoshida-kun!」
「…Sekusu?」
「You saw Yoshida-kun and Megumi onee-chan did earlier along with everyone didn't you?」
「…Oh, that!」
「Megumi Onee-chan looks very happy!」
「Un…She was really happy!」
「That's why…When Mao grows up, do it with Yoshida-kun too!」
「…got it!」

M-Mao-chan…do you really understand that?

「It's my dream for us parent and child to have sex with you. Isn't that okay?」

…Err

「Then, when Mao-chan turns 14 and she says 『Okay』, would you do it…?」
「Err…if she does」

If Mao-chan grows up and still consents…it can't be helped.

「Then…It's a promise…!」

Nagisa-san kisses my lip.

「Well…I have to educate Mao everyday so that would happen!」

…N-Nagisa-san
Is it okay for a mother to do that?

「Mama…Mao wants to do that too!」

Nagisa-san spoke to me.

「Yoshida-kun…do it」
「…But」

It's her first kiss isn't it?

「She's still a kid so isn't that just fine?」

Well…speaking of which, it is.

「Do it, do it」

Nagisa-san's education starts immedately.
I squatted before Mao-chan.
Then…Mao-chan holds me with her small hands and kisses my lip suddenly…!

「…Puha! I kissed you!」

Mao-chan laughed.

「Mao, when you meet Yoshida-kun, you have to kiss him okay?!」
「…Got it!」
「As long as I can make her get used to it now…Ufufufufun!」

It seems that Nagisa-san's dream of Oyakodon 3P is floating inside her head…

「Nei…Mao-chan would be taking the lead if you get careless you know?」

Margo-san whispered to Nei-san.

「Geez…Maru-chan's a meanie」

Nei-san's sulking

「Now then…Should we end the party? We still have another job to do」

Yuzuki-sensei declared…

「Megumi…stay here tonight. I'll be contacting Yamamine-san」
「I-I want to talk to my foster parents too…」
「We'll be going to Yamamine house tomorrow and say our greetings. And We'll pull you to this mansion formally…!

Sensei declared.

「…Minaho-san」

Sensei looks at Yukino.

「Shirasaka-san…Your father, Shirasaka Sousuke is making a new prostitution ring right now. And…He intends to make Megumi a prostitute too」

…That's right.
He intends to make his own daughter a prostitute!

「Yes…Shirasaka-san will be taking me out of Yamamine house when he returns from Austrailia…」

Megumi confessed.

「I won't let that happen…Kuromori house will be protecting Megumi…!」

Sensei said…

「Un…Megumi-chan's Keiko-san's daughter」
「She has to be the happiest among everyone…」
「We'll be doing everything for Megumi-chan's sake」

The ladies spoke to Megumi…

「Everyone, please lend me your power to crush Shirasaka Sousuke's ambition…!」

Yuzuki-sensei bowed to the ladies…

「Stop that Minaho-chi!」
「That's right…please raise your head」
「We're Minaho-san's ally for always…!」
「…Thank you, everyone」

It's completely a sociable atmosphere inside the room…
There's only two…
Yukino and Nei-san are looking gloomy.

「Misuzu-san…at what time should you return to your house?」

Margo-san asks Misuzu.

「Err…I said『I'll be returning by supper』」

It's past 6 o'clock right now?…

「Then, please step in the bath immediately! Katsuko will be sending you off!」

Katsuko-nee says.

「You too…wash off your sweat」

Megumi and I were also called out…

「Also…Yukino-sama」

Oh right…Yukino's still wearing her wedding dress.
Her body under that dress is wet with semen, love nectar and sweat.

「Then, let's enter too…Mao, we're going for a bath!」
「…Okaaay～!」

It's decided that Mao-chan and Nagisa-san will take a bath too.

「Ah, I'll also go in…I'll be treating Yukino-chan!」

Hidemi-san too…!

「I'm fine…I have to go home, my daughter's waiting」
「Ah, me too」

Yuuka-san and Tamayo-san said.

「The babysitter's on the house today so I'm still okay!」

Hidemi-san laughingly said

「Then…We'll be going ahead. We'll be investigate the matter about Shirasaka Sousuke. Looking at how many women from the former mansion he has called out…」
「…Please」
「Well, it'll be fine. There's almost no one who would be talking to that idiotic and irresponsible man…!」

Tamayo-san laughs.

◇ ◇ ◇

We entered the large bathroom once again.
The women take off their collars and became naked…

「Misuzu-san, what's that?」

Megumi notices the ring at Misuzu's ankle.

「This?…Danna-sama put this on me. It's made of titanium so it's light and won't rust. I can wear this all the time. I always touch this anklet whenever I feel lonely!」
「That looks good…should I get one too?」

The naked Megumi examines it carefully.

「If you have that then it would be hard to run」

I told Megumi.
Megumi's going to continue her athletics in the future.

「…Right」
「How about a good luck charm?」

Megumi shook her head.

「Good luck charms would break someday」
「I see…that's right」
「Should I put on a tattoo like Yukino?」

…M-Megumi?

「That looks good…!」

Megumi and Misuzu looks at Yukino.
Yukino is having her body washed by Hidemi-san and Nagisa-san.

「…I can wash myself」
「My my, that's fine isn't it?」
「That's right, it's skinship!」

Yukino's abdomen wrapped with body soap has a green 『Yoshida』 written on it.

「un…that might be good」

Megumi muttered.

「…What?」

Noticing the gaze of the two, Yukino muttered

「Nothing…I'm just a bit envious」

Megumi answered…

「…Envious?」
「Yes…Misuzu wants that tattoo too!」

Misuzu also spoke.

「Un!～ The character written on Yukino-chan's stomach is cool!」

Mao-chan stares at the 『Yoshida』 tattoo with a smile…

「This isn't cool at all…」

Yukino averts her face

「Yukino-chan, it looks cool…cool and beautiful!」

Mao-chan told Yukino.

「…Me?」
「Un…You look very beautiful in your wedding dress! Mao likes Yukino-chan!」
「…Is that so?」

Yukino's having a perplexed face…

「Yukino-chan will be Naomi-chan's Mame, aren't you?」

Yukino begins to cry from the pure smile of the little girl.

「What's wrong…Yukino-chan, does your stomach hurt?」
「It's nothing…It's nothing…!」

Yukino desperately wipes her tears…!

「I also like Yukino!」

Megumi said.

「I…hate you!」
「Still, I like Yukino!」

Megumi's inferiority complex has disappeared it seems[1]
She smiles towards Yukino with a refreshing face.

「Misuzu also likes Yukino-san」

Misuzu said that.
…I
What should I say?
I raped Yukino, and made her pregnant…
On top of that, I had sex with other women happily.

Megumi spoke to Misuzu.

「…Misuzu-san, I got a request」

「Yes, what is it?」

Megumi and Misuzu looks at each other…

「I will tell my friends at school that I'm going out with Yoshida-kun. Is that okay?」

Misuzu thought for a moment then spoke up.

「Okay, go on. Misuzu will also tell her friends that Danna-sama is her lover. You don't mind?」

The two looked at each other.

「Yes…please do that」

Err…Uhm.
Girls…you're ignoring my will?
I will be going out with the two of you?

「Danna-sama that will just be on paper…Misuzu will always be Danna-sama's pet」
「That's right…We don't need to be your real lover. I'm fine as long as Yoshida-kun's with me…!」

…Misuzu
…Megumi.

「…Danna-sama, would that be all right?」
「…It's fine isn't it, Yoshida-kun?」

I readied myself.

「…Got it. As long as you two are satisfied」

The two naked ladies smiled…!

「…I love you, Danna-sama!」
「…I love you! Yoshida-kun!」

Misuzu stretches out her hand towards Megumi…

「Please be Misuzu's best friend forever」

Megumi holds Misuzu's hand…

「Yes, if you're fine with me…」

Misuzu smiled lonely…

「Megumi-san will be wearing the wedding dress…I don't intend to get Danna-sama involved with Kouzuki house after all」
「That's no good…Don't say that now. Let's fight fairly on who's going to marry him!」
「…Megumi-san, I love you!」
「Me too…Let's stay together」
「…Yes!」

Nagisa-san called out to the two girls getting exited…!

「Hey, don't decide it by yourselves! Yoshida-kun just talked to everyone earlier, didn't he?」
「Ah…Sorry」
「I'm sorry…Nagisa-sama」

The two beauties apologize to the young Mama…

「If you're going with that…I will also tell my customers at the shop that Yoshida-kun's my husband!」

Nagisa-san said brightly.

「…That's no good!」
「…I won't accept that even if it's Nagisa-sama!」

The two girls rejected Nagisa-san's demand!

「Eeeeeeh! Whyy!」
「…Well, right…Misuzu-san」
「…Yes…Megumi-san!」
「Anyway 『Husband』 is no good!」
「Danna-sama's just 16 years old!」

Amazing…
The two of them are completely overwhelming that powerful Nagisa-san!

「…Mao?」

Mao-chan asks me with a dumbfounded face…

「Yoshida-kun is Mao's papa, isn't he?」

…That's.

「…Misuzu-san」
「…Megumi-san」
「If it's Mao-chan, it can't be helped」
「Yes…we allow it!」

Both of them told Mao-chan.

「Yoshida-kun will become Mao-chan's papa…!」
「But you have to wait for a bit. If Mao-chan behaves herself, and Danna-sama becomes a bit older then he'll surely be your Papa…!」
「…Really?」

Mao-chan looks at my face.

「Yup…I promise!」

I answered…!

「Yaay~…Ehehe!」

Mao-chan smiled like an angel.

「Yoshida-kun will be the Papa…Ufufufufu!」
「Hey, Mao it's dangerous to run in the bath!」
「Okaay~」

The two beauties come to me…

「But…It's us for now」
「Yes, Megumi-san, Misuzu and Danna-sama!」

The two of them kissed my cheeks!

「Wait…let me in too!」

Nagisa-san shouted angrily at the two…!
…It can't be helped.
I stood up and went to Nagisa-san.
Then I kissed Nagisa-san's lips…

「Ufu…I knew you would come!」

Nagisa-san told me with moistened eyes.

「…You're all crazy.」

Yukino muttered.

「Right…we might be…I won't deny that. But we're happy」

Nagisa-san told Yukino laughingly.

「What's good with that man?」

Nagisa-san answered Yukino's question immediately.

「Well…isn't he cute?」

Yukino's surprised by that answer.

「…Cute?」
「Un…Yoshida-kun's cute. He's always looking straight at me.」

Megumi answered.

「Yes. He's very gentle. He's treating Misuzu carefully」
「That's why we also want to be gentle with him」
「Misuzu…will reveal anything in front of Danna-sama. I can tell him anything」
「As for me…Yoshida-kun never tells a lie. He's always talking with his honest feelings」
「Right, he's very easy that he doesn't think about things He's always showing his real face」

In addition to Misuzu and Megumi, Nagisa-san praises me…
It makes me embarrassed somehow.
I'm just a normal…No, I'm inferior to a normal man.

「He's doing all his best for his partner above all. Yoshida-kun had sex with Yukino-chan 33 times in just three days didn't he?」

Hidemi-san asks me…

「35 times in four days. I just did it twice a while ago…」

I'm really a brute…

「Normal men can never do that. No matter how much they like their partner. Even if they hate them. Even if they detest them. Even if it's work…」

…Hidemi-san

「Everyone thinks about their own body first…they won't do the impossible. They'll retire when they think it's enough. But Yoshida-kun goes all out seriously on whoever it is and doesn't care how much burden it gives to his body. He's doing his best…」

I…is that so?

「That's amazing you know. But he would go down if somebody doesn't control him. Well, there's Minaho-san and Katsuko-chan for that so we can catch it but…You girls must not give him too impossible demands」
「Okay!」
「…I understand」

Misuzu and Megumi answers Hidemi-san.

「…You too, Nagisa-chan!」
「Okaay! Onee-sama!」
「…Mao will take care!」

The bathroom was filled with laughter from Mao-chan's words
Only Yukino and me are the ones not laughing.

「I don't want this. I'm a Shirasaka. I'm different from you…!」

Yukino said.

「Yukino-chan…I'm Kouzuki Misuzu. My grandfather's name is Kouzuki Shigetaka.」
「…Eh?」
「Yukino-san knows it…I'm a daughter of Kouzuki house」

Yukino looks at Misuzu with a surprised eye.

「…House or blood doesn't matter」

Misuzu smiled at Yukino…

「Shirasaka house became a noble family after the war didn't they?…That newspaper publishing company was just small before the war」

Hidemi-san said.

「They're a newspaper company selling in Tokyo in the old days but they joined the nationwide major newspaper publishing company when the economy boom hit. They're not a traditional noble family」
「Kouzuki house is originally a noble…No…You can trace back the nobility to Kyoto」
「They're on the top ten most prestigious family in Japan…」
Hidemi-san and Nagisa-san taught so.

「My grandfather is the actual head of the family, my father's not the eldest son however. Misuzu is on the lowest seat at Kouzuki house」

Misuzu said embarrassingly.

「Even if you say that, Yukino-chan's the same, aren't you? Shirasaka Sousuke's the second son. That's why he entered the advertising agency instead of the newspaper」

When Hidemi-san says that…Yukino can't answer back.

「…Yukino-chan, lie down here. I'll be giving you an oil massage」

Yukino laid down the mat when told by Hidemi-san.
Hidemi-san applies oil on Yukino's body and began her massage.

「It's about time you notice it…Yukino-chan」

Hidemi-san said.

「…What?」

Yukino asks while being massaged on the back.

「You're not a special human…women here are as beautiful as you. No, they're more beautiful than you. There's intelligent people here too. There's Margo-chan who's versatile at sports, there's a daughter with a better social standing than you, like Misuzu-san」
「…Yes, that's right」

Yukino answered weakly.

「Give it up…you have already fallen. You're the same as us. It might be hard to give birth within a year but…Minaho-san who was made to sell herself when she was 12 was much more cruel. Think about that…」

Yukino shed tears quietly…

「…Yukino, I'll also give birth to Yoshida-kun's child」

Megumi suddenly said that.

「That's why…don't worry…it's not just you」
「Misuzu will give birth too…It's impossible right now but I will when I turn 20. Danna-sama, is that okay?」

Misuzu smiles at me.

「…Y-Yeah」

I can do nothing but nod at that cute smile…

「I can get pregnant immediately so I can give birth at the same time as Yukino!」

Nagisa-san answered happily.

「I always wanted two children. This time, I know who's the father.

Furthermore, I'm really looking forward to getting pregnant since the start. Oh right…I should ask if Sensei still has some 『Fertility drug』 … 」

Nagisa-san looks at me with a smile…!

「Isn't that okay? 」
「…Y-Yes? 」
「I'll be drinking the medicine next time so get me pregnant! 」

…I

「Mao asks too! Yoshida-kun, please make a baby with Mama! 」
「Yes! I ask you, Yoshida-kun! 」

…I get it.
I'll just take it all in.

「…Got it. Please bear my child 」

Nagisa-san and Mao-chan's delighted!

「…We did it, Mao! 」
「…Banzai! Mama! 」

Misuzu looks at those two.

「…Lucky them, Misuzu wants to be pregnant sooner too 」
「I won't hurry 」

Megumi said

「I'll definitely bear Yoshida-kun's child. That's already decided 」

Misuzu smiles at those words.

「Right…Misuzu's already decided. That's why I won't hurry…! 」

Yukino's having a complex face.

「Yukino-chan. That's how it is so I think we'll give birth at almost the same time. I'm okay with either Hawaii or Australia, I'll give birth in the same hospital as you. Let's do our best! 」

Nagisa-san smiles at Yukino who's having a complex face…
Yukino just keeps on crying…!

---

1. Oh god no. ↩

72. On the road

We came back to the dressing room and changed into our former clothes.
Megumi, Yukino and I are in our high school uniforms.
Misuzu's wearing her ojou-sama school's uniform…
Yukino looked at Misuzu's clothes and muttered…

「…You're really a Kouzuki」

Yukino also seems to know which school Misuzu's uniform came from.
It seems that only children of the elite families are able to enter this ojou-sama school.

「Yes…Misuzu won't lie to Yukino-san」

Misuzu laughingly answered…

「I was accepted at your school during middle school but I was dropped. In the oral examination」
「…Eh? Shirasaka Sousuke really made you take a test?!」

Nagisa-san's surprised from Yukino's words!

「…Uhm, what do you mean by that?」

Yukino glares at Nagisa-san

「Well, Yukino-chan's middle high examination was three years ago?…Shirasaka Sousuke was stretching his legs as the manager here at that time. Our guests are all rich…There's no way it would not be exposed! That school has an amazing investigation power!」

Haa…The super ojou-sama school checks the reputation and background of the parents…

「Our school only registers the high class families. They won't let a daughter of a politician or an entertainer come in」
「Eh…Why?」

「Even if the politician or entertainer has power now…it's unknown whether that power would continue for long. They refuse them even if they're coming from an able Kabuki house」

…Uwaa, that's thorough.

「Shirasaka…should be able to get in just with the name of the grandfather isn't it?」
「Well…of course it would come out…!」

Un…If they knew that the parent works as a manager of a high class brothel…
The ojou-sama school can't let that girl enroll…
It would be troublesome if they started business on the PTA…

「With that said…Yukino-chan, it's your father's fault that you weren't able to get in. You don't need to mind it!」

Nagisa-san told Yukino.

「…But」

Yukino's still not convinced.

「Yukino-chan…You said that there was an oral examination?」

Misuzu asks Yukino.

「…Yes」
「Then, there's no problem on that subject! There's no problem with Yukino-san herself!」

Misuzu smiled…

「…Kouzuki-san」
「Misuzu is fine!」
「Sorry…Though I didn't know anything…I've been impolite」

Yukino bowed to Misuzu.

「My…Speaking of which, Misuzu is a year older than Yukino-chan…!」

Nagisa-san asks as if she just remembered it…

「…Eh?」
「Yes, I'm a second year…Yukino-san is at the same year as Danna-sama so you're a first year aren't you?」
「I've been extremely rude…!」

Yukino's completely kneeling in front of Misuzu.

「Please don't mind it! Yukino-san's going to give birth to a child coming from the same man! Let's get along as sisters from now on!」

Misuzu clings to me…!
Yukino's looking at that spectacle in blank surprise.

「It's the best man I chose! Misuzu will devote herself to this one for her entire life! That's what I decided…!」

Misuzu's smile erodes Yukino…
Yukino's looking at my face.

◇ ◇ ◇

Margo-san is sending for Hidemi-san's car when we went to the entrance.
Hidemi-san's car is a white BMW.

「Yukino-chan, I'm sending you off. Get in…!」

Hidemi-san invites Yukino…!

「If you want, should we eat dinner together? I'll treat you whatever you want…!」
「I think that my house has some meal prepared」
「Is that so?…Then let me treat you next time. Get in anyway」
「…But」

Yukino's confused at what to do.

「Shirasaka-san, If you don't want Hidemi-san, how about I send you off?」

Yuzuki-sensei told Yukino.

「Everyone's got something to do from now on so…you don't mind being alone with me?」

Sensei smiled coldly at Yukino…

「Yukino-chan…Would you want to be alone with Minaho-san or me?」

Hidemi-san laughingly said…

「P-Please」

It seems that Yukino thinks that Hidemi-san's better than Sensei…

「Then…With that said. Shirasaka-san, you're going to watch Endou-kun's practice game the day after tomorrow, won't you…?!」

Sensei asks Yukino suddenly.

「…Eh?」
「My…You don't intend to watch your own boyfriend's game?」

Sensei asks a sarcastic question on purpose…

「…I intend to go」

Yukino answered quietly.

「Then, think about it by that time…」
「…A-About what?」

Yukino's afraid.

「Your future of course」

Sensei smiled.

「If you decide to become our ally from the bottom of your heart then I can promise you the best delivery environment. I'll let you give birth in secret so that no one in the school would know. I'll

also make you a second year. I will arrange all of it…

Yukino holds her breath.

「But…If you're going to resist no matter what, then I will announce your pregnancy to the public. Not just the school but the media too. Well, you can still change schools but…won't it damage the image of your mother who's in food research and your father? Their 16 year old daughter getting pregnant…」
「…Please don't get my mother involved in this.」

Yukino answered with a small voice.

「I wonder what should I do? Bear that all in your mind. You can decide the day after tomorrow…Okay?」
「…Yes」
「Oh right…If you ever tried to abort the baby in secret…」

Sensei laughs…

「Should I massacre your whole family?」

Yukino shivered.

「This isn't a joke. I'm serious… You also can't consult your father in Australia. By mail or by phone. If you contact your father, I would kill Shirasaka Sousuke…!」
「…Eh?」
「Shirasaka went to Australia to meet my father…As long as I know the destination, it's easy to catch him」

Sensei already knows where Shirasaka is in Australia.

「I also know the personal phone of Shirasaka and his mail adress. If you contact him, it would reach me immediately. Then, I would give a green light to the person watching over Shirasaka in Australia right now and…he's done. That person's good at shooting. She seemed to have won the sixth place on the Brisbane rifle tournament」

I don't know how good is a sixth placer on a rifle tournament but… It seems that Sensei's talk is real

Yukino's trembling.

「That's all for me. Would you follow my instruction and give birth in secret?…Would you have your family killed?…Think about it tomorrow!」
「I…!」

Yukino tries to say something but Sensei stops it!

「…I told you that I'm done talking! I'll hear your decision the day after tomorrow!」

Yukino fell silent from Sensei's angry look…

「Geez…You don't need to shout that much. It's bad for the child」

Hidemi-san touched the trembling back of Yukino…

「Oh right, Yukino-chan!」

Nagisa-san speaks to Yukino…!

「If ever you chose us the day after tomorrow…you'll feel good again!」
「…Eh?」
「It feels good already doesn't it? Sex and being toyed by women…!」
「…T-That's not true」
「Tomorrow, your body would surely ache for it! Let's do it again! I'll tease you a lot! Yoshida-kun would rape you again too 」
「…I don't want to be raped anymore!」
「That's a lie! Your body can't feel it anymore unless Yoshda-kun ravishes you! This guy's amazing! It'll become a more stimulating and more lewd sex from now on!」

Yukino glanced at me

「Misuzu also loves being ravished by Yoshida-kun, aren't you?」

Misuzu answered Nagisa-san.

「Yes! I won't have sex with anyone but Danna-sama in my life!

Danna-sama, please do a lot of lewd things with Misuzu! I want to have sex outside…!」

Misuzu's fawning over me.

「…Kiss me, Danna-sama!」

I kissed Misuzu in front of Yukino…
Yukino's looking at Misuzu in dumb surprise.

「We have to go soon. Yukino-san. Get in the backseat」

Hidemi-san opens the door on the back.
Yukino gets in the BMW as if she's escaping.

「Hidemi-san…I leave her in your care」

Sensei bowed.

「It's fine, leave her to me…Well then, bye. See you again. Come to my beauty salon. I'll give treatments to Megumi-chan and Misuzu-chan for free!」

Hidemi-san laughs while getting in the car…

「Yoshida-kun…best regards. These girls are all my little sisters!」
「Yes…got it」

Yukino inside the car…
is looking at us through the mirror while pretending to turn away…

「Yukino-san…It'll be fine! Please cheer up!」

Misuzu spoke to Yukino while clinging to me.
Yukino nodded at Misuzu.

「Yukino…see you」

Megumi also spoke to Yukino…
Yukino didn't react.

「Then…Goodbye everyone」
「…Take care」

Katsuko-nee lowered her head to Hidemi-san…
The sky's completely dim.
Hidemi-san turned on the lights and started the car…
The figure of Yukino who's looking down has become small.
The white BMW comes out of the mansion…Then Sensei asked Katsuko-nee.

「…What do you think?」
「I think that it went well…She's feeling the worst fear towards Ojou-sama and begins to depend on several people!」

Katsuko-nee answered…

「…Nagisa, how was it?」

Nagisa-san smiled.

「She's a dumb child as expected. As expected of Shirasaka's daughter. She's quite shaken with Hidemi-san from the bathroom but…I think that the conversation with Misuzu in the dressing room was effective…!」

C-Could it be that the talk with Yukino?

「When she discovered that Misuzu's a Kouzuki the color in her eyes changed…」
「I saw it in the hidden camera…She's really a simple child」
「Yes…Her eyes towards Yoshida-kun has changed…!」

Err…What does this mean?
Nagisa-san explained to me who's making a wondering face.

「It went that well when Yukino-chan discovered that Misuzu was a Kouzuki!」
「…Yes」
「Seeing Misuzu-san being so madly in love with Yoshida-kun… With that, Yoshida-kun's value to Yukino-chan has increased!」
「Eh…What?」

Why did Misuzu liking me…
Change my value for Yukino…?

「…For that girl, a man who's liked by someone from a good family like Misuzu has enough value!」

…What?

「She's really an idiot!」

Nei-san criticized Yukino…

「Her boyfriend…was it Endou-kun?」
「Yes, that's right.」
「He said that his parent is a president of a company, it's not a big of a company isn't it? He said that his uncle is a city councilor, and he can smooth it out…In the end, he's just a king of the mountain of a small town. They're petty. But, since he's an idiot『My father's a president. And my Uncle's a councilor. I'm great』He goes around and say that. He's a child misunderstanding his power」
「…Haa」
「Being confessed to with a dumb guy with a loud voice, Yukino's a child who wants power. She's the type that would fall in love with the leader of a motorcycle gang or a Hoodlum. She doesn't look at the essence of her partner as long as they have a proud attitude or has some followers, she'll get attracted to that…She's really an idiot」

I can somewhat understand and don't understand Nei-san's explanation.

「If that girl knows that Mii-chan was from a family with a good social standing, the value of that guy whom she fell in love to, Yoshida-kun's value would rise. Won't you be on a higher place than Endou-kun on her list?…She's a helpless girl!」

…I-I see
I don't get it though.

「Anyway, she's certainly a foolish girl. She even believed that she'd definitely get pregnant when you drink『Fertility drug』…」

Margo-san laughs at Yukino.

「She can't be certain as long as she can't confirm her next

menstruation. At this stage, even the gynecologists won't know if she's pregnant./ There's also the possibility that Yukino-sama's infertile… 」

Katsuko-nee's amazed too.

「 The period where Shirasaka-san can be fertilized will continue for a while…Yoshida-kun, ejaculate inside her vagina as much as posiblle 」

Sensei told lme.

Eh…We're still going to continue?
This is not the end?

「 Ah…Danna-sama's in joy on the thoughts that he can continue doing Yukino-san again?! 」

Misuzu presses me for an answer!

「 That's…It's not like I'm happy! 」
「 Misuzu wants to be done with the same number as Yukino-san! Okay?! 」

…Yare yare. I'm troubled.

「 …Minaho-san 」

Megumi talks to Sensei.

「 Uhm…I've got something to talk about 」
「 Megumi…wants to get pregnant along with Shirasaka-san as much as possible…am I right?! 」

…Eh?
…Megumi!

「 Yes…I want to get pregnant along with Yukino and give birth together. Is that no good? 」
「 …No good 」

Sensei denied it flatly.

「…We'd like for Megumi-chan to spend her normal high school life that we didn't experience」

Nagisa-san told Megumi-san

「Megumi-sana's our hope」

Katsuko-nee

「But…I feel sorry for Yukino being alone」

Nagisa-san comforts the sorrowed Megumi.

「That's why I'll get pregnant with Yukino. It's just in time. I want to give birth to my second child. I think that someone with an experience would be better for Yukino-chan too…Isn't that right?」
「…Nagisa-san」

Nagisa-san embraces Megumi.

「Don't cry anymore. She'll understand it soon. That Megumi-chan's a good girl…」
「Megumi…Let's go to the doctor. They have to see whether your vagina is damaged from your loss of virginity and have you prescribed with a contraceptive」」

Yuzuki-sensei told Megumi.

「…We're going to Ikeda-sensei's office?」

Megumi who's raised in the 『Kuromori Tower』 seems to know the doctor.
Misuzu went to that clinic yesterday.

「Uhm…Should I go too?」

I asked Sensei.

「What's wrong?…Worried about Megumi?」
「…Y-Yes」

I'm the one who broke her hymen.

It bled quite a lot.

「You can't enter the examination room. It's hard being the only guy in the waiting room of a gynecology clinic…won't you feel embarrassed?」

Sensei told me.

「It's not embarrassing…They're looking after my Megumi」
「…Yoshida-kun」

Megumi looks at me.

「Would you come to me to the hospital when I get pregnant?」

Nagisa-san asks me.

「Isnt' that obvious」
「Kyaa～ I'm so happy～」 1

Nagisa-san embraces me…!

「Danna-sama…You didn't come with Misuzu yesterday!」

Ah…Misuzu's angry.

「Sorry…」

Katsuko-nee enters between Misuzu and I.

「My my, Misuzu-sama…Don't get so angry. He won't be going to the clinic with Megumi-sama after all」

Eh…Katsuko-nee?

「Our next schedule is approaching…」

Ah…the Yakuza extermination?

「I will be sending Misuzu-sama off so…get in too.」

Katsuko-nee told me laughingly.

「You and I will be going to our next schedule after sending Misuzu-sama to her house. Is that okay, Misuzu-sama?」
「If Danna-sama sends me off…Misuzu won't be complaining anymore!」

My my…She was angry a while ago and now she's red from embarrassment this time.
Misuzu's expressions really change a lot.
She's cute like a puppy.

「Then, Minaho would be sending Megumi-san to the clinic. She'll just join later. Nagisa-san would be moving with Nei and Me. Katsuko-san and Yoshida-kun would be sending off Misuzu-san and join with us on the appointed time」

Margo-san instructed us all.

「…What about Mao?」

Mao-chan looks up at Margo-san.

「Mao-chan would be staying with Morimoto-san here…!」
「…Eeeh?!」
「Don't make a fuss. Mao needs to sleep at 8:00, shouldn't you?」

Nagisa-san lifts her beloved daughter…

「Morimoto-san…I'm sorry but thank you in advance」
「Hohoho…Certainly」

The old butler consented laughingly…

「Then…Let's start」

Sensei ordered everyone…!

◇ ◇ ◇

「Then, see you later Yo-chan!」

Margo-san and Nei-san are in the white van.
Nagisa-san gets in the white Benz.

The two seems to be going to the destination in two different rides.
The letters on the van today are 『Maruko Transport』…

「Yoshida-kun…Let's go」

Sensei and Megumi took out a red Honda fit…it's my first time seeing it.
Megumi looks out from the car.

「Un…take care」

Megumi closes her eyes…
I kissed her lips.

The three cars took off.
Katsuko-nee's driving Sensei's green minivan.

「…Get in!」

Opening the rear door…Huh?
The seats are knocked down…they're even.

「Ufufu, it's a flat seat!」

Katsuko-nee laughs.

Eh…we can't sit here
…What does this mean?

「Misuzu-sama…You pushed him for Megumi-sama's sake didn't you?」

Katsuko-nee spoke to Misuzu from the drive's seat…

「Misuzu…thought that it's better that way」

Misuzu answered

「You even took mind of Yukino-sama in a lot of ways…that's why Katsuko has one surprise for Misuzu-sama!」

Katsuko-nee's eyes shine suspiciously…!

「…Car sex. You're interested in it aren't you?!」

…C-Could it be?

「…Is that okay?」

Misuzu's face is suddenly pleased…!

「Yes, please enjoy it to the fullest until we arrive at your house…!」

…Err
My will is being disregarded as ever…

「Wow! Danna-sama…Hurry up!」

Misuzu lied down on the flat seat and tempts me…
Eeii…Let's just enjoy it!
I got into the rear seat too…!

「Ah…it would be boring if you just do it half-naked so please get naked with all your might! The sense of freedom is entirely different!」

Misuzu smiled at Katsuko-nee's advice.

「Okaaay～! Danna-sama, let's compete on who can get naked faster!」

Geez, let's just do this!
I took off my clothes competing with Misuzu…!
Misuzu laughed.
Taking off our socks and our shoes…we became naked.
Misuzu's delicate body shines from the light of the car.

「Ufu…My Danna-sama…I love you!」

Misuzu kisses me.

「Misuzu releases a lot of juice so please place a bath towel below. It's prepared there…!」
「Okaay」

Misuzu laid down the bath towel under her ass.

「If it's cold then please use a blanket…Then, let's go!」

We embraced each other naked…and the engine vibrates as the car starts.
We're on the road from outside the mansion…!
Misuzu clings to me every time we cross over a step and drive down a slope.
Then, she laughs happily…!
Embracing my head and pushing it on her breasts.

「…Aaah…Misuzu's aroused!」

The short and quick vibration of the engine…!
Our shaking bodies…!
We're naked inside the car that's running in the dark town…
I lick Misuzu's cute nipples…

「Aaahn…Danna-sama, do you love Misuzu's breasts?」
「…I do It's really cute…it's hard and sharp already
「…It feels good…please tease it more!」

Misuzu's hand is touching my penis

「Danna-sama's already this hard.」 Do you want to ravish Misuzu…?」
「I want to…I want to ravish you Misuzu…?」

I touch Misuzu's genital with my finger.
Misuzu's pussy is compoletely wet…

「Misuzu is dripping wet. I want it…!」
「…What do you want?」
「Ahn…you meanie…!」
「I won't give it if you don't say it」
「…D-Danna-sama's penis…I want to be ravished by your penis!」
「…Misuzu.」
「…Please come. Please come inside Misuzu! Please ravish Misuzu!」

I entered Misuzu.

Her pussy's hot and wet…!
The glans went to the deepest part instantly!

「Aaahn…I'm pierced again! I love this! Danna-sama's coming inside me! Aaahn! Love! I love this」

I embraced MIsuzu's delicate body while pushing my penis in…!
Misuzu's naked body is soft and slippery…
She's like a dakimakura… it feels good.

「Guys…we're going to the downtown so please don't raise your heads. There's a filter in the window but it's completely transparent at night…the cars we pass through can see you two having sex」

Katsuko-nee says from the driver's seat.
Certainly, the light outside the window is different.
The neon signs and show window lights are flowing one after another…
Misuzu's delicate body creates multiple shadows…

「Misuzu's fine being seen! Rather, I want to show it to the world how Danna-sama loves me!」

Misuzu is intensely aroused…!

「Aah…Ravish me…violate Misuzu at the middle of the street!」

Oh right. We're in the middle of the downtown right now.
We're having sex in a place where there's a lot of pedestrians.
We're having sex, naked.

「Misuzu is Danna-sama's pet…I'm a cute bitch…ravish me outside…Please impregnate Misuzu… aaaah!」

I started the piston greedily!

「I'm being ravished…I'm being violated…It feels good…sex feels good…!」

Misuzu's eyes are melting.

「Guys…we're going on a highway so please put on the blanket」

…Highway?
She's going through the highway on purpose?

「…Aaaahn! Move! Please pierce me…Break Misuzu!」
「…Yeah」

We covered ourselves in a blanket while I continue my rhythm…

「Ufufu…I'm alone with Danna-sama. It feels good being naked under the blanket!」

Misuzu whispered to my ear…

「We're arriving at the tollgate so please do it quietly for a while!」

Hearing Katsuko-nee, I embraced Misuzu tightly…!
A slope rising to the toll gate and a curve.
Becoming a single mass, Misuzu and my body take G's…
…At the toll gate.
Katsuko-nee opens the window and deal with the person at the tollgate.
Misuzu and I are tense whether we would be found out or not.
Misuzu's vagina has love nectar dripping thickly again…
The car departs suddenly…!
I pierced deep inside Misuzu from the shock…!

「…Ahn!」

Misuzu raised her voice out loud.

「Misuzu-sama…this is heaven!」

At the moment Katsuko-nee said that…!
Ga!…Ga!…Ga!…
The car is crossing over the bumps at the highway!
Every time that happens, my body raises up…
Zun!…Zun!…Zun…!
And pierce deeply inside Misuzu's body!
…Every change keeps on piercing!

「Hii…Aaah!…Ah!…Aah!…This is intense!…Good!…My waist goes weak!…It's coming…It's amazing…!Aaaah!!」

Misuzu's body is trembling…!
The orange lights on the highway flow and Misuzu's body is shining…!

「After experiencing this…Misuzu can no longer return to a normal girl…!」
「…You don't need to go back…Misuzu will always be mine…!」
「Aaah…Ravish me Danna-sama! Please make a mess out of Misuzu!!!!」

Misuzu's already half frenzy…!

「…Lovelovelove! I love you! Please love Misuzu more! Please do as you want withy Misuzu's body…! I want to become Danna-sama's slave! Ravish me! Break me!」

Misuzu's sweating profusely…
Her vagina's dripping wet…
It's clamping my penis hard…

「…Misuzu, I'm about to cum…!」
「Cum, let it out, let it ouuuut! Please give it inside Misuzu! Pour it in Danna-sama! Please pour it inside Misuzu! I love you! I love you! I love youuuuu…!!!」

Misuzu's insides tighten!!!

「Aaah…I'm cumming! Misuzu's cumming!…Please say that you love me! Please say that you love Misuzu!」
「…I love you, Misuzu!」
「Me too! Danna-sama! My Danna-sama!…Aaaah…I'm going to heaven! Cumming…Cumiiiiiing!!!!」

Gaku! Gaku! Gakugakugaku! Misuzu's convulsing intensely!

「I'm cumming too!」

My white heat gushes inside Misuzu!

Byurururu…Byrururu, byurururururu!

「Ah…I'm being loved! Misuzu's being loved! I'm so happy! It's

warm…Danna-sama's hot stuff…is spreading inside Misuzu…~」

Misuzu's being fertilized by my body fluid…!
Her delicate body is playing it's role as a woman.
Her womb is drinking my semen…!

「…Misuzu is happy.」 I'm fine if other women like Megumi-san exists. Misuzu doesn't need to be Danna-sama's first. Misuzu will be Danna-sama's for her entire life…I love you Danna-sama…!!」

Misuzu says while shedding tears…

「Misuzu…are you sad?」

The crying Misuzu smiled.

「It feels good…I feel happy. I'm so happy that the tears come out…!」

Misuzu asks for a kiss…

◇ ◇ ◇

After that, I flirted with Misuzu while wrapped in the blanket for a while.
My penis is still inside Misuzu.
I kiss and play with her breasts…
Misuzu combs my hair gently…
Katsuko-nee on the driver seat watches over us all this time…

「We're about to arrive!」

Before long…the car stops
Misuzu's mansion is a high quality condominium.
Katsuko-nee pulls the car on the shoulder of of the condominum.

「My father and mother live here. Grandfather is usually staying in Hayama's house」

Misuzu explained.

「The parking lot in the underground has some camera so please

wear clothes here. Or else they would capture the two of you naked!
「Oh, please wait」

Misuzu licks my penis!

「Misuzu will be cleaning this up for a moment…」

Misuzu continues her fellatio while naked.

「Misuzu-sama…did you like the car sex?」
「Yes…Katsuko-sama, thank you very much!」
「Then…I'll be making an opportunity soon!」
「Is that true?…Misuzu's glad!」

Misuzu smiles while grasping my penis.
…Cute.
She's really a cute girl.

「What's wrong…Danna-sama?」
「N…I just thought that Misuzu's cute」
「…Thanks to Danna-sama」
「…Eh?」
「Danna-sama's loving Misuzu a lot!」

Saying that, Misuzu kisses my glans again…!

「Reaally…Misuzu-sama's a cute pervert!」

Katsuko-nee tell Misuzu

「Yes…Misuzu is a treasured pet only for Danna-sama!」

---

1. Imagine a young milf shouting Kyaa～ ↩

73. Sinister Alliance

Misuzu wears her clothes after finishing her clean up fellatio…
Of course….Me too.

「Please don't look at me with those kind of eyes…it makes me want to take it off again!」
「…Sorry」

It somehow feels disappointing when women wear their bra.
It feels that sex has ended…

「It's okay to do it more!」

Misuzu on her bra said that.
By the way…She's not wearing her panties yet.

「Misuzu-sama, you can't go for a second round! You're overdoing it!」

Katsuko from the driver seat said.

「Ah…I'm sorry. Then, Danna-sama, let's do this tomorrow too!」
「…Eh?」

Tomorrow too…?
I'm going to do it?…Yup, I will.
There's no way I won't have sex with Misuzu when I meet her.

「Misuuz-sama, what's your schedule tomorrow…?」
「Right…I would be practicing traditional dance from dusk but I'll be free until then. The presentation is on May 2 so we're on the last stages! I'll be taking review on my house tonight too!」
「…Even at your house?」

MIsuzu's house is a condominium isn't it?

「Yes! My mother is an accredited master so there's a Japanese Style room for practice. It also has mirrors lined up in it!」

Oh right…Her clan isn't a normal one.
There's no way it's just a high class condominium…

「MIsuzu-sama…Actually, tomorrow we are scheduled to do our last stages on Yukino-sama's little sister. Would Misuzu-sama like to participate if possible?」

Katsuko-nee asks Misuzu.

「…If I recall, they intend to have Yukino-san's little sister fall to a sex slave isn't it?」
「Yes…She'll be raped at first. Then trained to be addicted to sex…」

Katsuko-nee answered calmly
…That means?
I'm the one doing it ain't I?…

「This is work for 『Kuromori』 members. It's for Ojou-sama's sake…It'll be done even if you don't want it…!」

Katsuko-nee's eyes were serious.
This is the revenge plan Yuzuki-sensei developed for years…
It has already been scheduled long ago that Yukino's little sister would be raped.

「If you really want to say that you don't want it then we'll have some hoodlums in the town do the work. Shirasaka Maika would definitely be raped. That's already decided…!」

That's the service for the dead little sister of Yuzuki-sensei…
…That's wrong
…Crazy
But…Sensei's soul won't be healed unless that happens.

「I'll do it…I will do it. I won't let Sensei and Katsuko-nee carry all the burden」

Yup…There's no other choice but for me to do it
If they would just hire a hoodlum…I'd rather do it.

「…How old is that girl?」

「She's in her second year in middle high…14 years old」
「…Is she cute?」
「Let's see…She's still young right now but I think she'll be much more beautiful than Yukino-sama」
「Does she look like Yukino-sama?」
「They're sisters so they resemble each other」
「…Even their character」
「No…She may be an attention-seeker and wants to be an adult but she's not as selfish as Yukino-sama. She may be slow but she's a very lovely girl」
「…Is she suitable to become Danna-sama's slave?」
「That's, I think she can be raised. I think she may be a mischievous child but I think that she'll become a cute slave」
「…She's a virgin of course?」
「Yes I've confirmed it」

Misuzu breathed out and spoke to Katsuko-nee.

「Misuzu will be cooperating with Katsuko-sama…However, I have one request」
「…Please say it」
「That child will be raised according to my desires…Katsuko-sama could you help me?」

Eh…Misuzu?
Does Misuzu intend to train Maika-chan by herself?

「Understood…We will be training Maika-sama as Misuzu-sama wishes!」

Katsuko-nee smiled

「…What kind of sex slave do you want? Please let me know if you have some idea」

Misuzu answered.

「I think that Danna-sama gets horny when Misuzu is not by his side. At those times, I want a slave whom Danna-sama can just thrust his penis in and let out his semen」
「Yes…A semen toilet」

「Rather than a toilet, I want it to feel cuter…A domestic duck for children or something like a fancy interior …!」

Misuzu has some ideas…

「…Uhm, Misuzu…What are you thinking?」

Feeling scared, I asked Misuzu.
Misuzu looks at me with serious eyes…

「…Misuzu's younger cousin, Satoshi-kun had a 『Safe blanket』 too!」

…What?

「In Satoshi-kun's case, it was a stuffed toy Pooh. He's always carrying it around. He never let go of his Pooh…!」

…What's a pooh stuff toy?
What's a pooh?
Is it an unemployed person?
What kind of stuffed toy is an unemployed man?
Furthermore, Satoshi-kun doesn't let go of the Pooh stuffed toy…????!!

「But, if he always bring the Pooh stuffed toy it would get dirty won't it? The cloth would get shaggy and the eyes and ears would get torn off. Children bite and lick off their toys so the stuffed toys that get dirty aren't sanitized.」

Yup…Certainly, an unemployed person stuff toy shouldn't be licked.
I can't imagine what kind of stuff toy it is though.

「That's why…it's changed when Satoshi-kun's asleep. With a new Pooh」

Pooh again?!
A new unemployed person…Is there any new toys?
At least make it an employed person stuffed toy…
I don't know how rich people think…!

「People say that children are feel security from the scent of their stuffed toys but that's a lie… When Satoshi-kun woke up, he was puzzled for a few moments but when they told him that it's 『The usual Pooh』 he began playing with the new pooh normally」

Katsuko-nee is listening to Misuzu's talk.
I don't get what Misuzu wants to say at all.

「In short…Misuzu-sama wants to exchange her as the 『Safe blanket』?」

…What?

「From Shirasaka Yukino-sama to her little sister…Maika-sama」

…Eeeeeeeeeeh?
…W-What does this mean?

「Yes. Misuzu wishes for that…!」

Misuzu answered Katsuko-nee clearly.

「I don't hate Yukino-san in particular. But, Danna-sama's sex with Yukino-san is the worst. Danna-sama and Yukino-sama's compatibility is bad…!」
「…That's right. Katsuko think so too」
「Is there no training schedule for Yukino-san?」
「Yes. Yukino-sama's been trained intensely for today so she'll be taking a rest tomorrow. She's planned to thirst for pleasure on the day where there's no sex…」

Amazing…Yuzuki-sensei's plan is perfectly constructed.

「So tomorrow's schedule is Maika-san isn't it?」
「…Yes」

Katsuko-nee looks at me

「Katsuko participated in Yukino-sama's first training…」
「…It was Danna-sama's first isn't it?」
「Yes. It has been an abnormal experience so it might be a trauma for him…I think that his sex with Yukino-sama having the worst

compatibility is the cause of it. He's become pitiable from his own carelessness… 」

…Katsuko-nee

「 Katsuko-nee did not do anything wrong, I don't get it though 」

That's all I can say.

「 Is it possible for Danna-sama's trauma to be wiped out by raping Shirasaka Maika-san? 」
「 …I think that it's worth trying 」
「 I think I can endure Danna-sama having sex with Maika-san. But, I don't want to see him have sex with Yukino-san!

Misuzu clings to me…

「 I don't mind if it's Katsuko-san, Nagisa-san, Megumi-san or even other girls. I won't make any complains as long as Danna-sama wants to embrace them… 」

…Misuzu?

「 If Danna-sama says 『I want to have sex with that girl』 Misuzu will bring her to you. Misuzu will trick any girl for Danna-sama's sake. If Danna-sama wants to rape a girl then I would help. I'll do anything!…But, I don't want Yukino-san! 」

…You
…Hate Yukino that much?

「 Katsuko too. Katsuko can only do sex other than making bread. Techniques using my own body and techniques to train a sex slave are my everything 」

…K-Katsuko-nee

「 As long as you wish for it, I can make all of the women in the world your sex slave. Even if they're Idols, a princess of another country, I'll definitely make her fall. It's all for your sake…But not Shirasaka Yukino. I don't want that girl by any means! 」

The two of them…are alike
They're completely denying Shirasaka Yukino…

「…W-Why?」

Misuzu answered my question.

「…Yukino-san is an old pooh stuffed toy」

…Pooh?
…Yukino is?

「Her body is dirty, shaggy, and her eyes and ears are torn off. She stinks a lot…She should be thrown away and be replaced by a new one!」
「Katsuko can understand Misuzu-sama's feelings very well!」

I don't get it at all…!

「Katsuko-sama…Can we make Maika-san Danna-sama's new pooh? Can we make Danna-sama's heart separate from the old toy?」
「…We can't do anything but try. Maika-sama doesn't have the most distorted part of Yukino-sama so I think that it would go well」
「…Yukino's most twisted part?」

Katsuko-nee answered my question.

「…Her excessively large pride. That girl doesn't see anything but herself. She doesn't love anyone but her father and herself!」
「…Right. She told Megumi-san that 『I'm the only daughter of Papa』 Yukino-san's not counting her little sister, Maika-san in her head either. She's secluding into a world where there's only her and her father…!」

…That's Shirasaka Yukino
My first love.

「Maika-sama's not yet corrupted. She doesn't have any distortions either. I think that she's possible to train」
「If it's her…Misuzu won't feel jealous even if she takes over as a

『Blanket』 We can wash her if she get dirty. Misuzu will patch it if their eyes and ears are torn off. I'll even do an emotional care… anyway, I don't want Yukino-san!」

Yukino…You're hated quite a lot.
I don't think that you're that bad though…

「Then…Katsuko will be making the concrete plan. I will be sending the proposed pattern to Misuzu-sama via mail」

Katsuko-nee handed a business card with her mailing address written on it to Misuzu.

「Thank you very much. I'll be sending my address here Misuzu will be awake even at midnight. I will be waiting for the report… Please aid me for Danna-sama's sake, Katsuko-sama…!」
「Same here, best regards…Misuzu-sama…!」

The two of them looked at each other.
Katsuko-nee and Misuzu shook hands.

「It's an alliance…Misuzu-sama!」
「Yes! It's a『Sinister Alliance』! Katsuko-sama! 」

The two of them smiled at each other…

◇ ◇ ◇

Misuzu who finished putting on her clothes…button my clothes.

「I'll be borrowing this! I'll return this tomorrow!」
「What would you do with that?」
「I'll comfort myself tonight smelling Danna-sama's scent!」

Misuzu smiled.

「I'll be wrapped in Danna-sama's smell tonight…Misuzu's so happy!」

I really don't know what's at the bottom of her.
She might be a perverted girl who doesn't have an end.
That's what's cute though.

「Misuzu-sama…I just thought of a good Idea」

Katsuko-nee smiles to Misuzu.

「When you come home, please be naked and slip into the bed before taking a bath. Then, have the sweat and semen's scent drift into your body! Think of the scent as the feeling of sex and it'll be arousing!」

Katsuko-nee proposes a maniac like method of masturbation.

「…Is that true?!」
「Please try it!」
「Then I will rise early for my practice in traditional dance tomorrow. I will be going to bed immediately after meal!」
「Eh…You won't enter bath?」
「Then…I'll masturbate first then enter the bath!」

Misuzu smiled bashfully.

「Misuzu wants to live with Danna-sama sooner. Then, I won't be alone anymore. I'll have Danna-sama all the time!」

Misuzu said that and kissed my lips.

「Then, see you tomorrow…Thank you for loving me a lot today」

Saying that, Misuzu gripped the panty on my hand…

「This is a souvenir. Danna-sama, please remember Misuzu!」

Misuzu got out of the car after saying that…
Confirming that there's no pedestrian on left and right, she flipped her skirt towards me…
I can see Misuzu's no-pan …white ass

「…I love you, Danna-sama!」

Saying that, Misuzu went towards her condominium like a puppy.
She turned back at the self locking entrance then waved her hand towards me…
When the door opened, she bowed towards Katsuko-nee and

disappeared inside the condominium…
…Haa
She may be cute like a small animal but her energy is like a typhoon…

「She has become a wonderful pet!」

Katsuko-nee laughed.

「Yes…I'm overwhelmed!」
「That's not true. Aren't you being equal?!」

Katsuko-nee handed me a patch while saying so .
It's the same thing with the name of Nagisa-san's shop on the back like what I wore in the morning.

「…Let's change, wear this」
「…Okay」

I stick the patch on my toe.

「Me wearing this means that I'm a『decoy』」
「You seem to know it」
「Or rather…I can't do anything but be a 『Decoy』…」

I'm not a specialist in fights like Margo-san…
I'm not quick witted like Katsuko-nee and Nei-san either…

「There's two objectives for the plan tonight. First is to annihilate those who threaten Nagisa. This isn't so difficult. The trap has been set already…」

Katsuko-nee said.

「The other one is to check where's the information leak」
「…Eh?」

The information's leaking?

「The content of the strategy is already been set by Margo-sama and Nagisa. This is a mailing list used only for the 『Toys』 themselves…」

「…Okay」
「We showed it to her on purpose…and we want to measure the level she wants to obstruct us.」
「Who's that?」
「Isn't that obvious?…It's Iwakura Yukiyo」

…Iwakura Seitokaichou!

「Actually, we won't do something this troublesome But, Ojou-sama has said that Iwakura Yukiyo is just letting out her stress…」
「…What does that mean?」
「…Iwakura Yukiyo's fetish is close to Shirasaka Sousuke. She's a huge pervert. She wants to reopen the 『Kuromori』 prostitution section.
「In short…It's possible for her to contact Shirasaka Sousuke?」
「No way…Iwakura Yukiyo knows that Shirasaka is a hopeless idiot. That's why Iwakura Yukiyo wants to manage the prostitution ring by her hand…」
「…Eh, Iwakura-san's still a high school student isn't she?」
「But…Iwakura-san has rich and perverted customers. There's people in syndicates too. Don't you think she can do it?」
「…I see」
「The problem is her resolution to rebel against us… That's why we're testing it. She's trained to never go against Ojou-sama but, Nagisa should be a viable target for her attack.
「Then…is there a possibility that there's Yakuza's officials clustered on the location we're going to…?!」
「It's natural…get ready okay?」

Katsuko-nee started the car again…
Uwa…we're going to an amazingly dangerous place.
Well…It can't be helped.

「Uhm…Katsuko-nee」
「…What?」
「Sensei's father raped a daughter of a crime syndicate and escaped to Australia didn't he…?」
「That's right」
「Won't it be dangerous for Iwakura-san to be cooperating with that crime syndicate?」

Katsuko-nee laughed.

「How many crime syndicates do you think are in this world?」
「…What?」
「Did you know that there are two huge underground syndicates in Japan?」
「…No」
「The violent organizations in Japan can never be one. If that happens then the nation would be completely crushed. Won't it be easy to crush when there's only one head? On the other hand there's someone always wanting to replace the man of power that's on the top. That's why there should be two or more organizations. The choices for people who would try to use crime syndicates increases too」
「…Haa」
「Crime Syndicates will never be a monolith. For example, Company A would be threatened by this Person B with the help from crime syndicate C…If it's a monolith then Company A would be crushed and B would pay C with money」
「…Right」
「However, in reality company A would request for Syndicate D to defend themselves. Then, D and C would talk to each other and B would give a suitable compromise. If you do it that way, A won't be crushed and D would be getting money from A. Again, C can take money from B for longer…」

…I see

「About the matter where Kuromori Kouichiro raped the daughter from a crime syndicate, Ojou-sama has already come to an agreement with them」
「…Eh?」
「An apology payment of 40 million yen and indefinite closure of 『Kuromori』 prostitution section…and handing over Kuromori Kouichiro himself to them, it's settled already. Kurumori Kouichiro has escaped to Australia when Ojou-sama is about to hand him to the crime syndicate but that's no mistake The aftermath is the problem of the syndicate on the other side. Well, we told them the approximate location in Australia though」

…So that ended like that?!

「『Kuromori tower』is originally a brothel with high class prostitutes for the privileged class. They've been aimed at by crime syndicates as a source of money several times but our guests have eliminated them for us. Our guests hate taking part in a crime syndicate. That's why we have a lot of crime syndicate as acquaintance but, we don't belong in any group. We can contact any power and we don't make loans. Everything is done by adjusting. Even now」

Katsuko-nee smiled.

「…Then…it's possible that Iwakura Yukiyo doesn't understand such sensitive power relationship」
「Iwakura-san…if ever she cooperated with a specific underground syndicate…」
「Other organizations would be completely crushed…『Kuromori』is a veteran, there are some old customers so they can't meddle but…if Iwakura Yukiyo makes a new prostitution ring, it would become a hindrance to the existing crime syndicates and business」
「…Is Iwakura-san in danger?」
「That's how it is…That's why we need to know first how serious Iwakura Yukiyo is…!」

For that reason…they leaked the information.

「If ever Iwakura-san intends to completely antagonize us…there's no other choice but to eliminate her. We have to get rid of her before she troubles the other people…」

Katsuko-nee said.

「That's the fate of a『Toy』」

So they're determined to go that far.

「Speaking of which…Didn't they say that Shirasaka Sousuke also intends to make a new prostitution ring?」
「Oh…That's all Ojou-sama's plan」
「…What?」
「When『Kuromori』prostitution section was closed down, Shirasaka went on his own way in panic and was tricked saying『I

will be financing, can you manage it?』 There's actually none. It's Ojou-sama's scheme. 『I will take care of all the crime syndicates in the underground and the necessary arrangements in the power of state』 … And Shirasaka got to think that way without thoughts 」

…It's all a plan.

「The information that 『Kuromori Kouichiro has the data of all the most important guests in Kuromori tower』 is also a lie There's a hitman from a crime syndicate that's aiming for Kuromori Kouichiro in Australia 」

T-Too nasty.

「Kuromori Kouichiro doesn't have that important document. He pressed all the tasks and management to Ojou-sama and Morishita-san. Ojou-sama's managing all of the important data…But, he believed even if it's a lie. He's an idiot after all 」
「…Why? 」
「It's already a big task to take the important data away from Ojou-sama. Ojou-sama has a lot of powerful customers from the underground. Don't you think that it's the end of the line if she says 『Shirasaka Sousuke will be abusing all of your personal informations』 ? 」
「…I see 」
「Then…Just when he heard the lie that 『Kuromori Kouichiro has the same data in Australia』 Shirasaka would be chasing after it. It would be easier to grab than from Ojou-sama. For a person raised like Shriasaka, he would hate doing troublesome things. They'll try to do anything to make it easier then…fail 」

A thorough trap has been set.
This is Yuzuki-sensei's revenge plan.

「Even now, Shirasaka's in danger in Australia. It started by having the planned meetup in the hotel being cancelled, be mistaken by the international police as a drug trafficking person, encountered a luggage thief, attacked by a gang from the local, we prepared lots of events for him. It's a incident filled journey 」
「…Haa 」
「The place Shirasaka is going to will have the same aborigine

person. He'll definitely be on Shirasaka's field of vision…Even at the airport, the hotel, the restaurant, or even on the road」
「…Eh, Aborigine?」
「On site person. A 52 year old man. He always has a spear on his hand so Shirasaka will always notice him…」

Un…I feel that's scarier than a normal stalker.

「It's fine…today, a kind Japanese tourist would be helping Shirasaka who got robbed and became penniless. Then…That person would bring Shirasaka to the bottom of the Ayers rock

…Uwaa

「Ah…He's not alone. Ayers rock has aboringe ojii-san waiting at the campfire was it? He has two spears…!」

…That's quite the trouble for
Yukino's father.
Well, mails won't reach I guess.
Or rather…can he come back alive?

「He won't get killed…He'll be returning on May 5. That's why… You have to make Maika-sama completely fall. Yukino-sama's already done…!」

We'll show to Shirasaka Sousuke his daughters becoming sex slaves…
That's the shape of the revenge.

「Katsuko-nee hates Yukino that much too?」
「…I hate her. I want her to get pregnant sooner. Then you no longer need to have sex with her already…!」

…Katsuko-nee

「Are you hungry? Want to eat bread? It would be better if you're full before the start of the strategy, dinner would be late」

Katsuko-nee says that in care of me.

「Thank you…Hey, Katsuko-nee」

「What?」
「I…what can I do for Katsuko-nee?」
「…Eh?」
「Look, didn't I promise Nagisa-san that we would redo her first experience. I also promised Misuzu and Megumi too…」
「…When it comes to sex, I'm fine as long as you're satisfied」
「…Really?」
「Un… I'm your woman so my head's filled with lots of sex. Thinking about sex is just escapism. I'm in relief right now. You can just make love with me from time to time. I'm fine being next to Nagisa, Megumi-sama or Misuzu-sama. You can just leave me for later」
「…Katsuko-nee」
「I love you…That alone makes me happy enough」

Katsuko-nee removes her right hand from the gear and holds my hand.

「…Please be with me always」
「…Okay But, I love having sex with Katsuko-nee too」
「No way…You want Misuzu-sama or Megumi-sama more than me don't you?」
「That's not true」
「Well, I'm no longer a virgin. And my sex is crazy…」
「…Katsuko-nee's so fluffy that it feels good」
「…Really?」
「…Yeah」
「Then let's do it again」
「…Yup. I want it a lot」
「I'm so glad」
「…Katsuko-nee?」
「I'm glad that I'm alive」

There are tears in Katsuko-nee's eyes…

「Hey…Can you help me make bread next time?」
「Un, okay」
「I'm looking forward to it…Onee-san will be teaching you ways to make delicious food!」

Katsuko-nee laughed.

♡

◇ Fierce Fighting Arc

74. Various opinions…

Before long…the car Katsuko-nee drives arrived at the front of the station in the private railway.
It's approximately three stations away from the station where Nei-san raged.
Since the stations is in the residential area…the front isn't that lively…
Margo-san's van is parked in the parking lot at the convenience store in front of the station.
Katsuko-nee's car joins in…that said, she stopped the car on a slightly remote position on purpose.
7:30 P.M.…
Nei-san who's in the passenger seat of the van beckons me.

「…Then, I'm going」
「See you later…Take care」

Katsuko-nee told me.
Katsuko-nee gets out of the minivan and runs towards the white van with short steps.
Nei-san is wearing the same patch of Nagisa-san's shop as mine.
Margo-san's wearing a brownish uniform.

「Then…I'll go shopping in the convenience store」

Saying that, Nei-san opens the door and gets out of the passenger seat.
She's smiling towards me
A person with a good style looks good in whatever they wear…
Though we're wearing the same clothes, I can clearly trace her shape and ass well.
Nei-san entered the shop.

「…Yoshida-kun, get in」

Being told by Margo-san, I sat in the passenger seat.
The door closed and Margo-san handed me a piece of paper.

「It's in the computer but…here's the map. Can you memorize it?」

On top of the paper is a map showing the distance to a certain shop.
It's a map of the station in the private railway in the suburbs.
The shop is a 15 minute walk from the station…

「I've never been there but I get the gist of it」

It's a bit far from here…It's 15 stations by train.

「Is that so?…That's great. Nagisa-san will be meeting with the Yakuza in that shop at 9:00」
「…Okay」
「Nagisa-san will enter the shop at 8:30 You're going to get in the train, then enter the shop at 8:40」

…Err
…What does that mean?

「The Yakuza want to know whether she called for support or not, I think that they will be checking all of the cars entering the road. We're the same way, but they don't have any way to check for people who took the train and walked from the station」

…I-I see

「When you enter, there might be someone from the Yakuza who would go check your status. Contrarily, if there's a spy in the shop already, that guy can take action regardless. Anyway, they want to control the number of people」

…They plan to let me, an irregular enter to confuse the Yakuza side.

「But…won't the Yakuza arrive before 8:40? Should I go earlier?」
「…No way」

Margo-san laughs.

「They're people in that type of industry so they like to assume importance. They themselves would be a little late. That's how it is」

「…Then, that's fine」
「Well…A subordinate would come earlier and asks for the status. They want to know the lay of the land.」
「Got it」
「The person in the shop is someone Minaho knows so don't worry. There are hidden cameras put in the shop already」

As expected…Margo-san's skilled.

「Then…When I arrive at the shop, what should I do?」
「You don't need to do anything. You can let Nagisa-san do the talking」
「…Eh?」
「Oh right. If the Yakuza attacks, I want you to protect Nagisa-san. Get in between the Yakuza and Nagisa-san all the time. Prevent Nagisa-san from being caught by the Yakuza」
「Okay, got it」
Nagisa-san will be in the back-most seat close to the wall, so you should sit by her side when she talks. Oh right, Yoshida-kun…do you have your 『Beat up Stick』?」

I knocked the sleeve of my patch.

「Yes. I have it here」
「Leave that in the car」

Margo-san said with a smile

「Eh…Why?」

Won't it be troublesome for me if I don't have a weapon?

「The opponent is a Yakuza. They're skilled at fighting. If you bring some poor weapons, you're going to think 『If ever something, I can use this to protect myself, I can use this to attack』 Then a chance would show up」

…chance

「The Yakuza might have some quite strong awareness…They might discover if you have weapons. It's fine to just think of protecting Nagisa-san with your own body…」

…Yup.
Certainly, it is as Margo-san said.
If I take out a poor weapon, I might be distracted…
I'm not as strong as Margo-san…

「Got it…I'll protect Nagisa-san with my life!」

I answered honestly.

「With that said…do you have your wallet, Yoshida-kun?」

Ah…wallet, it's in my school uniform.

「I left it when I got off Katsuko-nee's car.」
「It's fine. You shouldn't bring it…If you were caught by the Yakuza, they will discover your personal information if you have it. Leave your phone here too」

I took out my phone. And handed it to Margo-san

「You don't have anything else? What about your Student ID」
「It's all in my car. His pocket is empty」
「Okay…」

Margo-san handed me a cheap digital wristwatch and a brown envelope to me

「There's 3,000 yen in that envelope, use that for transportation」
「I don't need that much…I think that a ticket costs only 400 yen」

Margo-san leaked out a sigh

「It's unnatural if you don't have money except for transportation isn't it? I'm going to say this again but, assume the worst case that you're caught by the Yakuza. Think about a false name」
「…False name?」
「Something that you can answer immediately if asked by the Yakuza. Also, use a common name so that you won't make a mistake when you were asked again after a while」
「…Okay」
「You can use a name of a friend or someone you know…as long as it's not easy to forget」

…Speaking of which
Yukino used Megumi as her false name as before…

「In my case, It's Mary Smith 20 years old. American. Belonged to a lifeguard association in Los Angeles and usually works as a watchmen on the beach. I was sent to Japan by the association and am now an instructor at rescue activity」

…Amazing
With Margo-san's physique, she certainly looks like a beach watchmen in America.

「This is a profile of my acquaintance. That's why I won't make a mistake」
「…Won't they be able to get it from the net」
「Do you know how many Mary Smiths live in Los Angeles? By the way, Smith is one of the most common family names in the US」

I-I see

「You can think while you're in the train. Try to choose an ordinary name as much as possible」
「Okay」
「Then…We're about to begin our operation. Anyway, Minaho and I are on the vicinity There's no need to worry」
「…Got it」
「Try to be accurate in the times…Yoshida-kun, when you make contact with Nagisa-san, you no longer have any other contacts. I thought of handing over a prepaid phone but…having that is just unnatural」
「…Right」

I put on the cheap wristwatch
Looking at the time in the van…Yup, it's accurate.

「Then, I'm going…!」
「…Take care」

I opened the door…
Then Nei-san ran in…

「Okay…Yo-chan, have some ice cream!」

Nei-san offered a mint chocolate ice bar to my lip.
I opened my mouth and took a bite…Nei-san then gulped it down.

「…Why ice cream?」
「Well you see…it's becauce I love you, Yo-chan1…Just kidding!」

Nei-san laughs.

「Yo-chaaan～!」

She embraced me.
Nei-san's rich chest wraps my face softly…

「Seriously…Nei's being spoiled by Yoshida-kun when Misuzu-chan or Megumi-chan's not here」

Margo-san laughs.

「Aren't I the Onee-san…There's no way I can just take Yo-chan from my little sisters!」

Saying that, Nei-san embraces me and spins

「That's dangerous Nei…You're going to smear your ice cream on Yoshida-kun's sleeve!」
「Ah…Sorry!」

Nei-san released me.
Looking at my sleeve…there's surely some ice cream sticking on it.
Nei-san licked it with her red tongue…

「Yo-chan…take care」
「Nei-san too」
「I'll be fine…Maru-chan's with me!」
「Then…I'm going」
「Hey…Yo-chan」

Nei-san spoke

「Let's go somewhere with just the two of us…」

「…Okay」
「That's a promise」

Nei-san and I coiled our pinkie fingers.

「…Hot springs would be good」

Nei-san said with a blushing face.

「Eh…we're going to stay overnight?」
「You don't want to be with me?」
「No…I want to go if it's with Nei-san」
「Ufufufufu…I'm happy that you're honest!」

Nei-san removed her pinkie finger…

「…Later then」
「Okay…Nei-san」

I went to the station with light steps…

◇ ◇ ◇

I bought a ticket and entered the station.
Doing something so common feels somewhat strange.
I'm going to an abnormal situation for a while.

…Having sex with ridiculous frequency
…Dream like girls
… 『Kuromori』
…Yukino
…And right now, I'm going to fight Yakuza

It's somewhat absurd.
It's entirely different from one week ago

The train came immediately.
The seats have become empty but I stood in front of the door.
I gaze at the night town outside the train…
Streetlights…lights from the building…stores…is that a convenience store shining brightly…
My face reflects on the windowpane…

Ah, I'm still a bit bruised.
…I'm having a scary face.

「…Yoshida-kun?」

I was suddenly called out
When I turned around…It was a face I saw before
It's a guy from our class…he's wearing a white T-shirt and plain jeans
…If I recall

「It's me, Tanaka」

Oh right…Tanaka

「What are you doing with such clothes? Part time?」

I'm wearing a batch with the same name as Nagisa-san's shop

「…Something like that」

I can answer only that way
There's now way I can answer「I'm going to fight the Yakuza」

「Hee…you're doing a lot of things, Yoshida」
「…Well, yeah」
「What kind of work is it?」
「N…It's a flower shop?」

Why am I making a question…?!
Wasn't I taught by Margo-san a while ago?
I should be able to lie about my false profile smoothly…!

「Hee…You're working somewhere unconventional」

Still…Tanaka seems to be convinced for the time being

「I'm about to go home to my relative's house for the moment」
「…IS that so?」

I'm not interested in Tanaka though

「…Yoshida, you've changed」
「…Eh?」
「You look suspiciously timid at the entrance ceremony…you were beaten up by Endou the other day after all. Did he break anything?」
「…Nah」
「No, everyone's saying the same. Yoshida has changed after his trouble with Endou. Is that it…Have you given up on Shirasaka?」

…Yukino?
Why is Yukino being mentioned?

「Aren't you always staring at Shirasaka absentmindedly all the time? Well, Shirasaka's a beauty so I can understand your feelings. It was just too open though」

…Is that so?
So I was looking at her
…That much

「That must be why Endou beat you up… Endou began going out with Shirasaka around last week after all」

…Everyone knows

「Those with foul mouths say that some parts in Yoshida's head got broken when you were hit by Endou」

Un. That's how it looks like. Really.

「But you see…Shirasaka's not a great of a woman since she went out with someone like Endou. She looks good but she's ill natured. She's that type」
「…I wonder」
「That's true. She was number one on the popularity among men at the start of the school but…her reputation dropped recently. It was finished specially when she had gone out with Endou」
「…Hee」
「The one rising in popularity recently is the chairwoman… Yamamine-san」

…Megumi?

「That girl's kind to everyone. She's not two faced. Also, she would be bright if you polish her…I can tell」

Err…I've seen the results of her polishing though

「She actually has a good style…her face is good too. Her hairstyle is lacking though. If someone teached her the way of fashion, she would change dramatically. Yamamine-chan is…!」

Yup…She really changed dramatically.
She's seriously a good woman.
She became an amazing beauty…yes

「Shirasaka started being disliked by the girls from our class, but… Yamamine-chan's has always been liked by the girls. I've never heard them say anything bad about Yamamine-chan」

Megumi…is really a good girl after all
Somehow…hearing such a talk makes me happy.
It feels like my own family is being praised…

「Well anyway…you better not get involved with Endou any further He's just a midboss you know」
「…Midboss?」
「He's always acting so arrogant and self important. But, he doesn't actually have the strength, that's why everyone calls him 『midboss』 from behind since middle school」
「Is that so?」
「I'm from the same middle school as Endou. He's always saying 『My father's a president and my uncle's a councilor. My house has the power』 Then making absurd demands on the school side… But he had a fight with a son of a prefectural council member…」
「…What happened?」
「He went to apologize with his father while holding a box of cake. Since then, he definitely bows respectfully to the son of the prefectural council member. He's an idiot…seriously」

So that's why he's a 『midboss』
He doesn't have the ability to become a 『Big boss』…

Yukino is the woman who's going out with him.
…The train arrived at the station.

「Ah, I'm getting off here…by, Yoshida. Do you best at your work!」
「…Thanks」

Tanaka left the train laughingly
He's not bad.
But…He's looking properly
A person from our class.
No…I didn't know anything…
About Yukino.
About Endou.
Even about Megumi…

◇ ◇ ◇

I arrived at the target station.
I walked in the night road following the map…
It was an area where big factories gathered near the sea.
It's golden week so all factories are closed.
There's no people around.
With the help of the streetlights and the vending machines…I face the target shop.

I arrived at the shop safely.
The shop was an old bar.
It's called a coffee shop during the daytime so should I call it bar at night?…
It looks like they usually deal with the people from the factories.
There's a poster with『Large noon serving – 700 yen』written on it after all
It's originally a fashionable looking shop though…
The name of the shop written on a blue neon sign…
『Stardust』
In the parking lot at the side of the shop is Nagisa-san's Benz that was taken from the mansion.
…Nagisa-san's already here.
When I looked at the clock…It's 8:36
Margo-san told me…「Enter the shop at 8:40」wasn't it?

…What should I do?
…Hm?

Nagisa-san from inside the shop has noticed me.
She's waving her hand smilingly saying 「Here here」
I made a gesture saying 「No no, I won't enter right now」
Nagisa-san made a 「Why?」gesture
I pointed at my watch and showed 「It's not time yet」
Nagisa-san made a gesture saying 「Oh, I see」
I returned a gesture saying 「Please wait for a moment」
Nagisa-san signed 「Roger, roger」…

Haa, I sighed.
I looked up at the night sky.
There's clouds up above.
It might rain tomorrow. 2
I saw the orange moon from the rift of the clouds…

Ah…Nagisa-san's looking this way
But…there's still two minutes.
Should I do exercise on the meanwhile?
It would be bad if I can't move my body at important times.

I started doing radio exercise.
I don't know other exercise anyway.
Nagisa-san from inside the shop points at me and laughs out loud.
That's cruel…I'm just doing exercise.

Okay…It's time
I entered the shop

「Yoshida-kun…Gufufufufu…why?」

Nagisa-san's still laughing…

「Well…I have to warm up so I can move if needed」
「Even so, doing a radio exercise in front of the shop…Ahahahaha, so funny!」

Nagisa-san holds my hand…

「Thank you…I loosened up thanks to that」

Saying that, she smiled towards me

「Anyway…take a seat」

Nagisa-san's sitting in the back seat just as Margo-san said.
I sit by her side.
If anyone ever shot a pistol from the doorway, I can set my body in-between to defend Nagisa-san…
I thought that's a necessity during this situation…

「…Want to drink something?」

Nagisa-san asked me.
…But

「Sorry…It's my first time in such a place」

I don't get what's written on the menu.
『Manhattan』 or 『Blue Hawaii』…
『Sidecar』, is that really a name of a drink?

「Nagisa-san, what are you drinking?」
「Me?…This is 『Moscow Mule』」

Yup, I can't imagine the taste from the name…

「Yoshida-kun's not allowed to drink alcohol yet…Master, bring 『Moscow Mule』 to this boy and remove the vodka please」
「…Got it」

The 50 year old master began to make something after saying that
He's mixing two liquids…W-What?

「Here's your 『Moscow Mule』 without vodka」

A glass was put before me

「Drink it」

Being urged by Nagisa-san who's laughing fufufu…I took the glass to my mouth.

「…How is it?」

It doesn't have the taste of alcohol.
…How should I say it?

「It's a bit sour, it feels like ginger ale…」

Answering that, the old-man master laughed.

「Clever…『Moscow Mule』without vodka is just lime juice mixed with ginger ale」

…haa

「It's called 『Saratoga cooler』 This is also a non-alcohol cocktail」

Nagisa-san laughs satisfied…

「Let's come to this bar again when we're out of this situation. Should we go when Yoshida-kun's of age, when you can drink alcohol? I'll teach you all about delicious liquors…!」
「…Okay」
「There's a fantastic bar in the grand hotel at the port. We're going to drink there…then reserve a room for the night. I want to watch the beautiful night with you」

Nagisa-san's making such a talk…

「Sorry about that…this isn't a romantic shop」

The master interrupts

「I'm sorry for using this shop for a troublesome thing」

When Nagisa-san said that to the master

「I don't mind…we're a shop that suits it after all. Please use it without hesitation!」

Then he laughed.
When I looked around the shop…

There's no other customer other than us.

「There doesn't seem to be a scout does it? Even though Yoshida-kun made such a performance in front of the shop, there's no one who came… 」

Nagisa-san laughingly said.

「Is there no need for us to worry then?… 」
「…We're still not sure 」

I gripped Nagisa-san's hand

「…Right. We must not stop being vigilant 」

Just like that…Nagisa-san and I waited for the arrival of the Yakuza.

…8:50 No one's coming.
…8:55 There's no change.
…Even at 9:00. The Yakuza didn't come at the promised time.

「Margo-san said that the Yakuza would be a bit late… 」
「Right. But, that Yakuza person is just for bluff so they won't make us wait that long 」

From outside the window…there's a car coming over.
…09:02:12

「…Look 」

The Yakuza from the flower market this morning had stopped his yellow green Porsche.
Yup…There's a graffiti on the door.
It's Nei-san's prank
Certainly, that looks bad.
Or rather…the yellow green Porsche looks like a tree frog.

The door opened and the Yakuza came out.
One, two, three, four, five…

「…That's surprising 」

Nagisa-san muttered

「Three people were able to sit in the rear seat of such a small Porsche…!」

The Yakuza in the purple who we met this morning is in the middle.
Uwaa…He's still wearing sunglasses even at night.
The other four look like hoodlum followers.
They're all looking flashy…

「…They came」

The door of the shop opened…and the Yakuza entered…!

---

1. Can't make the English version of the joke so I'll just explain it, Ice cream is read as Aisu, and she said aisheteru in this line. ↩
2. Oh yes, this rain will be so dramatic ↩

75. Bar Manners

「… 『Schwarz』 -san Who would of thought that you would be the one to invite us. You're going to give us a good response won't you…?!」

The yakuza boss in the purple suit told Nagisa-san.

「How about we get into business talk immediately? Anyway, drink a lot…you guys too」

Nagisa-san told the Yakuza.
I see, she intends to make them drink alcohol to dull their movement…

「…Please give me a big cup」

Nagisa-san smiled gorgeously.
The Yakuza boss' face melts down.

「Hey, Guys…Order whatever you want! Hurry up!」

With the boss' words, the followers were…

「Then I'm getting beer」
「Me too」
「I'll also get beer」
「Let's get beer for the time being」

The boss' face had a vein popping out!

「Idiots! This is an adult bar so you shouldn't say 『Let's get beer for the time being』! Ask for something adult-like and cool drink! Get a cocktail!」

The follower's are frightened.

「But…Aniki. We don't know any cocktails…!」
「We're not good with dealing with the cocktail names」
「Or rather…What's a cocktail, Aniki?」

「I don't get it but…what kind of liquor is cocktail? Is it a foreign drink? Anyway, one order please」

The boss is disgusted by the reaction of his followers.

「Kaa!…Fuck that. You all don't know what a cocktail is?!」
「Hee…Sorry」
「We lived saying 『Beer for the time being』」
「Or raw sour grapefruits」
「We don't know any foreign liquor!」

The followers bowed to the boss.

「It can't be helped…Remember this. There might be a night where an onee-chan takes you to an adult-like bar like this. At that time, if you can't even order a cocktail, you would be laughed off by her. It's not just you but also your seniors…!」
「Sorry, Aniki…Could you teach us at least one?」

The Yakuza boss cleared his throat and spoke to the master.

「…Boss, could you prepare 『Kahlua Milk』 for these four?…」

The Yakuza boss orders while trying to look cool

「…Got it」

The master started working immediately

「Aniki…What's 『Kahlua milk』?」
「Idiot… 『Kahlua milk』 is a cocktail name. Remember this. When you order a 『Kahlua Milk』 at a place like this, your level as a man rises a lot. The woman with you would tremble a lot! Go on and say it! It's like this…Boss, give me 『Kahlua Milk』 … Go!」

The four followers spoke up…!

「…Boss give us 『Kahlua Milk』!」

…Hmm
It feels very surreal.

「Yup…Then. Don't forget that…!」

The Yakuza boss nods looking satisfied.
…Oh right.
I'll remember that too.
『Kahlua Milk』…

…Hmm?

Nagisa-san's nudging my arm and her face says 「No, no」…
Eh…That's wrong?

「…Speaking of which, what's Aniki's order?」

The follower asked the boss

「Right…Boss, I'll take 『Oolong Tea』!」

…What?

「Huh, Aniki won't drink liquor?」
「…Idiots! If I drink alcohol who would drive us home?!」

…Ueeeeee!?
The boss is driving the Porsche himself?!

「No, we can't let Aniki drink Oolong tea when we're going to drink liquor…!」
「That's right…I will be driving on the way back so please drink I'll give you my 『Kahlua milk』…!」

The boss loses his temper on the followers…!

「Don't fuck with me! There's no way I can let you drive my treasured Porsche! I took out 2.3M yen for that Porsche 911 I will be the one driving home!」
「…S-Sorry. I've gotten ahead of myself」

The followers bowed down.

「Well fine…it's okay as long as you understand.」

Oh…So that Porsche costs 2.3M Yen.
That's quite a luxury car.
As expected, is it expensive because it's colored yellow green…?

The master brought in the glasses.

「Here you go…Four『Kahlua Milk』and one『Oolong tea』」
「Hey…Hurry up and take your glasses!」
「…Eiii!」

The Yakuzas took the five glasses.

「Then, well Let's toast for the future development of 『Schwarz』and us!」
「…Surely」

Nagisa-san raised her own glass.
It can't be helped, me too…
The boss raised his glass and shouted.

「…Kanpai! Prosit![1]」

P-Pro-…what?

「…Prosit!」

The followers imitated their boss.
Then, they drank the liquor…

「…Prosit means 'toast' in German」

Nagisa-san whispered in my ear secretly

…I-Is that so?
But…Why German?

「…Ah, this is delicious. It's sweet and easy to drink. 『Kahlua Milk』is good!」
「…Un. It goes well as a dessert after a meal!」
「It's also good when you get out of the public bath, isn't it?」
「Ah, I think so too…!」

『Kahlua Milk』 seems to be popular with the followers.

「Idiots, it would just be a normal coffee milk! You see 『Kahlua Milk』 goes to 『Kahlua』!」
「Aniki, what's 『Kahlua』?」

The Boss stopped moving when the follower asked…

「…You see 『Kahlua』 is…」
「…What?」
「…I-It's something like gratitude!」
「…Gratitude?」

The Yakuza boss had a 『Shiiiit!』 face…!

「…It's made from 『Kahlua』-san's house!」
「… 『Kahlua』-san?」
「…He might be 『Kahlua』 brother!」
「…Haa」
「…The eldest son is Zofi and the youngest is Leo!」

The store fell silent.
It's as if the God of death had passed…
The boss looked around the shop restlessly under his sunglasses…
Then…those eyes
Looked at me…

「…Who are you!」

The boss suddenly asked me…!

「…W-What?」
「You were in the market earlier this morning, aren't you?」
「Yes…I was there」
「…Who are you?!」

When the Yakuza asked me…!
…Err
Oh right…I should be saying my false name here, shouldn't I?
I was taught by Margo-san after all
I must not tell my true name…!

「…Tanaka!」

I instinctively said the name of my classmate I met in the train a while ago.

「…Tanaka?」

The Yakuza boss looks at me with a scary face…
…Shit This is going to go bad!!!

「…What Tanaka!?!…Huh?!」

The boss shouts loudly at my ear!
…Shit
He's doubting it…
Eeeeh…Uwaa
What was Tanaka's given name?!
Hideo? Norio?…Err

「…It's Yasuo![2]」

Sink or swim! I shouted!

「…What?」

The Yakuza boss shouted…!

「…Tanaka Yasuo!」
「…Who?」
「That's me!」

The Yakuza stopped moving for an instant…

「…You're… Tanaka Yasuo?」
「…Yes, that's right!!!!」

The Yakuza boss stared at me from head to toe…
Even the followers behind him…

「Well fine…You, Tanaka Yasuo…what's your relationship with 『Schwarz』…?」

My relation to Nagisa-san…?
There's no way I can answer it's a sexual relationship…
…Err
…What did Tanaka say at that time?
…Oh right

「I'm part time!」
「…Part time?」

The Yakuza boss had a suspicious look.

「…What kind of part time?」

…S-Shit!
…I-I have to explain from there?!

「…You see, part time is a short form of part time work!」
「…Huuuh?!」
「You see, Part time work means 『A person working as a staff but is not a regular』 in English[3]」
「…That's wrong. Part time work is 『Labor』 in German…[4]」

Nagisa-san whispered into my ears.

「I was wrong! Let me correct it! Let me correct it! Let me correct it!…Part time worker means 『Labor』 in german!」

I don't know what's going on anymore!
I just shouted anyway…!

「In short…An-chan is a part timer?」

The boss seems to understand it somehow…

「That's right…I am in 『Labor』 in German meaning…!」

What am I saying?

「Then…Why is a part timer here?」

…Err

「He's at work here」
「…You're working in this shop?」
「No no…that's not it…!」
「Then, what is it?!」

What should I do now?!
…Then
Nagisa-san laughed out loudly.

「…Nagisa-san?」
「This guy's working in my shop. I brought him here today as my bodyguard. It's going to raise his pay after all…right?」

Nagisa-san smiled at me.

「Ah…yes…that's how it is…Eeh!」

Anyway, let's just match with her talk…
Yup…We're somehow able to fool him.

「He's a bodyguard?」

The boss looked at me closely again.
Then…he laughed.

「This brat is a bodyguard?…This is funny!」

The four followers laughed too.

「…That's not true. He's very skilled」

Nagisa-san smiled.

「He can do the needed delay properly…!」

…Delay?

「…What do you mean by that?」

Answering the Yakuza boss, Nagisa-san pointed outside the shop…

「…Take a look」

The road outside the shop.
Has no one else passing as usual.
The Yellow green Porsche that the Yakuza parked a while ago is still there…
The white light from the street lamps shine the Porsche good…
…There
Nei-san armed with a metal bat appears…
Nei-san looked towards the shop with a smile.
Then…She gripped the bat hard…
Then picked up the cuff tightly with a form like Ichiro.
…She raised the bat!
Then hit the Porsche's windowpane hard!!!!

…Baririn!!! Bako!!!! Bariririn!!! Bakobeko!!!

Nei-san beats down the yellow green Porsche while laughing out loudly!

「…What's that bitch doing!?」

The Yakuza boss' face became pale!

「Guys! Stop her immediately! Heey!」

The four followers went out of the shop at mach speed…!
…Then!
At the moment the four people went out of the shop…Margo-san attacks them from the side.
With one blow…A single strike hit precisely to incapacitate them!

「…Ugaaa!」

There's only one shout that was heard.
But, what I saw is…
Two bodies falling straight to the ground…
The two remaining flew to the sky and fell over their head…!
Furthermore, Margo-san kicked the dominant arms of the men who fell down to the ground!
The four continued to have their bones broken…!
Nagisa-san spoke to the Yakuza boss looking at the scene outside the shop in amazement.

「Now then, let's talk business…Unfortunately, I have no intention to cooperate with you!」
「…I see, so that's how it is」

The boss slowly stands from his seat

「…Hahahahaha, it's negotiation breakdown!」

The Yakuza boss who lost his temper pulled out a knife from his chest…

「But…we can't withdraw that easily…If this happens then my honor would be completely destroyed. At worst, the therapy cost and the compensation money…and the repair charges of the Porsche would be quite a lot…!」

He's gradually cutting down the distance…

「…How much do you want?」

Nagisa-san asked the Yakuza without destroying her smile…

「…Should we make it 30M? 2.5M for those guys. And 20M for my Porsche」

Eh…Wasn't that Porsche 2.3M?!

「…Also, I'll have you as my woman」

The Yakuza boss laughed.

「Come here! You're my hostage!」

The Yakuza waves his hand holding the knife…
Shit…What should I do?
Margo-san's outside the store…
We can't let Nagisa-san be taken as a hostage…
Anyway, I'll get in between Nagisa-san and the Yakuza…
…Then
Then, the master taps my shoulder.
Looking at him…Master handed me a thick book.
The title is…『Home Medicine』

I see, we can prevent the knife of the Yakuza with this thick book…!

「Thank you!」

I pushed out the book before myself and substitute it as a shield…
The Yakuza looked at me then laughed with his nose.

「An-chan…That's an amateur idea, it's unskillful. What's with that lack of nerve?! If you don't hurry and hand over that lady, you'd get injured…!」

Don't make a fool…of an amateur!
…I!

「…Here, Pass!」

I passed the 『Home Medicine』 towards the Yakuza like basketball!

「What?!」

The Yakuza dodges the book hurled quickly!
Then…I made a tackle!
It's a charge of life and death!!

「…Don't fuck with me! You shit!」

The Yakuza swung his knife around!
The sleeve of my patch was cut off!
But I quickly charged and attacked the Yakuza's shoulder…!

…Dongragashan!!!

The Yakuza and I fell down at the entrance of the shop…!
…At that moment
The door opened and Margo-san jumped in like a gale!
She kicked the hand of the Yakuza that's holding the knife!
The knife pierced the wall of the shop!
…Then, that decided the match

「…You still want to continue?」

Margo-san who's stamping the neck of the Yakuza boss with her combat boots…asked him…
I got up and away from the Yakuza.

「Don't think that you'd get away from doing this to me! I have a respectable occupation! The organization won't be silent you know!」

The Yakuza still barked.

「Hey hey hey…Let me get in!」

Katsuko-nee enters the shop…
Katsuko-nee's holding a tablet on her hand.

「Everything's digital recently…even the Yakuza's industry seems to be no match from the modernization! The 『Circular Letter』 is now emails」

Katsuko-nee laughs.

「Kawafuji Kouzou…is that you?」
「What?! I'm Naniwa's5 Kawafuji!」
「There's a 『Break Off letter』 from your Organization!」
「…What?」
「Look」

Katsuk-nee handed the tablet to the Yakuza boss…Kawafuji-san
I can read the contents from my position.

『Break off letter, the person mentioned has broken and gone against our moral code so we have to break you off. Please do not get involved with us anymore』

「…I-I'm being dismissed?」
「That's right…that's how it is!」

Katsuko-nee's phone rang…

「Hello? I've been waiting…It's been a while chairman. It's 『Kuromori's』 Katsuko, the one you saw on the party before. Yes, I'll hand it over now」

Katsuko-nee handed the phone to the Yakuza boss

「It's a call for you! From the chairman」
「Chairman…could it be?」

Kawafuji-san took the phone as if snatching it…

「Helly, it's me! Kawafuji!」

A voice leaks out from the phone…!

『What have you done!』
「…W-What? C-Chairman?」
『Trying to make a move on Kuromori's shop of all things…!』
「…K-Kuromori?」

Nagisa-san spoke to the Yakuza who doesn't get what's going on.

「That store…『Schwarz Wald』means 『Kuromori』 In german」

「Ufufu」Nagisa-san laughs.

『The owner of the shop you tried to meddle with is a friend of the big boss and the head of the group! Do you intend to crush your organization?』
「…Friend?」
「Yes…Both of them are my treasured guests」

Nagisa-san smiled suspiciously…

「I also took care of them when Nagisa retired!」

Katsuko-nee said.

「…What are you people?」

Katsuko-nee answered the Yakuza's question…

「We don't intend to answer that question. There's a lot of things in this world you better not know…!」
「Please disappear by tomorrow morning…along with your followers. And never show your face in front of me again. This is

not a warning. In case you don't do what we said, you'll have to disappear…from this world, completely」

Nagisa-san sentenced the Yakuza…!

…Bobobobobo!

The yellow green Porsche lights up outside the shop…!
Nei-san seems to set it on fire.
She jumps up and around the car while laughing loudly…

「…Master, sorry for the trouble. Here's the fee」

Margo-san handed a thick envelope to the master of the shop

「Don't mind it…I can redecorate the shop from the money you paid. It's a great help for me」

The master washed the glass Nagisa-san and I used and wiped it with cloth.

「A fight between Yakuza happened here. Then the Yakuza ran away…tell that to the police」
「…Thank you very much」

Nagisa-san thanked the master
The master didn't say anything and just wiped off Nagisa-san and my fingerprint with a dishcloth…

「That's how it is…Or do you want us to tell the truth to the police『Our flower shop was attacked』?」

Margo-san said while looking down on the Yakuza.
Her feet are still trampling down the chest of the Yakuza…

「…Got it. I get it already…It's my defeat」

The Yakuza admitted defeat…

「I'm going to tell you once…but, we're going to set an accidental fire in your shop. Don't go back to your shop okay?」

Margo-san smiled.

「…Thank you, Yoshida-kun」

Nagisa-san gave me a thick kiss…!

◇ ◇ ◇

Before the firefighters and the police came to the blazing Porsche… we escaped the site.

「Nagisa-san, go back to the mansion…! Mao-chan's waiting for you!」

Told by Margo-san, Nagisa-san bowed to everyone while in the driver's seat of the Benz…!

「Thank you everyone…I'll leave the rest to you!」
「Leave it to us!」

Nei-san shouted from the passenger seat of the van…
I also marched to the rear of Margo-san's white van.
Nagisa-san's Benz is on the right side of the shop.
Katsuko-nee's minivan is right in front…
Margo-san's minivan is on the left of the road…
They all escape in different directions…

「Still, they're really beyond help. Even though they should be vigilant over various things, they weren't at all…!」

Nei-san laughed out loud.

「No…we still don't know that. Nei, be careful until the last second」

Margo-san says while driving.

「Okaay」
「But…Yoshida-kun was amazing」
「…What? Did I do something?」
「The radio exercise in front of the shop…!」
「Un…That was amazing!」

Eh…That's entirely common though
Or rather, what's amazing with radio exercise…?

「Who would've thought that you would start a radio exercise in that place…that's what's amazing. All of those who were watching were laughing out with all their breath」

Ah…I was being laughed at.
Well…It's common so I'm fine.

「Yuzuki-sensei was even laughing hysterically! It's my first time seeing Sensei laugh that hard!」

Nei-san said.
Speaking of which…
I can't see Yuzuki-sensei…
Where is she?

「Huh…Yo-chan, you're injured?」

Nei-san looks at me from the rearview mirror and notices…
Oh, it's the wound from when my sleeve was cut by the knife from the Yakuza.
It's not something big.
It's just a paper cut, blood is just seeping out…

「It's fine. 'Tis but a scratch…」
「It's not okay! Maru-chan, stop the car!」

Margo-san stopped the van on the side.
Nei-san gets off the passenger seat and comes to the rear seat…

「Geez…there's blood coming out!」

Taking out the first aid kit, Nei-san treated the wound.

「Right…I saw it from outside the shop but that was just too careless a behavior. You were lucky today but if it went badly you'd get injured」

Margo-san advised me

「No…I'm really fine」
「Don't think that way…In that case, if the knife edge hits your hand, your finger might get cut off…」
「I told you I'm fine…」

Margo-san makes a suspicious look from my answer

「…Yoshida-kun?」
「Anyway, I know that Margo-san would come to help as long as I made a chance. Nagisa-san's security is the top priority in that case isn't it? It doesn't matter if I get injured or if my fingers get cut off…」

Nei-san looked at me with a dumbfounded face.

「…Yo-chan, what are you saying?」
「You won't be troubled if my finger got cut, would you?」
「No…Isn't that troublesome?」
「Ah…It would be troublesome for me…But it's not a problem for the others. It's fine as long as I'm the only one troubled, isn't it?」
「…That's not good!」

…Huh?
Nei-san, why are you angry?

「I would be troubled if Yo-chan loses his fingers!」
「There's no way that's true…it's my finger」
「Yo-chan, you should be troubled! It's a big trouble if you lose your finger! It's a trouble throughout life!」
「I know that…But isn't there no other way but to give it up for Nagisa-san's safety?」

Nagisa-san is much more worthy than me…
It doesn't matter if I die anyway.

「…Idiot!!!」

Nei-san slapped my face…!

…Nei-san

「If Yo-chan gets his finger cut then I'll chop of my finger too! If

Yo-chan's eyes gets crushed then I'll have my eye crushed too! If Yo-chan dies, I would kill myself!…That's why」

Nei-san is crying…

「Take care of yourself!…I beg you!」

Nei-san clings to me.
I don't know why Nei-san's angry.
But anyway…I can do nothing but apologize

「…Nei-san, sorry」
「Yo-chan's an idiot. Bakaa…!」

Yup…I'm certainly not smart.
Even I think that I'm an idiot.
I can never understand Nei-san's feelings…

---

1. both means cheers! ↩
2. Yeah, from that shit game ↩
3. He actually said that in Japanese, there's no english TL. lol ↩
4. Labor was said in Japanese. lol Nagisa-san ↩
5. Former name of Osaka ↩

76. Silence

「I'm not really bright. I'm ignorant. I need to study to become better don't I…」

I feel a bit down after getting scolded by Nei-san…

「Yo-chan, what are you saying!」

Nei-san's looking at my face in wonder.

「Yo-chan's cute because he's a bit of an idiot, don't get wise!」
「…What?」
「Just stay as an idiot all the time…please!」

…Err, Nei-san?

「Yoshida-kun, you're 15 right now aren't you?」

Margo-san asks me from the driver seat.

「Yes, that's right」
「Then, you still have five more years」
「…What?」
「The priest in our facility said that 『Humans can be educated until they're 20 years old』 When they're 20 years old, their rough character would be decided and there won't be any big changes after that…」
「Big changes?」
「Like entering the military and have your actions controlled 24-7…or getting in jail and be forced to do labor…Human lifestyle doesn't seem to change much」
「…oh」
「…Yoshida-kun, I haven't asked you about this before but have you heard about the saying 『Environment makes the habit, the habit forms the character and the character decides the fate』?」
「…It's my first time hearing it.」
「Those who want to become a different person must change the environment they live in. As the environment changes, his customs would too. When his customs change, his character would change

too. If the character changes, one's fate would change」

Margo-san said.
…But
Will I be able to go out of that lonely house?
I haven't returned to the house for these past few days
I stayed at Yuzuki-sensei's mansion all this time.
Katsuko-nee's making delicious meals.
But…There's no way this will continue forever.
Right now, I'm experiencing a dream for a short period…
It's not allowed to happen to my body in reality…
That's why I must return the favor to the people who were gentle to me.
I must use my all to be useful…
Everyone's being gentle to me after all
I have to return to that cold sofa in that dark room sooner or later.

The van we're in runs at full speed in the night way…

「We're going to burn down the flower shop of the Yakuza. I'll explain the procedure in details after arriving at the place…!」

Margo-san said suddenly.

「Why are we going to burn the shop?」

We just repulsed the Yakuza a while ago
Margo-san gave the young Yakuza a fracture on their dominant arm and the boss promised to be gone by tomorrow.
In the first place, the Yakuza sent over a 『Break off letter』
There's no need to burn the shop now…

「Well, isn't it fun to burn it down?!」

Nei-san laughingly answered.
Well, Nei-san might be an 『Arson maniac』 but…

「…You think it's overkill?」

Margo-san asked while looking at the rear-view mirror

「Yes…A bit」

I answered honestly

「We should overdo it…we're in that kind of industry」

Margo-san laughed.

「…This case is the Yakuza trying to meddle with Nagisa-san in the first place. That Yakuza was a member of a certain organization and the organization has some responsibility」
「…Yes, I think so」
「That's why Minaho reported a complaint to the organization and they 『Broke off』 from that Yakuza… You can't see any problem after that do you?」

Yup…Got troubled, made a complaint and the Yakuza was 『Broken off』…
It's the proper course.
There's no error here.

「However…In this kind of industry, whatever the result is, they hate it just being free of charge」
「…Eh what do you mean?」
「That organization would take an attitude about the Yakuza they cut off saying 『We did that breaking off letter for your sake』 『You should return this loan when the opportunity comes』…」
「Isn't that strange?」
「Our reason is different…People usually make a fair deal with 50-50 isn't it? They would like to 『Lend』 something at any reason to the other…!」

…That's!

「That's why, it's needed to have wrong reason to live in here」

Nei-san laughingly said.

「We're going to overkill it! You have to show that when they make a move on 『Kuromori』 they'll be completely crushed! And that we're going to do it even without the loan from the Yakuza!」
「We have to make them think that 『Kuromori』 is dangerous They're crazy. It's someone you must not meddle with…」

…Haa
So you have to go that far?

「…That's why we're going to burn down the Yakuza's flower shop. We'll completely turn it to ashes」

Margo-san's eyes in the mirror had strong will.
Margo-san's really is a guard of 『Kuromori』
She'll dedicate her life to 『Kuromori』…

After 20 minutes, the car arrived at a warehouse in the outskirt of the town.
The Yakuza's are running a flower shop in such a place…

「There's plenty of old warehouses in this neighborhood and the rent is low…In addition, the Yakuza don't seem to sell flowers delivered from the main. Well, they're just followers」

Margo-san seems to have investigated about the Yakuza in detail.

「It's there」

Looking at where Margo-san pointed at…
It's an old two story warehouse.
It's awfully tattered…It's definitely a Showa era building.
There's a poorly written handwritten banner saying 『Hana』 on the rusting shutter.
You won't be able to know if it's a 『Flower shop』 or a 『Nose shop』 1
Furthermore, there's a 『Churippu2』 written on the signboard.
It's definitely the Yakuza shop.

「On the right is a monthly rental parking lot, a demolished building, the warehouse on the left doesn't have the tenant now. Since there's fire insurance in the building, the owner won't be troubled even if it's burned. It's going to be demolished like the building near it anyway」

Margo-san explained.

「Wear gloves first…don't leave any fingerprints」

Margo-san handed me leather gloves.

「There's also a shoe prepared for Yoshida-kun's size so you can change to it. It's a mass produced shoes that's sold anywhere」
「O-Okay」

I feel like I'm stepping into the real『Crimes』…
I changed my shoes and put on gloves.

「Yoshida-kun and Nei will go ahead and check the warehouse. I think that there's no one there but there might be some followers who are staying behind」
「…If there's someone there?」
「Just shout『FIRE』and throw this」

Margo-san handed me a small yellow pipe.

「That's a smoke bomb. It's the one used on a car so the smoke blows like there's fire. Smoke bombs aren't seen as much in Japan. You only have to pull the pin and throw it」

I pushed down the smoke bomb in the pocket

「Also, Nei, take this」

Margo-san handed an accessory case from the seat…
…It's a handgun

「If there's someone there, leave this after lighting the place up」
「Eh…Why?」
「They can discover that the Yakuza was renting that warehouse if they investigate but…Won't it be perfect if there's evidence? The police would be overjoyed. The person from the organization would have to cope with it carefully too. The police and the Yakuza would be hostile to each other for a while」
「But…isn't there the possibility that we'd be suspected too?」
「Why? If a pistol comes out from the warehouse the Yakuza was renting, won't the Yakuza be the most suspicious? That Yakuza might be behind the organization. Since they cannot identify the truth, no one would question us. Both the Yakuza and police would be busy with the enemy in front of them after all…!」

Margo-san laughs.
Nei-san looks at the metal pistol shining dully.

「…I put some bullets in there just in case. Take care」
「…Yup, got it」

Nei-san put the pistol away in her pocket

「I'll be following behind immediately…act calmly Also, Yoshida-kun…!」
「Yes?」
「Don't forget to bring the『beat up stick』…!」

◇　◇　◇

Nei-san comes out of the van…
I hold the container of kerosene in both hands.
10:00 P.M.
There doesn't seem to be a sign of anyone in the warehouse…
The moon is hiding behind the cloudy sky.
Nei-san goes to the back of the building.

「…Maru-chan investigated it already but it doesn't seem to have an electronic security system. Well, I don't think that the Yakuza would have some money on him」

Nei-san says that then checks each of the window on the first floor.

「…Look, there it is」

One of the windows isn't locked.

「They're that kind of people so they would forget at least one of them!」

The window is easily opened…
Putting the kerosene container on the scaffold, Nei-san sneaks inside.

「…Okay, it seems that there's no one in」

Let's put the kerosene inside first

Then, I climb over the window too…
The building is pitch black…
Nei-san handed a penlight to me.

「Only light your steps…that's the stealthiest way. You must not light up the wall or ceiling」

Black paper was wound up on the pipe earlier so that the light won't spread.
We advance with lights at our feet.
Making a way through the corridor, we opened the door to the warehouse.
The warehouse has an area of at least one basketball court.

「It's not so dark here」

There's light from the street lamps coming through the windows of the warehouse.
It's not that bright but not that dark either.
I put out the penlight.
There's a lot of flowers arranged in water buckets.
Heaps of empty cardboard boxes are scattered around too.

「Ah, there are still flowers in this box!」

Hearing Nei-san's voice, there are 10 big cardboard boxes piled up.

「Even though they'll go bad if you don't take them out of the box…」
「Since the flowers are cheap today, they must've overbought it」

I remembered Miyuki-san's talk.

「In the end, those people aren't suited for a flower shop!」

Nei-san's angry.

「…It seems that there's no one here」
「It seems so, …there's no lights in the upper floors and since it's 10:00 there's no one that should be asleep!」
「…Perhaps」

To be honest, it's tiresome to check everywhere in the upper floor…

「Okay, let's set fire here. Then if you shout 『Fire!』…If there's someone upstairs they'd run won't they?」
「Ah…There are iron stairs over there」
「…That's how it is. Then, let's start Yo-chan!」

I gathered the empty cardboard boxes in one place
Nei-san sprinkled the kerosene on top.

「Let's secure our escape before we set fire」

Nei-san opens one window facing the road.
The air of the warehouse is stagnant. The air from the outside world feels refreshing.
A plastic case was put as a footing so it's easy to escape.
Nei-san steps on the case…Is it safe to get on? She's checking the strength.

「Then, after we set the fire and check on it, we're going to escape from here!」
「Roger」

Nei-san looked around the warehouse…
She took out the pistol from her pocket.

「Should we put it here…?!」

On the desk on the wall side of the warehouse…
Nei-san put the pistol on the telephone and document files.

「Yup…this looks good!」

At the moment Nei-san said that…
Something moved in the dark!

「…Eh?!」

A thick arm chokes my neck!

「…Yo-chan!」

…I-It hurts!

「Don't move! Else this one would die!」

A low voice of a man can be heard above my head!
Was he hiding himself all this time?…Dammit!

Nei-san…can't move being swallowed by the atmosphere
The man's arm is clamping my neck to the limit!

…Dammit!
…Dammit!
…Dammit!

I pointed the penlight at the man's face!
At the moment I turned on the switch, dazzling light hits the eye of the man!

「…N!」

The man flinched…!
…Then
A black shadow jumps from the window we're going to escape from!

「Yoshida-kun, get down!」

I lowered my waist as Margo-san told me!
Margo-san's pierces above my head…!

「…Gueee!」

Red blood spills from the mouth of the man
The man faints in agony and fell down the floor!

「Nei…You okay?」

When Margo-san turned around…

…… ! ! !

「…Maru-chaan」

Nei-san's caught by a different man
A shining knife's held against Nei-san's neck
…Then
There's another man showing up from the darkness

「You don't know those Yakuza do you?…Who gave you the request?」

Margo-san asks the men.

「…Do you really think that a pro would reveal the identity of the client?」

The man who looks like the leader said calmly.

「Right…But, won't girls and a single boy be able to fight you three?」

Margo-san is making a chance with the opponent while making confident remarks…

「We heard that ace can do it alone…we only do work were we are certain」

The leader laughed.

「…What do you intend to do? I don't mind if you do what you want with me. But, spare these two」

…Margo-san.

「You're still a child in my eye so don't worry. I want to play with you but my client gave me a strict order 『Don't ever make a move on the two girls』 …」

That means?

「On the other hand…make sure you kill the brat…She told us…!」

The man's eye turned to me.
I see…I'm gonna get killed. Here
…It can't be helped

「…Fufufu」

Margo-san laughed suddenly.

「…Who'd thought that you'd aim only at Yoshida. I know who's the client now」

The leader snorted.

「We don't care about your relations. We're only requested so we're going to do our work…」

The man slowly approached me.
He pulled out a knife from his waist.
Margo-san reacted…!

「Hey, don't move or else this girl would get hurt! We're ordered to『never make a move』meant 『don't rape her』but it can't be helped if she gets hurt!」

The leader restrains Margo-san.
The man holding Nei-san flashes his knife towards us…
The leader laughs while looking at my face.

「Don't worry…I'll let you die immediately. I won't make you suffer that much. I'm a pro after all…」

…Oh
I'm going to die.
Misuzu, Megumi…Sorry
Katsuko-nee, Nagisa-san…Thank you.
Sensei…Goodbye
Also…

「…Yo-chan! Help me!」

Nei-san shouted to me crying…?!

「Don't give up easily and die! Help me even before you die! Please, look at me!」

I looked at Nei-san.

Nei-san's crying…!
Nei-san's scared…!
…Oh right!
…I can't let myself easily die!
I have to do something…!
I have to help Nei-san…!
…I
…I

The leader holding the knife approaches me!
…There's three meters left

I put my hand in my pocket
Took out the pin from the smoke bomb.

「Here you go old man!」

Then threw it lightly to the leader.

「What?!」

The man receives the smoke bomb and looks at it for an instant…
…That's right.
Margo-san said that the smoke bomb 『Isn't seen as much in Japan』…!

…Shugo!

The smoke comes out of it intensely!
…Now!
I slid the 『Beat up stick』 from my sleeve and hit the man with all my might!

「…Uwaa!」

The leader's posture got broken…!
Nei-san went towards Margo-san at the same time.
I also run towards Nei-san…!

「D-Don't come here! Do you even care about her lifer?!」

The man who's holding Nei-san shouted but…Margo-san and I

approached from two directions.
Nei-san who knows that the caution is weakening, she took out a lighter from her pocket!

…Shubo![3]

The red flame warms the hand holding the knife!

「…Achichichi!」

At the moment the man panicked…Margo-san's punch smashes the face of the man…!

「…Nei run!」

Nei-san tries to run from the man…!
Margo-san pummels the man one punch after another!!
…The man falls down with blood in his mouth!!
…But!

…Baribaribaririririri!

A spark scattered from Margo-san's back…!
Margo-san collapsed slowly.
The leader was standing behind her with a stun gun.

「Seriously…don't give me trouble!」

The leader's completely angry….

「Enough…I'll kill the brat and rape the two girls, gangbang and kill them!」

The leader holds a knife in the right hand and stun gun on the left…
He's approaching me with still eyes.

…What should I do?
…What should I do?

Nei-san and Margo-san would be in trouble if this continues.
I don't care if I die…

But, I have to protect those two…!
…I have to help them!!!

Suddenly, my eyes lowered onto the desk before me.
On top of that is the pistol Nei-san put down.

I hold the pistol on my hand.
I've read about the safety switch in my friend's manga[4]
I took off the safety and pointed the pistol at the man.

「…What do you intend to do with that?」

Before the man was able to finish speaking…
I pulled the trigger.

…Dazuun!

…A hole opened in the man's step.
I stick to the wall in reaction.
The smell of gunpowder spreads through the area…!

「H-Hey…You…」

I'm not listening to what the man's saying.
I pulled the trigger again…

…Doguuun!!

This time, a crack on the window appeared…

「I told you to wait didn't I」

The man's saying something but I didn't mind it!
I pulled the trigger again!

…Dogyuun!

The bullet grazed the man's shoulder…!

「…Shooting's quite dificult」

I told the man…

「But, I already got it…the next one would hit」

I aimed at the man.

「Wait…Hey, wait a moment!」

At the moment I tried to pull the trigger…!
Nei-san shouted…!

「Don't do it…Yo-chan, doon't!!!」

---

1. Hana can mean both of them ↩
2. Written in Hiragana not Katakana, meaning that it doesn't refer to the English word Tulip ↩
3. It's just the lighter being lit ↩
4. you know, the things his mom threw away ↩

77. Blood and flame

「Yo-chan! You must not shoot it!」

I've already pulled the trigger at the moment Nei-san shouted!
…But

…Kacha, Kacha!

…No bullets?

「Hee…Don't scare me like that」

The man regains his balance again…

「Sadly…that's enough」

I suddenly heard a voice from the window…
…It was Yuzuki-sensei
Sensei's pointing a pistol at the man…

「Unlike that boy, I received proper target practice…」
「…Hee, is that so?」

The leader turned towards Sensei slowly .

「…Don't move, I'll shoot!」

The man spoke towards Sensei who had a tense face…!

「Try it!…No matter how much you have trained, you need courage to pull the trigger. You're not like that kid who just shoots without hesitation like an idiot…!」

…Certainly, Sensei's hand is trembling.

「…Go on!」

The man suddenly threw his stun gun towards Sensei!
Sensei avoids the projectile instinctively…
But the man didn't miss that moment!

He raised his knife and ran towards me!

「…I'll take your life at least!」

The edge of the knife glittered from the light of the streetlamps…!

…I'll get killed!!!

I'm prepared for it…!
I can't run away anywhere from the wall!

…But!

「…Haaaaa!」

It was Margo-san…!
She's hurling herself towards the running man!

「…Guh!」

The man's posture broke and Margo-san drove a roundhouse kick![1]
The knife in the man's hand was blown away…!

…Karan Karan Karan!

The knife rolled rotating on the warehouse floor…!

「You…weren't you paralyzed by the stun gun?」

Margo-san answered the man who rolled on the floor…

「I was…But I heard that this jacket can prevent electricity so I bought it. Though it wasn't able to prevent it completely. Net user's evaluation is something you shouldn't believe that much. I couldn't do anything but play dead until the paralysis was undone. I knew that you would aim at Yoshida-kun until the end after all…!」
「…What do you mean?」

The man asked Margo-san while rising up slowly.

「You kept saying 『I'm a pro』 by yourself…You won't be able to go stand with honor if you can't return with Yoshida-kun dead. That's how it is」

Margo-san laughed.

「Ojou-chan…you're not completely recovered are you?」

The man took his stance…!
The man seems to do some martial arts too.

「…Try it!」
「Sorry but I'm strong」
「All weak men say that…!」

The two of them measured each other.
They move to the center of the warehouse where there's little smoke

「Then…allow me to have some fun!」

At the moment the man muttered…
Something exploded on his feet!

…Bam!

A flash and explosive sound!
The smell of gunpowder shakes in the air of the warehouse!
Margo-san attacked the surprise man like a female leopard!
She hammered a punch to the face and stomach!
She gripped his hand and gave him a knee kick…!

「…Y-You, you're being dirty」
「There's smoke set up specially so won't it be strange if we don't; start?」
「…T-That's dirty」
「Hey hey, is that something a pro should say…?!」

Margo-san breaks a kick to the man!
She beats him up with both hands!!

「…We can never lose…even if we use dirty methods!」

Margo-san gave a roundhouse kick and punched the man's shoulder!
…I can hear the sound of bones breaking!

「…Haa!」

Margo-san's combat boots crushes the jaw of the man…!

「…Bugaaaa!」

There's blood overflowing from the man's nose and mouth…!

「…You can't talk anymore can you?! Aaah!」

…Margo-san looks strange?

「…Toaa!」

She kicked the fallen man's belly with her boots!

「…Next are your legs!」

Then she hammered a very sharp kick to the man's thighs!

「…Ugaaaaaaa!!」

The man shouted…!
His leg bone is broken…!

「…I'll kill you. I'll kill you…all men!」

Margo-san's kicking doesn't stop!
She kept kicking the arms…and the legs of the man…!

「…Ahahahahaha! Ahahahaha! ahahahaha!」

Margo-san kept her obstinate attack to the man while laughing like a madman!
The man's skin is torn, blood splatters!

「…You can't do that…That's dangerous Maru-chan! You can't do any more than that!!」

Though Nei-san's shouting…Margo-san doesn't stop kicking…!
She kept kicking the body even though it's no longer moving!

「…Nei…Let's kill…this man…all men…」

Margo-san tried to crush the head of the man…

「…Sensei! Stop Maru-chan!」

Nei-san shouted to Yuzuki-sensei…!
Sensei from outside the window…!
Sensei…

「……STOP！MARGUERITE！！！」2

Margo-san stopped moving…!

「DON'T　KILL！！DON'T　KILL！！STOP！！
MARGUERITE！！」

She's calling her Marguerite?
Or was it Margrit?
I don't get how to pronounce it.
Anyway…at the moment Sensei spoke her name in English, Margo-san stopped attacking

「……O.K.……MAMA……！」

…Mama?

「Sensei is Maru-chan's mama…」

Nei-san told me.
Margo-san crouched on the floor…
Then Sensei enters the warehouse through the window…
Then she embraced Margo-san's back…

「Maru-chan is Sensei's adopted daughter in the family registry…」

…Adopted daughter.

「Yup. Even if the age is only a single digit difference, it's possible for adoption…!」

「MAMA……STAND　BY　ME……！」

Sensei's embracing the trembling Margo-san

「Sensei who's her MAMA is the only one who can stop Maru-chan on her destruction impulse!」

Nei-san muttered in frustration.

「ALL RIGHT……DON'T　WORRY……DON'T　WORRY…… MARGUERITE」

Margo-san…takes off her belt while trembling
She took off her own pants.
Margo-san's muscular thighs…
Her crotch is wrapped by a gray sports T-back.

「……MAMA！」

Margo-san got on all fours and pushed out her naked ass towards Sensei.

「……PLEASE、MAMA！」

Yuzuki-sensei slaps Margo-san's ass!

…Pashin!

「……OH！PLEASE！PLEASE！MAMA！！！」

Sensei slapped Margo-san's ass again and again!

「……OH！SORRY！MAMA！OH！OH……！」

Sensei kept beating Margo-san's ass until it's swollen red.
Sensei's hand seems to be in pain too…
Margo-san's crying…
She's sobbing like a child.
She's muttering words I don't know…
There must be Indian words mixed in it too

「SORRY…… I'm　SORRY．MAMA……！」

Sensei stopped her hands…
Then she turned towards Nei-san.

「Nei…call Katsuko and tell her to come immediately Margo won't be of use for a while. I'll take this child with me. Get in Katsuko's car」
「Then aren't we going to abandon one of the cars? 」
「…It can't be helped」
「We can't, they might check the car we're leaving…Sensei, I'll drive!」
「…Nei?」
「I got a license from the US so I can drive! I don't have a Japanese license but…I'll somehow manage…!」
「Nei…will you be fine?」
「I'm fine…I'm with Yo-chan… 」

Sensei decides from Nei's words.
She took out the car keys from her pocket.

「My fit is stopped on the right of the building. I'll get in Margo's van… 」
「The keys are in Maru-chan's breast pocket in her jacket! 」
「…Got it」

Sensei looked at me.

「…I'll leave the disposal to you. You can do it right?」
「…Yes, we'll do it somehow」

That's the only thing I can answer.

「…I'll leave Nei to you」

Sensei told me…

「Yo-chan, open the shutter in front of the warehouse…!」

I face the shutter as told by Nei-san.

「There's a switch on the wall there…I think!」

I found the switch
It's embedded in the wall…I pushed the switch 『↑Open』

…Gigigigigigiki!

The shutter opens along with a dull sound.

「…You can just open it up so that a person can bend and pass!」

I opened the shutter a little over one meter according to Nei-san's instructions, then I pushed the stop button…

「O.K.……STAND　UP．MARGUERITE…… ！」

Sensei forced the sobbing Margo-san and made her face the shutter.
Margo-san didn't raise her pants…she's walking with her swollen ass exposed…

「Let's burn this up…Yo-chan」

Nei-san told me…

「Won't it sting your heart if we burn these people to death?」

I see…
We're going to set this warehouse on fire?

「Yo-chan, hold that…let's go!」

Nei-san and I hold down the man who fell down and pull him out…
There's trace of blood flowing from the ground…
Still, we drag them outside the warehouse anyway.

「There's two left」

We entered the warehouse again and dragged the men who fainted.
Coming outside, Sensei's pushing Margo-san into the van.
Nei-san waved…
Sensei made the van's headlight blink and drove…

「…Will she be okay?」
「Sensei knows about Maru-chan the best so let's leave it to her」

We carried the third man outside…
We laid down the three people 15 meters away.

「This is no good…!」

Nei-san brings out a paper and marker from the warehouse.
She writes on it with the marker.
Then she put on each of the men's head.

『This one's an arsonist!』
『This guy is a panty thief!』
『This one's a pervert!』

After writing with a black marker, she wrote a 『Z』 with a red marker.

「Yup…this looks okay!」
「What's that?」
「If you put it like this, won't it be easy for the police to understand that 『Oh, they're the bad guys』 when they come?」
「…Haa」

It's fine as long as Nei-san's satisfied.

「Now then…Let's start the fire again!」

We went to the warehouse again…
The pistol I used to shoot a while ago fell on the floor.
I kicked the empty pistol to the wall…!
The pistol made a clanking sound then slid on the concrete floor…

「The kerosene we sprinkled a while ago completely evaporated didn't it…?」

Nei-san told me.

「Do we still have some kerosene left?」
「…There's at least half remaining」
「Then, put it all on the cardboard around us」

I sprinkled the kerosene as told…
Nei-san ignites the cardboard box scraps with her lighter
The cardboard scraps light up sizzling

「Yo-chan, move aside…」

When I get behind…Nei-san threw the fire into the cardboard

mountain!

…Bobo!

It blazed up in a dash…!

「…Let's run, Yo-chan!」

Nei-san and I ran towards the shutter immediately…

「Hurry up!」

I ran after Nei-san hastily…!
Air flows against the flame from the entrance…!
The flame increases faster with the force of the air…
We dived through the shutter and came outside…1

「Yo-chan, this way!」

The red fit3 is parked at the right of the building just as Sensei told us…!

「…Get in!」

Nei-san opened the driver's seat.
I also jumped in the passenger seat!

「…Let's go!」

Nei-san started the car immediately…!

◇ ◇ ◇

「…Yes, it's a fire. Something's burning up!」

In a place at least a kilometer way from the warehouse, I found a public telephone.
I made a call…
Since Nei-san displayed the address on her phone…I answered it.

「Anyway, please hurry up. There seems to be people that fell down there…Eh, me? I'm just a mere passerby…name?…My name's Tanaka!」

She hung up the phone after that…

「…We're going to move」
「What?」
「The police know your location with that call just now…Anyway, we're going somewhere else…!」

We moved the car once again…
Nei-san pointed the car to a hill…!

「…Nei-san's skilled at driving」

Honestly…She's much more stable than Katsuko-nee

「Yup…I was in one everyday in the US」
「…US?」
「Yup…I never came to school during the third semester last year. I stayed in the US all that time and got a license since I had the time. It was possible to get a license when 17 years old at that place…」
「…Oh」
「Then…I drove around everyday. With Maru-chan」

I still don't know the reason why Nei-san repeated another year…
Nei-san was in the US during her absence period.
…Why?

「Ah…I can see it!」

Nei-san stopped the car at the place where you can look down widely…
There's built for sale house construction in the row.
There's no people from construction since it's night already. There's was no people around.

「Look…It's there」

I saw red flame and dark smoke where Nei-san is pointing at.

「It's burning amazingly! It went well!」

Nei-san looked at my face then laughed…!

「I…burned that with Yo-chan…!」

Nei-san's eyes seem sleepy…

「…Nei-san」
「Look…I can hear it!」

Nei-san listens carefully…
There's firetruck sirens that can be heard from far away…!

「Ahahahaaha…It's so fun! Yo-chan!」

…Nei-san?
…Nei-san looks strange?

「Hey…Embrace me!」

Nei-san removed her seatbelt and embraces me!

「N-Nei-san…what's wrong?」

Nei-san leans her head on my chest.

「Geez…Call me Onee-chan!」

Nei-san smiled towards me.

「O…Onee-chan…!」

I said that instinctively.

「Nfufu, so cute」

Nei-san kissed my cheeks…

「…You see, Onee-san gets really aroused when she sees fire! I set the Porsche on fire a while ago too…Take a look, Kei-chan. The warehouse from a while ago is burning down!」

Nei-san…called me 『Kei-chan』
Nei-san's confused me as her long lost little brother…

「…It's beautiful! It's burning up! Those bad guys who did bad

things to Kei-chan and Onee-chan are all in there…they're all burning up!」
「…Nei-san」
「It's Onee-chan!…Call me Onee-chan!」

Nei-san clings to me.
Her rich breasts press against me!

「…Onee-chan」

I…decided to keep company to the confused Nei-san

「That's right…I'm Kei-chan's onee-chan. Kei-chan, do you love onee-chan?」
「…I do」
「Onee-chan too, I love you Kei-chan! Ufufufu…!」

The flames are reflected in Nei-san's eyes…
Shit…Nei-san's perfectly tripped!!

「Hey…Kei-chan」
「W-What…?」
「Can Onee-chan masturbate?」

Nei-san's plump lips certainly said that.
「Can I masturbate?」…!

「…Eh?」
「I can't endure it anymore…Onee-chan's amazingly aroused! Because, there's a fire…and I'm with Kei-chan…I can't endure it anymore! I can't bear this!」

Nei-san pulled down the zipper…
She bit and removed the gloves on her right hand…!
Nei-san's long white finger appear…!

「Can Onee-chan touch herself there?」

Nei-san's right hand sinks into her clothes while looking at my eyes…
Nei-san's…crotch…

「…G-Go on」

Anyway…I answered like that

「Don't just say go on !」
「Ah, sorry」
「It's fine! It's fine!…Sorry. Sorry, Kei-chan…」
「No, but…w-why are you apologizing?」
「Sorry…Onee-chan's a really naughty girl!…I'm always playing with it alone while hiding it from Kei-chan…Sorry!」

Nei-san's fingers grope her crotch…!

「…Ahn! I touched it again! Kei-chan, sorry…I'm sorry for being a naughty Onee-chan!」

I turn to Nei-san's back and embraced her tightly!

「It's fine…Onee-chan's okay being lewd. It's fine!」
「…Thank you. Thank you, Kei-chan…It's only in front of Kei-chan okay? Onee-chan will be lewd only in front of Kei-chan…!」

Nei-san…continues her masturbation while crying.
…I
Feel unbearably sad…
Nei-san…still deeply loves her lost brother.
…She loves him
If so…
I'll substitute for her younger brother even now…
I thought so…

「…Kei-chan…you see…I masturbate everyday thinking of Kei-chan! Onee-chan wants to have sex! Sex!」
「…onee-chan」
「I love you! Kei-chan…Kei-chan…Don't go away anymore!」
「I'm here…don't worry」
「Yup…I can hear Kei-chan's heartbeat!」

Nei-san rolled her T-Shirt with her left hand.
Her light blue bra is wrapping her big lump of flesh.
She took off the front hook…

Poyon~ Her white breasts were set free…!

「Touch it…Kei-chan」
「…U-Un」

I also removed my gloves…
I massaged Nei-san's big breasts…!
What an amazing volume…!
It's entirely different from the delicate body of Misuzu or Megumi's slim body.
Katsuko-nee and Nagisa-san are both kyonyuu but those two breasts wrap me up with softness…
Nei-san's breasts…Is amazing by just being there.
The elasticity makes it jump around when I push it tightly…!
The tension of the skin is slippery.
It's a virgin breast of an 18 year old girl.

「Do you like Onee-chan's breasts…?」
「…I do」
「Ufufu…I'm glad」

Her small nipples are already erect…
I rub her stomach with my thumb…

「Ahn…It tickles」

Nei-san laughed.
The right hand groping between her crotch is working even more intensely…!
It's making lewd wet sounds…
Nei-san's wet!

「…Onee-chan touches it over her panties first. It felt good that way, I touched it in various ways…! Then I touched it directly…
The lips at the entrance…and the clitoris on top…like this…
Aaaahn!」

Nei-san…is explaining her own masturbation while looking at my eyes…

「…I'm scared putting my finger in so I haven't done it yet…I want

it to be clean until Kei-chan takes it…!」

…Nei-san
She really loves her brother

「…Onee-chan is Kei-chan's after all. Onee-chan will give it…I will, that's why don't leave me! Don't leave Onee-chan alone!」
「…Onee-chan!」

I licked Nei-san's nipples.
I sucked it.
I'm not looking at Nei-san's confused face anymore.
I buried my face in Nei-san's chest…!

「Geez…don't be so violent. But, I'm glad! Kei-chan's seeking onee-chan, I'm glad! Ufufufufu…!」

Nei-san's mistaking me as her brother but…she pats me gently who's sucking her nipples.

「…Cute. Kei-chan. My Kei-chan. I want Kei-chan's child! I want to bear Kei-chan's child!…Kei-chan!」

Nei-san's breathing is rough!
Her hand that's playing with her crotch goes faster…and stronger…!
I suck Nei-san's nipple harder.
I massage her breasts!

「Stronger…get violent! Tease Onee-chan…Kei-chan!」

I bit Nei-san's nipple…!

「Aaahn…Kei-chan, I'm cumming! Nei-chan's going to cum!」

Nei-san calls herself 『Nei-chan』 like a child…!

「…Kei-chan look! Kei-chan take a look at how Nei-chan's feeling good!!!!」
「…I'm looking! Onee-chan!」
「Looooook, looook…Cumming! Nei-chan! Cumming! I'm cumming!!! Kei-chaaaaan!!」

Nei-san's body trembled…
I embraced Nei-san's body tightly!!!!

「aaaahn…Kei-chan's embracing me! I'm so happy! Nei-chan's so happy!!!」

Nei-san's soaked in the reverberations of climax in my arms…
…At that time.
A ringtone melody sounds from Nei-san's phone…!

「…… ! ! ! 」

Nei-san suddenly regained herself.

「…Eh, Yo-chan?」

Her chest is bare.
Her pink nipple is sticky with my saliva.
Nei-san's right hand is still holding her genital…

「I've…done it」

Nei-san's face is dyed red hot…!

「A…Uhm, sorry」

Nei-san separates her body from me hastily…

「No…Yo-chan didn't do anything wrong. I clearly remember what I did…… 」

She remembers…
That she masturbated and came in front of me just now…

「Rather than that…Nei-san, you got call」
「…Oh right」

Nei-san answered the phone in a hurry…

「…Hello, Sorry~! Katsun!!」
『…What's wrong, was there any trouble?!』

Katsuko-nee's voice spilling out from Nei-san's phone

「No, we're fine! We escaped safely! Yo-chan's here too!」

Nei-san answers Katsuko-nee with an aroused voice.

『That's great…I'm relieved. I heard it from Ojou-sama along the way. Anyway, let's meet up…the location would be…』

Katsuko-nee doesn't seem to notice Nei-san's tension…
I look at Nei-san's face while she's on call.

…A beautiful girl
I think that her looks hold the best beauty in the whole world.
I love it.
I thought that I'd help her with anything…

That sort of Nei-san is holding a deep darkness in her heart.
The existence of her late younger brother still pierces her heart deeply.
No…It's not just Nei-san.
…Margo-san too.

What can I do for these two?
To these two I'm deeply in debt with…
To the two I really love…

I…
I'm pitying my own powerlessness…

---

1. Margo Noris ↩
2. The capital English in this part are all just copy paste, wrong grammar should be blamed on ENGRISH ↩
3. Google says that it's Honda Fit ↩

78. Late Dinner

Nei-san was silent the whole time she was driving the car to the meet up point.
Looking at the night town through the window…It's already 11:00
The sky looks dim…It might be rainy tomorrow.
I can hear the voice of the navigation system of the car from time to time…

「…Yo-chan, sorry」

Nei-san suddenly muttered.

「I…become strange when I see fire from time to time. I usually endure it until I can come back to my room. I was alone with Yo-chan so my heart seems to have burst out…」

Nei-san's face looks lonely.

「…I was gross, wasn't I?」

I

「Please don't be ridiculous! Nei-san is always beautiful!」

…I threw out my emotions.

「Nei-san is the most beautiful girl in the world! Beautiful and gentle, you're my Onee-chan!」
「…Yo-chan」
「I can't be a substitute to your late brother but, I'll do anything I can!」

Nei-san shook her head.

「…I'm an insane woman. Getting aroused, I masturbate in my bed everyday! I'm such a disgusting woman!」

Nei-san spoke while storing tears in her eyes.

「Even I masturbate! I can do it five time in one night at best!」

I…confessed everything.

「I have always been alone when I entered high school. It's lonely, scary…I masturbated everyday. I even did it seven times on Sunday…!」
「…Yo-chan?」
「My head was full of delusions…I always thought about raping Yukino. I've never thought about having happy sex with Yukino…I just always think about raping Yukino in various places…I always masturbate that way! I'm the disgusting one here!」

That's my life since the entrance ceremony.
I always thought of Yukino as a sexual target.
I'm that kind of disgusting human.

「…I'm a woman who's having delusions of having sex with her dead brother! Isn't that disgusting?!」
「No, I'm three times more disgusting!」
「I'm completely disgusting…!」
「I'm worse! I'm ten times worse than Nei-san!」
「Then, I'm a woman that's 100 times worse than Yo-chan!」
「Then, I'm 10,000 times worse! I'm already a disgusting man!」

…Nei-san laughed out.

「…Nei-san?」

She's looking straight up front while holding the steering wheel…

「…We're like idiots. That's so funny」
「…Right. That's funny」

Nei-san smiled.

「It can't be helped…We're siblings after all!」
「…Eh?」
「Aren't we masturbation loving siblings?」
「…Ah, Yes」
「…You see」

Nei-san spoke to me while driving.
The seat belt who looks like a tuck on a Yukata strongly penetrates between Nei-san's breasts…

「…Yo-chan」

Nei-san spoke to me in a dry voice.

「What?」

The car stops at a red light…
Nei-san looked at me.

「…You're really going to become by brother?」

The answer's already obvious.

「…What should I do?」

Nei-san thought for a moment, then answered.

「Should we get it in form?」
「…Form?」
「Didn't I tell you that Yuzuki adopted Maru-chan?」
「…Yes」
「You see…I was told that I can't be adopted.」
「…Nei-san?」
「My parents and brother were killed…I don't even know who my other relatives are. Sensei just put in 『Kuromori』 as my family in the registry」

I see…
Yuzuki-sensei's name in the family register is 『Kuromori Minaho』

「That's why…Yo-chan, can you get in too?」

Me…to the Kuromori family registry?

「Then you'll become my real brother in the family registry. For me who can't marry anymore…I don't mind that」
「…Okay」

I answered immediately.

「If that's what makes Nei-san satisfied…I don't mind it at all」

That's right.
I don't have any attachment to the Yoshida house anyway.
I was abandoned by my parents…

「…Is that really okay?」

Nei-san's eyes are round…in surprise.

「I can no longer comeback…I might be devoting my life to the 『Kuromori』」

I laughed.

「My life had no value… If I can make Nei-san's feeling raise for a bit, I'll give it to Nei-san…!」

…Un
It doesn't matter.

「Ah…You still must look for my missing father. I'm still a minor after all. You need to have the parent's approval for the adoption, right?」

Of course it is.
…I give up.
I don't want to talk to my mother…

「…You're deciding it quickly?」

Nei-san looks at me with a dumbfounded face

「Well…Isn't that what Nei-san wishes for?」

I don't know what Nei-san's getting surprised for…

「…You see, Yo-chan」

Nei-san's face turned serious…

「I'll tell you the truth about us」
「…What?」

I don't know what Nei-san is about to say.

「…Maru-chan, Sensei, and I…hate men from the bottom of our hearts. We hate them so much…!」
「…Eh?」
「Mii-chan's the same. Nagisa-san too… Katsun and Megumi-chan are different. Those two don't hate men from the bottom of their hearts…」

Even if you tell me that.
…Aren't I
A man?

「We will never trust men…Even if we die. Men are creatures who are always cruel. We can't let our guard down…! Sensei can't completely open her heart even to Morimoto-san who's worked for many years together with her」
「…I wonder」
「It's impossible…We basically don't trust any creature with a penis on it…We really hate them so much!」

…I
…am also hated
…As expected
Of course.
There's no way a man like me would be loved by beautiful people.

「…Except only one…It's Yo-chan」

…Eh?

「Yo-chan…You're certainly 『Broken』 You're lacking a big part as a human being」
「…Yes」
「But, in exchange…You will never betray someone who trusts you once. You don't lie. You don't act according to your desires…That's amazing」
「…Is that how it is?」

I honestly don't know

「That's right…That's why Mii-chan chose Yo-chan as her partner!」

…Misuzu?

「That child actually hates men. And yet she's madly in love with Yo-chan right now isn't she?」
「…Err」

I don't know whether she's madly in love with me or not.
I think that she likes me very much though…

「Men from the family Mii-chan came in are all not good. They only see money and power, only want her as a mere status…she's not just a daughter of a good family but she's also extremely cute…!」

Certainly…Misuzu's really cute.

「Her grandfather and father…the men in her clan seems to be strong womanizers…won't it be natural for her to be a man hater?」
「But…I'm a man too. Also, a much more inferior man than others
「…Yo-chan, what do you like about Mii-chan?

…What?

「I like everything about Misuzu」
「…Everything?」
「I like her cute character…I think that her being gentle and always taking care of others is excellent. I like her small and delicate body. Of course I think her face is cute too. I like the feeling of holding her. I love the feeling when I touch her stomach. Also, I like her voice. It's a bit high but her voice is really clear. Also, I like how she rolls around like a dog, she's soft…and always follows me on my back…!」

There's too much that I can't count…!

「…Do you have any dissatisfaction with Mii-chan?」

「There's no way I would have one」
「…I give up」

Nei-san sighed

「…What?」
「Isn't that just Mii-chan's identity?」
「Well…Aren't we talking about Misuzu?!」

Nei-san shook her head saying 「Non, non」

「Yo-chan, can only see nothing but Mii-chan herself! Normal people usually looks at the things around Mii-chan first!」
「…The things around?」
「That's right. About her grandfather's power. Or about her going to an Ojou-sama school…」
「Well…That doesn't matter to me and Misuzu though」

Nei-san laughed.

「No no. You're broken! Yo-chan's really broken good!」

Then…she turned back to her serious face.

「That's why…We need Yo-chan…」

…I'm
…Needed?

「Yo-chan…Do you like me?」
「Isn't that obvious that I do?」
「I'm a perverted woman beyond saving」
「That's not true!」
「What do you like about me?」
「Nei-san's always so kind…playful, your smile is cute…and you're beautiful. I think that you're the most beautiful person in the world. Also, you got good style…You always push your breasts against me don't you? I really love the fluffy feeling of it! Also, I like how you always smile! I also like when you're mischievous and giggling… Also」

I remember the darkness in Nei-san's heart.

「…What's wrong?」
「I also like how Nei-san has a serious face right now…You still have a lot of faces that I don't know!」

Nei-san's face became gloomy.

「That's right…I still have a lot of secrets!」
「Uwaa…I'm looking forward to it!」
「…Looking forward?」

Nei-san's having a surprised face.

「Well, isn't that right…I can still see many more of Nei-san's faces! I'm looking forward to it a lot! I think that I'll like whatever kind of Nei-san it is!」

Yup…That's right.
I'm sure…I will

「You won't come to hate me?」
「I think that I'll come to like you more!」
「Even…if my past is a mess…?」
「Nei-san is Nei-san」
「…Eh?」
「Your past, present, or future…Isn't that all Nei-san? There's no way I would come to hate Nei-san, won't I?」
「…Yo-chan」

Nei-san's crying.
She keeps driving the car while crying.

「Look…That's dangerous, Nei-san」
「I'm fine…I'm fine. I won't let my treasured little brother get in a traffic accident!」

Nei-san smiled while crying…

「Yo-chan…I think that Yuzuki-sensei's already looking for your missing father」
「Really?」
「Yeah… She requested an investigation company, probably, I think…」

Sensei is thinking about me properly.

「Let's get back to our talk earlier…Can I ask Sensei that Yo-chan and I would be adopted by sensei… 」
「Go on 」
「…You really can't go back you know 」
「I know that 」
「I'll become Yo-chan's real sister you know! 」
「Isn't that why we're going to enter the same family registry? 」
「If I become your Onee-chan, I'll stick with Yo-chan forever you know! I won't let go already! 」
「I know…! 」

Nei-san smiles while still looking in front.

「…I might no longer dream of Kei-chan 」

…Nei-san

「…I'll tell you about Kei-chan next time. It's impossible for now… we're about to reach the destination soon 」
「…Okay 」
「Hey. If we get into the same family formally…Yo-chan would be my brother… 」
「…What is it? 」
「…Let's have lots of sex! 」

…Eh?

「I…Will have sex with Yo-chan for the rest of my life. I'll throw out all of my lust towards Yo-chan, so get ready…! 」

…U-Uhm

「What?…You're not going to listen to Onee-chan's request?! 」
「…No. I-I get it 」
「I'm a virgin. Be gentle with me! 」
「Y-Yes…Got it 」
「Ufufun!…Good! 」

Nei-san returned to the usual Nei-san before I noticed.
She's humming a song I don't know…!

Yup…The smiling Nei-san is better.
She's really beautiful…
My teacher in middle school said that the most beautiful part of the woman is seen by her side…It's true.

「…Nei-san」
「What?」
「…I love Nei-san!」
「Me too! Yo-chan…!!!」

Nei-san gave her best smile…!

◇ ◇ ◇

The location Katsuko-nee specified was a family restaurant along the highway.
It's light is bright even in the middle of the night.
Nei-san parks the car…
We confirmed the minivan…
Katsuko-nee seems to have arrived earlier.

When we entered the shop…Katsuko-nee and Megumi were there.

「You're late…Was there any problems on the way?」

Katsuko-nee asked Nei-san anxiously…

「I drove in the US two years ago…Well, I did it somehow! Ehehehe!」

Nei-san's completely cheerful.

「We'll leave the car here and we'll all be in my car on the way back, I will be getting the car tomorrow!」
「Okay. I'll be driving until the mansion. I'll have Yo-chan as my navigator…!」
「That's no good! Nei-sama doesn't have a Japanese driver's license! It'll become a problem when we get checked by the police!」

Katsuko-nee scolded Nei-san strongly…!

「I get it already, Katsun! Aah~ I wanted to be alone with Yo-chan for a bit longer!」

Nei-san answered in frustration.

「Ojou-sama had returned to the mansion with Margo-sama…so I think that you two should be alone for a while…If something happens, Nagisa is at the mansion right now…」

Katsuko-nee answered…

「Mao-chan has already slept so Nagisa will be staying in the mansion tonight…」
「Okay. I asked Nagisa to prepare the meal for Ojou-sama and Margo-sama. If it's her, she'll be able to make something as long as she opens the fridge. We're going to have a late dinner but, let's eat here…」

Yup. There's no need to worry if Nagisa-san's there.

「By the way…Megumi, where have you been?」

I asked Megumi.

「Err…I went to the doctor with Minaho-san's red car then we went to watch the talk with the Yakuza in the bar inside the car. Afterwards, I moved to Katsuko-san's green car and Katsuko-san and I waited around one kilometer away from the warehouse…」
「Okay」
「Tonight's the first activity of『Kuromori』with Megumi-sama so…I made her see the big picture tonight」

Katsuko-nee explained.

「But…You're amazing Yoshida-kun. You played your part perfectly」
「No, I didn't have any active part…Look, I'm just a 『Decoy』」
「…Decoy?」
「Yup. My job is only to create a chance for Margo-san to make a surprise attack」
「Amazing…That's amazing!」

Megumi grips my hand strongly…!

「…Megumi?」

「Ohon」Katsuko-nee cleared her throat…

「Anyway…Shouldn't we order food first?」

Nei-san opens the menu.

「Yo-chan, what would you like?」
「…Err」

I looked at the Menu…

「…Yoshida-kun's going to order the cheapest one right?」

Megumi told me.

「…Eh?」

…It was a bull's eye.

「I'm the same…I always put the Yamamine house on my mind. I'm always scolded by mother. 『Don't mind the price, just eat what you want』She said…」

Megumi said bashfully.

「Right…In my case, it's my first time coming to this kind of place. I don't know what to order even if I look at the menu」
「Eh, Yo-chan, your family didn't take you to a restaurant or something?」
「I did several times in elementary school but…in our case, mother decides on everything that we're going to eat…」
「…Even Yo-chan's share?」
「Yes…Both me and my father's share. Mother's the only one who reads the menu. Mother orders what she wants to eat then she just orders something cheap for me and my father」
「Then, Yo-chan hasn't eaten anything you wanted to eat?」
「But…even if you ask me what I want to eat, I haven't eaten various foods… That's normal to us」

「Yoshida-kun…You don't come to a family restaurant alone?」

Megumi asked me

「I don't…I'm still a first year high school student you know?」
「Eeh, when I was in my first year, I went to a family restaurant everyday! I spent more time in the family restaurant than the school…!」

Nei-san's…really a delinquent girl.

「I've gone to a hamburger shop and beef bowl shop before but… Family restaurant is expensive. It's impossible for me. Even in the hamburger shops, I can't eat anything but the 100 yen because that's the cheapest…」
「Family restaurant's expensive…?!」

Katsuko-nee spoke to the surprised Nei-san…

「He lived alone with the money his father left him so he tried to save as much as possible, am I right?」
「Yes…Money would disappear immediately if I go live in luxury…」
「But…it's fine now. Especially tonight, you've done your job for 『Kuromori』 You can eat anything you want. It's fine to get the most expensive dish」

Katsuko-nee gently told me…

「But…I I don't know what's delicious. The only things I know are the lunch meals in the high school…」

Honestly…Even if I look at the menu, I don't know what kind of dish is it.
What's 『Doria』?
Is 『Jambalaya』 an unexplored region?

「Then…Let's have Yo-chan eat the same as me. 『Mushroom hamburger steak』 You know hamburger at least don't you?」 1

Nei-san said

「Yes, let's have that one」

Katsuko-nee calls the waitress and orders.

「There's a drink bar so you can just drink whatever you want okay?」
「…Eh?」
「Yoshida-kun…Come here. You have to get it yourself!」

Megumi pulls my hand.

「Katsun, what do you want? I'll go get it for you」
「Then…please get me coffee」
「Roger!」

Nei-san, Megumi and I went to the place called drink bar…

「Eh…Can I choose what kind of drink I want?」
「That's right. Furthermore, refills are free. You can drink cola after drinking coffee too!」

…Amazing.
Had science gone too far…?!2
Since when????!

「I'll get some ice tea, what about Yoshida-kun?」
「Then, let's have that too」

Megumi taught me how to use the drink server.

「Megumi-chan, you don't want ice?」
「Yes…I'm bad at drinking with iced drinks」

Hee, so you can choose it yourself too…Amazing

「My senpai at the athletics club had chosen to study in a family restaurant during the exams」

Megumi told me.

「Eh…Why?」
「Because, if it's all night long…When you order at a drink bar, it's

free to get a refill. Those who live with their family in an apartment say that they feel more at ease studying in a family restaurant than in their own house」
「…Is that so?」
「Should we come here next time too?」
「Eh?」
「It's quite popular for couples to seat in a table of a family restaurant and study for exams… Senpai told me」
「…Hee」
「…Yoshida-kun, you don't want it?」
「That's not true…Let's go next time. Let's study」
「Yup…Got it」

Megumi nodded bashfully.

「You see…the doctor」

Oh right. What was the result at the clinic?

「What's wrong?」
「…She said that it's torn cleanly」
「…Eh?」

Megumi whispered in my ears…

「…My hymen's broken」
「Oh」
「I was given medicine…so we can do it even more tomorrow」
「…More?」
「…Sex」

Megumi's face turned red.

「That's why…Let's do it again」
「Yup… Got it」

Nei-san who grabbed Katsuko-nee's coffee came back.

「Guys, how long are you going to stay in the drink bar?!」
「…Ah, I'm sorry!」

Megumi returned to the seat bashfully…

「N? You're talking about tonight?」

Nei-san grins at my face.

「We're not…I'm going to sleep with Nei-san tonight」

Nei-san's surprised.

「…Eh?」
「I promised didn't I?…We're going to sleep together」

Nei-san…fidgets.

「I…Still can't have sex」
「I've already done lots of sex today」

Katsuko-nee and Yukino…I also took Megumi's virginity.
I did Misuzu twice in the bathroom and in the car too.
…It's too much.

「Let's just sleep hugging each other…I'm already tired for today」
「Yup…Let's do that!」

Nei-san smiled.

「I'll make Yo-chan my dakimakura!」
「I'll also make Nei-san my pillow」
「Then, let's make each other pillows…Let's sleep well」
「Okay」

Katsuko-nee calls us from her seat.

「…What are you doing?! The meal's about to arrive!」
「Okaay～ Let's go Yo-chan!」
「…Okay」

Then…We had a fun meal at a late time.

---

1. Pochi and Tama does ↩
2. "Did the world progress this much…?!" Is the appropriate translation but the fun one is the one you saw above ↩

★ April 30 Monday (Substitute Holiday)

79. Morning fierce battle

……Hm?

…It's morning already.
I'm still not used to the soft bed in Yuzuki-sensei's house yet…
When I slowly open my eyes…
Nei-san's beautiful face is in front of me.

「…Good morning. Yo-chan」

Nei-san's staring at me with a serious face.
Nei-san and I are at least 30 cm away from each other.
Nei-san who's lying down isn't wearing her contacts…
I'm looking at Nei-san's dark brown eyes.
This is the true color of Nei-san's eyes…

…Err
Last night, what happened?…

After eating dinner at a family restaurant, we returned to the mansion in Katsuko-nee's car…
When I finished taking a shower, Nei-san in her pajamas held a pillow…
Then we slept
Holding hands [1]
We didn't have sex…

I just held Nei-san's right hand with my left…

「…Good morning」

I greeted Nei-san.
Nei-san kept looking at my face.

「Uhm…Could it be that you weren't able to sleep?」

Nei-san's eyes are quite open so I'm a bit worried.
She couldn't sleep because we're in the same bed…?

「…I slept well. It's been a while since I slept peacefully. That's why I woke up earlier than usual」
「Then…What are you doing?」
「…Looking at Yo-chan's sleeping face」

…Err

「…Is it interesting to watch me sleeping?」
「Of course! I found out something amazing!」

Nei-san answered strongly.

「For example…Yo-chan doesn't roll over when sleeping!」
「…What?」
「You did't notice it? Yo-chan had the same posture since you slept last night. I've been watching for an hour long but you don't even move an inch. It's not a level of having a good sleeping posture! You should be moving around usually…!」

…Nei-san
…What kind of research is that?

「You see…I usually sleep on the sofa in the living room」
「…Yeah」
「I would fall on the floor if I move on our sofa. Maybe that's why?」

I think that this perhaps has become a hobby.
That was my life for two months since the graduation from middle school.

「…Oh, I see」

Nei-san nodded.

「Hey…Yo-chan. Yo-chan's living. You're here aren't you」

She said something strange suddenly…

「Eh…What? I'm here」
「…I'm glad」

Nei-san pats my face with her left hand.

「Yup…You're here. You're living. So warm」

Nei-san mutters while feeling my temperature.

「Living is amazing…!」
「…Eh」
「I…didn't dream of Kei-chan yesterday. It's the first time since Kei-chan died…」

…Nei-san.

「Are dead people jealous of living people? Of course, the dead can't do anything right?…They're no match to the living…」

Nei-san's gripping my nose while saying.
…Fuga, fuga, fugagaga!

「N-Nei-han, I canf bweaf…I'm dying!」

My voice got strange when Nei-san pinched my nose.

「Ah…Sorry, sorry」

Nei-san takes her finger away.
She laughed like a mischievous child…
As expected, Nei-san's smile is the best.

「Yo-chan, should we sleep like this every night?」
「…Yes?」
「You see, I was able to sleep without having a scary dream when I'm with Yo-chan…!」

Nei-san…laughed sadly.

「Is dreaming about Kei-san…scary?」
「Well of course…Kei-chan dies every evening. Kei-chan would always die when I wake up…Shouting 『Onee-chan, help me』… But, I can't help him…It really was…」

…Nei-san's sorrowful past.

It's reproduced every night in a form of dream…

「That's why…Let's sleep together It's fine isn't it? As long as I'm with Yo-chan, I won't have dreams about Kei-chan. Nfufufu…I dreamt of Yo-chan earlier this morning!」

…Me?

「…What kind of dream was it?」

I'm a bit curious.

「You see…Yo-chan is sitting in a chair. And there's 1,000 steamed meat buns on the desk in front」

…1,000 steamed meat buns?

「You see…I told Yo-chan to 『Eat! Eat more!』 forcibly making you eat! Yo-chan gave up around 300, saying 『I can't eat anymore!』 but, I push in the steamed meat buns into Yo-chan's mouth saying 『No, eat more!』 …! That was really fun」

…That's fun?
No…Forcing food in someone else must be fun.
Please spare me from such a situation.
Or rather, what kind of dream is that?
What is she suggesting?

「Hey…Yo-chan」

Nei-san…Snuggled to me…
She embraced my head tightly…
Her breasts is pushing my cheeks softly.
I can see Nei-san's cleavage from the gap in her pajamas.
Nei-san smells of sweat from last night…

「Yo-chan…I love you」
「M-Me too…!」

Nei-san embraced me on top of the bed…
Her body is warm.
Nei-san's living.

「…N, Yo-chan?」
「…What?」
「It's erect you know?」

…Err
I got erect.

「U-Uhm…That's a morning physiology phenomenon of a man!」

I desperately made an excuse.
I promised to not have sex with Nei-san yet.

「Eeh, aren't you getting aroused by me?!」
「Well, you see」

Nei-san laughs in front of me.

「Hey…Yo-chan」
「What?」
「Can I watch you masturbate?」
「…Eh?」
「You watched me yesterday didn't you? That's why I'm going to watch you today…」

Nei-san unbuttoned her pajamas…
Nei-san's big breasts…I can see her pink nipple.

「I…won't masturbate to Kei-chan anymore! I'm going to masturbate to Yo-chan starting now!」
「I'm going to be the material?」
「That's right! That's why make me your material too!」

Nei-san took off her pants…
Her white panty has a white stain coming out gradually.
Nei-san's aroused…She's wet.

「Look…Yo-chan, take out your dick. Let's masturbate together」

Nei-san invites me like it's just some game…
But, Nei-san's eyes…are burning with passion.

「Hurry up!」

Nei-san extends her finger on top of her panty.
…I-I
I took down the bottom of my pajama then…laid it down…!
…Then!

…Gachari!

The door suddenly opened!

「…That's enough!」

Katsuko-nee in her maid uniform dashed in!

「…T-That's enough!」

Megumi in her pajamas too…!

「E…W-What does this mean? I was sure I locked the door last night!」

Nei-san shouted at Katsuko-nee in surprise.

「Ahahaha…I've got the duplicate key of this room, look!

Katsuko-nee shows a silver key in her hand…

「Uhm…I also have one!」

Megumi has the same key in her hand…!

「If Nei-sama wants it too then I'll give you one later!」

Hey…Katsuko-nee!
Isn't that the key to my room?
That means that everyone can freely enter my room?

「Katsun you sly! Of course you have the key to all the rooms in this mansion.…But you see it's cruel to enter someone else's room without knocking first!」

…T-That's right
I-It's a breach of privacy![2]

「Shut up! Who was the one who's forcing the other to watch herself masturbate?!」

…W-Why does she know?

「Aah! Katsun, you were watching over this room all this time!」
「Of course! It's the duty of this mansion's maid, Katsuko desu!」 3

Haa…Katsuko-nee. She became defiant.

「Is that proper sex? If it's a morning service fellatio then Katsuko would watch warmly! But, of all things, masturbating…?! Even if god forgives you, this Katsuko and Megumi-sama won't allow it!」
「…W-Won't forgive!」

Katsuko-nee's in high spirits…
Megumi seems very embarrassed…Her face is already red.

「How about using your shameful body! Nei-sama for what sake is your pussy or mouth open?!」
「Shut it! Geez! Isn't that okay anyway?! Showing off masturbation is a splendid play you know! I want to do it!」

Nei-san's resisting all the way through!

「No, that's not! Katsuko will not allow the honor of his morning stinky semen being just squeezed by masturbation! Isn't that right, Megumi-sama?!」
「…Uhm!」
「…I S N ' T　T H A T　R I G H T!　Megumi-sama?!!!」
「…Ah, Yes」

…Megumi
Her embarrassed face is so cute.

「With that said… 『Katsuko's morning service lesson』 will start!!!」

…W-What?!

「Once again, good morning. It's time for 『Katsuko's morning service lesson』 Our student for today is…」

「G-Good morning…I-I'm Yamamine Megumi!」
「Megumi-sama, what will you study this morning?」
「I-I…I will lick Yoshida-kun's penis!」
「…It's just licking?」
「Uhm…Then let it out…inside my mouth」
「…What will?」
「Y-Yoshida-kun's…semen, please release a lot 」
「…When he lets it out, what will you do?」
「I-I'll drink it. I'll drink Yoshida-kun's semen」
「…Then, that's all?」
「If he's not satisfied with just my mouth… P-Please use Megumi's mouth. Megumi's always itching to be violated by Yoshida-kun…」
「Well done!」

Ufufufufu, Katsuko-nee laughs.
I'm sure they practiced this beforehand.
Megumi's so embarrassed that she might die right now…

「Then, get on the bed and greet the penis!」

Megumi comes to my bed as if sleepwalking.

「Hey, Katsun…What the hell is this!」

Nei-san is in a bad mood.

「My, would Nei-sama do fellatio then?」
「…T-That's」
「If not, then please just observe. You can just masturbate in the corner!」
「…Gunununu!!」

Megumi spoke to me with a red face.

「…C-Can I take it off?」

Megumi's in front

「Y-Yeah」

I nodded while gulping down my saliva.

「E-Excuse me」

Megumi's thin and long fingers rolled down my pajamas and underwear in an instant.
My erect penis appeared!

「…B-Big」

Megumi's surprised.

「…T-This thing went inside me」

Megumi's surprised looking at the erect penis once again.

「…S-Sorry」

I apologized unintentionally.

「Eh?…Why?」
「…It's gross isn't it? Are you not feeling disgusted?」
「There's no way that's true…It's part of Yoshida-kun's body」

Megumi's competely at a loss.

「It's a cute penis you know! Katsuko guarantees it!」

Katsuko-nee comments from the side.
Megumi's bewildered at the penis in front of her.
…Of course.
It's a bit grotesque for a first year girl.

「Megumi…You don't need to force yourself」
「…I'm not forcing myself」
「But」
「I'm not forcing myself!」

Megumi looks up at my face.

「I…I won't look at anyone else's but Yoshida-kun's, I don't intend to see anyone else for my entire life!」
「…Megumi」
「That's why this is okay! There's nothing but this for me! I'm

Yoshida-kun's woman for the rest of my life!」

Megumi boldly holds my penis with her hand…!

「W-Warm」

Megumi's surprised from the heat of the penis.

「…You see, please caress it in this manner!」

Katsuko-nee holds Megumi's hand…then moved it slowly…!

「Please grip it stronger. It's okay, it won't be crushed!」

The two of them are stroking it…I-It feels good.

「Dammit…If it was just Katsun obstructing…! I can't say anything if Megumi-chan being so brave!」

Nei-san says at the edge of the bed.
But, Nei-san begins to grope in between her crotch…
Nei-san is still filled with the intent to masturbate even in this situation!

「Megumi-sama…Please take a look. The tip of the penis is wet isn't it? Men get wet when they feel good you know?」

Katsuko-nee explains while looking at my pre-cum.

「…Yoshida-kun, does it feel good?」
「Yeah…It feels good, Megumi」
「…I'm glad」

Megumi's gentle smile…
…Classmate
Chairman and an honor student.
A tall and slim beauty from the athletic club.
That kind of girl is holding my penis right now…
…It's like a dream.

「Then…should you begin to lick it?」
「…Ah, yes」

Megumi's nervous from Katsuko-nee's words.
Katsuko-nee's holding a camera before I noticed it.

「Then first, here…the smooth surface is called the glans. It looks like a turtle head doesn't it?」
「…Yes」
「This is the most sensitive spot for men. Please hold it in your mouth boldly. You must not bite it with your teeth. Rub it gently with your lip and tongue gently…」

「…But」

The glans that's shining with pre-cum stinks a lot.
Megumi's hesitating…

「Then, should Katsuko have it?!」

Katsuko-nee opened her mouth wide and tries to put my penis in her mouth…

「Wait…Please wait. I'll do it! I'll do it okay?!」

Megumi grips my penis with both hands and brings her face close.

「…I'm so embarrassed I could die」
「It's fine. There's no human that could die from embarrassment! Rather, the embarrassment is fun!」
「…The embarrassment is fun?」
「Megumi-sama will learn it soon! Go on!」

Megumi looks at me…

「Yoshida-kun…I'll be licking it!」

She opens her mouth wide…and puts my erect penis in her mouth…!
Megumi's mouth is so hot and wet.
Katsuko-nee takes photos of the state…!

「Megumi-sama…please take a look at his face. He needs to see the face of Megumi-sama serving him!」

Megumi looks up at me while sucking.
Our eyes met…
Megumi's wet eye.

「Then lick the penis with your tongue. Think of the glans as a candy. Lick it with your whole tongue…!」

Megumi…licks my penis with her red tongue.
She doesn't seem to know how to use her tongue yet.
She licks it like a kitty drinking water.

「You need to look up at him while licking. You have to observe the reaction in the parts you're licking…!」

Megumi's eyes look up at me…while licking my penis with a serious face.
Megumi's tongue licks the back of the glans…

「…Aah」

I instinctively let my voice out…

「…Yoshida-kun, it feels good here?」
「…Yeah」
「Then I'll lick it more here!」

Megumi smiles as she discovered my pleasure point.
It seems that her nervousness is gone…
She uses her tongue happily…

「Use the other parts of your tongue…The tip, the side…even the back.」

As expected of an honor student…
Megumi's learning fellatio very fast from Katsuko-nee's instruction…

「It's about time we got intense?…It's a bit hard to explain so can I show a demonstration instead?」

Katsuko-nee's face approach my penis

「I'm going to move my mouth like a pussy right now. This will lead him to ejaculation. Use your lip and tongue. Imagine your whole mouth as your vagina」
「…Okay」
「Do it like this…!」

Katsuko-nee suddenly held my penis in her mouth…!
She's making a piston of her head while sucking…!
That…feels good.

「…Do you get it? Please do it that way」
「Yes…I'll do my best!」
「Don't tell me that…tell that to him!」

Megumi looks up at me bashfully.

「…Yoshida-kun, I'll do my best. So please ejaculate inside my mouth…!」

…Megumi
Those words are enough to make me ejaculate!

「…Then, I'll be doing it」

Megumi puts my penis in her mouth.
She began to piston.
Megumi's lips…feel good.

「…Katsuko will help out too」

Katsuko-nee grabs the root of my penis with her right hand and strokes it…
Her left hand is brushing my balls gently.

「Nfufu…I'll also help out!」

Nei-san reaches out into Megumi's pajamas and unbuttoned it…

「Look, it's Megumi-chan's breasts! Yo-chan, take a look…!」

Megumi's pink nipples.
Megumi's face is turning red in embarrassment while sucking off

my penis.

「Ah…Yo-chan looks like he's feeling good…It feels good for me too…!」

Nei-san's completely comforting herself.
She's moving her right hand on top of her completely wet panties.
Her left hand is rubbing her own rich breasts.
She's kneading her pink nipples…

「…Aaahn…Yo-chan, what should I do…I'm about to cum…Nei-chan's going to cum!」

When Nei-san's about to reach the climax, her mental age regresses…
Her first person turns from 『I』 to 『Nei-chan』

「Nei-chan's feeling good!…Nei-chan goes crazy when she sees Yo-chan's pleased face!…Nei-chan's about to cum already!」

…Aaaah, I'm about to reach my limit too!

「Yo-chan, order Nei-chan! Order her to cum! Please! Nei-chan wants to be ordered by Yo-chan…!」

Nei-san shouted!

「…N-Nei-san, cum! I'm about to cum too!」
「That's no good! Order me strongly! Bully Nei-chan!」

…Aah!
…I can't endure it!

「…Cum! Nei! Go and cum!」
「Un…! Nei-chan's cumming! Yo-chan let me so I'm going to cum! I'm cummiiiing!! Aaaaaaah…Cumiiiiiing!!」

Nei-san flew to heaven!

「M-Me too…Megumi…Cumming, I'm cumming…!」

Megumi looks up at me.

Her eyes are saying『Got it. Cum!』…!
…Cute!
What cuteness…!

「…C-Cumming…Megumi!!!!」

…Byurururu, byrurururu, byurururururu!

I ejaculated intensely inside Megumi's mouth…!
Megumi's accepting the semen even though her face looks to be in pain…
Megumi accepted a man's semen for the first time.
Katsuko-nee took out her camera again and captures her face.

「…Uuuuu!」

I dropped everything to the last drop in Megumi's mouth.

「…That's enough. Thank you, Megumi」

I pulled out my penis from Megumi's mouth.

「Megumi-sama…Open your mouth wide and please show the semen inside your mouth」

Katsuko-nee instructs her.

「That's the right custom for fellatio」

…That's right.

Megumi bashfully opened her mouth…and showed it to me.
There's a lot of white liquid on top of her red tongue.
Katsuko-nee took a photo of it.

「Then, close your mouth…and chew it. Let out a lot of saliva. The saliva will make the semen easier to drink」

Megumi obediently follows Katsuko-nee's guidance…
She chewed…and gulped it down.

「…It's bitter」

Megumi told her impression.

「The morning sperm is very thick…You shouldn't say 『Bitter』 but 『Delicious』!」

The demon teaching enters.

「Yes…It was delicious. Yoshida-kun」

Megumi told me bashfully.

「Thank you, it felt really good」

I embraced Megumi and told her.

「I'll do it anytime…Just tell me anytime if you want to do it at school」
「…Megumi」
「Because…we can only do fellatio at lunch break right?」

Megumi smiles, embarrassed.

「What are you saying, you have enough time to have sex at school! You can do it three times!」

Katsuko-nee insists strongly…!

「But…There's no place to have sex in school」

Megumi answered
Well…That's what you'd normally think

「There's a place. A secret room under the principal's office. There's a bed too」

I remembered the monitor room and told Megumi.

「Is that so?…Then we can have sex during lunch break there?」
「Yeah…I think?」
「Yoshida-kun…Do you want to do it with me?」

Megumi snuggled to me…
Megumi's hair smells like shampooo.

「I want to do it with Megumi all the time」
「I'm happy…Then let's have sex everyday, Yoshida-kun!」

Megumi's pajamas are showing her private parts.
I can see her cute nipples.
Yeah…My penis begins to gain it's strength again.

「…Megumi-sama…The fellatio isn't done yet!」

Katsuko-nee comments from the side.

「Ah…Yes. What should I do?」

Megumi returned to her student face.

「You have to lick the penis that finished ejaculation again! Suck especially the tip of the glans, completely suck out the remaining semen from the penis!」
「Yes, got it!」

Megumi lies down by my feet and sucks my penis once again.
She licks the erect penis filled with sperm…

「Nfufufu…Yo-chan」

Nei-san who's soaking in reverberations…holds my hand.

「…You see, Nei-chan loves Yo-chan! She loves you a lot!」

She's still in her baby regression.

「…Yo-chan, do you love Nei-chan?」
「…I do」
「I'm so happy! Nei-chan's really happy!」

Nei-san clings to me.
Nei-san's big breasts…are suffocating! It hurts!

……PIPIPIPIPI !

Suddenly, my phone rang…

「Nei-san, I got a call…please move!」

I took my phone near the pillow.
Then lay down on top of the bed…
My lower half is being cleaned up by Megumi's fellatio.
Nei-san's being a breast pillow on top.
At my legs is Katsuko-nee guiding Megumi in her service…

「…Hello」

When I looked at my phone…!

『Good morning! It's Misuzu!』

…Yeah
Of course it's her.

『Danna-sama…Can Misuzu pee?』

Then…I can hear the sound of pissing from the other side…

「Huh, Yoshida-kun…Your penis got big again?!」

I heard Megumi's voice from my crotch.

「Then, Katsuko will be taking the second sperm for today!!」

Katsuko-nee…snaps to my penis!!!

「Yo-chan…Nei-chan loves Yo-chan so much!」
「Katsuko-san's tongue is so amazing. So you can do it like that? I've been enlightened…!」
「…Nfufufufu!」
『…Danna-sama, Misuzu's letting out a looooooot!!!』

…What's happening to me?
…Awawawawawawawa!

---

1. That's beyond lewd! ↩
2. They have cameras installed there too and you're complaining about them having a key to your door? ↩
3. I just want to let you all know that Katsuko speaks cute and polite ↩

◇ School Arc II

80. Adolescent girl Yamamine Megumi (Part 1)

…Fuu

Megumi and Katsuko-nee escape to the shower room after squeezing me once each.
The three women pleaded to 「wash my back」, but I declined politely.
It's obvious that it would be develop into sex immediately[1]
Or rather, I jumped at the shower immediately when the three people are holding each other back.
…After that.
Misuzu found out that I got a fellatio from Megumi and Katsuko-nee.
Misuzu objected from the other side of the phone, saying 『Doing it while I'm not there, so unfair, that's unfair!』 and Nei-san who turned back replied 「It's the fault of the one not here!」 and ended the call without permission.
Nei-san…Even though you didn't participate in the fellatio tournament.
She thinks that Misuzu doesn't know…
Aaah～
I'm scared of what's ahead…Misuzu will be coming here today.

Instead of feeling refreshed, I somehow felt dead tired coming out of the shower room.
Megumi…waits alone in her uniform.

「…Yoshida-kun, you see」
「…What's wrong?」
「I…I have exercise with the athletic club today. That's why…!」

Megumi's face reddened and she looked down.

「…Can you come with me?」
「Me?」
「Yeah…I want to introduce you to the club members. As my boyfriend…」

So there's that event…!
…Err

「…You don't want it?」

Megumi looks at my face anxiously.

「Megumi…you want to do it?」
「I want to, or rather…It's the rule in the athletics club」
「…Rule?」
「Look, don't they say that love and club activities are incompatible?」
「Is that so?」
「Yoshida-kun, you never heard of it?」
「…I came from an all boys middle school so there was no love at school. In the first place, I never entered a club」
「I see」
「Then…What kind of rule is that?」

Megumi looks embarrassed and frowned her eyebrows.

「You see…When a member gets a boyfriend, he has to be introduced to the seniors and he must be approved. They'll judge if they're going out seriously and would be made to break up when it's an irresponsible boyfriend」

…Geh

「…What should I do?」
「What's wrong, Yoshida-kun?」
「Well…I don't have just Megumi. I had sex with Katsuko-nee and Nagisa-san. I even raped Yukino…Aren't I absurdly irresponsible?…!」
「…That's not true」
「…But」
「Yoshida-kun's amazingly honest. Your honesty is something I love…!」
「Is that okay for me?」
「I'm okay with Yoshida-kun…!」

Megumi embraces me

「…Megumi」
「That's why…It's fine. Even if I introduce you to the members of the club」

…Megumi had declared it to Misuzu. She even consented.
Nagisa-san said that at the time.
I think that Katsuko-nee will allow it happily. But, I should ask her at least.
Also, Nei-san too…

「Can I ask an approval from Katsuko-nee and Nei-san?」
「…I see. It's bad to do it without permission isn't it?」

Megumi consented.

「Wait a moment…I'll change into my uniform」

I changed my clothes in haste…!

◇ ◇ ◇

We went down to the dining room together.
Margo-san's drinking coffee while reading an English newspaper

「Ah…Good morning」

Margo-san's back to her usual self.

「Good morning…Yoshida-kun. Megumi-chan too」

Margo-san smiles refreshingly

「Are you okay already?」
「Yeah, Minaho attended to me. I slept well overnight so I'm already fine…I showed something disgraceful last night」

Margo-san bashfully said.

「No. Margo-san saved me a lot yesterday. Thank you very much」

I bowed deeply.
In the end Margo-san knocked out the Yakuza on the black

clothes…
I hardly did anything.

「Even I got saved by Yoshida-kun…I was surprised that you shot the pistol」

Megumi's surprised from what Margo-san laughingly said.
It seems that she doesn't know about the events in the warehouse last night…
Only Katsuko-nee's on monitor standby in the car and she purposely didn't show the behind the scenes of 『Kuromori』 work.

「Yoshida-kun, I want you to promise me one thing」

Margo-san spoke to me.

「Yes, what is it?」
「I'll be teaching you how to use pistols so you must not shoot until then」
「Ah…Was I that unsteady?」

I shot it lightly but…it didn't hit at all.

「Rather than unsteady…No, let's leave that for later」

Margo-san answered while thinking about something.

「…What?」
「You see, when the pistol bullets hit a concrete floor at a strange angle, it might ricochet in an unexpected direction」
「Oh, that's dangerous」
「That's why…You shouldn't touch a pistol until you acquire enough practice. Okay?」
「Yes, got it」

…I see, it's dangerous if the bullet I shot bounces and hits someone else.
Yeah. I won't touch pistols until Margo-san permits me.
Let's do that.

「Yeah yeah yeah! Breakfast is served!」

Katsuko-nee and Nei-san comes in with the meal wagon.
It is croissant and salad today. Ham and eggs…and

「This is a homemade yogurt Katsun made!」

Uwaa…You can make yogurt in a house.
I was sure that you can't make it outside a chemical factory

「It's good for your body!」

Katsuko-nee explains with a smile.
…But

「Huh…Yo-chan, you eat yogurt don't you?」

…Err

「Honestly…I haven't eaten much…」

Ever since elementary school lunches?
I've never seen that in the middle school dorms…

「Okay, then take a sip!…Katsun, I think that the one with sugar is better for Yo-chan!」
「That's right! I think I have an oligosaccharide, I'll bring it!」

Katsuko-nee runs to the kitchen when told by Nei-san…

In the end…I will eat yogurt sprinkled with sugar.

「Let's eat!」

Katsuko-nee looks at me with a smile…
I timidly put the yogurt in my mouth.
…Sour. It's far sourer than the lunch yogurt in my memory. Also, sweet.
This must be amazingly sour when you don't put sugar on it.

「How is it?」
「It tastes mysterious.」

I can only return such an impression to Katsuko-nee's question.

「It's good for your body so don't leave a drop!」

Katsuko-nee told me.
I bit on the metal spoon…
…I wonder why
…The tears are welling up.

「…W-What's wrong, Yo-chan? Did the yogurt not suit your taste?!」

Nei-san looks at me in surprise.

「…No, it's not. That's not it」

I answered while wiping my tears.

「『It's good for your body so don't leave a drop!』is something my late grandmother tells me. When I thought that it's been a while since I heard that…I somehow felt really happy…!」

During my childhood…I always ate alone with my grandmother.
When she died…I always ate alone.
The words『It's good for your body so don't leave a drop』…
Grandmother, really…took care of me.
Katsuko-nee said the same words.

「…Thank you, Katsuko-nee」
「Eh…About what?」

Katsuko-nee seems to not know what I'm thanking her for.

「It doesn't matter…Anyway, thank you」

Katsuko-nee's embarrassed…

「…W-want to eat more yogurt? It's also delicious with a croissant!」
「Yeah, let's do that」

I tear up the croissant and ate it with the yogurt.
…This might be easier to eat.

「It's delicious, Katsuko-nee」
「Is that so? I'm glad」

While we're having a meal, Megumi started to talk to the women.

「Uhm…I want to tell the members of the athletics club that I'm going out with Yoshida-kun. I-Is that okay?」

Megumi spoke a bit nervous.

「Isn't that fine?…right, Katsuko-san?」

Margo-san answered first.

「Yes. The athletic club is noisy aren't they? I think that you should tell them first」

Katsuko-nee laughingly answered.

「…Is that okay?」
「Nagisa and I want Megumi-sama to experience a pleasant high school life that we weren't not able to experience. You don't need to hold back for Nagisa and I so enjoy it with all your might!」
「Thank you very much」

Megumi bowed to Katsuko-nee.
…Err, Nei-san

「…Isn't that okay?」

She said with a smile.

「I want to be Yo-chan's sister so…I think of Megumi-chan as my sister. Should we just make Yo-chan and Megumi-chan go out in the school?」
「Yes…It doesn't matter in the school. Misuzu-san already promised too…」

…I see
Misuzu said that she'll tell her friends that she's going out with me too…
I'll be Misuzu's boyfriend there.

「Very well, got it. I'll cooperate…Err, the captain of athletics club was Takeshiba, was it?」

Nei-san said.

「Yes, Takeshiba-senpai」
「Isn't she bad because she's hard headed? You're gonna get separated when she doesn't approve, right?」

Nei-san stayed for a year so she seem to know the third years well.

「I'll quit the athletics club then.」
「…Megumi」
「But, I'm fine…If it's Yoshida-kun, I'm sure everyone will accept him」

Megumi said that but…
But, I
I don't have confidence in myself.

「Anyway, do your best…you can consult me anytime if something happens! If you want, do you want me to negotiate with Takeshiba-san directly?」

No…If it's Nei-san talking.
I remembered her intrusion in our classroom last time…It's a bit scary.

「Yoshida-kun and I will talk to her first. If something happens then I'll definitely consult you about it. I'll leave everything to you in that case…!」

Megumi told Nei-san with a face showing deference

「Got it. Then…!」

Nei-san laughed.

「Can I call Megumi-chan, Megu-chan?」
「…What?」
「Look, I'm calling Misuzu-chan Mii-chan. That's why Megumi-chan's Megu-chan…No?」

「No…please call me like that. I will also call Nei-san… 『Nei-Neesan』 」

Megumi answered.

「I'm a woman native born to 『Kuromori』. That's why I'll be calling everyone 『Katsuko-neesan』, 『Margo-neesan』, 『Nei-neesan』 … 」
「You don't have to, Megumi-sama's not a prostitute of this mansion…! 」

Katsuko-nee answered.

「Yes, I'm a woman only for Yoshida-kun. But, I don't want to forget that this is my home… 」

Megumi answered clearly.

◇ ◇ ◇

When the meal ended…Katsuko-nee brought a big bag.

「Yesterday, Tamayo-sama brought this for your sake…! 」

For me…?!
Well, Tamayo-san was a stylist, wasn't it?

「It's clothes for today's operation! 」

Margo-san smiled at me.

「These are clothes that have a good reputation with middle school girls! 」

Hey…Nei-san?
I see, I'm going to make Yukino's little sister fall today…
Looking at Megumi…Her eyes say 『I understand』
She's a half blood sister of Megumi.
They must know each other from the relatives gathering…

「We've got three kinds prepared just in case… 」

Katsuko-nee took out three kinds of clothes onto the table.

「Err…Plan A is a 『Fresh Sportsman』」

A branded sports wear, a pair of trousers and a sneaker…

「Plan B is 『Adult like intelligence』」

This one's a cardigan buttondown. And slacks. Brown leather shoes.

「Then…Lastly, plan C is a 『Prince of stars』」

Eh, white shirt and white pants. Also, a yellow scarf with strange rose flowers embroidery. Then, a mysterious thick soled boots.
It certainly looks prince-like…but what kind of prince is this?
Is it an idol of some sort?

「I wonder what's good…?」

Nei-san answered Katsuko-nee's question.

「Isn't that obvious? It's 『Athlete!』 It suits Yo-chan too」

Eh…What part of me is an 『Athlete』?

「I think that 『Intellect』 would be good. High school is adult from the middle school perspective isn't it? I think that he should improve his adult atmosphere」

Margo-san said.

「Right…I think that 『Athlete』 is a bit of an idiot」 2

Katsuko-nee seems to agree with Margo-san's opinion.

「What are you saying, isn't it cute because it's a bit idiotic?」

…Nei-san You're really thinking that I'm 『A bit idiotic』 aren't you?
No…It's true though

「Megumi-chan, what do you think?」

Margo-san asked Megumi.

「I…I think this is good」

Saying that, she pointed at the 『Prince of the star』

「That's not 『A bit idiotic』but 『Quite an idiot!』! Megu-chan, you have that sense?」

Nei-san's surprised.

「I don't like this. But…I know about Maika-chan well」

Megumi told the ladies.

「Maika is Yukino's little sister」

Megumi's words brought impact to the whole room…!

「…Then it can't be helped that we'll use 『Prince of the star』」
「…Yeah, it can't be helped」
「With that said, Yo-chan. You're going to change to 『Prince of the star』later!」

Eh…I'm going to wear this?!!!
S-Seriously?
Ah, they're serious…

I don't have a choice as always.3

◇　◇　◇

「You really don't need us to send you off?」

Katsuko-nee asks us at the entrance.

「No, we'll be walking. Also, we're going to school everyday so I feel sorry if you guys send us off」

Megumi answered.

「Do you remember the way?」
「Yes, this is my old playground after all…」

Megumi lived here until she turned six.

「Please come back by 10:30 for our next operation」

Katsuko-nee told me.
Yes…The 『Ouji-sama』 time is waiting.
I'm a bit bummed.

「Then, good bye」

Megumi politely greeted Katsuko-nee.

「Bye」

I copied her and bowed.

「Ah…wait」

Katsuko-nee fixes my neckband.
Then, she fixed my hair.

「Yeah…You got cute」

Katsuko-nee…at least say cool.

「Megumi-sama, please take care along the way」

Katsuko-nee told Megumi.

「Yes…Got it. He's everyone's Yoshida-kun after all」

Somehow, I hate the feeling of being treated like a child.
I can fix my own neckband.

「Then, we're going」

We told Katsuko-nee again

「Sure, have a nice day. Take care!」

Katsuko-nee saw us off satisfied.

Megumi turned back towards the entrance.

「…This direction is a secret path」

Megumi descends down a mountain path where the trees grew instead of the road.

「I think that it's tiresome on the way back…but we're only going down here」

…Certainly, this is a road.
There are some stairs here and there.

「…Ah, it's still there」

Megumi stopped in the middle of the mountain path
Looking at it, there's a small house at the east side of the way.

「That's was my secret base during childhood」
「Hee」

Megumi played here when she was six.

「Let's have sex there next time」
「…Eh?」
「It was built there on purpose actually. I've seen it a lot of times when I was a child. My mother was violated by a guest there too…」
「…Megumi」
「Violate me like how they did it to mother…」

Megumi's eyes are wet.

「Yeah…Got it」
「…That's a promise」

Walking for a while, we arrived at the road towards the school.
What, it's five minutes by car but…it's just ten minutes using the secret path.
Speaking of which, the mansion was built disguised as a girls dormitory wasn't it?
Then, I get why it's close…
The residents of the dorm would just walk here everyday.
Megumi spoke when we saw the school gate.

「Hey, Yoshida-kun…can we hold hands?」

Megumi held out her hand.

「…Okay」
「Thanks」

Megumi and I held hands…
Holding hands with a woman.
Feels, somewhat itchy.
I'm losing strength…It's embarrassing.
But…Megumi's hand is holding mine tightly.
Megumi's nervous.
I gripped it tightly in return.

「…Yoshida-kun?」
「It's fine…I'm here with you」
「Yeah…Thanks」

We entered the school gate while holding hands.
Then, we went to the athletic club's building.
It's holiday but there are students doing their club activities.
Everyone's looking…
At Megumi and I holding hands while walking.
Megumi's hand is hot.
She's sweating gradually.

「…Megumi」
「It's okay. It's embarrassing but I won't be ashamed」 4

Megumi answered with a red face.

「Good morning, Yamamine-san」

A schoolgirl from athletics club called out to Megumi.

「Good morning, Koujou-san」 5

The person called Koujou-san noticed Megumi and I holding hands.

「Eh…really?」

I-It's not 'really'!

「…W-we're going out」

Megumi answered bashfully.

「N-No way…!」

Koujou-san became speechless.
…Sorry
…Sorry
…Sorry
Someone like me…

「I'm not joking…isn't that right, Yoshida-kun?」

Megumi turns to me.

「Yeah. It's like a lie but it's not!」

I answered for better or for worse

「…Is that so?」

Koujou-san looks at us.

「Speaking of which, Yamamine-san became beautiful. Did you change your hairstyle?」
「Yeah…I had it cut yesterday」
「…Is that so?」

We came to the clubroom in a somewhat awkward atmosphere.

「…Wait here」

Megumi told me

「I'm going to change」
「Y-Yeah」

Megumi and Koujou-san entered the clubroom
I waited outside the building.
I should've been told to wait in a different location.

There seems to be people inside the clubroom already.
I can hear an 「Eh□」 or 「Kyaa」 from inside.
The entrance of the clubroom was open so I looked inside out of curiosity.
…What?
I'm a zoo panda?
A rare animal?

Before long, the door opened and Megumi came out.
Megumi in her training suit and shorts.
Her long thin bare legs…
Slim tall body.
Long and narrow beautiful eyes.
The haircut Yuuka-san did yesterday suits her.
…A beauty.
A really beautiful girl.
It's not just her face…Her whole body's style is also beautiful.
Her body…I embraced it yesterday.
My semen went inside Megumi's womb.
I ejaculated in that cute mouth this morning.
She drank my semen saying it's 「Delicious」
…Megumi
So adorable.
I think she's really cute.
I want to embrace that body with all my might.

…Just.
There's a lot of athletic club members behind Megumi…
Everyone's looking at us with exited eyes…

「T-Thanks for the wait」
「Ah, yeah」

…It's somewhat embarrassing
Everyone's looking at us.
They're fixed at us.
They're staring at us.
A member that looks like a second year spoke to Megumi.

「…Megumiii, are you really sure about him?」

…I'm shocked.

「It's fine! I love Yoshida-kun!」

Megumi suddenly answered in a loud voice.
Even she is surprised after she said that.
She became red from the shock.
The female members shouted 「Kyaaaaa□!」in joy…

「…Ah, you see, Captain is already at the grounds」

Megumi said with teary eyes.

「…What should we do then?」

Megumi seems to intend to report it to everyone in the club this morning.
It can be done secretly in the clubroom but…there's a strong public eye in the grounds.

「…Got it Let's go」

I held out my hand.

「…Is that okay?」

I looked at Megumi's eye.

「It doesn't matter…I love Megumi…!」

I can hear shouts of 「Wow」from behind again…!

「…Yeah」

Megumi holds my hand.

「Let's go, Yoshida-kun!」

We ran towards the ground while holding hands!
The athletics club girls follow us from behind.
Everyone's going to the grounds.
It's something like a movie.
It doesn't seem to be real.

But…I'm holding Megumi's hand.
The warmth of this hand…
The strength of the grip…
This isn't a lie, it told me that it's the truth.

We arrived at the ground while breathing roughly.
There's not only the track and field that's on the ground, there are other athletic groups too.[6]」
Honestly…I'm a bit scared.

「Ah, it's there!」

When I match my glance with Megumi…
There are third years in their training suits gathered and talking at the bench in front of the ground.
The captain of the track and field must be there too.

「The tall one with a short cut, in the center…That's captain Takeshiba Haruka-san」

Megumi taught me.

「She's beautiful isn't she?」

Certainly, she is.
She's taller and a bit darker than Megumi.
Her big eyes…her face looks a bit scary.,

「Takeshiba senpai! Yamamine-san seems to want to talk with you!」

The second year from a while ago shouted as if making fun.
Takeshiba-san and the third years noticed the other members who went towards them briskly and us in the middle.
She stood up and looked at us…!

「…What do you want to talk about?!」

Captain Takeshiba spoke to Megumi looking displeased.
…Megumi's heart is throbbing fast.

「C-Captain…Also, all the third year senpais. I want to report to the

members of the track and field!」

Megumi waved her hand that's holding mine…!
Then she shouted with all her might!

「I…I am going out with this person!」

The ground suddenly became noisy…!

「…Eh, what what?」
「…What's going on?」
「…What's starting?」

The students gathered around us fast…
Takeshiba-senpai looks at the spectators unpleasantly and clicks her tongue.
Then, she spoke to Megumi.

「…What is this about?」

Then, she spit out.
Megumi breathed in…and shouted in a loud voice!

「…I'm in love with this person!!!!!」

---

1. Yoshida's better than those beta harem MC's where they don't fuck the girl when they wash the back. He refuses coz he's going to fuck a lot later anyway ↩
2. Athletes are triggered ↩
3. You can't choose this early in the novel anyway ↩
4. Both says hazukashii but I think she meant it like that ↩
5. 高城, if the author mentioned how to read her name, please comment ↩
6. I guess I should've stick to track and field club if they're going to mention that there are other clubs under athletics. lol, anyway, let's see if it can be edited ↩

81. Adolescent girl Yamamine Megumi (Part 2)

「…I am in love with this person!!!!! 」

Now then…it has become a major incident.
The spectators gather in the ground one after another.
The captain of track and field, Takeshiba Haruka-senpai…spoke to Megumi with ill-humor MAX.

「…Our women's division goes both in literary and military arts. Track and field is a 『Club(武)』however, I think of it as a military arts(陸上)[1] You know that well don't you…?! 」

Takeshiba-senpai scowls at the spectating eyes.

「…Yes, I know. Don't cut corners in study and club activities! Do your best and hold out to it! 」

Megumi answers senpai with serious eyes…

「…You, do you think you're doing it properly when you're flirting with a man! 」

Takeshiba-senpai shouted!
The whole ground shakes!!!

「Yes! I'm doing my best to show it to you! 」

Megumi answered senpai with a voice that won't lose to her.
Megumi's a strong willed girl.
She can't lose to the threatening voice of the captain.

「Is that so…You, you're not concerned about me aren't you? 」

Senpai glares at me.
She's looking at me as if I'm an unpleasant creature.

「You…Name? 」
「…Yoshida 」

「First year?」
「Yes…I'm in the same class as Megumi」

Senpai snorted

「Hee…So you're calling her 『Megumi』」

Shit…it came out of my mouth unintentionally

「Yes, Yoshida-kun's my lover after all. Of course he'll call be by my first name!」

Megumi answered clearly.

「Hmm…I think you know it but, you know that when boys grow tired of you, they'd just slacken and break up with you」
「We won't…If senpai was able to predict that, I would quit the club」

Takeshiba-senpai's face is showing anger.

「Then…You're saying that a man is much more important than track and field?!」

Megumi answered without flinching.

「Track and field is important. But, I will be with Yoshida-kun forever so we will never break up!」

Senpai laughs.
She's making a fool of Megumi…

「Are you an idiot? Men just wants to fuck you. He's just going to play with you and throw you away anyway…!」
「He's not that kind of person. He's an honest man. I will love him for my entire life. I will give birth to his child. I've already decided…!」

The spectators went 「Oooh」 from Megumi's words!

「Is that so…Then how about resigning right now? Someone like you who's head is loose from love is influencing the morale of the

club. You're trying to look cool in the club aren't you…Just leave already. I'll be talking to sensei. File a leave right now!」

Senpai coldly rejects Megumi.

「Can't you make that judgement after seeing my practice attitude?」

Megumi still hangs to captain.

「I already told you that's no longer necessary…!」

Takeshiba-senpai's words are cold.

「…Is that so? That's regrettable」

Megumi looks down

「…It's been a short while but I appreciate your kindness」

Takeshiba-senpai laughs at Megumi.

「You never took care of us so sorry, but I'll make it so that you've never been related to the track and field club ever since the beginning. You don't need to file a leave. I'll be throwing away your entry of the club. I'll make it so that you never joined in the first place!!」
「…Got it」

…Cruel
What the hell is that…?!

「Please wait a moment…Isn't that strange?!」

I told senpai.

「What…You're dissatisfied with my decision?」

Takeshiba-senpai glares at me…!

「Yes, I'm objecting. I think that it's strange. This is just weird!」

I didn't stop.

…It's strange.
This isn't like me at all.
But…I thought of Megumi's feelings…
…There's no way I can shut up!

「You…do you intend to go against your senior even though you're just a first year?!」

Takeshiba-senpai's eyes are scary…!
But, I can't lose!

「This matter doesn't involve the hierarchy! I'm saying that Megumi 『Doesn't want to do anything half-assed so she's doing her whole best in track and field』 Megumi's always diligent, going all out, a woman that does her best! Megumi never lets a chance pass by, and she's going to be taken out because she's gonna be an obstacle for the club? That's weird! That's wrong!」

My feelings went out of my mouth…
This is the first time…
This isn't like me.
…But.

「How dare you say that…Are you an arrogant idiot? Don't joke with me!」

Takeshiba-senpai pushed me away!
I fell down on the ground.

「…Yoshida-kun!」

Megumi runs up to me…

「Really…what an eyesore, can you get out of the ground? Get out right now!」

Takeshiba-senpai's shout roared in the grounds…!

「…I won't!」

I shouted to senpai.

「I won't be moving out of here until you give Megumi a chance!」

Megumi embraces me tightly!

「…Yoshida-kun! It's enough, don't do this!」
「This isn't good at all! This is!」

I glared back at Takeshiba-senpai…!
…Then!

「…Right, this isn't good at all」

Iwakura-senpai appeared from the spectators.
Iwakura Yukiyo-san…
The student council president…One of Yuzuki-sensei's 『Toys』…

「I heard everything…I'll be speaking as the student council president, Takeshiba-san, aren't you overdoing it?」

Iwakura-san smiles.

「…This is a problem of the girls track and field club. I think that the student council president is unrelated here」

Takeshiba-senpai repels Iwakura-kaichou's intervention.

「My…All of the club activities are under the student council's jurisdiction though. Takeshiba-san, you don't know that?」

Iwakura-kaichou talks to Takeshiba-senpai calmly.

「Well…I know. But, I'm the captain of the girl track and field club…!」
「What can you do if you're the captain? You're not consulting the advising teacher and you just selfishly made a junior member quit the club? I think that there's no club president like that…」

Iwakura-kaichoi corners Takeshiba-senpai with cruel eyes…

「…What are you telling me to do then?」

Takeshiba-senpai sighs.

「You should just deal with it normally. Let's see, how about you watch over that first year for a month? Then you can decide on what to do with her after that」

Iwakura-senpai…is trying to give Megumi a chance in the track and field club.

「…I can just watch over her for a month right?」
「Yes, just for a month」

Captain Takeshiba and Iwakura-Kaichou looks at each other.

「I won't change my thoughts though…」
「You won't know unless you try though?」

Takeshiba-senpai clicks her tongue.

「…Got it. I will let kaichou save face for now」
「My, sorry about that…Takeshiba-san」

Iwakura-kaichou laughs.

「As expected of Iwakura-kaichou!」
「Yo, Seitokaichou!」
「Thank you for your fair judgement!」

The spectators praises Iwakura-kaichou.
Kaichou just lightly raised her hand to answer the shouts of joy.
Takeshiba-senpai…is in discontent.

「Uhm…Thank you very much」

I bowed to Iwakura-kaichou.
Megumi also bowed behind me.

「I don't need to be thanked by you…I'm just doing what's right as the student council president」

Iwakura-kaichou said that in content.

「My…You intend to sell favor with that?」

There's two breaking in the spectators.
The one appearing is…
Yuzuki Minaho…!
Our teacher!

「Selling favor?…I don't have that intention」

At the moment she saw Sensei…Iwakura-kaichou shakes.

「…I wonder. I think this act isn't like you」
「…Yuzuki-sensei, you must be misunderstanding me」

Sensei and Iwakura-kaichou glares at each other.
Takeshiba-senpai looks at them with a surprised face.

「My, I got it…You're not trying to sell favor to this first year but you're interested in Takeshiba-san」

Sensei laughed coldly.
Takeshiba-senpai had a 「Eh?」face, and looks at Iwakura-kaichou.

「P-Please don't be ridiculous…!」

Iwakura-senpai strongly denied it.

「You don't need to hide it…It's something that a calculative you would do. It's not unreasonable if you think about it, doesn't it?」

Suddenly, the spectators became noisy from Sensei doubting that the student council president is a lesbian…!
Takeshiba-senpai took distance from Iwakura-kaichou instinctively too.

「No…It's not like that!」

Iwakura-kaichou protests desperately…
It attracted the spectators more.

「Well, I don't intend to meddle with your sexual preference anyway. It doesn't matter to me…I'm not interested in Iwakura-san anyway」

After fueling it severely, Sensei throws Iwakura-kaichou away.
She looks annoyed…

「By the way」

Yuzuki-sensei looks at me.

「Buy me cola」

…What?

「There's a vending machine there isn't it? Go there and buy some cola」

Sensei's pointing at a vending machine at the edge of the south school building outside the ground
The distance is around a hundred meter.

「Hurry up…!」

Sensei urged me.
Megumi looks at me anxiously…

「Okay, I'll get one!」

I dashed all my might towards the vending machine.
…Dadadadadada!
I took out my wallet from my pocket…
Then bought the first cola I saw…
Dashed back to the ground once again…!

「Sensei…I bought it…!」

I gave the cola to Sensei while I'm catching my breath

However, Sensei…

「My, this is Coca Cola? I told you to buy Pepsi cola though」

…Eh, is that so?

「…Sorry! I got it by mistake!」

Once again, I dashed to the vending machine with all my might!
Err…Pepsi, pepsi, pepsi…There it is!
I bought pepsi and ran again!

「…Haa, haa, haa, …H-Here's pepsi…!」

Sensei looks at the Pepsi I brought her.

「Sorry…I think I'll have tea instead. Buy me a can of tea」

Sensei smiled coldly.

「…Lemon tea? Milk tea?」
「Is there a black tea?」
「…There's one if I recall!」
「Then, I'll have that…!」
「Got it!」

Once again, I ran towards the vending machine!
…Sensei must have some reason for why she's making me do this.
Then, I just have to do all I can.
I came back to sensei with a black tea can…while soaked in sweat.

「…Here's black tea」

…Haa, haa, haa, haa, haa
I-It hurts
I should've jogged for longer before…

「My, you already bought it? Did you not hear me say 『I would want a lemon tea instead』 when you started running?」

Sensei said calmly.

「…Got it! Lemon tea it is!」

I start running with my sweaty body!
…Haa, haa, haa
I dashed towards the vending machine…!
…Haa, haa, haa.
There's no small change on my wallet anymore.
It can't be helped…I took out my thousand yen bill.

I bought lemon tea…
Then returned running…!
…Haa, haa, haa

「…L-Lemon tea!」

Sensei spoke while looking at the lemon tea.

「You're so slow so I had a change of heart…I'd want an oolong tea」
「…Okay, Oolong tea!」

The spectators look at me with wondering eyes as I start running again.
Takeshiba-senpai and Iwakura-kaichou looks at me in amazement too.
…Like hell I care
I'm just doing what I'm told to…!
I ran towards the vending machine again…!
I ran with all my might…!
I inserted the coin at the vending machine with trembling hands…

「…Yoshida-kuuuun!」

Megumi comes to me.
As expected of a track and fielder…she runs fast.
Megumi seems to have borrowed some big plastic bag from somebody.
Rushing after me…Megumi-says

「…Let's buy all of it?」

Eh…All?

「I'm saying that let's just buy all of the drinks in the vending machine!」

Oh…I see!

「…Yoshida-kun, you got money?」

Megumi is in her training wear so she doesn't have her wallet

「It's fine…I've got enough」

I still have the money Sensei gave me…
I handed Megumi a thousand bill…then we bought drinks.
Me on the left vending machine…
Megumi on the right vending machine…
Megumi puts the drinks we bought into the bag…!
I think we bought around 25…!

「Yoshida-kun, get that one…!」
「…Got it!」

We lifted the heavy bag and we started running!
The two of us match our pace…!

「…One two, one two, one two, one two!」

Megumi creates a rhythm with her voice…!
…Run
…We're running!
We went to the spectators in the ground.
Yuzuki-sensei looks at us with a cold smile…!
…Run!
The two of us ran!

「We've bought everything in there…What drink would you like, Yuzuki-sensei?」

Megumi shouted to sensei…
The spectators are overwhelmed by Megumi's voice and fell silent
Sensei answered.

「I don't need one…」

Sensei answers and pushes the can of cola and tea I bought first in the bag.
The spectators became noisy,
Sensei laughs and looks at Takeshiba-senpai.

「Takeshiba-san, why don't you have one?」
「…What?」

Takeshiba-senpai's surprised.

「He bought this much…It would become a hindrance if this continues won't it? Take the one you like from the bag」
「…But」

Senpai hesitates from what Sensei said.

「I'm saying take one…!」

Yuzuki Minaho…exposed her devil nature and stares at Takeshiba-senpai.
Takeshiba-senpai trembles.

「G-Go on…take it!」

I told senpai while breathing intensely.

「Go on, captain!」

Megumi opens the bag and offers Senpai…!

「…Got it. I'll be taking one」

Senpai chose a sports drink and took it.

「Then…give it to the members of track and field…Yamamine-san, you know them don't you?」

Yuzuki-sensei told Megumi.
Megumi's face brightens up suddenly.

「Yes, got it!」

Megumi responded in a loud voice

「…Yoshida-kun, bring it with me!」
「Ah, yeah」

Megumi and I lifted the bag.

「This way」

I walk on the direction Megumi tells me while we hold the bag together.

「…Aoshima-senpai, she's the vice captain!」

Megumi introduced the third year member.

「I-I'm Yoshida. Thank you for taking care of Megumi!」

I bowed my head.

「Aoshima-senpai, please take one that you like!」
「Ah…Yeah!」

Aoshima-senpai looks at Captain Takeshiba…
Captain Takeshiba nodded slightly.

「…Then, I'll take the orange juice」
「Thank you very much!」

We bowed to Aoshima-senpai.
…Next

「Third year, Iwasaki-senpai!」
「I'm Yoshida! Thank you for taking care of Megumi!」

Iwasaki-senpai chose kofi.

「…Thank you very much!」

After the third years, the second years…
Megumi and I bow our heads to each and everyone while distributing drinks.
The heavy bag lightened up bit by bit.
,Next are the first years.

「Koujou-san, she's already introduced!」

Yeah, she's the Koujou-san we met from the clubroom a while ago.

「…Please take care of Megumi」

When I said that, Koujou-san cried for some reason.

「I'll be supporting you. I never knew that Yoshida-kun loves Megumi this much…!」

Looking at them, the first years began to cry.

「…Everyone, thank you」

Megumi's about to cry too…
When we finished distributing drinks to the first years…There's were still two remaining in the bag.
I looked at Megumi's face.

「…Megumi, it's okay?」
「Yeah, got it」

We offered Iwakura-san the bag.

「Iwakura-kaichou…Sorry about giving leftovers but, please also take one」

Iwakura-senpai makes a perplexed face,

「Get one…Iwakura-san」

Urged by Yuzuki-sensei…she took the remaining cola.
It's the last one…!

「I don't need one」

Yuzuki-sensei said.

「I don't drink carbonated drinks」

The last one is Dr.Pepper2
Yeah…The track and field members won't drink this.

「Then, what did you really want to drink sensei?」

Sensei was surprised from what I said.

「I'll buy it for you」

I've already regained my breath.

It won't be painful to run.

「Then…I'll get tea」
「Black tea?」
「…Lemon tea」

Sensei laughs

「…What about Megumi?」

I asked Megumi

「…Eh, Yoshida-kun?」
「What do you want to drink?」
「I'm going to buy it with you」
「…It's fine. Just stay with the members of track and field」

I told Megumi.
Captain Takeshiba looks at me.

「Yeah…I would want a sports drink. Lemon flavor」
「…Got it」

I ran towards the vending machine again…

「…Here you go!」

I handed the orders of Megumi and Sensei.
I took the remaining Dr.Pepper3

「Takeshiba-san…I think that drinking while it's cold is delicious」

Yuzuki-sensei told Captain Takeshiba.

「…I get it already. Everyone, you can drink」

Takeshiba-senpai opens the can…!
The girls of the track and field all opens their caps together.

…pushi!

The sounds come in succession.
All of the members put it in their mouths at about the same time.

Gulp…
The fizz of Dr. Pepper splits in my mouth.
…Delicious.

「Then…What would you do, Takeshiba-san?」

Yuzuki-sensei told Captain Takeshiba.

「Are you still not accepting Yoshida-kun and Yamamine-san's relationship? They're quite a splendid couple in my eyes however… If I recall, it's called『Put in the fighting spirit』[4] Is that how you say it…?」

Sensei laughs.
Captain Takeshiba blew out a sigh.

「If you can keep with your duty, I won't make any complaints… I'll cancell Yamamine Megumi's removal. I'll accept her relationship with that first year」

Captain said clearly.

「Waa!」

A shout of joy breaks from the first years.

「Yamamine-san, I'm glad for you!」
「Megumi, congrats!」

Girls jump at Megumi in happiness.

「…You said that you're Yoshida?」

Captain Takeshiba looks at me…

「I'll be accepting you for now. I get that you really treasure her. But, if you try to make her cry, I won't forgive you!」

Captain presses me with strong eyes.

「…I won't cry!」

Megumi told captain.

「Because…I don't cry after all. I will never cry. I have him after all」

Even though she says that…Megumi's half crying already…
…Megumi

「I love Megumi. I'll treasure her forever! I promise that!」

I swore to Takeshiba-senpai.

「Got it…I'll believe you two for now」

Captain Takeshiba said so.

Iwakura-kaichou…
Looks at that peaceful scenery in dissatisfaction…

---

1. Club is Bu and Military arts is Budou ↩
2. The drink of the genius ↩
3. El Psy Congroo ↩
4. Kiai ga haita ↩

82. The woman called Iwakura Yukiyo (After another)

「Oh right, Yamamine-san…I'll be visiting your home tonight」

Yuzuki-sensei told Megumi when the girls track and field club finished drinking their cans.
The members became noisy once again.
The spectators had already scattered when the cans were opened together.
The only people left were the track and field club members, Sensei, Iwakura-kaichou and me.

「I don't have any weird business…Yamamine-san's an honors student, aren't you? That's why I have to get your guardian's stamp on a few documents directly. I'm the one in charge of the student scholarships」

Sensei told everyone calmly.
It's actually not like that.

Yuzuki-sensei intends to take in Megumi from the Yamamine house…
Megumi will part with her adoptive parents…and will move to 『Kuromori』 residence from now on.

「Eh? Yamamine's a scholarship student?」
「I didn't know that」

The first years talk to Megumi.

「Y-Yeah, that's right」

Megumi fools them for the moment.

「Of course…She's on academic scholarship. Yamamine-san got first place in this year's exam」

Sensei laughingly said.

「Is that so?! Megumi-chan's intelligent!」
「Teach me next time!」

The first years believe Sensei's words easily since Megumi's normally gentle and is an honors student.

「You can come with Yoshida-kun too!」

Koujou-san told Megumi

「…Eh」

Megumi turned red.

「As expected, you're going to study together for the exams aren't you? We won't be obstructing you two so let me study with you too」
「Eh, Koujou-chi…If you go with them, I think that's enough of a hindrance…」

The first years laughs.

「I don't mind! Let's study together…It's okay isn't it, Yoshida-kun?!」

Megumi looks at me brightly.
…I

「Err…You're going to teach me?」
「Yeah of course!」
「So I'm going to study」
「Of course you will! I would be troubled if my husband is a fool!」

Megumi smiled

「Got it…please teach me」

I bow to Megumi.

「Okay! As long as you're fine with me!」

The first years shout in joy once again…!

「With that said…I'll pick you up later. We'll be going to your house using my car. What time will you finish your exercises today?」
「…4:30, but I think it will take up to 5:00 because the first years will be putting things in order」

Megumi answered Sensei's question.

「You can go home earlier if you have things to take care of…You guys can do it even without Megumi, right?」

Captain Takeshiba asks the first year members.

「Yes, captain!」

Koujou-san answered representing the first years.

「No way…That bothers me. I'm also a first year so I have to clean up too. Please let me!」

Megumi bowed to everyone

「But…It would be bad to make Sensei wait won't it?」

Koujou-san looks at Yuzuki-sensei.

「Then, let's meet up in the clubroom at 5:00…Takeshiba-san, can you give me Yamamine-san by 5:00? It would help me since I've got other work」

Sensei makes a compromise.

「Got it…Let's leave it like that then. You're okay with that too?」
「Yes…Captain」

Sensei turned to me.

「Yoshida-kun, how about you go with us too?」

…What?

「You still haven't greeted Yamamine-san's parents have you?」

Sensei looks at me.
…Megumi.

「…Right. I have to greet them too. Got it, please let me come along」

I took Megumi's virginity.
Megumi said that she'll be with me forever.
I have the obligation to talk to Megumi's parents.

「…Yoshida-kun」

Megumi looks at me anxiously.

「It's fine, I'll be talking to Megumi's father and mother. Don't worry」

I told Megumi with a smile.

「…Thank you」

Megumi's half-crying again.
Even though she said that she 「Won't cry」…

「…You…You said you're Yoshida?」

Captain Takeshiba asked me.

「Yes, I am」[1]
「Yamamine said earlier…『I'll be with him forever』, and 『I'll give birth to his child』, was she serious?」

Takeshiba-senpai asks me feeling surprised.

「Yes…I'm serious」

Megumi answered before I could…!

「I will never let go. I will bear Yoshida-kun's child」

Megumi offers me her trembling hands…
I grip those hands.
Megumi grasped my hands tightly in return.

「There's no way you're already pregnant, are you?」

Captain Takeshiba, makes me remember what Megumi said yesterday and got startled…
Yesterday…Megumi said that 『I want to get pregnant and give birth at the same time as Yukino』 …!

「Uhm…Megumi says that she wants to get pregnant but…this and that are not allowed!」

Was it Yuzuki-sensei and Nagisa-san who objected to it?…!

…Haa?

Takeshiba-senpai's face distorted!
Shit…Did I say something weird?!!!

「I'll give birth after graduating high school![2] I've already decided! It will be a high school student-like relationship within school!」

Megumi responded in fluster.
『High school-like relationship』 she said…
We already had sex and a morning fellatio though…

「Excuse me…can you explain it in a manner a bit easier for me to understand?」

Takeshiba-senpai asks Megumi a bit angrily.

「I'm an adopted daughter. My Yamamine parents aren't my real parents」

Megumi…threw it all.

「My adoptive parents are good people. But, we're holding back from each other so we can never be a real family. That's why…I want to get married soon and have a true family. I…I want to become the mother of this persons', Yoshida-kun's child!」

Megumi spoke clearly in front of everyone.

「Yamamine says that but, what about you?」

Captain Takeshiba asks me this time.
I…
I thought that I should speak honestly since Megumi confessed what she hid.

「I…My parents are divorced and I live alone right now. I understand the loneliness of having no family. That's why…I thought of wanting to grant Megumi's wish as much as possible」

…I see
We have a similar environment.

「Hmm…So you're serious?」

Captain Takeshiba glares at us.

「…Sorry. I surely thought that Yamamine's just being blinded and fooled by love. There's those kind of idiots, those saying that『My love is the best in the world』like a broken record」

Senpai bows and apologizes to Megumi.

「Anyway…I understand that your love isn't just some half-assed feelings. I'm sorry for making light of you even though I didn't know it」
「…That's, you don't have to, Captain. I think that I really am in high spirits」

Megumi answers.

「I…When I became able to be with Yoshida-kun, I became so happy that I can't help it. I think that I've been overexcited. It's normal to be scolded by Captain…」

Megumi's really harsh with herself.
Good girl.

「…Yamamine」

Captain takeshiba smiles at Megumi.

「Apply some sunscreen when we're going to practice from now on.

Since you already have a man…You'd be hated if you don't take care of your skin…!」
「Yes captain! Thank you very much!」

Megumi's crying again.

「Isn't that great, Yamamine-san?」
「Yup, It's great!」
「You did your best!」

The first years gather around Megumi.

「Thank you everyone!」

Megumi smiles towards everyone.
So cute.
Megumi's smiling face is the cutest.

「Yoshida-kun, do your best!」

Koujou-san told me.

「…Ah, yeah. I'll do my best」

Though they're Megumi's friends, it's a bit embarrassing since girls I don't know well don't usually smile towards me.

「Now then, it's about time we go, Yoshida-kun?」

Yuzuki-sensei told me.

「Everyone would feel uneasy during their practice if you stayed here」

Certainly…I feel that the start of the girls track and field was set back because of us.

「Okay…Bye Megumi. I'll pick you up around 5:00」
「Yeah…I'll be waiting」
「Do your best during practice」
「I will…Yoshida-kun」

Megumi said with a red face.

「…Thank you」

Saying that, she grasps my hand tightly once again.

「Later then!」

Megumi returns to the first years row.

「Oh right, Iwakura-san, It seems that Tanokura-sensei wants to talk with you. I think it's about the budget of the athletics meet… would you like to come with me to the faculty?」

Sensei told Iwakura-kaichou.

「Understood…」

Iwakura-san answers discouraged.

「Then…We've been a trouble for Takeshiba-san. Girls, do your best during practice…!」
「No…thank you for various things」

Captain Takeshiba bows to Yuzuki-sensei.

「Let's go, Yoshida-kun」

The three of us left the grounds.
I looked back at Megumi several times along the way but she didn't look back at me.
She's preparing for her exercise and listens to her senpai talking.
Yamamine Megumi is a diligent girl.

◇ ◇ ◇

Yuzuki-sensei didn't go to the faculty but the principal's office instead.
Iwakura-kaichou follows as if it's normal too.
We went to the monitor room through the hidden stairs…
Katsuko-nee's waiting for us.

「Sit wherever you want」

Sensei said that and sat in a chair.
…I
I sat in the chair on the edge where Katsuko-nee pointed.
Iwakura-san is in front of Sensei.

「What do you want to talk about?」

Iwakura-kaichou asks Sensei.

「My…Aren't you the one who has something to talk about?」

Yuzuki-sensei coldly smiles at Kaichou.
Iwakura-kaichou breathes in deeply…

「Yes…I've got a request」
「Go on」

Yuzuki-sensei answers lightly.
Katsuko-nee distributed coffee to each one of us.

「…Please leave the prostitution section of 『Kuromori』 to me」

Iwakura-san said that suddenly.

「My…are you serious?」

Sensei looks at Iwakura-san's eyes while drinking coffee.

「…I'm serious」

Iwakura-kaichou answered with a serious look.

「Is that so…How far can you propose?」

Sensei asked calmly.

「Akiko-san, Yukari-san and Kiyono-san have the same opinion as me」

Kaichou suddenly exposes her cards.

「Everyone wants to return to being a prostitute?」
「Yes… We don't have any other interests other than being prostitutes」
「You're the only one who loves prostitution aren't you?」

Sensei said coldly

「Yes, I love prostitution acts. There's nothing more fun than that. I accept that」

…Iwakura-san actually likes prostitution.

「Apart from me, the thought of Akiko-san wanting to be sent back as a prostitute is the truth. ….Just like Nagisa-sama and the others, please understand that we're people that only have talents for prostitution and there's no other job for our living」

Iwakura-san insisted strongly…

「Then, Shirasaka Sousuke seems to have found a new prostitution organization」

Sensei expresses a nasty smile.

「Everyone knows that it won't be formed…」

Iwakura-san told Sensei eyes of certainty.

「Yuzuki-sensei will never permit that happening…Isn't Shirasaka Sousuke already a target for elimination?」
「…Where did you hear that from?」

Sensei investigates.

「I don't need to hear it from somewhere else. Yuzuki-sensei has a thicker grip in the industry than Shirasaka. Shirasaka's actions are a betrayal to『Kuromori』 It's normal to think that he'll be erased…」

Iwakura-san…doesn't want to cooperate with Shirasaka Sousuke.

「Is that so? You came to me because you know that Shirasaka

can't make an organization rise?」
「I…Iwakura Yukiyo is Sensei's 『Toy』 Since the start」

Iwakura-san informs Sensei

「A 『Toy』 unsuitable for my 『Will』 … You and agnes」
「That kind of 『Toy』 is interesting…Sensei's the one who said that」
「…Indeed」

The two witches continue to probe each other out…

「Then…You want to become the admin of the prostitution section?」
「Yes」
「…Can you do it?」
「…That's」

Honestly, Iwakura-kaichou doesn't seem to be confident.

「I don't think you, Akiko, Yukari and Kiyono will be making great income though」

Sensei laughs.

「Do you get it?…You won't be able to earn even a twentieth of Katsuko's. Iwakura-san's customers are mostly perverts. Perverts are troublesome you see…They demand everything but pay badly. It's difficult to make adjustments at once…!」
「…Certainly, I don't have decent customers」

Iwakura-kaichou admitted it immediately.

「But…Katsuko-sama-…」

Katsuko-nee interrupts Iwakura-san.

「I don't intend to enter under Iwakura-sama's management. If Iwakura-sama wishes to run a prostitution section, Katsuko will ask to not be included!」

Katsuko-nee smiles.

「…Katsuko-sama」
「Iwakura-sama…Katsuko is Ojou-sama's 『First toy』 There's no way I can be under the command of the 『Fourth toy』, right?」

Iwakura-san looks downright mortified.

「That said, please don't misunderstand…Nagisa and I aren't that easy that we would return to prostitution if you killed Yoshida-kun」

Katsuko-nee adds lightly…
…That means?
The one who hired those men who attacked us yesterday was…
Iwakura-san?

「We've already investigated the three men from last night…we know which syndicate they're from. Iwakura-san, one of the executives of that gang was your guest…!」

Sensei looks at Iwakura-kaichou with cold eyes.

「…I-I!」
「Answer me…Iwakura Yukiyo!」

When Sensei called her by her full name…Iwakura-san's spine was shocked stiff!
Iwakura-san's under Yuzuki-sensei's mental control.
She can no longer lie when she's called by her name.

「Y-Yes! Iwakura Yukiyo…I-I requested them!」

…As expected
She did
Iwakura-san wants me to die.

「…Is there any other purpose other than killing Yoshida-kun?」

Sensei questions Iwakura-san further

「…Y-Yes!」

Iwakura-san's shivering

「Answer!」

Iwakura-san opened her mouth as ordered by Sensei.

「S-Shirasaka Yukino…I aimed at her」

…Yukino?

「I want to make Shirasaka Yukino a prostitute of 『Kuromori』 …!」

Yukino?…A prostitute?

「You want to kill Yoshida-kun and train Shirasaka-san by yourself?」
「T-That's right…!」

…That's
Iwakura-san was being gentle to Yukino…because she intends to make her a subordinate prostitute?

「…Ahahahahahahaha!」

Yuzuki-sensei laughs out loud.

「You're really no good…Iwakura-san, it's impossible for you to manage a brothel. You don't have the sense…!」

Sensei declares.

「Shirasaka Yukino isn't suitable as a prostitute of 『Kuromori』 That girl is lacking the warm attention and gentleness necessary for a high class prostitute…」
「…I'll make her an SM special」

Iwakura-san persists.

「You see…Even if it's a M slave or an S queen, they need careful consideration more than a normal prostitute. Don't you get it? This isn't a game. 『Kuromori』 offers the highest class of prostitutes. Shirasaka-san's value is only at an 『active high school girl』 She won't be marketable in our mansion…」

「But…She's Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter. There's a lot of people who have a grudge against Shiraska. If I offer her to those people!」

Yuzuki-sensei snorted.

「You truly are trash. I don't hate that part of you though. But, we don't do that kind of business. There would be guests coming in with that plan but they'll be only a one time guest. Once they did that, it's clear that they'd force and have some sort of absurd sex with Shirasaka-san. Then someone would visit the police sometime later, as they wouldn't be able to stand their conscience…!」

Sensei analyzes calmly.

「On top of that, once the guest has tasted her, they'd say 『Next time, bring this person's daughter』…and the reputation of 『Kuromori』 would drop down. There's too many risks and too low profit, the reputation would drop…It's a model of bad management」

Iwakura-san drops her shoulder.

「It'll reproduce the same scenario when father and Shirasaka took over the administration of 『Kuromori』…How many years did it take for me and Morimoto to get back the old guest's trust? Do you know how much of a hindrance Shirasaka's 『Perverted tastes』 has been?」

Sensei spits it out.

「Certainly…I heard that since Yuzuki-sensei joined in the management, the two bridge Yuzuki-sensei and Morimoto-san's traditional 『Political and business guests』 patron field and Shirasaka Sousuke's 『Perverted expert field』 has made it stable」

Sensei smiles wryly.

「You heard that from Shirasaka didn't you? Actually, the 『Perverted section』 has been a deficit because they don't have respectable management. Shirasaka's incompetent and always moves to taste the girl first. He can't make a profit. The profits of

『Kuromori』has come from Morimoto and Me.」

I see. When Shirasaka Sousuke and Yuzuki-sensei's father managed 『Kuromori』, it became a mess and the prostitutes suffered… Yuuka-san and the others requested their old guests from the political and business circles and they reorganized for Yuzuki-sensei and Morimoto-san to manage it…

「Yuzuki-sensei became the operator and I heard that the achievements were increased 20-fold」
「It's 200 times…Shirasaka and father had dropped both the trust and the sales of 『Kuromori』drastically…!」

Sensei told Iwakura-san in a voice full of hatred.

「Iwakura-san…If you try to unify the prostitution section of 『Kuromori』, you'd be the second Shirasaka. You're a woman who prefers sexual orientation than management, aren't you?」
「…That might be」
「『Kuromori』needs a prostitute like Nagisa., That girl has all of the qualities of a high class prostitute. Bright, modest nerve, never makes the guest feel uncomfortable…she's the best prostitute. Her actual work period was just two years but what she earned in two years is much more than anyone else's profit」
「I know…She even has a lot of guests as acquaintances」

…Is that so?
It should be. Nagisa-san's that beautiful. Bright. Gentle.
I get why she has a lot of fans…

「Envying Nagisa's popularity…Shirasaka forced a hard game on Nagisa」

…That means?

「He told Nagisa and Katsuko… 『I'll release the first prostitute who gets pregnant』 and sold the two to perverted guests…!」

…That's!

「Yes…That was a difficult experience. I was made to play with perverts for days…violated multiple times without taking any

contraceptive」

Katsuko-nee spoke sadly.

「You didn't know it but Shiraska had made Katsuko drink pills in secret. Making Nagisa pregnant for sure…and banished her out of the mansion penniless…!」

Sensei tells the truth.

「But, since that happened…The rule 『Pregnancy-retirement』 happened, and Ojou-sama was able to negotiate the funds for their living after their retirement from prostitution」

Katsuko-nee said.

「That's obvious! There's no way I can just leave all of my cherished girls naked alone…!」

Sensei muttered.

「Nagisa was able to open a flower shop because of Ojou-sama's feelings. Yuuka-san was able to open a hair salon with her customer's help…Hidemi-sama and Tamayo-sama's independence would be impossible without Ojou-sama's assistance…!」

Katsuko-nee said.
…So that's how it is.

「In the end…There were a lot of customers who protested against Shiraska about Nagisa. 『Why have you banished her after tormenting her!』 I used those people's power. Nagisa's loved by lots of guests」

That has become a chance…
It's just recently that the retired prostitutes are able to start a business.

「But…Yuzuki-sensei. All of the prostitutes didn't begin a different work after retirement. There are women like me and Akiko-san who can't do anything but prostitution…」

Iwakura-san…told sensei.

「Right…Last year, father committed a blunder and 『Kuromori』 was closed, money has been handed over to most of the prostitutes who became independent but…Akiko, Yukari and Kiyono still haven't started anything yet」

Sensei said painfully.

「I'm the same…I'd rather be a prostitute. I don't have any other road besides a prostitute!」

Iwakura-san looks at Sensei seriously…

「When 『Kuromori』 suddenly closed down…We were puzzled. Akiko-san and others even tried to get into Shirasaka's plan. We can't quit being a prostitute now…If it's impossible for me to be a manager of a prostitution section…!」

Iwakura-san said…

「…Yuzuki-sensei, please reopen 『Kuromori』 prostitution section!」

---

1. Tsk, tsk, tsk, YES! I AM! ↩
2. Please, for the teens who are reading this, please stop reading, if you don't want to stop reading, don't follow Megumi, just don't ↩

83. The woman named Iwakura Yukiyo (New)

「The only time I felt alive was when I was a prostitute… Other people…the guests, they recognize me. I felt like I was needed」

Iwkaura-kaichou appeals to Yuzuki-sensei desperately.

「That's an illusion…You were only valued because you were bought with money」

Sensei answers coldly.

「I'm fine with that!」

I don't know what Iwakura-san means by that.

「For one night…It made me feel at ease, to have a relationship that lasted several hours. Being violated by men one after another feels heart throbbing. It makes me feel excited when I think about what they're going to do each night…!」

Yuzuki-sensei sighed.

「You're really dependent on prostitution 」
「It's not dependency…I'm not sick. It's natural for me. Being embraced by a man I don't know for money is…!」
「Then, you don't need to be related to 『Kuromori』 do you?… How about I introduce you to different prostitution ring? Since they'll always be tied up with a syndicate in Japan, I can introduce you to some organizations in Europe. If I recall, there's some organization wanting a Japanese girl… 」

Sensei shows a compromise to Iwakura-san…

「No…I want to be a prostitute of 『Kuromori』 …!」
「Iwakura-san…?!!」
「Being a prostitute of『Kuromori』has status. The guests are socially successful people…Everyone demands fascinating sex. And

Yuzuki-sensei's here above all. Sensei will never let danger come to the prostitutes' body, you're always careful about us. You were even warning those crazy guests invited by Shirasaka Sousuke… 」

Yuzuki-sensei closed her eyes.

「 Keiko-san…I made sure to manage the safety thoroughly since Megumi's mother died. Margo can eliminate the guests who use violence beyond the range I can recognize as play…and never allowed the use of drugs 」
「 Ojou-sama…looked after us prostitutes all this time 」

Katsuko-nee mutters after Sensei.

「 That's right. As long as 『Kuromori』 is managed by Yuzuki-sensei, it has become a place where prostitutes can rest easy! I want to continue being a prostitute until I die 」

Iwakura-san's talking passionately…yet, Sensei's face became cold.

「 When I was a first year…Yuzuki-sensei's the one who saved me when the Yakuza marked me for doing compensated dating! Sensei made me a 『Kuromori』 prostitute and taught me the wonderful joys of being a prostitute, joys I thought this world never had! I did everything to become the ideal prostitute! Sensei told me 『Yukiyo's not intelligent and diligent so You can't be with decent guests』 That's why…I took lessons desperately, etiquette, noble speech, walking…I learned everything! 」

…Iwakura-san

「 I didn't give you those lessons with those intentions 」

Sensei answered calmly.

「 What are you saying! Wasn't it all to become a superior 『Prostitute』 ! Just like Katsuko-sama! 」

Iwakura-san looks at Katsuko-nee…

「 …Me? 」
「 Yes…I've always longed for Katsuko-sama. Since I came to

『Kuromori』, Katsuko-sama has been at the top of the prostitutes. I only have guests who aren't very successful in their political or government career…Compared to that, you're having a graceful prostitution life. And yet…All my guests are only small time perverts… Well, I don't hate those kinds of perverted sex. Rather, I love it. But, it won't sit well with me if I just keep to that…!」

So prostitutes have the prostitute world…
There's a pride for them too…
Prostitutes have an inferiority complex too…

「When Yuzuki-sensei told me to 『Run for student council president』, I thought it was a joke at first. But, I just thought that Sensei's telling me to 『Add more value』 The previous me doesn't have Katsuko-sama's 『Energetic High school girl』 trait as a value. My value would rise if I become the 『Energetic female student council president』! Better guests would come for me!…I was convinced that Sensei ordered me with those thoughts…」
「…That's not. I didn't order you with such intentions」

Sensei tries to deny it…!

「No! You did! I decided that you did! That's why I desperately played friendly and became the student council president! And my guests really improved!…There were some lolicon guests who said 『Please scold me』 but anyway, there were guests who weren't perverted too! I was really happy…And yet!」

Iwakura-kaichou…fixes her eyes to Sensei.

「『Kuromori』 closed a month after that. When my time as a prostitute had finally come…!」

…I see
Last year's student council president election was around October…
Then, 『Kuromori』 prostitution section was closedown by Yuzuki-sensei's father's scandal in November…

「You know that I was a prostitute of 『Kuromori』 too, don't you?…」

Sensei asks Iwakura-san.

「Yes, I do」
「When I was a prostitute, I wished that I wanted to run away from this world everyday. I prayed. Being embraced by men for money was only painful. I thought that it was hell on earth…」
「…I also thought that. Ojou-sama」

Katsuko-nee smiles at Sensei kindly.

「Right…Nagisa thinks the same way. Yuuka-sama, Hidemi-san, and Tamayo too. They think that prostitution isn't their real self so…they had a dream about the future because they believed that they would escape here in the future. You can endure any pain as long as you have a clear dream…」
「Yes. That's why Katsuko bakes bread. Katsuko has a dream of opening a bakery so I endured everything」
「Nagisa's the same…When she got pregnant and her stomach got big, she studied about managing a flower shop desperately. The other people also studied during their breaks from work in my room. Looking at those people, I was convinced that all the prostitutes in the mansion were the same…」

Sensei looks at Iwakura-san sadly.

「I never thought that a child would get addicted to prostitution in my mansion…!」

Iwakura-san looks at Sensei with a dumbfounded face.

「There was no such girl like you during the old days…The prostitutes of 『Kuromori』 before Ojou-sama participated in administration received horrible treatment. But, it has all been improved by Ojou-sama's power. The prostitute's safety were guaranteed…and they receive the rewards they earned themselves. Certainly, it has become an ideal workplace for prostitutes…」

Katsuko-nee spoke sadly.

「Right…I might've overdone it」

Sensei leaks a sigh once again…

「Akiko-chan, Yukari-chan and Kiyono-chan…If anything, they're easily caught up in the flow things. I've never heard any dreams about their future from them」
「Could it be that they only remember prostitution and thought that it's okay to stay like that?」
「Rather, they have no other way after becoming this way. I think that they'd want to continue selling themselves rather than learning other work at this point」

Katsuko-nee analyzes the feelings of the prostitutes.

「Iwakura-san…You want to continue being a prostitute of 『Kuromori』 by any means?」

Sensei asks Iwakura-san
…Iwakura-san

「Of course! I'm only 18 years old! My time as a prostitute is just about to enter full swing! There's no way I can stop right now!!!」

Iwakura-san's breathing is rough…

「…Katsuko, what do you think we should do?」

Sensei asks for Katsuko-nee's opinion.

「Since it's a kind of dependence…I think that refusing initially will only make the problem worse」
「…Right」
「I think that there's no other choice but to let her sell herself for the time being under Ojou-sama's management until she awakens to a new road」
「There's no other way?」

Sensei's expression is complicated.

「We won't know what will happen if we leave her alone. Nobody thought that Iwakura-sama would hire people to kill him…It was completely off from Margo-sama and my expectations」

Katsuko-nee looks at me.

「Right…Venting out anger is serious too. Even though 『Kuromori』 prostitution section won't reopen if she kills Yoshida-kun」
「It mustn't"ve been amusing for Ojou-sama and me to keep taking care of him…Is that right, Iwakura-san?」

Katsuko-nee looks at Iwakura-kaichou with pity.

「Because…For Katsuko-sama to fall for a boring man like him! Then saying that you're going to retire from prostitution? That's unreasonable」

Iwakura-kaichou points at me and shouts!

「Katsuko-sama, you're my ideal prostitute! Please don't be seduced by this brat! Please remain as a prostitute of 『Kuromori』 forever!」

Katsuko-nee looks at me.

「…What do you think?」

…Eh?

「Do you want me to continue being a prostitute…?」

Katsuko-nee asks me.
…That's
…Obvious

「I don't want it. Please quit prostitution」

Katsuko-nee smiles.

「…Got it. I'll do as you say」

Then she approached me…And embraced me

「I love you」

Katsuko-nee kisses me…

「…I don't want that! No nooo! You should just die! Die! Die! Die!

Just kill yourself!!!」

Iwakura-san exclaims frantically when she saw us embrace…!

「…Shut up! Iwakura Yukiyo!!!」
「Y-Yeeees!!!」

The frenzied Iwakura-kaichou had her mind dominated when Sensei called her by her full name…

「…Iwakura-san」

Sensei spoke to Kaichou by adding a 「-san」on her name.
The mental rule binding Iwakura-san was erased…

「If…I told you to 『Sleep with Yoshida-kun』what would you do?」
「I'll have sex with him as a regular job for 『Kuromori』」

Iwakura-san answered immediately.

「…What about Yoshida-kun」

Sensei looks at me.

「Do you want to have sex with Iwakura-san…?」

I looked at Iwakura-san.
Long straight black hair. A beauty of a student council president with glasses that suit her.

「…I will, if Sensei orders me」

I answered.

「If I didn't order you…?」
「I won't」
「…Why?」

I answered honestly.

「I don't love this person…」

Sensei laughs.

「Even if someone tells you『I'll give you a million dollars if you have sex with Iwakura-san』?」
「Even if it's ten or a hundred million, I would refuse…I won't have sex with people I don't love」

Iwakura-san's face warps from my answer.

「W-What the hell's up with that?!」

Katsuko-nee smiles

「Sorry but, this one's different from the norm. He's a boy. He's pure in every aspect…!」

Katsuko-nee embraces me tightly.

「Yoshida-kun…Do you love Katsuko?」

Sensei asks me.

「Yes…I love her」
「What about Nagisa?」
「…I love her!」
「What about Megumi?」
「…I love her!」
「What about Misuzu?」
「…I love her!」

I answered all of it honestly.

「That's obviously lip service! There's no way a man's loving multiple girls at the same time!」

Iwakura-kaichou points at me and shouts.
Looking at Iwakura-san…Yuzuki-sensei spoke to me.

「…Yoshida-kun If I ever tell you to 『Die』…No, let's stop with the assumptions. Yoshida-kun, could you please die…!」

…Eh

「Sorry…But your existence is an annoyance after all. You do understand that you have to die for Iwakura-san to be saved, don't you?」

Katsuko-nee reacts at Yuzuki-sensei's words sharply…

「…Ojou-sama!」
「Katsuko…Be silent for a while…!」

Sensei raised her hands and holds Katsuko-nee back.

「…Right now?」

I answered.

「…Let's see. Katsuko, bring me water」

Being told by Sensei…Katsuko-nee pours in water from a plastic bottle to a glass.

「Here you go…Ojou-sama」

She put the glass in front of Sensei.

「…Thanks, Katsuko」

Sensei takes one tablet from her pocket.

「This is a poison. You're going to die without suffering if you drink this」

She dropped the medicine in the glass.
The drug melts in the water, making bubbles.

「Drink this…!」

Sensei handed the glass to me.
I took it…

「Uhm…Sensei」
「What?…You don't want to die?」
「No…It can't be helped if it's necessary…」

Iwakura-san reacts in amazement from my words.

「…Necessary?」
「Yes. Because…Yuzuki-sensei told me to 『Die』 I think that there's a reason why I must die. I'm just an idiot so I don't know why but…Sensei's much more intelligent than me. There's no way Sensei's wrong」

Iwakura-san's surprised from my answer…

「Sensei…might be lying to you, you know?!」

I laughed.

「I don't care if it's a lie or truth. Sensei has been taking good care of Katsuko-nee, Nagisa-san and Megumi all this time. That's why I believe her. I know that she'll take care of everyone…!」
「What about you?! You can't do anything if you die you know!」

…What are you saying, Iwakura-san?

「…There's hasn't been any value in my existence since the start」

I looked at Sensei…

「Sensei…Can I write a letter to everyone before I die?」

Sensei answered.

「Why a letter? Shouldn't you just meet them and say goodbye?…!」

I scratched my head.

「When I meet them…They'd tell me to stop killing myself so it's better to write a letter. I don't have much time. I just want to write 『Thank you』 to each and every one of them」

Sensei laughed.

「Sorry, we don't have time. I'd want you to die sooner」

…Then, it can't be helped.

「Then…please tell everyone. I…had a dull life all along but…I met everyone…they've been gentle to me, I'm really happy. Thanks to everyone, I thought that I was alive. Thank you very much…!」

Ah…So I'm going to die.

「Tell Misuzu I'm sorry that I won't be able to go to her dance presentation. I love you!
Megumi…I'm sorry for not meeting your parents. I love you, I really love you!
Nagisa-san…it would be great if you get another child. I love you!
Please tell Mao-chan that I'm sorry I can't become her Papa.
Margo-san…Thank you for always. I love you!
Nei-san…I really think Nei-san's beautiful I love you very much!」

…Scary, I'm scared.
Death is really scary.
My hands are trembling…It doesn't stop.
But…I have to
…Die

I looked at Katsuko-nee…

「Katsuko-nee…Your meals are delicious. I love you Katsuko-nee!」
「…Ojou-sama!」

Katsuko-nee shouts at Sensei
Sensei ignores her shout…and looks at me.

「…Yoshida-kun, are you scared of death?」

I laughingly answered.

「Of course it's scary but…I'm this close to Sensei and Katsuko-nee so…I'm not that scared」

…Yeah
…Of course

「…It's much better than dying alone. Thank you very much」

There's only one regret in my heart.

「Uhm…Sensei, I have a request」
「…What?」

…Yeah, I should say it

「Yukino…Please tell Yukino I'm sorry…Please tell her that I apologize…」
「…Shirasaka-san?」
「Yes…I don't think she'll forgive me but…Just say that I'm sorry」
「…Got it」

…Enough
…This is enough

「…Then, I'm killing myself. Thank you for everything until now!」

I raised the glass with the melted drug.

「…Uhm, Yuzuki-sensei」
「…Eh?」
「I also love Sensei…!」

Sensei's startled…
I drank the glass while looking at that face!

…Goku, goku, goku!

I drink the poison.

Yeah…Those days were just a dream as expected.
I tasted such happiness for a fleeting moment.
It can't be helped if I die here.

Suddenly, I lost strength…
I dropped the glass…
I fell on the floor.
I'm collapsing slowly…!

「Geez! Bakabakabaka! Yo-chan no bakaaa…!!!」 1

…EH?
Nei-san dashed out from the basement stairs!

「…Katsun, water!」

Nei-san urged Katsuko-nee!

「Ah, Yes!」

Nei-san put the plastic bottle on her mouth.
Then, she pushed some tablet in my mouth!
After that…She pressed her lips onto mine…!

…… ! ! !

Mouth-to-mouth…The water and tablet were poured into me!!!

…Uuku, uuku

I drank the poured water unintentionally…!
Nei-san's lips are still pressing my mouth

I'm…kissing
…Nei-san

「…Yo-chan, are you okay?」

Nei-san's beauty is in front of me.

「…Nei-san, I」

Nei-san looks at me.

「…What?」

She's really beautiful

「…Nei-san…I kissed. I'm okay dying now…」

Yeah…I'm satisfied.
I'm really happy.

…But
Nei-san's angry at those words.

「Don't be ridiculous! I'll give you as many kisses as you want so

please live, Yo-chan!!」

…Eh?
…Nei-san?

「Sensei! Why did you make him drink a whole tablet?! This is a strong drug! Even anesthetics can kill if taken in large amounts!」
「…Eh, is that so?」

Katsuko-nee's surprised…

「Wait, Katsun, get a grip of yourself!」
「Sorry…I'm specialized in aphrodisiacs so I don't know much about anesthetics…!」

Eh…Anesthetic?

「When I saw the feed from the parking lot, I got surprised! I ran through the underground with all my might!」

Nei-san scolds Sensei with a super angry look…!

「It's fine…I intended to have Yoshida-kun die after all」

Sensei laughingly said.
…I see, I would die if I exceed the fatal dose even if it's just anesthetic.
…yeah, it's not wrong at all.

「I'm not so knowledgeable with drugs but…I thought that someone would come if something wrong happened…」

…With that said.

「Nei-san…what's the thing you made me drink?」
「It's a neutralizer」
「Then…I won't die?」
「I would be troubled if you die!」

…Eeeh?

「S-Sensei…It's bad. I have to die, don't I? W-what should I do?

Should I jump from the rooftop? Or should I get hit by a car? 」

Nei-san beats my head in panic…!

「 Don't die, idiot!!! 」

Sensei laughs.

「 …It's okay now, Yoshida-kun 」
「 …What? 」
「 Since it was stopped by Nei, I've made a change of plans…I won't have you die just yet 」

…Ah, okay

「 I-is that okay? 」

I looked at sensei…and asked.

「 But…I'll have you die sooner or later 」
「 …Ah, okay 」
「 That's why, do your best on living so you won't have any regrets 」

…Y-Yeah

「 Got it 」
「 Be gentle with the girls in particular… 」
「 O-Of course 」

I promised Sensei.

「 …By the way, Yoshida-kun 」
「 …Yes? 」
「 When you said that you love me…Was that true? 」

I answered Sensei.

「 Isn't that obvious?! 」

Sensei smiled gently.

「 Thank you…It's my first time being expressed 『Love』 by a boy 」

After that…Sensei turned to Iwakura-san.
Iwakura-san who can't follow the development was unable to stand up…

「It's what you saw… 」

Sensei tells Iwakura-san

「Yoshida-kun's that kind of『Boy』 He's a bit 『Broken』…! 」

Sensei looks at me.

「He'll never tell a lie to a girl he trusts. He'll believe everything you tell him…He'll do anything as long as you wish for it. He'll stake his life on it… There aren't many of these idiotic yet sincere boys, are there? 」
「…Yes 」

Iwakura-kaichou nodded.

「It would be troublesome if you let such boy on the loose…That's why I made him my 『toy』 Iwakura-san…He's the same as you 」

…Eh?

「Katsuko, Nagisa, and Margo are talented people whom I control as my『Toys』 In your case, I was worried about you. You're the most unstable and immature in the mansion, I didn't know what you would do so…I sheltered you as my 『Toy』 I think that Shirasaka would just use and throw you away 」

Sensei smiles at Iwakura-san.

「…Sensei 」

Iwakura-san…remains standing troubled.

「Well…That's how it is, yeah yeah! 」

Nei-san whispers to me

「Nei…You're also a protected『toy』, get it? 」

Sensei told Nei-san.

「Waa…I picked at the hornet's nest…!」

Nei-san laughed at me.

Nei-san…is also being protected by Sensei.
Nei-san really has a secret past.

「…Is your body okay?」

Katsuko-nee comes over to me.

「Ah…I'm fine. The numbness is almost gone」
「Sorry…I don't understand the amount of that drug well」

Katsuko-nee apologized to me.

「Ah, it's okay. It's my fault for not dying before Nei-san came」

Katsuko-nee beats my head.

「That's not how it is!」

Then, she embraced my body.

「You just have to live okay…!」

Katsuko-nee kisses me…!

---

1. Do I need to explain this? ↩

84. Violet Shadow

「Now then…Let's go back to what we're talking earlier」

Sensei spoke to Iwakura-san

「Let me think about the reopening of 『Kuromori』 prostitution section for a while」

…Sensei
Could that mean?…
The brothel would start again…?

「I understood that you girls can't stop prostitution immediately. It was my mistake dismissing the prostitutes suddenly and throwing them into the world…I apologize for that」

Sensei bows to Iwakura-san

「Please stop that Yuzuki-sensei. Please raise your head!」

Iwakura-kaichou's puzzled…!

「But, that said, I can't reopen 『Kuromori』 right now. First and above all, there's a lack of girls…」

…Lack of girls?

「There's no way I can just call back those who have had the pleasure to retire. You know that too don't you?」

Sensei looks at Iwakura-san.

「Well…I do. But we have Akiko-san, Yukari-san, Kiyono-san and me for the time being…」

Sensei shook her head…

「Aren't all of you girls the ones who didn't sell well?… Why would you reopen a brothel with girls who aren't popular among guests?…」

…Of course
This is somewhat complicated.
It's this kind of world.

「W-What about Katsuko-sama…?」

Iwakura-san looks at Katsuko-nee as if clinging to her…

「I'm already retired. I can call my old guests and give a 『Retirement Ceremony』 for your sake but…I won't be selling myself anymore」

Katsuko-nee laughingly said.
Iwakura-san falls down depressed.

「『Kuromori』 can't make you four our poster girls. It's our status to make quality girls…」

Sensei gives the finishing blow.
But, she's not going back.

「Then…there are a few good second years!」

I-Iwakura-san.
Sensei sighed small, then.

「For argument's sake, who are they?」
「…Class 3, Genta-san!」

Iwakura-san proposes with a smile.

「She's no good isn't she?…She's gloomy and not that beautiful」
「We can just do plastic surgery on her face!」

…Err
Iwakura-san's really a disappointing person.

「We never use plastic surgery. Our guests have good eyes so they can spot it if they've undergone plastic surgery immediately. It would become an issue of trust…」

Sensei looks at Iwakura-san harshly.

「Then…How about Takeshiba-san from a while ago? The captain of the track and field club. If it's her, I think that her face is good enough」

Iwakura-san's still clinging.

「There's no way such a violent tempered girl would become a high class prostitute is there? Her spirit is too manly」

Sensei commented on Captain Takeshiba.

「Let's kidnap that violent tempered girl and get her gangbanged! I'm sure that the guests would be greatly aroused!」

…Iwakura-san

「…Why do you have that way of thinking! They can only do that once and there won't be any guests other than perverts coming then! In the first place, kidnapping and rape is a crime!」

…Y-Yuzuki-sensei
Prostitution is also a crime…
Or rather, we kidnapped and I raped Yukino…

「T-That's right…」

Iwakura-san shrinks.

「Iwakura-sama…We've already approached those notable second years and the third years. 『Kuromori』 was functioning until last autumn after all…!」

Katsuko-nee informs Iwakura-san

「…T-That's right. T-Then, I'll go search in the first years!」
「That's enough…Iwakura-san」

Sensei said coldly.

「For what reason do you think I was checking the entire student bodyfrom the stage of the entrance exam? I know the students in this school better than you…!」

「…T-That's correct」
「I became a teacher in this school for that sake after all…」

Sensei…has eyes in every corner of this school.
She's observing the students using her hidden cameras and microphones
Not just their looks but…she's even grasping their voices, and their character.
She's checking who's suitable for being a prostitute of 『Kuromori』 all the time.

「Even though I thought I could part way from that duty already…」

Sensei muttered lowly.

「But…It can't be helped. That's the kind of work I shouldered.」

…Sensei
Really hated it.
Sending her own students to the brothel…
For her revenge against Shirasaka Sousuke…
To liberate the prostitutes of 『Kuromori』 …
Sensei endured and continued her hard work…

「…Sensei」

I spoke to sensei.

「Don't answer immediately and just think about it for a while. I'm sure that there's at least one way for Iwakura-kaichou to be satisfied and for Sensei not to have to experience such hardship…!」

I…said that for the time being.
It may be irresponsible…
But I must say that right now…
Sensei might shoulder everything by herself otherwise.
I won't let that happen…
There's no way I can…
I thought

「…Yoshida-kun」

Sensei looked at me with a surprised face.

「…Anyway, let's think about it together. You mustn't decide it alone. Sensei's…our teacher after all…」

I said.

「…You're right. Got it」

Sensei understood.

「Iwakura-san…Give me a week. I'll give you an answer after that. Anyway, I won't let you girls go bad. I'll prepare anything that's needed…」

Sensei informed Iwakura-san.

「…Understood. I will be expecting a good reply」

Iwakura-san only confirmed it.

「By the way…Iwakura-san. Apart from this, You have to be punished…」

Sensei returned to her malicious eyes and spoke to Iwakura-kaichou.

「…What?」
「You requested a syndicate leader you know of and tried to kill Yoshida-kun, did you forget?」

…I-I forgot.
That's right, wasn't that Iwakura-san's act?

「And you used our school's delinquents and tried to attack Yoshida-kun and Misuzu-san, didn't you?」

That was Iwakura-san too?!

「If you had Misuzu-san raped by those delinquents, do you know what would happen?」

Iwakura-kaichou shakes her head to Sensei's question.

「…NO」
「She's…Kouzuki Shigetaka's granddaughter」

Iwakura-san's face turned pale.

「…No way?!」
「It wouldn't just end with you dead… It's obvious that those delinquents would be killed, Me and Yoshida-kun too…No, I think that all of those who are related to 『Kuromori』 would be eliminated. We'd be stuffed into concrete and sunk in the bottom of the ocean…」

…Ugh, is Misuzu's grandfather that scary?!
I-I made Misuzu my pet though?
…Will I be okay?

「Well, it was great that Yoshida-kun was clever during that incident. There's the problem of Nei burning down Yamaguchi-sensei's car however…」

Oh right.
What happened to that?

「Ojou-sama. I think that it's Yamaguchi-sensei's fault for breaking the rule about not parking the car in the designated parking lot for the school staff in the first place. Yamaguchi-sensei will have it repaired using his own insurance」

Katsuko-nee reports
…Katsuko-nee's the chief director of this school.
She has such sanction as a chief director it seems.

「Then let's leave that delinquent matter. But…The hitmen last night were a big problem. I've already gotten a 『Break off letter』. Those two are beyond recovery though」

…Beyond recovery

「They're alive for the time being but…They can't come back to the underworld anymore」

…So the guy Margo-san kept beating up isn't dead!

「Of course, it's the fault of the other side for not being able to finish the request but…the underworld doesn't allow that reasononing. You do know that don't you?」

Sensei reminds Iwakura-san…

「…How much was the deal?」
「It's 60 million yen…including the reward for the people who intervened. On the other hand the loan would be null. I made them promise to not add false charges to 『Kuromori』about this matter. I don't think there will be a problem since I had the authorities there sign a deal」

…It has become troublesome.

「60M…I have to earn that don't I?」

Iwakura-san told Sensei.

「70M…The compensation money for Yoshida-kun wasn't included」

Sensei sentenced Iwakura-san

「What should I do then? Yuzuki-sensei must have some plan already?」

Iwakura-san asks Sensei.
…What does that mean?
I can somewhat see Iwakura-san having a joyful look though…?

「Iwakura-san…do you have plans for summer vacation already?」
「…No」
「Then…I've got two plans prepared. One is sending you to a rich man in an oil producing country in the Arab countries to be a woman in a harem for a month. There's someone who wants a Japanese high school girl. He's not a bad person so I think it would be luxurious. I think he'll love you like a doll It's quite a disgusting 50 year old man though…」
「…What about the other?」

Iwkaura-san asks Sensei.

「The other one would be taking an overseas fishing trip in the coast of Africa. All of the crew apart from you, would be men. There's about 40 fishermen who are either African or Southeast Asian. You will be dealing with the sexual desires of all those men on the ship alone. That trip would be relayed to the world in a live broadcasts」

Sensei spoke calmly.

「All of the sailors have passed AIDS and other STD tests so you don't have to worry. There should be a few who know Japanese too. Some people from Burkina Faso or Gabon or something, pretending to be Blacks from America, are selling fake soccer uniform replicas in Harajuku」

…Gabon or Burkina Faso
…Where is there a country with that name?

「Iwakura-san…Which plan would you like?」

Iwakura-san answered immediately with sparkling eyes.

「I'll take the fishing boat!」

Sensei let out a sigh.

「You're really disappointing. The Arabian harem won't be too much trouble and there's higher profit there too. In the end, you just indulge in your own preference…」
「…Sorry」
「I don't mind. I will have it arranged. The departure will be in the end of July so please prepare for it…!」
「…Okay」

I-Iwakura-san…
Why are you that excited?!
It's a fishing boat! There's only foreign fishermen there you know!
Their Japanese is broken you know!
No good…This person's broken to the core.

「As expected…Yuzuki-sensei's the best! Please lead my way forever!」

Ah…She's that happy…
She's going to be a mess in a fishing boat for a month…
To be honest…I'm a bit drawn back.

「Don't ever take any strange actions without my knowing okay…?!」

Sensei reminds Iwkaura-san.

「Of course! Yuzuki-sensei's the only one who really understands my fetishes! I'm so excited to be getting the privilege of having such an amazing experience that I got wet!」

This isn't a punishment at all.
Rather…It's a reward.

「…Got it. Then get out already We need to start our next job」

Sensei then told Iwakura-san to leave the room.

「Yes. I will be returning to the boys in the student council room to have group sex…! This excitement won't settle unless I have sex for at least three hours!」

I-Iwakura-kaichou.

「Didn't you have a university student boyfriend?」

Sensei asks Iwakura-san.
Speaking of which, I think she told Yukino that…

「Which university?」

Iwkaura-san asks Sensei blankly.

「…Which?」
「Yes, I have Yoshiharu, Shoutarou, and Koizumi who are in universities 」

…Three?

「Yoshiharu is a rugby player so I use him mainly for sex. I often

sleep with Yoshiharu's friends too. Right now, I plan to have sex with all of the regulars on his team」

…Err

「Since Shoutarou is an ikemen, I use him when I want to have soft sex. Since Koizumi is my favorite, I still haven't done it with him」

Why are you calling your favorite by his family name?!

「Didn't you tell Shirasaka-san that you want to get married and a mother a child?」
「That's Koizumi. He's a member of a founding family in listed companies in stocks. As long as I take hold of Koizumi, I won't miss a meal in the future. I wanted to keep Osone who's quite like Koizumi but, he felt unpleasant with easy sex so he left. He did't seem to like that my fellatio seemed too good… That's why, I won't sleep with Koizumi that easily and just keep teasing him!」

Iwakura-kaichou reports happily…

「Those are all the men you made relationships with after the closure of 『Kuromori』 last autumn?」

Sensei asks Iwkaura-san with an amazed face.

「Yes. My body itches everyday so I have no other choice!」

Iwakura-san made a teehee

「…Can you make a report of your current male relations? In detail please. If I don't arrange it, if I reopen 『Kuromori』 you can't be a prostitute」
「It's fine! I will be throwing them all away if I come back into prostitution!」

Iwakura-san said with a smile.

「Anyway…Submit a report by tomorrow. Okay?」
「Understood!」
「Then…leave. We're done talking!」
「Yes! Yuzuki-sensei, best regards in the future! Excuse me!」

Iwakura-san goes from the monitor room to the principal's office.
She's running with light steps…
When her figure completely disappeared…Sensei blew a big sigh.
She looks at me.

「…Iwakura Yukiyo's the girl who needed the most attention among the prostitutes of 『Kuromori』 She's an incomplete beauty, and her half-baked thoughts have become a complex problem. She's a complete pervert…So I made her a 『Toy』 so she could be protected. If not, she would've been sold to a pervert of some country long ago!」

Sensei says.
But Sensei actually never left her.
She would never sell her to a foreign country.

「She's really the worst problem child!」

Nei-san laughs

「You're the worst problem child…Nei」

Sensei said senseless.

「Huh?…I poked the hornet's nest again?」

Nei-san had a uh oh face again.

「There's no time to laugh…It has become a really troublesome situation」

Sensei told Nei-san with a serious look.

「When Iwakura Yukiyo gave the request to kill Yoshida-kun, she spread your data to the syndicates. Yoshida-kun, Nei, and Margo's data…」

…Eh?

「Katsuko's data was erased. And since she doesn't know that Megumi became my 『Toy』, she didn't hand over Megumi's data. That's a small mercy. The guests who come to 『Kuromori Tower』

know Margo, and I think that the syndicates will keep her data since she acted violently in the town. Yoshida-kun's just a normal high school student so they won't pay attention to him…

Sensei calmly analyzes it

「The problem is…Every current photo and address of Nei is spreading throughout the underground right now …」

Nei-san's trembling.

「It would've been a good camouflage if Margo went violent in the town with a blonde woman but…the name and clear photo is spreading on the net」
「And in America too…!」

Nei-san reacts to Sensei's words.

「Of course America would see it…It's the internet after all.」

It's not just Nei-san, Katsuko-nee's feeling nervous too…!

「Will Mr. Viola come to Japan?」 1

Katsuko-nee asks Sensei.

「Of course he will…If it's him. Nei is a prey that he should've killed long ago. He doesn't think about anything but me stealing her from the side.' That's why he'll definitely come…!」

Nei-san keeps on trembling.

「…Nei-san」
「Yo-chan…please, hold me please」

I embraced Nei-san with all of my strength.

「It's been three days since the data leaked on the internet. There's plenty of people who are in charge of analyzing information mainly in Japan so I think we should assume that it already reached Cesario Viola」

Sensei said.

「I already had an investigation done on the foreigners under him entering the country. I've already leaked out information to the police and customs. However, I don't think those people will enter Japan through normal means…!」
「Mr. Viola's on the international wanted list…」

Katsuko-nee said.

「What's the relationship of that man to Nei-san?」

I asked Sensei.

「Cesario Viola is the man who murdered Nei's parents…kidnapped Nei and murdered her younger brother…Kei…!」

Nei-san bursts into tears…

「…Yo-chan, Yo-chan…Hold me tighter」

I embrace Nei-chan!
「It's okay, I'm here with you!」

I desperately embrace the shivering Nei-san…
Somehow, I can feel Nei-san's body getting colder.

「Nei shouldn't leave the mansion for a while…I will be checking the security of the school and the mansion again. You should keep in mind to keep mutual contact」
「…Yes, Ojou-sama」
「I will let Katsuko carry out today's plan. I will be observing from this room」
「Certainly」

Katsuko-nee whispers to Nei-san…

「It's okay…It's not certain that we will be attacked by that man yet. We have several days at least. Everyone should just resist him…!」

Katsuko-nee smiled gently

「…Katsuuun!」
「Hey…Forget the scary stuff and let's enjoy the day! Hey!」

Nei-san's heart loosens from Katsuko-nee's smile.

「Yeah…Got it」

Nei-san finally stops crying…

「…That's right. Please have fun for my share too」

Sensei told Nei-san

「…Yoshida-kun, this will be your first time having sex with a middle school student right?」

…Eh, Yuzuki-sensei?
W-Well, it is.
I see…Have fun she says…
About raping…Maika-chan…

「Then…It's about time you return to the mansion. You've got to prepare don't you?」

Saying that, Sensei stares at the monitors in the room
Megumi at the grounds is reflected in the middle monitor.
Megumi is dashing with the other members while talking…
The glitter of sweat…and her bare thighs are sexy

…Megumi's doing her best.

While all these extraordinary things are happening…Megumi's the only one living her daily life.
I somehow felt calmer when I saw Megumi doing her club activities…

◇ ◇ ◇

From the monitor room, we went along the underground passage towards the parking lot of the school staff.
It's Katsuko-nee, Nei-san and me.
As expected…Nei-san's not energetic

「By the way, Yo-chan…」

Nei-san asks me.

「What?」
「About the neutralizer I made Yo-chan drink a while ago…」

Oh, the anesthetic…Speaking of which, my body still feels slightly heavy.
I think my movement's have dulled…

「You see…That has a bit of side effect」

…Eh, what?

「For today, Yo-chan…once you get erect, it will stay like that for a long time」
「…What?」
「No matter how much you ejaculate, it will remain standing until the drug's effect wears off…Do your best kay?」

…That means?

「It can't be helped! It's that kind of medicine after all…!」

Nei-san…laughs mischievously
…She finally laughed.
…I'm glad.

「That's why…enjoy it a lot」

Nei-san laughs
…I
I'll just accept my fate
…Whatever it may be.

Margo-san's waiting in front of the Maserati in the parking lot

「…Maru-chaaan!」

Nei-san embraces Margo-san

「I heard Minaho's talk from the car」
「Maru-chan…I, you see…!」

Margo-san embraces Nei-san who's clinging to her.

「…It'll be fine. I will beat down Cesario Viola…」

Margo-san said clearly.

「Yeah…Please. I mean that, Maru-chan」
「Yeah…I promise you」

Margo-san smiled.

「Now…we still have plans for today don't we? Get in the car!」

By Margo-san's command…We entered the Maserati…!
Margo-san's driving. Nei-san's in the passenger seat.
Katusko-nee and I are in the backseat…
The shutter in the hidden garage makes a sharp sound
I…got lost in thought
I'm about to rape a middle school girl after this

「…Yoshida-kun, do you know the movie 『Easy Rider2』」

Margo-san asked suddenly.

「…No. I don't」
「I see, it's a bit old movie after all…It's a story about motorbikes」

…Err
Since it's motorcycles, there's a rider…
Oh…So it's a hero with special effects3

「Ah, I might've seen it at my friend's house during elementary」
「Eh, grade schoolers have that kind of hobby?」
「It's a guy who has a lot of video softwares…」

Yeah, rider and ultra man…

「Hee…As expected of Japan a movie major power. To make grade schoolers kid watch 『Easy Rider』4」

Margo-san's admiring…

Easy rider is that isn't it? I'm sure
A rider with a half exposed face.
Having an attachment on one hand…
Yup, no doubt.

「But, I don't remember much anything from when I was in grade school」
「That's a bit regrettable. Do you not remember the scene were Dennis Hopper and Peter Fonda got high on drugs?」

…Err
Hopper must mean the grasshopper monster.
Peter Honda must have been an evil doctor or something.

「No…I don't」
「Right…During the high, Peter Fonda goes to a high place and shouts 『Mama![5]』」

Hee…That's a strange hero.

「This is just a rumor…but it seems that they had an argument during the time filming that scene. Peter and Hopper」

…The monster and the evil doctor?

「You see…Peter had a deep trauma for his mother. Peter Fonda's father is Henry Fonda. The husband suffered from having too much heroic popularity and Peter's mother committed suicide. Everyone knows that story」

What's this sublime story.
Can children understand when they watch that?

「That's why, Peter got angry at Hopper. 『Certainly, I've got a trauma about my mother but, my role with this mother is unrelated to that! Why do you have to reveal my trauma in an act unrelated to it!』…」

Somehow…I get it but I don't get it.

「…Then, what happened?」

Nei-san on the passenger seat asks Margo-san

「…Hopper answered Peter this way」

Margo from the rearview mirror looks at me.

「『It's reasonable so do it for my sake』…」

…It's reasonable so do it for my sake?

「And did Peter agree?」

Margo-san answers Nei-san's question

「It seems that Peter answered 『Got it, I'll do it for you』 Then they completed the scene」
「Hee…So they had such episode on that movie」

Nei-san nodded at Margo-san…

…Err
To be honest, I don't get what Margo-san said…

「With that said…Yoshida-kun」

…What?
Uhm…What 『With that said』?

「Forget the reason…and do it for Minaho's sake」

Margo-san's eyes through the mirror were serious…

For Yuzuki-sensei's sake…
Yuzuki-sensei's little sister…the one abducted by Shirasaka Sousuke, violated, and made a prostitute.
Then…When she got pregnant, she was killed.
This is…Sensei's revenge.
Sensei…will never settle down unless she makes Shirasaka's daughter, Yukino and Maika-chan fall…

「…I'll be the one requesting you. Could you steel your heart for

Minaho's revenge? 」

…I

「 …Got it. I'll do anything for Sensei's sake 」
「 …Thanks 」

The garage shutter opens…
Margo-san drives the blue Maserati towards the mansion…!

---

1. https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Viola_(Twelfth_Night) This will be a trivia that will be mentioned later in the novel but here you go, that's the origin of the name ↩
2. www.imdb.com/title/tt0064276/ ↩
3. Pfft, He's talking about Kamen Rider ↩
4. Margo-san! Don't be fooled! Yoshida's not on the same page as you! ↩
5. I just killed a man, put a gun against his head, pulled my trigger now he's dead! Mama, life had just began—— ↩

◇ Maika Rape -Arc

85. Male Idol around Latin America

Margo-san spoke when we arrived at the mansion.

「Then…I'll go get Misuzu-san so Katsuko-san please prepare for the meet up with Maika-chan」

…Eh? Misuzu?

「I don't think Mr. Viola's already at Japan but…but we should be careful from now on. I will be getting Misuzu directly from her house」

Margo-san said.

「Then, let me come too」

Margo-san smiles wryly.

「No no…It would be trouble inside the car if you come won't it? You have to do your very best for the whole day so…you should conserve your energy」

Certainly…It is as Margo-san said.
Yesterday, I received a handjob from Misuzu…
When I saw her off, we had car sex.
When Misuzu enters a closed room…her eye colors change…

I remembered Misuzu's face of passion inside the car…!

Yeah…I shouldn't go get her for today.

「With that said…Katsuko-san, I'll leave the rest to you」
「Yes, take care…」

Margo-san drives the blue Maserati out of the mansion again…
Looking up at the sky…I can see the clouds from last night making it dim.

「…It might rain this afternoon」

Katsuko-nee muttered.

「We can make use of the fine weather in the meanwhile…!」

We entered the mansion while looking at the gray sky.

◇　◇　◇

Now then…I change my clothes into the『Prince of the star』
White shirt and pants.
Black vest with rose embroidery.
Then…A yellow scarf.
Thick soiled brown boots.

It's embarrassing but it can't be helped.
Everyone told me to wear this…

I take a look at the state of the school grounds while changing.
I was taught by Katsuko-nee in the basics of how to use the monitor system.
Though they intend to have me watch them even if they're in the locker or the shower room…
For the time being, I had her teach me how to view the grounds…
Megumi's reflected on the screen.
Megumi's cleaning up some apparatus along with the other first years…
She wipes sweat off her forehead with her right hand.
An earnest look.

I feel relaxed when I watch Megumi doing her club activities like usual.
Yup…it's fine.
I'm still not strange…
I want to believe that.

「Ta-da! How is it?」

Nei-san and Katsuko-nee who finished changing enter the room.
Both of them are wearing adult-like clothes.

Katsuko-nee's wearing a yellow summer outfit that's open by her big breasts and a denim pants that show off her waist line clearly.

Nei-san's wearing a black dress that fits to her body. Her back is open and her skirt is short. Nei-san's wonderful style is shown clearly.

「Yes, both of you look good…!」
「Adult-like? Sexy?」

Nei-san asks for further impression…!

「Yes, it's very amorous…!」

I instinctively blushed.
Their figures are very amorous yet…it's elegant.
There's no vulgarity at all.

「Maika-sama's yearning for 『Adult-like sexy woman』…」

Katsuko-nee told me.

「Yeah…That's why we're dressed like this and so we're going to hold Maika-chan's heart」

I see…So it's that kind of plan.

「Then, Nei-sama and I will be meeting up with Maika-sama…」

Huh…What about me?

「Yo-chan's turn will be later…」
「Yes, your turn is the biggest one!」

…Ah
They already have lots of plans.

「We will be meeting up with Maika-sama with the Benz and we'll have some tea! There's a cafe that's specialized in high quality chocolates. We'll have her taste plenty of the high society!」
「Getting her bound by the talk…we'll be bringing her to the mansion!」

Ha…Nei-san and Katsuko-nee must be intolerable for middle school girls.

「We'll be taking at least half an hour…then we'll come back. You're going to wait here for Margo-sama and Misuzu to return…!」
「Okay…Got it」

If that's the plan, it can't be helped.
Even if I go with them…I don't know what middle school girls talk about.

「If you're hungry, just eat the sweet rolls I prepared in the dining room…」

Katsuko-nee approached and told me.

「Then…We'll be heading off」

She kissed my lips…

「Yo-chan…Can I have one too?」

Nei-san asks for a kiss while blushing…

「When we pressed our lips a while ago…we got cut off!」

…I wonder
She made me drink a medicine mouth to mouth a while ago.

「…Can we kiss?」

I embraced Nei-san.
Then kissed her plump lips…

「Uwaa, I can feel the chill in my back! It's somewhat sweet…it tastes like lemon candy! So kisses have such a taste!」

I kissed Nei-san's lips once again.

「…Please take care」

I told nei-san.

「Yeah! I'm heading out! Yo-chan!!!」

This time…Nei-san's the one who kissed me…!

「I'm glad that Yo-chan's here…I love you!」

Katsuko-nee says while we're hugging me.

「Hey hey! Get off already! We're leaving now!」
「…Okaay! Katsuun!」

Nei-san laughs and separates from me…

◇ ◇ ◇

After that…I watched over Megumi for around 20 minutes.
I may look like Megumi's stalker but to be honest, I can't get tired of watching her.
Megumi's devoting herself to practice with a serious face.
Megumi talks to the other first year members peacefully.
…She's really cute.
Her looks in her training wear are especially beautiful.
Her bare legs exposed from her shorts are gorgeous!
Megumi's very clean and healthy…She has a calm atmosphere
Yeah…The hairstyle Yuuka-san cut for her really suits her.
She had a childish feel until how however…
The current Megumi is certainly a beauty.
I had sex with this girl…
…It's like a lie.
…It's like a dream.

I kept staring at Megumi in the monitors absentmindedly…

…Huh?
I can hear a car by the entrance.
The sound of this engine is Margo-san's Maserati.
While I was thinking of that…
The door opens…
Misuzu in her uniform…jumps towards me!!!

「…Danna-samaaa! Why did you not come to get mee!!」

Misuzu's in her slightly angry mode…

…But

When she saw my 『Ouji-sama』 clothes…Misuzu's state changes completely!

「…W-w-w-w-w-w-who are you! Why are you trying to look like Misuzu's Danna-sama!!!!」

…As expected
This looks really bad.
『Prince of the star』 match…

「…I-I-I-I-Isn't this cute! Geez!!!!」

…Eh?
…M-Misuzu-san?

「It's so cute! GUREITO DAZE![1]! It's cute!…Danna-sama, let's go to bed right now!」

Misuzu pulls my arm…

「Wait wait…Wait a moment…!M-Misuzu!!」
「I won't! Showing me such a cute appearance, my stomach's already itching…I'm wet!」

H-Hey!

「You can't, Misuzu-san. If you have sex then those special clothes will get wrinkled won't it?」

Margo-san who parked the car enters the room and warns Misuzu.

「Then I'll get naked! Danna-sama, please take off everything right now! I'll get naked immediately too!」

Misuzu's rampage doesn't stop…
No…It stopped.

「Aaahn, if you take it off, I can't have sex with Danna-sama in these cute clothes! I don't want thaaaat!」

Err…
It seems that the 『Prince of the star』 match is Misuzu's type…
Mainly on the lewd part…

「You can have sex with him in those clothes later so…we have to first make Maika-chan fall today. The flirting can be left for after Maika-chan comes」

Margo-san advices Misuzu.

「Uuuu, I understand…」
「Well, take a seat…I'll be handing you tea」

Margo-san prepares tea.

「Ah, Misuzu will do that instead!」
「Leave it to me…Yoshida-kun, please play with Misuzu-chan」
「…Okay. Let's take a sit, Misuzu」

I sat in a chair.
Then…Misuzu-sat down in the chair next to me.
She's snuggling towards me like a baby…

「Danna-sama…Misuzu's very lonely this morning!」
「…Eh?」
「When I called you this morning…Megumi-san, Katsuko-sama, and Nei-san were there…」

Oh…The fuss this morning?

「Everyone's able to service Danna-sama this morning…it makes Misuzu sad!」

I embraced Misuzu's delicate body.

「…You don't need to worry」
「Danna-sama…so warm. Oh, I want to live in this mansion too. Then, I can be with Danna-sama all the time…!」

Misuzu whispers in my ear sadly.

「That's no good…Misuzu has her parents and grandfather. You

shouldn't make your family worry about you…!」
「…Danna-sama?」
「This is a house for those who have lost their family…」

I think so.
Katsuko-nee who was forced into prostitution.
Margo-san who was driven out of the Indian settlement.
Nei-san who had her family killed.
Yuzuki-sensei who had her family turned towards disaster.

「Right…I have to be thankful for having a gentle family with me」

Misuzu understood immediately since she has good perception.

「Then…Danna-sama, please take Misuzu faster!」

…Whut?

「Danna-sama…When's your birthday?」

…My birthday?

「Err…August 4」
「Then, two years later…When Danna-sama's 18 years old, please register Misuzu in the family registry」

…Err Uhm.
…Why did it come to this?

「…Do you not want to take Misuzu as your wife?」

Misuzu looks up at me.

「I-It's not that」
「Do you prefer Megumi-san more?」

Megumi declared it too.
In front of everyone in the ground.
She said『We'll remained married for our entire life』

「That's not how it is…」

I became evasive.

「Then, is it Nei-san?…Nei-san's much more beautiful than Misuzu」

Misuzu's face becomes gloomy.
I kissed Misuzu's ear.

「You don't have to mind that…Misuzu's really cute. I love you」

Misuzu clings to me.

「…Danna-sama!」

She's really cute like a puppy.
I pat Misuzu's head.
Hey…Misuzu's actually a year older than me though.

「Hey hey, don't flirt too much…The tea's ready so move along. We've got bread baked by Katsuko-san too」

Margo-san passes teacups on saucers.
I put one in front of Misuzu then had the next cup for myself.

Then the three of us talked while having tea for a while.
To be accurate, the two of them…
Margo-san and Misuzu are happily talking about South American literature and old French movies.
The two of them seems to have the same hobby…
Of course, I just sit by her side and listen because I don't know anything.
I just munched the bread alone.

「Now then…It's about time we peep at Katsuko-san's state?」

Margo-san finishes the talk and operates the machine on the wall's side.
I can hear voices from the speaker.

『…Really, My onee-san's a bully! I just borrowed the make up and dress and she got really angry! She says 'it's too early for you' Onee-chan's like a brat』

This is Maika-chan's voice?
It seems that I can hear some booooon sound though…

「Nei has a high performance microphone in her cellphone and we're on call. It always records conversations. The noise from the background is the driving sound of the car. I think the tea break's over and they're coming here already…」

Margo-san explained.

『Oh, so what kind of person is Maika-chan's onee-san?』

This is Nei-san's voice.

『Hmmm, selfish, egoistic, short tempered…and she's really irritating!』

uwa…Yukino, your sister's talking bad about you.

『Isn't that just a brat?!』
『That's right! Onee-chan's like a kid…! She's not like the adult Katsuko-san and Nei-san!』

…Maika-chan seems to be in bad relationship with Yukino.

「It really looks like Maika-chan yearns for『Adult woman』」

Margo-san said.

「…An adult-like woman?」

Misuzu thinks for a moment.

「Then…should I give out an adult-like atmosphere too?」
「Yeah. I think you should. Can you do it this once?」
「…Yes」

Misuzu took out a small purse from her bag.
When she opens it…It's a makeup set.
Uwaa…So they're carrying this many.

「Misuzu-chan, do you need anything else? You can use Nei's

cosmetics as you like. It's in that powder room」

Margo-san says that however…

「This is fine. What I have here will do…」

Misuzu puts on makeup while looking at the hand mirror…
It's not a thick makeup at all.
Rather, she just adds color to the important points with a natural feel…
And yet…
Misuzu grew up several years older in no time…
…Amazing.
She looks like she's in her 20s.
But…It's very lovely…and beautiful.

「…How is it, Danna-sama?」
「yeah…It looks amazingly adult. You're beautiful!」
「Do you hate this kind of Misuzu?」

Misuzu asks me slightly anxious.

「I love whatever kind of Misuzu it is!」

Her mature face lights up suddenly.

「…Danna-sama, I love you!」

Then…She faced the mirror again.

「My hairstyle doesn't suit this makeup so I'll fix it…」

Misuzu raised her hair into a ponytail.
Yeah…This kind of makeup makes this one good.
Being able to see her nape feels very sexy.

「Amazing…you're beautiful」
「Ufu…Thank you Danna-sama!」

Misuzu seems to completely understand how to make herself look attractive.

「There are times where I have to appear in foreign parties…」

Misuzu said while fixing her hair.

「Those people like a stronger and more adult-like makeup…so I match the fashion at such time. If I don't, I would be seen as a too young Japanese girl and I won't be allowed to drink wine. If I don't look like an adult, the waitress would only hand me orange juice」

Misuzu…
A really amazing ojou-sama…

「I'm still a kid. I don't know a lot about this world…I can't do anything」

I feel a bit gloomy.

「Danna-sama, you're very cute like that so please stay as you are!」

The Misuzu who became an adult insists strongly…!
…But
…What cute?
Misuzu stares at my face…

「Err…What?」

Misuzu spoke to Margo-san

「Margo-sama…if we change Danna-sama's hairstyle, don't you think his clothes would become lovelier?」
「Yeah…that might be」

Misuzu…What do you intend to do?

「…How about Pompadour?」

P-Pompadour…?

「Yup, Misuzu-chan, GREAT IDEA! I'll bring out some conditioner」

Margo-san faces the powder room…

◇ ◇ ◇

I shiver when I look at my hair in the mirror.

White shirts white pants.
Black vest with rose embroidery.
Yellow scarf.
Mysterious thick soiled boots.
Then…Pompadour hair.

I thought that it would be more of a Yankee like pompadour but…
Misuzu softened the image from what I had in my head.

「How is it? I made him look like James Dean!」

Misuzu says.
Of course, I don't know who James Dean is.

「Yeah, it also has the young Elvis feel」

Margo-san says so.
What's Elvis?

「The Japenese delinquent hairs had begun with an Elvis and James Dean image, right? Then why did it develop into such a strange hairstyle?」

Margo-san presents a question to Misuzu.

「That's because they adopt the cultures of other countries then add originality, it's a repeating national trait」

Misuzu answered.
I don't get it.

I look at my own appearance in front of the mirror…
If I hold a guitar…I may look like a male idol from Latin America.
Yeah, if it's in Guatemala or Paraguay?…
I might be able to acquire first place in original content as a male idol…

No, I never went there though. In my imagination.
Anyway…What's going on with this?
Is this appearance really okay…?

「It's so cool! It's very cute!」

Then…Misuzu said that with a smile.

「But…please wait a moment!」

Misuzu checks me from top to bottom once again.

「…The boots are too clean」

Misuzu looks at my feet and says.

「Well…It's a new pair so it can't be helped.」

Tamayo-san brought these clothes with her yesterday.

「Danna-sama…let's go to the courtyard for a bit」

Misuzu says with a scary face.

「…Hurry up!」

Misuzu pulled me out of the room.
She just came here a day before yesterday and yet, Misuzu seems to understand the structure of the mansion already.
We come to the courtyard from the terrace.

「Put the boots in the soil, please make them dirty」
「…Got it」

As told by Misuzu-san…I put dust and dry soil on the boots.

「That's enough! Please come this way」

I got out of the soil and towards Misuzu in the terrace…
Misuzu pulls out a pocket tissue and puts it on my face.

「Please spit on it!」

…Spit?

「Just do it!」

I spit on the tissue that's held by Misuzu's small hands.
Misuzu squats down in the terrace and wipes the shoes with the tissue wet with saliva…

「The shoes should only shine at this part. It's not dandy if it's all polished. Then, please remember that it's a gentleman act if you polish your shoes with your saliva」

Misuzu wiped my shoes.
Somehow, I feel that I'm doing something inexcusable.

「Sorry…I made you do that」
「What are you saying?!」

The squatting Misuzu looks up at me.

「You're Misuzu's Danna-sama, it's normal to be taken care by Misuzu!」

…Misuzu

「Misuzu will be checking Danna-sama's look everyday after this! Danna-sama does not need to worry about anything!」

No…I am unconcerned with clothes.
This already helps me a lot …
…Could it be
I will be having this pompadour from now on?

「Okay, done! let's go back into the room!」

Misuzu happily smiles
Well, it's fine as long as Misuzu's having fun.

We washed our hands on the way and come back to the former room.
Margo-san seems to have been checking Katsuko-nee and the girls' conversation at the car all this time…

『Then you see…Onee-chan's been weird these days!』

It's Maika-chan's voice.

『…Weird?』

Then, Nei-san.

『Like…She's wearing a big underwear! She's like an old woman! As if she's hiding her navel!』

…That's

『She's been wearing such small underwear before. If it's not a cute panty that she doesn't like, she would complain to mother! And yet, suddenly…!』

Yukino…so that the 『Yoshida』 tattoo won't be seen…
It doesn't need to be a panty to hide her navel…
Are there no panties with just the right size?

『I wonder if her stomach's spoiled? Or maybe she doesn't want her stomach to be cold』

Katsuko-nee said.

『No, Maika thought so too but…Could it be that Onee-chan already had sex?…』

…Maika-chan

『…My, why do you think so?』
『Onee-chan got a boyfriend when she entered high school! She's so merry that she's so helpless. They always talk through phone every night… And she's been strange for these past few days…!』
『What kind of strange?!』
『When she came back home, she just sinks down depressed and she didn't call her boyfriend either』
『Could it be that they fought?』
『No…You see. Mama went out to a business trip last week and Onee-chan stayed out overnight. She said that she'll stay in a relative's house but…That's definitely a lie』

『Why do you think so?!』
『The relative Onee-chan mentioned goes to the same school with her but, Onee-chan hates her a lot. She always bullies her when the relatives gather. She's a very good person but…There's no way for Onee-chan to stay at that person's house suddenly!

That person…it's Megumi.
It makes me feel relieved that Maika-chan doesn't hate Megumi…

『Perhaps…Onee-chan had her first time sex with her boyfriend that day! But, I'm sure it didn't go well! Maika infers!』

Maika-chan's quite sharp.
Actually, it wasn't first sex with her boyfriend, Endou…
I raped her though

『Does people who lost their virginity feel strong pain in their stomach?! I think that onee-chan wears a big panty to protect her stomach! I'm sure it still hurts. Then, she slept in her room all day long today…』

Yukino…shut herself in her own room for the whole day today.

『Eeh, normally loss of virginity doesn't last that long!』

Nei-san tells Maika-chan.
Even though you're a virgin…!2

『Therefore, I'm sure that her partner did very badly! Onee-chan might have a hole in her stomach!』

…Maika-chan.
What kind of dick is that?!
A drill penis?!3

『Right…First time sex is precious. If you gave your first experience to an unskilled person, it'll leave a wound in your heart forever and you might not be able to have sex normally』

Katsuko-nee tells Maika-chan.

『…Is that so?』

『That's right…Maika-chan, are you still a virgin?』
『…Yes, I'm still a virgin』
『Do you have a plan to lose your virginity anytime soon…?』
『Well…There's none. None, however…』

Maika-chan falters.

『Hm?…What's wrong?』

Maika-chan answers Nei-san's question.

『I have someone I want to give my virginity to』

---

1. It's actually, Naisu Desu, but since his hair is Josuke, Let's make him Josuke ↩
2. Jibun wa shoujo no kuseni! This joke will run for more than 300 chaps ↩
3. A drill that pierces the heavens ↩

86. Man of Destiny

『I have someone I want to give my virginity to』

…So Maika-chan has someone she likes.

『Eh, who is it? Tell us!』

Nei-san asks…
I also listened to the speakers by the wall too.

『He's called Shinn Asuka but…Do you know him?』 1

…I don't know.
Or rather, there's no way I would know.

『He's the lead guitarist of a band named Destiny…』 2

…Band?

「Maika-chan, you pronounced it wrong…Destiny should be pronounced 『destinē』」

Margo-san mutters.

「There's a band called『デスティニー』 in Katakana. It's more like a young idol unit than a rock band…」

Misuzu said with an unpleasant face.
I-It's an entertainer?!

『Eh, does Maika-chan know him?』

Nei-san asks in surprise.

『Rather than acquaintance…My papa's in advertising so he works with many people. That's why I have his signature!」

…Huh?

『Eh…Could it be that Maika-chan never met him?』

Nei-san questions.

『I've seen him a lot of times! Maika always goes to their concerts! I can only watch in the daytime because Papa won't allow me otherwise…』

Margo-san looks dubious.

「What daytime? Rock concerts are only at night?」

Misuzu answers.

「That's why they're not a rock band but an idol unit. Since 『Destiny』 is popular, they do the same programmed concert three times a day at each venue」
「Three times a day…They're doing well」

Margo-san's amazed.
It must be quite strange judging from American standards.

『Actually, I want to see all three of their performances. But I can only watch the first two』

Maika-chan…watch them two times in a row. The same concert.

『Could it be that…the concert runs everyday?』

Nei-san asks timidly…

『No way…I can't go chasing after people. I only have a little pocket money. My limit would be purchasing a ticket using the money I saved from the New Year's gift. But, I definitely watch it twice on the same days since it's exhilarating…!』
『Hmm, so you really like…that』
『It's Asuka Shin! We call him Shin-chan!』
『Then…Have you met this Shin-chan?』
『Like I said, every time he's at a concert…!』
『Have you seen him in the dressing room?』
『No way! I would get caught by the guards! Also, those scary fangirls would gang up on me. My face would be shown on the net and I wouldn't be able to go to his concerts anymore…!』

…Hm, yeah

『Then…Could it be that Maika-chan has never met this Shin-chan alone?』
『Don't make me say it Nei-san…Isn't it obvious that it's impossible!』

Maika-chan laughs…

『But I definitely check it whenever he goes to TV or radio. I can't buy all of the magazines but when the photo looks cool, I buy it. I take a look at his blog everyday. Ah…Shin-chan has a girlfriend!』
『…What?』
『He wrote it on his blog. It's a model named Maria-san3 She's not that cute so she's not so popular…』

Maika-chan talks about the idol happily even more…

『But, she's very adult-like. Shin-chan's 19-years old and Maria-san is around 23 I guess. She's a bit of an onee-san…it's cool!』
『Hee… Then, Maika-chan wants to have Shin-chan who has a girlfriend take your virginity?』

…She's just a fan who never met him
…Women are mystery

『…It's a dream!』

Maika-chan spoke with a brilliant voice.

『Shin-chan chooses Maika instead of Maria-san…Then we'd spend a romantic night!…That kind of dream!』

…She's saying it's a dream.
…It must be a delusion.
Rather than that…
She's still a kid.
…Maika-chan is.

「Yoshida-kun, do you know the band named 『Destiny?』 」

Margo-san asks while setting up her laptop.

「I don't…I lived in a dorm without television after all. The least I know is that Rusher Kimura has died recently」[4]

Yeah…I don't know anything about entertainment for the past three years.

「Who's Rusher?」

Oops…Rusher Kimura must've been hard for Margo-san.

「Ah, please forget it. I will forget about it too…!」

Sorry…Rusher!

「Well, fine, but…I searched images of 『Destiny Asuka Shin』」

Margo-san made the laptop face us.

「Misuzu-chan…is this him?」
「Yes, that's him!」

…Umu
The 『Shin』 on the screen is wearing strange wine red clothes
He has an unrefined hairstyle like today's idols…
His bands are too long…Can he see properly?
He's laughing 「Ehehehe」 while looking at the camera…
…I can't see him as smart by any angle[5]
Or rather…He looks like nothing but an idiot?

『Shin-chan's smile is very cute…It feels like he's not thinking of anything!』

That's what Maika-chan says…
But this smile really thinks about nothing…

「Maika-chan…what's good with this man?」

Margo-san mutters in wonder…

「That's why middle school girls are scary! That's the darkest part of a woman's life!」

Misuzu laughs…

「Eh?…Misuzu-chan was a fan of someone during her middle school days too?」

Margo-san asks Misuzu.

「I'm sorry, please ask me anything but that…!」

Then, Misuzu grips my hand tightly!

「Misuzu doesn't have anyone but Danna-sama! Everyone's just a past!」

Misuzu…Why are you teary eyed?

「…It's just merely a fan right?」

Misuzu's trembling…
Margo-san smiles showing an 'Oh dear!' face.

「That's right. Even I had a hero in my childhood. It's embarrassing if you think about it now」

Hee, so Margo-san had that kind of person too.

「By the way…who was it?」

Margo-san bashfully answered my question

「…Steven Seagal」

Yeah…It's certainly complicated.
It might be complicatedly embarrassing…

「I learned martial arts because I watched Steven Seagal movies… It's funny when I look back at it. It would be understandable if it was Jet Li」

…I don't get Margo-san's examples.

「Then…Misuzu-chan's a fan of whom?」

Margo-san asks Misuzu.

「…Eh?」
「Since I told you too, shouldn't Misuzu tell us too?」
「P-Please don't laugh」
「I won't…Yoshida-kun wants to know it too right?」
「Yeah, I won't laugh too」

Misuzu answered in a small voice and red hot face.

「…Anne Shirley」

…Who?
Film star? A rock singer?
Rather…Isn't Anne a woman's name?

「Could that be from『Anne of Green Gables』?」

I was not able to hear Margo-san's fast English talk.

「Yes…The Anne Shirley of 『赤毛のアン』[6]」

…Err
『Anne of Green Gables』is that right?
The four sisters waiting for their father during the civil war…
Yup. No doubt.

「Eh…Did that become a movie?」

Misuzu answers my question

「No…You see, I…read the original version, and I was deeply moved…!」

…Original?

「Eh, could it be that you read the English version?」
「Yes, I was already in middle school at the time!」

Misuzu answers calmly.
As expected, this girl's not normal…

「I loved it so much that I thought about Anne every night! It was like a fever. When we talk about Anne, it gets me exited. Aha… That's funny isn't it?!」

…Margo-san and I didn't laugh.
…Rather, we pulled back.

Could it be that it's not a real person?
Furthermore…It's a woman!
Eh…Can you be a fan of that too?

「Haa…that's amazing.」

Anyway…I said those.

「Iyaaan~! It's an old story!」

Misuzu writhes bashfully.

「I asked mother and she brought me to Prince Edward Island during my summer vacation in my second year of middle school…!」

I-Is that so?
Prince Edward Island is something I don't know though…

「It was really beautiful and there's also Anne's house there! There's Matthew's room too…!」

Ah…Amazing.
Misuzu's『Anne of Green Gables』fever is recurring.

「Misuzu-chan, let's leave Anne's talk for later. We need to concentrate on gathering information about Maika-chan right now…!」

Margo-san…nice follow up!

「Ah, Sorry. Then, I'll show a photo next time, Danna-sama. I took around 500 pictures!」
「…Yeah, got it」

I'll be looking at 500 photos
It's Misuzu's travel photos.
…I must prepare for that
Thinking about seeing Misuzu's look when she's in her middle school, there's no problem…Umu

We keep listening to the wiretap flowing on the speakers
The conversation in the car has already moved to another topic…

『Maika-chan, do you masturbate?』

Katsuko-nee asks a plain question suddenly.
She's asking lightly but it's not a normal conversation at all.

『…Err』

Maika-chan's voice sounds embarrassed…

『Do you know masturbation? It's doing lewd things alone』
『Maika knows that much!』

…So she knows

『I don't do it much…maybe occasionally』

Maika-chan answered humbly.

『Maika-chan's about to become an adult so you should be venting out your sexual desires properly』

Katsuko-nee emphasizes the word 『Adult』 on purpose.

『Onee-chan's being noisy when she's doing lewd things alone…』

Eh…Yukino?

『Onee-chan's room is next to Maika…I can hear an 'Ahn, ahn' voice from next door late at night. Onee-chan thinks that no one can hear it but…She's a bit annoying. I'll think of knocking on the door tonight』

Yukino pants when she masturbates. To the extent that the other

rooms can hear it.

『She did it last night…until this morning. I think she's not feeling well but still masturbates the whole day』

…Yukino

『She must be unsatisfied since her first time with her boyfriend didn't go well…!』

Kastsuko-nee laughingly said.

『Katsuko-san, do you masturbate too?』

Katsuko-nee giggled.

『I don't! I have sex regularly!』
『…Eh?』

Maika-chan flinches from Katsuko-nee's words.

『Human bodies are something that needs to have sex regularly! Haven't heard of it? Women becomes beautiful when they have sex…or something close to that?』
『…Is that real?』
『That's right. Women lose their beauty unless they don't have sex regularly. Sex is very important for women』
『…How many times does Katsuko-san do it in a week?』

It seems that she's interested in sex.
Maika-chan asks Katsuko-nee such a thing

『…Me? I definitely do it five times a week. If not, the tension of my skin will be completely different. Your body feels activated when you have sex…!』

Katsuko-nee…is setting up the trap for Maika-chan

『…Nei-san too?』
『Me?…I do it a bit less than her…something like that!』

…N-Nei-san.

『Katsuko-san and Nei-san has sex that much…』

Maika-chan's surprised.

『Yeah. Well』

M-Maika-chan, don't be fooled.
That one's a virgin!

『When you have your monthly periods, a women's body is already prepared to have sex, isn't it? It's the same as eating food everyday. If you want to be a good woman, you need to have sex as a habit. Maika-chan, your menses has already come, hasn't it?』

Katsuko-nee…probes it out.
She fans Maika-chan by treating her slightly idiotic.

『Isn't that obvious?! Maika is not a child anymore. It comes every month since I was in fifth grade!』

Maika-chan who's fueled just leaks her personal information…

『Then it's already been three years since your first menstruation? You need to have sex soon or else it won't be good for your body…!』
『…Eh?』

Maika-chan's surprised.

『If you don't take in male hormones while growing up, your body will become unbalanced. It's the cause for old Japanese people to have bad figure』

Katsuko-nee says the most groundless thing.

『…Is that so?』
『That's right. Women from Europe and America have good style right? Those people there have sex regularly while they're young. If you don't have sex while in your growth period, you'll have no waist, short legs, and you won't grow taller either. Nei-san, isn't that right?』

Katsuko-nee pass it to Nei-san.

『That's right…It seems that there's an article announcing it in an American Medical Journal. It appeared in the newspapers at the station the other day!』

…The hell's that?

『Maika-chan should throw away her virginity soon』

Katsuko-nee laughs.

『But, Maika doesn't have a partner. I'm scared of doing lewd things. I would be troubled if I get pregnant too…』
『You don't need to get worried about getting pregnant…there's proper contraceptives for that』

Katsuko-nee answered lightly.

『…But』
『Nei-san and I drink contraceptive pills. You can prevent conception by 100% with pills』
『…Is that so?』
『Yes, you can also destroy the risk when using a condom. Or rather…Japan's used condoms so much. In the US, adult women all drink pills』
『But…Isn't birth control medicine bad for your body?』

Katsuko-nee laughs.

『There's a lot of good medicines developed now. It's totally okay. Look at me and Nei-san. Do we look like we're not healthy?』
『…No』
『In addition…You need to have men ejaculate inside you』
『…Why?』
『If you don't, then the male hormones won't be absorbed, right? When you absorb a lot of male hormones…women becomes an attractive adult』
『…Ah, yes』
『Maika-chan…Do you know fellatio?』
『…I've heard about it. It's about licking men's thing, right?』

『It's not just licking, it's about placing the ejaculation inside your mouth. Even that is done to take in male hormones through your mouth. It has medical meanings』
『…I-Is that so? Maika never knew that sort of reason』

It's my first time hearing it too.
Or rather…the whole world knew.

『Uhm…Katsuko-san』

Maika-chan asks bashfully.

『…What?』
『Since both of you are doing lewd things regularly…You do have lovers don't you?』
『Hmm, rather than lover…I have a sex partner』
『…Sex partner?』
『That's right, it's the way of thought of American celebrities…It's not a tied up relationship like lovers or marriage partners, but just a partner whom you're connected with purely sex partnership』
『Could it be that Katsuko-san has a lot of sex partners?』
『Geez, don't be like that. When you talk about partner, it's only one, right? I don't have any other partners other than him…!』

Katsuko-nee laughs ufufufu.
Maika-chan breathes out.

『…It makes me feel relieved』
『There's not many partners who you can have sex with in peace. It would be scary to catch diseases too』
『…That's right』
『In the end, mutual trust is important. It must be a man whom you can leave your body at ease…also』
『…What is it?』
『As expected…It must be someone who's good at sex』

Margo-san looks at me.

「This seems to be you, Yoshida-kun」
「…I'm not good at all」

I was just a virgin till the other day…
I'm not good at all

「No, Danna-sama's skilled!」

Misuzu says with a red face.

「You always satisfy Misuzu…!」

…I-If you say that
…My face gets red too

『Hmm yeah…It should be okay to tell Maika-chan, isn't it?』

Nei-san said.

『We're having a special secret!』
『Eh, what? Please tell me!』

Maika-chan's baited by the word 『Secret』!

『Katsuko-san and I…are sharing one sex partner!』
『…Share?』
『Were having sex with the same man!』
『Eeh!』

Maika-chan's surprised.

『It's not something surprising. There's not many people who're good at sex and you can trust sincerely. He's a very precious existence』
『Katsuko-san and I love that person very much!』
『…We can't have sex with other people anymore already. It's fine to have him for the rest of my life』
『Me too, me too…!』

Maika-chan's surprised from the heating up Katsuko-nee and Nei-san.

『…Is that person really that good?』
『Yeah…He's the best for me! It makes me feel happy when I have sex with him…!』

『…Ah, me too』

…Like I said Nei-san.
You're still a 『Virgin』 !!!

『Amazing! A man charming both Katsuko-san and Nei-san…!』
『Rather than a man…It's a boy』
『Yes, he's younger than us』
『…How old is he?』
『He's in his first year in high school!』
『…He's that young?』
『Maika-chan, age doesn't matter when it comes to love!』
『You see…He's a special one』

Margo-san laughs.

「Yoshida-kun's being praised a lot… 」
「Somehow…It feels really embarrassing 」
「There's nothing to be embarrassed about! Danna-sama's really a special person! 」

…Misuzu-says that however.
To be honest, I'm troubled.
I'll be meeting Maika-chan later.
Is this Pompadour really okay?

「By the way…Danna-sama? 」
「…What? 」
「Katsuko-sama and Nei-san seem to be okay just being sex partners… 」
「…Eh? 」
「Please marry Misuzu… 」

…Uhm
The 『Trap』 Katsuko-nee and Nei-san are setting up for Maika-chan…
In the first place, they're not my sex partners.
Or rather, I'm not that good at sex.
I'm not special at all.
…Aah, geez!

『Oh right…How about you try having sex with him?』

Katsuko-nee speaks as if it just comes to her…

『Oh yeah, that might be good!』

Nei-san too…!

『…Eh?』

Maika-chan is at loss.
Well of course.
She's a virgin…and she's still in middle school.

『I heard Maika-chan's talk about her Onee-san but…if the man you have your first experience is a terrible one, you will regret it for the rest of your life』
『That's right! It's better if you give your virginity to an experienced person』

The two cooperates and attack Maika-chan.

『…But, I』

Maika-chan's at a loss.

『…Didn't we tell you that it's about time for you to lose your virginity already?…』
『Well…I understand that but』
『Ah, could it be you're scared?』
『A bit』

Maika-chan answered with a small voice.

『But…You won't become an adult if you don't lose your virginity you know?』

Katsuko-nee uses the 『Adult』 keyword, and shakes up Maika-chan's heart.

『Is that true?』
『Of course…Women's first transformation to adulthood is from

coming to enjoy sex』
『…Enjoy?』
『You know that it hurts at first don't you?』
『…Yes』
『But, it would gradually become pleasant after doing it multiple times. It feels really good. Ah, I'm a human. I'm a woman. You would feel that from the bottom of your heart. You won't become a charming adult woman if you don't experience that I think』
『I-Is that so?!』

Maika-chan holds her breath.

『That's right!…If you'd prefer, Maika-chan have sex with our partner! Then we'd become sisters!』

Nei-san suggests.

『…Become sisters?』
『That's right…we're loving the same man…it's excellent sisterhood!』

Katsuko-nee invites brightly…

『Does Maika-chan no want to be our sister?』
『That's not true…however』
『When you become my sister, Onee-chan will do anything! I'll teach Maika-chan a lot of things, and I will lead you in various ways』

Nei-san strongly pushes…!

『But…But…!』

Maika-chan's lightly refusing it while being at a loss…
As expected, she's still a second year in middle school.
It's still too early for her to have a sex partner or lose her virginity.

Katsuko-nee who sensed that state…

『Well, we won't force you. We just want to help Maika-chan become an adult. If you have someone you really love and become his lover, then it might be good to give your virginity to him…』

『But…You might be already an old woman by that time!』

Nei-san makes fun on purpose.

『Well…For us, we think that it would be better to lose your virginity sooner. Maika-chan would become a charming adult that way…!』
『I understand it, but…』

…Maika-chan.
You shouldn't understand that.
…That's all lies.

『Let's end the talk here…By the way, Maika-chan』

Then, Katsuko-nee changes the topic to a fashion brand with a good reputation…

「Yeah…We should go with Plan B」

Margo-san concluded after listening to the talk until now.

「…What does that mean?」
「We prepared some plans that depend on Maika-chan's reaction. They will arrive in the mansion in five minutes. Then, Misuzu-chan will be dispatched next」
「…Me?」

Misuzu looks puzzled…

「Yeah. Misuzu-chan's the next trump card!」

Margo-san grins.

---

1. 飛鳥シン https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Shinn_Asuka ↩
2. https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Destiny_(band) ↩
3. 麻里愛 ↩
4. Rusher Kimura is a Japanese professional wrestler who died at May 24, 2010 ↩
5. Oh poor guy, he's told that he's an idiot by Yoshida ↩
6. It's the same as what Margo said, just the JP localization ↩

87. Pianissimo

Before long…the Benz Katsuko-nee is driving arrives at the mansion.
Maika-chan and Nei-san get out of the car when it arrives at the front entrance.
We're watching them through the surveillance camera.

「So that's Maika-chan?…」

Misuzu stares at Maika-chan's close up image.

「Oh…So Maika-chan goes to that school.」

Misuzu said when she saw Maika-chan's old style sailor uniform.

「Yeah, it's not like Misuzu-chan's school but it's also an Ojou-sama school too」

Margo-san answers.

…Right.
Misuzu's school is a super ojou-sama school where only young ladies of high class families can get in…
Maika-chan's school is also a considerably famous middle school for girls.
Rather, Maika-chan's school's girls might be popular for normal high school boys.
Maika-chan's from an Ojou-sama middle school so I can imagine those who want to become her lover, but…
Misuzu's school is…
It has the impression that she goes to school in a bulletproof glass Benz and has SP going with her…[1]
She's an unobtainable existence for a normal boy.

「…I understood the general idea. Misuzu has those kinds of girls in her school after all」

Misuzu seems to have finished her analysis of Maika-chan.

「Born and raised as an Ojou-sama, ignorant of the world…a child inside her head」

Margo-san's having a 「That's troubling」face

「I feel pity for her if you say it like that. Maika-chan's still in her second year of middle school so…there's no helping it that she's childish, right?」

…That's right.
She really is still a child.
Yearning for an idol, and shouting kyaakyaa at concerts…
Looking up at the adult Katsuko-nee and Nei-san, believing everything they say…
Crazy on learning about makeups and fashion…
An immature child.
Is it okay to have sex with such a child?
…Me?

Maika-chan speaks to Nei-san at the door.
Maika-chan's showing a carefree smile.
A girl who just turned 14.

「But, I'm glad that she's a child. We can train her any way we want like this…」

Misuzu said with a serious look on her face.

「As expected…She resembles Yukino-san」

Misuzu told me.

「Well of course…She's her little sister」
「Danna-sama…If you have that girl, would you give up on Yukino?」

…Eh?!

「I think I can endure if it's Maika-san. She seems obedient unlike Yukino, I think she's cute too. Please rape Maika-san in front of Misuzu. If you do…I think I can accept it」

…Misuzu?
Do you hate Yukino that much?
Yesteday, Katsuko-nee said that Maika-chan would become my pet as a substitute for Yukino…

「Sorry, that's not how it is… Misuzu will offer Maika-san to Danna-sama. I'll present her as a cherished pet exclusively for sex…!」

Misuzu smiles.
A suspicious smile…
This is another of Misuzu's faces.

「It's not just Misuzu-chan! It's our present for you!」

Katsuko-nee enters the room suddenly…?!

「Oh, I came through the underground passage after parking the car in the garage. To set things up with Misuzu-chan…」

Katsuko-nee laughingly said.

「…We can turn her into a 『Dakimakura』 right?」

Katsuko-nee asks Misuzu.

「Yes, I don't allow Yukino-san to be Danna-sama's 『Safe Blanket』 but…I'm fine with Maika-san being a 『Dakimakura』 I won't be jealous!」

Misuzu answers.

「But…It's a sex exclusive dakimakura you know?」

Katsuko-nee whispers maliciously.

「I don't mind. Misuzu can't be with Danna-sama around the clock. Misuzu thought of offering Danna-sama a cute pet to release his sexual desire when I'm not here!」

Misuzu smiles.

「My…Then, my turn would be lost!」

Katsuko-nee seems a bit dissatisfied.

「Ah, I'm sorry! I didn't mean it like that!」

Misuzu lowered her head and Katsuko-nee laughs.

「It's joke2…Anyway, let's have Maika-chan fall to be his exclusive sex slave. Is that fine?」
「Yes!」

Somehow…The two swell up without permission, ignoring me.

「Did you see the mail I sent last night?」

Speaking of which, Katsuko-nee said that she'd send a mail last night.

「Yes, I've read it…!」
「We'll be doing plan 2A…『Photo Session』We'll have the setting of Misuzu-san coming to be photographed for today. Is that okay?」
「…Okay desu!」

Misuzu seems to understand it immediately…

「Katsuko-nee…What about me?」

What should I do?

「You can just watch from here for a while!」

…Watch?

「Did you listen to our conversation in the car?…That girl's aversion to men seems stronger than we thought. I thought that she'd have a lewder constitution and thick-headedness since she's Yukino-sama's little sister…」
「…She's much more pure than expected」
「It seems that her fear of sex is winning against her curiosity…」

Margo-san gives her opinion from Katsuko-nee and Misuzu's

impression…

「She's still a child. Also, she's in an all girls school right? She's never seen a boy other than idols…!」

Oh…I can understand that since I went to an all boy's dorm and school for three years.
Until quite recently, I couldn't stop shaking whenever I talked to women…
Even if I was in a co-ed elementary school, the changes to both genders happen during middle school…
It might be natural that our tolerance would be weaker if there's no opposite sex during that short period of time.

「Right…I can understand that she's not used to boys. The only contact with men she has must be her teachers and family. Speaking of which, they say that no matter how plain the young teacher, in an all girls' school he's always popular」

Katsuko-nee says…
Misuzu shook her head.

「That might be true at our school but…Maika-san's school doesn't employ young men. The only male teachers employed there are married and have children that's at least in middle school…」
「Eh, even so, what would happen if that man got divorced…?」

I asked Misuzu unintentionally.

「Of course he'd be fired. It's written in the employment contract」

…They're persistent to that extent!

「Furthermore, in Misuzu's school…If the wife get's pregnant, it's decided that they would be temporarily retired for the whole period」
「Eh…Why??」
「Before, a teacher became horny because he couldn't have sex with his wife who's pregnant so he caused a scandal…」
「…Scandal?」
「Ah, it wasn't inside the campus but…A teacher passing his forties

seemed to have gotten caught for molesting a female college student in a train. It seems that the huge scandal has remained in the history of the school for a hundred years. It appeared in articles of magazines every week after all. Then, it wasn't just the teacher, but the chief director, principal, vice-principal, and all of the teachers in charge of the school were dismissed. It had tarnished the honor of the school…!」

…Haa
…In case of an honorable Ojou-sama school, teachers have it rough…

「Anyway…You have to wait here until we get her ready」

Katsuko-nee orders me

「Okay, got it」

She glanced at my face…

「Did Misuzu-sama do that Pompadour?」
「…Yeah」
「It suits you a lot…Cute」

Katsuko-nee smiles.

「Isn't that right…Katsuko-sama!」

Misuzu seems to be pleased from being praised for her work…

「Later then…Margo-sama, please come to the terrace with Misuzu after ten minutes」
「…Got it」

Katsuko-nee laughs and leaves the room.

「Now then…Misuzu-chan, let's check how you look once again. Then we'll start immediately」
「…Okay. Ah, I forgot!」

Misuzu rustles in her bag…

「Danna-sama…have this!」

Misuzu took out her red collar.

「EH, aren't you going to meet Maika-chan?」
「Yes. Misuzu's in her formal attire」

Now that you've said it, it can't be helped.
I attached the collar to Misuzu's neck…

「…Should I put on a diaper?」

When I asked that…Misuzu

「I really want to but…We're going to have a 『Photo Session』 after this, it would only become a hindrance…!」

…I don't get it
Well, I can just leave alone what I don't know…

Katsuko-nee appears on the monitor.
It hasn't even been 30 seconds since she left the room.
She shows up at the entrance in front of Nei-san and Maika-chan…

「Sorry! I made you wait!」
「Geez, Katsuko-san, you're slow!」

Speaking of which…Nei-san doesn't call her 「Katsun」 in front of Maika-chan.
Katsuko-nee doesn't call her 「Nei-sama」 like usual but 「Nei-san」…
Is this all an act?

「The shutter of the garage is a bit, you see…anyway, let's get in!」

It seems that the setting is that this is Katsuko-nee's house.
There's nobody in the house it seems.
Katsuko-nee inserts the key at the entrance…
Then…Maika-chan enters the mansion with the two female devils…

「Now then, Maika-san won't go back home as a virgin…」

Misuzu whispers while looking at the screen…
The third devil is here.

◇ ◇ ◇

Margo-san switches the camera.
The three people entered the room which leads to the terrace.

『Uwaa…It's a wonderful room!』

Maika-chan is enchanted by the furniture of the mansion.

『Katsuko-san's house is amazing isn't it?』

As expected it is.

『Sit wherever you like…I will be preparing tea. Ah, I also baked cookies, eat as many as you'd like』

Katsuko-nee presents cookies to Maika-chan.
As usual, the shape and quality is something you wouldn't expect except from a product of a luxury pastry shop.

『Eh…Did Katsuko-san bake this?』
『That's right! Here you go, Maika-chan, take one!』

Handed by Nei-san, Maika-chan eats one of the cookies

『Uwaa, so delicious! Katsuko-san's good at making snacks!』
『It's not just snacks! Katsuko-san's good at any kind of dish!』
『I bake the bread myself! I intend to start a bakery in the future after all』

Katsuko-nee smiles at Maika-chan.

『Amazing, amazing, amazing! Katsuko-san's so cool!』

Maika-cha's slightly excited…

『You're very beautiful, have a good style, knowledgeable in fashion…and on top of that, you're good at cooking…!』

Maika-chan looks up at Katsuko-nee with admiration.

『Maika wants to be a woman like Katsuko-san when I become an adult!

Katsuko-nee giggled…

『If you become an adult?…Then, is Maika-chan still a child?』

Maika-chan laughed embarrassed…

『Maika's already an adult. But…There's still some childish parts remaining」

…That's what a child is.
Yeah…She's very cute as a child.
Maika-chan's very obedient…She believes other people too easily though
Her embarrassed face resembles Yukino.
…Did Yukino have this phase too?

「…Really, she's completely different from her Onee-san」

Misuzu said while looking at the monitor.

「…Different?」

…From Yukino?…
…She's different.

「Yes. Misuzu's an only child but, I know my relatives who have sisters very well. Sisters like Yukino-san and Maika-san have at least two differences at most. As their character」
「…Is that so?」
「After all, the little sister grows up looking at the figure of her sister… Then, how their parents treat them is different too…」

I hardly met my relatives so I don't know about any sibling relationships in other houses.
Misuzu's house is a prestigious family so she must have a lot of relatives.

「The eldest child is the first child of the parents so they focus on them. The parents contact them timidly… But, the next child would

be the second so they cut corners on raising them. Hmm, in a good meaning, you might say that the parents know when to let their hand go…」

Haa…Is that so?
I was hardly raised by my parents so I don't know.
Every time I'd have him write on my documents in elementary school, my father would ask 「What year are you again?」
As one expects, it was a shock when they asked 「When's your birthday again?」…
Of course, mother never concerned herself with me. She left everything school related to my father…
Or rather, in parent's association, class visits, and graduation ceremony…nobody in my family came.
Grandmother's the only one who came to my elementary school entrance ceremony…

「Well, that's in the case of two sisters…If their age is far apart or there's a lot of sisters, it would be different again. But, if it's sisters with not much of an age difference…The elder sister being selfish and the little sister being mature is quite a common case I think」

Misuzu taught me.

「Misuzu-chan…It's about time we go」

Margo-san puts on her jacket…
They're going to visit the mansion…that's the setting.
Margo-san looks at the flowers in the vase at the corner of the room.

「Let's borrow this」

Margo-san pulled out the flowers from the vase…then made a bouquet using an imitation of Japanese vellum paper.
She's very experienced in her handiwork.

「…You see, I also helped out in Nagisa-san's shop several times when it opened.」

Margo-san smiles.

「Then…Danna-sama, we'll be going!」

Misuzu presents her lips to me.
I kissed her.

「Ufufu…Please look forward to it!」

The two went out of the room…
I was left alone to watch the monitor…

…It can't be helped.

I drank the tea that cooled down.

◇ ◇ ◇

The door bell rings…

『Oh, I'm sure it's Margo-san…』

Katsuko-nee who's in a room in front of the terrace goes to the entrance…
Margo-san and Misuzu seem to have gone outside of the mansion somewhere and went around to the entrance.
Watching over the monitor for while…Katsuko-nee brings the two in.

『Hello, Maika-chan…!』

Looking at her in the monitor, Margo-san's really cool.
I think it's not that usual for women to look cool when they're holding bouquet.

『Katsuko-san, please have this…!』

Margo-san handed Katsuko-nee the bouquet.
It's obvious with her looks.

『My, thank you very much!』

Katsuko-nee who received the bouquet…is beautiful.

『I brought my friend here, Misuzu-chan for today』

Margo-san introduced Misuzu.
A natural act.

『Nice to meet you…I'm Kouzuki Misuzu』

Misuzu greeted with a big adult like voice, different from the usual.
Everyone's good at acting…
I somehow understood why I was made to wait alone.

『Misuzu-chan…This is Katsuko-san. You've met Nei before didn't you? Next to her is Maika-chan』
『Please to meet you everyone』

Misuzu bows elegantly…
…The usual childish Misuzu is not there.
So Misuzu who's an ojou-sama raised by a prestigious family always shows an adult-like face.

『N-Nice to meet you…I'm Shirasaka Maika!』

Maika-chan's completely nervous.

『You don't need to be so stiff, Misuzu-chan's a very gentle onee-san you know』

Margo-san laughed and told Maika-chan.

『Yes…Let's get along, Maika-san』

Misuzu smiles dignified.

『S-Same here…My best regards!』

Misuzu's completely holding Maika-chan's heart…!

『Now…Let's have fun for today…!』

Katsuko-nee tells everyone.
Misuzu-san sat next to Maika-chan acting extremely naturally.

『I'll prepare tea right now. Please feel right at home』
『Ah, I'll arrange the flowers!』

Katsuko-and Nei-san took off from their seats…
Maika-chan talks to Misuzu.

『Uhm…Kouzuki-san』
『You can call me Misuzu…I will call you the Maika-san just like everyone else. Is that okay?』
『Y-Yes!』
『Then…What is it, Maika-san?』
『Uhm…Misuzu-san goes to 'that' school, don't you…?』

Maika-chan looks at Misuzu's uniform as she speak.
She's curious as expected.

『I'd like to ask the same to Maika-san, you're in that school aren't you…?』
『…Do you know it?』
『It's natural…Isn't that a famous Ojou-sama school!』

Maika-chan's feeling embarrassed.

『That's…It's no match against Misuzu-san's school』
『My…Our school is just a normal one』
『Not at all…Isn't it the top Ojou-sama school in Japan? It's far higher than our school…』

Misuzu smiles.

『There's no top or down for schools. Right…There might be a lot of noble families in there but still, it's a normal school. Even our classes are normal』
『I heard that it has classical Japanese dance and flower arrangement though』
『My…That's just special class to learn culture. It's not something big. Everyone learns it individually. I also take Japanese dance practice and flower arrangements』
『…Is that so?』
『Yes…It's something one must learn from their teacher. That reminds me, there will be a presentation this time. Please come if you'd want to watch』

Misuzu took a leaflet out from her bag.

Though it should be a handbill for the presentation of the traditional Japanese dance…It's printed in beautiful colors. Somehow, it looks very luxurious…

『Eh…Misuzu-san's teacher is the head of school of Konpeki style?』

Maika-chan's surprised when she looked at the leaflet.

『That's right. I'm studying under Konpeki Nadeshiko Sensei. Last year, she has become an accredited master』
『…Amazing!』

I don't get it…but anyway, it seems to be amazing.

『It's not something amazing. It was just by chance that the head of the school has entered our classroom』
『That's amazing. Maika heard from her friends in school that the head won't let normal people in her class』
『She does. As long as you have an introduction from a formal person…』

…No
This is why it's hard to get an introduction from a 『Formal person』 …

『Maika-chan, are you interested in Japanese traditional dance?』
『A bit… I went to see my friend's presentation before and I think it's beautiful…』
『Then, how about you try learning it? Should I introduce you to the headmaster?』
『Eh…Is that okay?』
『It's not about being okay or not…We're already friends』

Misuzu's smile softens Maika-chan's heart.

『…But』
『What are you worrying about? The fee won't be expensive just because she's the headmaster』
『That's not what I mean』

Maika-chan's having a gloomy face.

『I…My onee-chan's a very mean girl』
『What do you mean?』
『When Maika tries to start something…Onee-chan will definitely get annoyed. Maika tried to learn piano during elementary school but…Onee-chan forced me to stop just because 'the sound is annoying'. When I tried to enter ballet with Onee-chan but…Onee-chan gave up after three lessons then…Maika's told not to come too. Even though I made friends and had fun already…』

Yukino…She's really a tyrant in the house.

『That's okay. If your Onee-chan says something, I will complain. What year is Maika-san's Onee-san?』
『…First year high school』
『Then, it would be find. I'm a second year after all!』

Misuzu smiles.

『Misuzu-san…』
『If you really want to learn traditional Japanese dance, you can talk to me. I can introduce you anytime』
『Thank you very much!』

Maika-chan bowed.

『Maika-chan, there's a piano over there if you want to play』

Margo-san points at the corner of the room.
There's a piano up right to the wall.

『There's a grand piano in the backroom too but…That one hasn't been tuned for a while. The upright piano's sound is correct if I recall 』

Katsuko-nee says while carrying tea.

『Maika-chan, how far did you learn in piano?』

Margo-san asks.

『Err…I've done at least half of Beyer』
『…Beyer?』

Margo-san asks with a wondering face.

『Oh, Beyer is the practice book used in Japanese piano class. It seems that there's a lot of those who don't use it recently. Maika-chan's teacher must've received proper music education』

Katsuko-nee explains.

『Yes. She's a woman who came from music college』
『Hmm, so it was full scale training』

Margo-san feels admiration.

『It's not full scale. Those who really aim to be a pianist go to Sonatina during elementary school』
『Sonatina?』

Margo-san faces the piano while saying.

『It's doctrine to learn for the next stage of Beyer』
『…Really? So it's like that in Japan』

Margo-san opened the cover and lifted the red cloth on the keyboard…then she sat down in front of the piano.

『I was made to play by practicing suddenly, so…!』

Margo-san begins to play the piano.
I know this tune.
『When the saints go marching in』 3
…Good
It's played a bit jazz though.
The light melody sounds in the room…
When Margo-san finished playing, Maika-chan clapped her hands.

『That's amazing! It's so good!』
『Actually, I'm much more proud of my clarinet though…』

Margo-san's being modest.

『Jazz is nice isn't it?…If you make a mistake you can arrange it properly』

She said.

『Maika-chan, try playing something too!』

Nei-san who put the flower to the vase spoke to Maika-chan.

『Eh, I…haven't played for a while』
『It's fine, it's fine!』

Nei-san put the vase on the table and took Maika-chan to the piano.

『Then…I'll play an easy one. It's something I played in a presentation though…!』

Maika-chan begins to play…
I know this tune.
I heard this as music in our school when I was in elementary.
『Cuckoo's waltz』 4
I don't know who made it though…
I listened to Maika-chan's cute performance for a while.

……PIPIPIPIPI !
Suddenly, my phone rang.
…It's Megumi

『Hello…What's wrong?』
『It's just break time now. I got away from everyone and made the call…How's it there?』
「Maika-chan just came. I'm alone and the others are having a tea break with Maika-chan』

Megumi breathes out.

『So it's still not done…』
「Yeah. It's just about to start」
『Try to be gentle as much as possible』

Megumi said.

「Is this okay?」

I exposed my doubts to Megumi.

「I saw it from the monitor from a while ago…Maika-chan's still a kid. Furthermore, she's an obedient child. Someone like her…I」

I instinctively mumbled.

「…Is it okay for me to rape her?」

Megumi answered from the other side of the phone.

『…It can't be helped already』

…It can't be helped.

『I…I'm prepared for it』

…Megumi

『If Yoshida's feeling pain, I'll go be with you…I'm going there』
「No…It's fine. Megumi should just practice in her club. You even promised captain a while ago…!」

I feel glad about Megumi's thoughts though.
As expected…This is my role.

『Maika-chan's my little sister』

Megumi is Yukino's half sister.
It's natural for Maika-chan too

「…I know. I'll be gentle」
『Then…Violate me later in front of Maika-chan』

Megumi said.

『Make a mess out of me…Please, Yoshida-kun』
「…Megumi」
「If not…I would feel sorry for Maika-chan」

…Megumi's feeling sense of guilt too
Not just me.

「Got it…I'll do it」
『Maika-chan and I will be serving Yoshida-kun…That's why』

Megumi said

『You've had enough of Yukino already, right?』

Misuzu, and Katsuko-nee too…
Why do they hate Yukino that much?

「Megumi, do you hate me being with Yukino?」
『…Yeah』

Megumi's voice is serious.

『Yesterday…I saw Yoshida-kun's sex with Yukino…』

…Yukino's sex with me?

『When it was Katsuko-san and Misuzu-san, everyone looks so happy. Even I was very happy. It feels like the world is dazzling… Yoshida-kun looks like you feel so good too』

My sex.

『But…When you're with Yukino, you look like you're hurt. You seem to be carrying a heavy load on your shoulder. I feel something like a black and heavy feeling from Yukino…』

…Megumi?

『When Yoshida-kun embraces Yukino…I see the god of death』

…Is that so?
I don't know.

『I will do anything that Yoshida-kun wants. I'll endure it no matter how harsh it is. You can hurt me, you can embarrass me』

…Megumi, what are you saying?

『I don't mind if Yoshida-kun would have a secret affair behind my back. If you like someone else, you can just throw me away. I'm fine even bringing them to you…Just, don't do Yukino anymore…!』

Megumi's crying on the other side of the phone.

「Megumi…I'm actually scared」

I can't endure it anymore.

「Maika-chan resembles Yukino. She has a face that looks like Yukino…but, she's younger, innocent, isn't she just a kid…!」

…That's right.
But still, after all…
I see Yukino's shadow in Maika-chan.

「If I attack Maika-chan, I might lose my brakes. It might look like when I raped Yukino…No more than that, I might not be able to stop when I violate Maika-chan… My heart's about to burst!!」

Alone in the room…
I was able to confess to Megumi.
…I'm scared.
That I might do something horrible…

『It's okay…Do what you want with all your might, Yoshida-kun…!』

Megumi answered

『I will apologize to Maika-chan along with you later. It's not just Yoshida-kun's fault. Let me compensate for your sins too…!!!』

……Megumi！ ！ ！

『Explode inside Maika-chan with all your might…!』

…I

「…Is this okay?」
『Yes…Make us sisters your slave. I will be with Maika-chan all the time so…I will be her Onee-san too. That's why…I, we…rape us… with all your might, violate us…please』

Megumi's kindness pierces my heart.

「…Thank you Megumi」

---

1. SP might be referring to guards or something, Please enlighten me if you do know ↩
2. It's joke ↩
3. ↩
4. ↩

88. Naked

「I'll do something about it…You don't need to worry about it Megumi」

I reported to Megumi on the other side of the phone.

『Yeah. I'll believe Yoshida-kun…sorry, the practice is about to resume again』
「Yeah, do your best…I'll come to meet you later」

Perhaps everything's finished there too.
No matter what the result is…

『Later then, Yoshida-kun…I love you』
「…Me too. I love you, Megumi」

Then the call ended.

「I love you too…I love you!」

When I turned back…Nei-san was there.
She's smiling as she looks at my face.
Since when did she enter the room?

「What's wrong?」

When I asked, Nei-san sighed.

「Taking a break…I have to keep acting adult-like in front of Maika-chan, don't I? I slipped out because I want to ease my shoulders…!」

Saying that, Nei-san rubs her nape and shoulder.

「Should I massage your shoulders?」

I think I can do at least a massage.
I've never rubbed a woman's shoulders though…

「Rather than that, I want you to tell me 『I like you』 or 『I love

you』 like Megumi-chan!」

Nei-san comes over to me.
She pressed her big breasts against my shoulders forcibly…!

「…Okay. Nei-san, I like you! I love you, Nei-san!」

I said heartily.
Nei-san's surprised.

「That's…Don't say that with a serious look. It makes me embarrassed!」

Nei-san turned red.
She's the one who said that she wanted it though…!

「I've liked you since when I first saw you. I think Nei-san's the most beautiful in the world」

That's what I really think so I can clearly say it while looking at her eyes.
…Yeah.
Looking at Nei-san like this, she's really beautiful.
They said that looking at beauties is tiring, it's a lie.
Beauties have a lot of faces too.
Laughing, scared, crying, surprised faces…
There's a lot of expressions that you won't get tired of seeing it.

「Yo-chan's really a lady-killer… 」

Nei-san said with an entranced face.

「It's neither a lie nor a compliment, Yo-chan just transmits what he really thinks」

…No, even if you tell me that.

「Because I can't say lies or compliments. It's embarrassing」

Nei-san smiles.

「That's what I love about Yo-chan!」

Then she kissed my cheeks.

「…By the way Yo-chan…What do you think about Mii-chan?」
「What?」
「What world's best do you think she is?」

Oh…That one?

「Misuzu's the cutest in the world.」
「What about Megumi-chan」
「Megumi's the kindest in the world」
「What about Maru-chan?」
「Margo-san…Knowledgeable?」
「Eh, not strong?」
「That's true however…She's always teaching me a lot of things」
「What about Katsun?」
「Soft and warm?」[1]
「No way. Isn't that lewd impressions?」
「Because…delicious would be rude to say, isn't it?」
「Isn't it not? It feels cool to say that she's 『The most delicious woman in the world』?」

No, what I'm saying is that her meals are delicious…
Nei-san's…having a different delicious

「What about Nagisa-san?」
「Nagisa-san's bright, gentle, always exciting…hot as a summer day, she feels *pukapuka*[2] at the pool. It feels peaceful」

Yeah…I can't explain it well.
I feel at peace when Nagisa-san's here.

「…What do you think about Yuzuki-sensei?」
「Sensei's the…saddest one in the world」
「Sad…Not pitiful?」
「Yes. She looks very sad…always」

…Yeah
I don't feel pity for Sensei.
Sensei's a stronger person than me.
I can only see her as sad.

「Hmm, so that's your image」

Nei-san seems to be surprised.

「By the way…What do you think about her?」

Nei-san shows Maika-chan on the monitor.
Maika-chan who finished playing piano is talking happily with Misuzu while drinking tea.
The topic is…a classical music that I don't know well.

「Maika-chan…I can see her as very childish」

I answered honestly.

「I see, that's what's really seen in her…」

Nei-san holds my hand.

「Eh…Nei-san?」

Then, she put my hand on her chest…
Nei-san's breasts…It feels soft.

「You can touch it stronger you know…You can massage it too」
「No…uhm…?!」

The volume of Nei-san's breasts is felt by my hand…!

「Then…Take a look at Maika-chan again…」

Nei-san told me.

「…No, but」
「Just do it!」

I take a look at Maika-chan in the screen.

「That child might still be mentally a child. Yo-chan's gentle so you saw her heart first…」

…Heart?

「You're looking at Maika-chan properly. Not just her heart but her body too…!」

…Body?

「Maika-chan's foot is thin. Her height, is around the same as Mii-chan I guess? But, don't you think that she'd grow more with her age?」

Not just her heart…I pay attention to Maika-chan's body too.

「Her breasts are still small but…But, you can clearly see that it's swelling…!」

I instinctively swallowed my saliva.

「…Maika-chan's growth is better than a normal second year middle school girl I think」

I instinctively put power on the hand that's on top of Nei-san's breasts…

「That's why, it's okay…Yo-chan」

Nei-san whispered to my ears.

「Her body can already have sex…!」

…Nei-san
Saying that…
Is she making me see that on purpose?

「You don't need to look at her heart…Just take a look at her body. If you begin to worry, just remember what I said…!」

…Maika-chan's body can already have sex!

「Is that okay?」
「Take a bite first…It's a delicious food in front of you after all. Eat all of it first, make it irreparable then think what to do after that. That's how I do it!」

…That's right.
Margo-san said such a thing before.

「She looks delicious doesn't she? Yo-chan, do you want to eat her?」
「…I want to」

I answered honestly.
A girl who resembles Yukino…
I want to devour Maika-chan's growing body.

「Then…That's what you need to think for now…!」

Nei-san kisses my forehead…

「I need to return soon…we're changing to our next schedule」

Looking at the monitor once again…Nei-san laughed.

「Watching her feels strange doesn't it? We're doing our best odd play to deceive her…」

Nei-san looks at everything objectively…
Not being washed by the situation…She clearly understands what she's doing.

「Mii-chan's really amazing…she's the only genuine Ojou-sama and she can perfectly play the asked role of her. It makes my back shiver when I call Katsun 『Katsuko-san』」
「Misuzu's that amazing?」
「Yeah. That girl is a dozen more times amazing when she thinks about Yo-chan」

Nei-san says that but…I don't get it.
She's focused on the screen…
Misuzu is no one but Misuzu for me…

「She's intelligent, attentive, bold, and above all…Her acting ability to live through is amazing」

…Acting ability to live?

「For women, acting is equal to a vital energy. Mii-chan's owning an amazing vitality!」

Nei-san's criticism is too difficult for me that I don't understand.

「Now, it's about time I go back to the world of acting too…By the way, Yo-chan」
「…What?」
「That pompadour looks good!」

Nei-san too…

「Do you want me to have this kind of hair from now on?」

I asked frankly already.

「Hmm…I think Yo-chan's usual hairstyle is better. But, we all have to act together for today so I think this hairstyle would be good!」

Nei-san said with a smile.
…I see.
I just have to think that these clothes and this pompadour is just for the play.

「Right…」

I answered Nei-san…

◇　◇　◇

Nei-san joins in the room on the monitor.

『My, Nei-san, where did you go?』

Misuzu asks Nei-san.
If it's the usual, she'd just say 『Geez, Nei-san…Where did you go?!』 3…
Misuzu's has completely become a dignified high class Ojou-sama…
No, this face might be her usual face…
The facer she show to me is special…

『Just a bit…What are you looking at?』

The girls on the room have expanded something on the table.

『It's the photos Katsuko-san took…Katsuko-san's a very skilled photographer!』

Maika-chan tells Nei-san with a smile.

『Ah, isn't that my photo!』
『That's right…I took a portrait of Nei-san before』

Katsuko-nee laughs.

『As expected, beauties look good in photos』
『That's not true, Maika-chan…Katsuko-san's just skilled』

Nei-san said.

『I thought that I would like to be photographed today too』

Misuzu acts as planned.

『Yes, I've prepared the studio above』
『…Do you have a studio?』

Maika-chan's surprised from what Katsuko-nee said.

『Taking photos is my hobby so…I redecorated a room that I don't use and made it into a studio. I've got a lot of clothes prepared too!』

…Studio?
Perhaps…It's the room where I first raped Yukino.

『Oh right, Maika-chan how about you get photographed with me too?』
『Misuzu-san and I?』

Maika-chan's surprised.

『Right, I've got various clothes prepared so we can take photos of one while the other dresses up…!』

Katsuko-nee invites Maika-chan.

『I would become a model?』

Katsuko-nee laughs at what Maika-chan said.

『What are you saying…Maika-chan's very cute!』
『That's right! You should get photographed with Misuzu-san!』

Maika-chan answered bashfully.

『Then…please』

She took the bait.

『Then, let's go upstairs…』

With Katsuko-nee's words, the women left…

◇　◇　◇

An unattended room is reflected on the screen.
Err…How do I switch the cameras again?
Then…The door opens and Margo-san comes in this time.

「Huh, Margo-san, shouldn't you be going to the 『Photo Session?』」
「Yeah…Minaho thought that you want to concentrate on this images for now. I just thought of succeeding Minaho's work…」

Margo-san starts the laptop.

「The work Yuzuki-sensei's doing right now?」
「Confirming the security system of the school and mansion…and gathering intelligence about Mr. Viola」

…Mr. Viola.
…The person tailing Nei-san

「…Is he a scary person?」
「He's the most dangerous man in the world as far as I know」
「Why is that kind of person aiming at Nei-san…?」
「I can't tell you that」

Margo-san looks at me.

「It's the root of Nei's life after all. If you want to know then ask Nei directly」

You need to be courteous when you step into someone else's life.
Margo-san's eyes are saying that.

「Got it…I'll do that」
「You should ask it only if you're ready to live with Nei for the rest of your life」
「…What?」
「That's how heavy it is」

…Of course
It's related to her younger brother's death after all.

「I'm already prepared since long ago」

I promised to become Nei-san's brother.

「I see…you're that kind of guy」

Margo-san smiles.

「Huh, what's wrong? You're not changing the camera to the studio?」

Margo-san noticed the surveillance monitor

「I don't know what to do」
「Geez, say that sooner…You just have to push this one」

Margo-san operates the keys
Then the screen changes to the studio.

『Amazing amazing!…It's really like a studio!』

It's a room with a high ceiling and enclosed with cameras and lights…
Maika-chan's completely excited.
The training machines put behind the room are the same however…

It's different when I raped Yukino…
There's big hanger racks and lots of clothes prepared in it…
From child use masquerade costumes…
To branded fashion clothes.
Even the wedding dress Yukino wore…

『First, let's have you in your photos? Misuzu-san…Please stand here』

Katsuko-nee sets up a big SLR camera on a tripod.
Misuzu goes in front of the white background.
It seems that she's used to being photographed…
She looked straight to the camera and smiles…

『Okay…Here we go!』

…Bashu!
Shining flash!
The sound of flash charger makes a high pitch sound.

『Katsuko-san's like a professional photographer! It's so cool!』

Maika-chan expresses her impression…!
After that, Katsuko-nee presses the shutter several times while giving out instructions.

『Okay…Let's stop with the uniform now. Misuzu-san, please wear whatever you like』
『Okay, understood』

Misuzu goes to the hanger rack.
There's a vinyl sheet laid down below.
I see, it's a zone for them to change clothes.

『Maika-chan, what do you think should I wear next?』

Misuzu asks Maika-chan.

『How about this light blue dress here?』
『This one?…Understood』

Misuzu calmly takes off her clothes.

Because taking off clothes has become a natural situation, it's not seen as strange.
Just…Maika-chan's staring at Misuzu absentmindedly.

『…Fufu, what's wrong?』

Misuzu in her bra and panties asks Maika-chan.

『Misuzu-san, you're wearing an amazing underwear.』
『Oh…It's silk underwear for today. I don't usually wear this』

Certainly…Misuzu's white underwear is different in luster.
I'm sure that the texture would be different too.

『…Amazing, that's so adult-like』

Maika-chan looks at Misuzu with enchanted eyes.

『This is normal. I'm wearing a uniform for today so I just wore a simple one』

Misuzu smiles and wears the light blue dress…
The red chocker on her neck shines beautifully with the light blue dress…

『Katsuko-san, please』

Misuzu returns to the photography zone and becomes Katsuko-nee's subject…
The light and shutter sound repeats…
It gradually penetrates Maika-chan's heart…

『Okay, Misuzu-san, please change to another one…! Maika-chan, I will be taking photos of you meanwhile』
『O-Okay!』

Maika-chan goes before the camera like a puppy.

『Then, please…!』
『Don't be that nervous…It's not a school id photo session!』

Katsuko-nee laughs.

『Y-Yes!』

Being told…Maika-chan loosens up.

『Well fine…You will get used to it soon I think』

Katsuko-nee presses the shutter…!
While she's being photographed multiple times…
Maika-chan's tension is melting slowly…

『Okay…Change your clothes from your uniform. Misuzu-san, are you ready?』
『I'm ready!』

Maika-chan's replaced by Misuzu.
Maika-chan goes to the rack.

『Err…Which should we pick?』

Nei-san shows up before Maika-chan who's hesitating over many clothes.

『Isn't this combination good?』

Nei-san shows a black miniskirt and a showy colored blouse.

『Ah, that looks so adult-like…As expected』
『You can pick the high laced sandals there…』
『I-I see…I'm enlightened!』
『Hey hey…When you finished picking, change clothes. You want to wear various clothes and be photographed by Katsuko-san, don't you?』
『Okay!』

Maika-chan…took off her school uniform.
Her skirt fell down.
I can see a white childish panty…
「Unsho」She took off the top…
A simple design bra.
I can clearly see the swelling of her breasts.

「Yeah…Isn't it more than B-cup? She might be a C」

Margo-san glanced at the monitor and muttered.
…That's right.
Maika-chan doesn't know that I'm peeping at them.
She's exposing her skin calmly thinking that she's surrounded by gentle onee-sans.

『Okay…I'm done』

After Misuzu's photo session, it's Maika-chan's turn again…
When the photographing finished, she comes back to change clothes again.

『Maika-chan…wear this one!』

Nei-san shows a black summer dress.

『Uwaa, does this adult-like dress suit me?』
『It's fine, try wearing it first』
『…Okay』

Maika-chan accepts the dress.

『Ah… That one's open in the back so remove your bra!』

Nei-san said it naturally.

『…Eh?』
『It's strange if your photo shows your bra isn't it?』

Nei-san smiles.

『Ah, yes. That's right』

Maika-chan puts a dress and…is going to take off her bra.
She put her hand behind her and unhooks her bra.
I can see her dough-like…white puffed up cute breasts
Her pink nipples are still buried under her areola.
Maika-chan puts on the dress then, she hears Katsuko-nee's voice from the back…

『Okay, Maika-chan, you're next!』
『I'm coming!』

Maika-chan runs pitter-patter

『That looks good! It's very sexy!』

Maika-chan looks so happy when she got praised by Katsuko-nee.

『Ehehe…It makes me happy if you tell me that!』

Katsuko-nee took that expression with her camera too.
Maika-chan's no longer nervous.
She begins to lose herself from the uplift…

◇ ◇ ◇

『Should we check it?』

Since Katsuko-nee's using a professional digital camera, they can see the photographs immediately.
Katsuko-nee connects the camera to the laptop and shows the images to Maika-chan.
Since the laptop is connected to the Mansion's line, it seems that there's a system for us to see the image in the room I'm in too.
Margo-san starts another monitor and projects it.

『Uwaa…Misuzu-san's so beautiful!』

As expected…Katsuko-nee's photography is wonderful.
I know that Misuzu's cute but…I never knew that she's so beautiful like a model until I saw her photos.
I just see the spoiled Misuzu usually so…I didn't see Misuzu's true essence.
The photo Katsuko-nee took told me.

『Maika-san's cute too』

Misuzu says brightly.
Yeah…Maika-chan's photo is good.

『Ah, this…Maika's breasts are visible!』

Maika-chan's panicking.
After that, Nei-san made Maika-chan wear only clothes with chests

and backs open greatly.
That's why…Maika-chan's no bra all this time.

『Isn't that fine. It's not that we're going to make these photos public…I think it feels natural!』
『That's right, Maika's looking at us properly!』

Katsuko-nee and Nei-san says in succession.

『That's right…I think that this is a beautiful photo too!』

Misuzu goes along.

『I-Is that so?』

Maika-chan's a bit embarrassed…

『Oh right…Should I get a nude photo?[4]』

Misuzu said suddenly.

『Misuzu-san…Do you want to be photographed naked?』

Maika-chan's surprised.

『Yes, it's a rare chance…Shouldn't you want to have a photo of when you're young and beautiful?』

Misuzu looks at Maika-chan's face.

『Right, there's European Celebrities that have nude photos of themselves when their young』

Katsuko-nee once again filling Maika-chan with lies.

『That's right, they won't accept you as an adult woman unless you have the courage and confidence to take a naked photo of yourself!』

Nei-san too…

『That's right…I took a nude photo of Nei-san before. Nei, can I show it to them?』[5]

『Okay! I'm confident about my naked body, I'm an adult after all』

…The virgin one said.
Katsuko-nee operates her laptop

『Uwaaa…Beautiful!』

Maika-chan says unintentionally.
Naked Nei-san on the screen…
Completely naked.
Her birth figure where she's wearing nothing.
That photo is beautiful.
Her rich breasts and ass creates a soft curve.
But, her waist is firmly.
And…Her beautiful face having a peaceful smile.
This is already in the domain of art[6]
…Too beautiful

『Can I be photographed this way too?』[7]

Misuzu asks Katsuko-nee

『You can!』

Katsuko-nee approves with a smile.
Misuzu looks at Maika-chan.

『Maika-chan, let's take one together!』

Maika-chan's puzzled.

『…But』
『Isn't that fine? This chance doesn't come easily』
『But, taking a photo…』
『No one else can see this…It's fine as long as it's a secret for the people in this mansion isn't it?』

Misuzu says.
I'm included in the people in the mansion right now…

『To be honest…It's embarrassing if I'm alone. That's why, Maika-

chan, let's take it together, okay?!』

Misuzu's words make Maika-chan fall at last.

『I-I get it…But, please don't show it to anyone okay? That's a promise』

Maika-chan turned red as she answers.

『It will be fine. It's a digital photo and we can delete it immediately if you don't want it』

Katsuko-nee says that, but…

『Then, let's begin our nude photography!…Misuzu-san will go first…!』

Misuzu smiles in response to Nei-san.

『…Yes, please!』

Misuzu slowly took off her clothes…

---

1. Katsun a Jojo! ↩
2. Sound of something floating ↩
3. It may not look different but the former one is proper and the latter is less polite ↩
4. Yoshida: Send Nudes ↩
5. Nei-san, send nudes! ↩
6. Send nudes at the museum ↩
7. Photograph me like one of your French girls ↩

89. Nude mode

Misuzu took off her clothes in front of Maika-chan.
Misuzu glanced at Katsuko-nee halfway.
Katsuko-nee nodded then points to the wall with one hand quietly so that Maika-chan won't notice.

That's the position of the hidden camera.

Misuzu casually turned to the camera.
It looks like a striptease to me who's on the other side of the monitor…
She slowly unbuttons her blouse…

「Misuzu-chan really likes you…」

Margo-san says.

「Normally…I think that girl's monopolistic desires are very strong」

Misuzu takes off the blouse while sending a glance to the camera for an instant.
Misuzu's now in her silk underwear.
Her delicate hands go into her bra this time.

「…Strong monopolistic desire?」
「Yeah. I think she can't help but want for Yoshida-kun to be only hers」
「But…Misuzu never says that. She always takes care of other people」
「Yeah, Misuzu-chan's a very good girl. She's always paying attention to her surrounding people. Or rather, it's her nature to be attentive to the people around her」

The hook of the expensive silk bra is on the backside.
Misuzu bent her body and put her hand on her back.
Her cute breasts create a valley…

「So pitiful…She's having conflicting natures simultaneously」

「…Conflucting natures?」
「That's right. Strong curiosity and impulse on one side…and intellectual power that searches for power alone on the other side」

…Misuzu's smarter than me and has the ability to get things done.

「And yet, the other side has a powerful self restraint over her own impulse」

…Self restraint?

「Well…she's like a high class sports car with high powered engine and strong brake」

Misuzu unfastens her bra.
Her bra jumps.
Her cute pink nipples shake.
Misuzu's conscious of me and she faced her chest towards the camera on purpose.
Her face is blushing.
Misuzu's aroused…

「But…Isn't there no problem if the amazing engine has an amazing brake? You can use the break well if you go too fast?」
「As long as Misuzu-chan doesn't break…」

…Margo-san?

「When the engine goes at an earth-shattering speed, then you press the strong break forcibly, what do you think would happen?」

…Well
Misuzu on the screen goes for her silk panties.
She looks at the camera and smiles suspiciously…

「Won't the engine be broken immediately? Or the Break would be worn out rapidly? Either way, the car would become useless…」

Misuzu in the monitor pulls down her panties with both hands slowly…!
Misuzu purposely faces her ass towards the camera while she's taking off her panties.

Her white round ass shakes in the screen…

「Misuzu-chan's grandfather is one of 『Kuromori's』 guests. Nagisa-san kept him company. You may not know this but he's on the top five financiers of Japan. Why do you think that kind of person would let Misuzu-chan work part time for Nagisa-san…?」

…That's right.
It's his treasured granddaughter so why…?!
Did Misuzu's grandfather predict that Misuzu would become Nagisa-san's pet?

「Misuzu-chan's too perfect as a daughter of the Kouzuki house. In reality, she's a mass lump of curiosity…and yet, in school and in front of her clan, she's always acting as a graceful, elegant lady. Just like what she's doing in front of Maika-chan」

So that's Misuzu's usual appearance…?

「She's a gentle child who's kind to people more than having the ability and talent…So she's completely acting the role her own clan is seeking from her…」

Margo-san said.
Misuzu has taken off her panties.
She's concealing her own swelling chest in embarrassment…
She's not hiding her genital though.
Misuzu's hairless crack is reflected on the camera.
No…She's showing it.
To me…

「But, she's forcibly holding back her own impulse and desire… Stress naturally occurs in her. It's not good for her heart and body. I think that's why…Misuzu-chan's grandfather entrusted her to Nagisa-san」

…Why?

「Well…He wants to have her let off the steam. Nagisa-san's a bright and comfortable person so she can heal her. There's no need for her to act like a high class daughter in front of Nagisa-san,

right? Rather, she's the kind of person that would strip that off」

I see.
Nagisa-san's that kind of person…
Nagisa-san sees through Misuzu's true self and made her a pet, making her reveal her true nature…and liberated her.

「In addition…Could it just have been that her grandfather noticed the strength of her libido?」

…Libido?

「Her grandfather is quite a stud you know. I think he knows that Misuzu-chan also has a big libido. To let that out…He must've thought that it would be good if she's played by Nagisa-san」

…Grandfather tolerated Misuzu being Nagisa-san's sexual pet?

『Misuzu-san, please sit on this sofa!』

Katsuko-nee tells Misuzu.

『Okay, I'm coming!』

The naked Misuzu faced the camera and winked in secret…

「But, Misuzu's grandfather had one miscalculation」

Margo-san said.

「No matter how much Nagisa-san plays with Misuzu-chan, he thinks that she would return to Kouzuki house as a virgin. Misuzu-chan is planned to get married for the people of Kouzuki, so it would be bad if she's no longer a virgin」

I see. During her first time…Misuzu said that 「I can't marry if I'm no longer a virgin」
At that time, It seems that the existence of Misuzu's fiancé has been decided by her grandfather.
She even said 「I want you to talk to my fiance」after I took her virginity…
That is because she can no longer marry her fiance as a daughter of

Kouzuki house anymore because she lost her virginity.

『Okay, take a seat. Look at the camera, Here we go!』

Katsuko-nee starts Misuzu naked photography.
Misuzu's smiling.
…She's having fun.
With her naked body being photographed.
About showing this figure to me…!

「Who would've thought that Nagisa-san would give Misuzu-chan to be your pet…Isn't it unimaginable even now?」

Nagisa-san went against Misuzu's grandfather's will and she gave her to me…?

「…Nagisa-chan wants to free Misuzu-chan's body and mind more than the circumstances of the Kouzuki house. Misuzu-chan's libido cannot be liberated unless she's embraced by a man. Then, it won't be good unless it's someone like you」

…Me?

「You're accepting Misuzu-chan's strong libido without disliking it. Normal men would be scared of the situation and run away but, you just meet Misuzu-chan's expectations without saying anything」
「Well… She's that cute and yet she's wanting me? Isn't there no other choice but to answer it?」
「That's how you are so…she's falling to you even more」

The naked Misuzu smiles while the camera flashes and the shutter sounds.
She looks at the hidden camera from time to time.
Misuzu's always conscious of my eyes.

「There's no one in the world who can release Misuzu-chan's libido but you」

…Misuzu

「I…what should I give Misuzu?」

I asked for Margo-san's opinion…

「For the time being, you should just stay as you are. Just take all of her strong libido without avoiding it」
「That's all?」
「Yoshida-kun, do you get it? Misuzu-chan actually has the most suitable talent for being 『Kuromori』 high class prostitute」

…Eh?

「Beautiful and smart, carefully considerate, has education, elegance, and intelligence…and, has a big libido. Isn't she suitable for being a high class prostitute?」

…Certainly
…That might be so

「It doesn't need to be 『Kuromori』 …There's a risk that she may go the wrong path and fall for prostitution. She may get caught by a strange man or be fooled by a bad guy… I think her grandfather handed her to Nagisa-san with such worries. She was a high level prostitute after all. You do know that Nagisa-san's one of the highest earners in the mansion?」
「…I do」
「He must've thought that if she sees a real high class prostitute beforehand, she won't be fooled by a strange guy…」

Misuzu's making nude poses in the monitor…
The photos Katsuko-nee takes goes to another monitor one after another.
Misuzu's cute…and sexy

「Misuzu-chan's thinking that you're watching so she's making such a sexy expression. She can vent all of her libido to you so she's believing you can accept it」

Misuzu's believing in me.

「When you take up her libido…She can continue acting as the young lady in other places. Her mind and body won't break. She believes that there's a person who can catch her true character at

any time… 」

Margo-san explained.

「 I have to respond to Misuzu's trust 」
「 That's right. Her mind would really be hurt if you betray her. It's likely enough for her to fall to prostitution. Yoshida-kun, do you want Misuzu-chan to be a prostitute? 」
「 …No way 」
「 Same. That's why…respond to all of her impulses without fail 」
「 …Got it 」
「 As long as she feels loved by you…Misuzu-chan will become more beautiful and charming. Other men will court her one after another. But, Misuzu-chan will only devote herself to you. Her naked mind and body will only be Yoshida-kun's 」

The naked photos of Misuzu become even more attractive, sexier.

「 Misuzu-chan would become even more attractive as long as she thinks that Yoshida-kun's watching over her. Do you get it? 」
「 …Yes 」
「 The problem is…If this goes on, Misuzu-chan's desire to monopolize you will increase even more… 」

…Eh?

「 Misuzu-chan frequently says 『Misuzu is Danna-sama's pet desu』 doesn't she? I think that's actually the opposite 」
「 …Opposite? 」
「 Actually…Misuzu wants you to be her pet 」

Misuzu on the screen lifts her breasts…
Then made a pose wiggling her waist.
Sacred prostitute…My pet.

「 But…That would trouble us 」
「 …Margo-san 」
「 Yoshida-kun's needed by Nei, Megumi-chan, Katsuko-san and Nagisa-san. Oh right…Minaho also needs you 」
「 …Sensei too? 」
「 Yeah…That's why, you cannot only be for Misuzu-chan 」

Margo-san tells me with a smile.

「We'll manage it somehow. Believe in us. Misuzu-chan won't trouble you…so, you can just think about accepting Misuzu's impulses. That's what she needs for now」
「Okay…Got it」

The naked Misuzu in the monitor looks at the hidden camera again…
She seeks my eyes.

◇ ◇ ◇

『Katsuko-san…I've got a request』

In the middle of the photo session, Misuzu spoke to Katsuko-nee

『My, what is it?』
『Could you take a look at my vagina?』

The naked Misuzu sitting on the sofa opens her legs wide.

『I'm worried that my own vagina may be different from the normal people』

Misuzu's voice is calm but her eyes is filled with desires.

『Is that so?…Wait a moment, let's take a look』

katsuko-nee puts the camera on the side and goes to Misuzu.

『Nei-san and Maika-san, could take a look at too?』

Misuzu spoke to the two…

『Yeah, okay! Let's go, Maika-chan!』
『…B-But』

Maika-chan's feeling shy.

『You've never seen someone else's pussy have you?』
『Well…That's true』
『Maika-chan…have you seen yours?』

『…Eh?』

Maika-chan turned red.
…So she did

『I do! I've looked at it in the mirror…!』

Nei-san's leading question catches Maika-chan.

『Maika-chan did too…. Using the reflection of hand mirror』
『…How is it?』
『I don't get it well』
『Then, show it to Misuzu-san! If we compare, we might understand something!』

Nei-san pulls Maika-chan forcibly.
Misuzu…opened her legs on top of the sofa.

『…wawa!』

Maika-chan's surprised seeing Misuzu's vagina…

『I'm sorry…I got aroused while taking the photos』

Misuzu's pussy is dripping wet…

『Misuzu-san seems to have an easy to get wet constitution…!』

Katsuko-nee clears it up by saying the word 『Constitution』

『…Can I take a look?』

Misuzu's bashful face.

『Hmm, I think it's normal from the outside』

Katsuko-nee places the handy camera to Misuzu's vagina casually.
Of course, it's in video mode…and Misuzu's vagina is being uploaded to my room.

『…Can I take a look inside?』
『…Yes』

Being told by Katsuko-nee, Misuzu uses her right hand's middle and forefinger…and opens her clit.
Her pink female genital has become exposed.

『…Amazing』

Maika-chan instinctively spoke.
Misuzu's insides is shining with sexual fluids.

『Misuzu-san, it's okay…there's nothing strange with your vagina』
『…Is that true?』
『Yes, it's very beautiful! Don't you think so, Maika-chan?』
『…Ah, Yes』

Being lured by Nei-san, Maika-chan responds.

『Maika-chan…Do you see it? This is the hole where you pee』
『Ah…Is that so?』

Maika-chan bites into Katsuko-nee's explanation.

『Then, do you know what this is?』
『…I don't』
『This is the hole that accepts a man's penis』
『…Here?』
『That's right. It goes in here…Misuzu-san, please touch it』

Told by Katsuko-nee…Misuzu makes her finger crawl in the vagina.

『Ah…The finger's coming in!』

Maika-chan's eyes are completely nailed down onto Misuzu's genital.

『Fingers can go in…A grown penis is even bigger』
『…Even bigger than a thumb?』
『Even thicker』
『That won't go in』
『It will…Women's body is made like that』
『Is that true?』
『Maika-chan, you don't put in your finger when you masturbate?』

『I don't…I'm scared. I just pat it on top』

Maika-chan speaks about her own usual masturbation.
Katsuko-nee enjoys Maika-chan's reaction

『You do know this don't you?』

katsuko-nee exposes Misuzu's clitoris.

『…Ahn! Don't touch that so roughly』

Misuzu spoke unintentionally.

『My, I'm sorry…Maika-chan, do you know it feels good when you touch it here don't you?』

Maika-chan gulps down her saliva.

『…Uhm』
『Maika-chan…have you touched it?』
『…S-Sometimes』
『As expected, it feels good』
『…It feels strange. My stomach goes 'kyun'』
『That feeling is said pleasant』
『Then…It feels good』

Maika-chan becomes red.

『Aside from that…after taking a look at Misuzu's genital, do you have some impressions?』
『…Impression?』

Maika-chan's at loss.

『Yes…It would be troublesome if a women's genital looks strange? If you see something, then tell us…!』

Misuzu who's opening her legs smiles at Maika-chan.

『Uhm…Misuzu-san?』

Maika-chan spoke bashfully.

『…There's no hair』

That's right…Misuzu doesn't have any pubic hair.

『…My onee-san's a grassfield』

Maika-chan says that, but…
Even Yukino's not that hairy, I think…

『There's quite a lot of adults who don't have any pubic hair. They're called 'paipan'[1] For Japanese people, they say that it has a rate of about one in fifty』

Katsuko-nee explained laughingly.

『Women with genitals without hair is said to be pleasurable when having sex. That's why, women shave it themselves』
『Is that so?』
『There's a lot of women in Europe that shave themselves. In ancient Greece, it's a rule that women shave their pubic hair… That's why there's no hair on their sculptures, don't you think?』
『…Oh, yes』
『Maika-chan, are you that curious about your hair down there?』

Nei-san asks Maika-chan.

『Uhm…Maika too』

Maika-chan's face is dyed in shame.

『…Still doesn't have any』

…I-Is that so?

『Then I was being made a fool of by Onee-chan…Saying that Maika's still a kid for not growing hair…!』

Yukino…You're the kid here.
You're like a grade school girl…

『…Let's see』

Katsuko-nee thinks for a moment.

『Maika-chan, can I take a look?』
『…Eeeh?』

Maika-chan's surprised.

『It's good if you're like Misuzu-chan who's just a paipan but growing properly, but…It would be a problem if it's a growth failure. Can I take a look?』
『Yeah…I think you better let Katsuko-san see it!』

Katsuko-nee and Nei-san suggests Maika-chan to show her genitals.

『…B-But』

Maika-chan's flustered.
That looks cute.

『Why?…Embarrassed?』

Katsuko-nee laughingly asks Maika-chan.

『…Just a bit』

Misuzu closed her legs and smiles at Maika-chan.

『If Maika-chan's embarrassed, then let's all get naked…!』

She holds to Maika-chan's hand.

『If everyone gets naked, Maika-chan won't be embarrassed, will you?』
『…Uhm』
『It's okay…Just think that everyone has come to the hot springs!』

Misuzu's words are slightly forced.

『…T-That's right』
『That's right, I'm already naked but, I'm not feeling embarrassed. Because, everyone here are all close friends of mine…』

Nei-san follows up.

『That's right…I'll get naked too!』
『Then, me too…!』

Nei-san and Katsuko-nee took off their clothes.

『…Ah』

Misuzu draws close to Maika-chan who's slightly panicking.

『Now…Let me help you too』

Misuzu…gently took off Maika-chan's clothes.

『Ah…Aaaah…Wait…Uhm!』
『…I won't wait!』

Nei-san took off her clothes without any reserve.
Katsuko-nee strips slowly.
Maika-chan is being undressed by Misuzu forcibly…

『Here, have some breasts!』

Nei-san took off her bra and sent it flying.
Her big breasts bursts out.
Katsuko-nee took off her bra softly.
Breasts bigger than Nei-san roll out.
Maika-chan has removed her bra a while ago.
Her cute breasts are exposed to air.

『Let's take off our underwear on three!』

Nei-san laughs and tells everyone.

『Okay, One-two!』

Nei-san lowered her panties fast!
Katsuko-nee makes it pass through her big ass…!
Maika-chan's panty was lowered by Misuzu from her back!!!

『Okaay, everyone's naked now!』

There are four naked beauties reflected on the monitor.

Katsuko-nee's naked body is filled with intense maturity like those gravure photos in men's magazine in the US.
Nei-san's voluptuous naked body is like a naked photo taken by an art photographer.
Misuzu's soft and delicate body is cute like a puppy.
And then…Maika-chan's naked body is.
Like a fairy in spring.
A body of a growing girl.
Her swelling chest seems to be firm leaving the core.
Her pink areola…has her nipple still sunken in.
Her stomach is soft and plump.
And yet…Her waist is thin and tight.
Maika-chan…does she exercise or something?
Her ass still doesn't have any meat.
Her leg is thin too.
Maika-chan hides her chest in embarrassment.

『…Maika's embarrassed』

Speaking of which, I've heard that virgins hide their chest and non-virgin hides their genital.
Misuzu hides her breasts a while ago…But that's because she's showing me her vagina.

『There's nothing to be embarrassed about…Maika-chan's cute』

Katsuko-nee said.

『But…My breasts are small』

Seeing Katsuko-nee's Kyonyuu and Nei-san's Hounyuu[2]

『My, even I don't have that big of a breast!』

Misuzu becomes slightly displeased.
As expected, she has an inferiority complex.

『But…Misuzu's body is very charming. Misuzu-san's pretty』

Maika-chan answers Misuzu.

『Don't mind, don't mind! You two will grow bigger!』

Nei-san laughingly spoke.

『…Is that so?』

Maika-chan's worried.

『Maika…isn't having a growth deficiency?』

As expected, she seems to worry a bit.

『Onee-chan's always calling Maika-chan a kid, a child…So I'm a bit worried』

Katsuko-nee holds Maika-chan's shoulder gently.

『It's okay…There's nothing strange when I took a look at it. You're growing up cutely. Also, if you're a bit underdeveloped, it can be easily fixed!』

Maika-chan's face brighten up suddenly.

『Katsuko-san, is that true?』
『Yes. That method makes women grow attractive…!』
『What should I do?』

Katsuko-nee smiles at Maika-chan.

『It's sex. Have sex and make a man ejaculate a lot. If your vagina absorbs male hormones, women's body becomes even more beautiful…!』

Maika-chan's frightened.

『…That's』

Katsuko-nee continues calmly.

『Furthermore…You need to have only one partner. If you accept semen of multiple men, Maika-chan's womb would reject it strongly and it would be a bad influence for your body』
『That's right…You have to squeeze only one partner!』

Nei-san gets in on Katsuko-nee's lie.

『You see, I'm having a sex partner so my breast got this big!』

This virgin's a liar…

『That's right. If you're worried, Maika-chan should just have sex too…!』

The naked women drop the trap on Maika-chan…!!!

---

1. Person with little to no pubic hair ↩
2. When they're talking about breasts, I would be putting the romanji of the description since Yoshida likes to be specific with breast sizes. Both of them means big ↩

90. Sex exhibit.

『But…Maika's scared of sex』

Maika-chan speaks in fright.

『Maika-chan, is there someone you want to have sex with immediately?』

Nei-san asks such an absurd question.

『There's now way I can have one. Maika's just in middle school, and it's an all girl's school』
『But, there are girls in that kind of school that have boyfriends, right? You don't have anyone you want to have sex with, for example, some relative or a neighbor?』

Katsuko-nee corners Maika-chan with concerned eyes.

『I don't…』

Maika-chan's having a teary face.
It looks a bit pitiful.

『Then, there's no other choice but Nei's and my partner isn't it!』

Katsuko-nee declared as if it's settled.

『…That's』

Maika-chan seems to have a fear for sex.

『Should I do it too?』

Misuzu spoke to Maika-chan.

『Sex makes your breasts bigger, doesn't it?…』

Misuzu touched her cute breasts.

『Of course! Misuzu-san would get as big as mine immediately!』

The virgin lies again.

『Also, if you have sex with him, you'll become Katsuko-san and Nei-san's sister…I don't think this chance comes that easily』

Misuzu's words stimulate Maika-chan.

『Above all…You'll become a full fledge adult woman if you have sex. Maika-chan, do you want to become a wonderful adult?』

Katsuko-nee breaks further…
Maika-chan…
Looks at the floor unenergetic and spoke.

『I want to…I want it sooner』

She looked up quietly…

『Uhm…I was a premature baby when I was born』

Maika-chan starts a surprising confession.

『I was born earlier than normal children…Then, I had growth deficiencies ever since I was a child and I was sickly…』

The naked Maika-chan is being filmed by the hidden camera.
I can see her naked body as developed enough to be a second year in middle school.
Of course, she's still very childish at her age…
She's not underdeveloped, she looks very healthy.

『Then…I was left in my relatives' house in Shizuoka after I was born. The climate there was warm and they had a good hospital too. My aunt and uncle in Shizuoka were good people…and they even had Maika learn piano. My body became healthy during my life in Shizuoka…I returned here when I was in fifth grade』

Maika-chan…has always lived away from Yukino and her family?

『That's troublesome. Did your parents have difficulties meeting with you?』

Katsuko-nee tries to ask about the internal affairs even more.

『No, my father and mother are busy with their work so…They never went to Shizuoka even once. Onee-chan didn't come too…!』

Maika-chan's words solved the doubts I had all this time.
The reason why Maika-chan's not getting along well with Yukino…
These sisters didn't live together when they were children
They were apart while their personalities were being formed during childhood…

『That's why…Onee-chan is always bullying Maika about being underdeveloped. She says "You're a defective daughter"…』

…Yukino
Seriously, you are.

『…Maika knows that well too. My growth is slower than other children. That's why…I want to become an adult sooner』

…Maika-chan.

『Maika-chan's body is growing up properly. Your body being weak is in the past isn't it? Aren't you growing up healthily thanks to living in Shizuoka? Isn't that right?』

Katsuko-nee smiles gently at Maika-chan.

『But…Maika has a childish body compared to Onee-chan…』
『It can't be helped. How many years is Maika-chan younger than her Onee-chan?』
『…Two years』
『It's natural for adolescent girls with two year age difference to have different growth condition. Even Maika-chan's body would change to an adult immediately…』
『…Is that so?』

Though Katsuko-nee said that, Maika-chan's still deppressed.

『Yes. You need to have lots of sex for that sake…!』
『…Eh?』
『Maika-chan's onee-san had stayed over her boyfriend's house

recently didn't she?』
『Yes』
『You think that your onee-san had her first experience with her boyfriend?』
『…Yes. That's what I think. Onee-chan was in an all girl's school during middle school. She never had a boyfriend during that time』
『Then, If Maika-chan begins to have sex while she's in middle school, you can overtake your onee-san immediately. You would grow to have an adult and sexy body…』

The female devil tempts her skillfully.

『I said it earlier but, sex has the power to develop women's body explosively…!』

Maika-chan's hesitating.

『…But』

Katsuko-nee sets up her camera.

『First, let's confirm the state of Maika-chan's body. I'll take photos…!』
『…Eh?』
『It's easier to understand with photos. Maika-chan, you need to see the state of your body from an outside perspective. The parts you can't see with the mirror will be seen clearly in photos』

Katsuko-nee presses the shutter without any warning.

『…Ah, please wait a moment!』

Maika-chan's surprised by the light of the flash bulb.

『…It is as Kastuko-san said! You can understand it immediately when you take photos of it!』
『That's right. Maika-san would immediately understand that she's no longer having any growth deficiency!』

Nei-san and Misuzu affirm Katsuko-nee's words.

『Maika-chan…stand up straight and face this way…Okay!』

…Flash!
The naked body of a virgin second year middle school girl…is being recorded.

『Okay, turn your back this time!』
『…Okay』

Her naked body is photographed from various angles…
From head to toe.
Perhaps, this would be the last photo of the virgin age of Maika-chan…

『Oh right…Let's take photos of your genitals too!』

Katsuko-nee tells Maika-chan.

『…That's』

Maika-chan twitches in fear.

『The growth of a woman's body is best seen at the genitals. You can confirm it if you're growing properly or not…!』
『That's right, I think you'd better look at how your genitals are!』

With Katsuko-nee and Nei-san telling her that…Maika-chan looks at Misuzu asking for help.,

『Maika-san, didn't you take a look at my vagina a while ago? This time, It's Maika-san's time to show it…!』

Maika-chan can no longer refuse when Misuzu said that.

『Hora hora…Open your legs!』

Nei-san throws Maika-chan to the sofa and opens her legs wide…!

『Wait…N-No…Maika is!』

Maika-chan's hating it.

『Please don't say that. It'll end soon』

Misuzu also participates in making Maika-chan open her legs.

With two second year girls as her opponent, the second year middle school girl can't do anything…
Maika-chan's genital becomes exposed to the camera.
Katsuko-nee presses the shutter one after another.

『…Aha! Maika-san, you're getting aroused? It's getting a bit damp!』

Misuzu laughed.

『T-That's not true』

Maika-chan's face is red to her ears from shame.

『Look, I will be opening it!』

Misuzu's finger opens Maika-chan's vagina.
The muscle that's closed is opened wide.

『Uh-huh…Maika-chan's pussy is beautiful?』

Nei-san caress her genital with her finger.

『A…Ahn! Please don't do that…!』

Maika-chan's turning pink from the stimulation.

『Look…Maika-chan, we can see your hymen. It's colored beautifully pink!』
『Nei-san…Don't say that…!』

The photos from Katsuko-nee's camera are sent to my room.
I can see a whitish pink color deep inside Maika-chan's vagina.
That's her hymen.

『Katsuko-san. How does Maika-chan's vagina look? I think that it's adult enough- But! Don't you think so, Misuzu-san?』

Nei-san winks at Misuzu.

『Yes. That's what I think too. Maika-chan's already an adult』

Lastly, Katsuko-nee spoke to Maika-chan.

『This is fine…Maika-chan, your body can already have sex…!』

The two devil smile at Maika-chan

. 『Rather…You should have sex since you've grown this much!』

Katsuko-nee's eyes shine suspiciously.

◇　◇　◇

「…Yoshida-kun」

Suddenly, Margo-san called me.

「Yes?」

Margo-san smiled.

「It's going to be your turn?」

…Turn?

「You have to do your job…」

My job…
Rape Maika-chan.

「I think that this is good enough. You do know the room where Katsuko-san is in right now?」

It's been a few days since I came to this mansion.
I know the rough sketch of it.

「Yes…I remember」
「Then, go」

Margo-san lightly said.

「…Okay」

I stand up from my seat.

「Oh right…Yoshida-kun should only say 『Yes』 or 『No』 when

you're inside the room」

Margo-san said that.

「Why?」
「Because…It's impossible for Yoshida-kun to act along with Katsuko-san? Won't it be exposed if you try to speak?」

…Right
Everyone's acting to deceive Maika-chan in that room.
I don't have the power to act like those people.
I'm an idiot after all.

「That's why, I think you should limit what you're saying to those two words so that you won't say anything strange」

…I see.

「Got it. I'll only speak with 『Yes』 or 『No』」
「You can talk about anything in a voice that Maika-chan won't hear though…be careful as much as possible」
「Okay…I'm going」

I went out of the room.
Going around the corridor and up the stairs from the entrance.
Walking up the stairs…the door to the left.

This is the room where I violated the virgin Yukino several days ago.
This time…I'm going inside that room to rape Maika-chan.

I opened the door without knocking.
I see the naked women gathered inside the room.

It feels strange.
I was watching them in the monitor a while ago…
This time, I'm seeing them with my naked eye…

「…Kyaaa!」

Maika-chan on top of the sofa screams from my appearance.
Nei-san covers Maika-chan with a white blouse that fell near them.

It's not enough to hide Maika-chan's body from my eyes.
It's to not let Maika-chan run away from the room from falling into a state of panic…
For the time being, she's calmed down because they let her put on some clothes.
As proof…Maika-chan's hiding her upper body with the cloth of her blouse…
Her genital are exposed to my eyes…!!!

「…My, what's wrong?」

Katsuko-nee smiles gently at me.

「He is Nei-san's and my sex partner」

She tells Maika-chan
Maika-chan who's covering her chest with a blouse trembles bit by bit…
Misuzu gently caress Maika-chan's back.
No…She's holding Maika-chan's arm perfectly…

「…Come here」

The naked Katsuko-nee beckons me.

「…Okay」 1

I approach Katsuko-nee.

「Were you lonely without us? Sorry」

Katsuko-nee gave me a hot kiss.

「Me too!」

The naked Nei-san runs to me and kiss my lips.
Misuzu's eyes tells that she wants a kiss too.
But, Misuzu's holding Maika-chan down so she can't move.

「Ufufu…Could it be that you want to do it?

Katsuko-nee asks me.

「…Yeah」

I answered.

「…Then sit here」

Katsuko-nee points at the sofa Maika-chan is sitting in.

「…Okay」

I tried to sit down next to Maika-chan…

「Hyaa…!」

Maika-chan stands up from the sofa in fear.
But, Misuzu is holding her down from the back so Maika-chan cannot run away.
Furthermore…Nei-san holds down Maika-chan's body in front.

「Maika-chan, it's not scary…just watch. We're going to show you real sex…!」

Katsuko-nee spoke with suspicious eyes.

「…That's」

Misuzu whispers to the frightened second year middle school girl.

「Let's watch…It's a study on how to become an adult!」
「That's right, it's not scary to watch!」

Nei-san also told Maika-chan.
Katsuko-nee squats down before me who's sitting on the sofa…then took off my belt.

「Ufu…I'm taking it off!」

Her beautiful long and thin finger opens up my pants…
She slowly lowered my underwear and my erect penis is exposed to the air…!

「…Kyaaa!」

Maika-chan screams when the meat appeared!

「Look look! Open your eyes! It's not that scary! All of the men have this sticking on them!」

Nei-san tells Maika-chan.

「That's right…I will be here with you so let's watch together? Okay, Maika-san?…!」

Misuzu whispers from behind…Maika opens her eyes.

「It's not scary…Everyone's here with you…」

Misuzu's whisper spreads in Maika-chan's head like a magic incantation…

Katsuko-nee who's kneeling in front of me pushed out her big breasts before my face.

「Touch…Touch it please!」
「…Okay」

I massaged Katsuko-nee's breasts
I rolled my thumb on her already stiff nipples.

「Ufufu…It feels good. You can rub it stronger…Like squashing it…!」
「…Okay」

I strengthened my fingers

「Afu…Good. It feels good. Maika-chan…You have to get your breasts massaged by a man like this everyday to make it big! You can make it hurt!」

I massaged Katsuko-nee's breasts that are like warm dough with all of my strength…!

「That's good, it's good…! Lick…my nipple…I want you to lick it!」
「…Okay」

I sucked Katsuko-nee's nipple…!
I bent my neck so Maika-chan can see it well…!

「Tongue…That's right, roll your tongue…lick it…!」

Maika-chan's watching me lick Katsuko-nee's nipple in blank surprise.

「I'm jealous, Katsuko-san, I want to be licked too!」

Nei-san spoke in a way Maika-chan would hear.

「That's right…Katsuko-san looks like she's feeling really good…!」

Misuzu whispers.

「Yes, it feels really good to have your breasts licked by a man. Ufufu, take a look at him…He's sucking my nipple with all of his life…He's like a baby isn't he? Cute. You're very cute…Onee-chan's going to hug you!」

Katsuko-nee embraces me tightly…!
Her plump breast are pressed on my face…

「Next…Lick this place」

Katsuko-nee stands up…
Katsuko-nee's vagina is in front of me.
It smells very sexual.

「Licking that place…?!」

Maika-chan's surprised.

「Maika-chan you touch yourself with your finger don't you? But you see, being licked by a man's tongue feels a hundred times better than fingers!」

Katsuko-nee laughs.

「That's right, it feels very good you know!」

The virgin lies again.

「This boy is my sex partner so he'll do anything I want…won't you?」

Katsuko-nee asks me.

「…Yes」

Katsuko-nee holds my face with both hands and pushed it to her vagina.

「…Lick it, lick!」
「…Okay!」

I stick out my tongue…and licks Katsuko-nee's vagina…!

「…Aaaahn, It feels good!」

The sour taste of her love nectar spreads in my tongue.
I insert my tongue in her slit.
I lick it up.
I made my tongue crawl from the slit to the crotch…

「Amazing…He's licking in such places!」

Maika-chan's watching.
Me…licking Katsuko-nee's vagina.

「Lick it…Lick this place too! Lick it!」

Katsuko-nee shows her own clitoris.
The clitoris shines like a small ruby in a circle.
I tap it with the tip of my tongue…!

「Aaaahn! Aaaah!」

Katsuko-nee's body shakes bit by bit…!
I suck her clitoris.

「Good…This is great!」

The eyes of the girls concentrate on the tip of my tongue.
The naked Nei-san reached for her vagina.

Nei-san's masturbating.

「N-Nei-san?」

Maika-chan noticed Nei-san.

「Because…Katsuko-san looks like she's feeling really good! I can't endure it!」

Nei-san gropes her wet vagina…her eyes are hot…!

「That's right…If Maika-san can't endure it anymore too then you can comfort yourself too…」

Misuzu whispered into Maika-chan's ear…!

「Enough…I'm going to lick you this time!」

Katsuko-nee squats down between my feet again.

「Maika-san…take a look. When you're going to have sex with men, you have to lick their penis first!」

Katsuko-nee fiddles with the tip of my penis then said.

「…Lick?」

Maika-chan's surprised.

「That's right. Did you not hear about fellatio?」

The masturbating Nei-san asks.

「I've heard about that kind of thing but…Is that a necessity?」
「That's what I've been taught…Lick the penis and wet it with lots of saliva so it would enter the vagina smoothly」

Misuzu answers Maika-chan's question with a lie.

「That's right…You have to lick it this way!」

Katsuko-nee licks my penis intensely…!
Her red tongue slurps my glans…

Making a ‘chupachupa’ sound, she strokes it with her lips…!

「You have to lick up the whole penis like that!」

Misuzu whispers in Maika-chan’s ear…

「Maika-san…are you aroused? That place is completely wet you know…
「Uhm…I…!」

Maika-chan’s face dyed in shame when it was pointed out that she’s aroused.

「It’s okay…Even I am already dripping wet!」

Misuzu reports to Maika-chan with melting eyes.

「…It’s about time I want it in!」

Katsuko-nee tells me.
She’s panting heavily…!
Her big breasts go up and down along with her breathing.
Sweat oozing out her whole body…Her face is dyed with the color of passion.
Katsuko-nee’s arousal has reached the climax…!

「You can stay like that…」

Katsuko-nee bends over me who’s sitting on the sofa.

「I’ll be the one to do everything…please, is that okay?」

Her hot breath strokes my face…!

「You’re going to be violated…Cute, I’m going to violate you! It’s okay isn’t it?!」
「…Yeah」

I answered.
Katsuko-nee looks at Maika-chan.

「Take a look as this penis entering me…!」

Katsuko-nee holds my penis and puts it towards her entrance.

「Look…It's eating it!」

Slowly…The glans thrust into the vagina…!

「…Amazing!」

…She's watching.
Maika-chan's watching us unite.
Katsuko-nee and I are connected with a cowgirl position…

「Aahn…Your penis is delicious…!」

Her soft and warm folds wrap me up…!
Katsuko-nee's bending over to me completely…!
The tip of the glans are knocking on her womb.
Breathing heavily…Katsuko-nee loosens.
Katsuko-nee's weight is concentrated on the uniting point.
My penis has entered all of Katsuko-nee!

「Amazing…Something that big went all in!」

Maika-chan's speechless…

「Of course it will enter adult women! Even Maika-chan can take it all in!」

Nei-san said.
I don't have time to retort…!2

「I will be the one moving…You can stay like that」

Katsuko-nee speaks on top of me.

「Today, I want to violate you…I want to eat all of the cute you…!」

Katsuko-nee's eyes are completely burning with lust…!

「…Sure」

Answering her like that…Katsuko-nee slowly raised her waist.

…Aaah!
My penis is being tightened by pleasure!

「Ufufu…You're making such a pleasured face! Does it feel good inside me?」
「…Yes」
「…Do you like having sex with me?」
「…Yes」
「I do too. I love you. I can't have sex with anyone but you anymore…!」

Katsuko-nee moves her waist rapidly…!
The whole body's bouncing on the sofa…!
Everytime she pushes down, my glans touch her uterus…!
…It feels good.
Katsuko-nee's inside feels slimy and wet…!

「…How about this?」

Katsuko-nee wriggles her waist.

Her vagina has tightened several times!
It's as if my glans are being gripped by a small baby…!

「…It feels good doesn't it? Cute. Your face is getting cuter. More, melt even more…!」

Katsuko-nee moves her body intensely!
Her big breasts bounce up and down on me.
The entire sofa shook intensely.
That vibration is being transmitted to Maika-san who's sitting on the same sofa…!

「…It's amazingly violent」

Maika-chan expressed her impressions.

「But…Katsuko-san looks so happy」

Misuzu whispers to Maika-chan's ear…

「…Katsuko-san look so very happy! I'm jealous!」

Nei-san shouts while violently groping between her crotch.

「Yes…I'm so happy! It makes me very happy when I have sex with this boy! ooh, so good!…」

I also can't endure it anymore!
I grabbed Katsuko-nee's shaking breasts from below!

「Aaahn…good! More, grip it!」

I push up my waist from below!
I attack Katsuko-nee's wet vagina.

「Good… it feels good…love!…I love you!」

Katsuko-nee clings to me!
I embraced Katsuko-nee from below!
Still, Katsuko-nee doesn't stop moving her waist!
Using the cushion's power…I violently brush Katsuko-nee's wet hole!

「…Aaahn…Aahn…Aaaaaah…! What should I do? I'm! I'm about to cum!」

I can feel Katsuko-nee's hot breath in my ear.「」

「…What about you? Cumming? You're about to cum?!」

Katsuko-nee looks at my face with wet eyes.

「…Y-Yes!」

I'm closing to my limit too!

「Ufufu…I'm so happy! I'm going to cum too! You can do it anytime! Leak it inside me! Pour lots of your hot semen inside Katsuko!!!!」

We reach the climax immediately…!

「Now, Maika-san…Look at it well! Katsuko-san will be inseminated from here on!」

Misuzu whispers to Maika-chan.

「…Eh?! He's really going to ejaculate inside?」

Maika-chan can't remove her eyes away from us although she's surprised.

「That's right! Katsuo-san's a ferocious tiger after all…! Lots of hot stuff will come inside her!!!」

Nei-san's about to reach the climax too!
Her whole body's sweating and her breath is getting hot…

「Aaahn, Aha!…No more…Katsuko's cumming…Katsuko's cumming! Is it okay? Can I cum? Katsuko's fine to cum isn't she?!」

Katsuko-nee begs with a teary face!!!

「…Ah, Yes!!」

I'm also at my limit!

「…Look, take a look…Maika-chan! Katsuko's cumming! I'm cumming! Good, sex feels good! It feels good! Ahan! aaah…C-Cummiiiiiiing!!!」

Katsuko-nee's vagina tightens up my penis!!!
…Me too.
…C-Cumming!!

…Dopyu, dobyu, dodopipiyuyu!!!

My penis released hot semen inside Katsuko-nee intensely!!!

「…Aaaaau, it's coming in! The hot stuff is coming in my womb! It's reaching!! It feels good…Katsuko's feeling goood!!!!」

Katsuko-nee embraced me with all her strength…!

「Aaah…Cumming, I'm still cumming…I love you. I love you, I love you, I love you. Stay with me forever…I love you! I love you…!!!」

Her convulsing vagina…is squeezing my penis till the last drop.

…Haa, haa, haa.
My heart's beating gushingly…
Is it my heartbeat, or Katsuko-nee's heartbeat?…I don't know.
Katsuko-nee who's basking in the afterglow looked at my face.
「Ufu」she smiled.

「…I love you. I love you so much」

Katsuko-nee kissed me once again…
Our tongues twined.
We lick each other's tongue.
My penis is still deep inside Katsuko-nee.
Our genitals and tongue…our upper and lower body are connected…

---

1. Well, it still means yes. "Hai" ↩
2. I do, "The virgin lies again!" ↩

91. Duty and act/ Lies and truth

「It felt really good!…Did you feel good too?」

Katsuko-nee spoke to me with moist eyes.

「…Yes」

My erect penis is still inside Katsuko-nee…

「Is that so?…Thank you. Let's do it next time again!」

Katsuko-nee raised her waist and pulled out my erect penis from her vagina.
Large amounts of white liquid drips instantly.

「…Amazing」

Maika-chan looks at my erect penis.

「I'll clean it up…!」

Katsuko-nee puts her lips on my penis…
Her tongue clings to my penis and licks off her love nectar and my semen from it.

「After sex, you must lick it gently to clean it up. That's the manners of sex」

Katsuko-nee tells Maika-chan.

「You have to suck out the semen that's stuck in the urethra…」

Katsuko-nee sucks the glans…
She sucks the semen collected in the urethra…
Filling her mouth with my entire penis, she strokes it with her lips…

「Okay…It's clean」

Katsuko-nee smiles and looks up at me.

The glans that got cleaned off are now shining with Katsuko-nee's saliva.
My erect penis is still pointing towards the heavens…

「Nei-san…What about you?」

Katsuko-nee asks Nei-san maliciously on purpose
Nei-san's playing with her crotch by herself…

「Ah, I'm fine now…I-I'll have one later!」

Katsuko-nee laughs at Nei-san's panicking state.
…Then

「I want to do it!」

Misuzu tells Katsuko-nee.

「…Misuzu-san?」

Maika-chan's surprised
Maika-chan doesn't know that Misuzu's already my pet…

「If I have sex with this man, I would become Katsuko-san and Nei-san's sister, right?!」

Misuzu asked.

「That's right…Misuzu-san, would you like to become his sex partner? However, you won't be able to have sex with other men anymore. It will be only him forever…will that be okay?」
「That's fine! I'll become his sex partner! This boy is really cute!」

The naked Misuzu stand up.
Her crotch is already dripping wet with love nectar.
It's as if she wet herself…

「A-Are you really doing it…Misuzu-san?」

In exchange of Misuzu, Katsuko-nee is the one who holds the body of the worried Maika-chan this time…
To not let Maika-chan run away from the sofa…

「It seems good…Misuzu-san's already an excellent adult lady. You can have sex already!」

Katsuko-nee fuels Misuzu…!

「…Un, Show it…Show me how Mii-chan does sex!」

The masturbating Nei-san…finally called 「Misuzu-san」as 「Mii-chan」
…Is that okay?
It seems that Maika-chan didn't notice it though.

「…Hey, are you fine with it? Will you have sex with me?…!」

The naked Misuzu strikes a daunting pause in front of me who's sitting on the sofa.
She's looking down at me with eyes of passion.
Misuzu continues to play the setting where it's our first meeting.
Our original relationship…Misuzu's one year older than me so her way of speaking has changed.

「…I want to do it…Me and you」

Her red tongue licks her lips…
Blushing in animal passion…A sexy expression…!

「…Can we kiss?」
「…Sure」

As promised with Margo-san…I can't say anythingexcept 「Yes」or 「No」…

「Ufu…Let's do it!」

Misuzu approached my face.
She then kissed my lips…

「I want you to do the same thing you did with Katsuko-san a while ago…including your tongue…!」

Misuzu's tongue enters my mouth.
I can feel her tongue moving around.

This time, I enter Misuzu's mouth…
I caress Misuzu's front tooth with my tongue.[1]
I run my tongue between her lip and teeth.

「Ahan, that feels good…Let me do it too」

Misuzu did the same thing.
…Pleasant.

「…Lick my breasts」

The petite Misuzu gets onto the sofa.
Her cute breasts are in front of my face.
I lick her left nipple…!

「…Ahn, suck it more. Suck my nipple…!」

I used my tongue.
I massaged her other side with my hand.

「More…You can do whatever you want. You can make a mess out of me. I want to have bigger breasts. That's why, play with them a lot…! Make my breast your toy…play with them…Please!」

It's a situation different from usual…
The setting is that I'm Katsuko-nee's sex partner and…It's Misuzu's first time.
While not knowing how to play with each other well…Misuzu bends over towards me and initiates sex.
Misuzu gets drunk on such a special situation.
She's beginning to drown in the act of sex.

「…Aaaahn…I can't endure it anymore! Hey, can I put it in? Can I put you inside me?!」

Misuzu pleads with hot eyes.

「You can't, Misuzu-san…You have to lick his penis first before accepting it inside you. That's proper manners you know!」

Katusko-nee laughs.
That's the false manner meant to deceive Maika-chan.

But, Misuzu obeys that.

「Right…I have to lick it…!」

Misuzu gets down on the sofa and sits between my crotch.

「…Maika-san, can you see it? I will lick it…!」

Maika-chan looks at Misuzu with suspicion

「…Ah, yes. Please!」

Maika-chan who's embraced by Katsuko-nee has her eyes staring at our foolishness.

「Take a look as I lick him…!」

「Ahn!」 with a powerful voice, Misuzu opens her mouth and stuffed my penis into her mouth in one go.
It's different from Katsuko-nee's fellatio from earlier.
Misuzu's mouth is warmer.
I think Misuzu's a much more delicate touch of her tongue on my glans.
So women have so many differences.

「How is it Misuzu-san?…This boy's penis is very delicious isn't it?」

Katsuko-nee speaks to Misuzu near Maika-chan's ear.

「Yes…It's very delicious. If it's like this…I can lick this everyday…!」

Saying that, Misuzu licks the back of my glans…

「That's right. This boy's penis is special. There's nothing as delicious as his penis…!」

Katsuko-nee whispers to Maika-chan.

「…I-Is that so?」

Maika-chan's being fooled.

「That's right. Women who are his sex partners are all happy. This boy has a good luck penis…!」

Katsuko-nee…you're saying something irresponsible again.
Misuzu's tongue licks up my penis down to the balls.

「…That's enough already, Katsuko-san? I can't endure it anymore!」

Misuzu shouts at Katsuko-nee.

「Yes…I think it would be fine if you wet the penis that much」

Misuzu raised her body to the sofa again with Katsuko-nee's permission.

「…Can I be on top? I want to ravish you…!」

Misuzu spoke to me with moist eyes.

「…Sure」

Misuzu smiles 「Ufu」 at my response.

「…I'll ravish you a lot. I'll make you mine…!」

Holding the root of my penis with one hand…Misuzu puts my penis in her vagina.

「…Misuzu-san, you're really going to do it?!」

Maika-chan's not considering that Misuzu's an Ojou-sama of a super high class family.
Of course…She thinks she's still a virgin.

「I will…I want to make this one mine!」

I remembered what Margo-san said.
Misuzu actually wants to make me her pet…!!!

「…Aaaah…It's coming in!」

The glans push in Misuzu's vagina by force.

This vagina only just experienced sex several days ago…
It's slowly swallowing the penis…
…Zuzuzuzuzuzu!

「…Ahaaaa!…It feels good…I'm filled by you…You're filling up my insides!」

Misuzu's vagina is syrupy with too much love nectar…!
The hot and wet hole…is being invaded by my penis…!

「…Ah, Aaahan!」

Misuzu raised a weak voice…
This place had a hymen until several days ago…!
It just goes in instantly.

「…Aaah…deep…It's reaching the deepest places…!」

My penis invaded Misuzu until the root!

「…Misuzu-san, does it hurt?」

Maika-chan asks Misuzu.

「…Afu…It hurts a bit, but…It feels good already…Ahaaan, it feels goood…What should I do…What should I do? Hey」

Misuzu looks down at me with eyes wet in pleasure…
This is Misuzu's first experience with being on top.
She seems to be unable to grasp the state of things already.

「When women are on top…You should use your waist. You have to move your waist up and down even just for a bit…!」

Katsuko-nee advises so.

「Like…this?」

Misuzu slowly raises her waist…then sinks it again.
Juru…Jubo!
The wet union makes lewd sounds…!

「…Ah, Ahn!」

Misuzu's gasping voice is cute.
I think it's cute no matter how many times I hear it…
I want to make her purr a lot more…!

「…Rub the penis inside you here and there!…Then look for the parts where it feels good for you too!」
「Yes, understood…!」

Misuzu wriggles her waist from Katsuko-nee's instruction…rubbing the glans on various points of her vagina.

「…Aha!…Here! I can feel it here! It feels really good!」

Misuzu immediately found the pleasure point.
She rubbed my glans there multiple times.

「…What's this…It feels too good! If I discover this…I can no longer masturbate!」

Misuzu's lust is blazing up in a dash!

「…Amazing!…This is amazing! Sex feels good!」

Misuzu shouts…
She's drowning in the pleasure of sex…!!!

「Misuzu-san looks like she's feeling good…」

Maika-chan mutters.

「It feels good. Having sex with this one feels really good.
Something this wonderful can't be found anywhere!」

Katsuko-nee whispers into Maika-chan's ear like the song of a siren…!

「…Aaah, it looks so pleasurable! I want it too! I want it!」

Nei-san's masturbation grows even more intense…!

「…aaaahn, I want you! I can't have sex with anyone but you!…

You're making my body unable to have sex with anyone else! Love! I love this!」

Misuzu moved her waist violently…
Her cute breasts are jiggling in front of me.

「…Hey, become mine! Stay with me forever! I want to confine you! I want you to be locked up in my room! I like you! I like you! I love you!」

Getting on top of me…Misuzu flares up in the situation where she's ravishing me…!
Though she's performing the setting…her real intentions are revealed…!

「…I want to tie you up in my bed! Have sex with only me! I want to be connected with you from morning to night! I want you to release all of your semen inside me!」

Misuzu bounces her waist!
The spring of the sofa roars!

「…I'm already no good without you! Embrace me all the time! Ravish me everyday! I'll give it to you, I'll give everything to you so become mine! I want you! I want youu!」

Misuzu's sweat forming on her forehead is dripping on my chest…
There's a drop of sweat flowing between her cute breasts…!

「…It's my first time I come to like someone like this! I don't need any other men for the rest of my life! I'm fine with just you! I want you! Please! Please!」

…Aaah
My penis seems to melt inside Misuzu.
Misuzu's vagina is whirling in wet heat…!
It's squeezing it!!!
I embraced Misuzu tightly!
Sweaty flushed skin overlaps…
My chest feels the elasticity of Misuzu's breasts…
I instinctively whispered into Misuzu's ear…!

「…Misuzu, I love you…!」

That was in a very small voice.
At that moment…Misuzu flies away from the wave of pleasure!!!

「…Hyaaaaaan!」

Misuzu's back shivered!
Her vagina tightened so much!
Misuzu has reached light climax…!

「…I love youu! me too, me too! I like you! I like you! I love youuu!!!」

Misuzu kisses me!
She sucks my tongue out again!

「…I'll do anything! I'll do everything! I want you! I want youu!!!」

Misuzu's half in frenzy.
So she really wants to monopolize me that much…
…aaaah
I can't endure it anymore!

「…Misuzu, I'm cumming!」

Finally, I shouted like that.

「…Please cum inside Misuzu! Release a lot deep inside my womb! Please give Misuzu your hot stuff! Make Misuzu's body hoooooot!!!」

Misuzu in her climax has broken her act!

「…No, no more!」
「Waiiiit…I'm about to cum too! Let's cum together! It will feel good!」

Misuzu who's melting from pleasure looks at my face.
I also looked at Misuzu's face.

「…Aaaaah…Being embraced by you, makes Misuzu really

happy!」
「…Me too, I'm happy!」

Those words of mine set fire to Misuzu's fuse.

「…Aaaah…I-I'm cumming! Misuzu's going to fly! I'm going to flyyyy! Ah, ah, ah…aaaah, da, n, na, samaaaaaa!!!」

Misuzu climaxed as she shouts「…Danna-sama」!
She opened her eyes wide…looking at me…!

「…Misuzu!」

I ejaculated violently inside Misuzu while looking at her!!!

「…Aaaaaaahn! So hot…!!!」

Misuzu's body convulses as heat pours inside her womb!

「…Hug me…Embrace meeeee!!!」

I embraced Misuzu's body with all my might!!
I continue to ejaculate while embracing her!!!
…My ejaculation
…Doesn't stop.

「…Happy…Misuzu's happy…!!!」

…Misuzu grips at my hair
She kissed my lips again and again…

「…I won't let go…I won't ever let goo! I'll take you home! I'll let you live in my room! Please! Stay with me, I want you to stay with me forever! Then, don't ever come out of Misuzu's room! You don't have to go to school anymore! You won't go anywhere! You'll always be naked! Let's have lots and lots of sex! Have sex with Misuzu! Please! I beg you!…! I want you to love me forever and ever」

Misuzu broke.
She seeks my tongue while being broken.
Like a bitch in heat…She's seeking me earnestly…

The lovely intelligent girl is no longer here.
The one here is just a woman indulging herself in lust.
My woman…

…Pan

I heard a loud sound at my ear?!
Misuzu and I got surprised by it!

Looking at it, it seems that Katsuko-nee clapped her hands…
Katsuko-nee smiles at Misuzu.

「…I understand Misuzu-san's feelings」

Misuzu unintentionally revealed her true intentions while feeling the pleasures of sex.
Remembering what she said in front of Katsuko-nee, she shivered…!

「But you see…He's our sex partner. He won't become Misuzu-san's alone…Do you understand?」

Katsuko-nee's smiling face is scary…!

「…I-I'm sorry」

Misuzu instinctively apologized.

「No…It's very good that you told us your true feelings. But you see…People who can't co-exist are thrown away from the group…!」

Katsuko-nee's words are heavy…

「I know that…I know, but…!」

Misuzu shakes her body.
Her vagina tightened.
The semen remaining inside me is being squeezed out…

「It's fine if you 『Understand』 for now…But you if you don't properly comprehend it, we will use force…! 」

「…Yes」

Misuzu hangs her head from the strong words of Katsuko-nee.

「…Nei-san, you're fine with that too?」

Then, Katsuko-nee turns around to Nei-san…
Nei-san's limped out, leaning on the sofa…

「…What's wrong?」
「…I came along with them…I'm enjoying the afterglow right now so leave me alone for a while!」

Nei-san came from masturbating.
She's lying down with her arms and legs spread out.
Ooh, her beautiful face is spoiled.

「It's about time you part…It's clean up time」

Katsuko-nee spoke to Misuzu with slightly harsh eyes.

「…Yes」

Misuzu looks at me.

「It felt really good. Let's do it again…!」

She kissed me.
Then raised her waist.
My penis is pulled out from Misuzu's vagina.
Misuzu's love nectar is greater than anyone else…
Liquid spreads out as soon as my penis came off…

「…Uwa!」

Maika-chan who's watching that state, raised her voice.

「Ufu, it seems that your juice is much greater than other people. That's your constitution!」

Misuzu smiles at Maika-chan.

「…Misuzu-san, it doesn't hurt anymore?」

Maika-chan asks Misuzu.

「Let's see…When the penis came in for the first time, I felt stinging but…It felt good immediately. It's the best…I wont have sex with anyone else but him for the rest of my life. That's settled…!」

Misuzu says as she sits between my crotch.

「Somehow…Misuzu-san's making a very refreshed face. Katsuko-san looks the same but…she's become more beautiful than before she had sex. It seems that it's true that you get more beautiful when you have sex…!」

The second year middle school beauty spoke her impressions.

「…Maika-chan, that's not all you know?」

Katsuko-nee said.

「Don't you think that Misuzu-san got a bit more adult-like?」

A listless face after sex.
Body that's wet with sweat.
Love nectar and semen spills out from between her crotch.
And yet…Misuzu's eyes are filled and shining with life.

「Yes…Misuzu-san looks very adult-like…!」

Maika-chan raised her voice in surprise!

「That's the power of sex. Do you now understand that you need to have sex if you want to become an adult?」

Katsuko-nee speaks triumphantly

「…I'll clean it up!」

Misuzu puts my penis in her mouth.
Her tongue cleans and licks the liquid.

「…It's still energetic!」

Misuzu said while sucking the glans.
…Yeah
I ejaculated a lot for two times and yet, my penis isn't going down at all.
It's so hard that it's about to burst…it's standing like a tower!

「Then…It's Maika-chan's turn next!」

Katsuko-nee said calmly.

「…Eeeh?!」

Maika-chan's frightened.

「Right, I did it so…Let's have Maika-san do it too」

Misuzu spoke to Maika-chan while doing a cleanup fellatio.

「…But」

Nei-san is still not awake from the afterglow of masturbation.
She remains exhausted.

「It's not that scary if you try it! It just hurts at first. It will feel good immediately!」

Misuzu throws words of temptation.

「…But, when you have sex…it would be troublesome if you get pregnant……」

It seems that Maika-chan's fear of sex is stronger.

「That's fine. I've got contraceptives」
「…Contraceptives?」
「It's called the morning after pill, it's a drug that will prevent your pregnancy if you drink it after sex. Nei-san and I always use that so there's no problem」
「…So there's that kind of medicine?」

Katsuko-nee smiles gently to the anxious Maika-chan.

「The world is advancing very fast! You see, it's being sold in vending machines in US' high schools. That's how popular this medicine is!」

…No matter how you look at it.
…That's a lie. Even I know.

「That's why, Maika-san have sex with him too! We'll become sisters with the same sex partner! It's fine isn't it?!」

Misuzu invades Maika-chan even more…!
…But

「…I'm sorry. Maika's still scared of having sex」

Maika-chan bowed to everyone…

「Also, Maika…」

Maika-chan looks up.

「…wants to give her virginity to the person she likes. Someone Maika loves」

…Maika-chan

「Uhm…Maika's going to toilet for a moment. Where is it?」

Maika-chan asks Katsuko-nee.
She just wants to be excused to the toilet it seems.
Anyway, her real intention is to run away from the situation of this room in one way or another.

「Nei-san…Tell her where the restroom is」
「…Okaaay～!」

Nei-san finally revived from Katsuko-nee's words.
She gets up naked…

「There's a restroom in the hallway outside this room!…Come with me!」

She offered Maika-chan her hand.

「…But, uhm」

Maika-chan's only putting on a white blouse.
She's not wearing neither bra nor panties.

「Hurry up…Do you intend to leak out?」

Nei-san's rushing her…
Maika-chan has given priority to getting out of the room.

「…Understood」

She then stands up.

「Yeah, this way…!」

Nei-san pulls Maika-chan's hand.
She desperately conceals her small ass spilling out from the hem of her blouse with her hand.
She walks in small steps bashfully…
The big door opens…
Nei-san and Maika-chan go out…

◇ ◇ ◇

As soon as the door closed, Katsuko-nee leaked a sigh…

「…Hmmm. I thought that she'd get on board if we went this far」

She operates the laptop while speaking.
Margo-san from the other room is reflected on the screen.

「…What should we do, Margo-sama?」

Margoo-san seems to be troubled too.

『She's Shirasaka Yukino's little sister so I thought that she'd definitely have a lewd constitution but…it seems that she's a bit different』

The door opens and the naked Nei-san comes back alone.

「For the time being, I let her enter the closest restroom…Maika-chan hasn't noticed it but it's locked from the outside so she can't get out」

Nei-san got a bit energetic.

「It would hurt if she's an unpleasant woman like Yukino-san but… Maika-chan seems to be a good girl」

Misuzu said.

「Yeah…Cute and obedient girl…so it really hurts that we're fooling her」

Nei-san sighs and sits in a chair.

「I've put in plenty of aphrodisiac into Maika-sama's drink so…I think her body should be itching for it. But, her mind… 」

Katsuko-nee has a troubled face.
It seems that the play time is over.
Misuszu is calling her 「Maika-chan」…Katsuko-nee is calling her 「Maika-sama」

『It seems that the relatives that took care of her in Shizuoka when she was a child lived in quite an orderly house. It's an unforeseen response』

Margo-san's at her wits end too.

「Or rather…Her body's grown up and yet her heart's that of a child. She's got an inferiority complex so she's saying 『I want to become an adult』 but…Her real self is thinking that she's still a child」

Nei-san's explanation is very easy to understand…
She's still thinking that she's 『Still a child』 yet says 『I want to become an adult』…
『I want to grow up soon』 isn't equal to 『I'll become a real adult』
Maika-chan's in that valley.
She's in the delicate phase where she can't become neither an adult

nor a child…
14 years old…second year middle school.

Katsuko-nee operates her laptop.

「Should we take a look at Maika-sama's state in the toilet?」

…Right
This mansion's toilet has hidden cameras in there
I've seen Yukino's urination scene before…
Nobody's thinking that Maika-chan's actually peeing…
If she's depressed and crying, it would be troublesome.
We peeked in the monitor.

「…My?」

Katsuko-nee's surprised by what she saw on the monitor.
…Maika-chan is…
…Masturbating inside the toilet.
She's leaking out hot breaths…
Her middle finger of her right hand is touching her clitoris and vagina.

『…It seems our strategy has showed it's effects』

Margo-san analyzes…

「Margo-sama, if we keep pushing her, do you think that Maika-sama would fall by the end of the day?」

Margo-san answered Katsuko-nee's question.

『I think that it will be impossible for today…Let's let today pass and do the same thing for two, no, three more days…improving her favor towards Yoshida-kun at the same time, she'll surely fall』

…I see
Then, we have to give up for today.
We can't do anything but wait for the next opportunity…

「But…Do you think that Maika-chan would come to this mansion for the next visit? There's the possibility that she got scared and

won't approach again?」

Misuzu said that.

『There's that too…We have to do it somehow by today』

Margo-san said.
…Today?

『This is all part of Minaho's revenge on Shirasaka Sousuke』
「That's right. We won't achieve revenge unless Shirasaka Sousuke returns to the country with Maika-chan immersed in sex」
『Also…we have Mr. Viola's matter too. We'd like to finish this by the end of the day…!』

…I see
The bad person aiming at Nei-san might come.

「…That's right, we have to do something」

…Nei-san?
…Do something?

『Yoshida-kun…The toilets in here are easily opened from the outside』

Eh…Margo-san?

「This mansion is a brothel, don't you remember? It's easy to open from the outside so that the guest won't confine women inside the toilet or do something strange inside」

Katsuko-nee explains.

「…Strange?」
「Sometimes…there are customers who use dangerous drugs in the restroom. Cocaine and the likes of it…do you get it?」
「…Somehow」
「That's why…the restrooms in the mansion are strictly monitored. The hidden cameras aren't there for just mere perverted hobby…」
「…I see」
「Also, there's a lot of older guests, right? It would be troublesome

if they collapsed in the toilet…That's why we have a special key」

…So that's how it is?

『You have to turn the knob to the left three times with all your might and the lock will be released…』

Margo-san told me.
…Wait
Opening Maika-chan's restroom…
…What am I going to do?

「…I will hold down Maika-sama」

Katsuko-nee said.

「I'll hold her down too」

…Nei-san too

「…Misuzu will help you」

Misuzu…what help?

「That's why…You have to rape Maika-sama」

Katsuko-nee tells me.

「…Eh?」

My head goes blank…
No…I've always thought about violating Maika-chan…
Who'd think that I'm going to do it forcibly?!

『…Should I go too?』

Margo-san speaks from the screen.

「It's okay…Katsuko and he will do it. We don't need help from anyone else」
「But…Katsun!」
「That's right. There's no way we can just leave Danna-sama to Katsuko-sama alone…!」

…Is this okay?
Are we going to rape Maika-chan forcibly?2
Are we going to assault a middle school student by force?

『…Are you okay, Yoshida-kun?』

Margo-san speaks to me in worry…
Katsuko-nee embraces me tightly.

「Sorry! We're making you feel unpleasant…But, Ojou-sama's revenge won't be over unless we do it!!」

…Yuzuki-sensei's revenge
The grudge of her sister and herself…
Forcibly raped, made to sell themselves…even got pregnant.
Sensei's body can no longer bear a child…
Her little sister was killed…
For that revenge…
Sensei…won't be able to rest easy unless Shirasaka Sousuke's daughters fall.
For her and her sister's sake…
Yukino and Maika-chan…

「I'm also asking you! Please do it for Sensei's sake!」

Nei-san says so.

『I will ask of you too. Yoshida-kun!』

…Margo-san too

…I
…I

What did Megumi say again?…
Oh right, she said「It can't be helped already」…

Everyone gave up on Maika-chan already.

…I
…I

I spoke to everyone.

「…I'll do it alone」

…That's right.
…That's the only choice.

「I will rape Maika-chan alone…!」

---

1. That's surprisingly accurate. lol ↩
2. I mean, rape is forced, what are you thinking? Consented rape? ↩

92. Raping Maika.

「That's…we don't intend to have you shoulder the crime alone!」

Katsuko-nee refuses.

「That's right! If we have to be cruel to Maika-chan, let's all do it together!」

…Nei-san too

「…No no no!!! Everyone's misunderstanding!」

I shouted…!

「…Danna-sama?!」

Misuzu's surprised after hearing me shout for the first time…!

「Katuko-nee! Nei-san! Misuzu…!」

I look at the face of the three people…!

「Respond!…Katsuko-nee!」
「Y-Yes?!」
「…Nei-san?!」
「W-What?!」
「…Misuzu!」
「…Yes?!」

I look at them with serious eyes…and spoke.

「You girls just have to continue being Maika-chan's ideal sisters!」

The three of them got surprised.

「…But Yo-chan, that's impossible!」
「That's right, we can't!」

I shouted!

「No, you will! We have to make Maika-chan fall to the very bottom of despair!」

…I
…What am I saying?

「Certainly…we have to make Maika-chan fall! It's for Yuzuki-sensei's sake…!」
「That's right…That's why we all have to…!」

I interrupted Katsuko-nee…!

「There's no need for it to be everyone!!」

…I wonder
Inside me…
There's violent anger coming up…!

「There must be a way where there's no need to rape her!」

…What can't be forgiven
…By me?
…Why am I this angry?
Words just keep spilling out of my mouth…!

「In the first place, the revenge on Maika-chan's father…Shirasaka Sousuke is unrelated to her isn't it?」
『We know that even if you don't tell us. But we have to do it…to save Minaho's heart…!』

Margo-san on the screen told me.

「I know that well! That's why, It has to be a rape where Maika-chan's heart is respected」

『It has to be a rape where Maika-chan's heart is respected』 I said…
What am I saying…?!

「Everyone…you're not looking at Maika-chan properly! Even Maika-chan's a mere human…a woman! We must not use that reason to rape her! If I'm going to rape Maika-chan, then don't use

that reason…we need another reason!」

…I
…What am I doing?!

「…What do you mean by another reason?」

Misuzu's the first one to recover her calmness while Katsuko-nee and Nei-san are in blank surprise.

「I will rape Maika-chan. The reason would be because I got horny from Maika-chan's charm, unable to endure…I raped her because she's too cute…! I raped her because I wanted to rape her! That's what Maika-chan has to think for her entire life!」

…Ah
…It's an absurd thought but I somehow got it.
…At what I'm getting angry at.

「That's why…Until I finish raping her…Everyone should make it so that you don't notice it! Then, please be gentle to Maika-chan after she gets raped…!」

…That's right.
Maika-chan doesn't know she's being fooled by everyone here.
She doesn't know that she's being betrayed by all of the Onee-san that she trusted…it's pitiful
…Too much
Even if she's the daughter of Shirasaka Sousuke…
She shouldn't experience something that cruel…
…Never
…That's absolute!

『Are you fine with that?』

Margo-san asks me…
I take a look at the image in the monitor…
Maika-chan's masturbating alone in the cubicle…

「I'm the worst man so, I've wanted to violate Maika-chan ever since I discovered that she's Yukino's little sister」

Maika-chan looks like Yukino…
No, that doesn't matter.,
Maika-chan's cute…
I want to hold her…violate her.
I want to completely violate her body…!

「…After taking a look at the real Maika-chan…her voice and manners, speech, and laughter…and then, when I saw her naked body…I really wanted to have sex with Maika-chan. I want to make a mess out of her…!」

My erect penis is hard as a rock…!

「Shirasaka Souzuke? Yuzuki-sensei's revenge? 『Kuromori』? It doesn't matter at all…This is something I want to do!」

I look at them.

「At least…That's what I'd like Maika-chan to think! If not!」

Hot feelings rise from inside of me…!

「…Shouldn't we all recognize Maika-chan as a human…as a girl?!」

That's right…Maika-chan's not a tool for revenge.
…She's a girl.
…A human!!!

「Shirasaka Maika's a cute woman…so I'll ravish her. I'll rape her alone…and make her my sex slave!」

I declared strongly.

「…Danna-sama!」

Misuzu's face brightens up.

「That's my Danna-sama!」

Misuzu said that however…Katsuko-nee and Margo-san are troubled.

Nei-san's still in blank surprise…
Then, another voice comes in.

『…I heard all of it』

…It was Yuzuki-sensei's.

『I've heard all of it…Yoshida-kun』
「…Yes?」

I responded

『…I'll accept your proposal. I'll give Shirasaka Maika to you…do what you want』

Sensei's words were frank.

『However…you should never apologize to her. You must be prepared to make one girl fall into hell. Your words of apology will only be for your own atonement』

That's right…I'll be cruel to her.
And if I say words of apology to her…
That's nothing but an excuse for myself.
…It's fine if she curses on me forever.
…It's fine if she hates me forever.
Then…I must never apologize to her even if I die.
I will be violating Maika-han because of my own desires…

「Okay…Got it, sensei!」

I responded.

『Everyone, follow Yoshida-kun…Katsuko and Margo should give minimum support. And…』

Sensei said.

『…Don't push Shirasaka Maika to despair. Yoshida-kun, it is certainly as you said. Katsuko, Margo, Nei, and Misuzu-san…stay as Maika-san's gentle onee-sans』

… Sensei.

『…I only need revenge against Shirasaka Sousuke. I'm not interested in the means or methods. I'll leave her to Yoshida-kun. My final objective is to have Shirasaka Sousuke see his own daughters fall as sex slaves…』

Sensei said.

『…Got it, Minaho』
「Certainly, Ojou-sama」

Margo-san and Katsuko-nee acknowledged it too…
With this…this is decided.
I take a look at Misuzu first.

「…Misuzu, lock the door after I get out of the room!」
「Okay, Danna-sama」

Next…Margo-san

「…Margo-san, do all of the rooms in the mansion have a lock?」
『Yeah…I can operate them from here』
「…Then, please lock all of the doors other than the room where Maika-chan entered through on the first floor」
『…Got it』

Then, I look at Katsuko-nee

「Katsuko-nee…prepare the bath」

Perhaps, Maika-chan will bleed from her loss of virginity.
I'm sure it will be cruel.

「Got it…I'll prepare the bathroom from yesterday」

Then…I look at Nei-san.

「…Nei-san」

Nei-san got startled…!

「…W-What?!」
「Nei-san…please pray…!」
「Yeah, got it…I'll pray for Yo-chan's sake!」
「That's not it!」
「…What?!」
「Pray that Maika won't feel that much pain!」

…I
I'm not confident that Maika-chan's rape won't hurt at all…

「Then, Sensei…I'm going!」

I heard Sensei's voice from the speaker…

『…I pray you good luck…!』

◇　◇　◇

I got out of the studio that I've been in.
As soon as I close the door…It got locked.
Misuzu has locked it.
Maika-chan is in the closest toilet.
Oh, it's here.
I press my ear on the door…

「…Ah,…Un…aaaah…!」

I can hear Maika-chan's panting.
I took a deep breath…

Suu…Haa
Suu…Haa

…Okay, let's begin

I quietly hold the knob.
Suddenly, I turn it to left three times with all my might…!

…Clink!

The lock is released…!
I opened the door with all my might…!!!

「…Eh?!」

Maika-chan's having a surprised face!
So human eyes really become round when they're really, really surprised…!
Maika-chan who's sitting on the toilet spreads her legs wide.
White blouse on her upper body.
On her lower body, there's nothing…
Her finger are on top of her hairless slit…!

「…You're cute」

I spoke to Maika-chan in a low voice.

「…W-What?!」

Maika-chan looks up at me while trembling…!

「You're a virgin?」

I said coldly.

「…T-That's a s-secret!」

I thrust out my naked crotch in front of Maika-chan…!
The violently towering penis enters Maika-chan's field of view.
Maika-chan's frightened.

「…I'll do you!」

Maika-chan doesn't seem to understand what it means

「…W-What?」

I slowly stroked the erect penis in front of Maika-chan…!

「There's no way I can endure it when there's such a delicious looking woman in front of me!」

The glans had a shining liquid already.

「…Maikaaa…Let me have sex with you!」

Maika's face distorts in fear…!

「…Iyaaaa!!」

Maika pushed me away and dashed from the restroom…!
…Just as expected!

「Help meee! Katsuko-saaaan!」

Maika runs to the door of the studio where Katsuko-nee is in…

…Click click!!!

…The door doesn't open no matter how much she turns it!

「I locked that door!」

I shouted!

「…Help me! Katsuko-san! Nei-san! Misuzu-san!!!」

Maika desperately knocks on the door!

「It's useless! That door is custom designed for that studio so they won't hear you inside no matter how much you knock on it!」

Of course…that's a lie.
That's just a bluff of mine!

「…Just stay still and get violated by me! Maika!」

I slowly shortened my distance with Maika…!

「…No! I don't want that! Neveeeeer!!!」

Maika runs down the stairs while half crying…
I ran after her…!

「…Help meeee!!!! Someone, help meee!!!」

Maika's scream is piercing…!
Maika who was made to drink lots of aphrodisiac by Katsuko-nee is staggering on her feet!

She can't run well…
Unsteady…but, she's running desperately.
I can catch her if I run with all my effort but I don't.
I must keep Maika away from the studio where Katsuko-nee is…
This is to not let the crimes be put on Katsuko-nee.

「…Someoneee!!! Someone come and help meeee!!!」

Maika-chan walks down the stairs unsteadily…!
Her cute naked ass is exposed…
I chase after her back…!

「…Nooo…help me! help meeeee!!!!」

Maika who descended the stairs faced the door.
Does she intend to go out of the mansion just wearing a single blouse?
…But
The front door is also sealed…

「…Hey, Maika-chan. Where do you want to have sex? Are you fine here?」

My words made Maika scream…!

「…I don't want to!」

Once again, Maika runs through the corridor barefoot again…!
She tries to open doors from time to time but…all of the doors are locked!
She finally gets into the room towards the terrace.
No…she's induced into doing that, but the girl who desperately runs has no way to know that…!

…Click

The door opens and Maika jumps through it.
I followed her…!

「…Haa, haa, haa」

Maika-chan's already gasping for breath…

The fear from being violated, her rapid movement…has consumed her stamina!

…I'll rape her in this room

That's what I decided
But…Maika!
She noticed that the glass door of the terrace is open!

「…… ! 」

Maika dashed towards the door…!
I run after her!
Maika goes through the door and jumps outside onto the terrace…!

「…Like hell I'll let you go! 」

I gave my last spurt and catch up with Maika!
I caught the hem of Maika's blouse!

「…Kyaaaaaaa! 」

Maika fell down onto the ground while she screams out loud!

「…Maika! 」

I instinctively raised my voice.
…I'm glad, the bottom is a lawn!
She won't be injured with this then…!

「…Hiiiiii! 」

Maika rolled over the lawn several times…!

「…Haa! 」

At last…Maika-chan stopped with her face lying down on the lawn.
Her naked ass, and her vagina are exposed to me…!

Now then…Should I threaten her a bit more?
Looking at her side…there are big empty flower pots.
I guess Katsuko-nee's doing gardening.

Empty flowerpots…there's no problem even if I break them.
I took one piece and hold it towards Maika.

「…Maika!」

Maika turned to me.
At that moment, I threw the flower pot at the flowerbed brick nearby!

…Smash!

「Kyaaaaaa!!」

Maika raised a shrill cry!
One more!

…Smash!!

「Hiiiiiiiiiiii!!」

Maika trembles from the violent crushing sound!
One more…!

…Smash!

「Kyaa!」

At the same time I hear the sound…I attacked Maika!
I throw myself on top of Maika and hold her down!
I flipped her over then took a mounting position!!

「Noooooooo!! Help me! Someoneee!!」

Having her skin touched by the opposite sex…Maika exclaimed…!

「…Don't struggle! I don't want to hurt you! I'm just into your beautiful face!」

I shouted into Maika's ear!

「…Hii, hii…Hiiii!!」

Maika's sobbing in surprise…

「You're really cute…I thought of that ever since I first saw you…」

I said while looking down at Maika.

「I'll definitely make you my woman…!」

The color of blood in Maika's face turned to despair…

「N-No way…I…I can't do that…!」

Maika's trembling.
…Aah.
What cuteness.
I extend my waist on top of Maika.
I put weight on her so that Maika won't run away…!
I gripped Maika's blouse with both of my hands…!
…Just like that.
I tear it off with all of my strength!
Bi! Bi! Bi! The white buttons flew away!
Her naked white breast are exposed to my eyes…!

「…Iyaaaaaa!」

Tears gushed out of Maika's eye like a shower!
Maika's crying!
She's sobbing…!
I groped Maika's growing breast tightly!

「…Hiii!」

At that moment…Maika's tears stopped from the shock.
Maika's breast are still hard.
There's still something like a core inside her breasts.
Unripe body that's still not an adult.
But, I won't tell Maika that…

「Maika…Your breasts are soft. Isn't your body completely an adult already?…!」
「…That's not true! Maika's still a child!」

Maika shook her head sideways.

「That's not true…Maika's already an adult. I'll make you into an adult…!」

I suck Maika's left nipple!

「…Iyaaa! Don't do that! don't do that!!!」

I hold Maika's struggling arm hard and I enjoyed the taste of a 14 year old girl's nipple.
I sucked it out…
The nipple sunken in the areola doesn't appear.
I lick it more.
…Dammit!
Her nipple doesn't come out…!!

「Maika's breast are delicious. I'll be licking this everyday…!」
「I don't want it! Let me go…! Let go of Maika! Help meee! Katsuko-saaan! Nei-saaaan!」
「…No one can hear you. I made sure they wouldn't」

I spoke to Maika sharply.

「Why…Why are you doing this to Maika?」

The teary Maika condemns me!

「Isn't that obvious?! You're just cute! Charming!」
「…T-There's no way that's true!」

I hold Maika's head and showed my erection to her forcibly!

「…Iyaaaaaaaa!!」

Maika screams again when she saw the grotesque thing!

「You're so charming that this got like this! I'm itching to have sex with you!」

I hold Maika's hand and forced her to touch my penis.

「Iyaaaa, H-hot!」

Maika's body shrinks from touching the hot erection.

「That's why…we're going to have sex! I'll make you my woman!」

I buried my face in Maika's chest again.
I lick her nipple…!
I massage her breasts…!

「I'll call the police! I'll tell papa! Your judgement will be the death penalty! I'll have you executed! Are you sure about that!?」

I answered Maika's childish words seriously.

「I'm fine dying…As long as I have sex with Maika, I'm fine with dying…!」

Maika's looking at me with a surprised face…
I stared into Maika's eyes…

「…Lies…You're lying!」

Maika muttered
…I

「If I was lying then could I do this?…」

I embraced Maika tightly…!
Kissed her thin nape!
Bite her earlobe!
Made my tongue crawl inside her ear…!

「…Noo!…Iyaaan!」

She may hate it but…Maika's body is reacting with resounding shivers.
The aphrodisiac is taking effect!
I stretch my finger over Maika's vagina…!
It's completely wet.

「Maika…you're wet…!」

Maika answered in a tearful voice.

「I'm not wet!」
「…You're feeling it, aren't you?」
「I am not…feeling…aaahn!」

She gasps as soon as I caressed her clitoris on top of her foreskin.

「You're cute…Maika…」

I really think so

「…N-No…Noo…Noooooooo…!」

Maika desperately endures my caress.
Eyes closed…She's making her whole body stiff…
That's why, I used that chance to open Maika's legs wide…
I made my glans hit her opening quietly…!
Maika who's desperately refusing me…
Can't tell the difference between a penis and a finger…!

「…Maika. I like you. I love you」

I brought my lips close to Maika's face who's eyes were closed tightly.
I kissed Maika's puffed up lips…

Miaka opens her mouth wide in surprise…!

「…T-That's…That was Maika's first kiss…!」

Maika's eyes have tears collecting in them…!
…That's the moment I've been waiting for!!

「…Un!!!」

I thrust inside Maika.

「…O-Ouuuuch!!!」

Maika desperately tries to move her waist and run away…!
The glans are not yet in…!
I'm forcibly digging my glans into Maika's small and tight slit!

「…Stop! Stop, stoooop! Nooooo!!!」

Maika tries to run away while enduring the pain.
I hold Maika's shoulders and fix her so that she can't run away anymore…!

「Maika…Be obedient and get ravished by me!」
「Noooo! I don't want this…Help me! Help meeee…!!!」

Fun! I pushed it in powerfully again…!
But, Maika's desperately stiffening her body…
I can't quite get it in…!
…Dammit!
A third of my glans are buried inside Maika.
It's not yet reaching her womb, not even her hymen!
…Dammit!!
…Dammit!
…Dammit!

「…uguuu!!」

…Byurururuu!!

I instinctively ejaculated from the arousal of rape!
The glans who're a third buried release semen from inside Maika!!

「…What?! I-It's hot!!」

Maika's chan's body is trembling from the hot semen being poured inside her vagina…!

「W-What's this…?!」

The second year middle school girl is frightened.

「…I ejaculated!」

I told Maika.

「…Ejaculate?」

Maika gasped.

「I released my semen inside you!」

Maika's eyes opened wide in despair…!

「…T-That's」

At that time…Maika misunderstood.
I ejaculated…
She must have thought that sex has already ended…

「That's so…c-cruel!」

Maika who's in shock has loosened up her body…!
…But!
My penis isn't withering at all!
…The real sex is just beginning!
I loosened up…
Then pretended to pull my penis out from inside Maika…
Maika loosened up her whole body…
She begins to cry quietly…
I confirmed Maika's breathing…
…Breathe in.
…Breath out.

…Three
…Two
…One

…Now!

I thrust in my penis immediately when Maika's about to finish breathing out!
The semen I shot became the lubricant…!
The glans slide in with a dash!

「…Ooooooouuuuuucccchhh!!!」

Maika's body trembled as if it got hit by lightning…!
The glans stopped at the big wall defending her.
This is Maika's hymen!!! [1]

「…Maika! It's in! We're connected!」

I shout at Maika.

「…No more!! Take it out! Take it out! It hurts! Maika's really hurt!!」

Maika shouts.

「It's for the sake of becoming an adult so endure it!」
「Nooo…I don't want to become an adult anymore…please spare mee!!」

Maika appeals to me while spilling tears like rain…!

「…Isn't it enough?! Maika already gave you her virginity so spare me already! Please spare me!」

Maika cries out…
The virgin Maika thinks that this is the last point of sex…
Shirasaka Maika's still a virgin.
She doesn't know that herself…
…My penis only has half of itself buried in her.
Wanting to enter Maika's body to the root…My whole body's burning with excitement…!

「…Maika, you're beautiful」

The crying Maika from being violated…is really lovely.
I want to rape her more and more.

…pota pota

I felt cold drops on my back.
…Rain.
The weather seemeed to be off since yesterday.
My flushed body got cooled by the rain from the heavens…

「…Aah, Maikaaaa!」

I spoke to Maika while my glans were hitting her hymen.

「…N-No more!!」

Maika who had my penis entering her vagina is opening and closing her mouth wide like a fish on a chopping board.
Motionless like this, it seems that she can endure the pain somehow.
I can feel Maika's heartbeat.
Two big round eyes look up at me.
From time to time, they show wrinkles between their eyebrows expressing pain…

「…You're really cute…」

That's my honest impression.

「I really want you」

The raindrops fall on top of the body of the 14 year old girl.

「That's why…I'll steal it」

Maika showed an 「eh?」face.

「I'll make you a 『Woman』…!」

I pushed in my waist with one thrust!
My erect penis pushed her hymen to it's limits…!
The too young virgin hymen is elastic and doesn't tear off easily…!

「…Gyaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!」

Maika's scream echoes in the rainy garden…!

…Zun, zun, zun!

I pushed it powerfully again and again!
My glans can feel the resistance of her hymen…!

「…Ouch! Ouch! it huuurts! hiiiii! Stoop iiit!」

Maika screams!

…Like hell I'll stop!
…Once more! 2

…Yaaaaa!!

「…Haaauuu!!」

Maika opened her mouth wide!
The tip of the glans cave in!
…I broke the membrane!

「…O-Ouch!!!」

My erect penis invades in after the membrane is torn!

「…No…No…Iyaaaaaaaa!!!」

The deepest and most important part of a woman's body is forcibly pushed by a foreign object!
This hot man's penis, feels the fear in her vagina!
It's making a gachigachigachi sound.
That's the sound of Maika's molars…!
Her small body is trembling from the pain and loss of her virginity…

…Jururu! zuru! Jururu!

I still pushed in my penis, ignoring Maika's refusal!
Finally…My hard glans went beyond her hymen!!

「…Igiiiiii!!!」

The true pain and fear has just begun…
Just like that, I thrust my penis in!!!
I slip inside Maika!!!

「…Agaga, ouch…I-it hurts!!」

It's perfectly in down to the root.
The tip of the glans are kissing the uterus!
I'm completely connected with Maika-chan.
…We're having sex!!

「…Maikaaaaaaa!」

I embraced Maika's body.
What a small body!
Having sex with a middle school student feels strange.
The temperature of her vagina is higher than anyone else I had…
Embracing her small body…I can feel my penis piercing inside Maika.
The vagina that just got it's virginity stolen is shrinking according to her pulse.
I can feel the rhythm of Maika's life with my penis!!!

「…You're now a 『Woman』, Maika! You're my woman now!!」

I kissed Maika's mouth who's breathing heavily.
Maika doesn't reject it anymore.
Crushed by the despair…She looks up at the raining white sky from under me.

「…Cruel…I thought that it had already ended earlier…it hurts this much…!」

She's pierced by me…
Maika sheds tears.

「Not yet…The pain is just beginning」
「…What?」

I began a slow heavy piston.

「…O-ouch!! It hurts! Please stop! Stop it please!!」

I will never stop.
Until I ejaculate inside Maika-chan's womb…
Everytime I make a piston, i break Maika's hymen even more…
I'm sure that the part where we're connected is completely red with blood…!

「…Hii…Iya…Iyaaa…stop…please stop!」

The pain is so severe that Maika-chan can't put any power into her body.
She's just letting me violate her as much as I want…
Her small breasts shake matching my movement…!

「…O-Ouch…It hurts…!」

All Maika can do is just cry…

「…Help me, papa…mama…it hurts…Maika's in pain…!」

I'm thoroughly violating Maika…
I kiss her, lick her breast while repeating my piston…

「Ooh…Delicious Maika's body is the best」
「…help me…it hurts…uncle…auntie…!!」

That must be the relatives that took care of Maika when she was a kid…!

「…Help me…anyone's fine…Maika…save Maikaaa…please…I beg youuuu!」

Maika didn't speak of Yukino's name in the end.
Maika…Maika's being violated.
The cute 14 year old virgin is being raped.
Her small body, small vagina…the tightening of it is strong…!
Still, I pierce her until her womb!
Oooh…The feeling of my penis rubbing the virgin pussy feels good.
Maika's small body is delicious.
I'll carve my memory into this body!!
Hot passion wells up from the bottom of my stomach!
…It's soon.
…I'm going to blow up soon!

「…M-Maika…I-I'm about to cum!」

Aaah…The hot mass is rising

.「…I'm going to cum inside Maika!」
「…A-Again?」

Maika looks at me in surprise…

「That's right…I'm going to let out semen…This time, it'll reach Maika's womb. I'll pour in my hot stuff inside Maika's baby chamber…!」

Maika shook her head violently…!

「…Noooo…Please, anything but that!!」

…T-Too late!!
It's rising up in a flash!
I embraced Maika's small body with all of my strength!

「…Uuuuu, M-Maikaaaaa!!!」

I ejaculate while shouting Maika's name!
The first white liquid sent into the womb of the virgin 14 year old girl!
I release it with all my might!!

「…Maika! I-I'm cumming!!!」

…Dokudoku! Dokudoku! Doku Doku!

I look at Maika's impregnated face…
Maika opened her eyes wide…she's crying…
Maika's receiving even more hot semen while she's having a crying face!!!

…Doku! Dokudoku! dopyu! Doku!!

「…What should I do? It's coming in! Inside Maika's stomach…hot stuff is reaching! What should I do, what should Maika do?」

…The ejaculation doesn't stop.
…I'm still ejaculating.

I spoke to Maika.

「…With this…Maika's my woman for life…」

Maika looks up at me with a crying face.

「…No way…Maika would be troubled…Papa would get angry at me…Even Mama…!」

I lick Maika's tears as she cries…

It's different from the rain droplets…
Maika's tears are salty…and bitter.

「You're beautiful, Maika…I'll cherish you forever…!」

The light rain has gotten stronger.
Our heartbeats simply resonate.
Our bodies completely flushed.

The early summer rain is pouring down on me who's on top of Maika…

---

1. EN: midboss acquired ↩
2. EN: CROSS-BURST ↩

93. To the cute you.

…Haa, haa, haa!

Small droplets of rain fall softly from the milky sky…
I can feel the cold rain on my back.
My chest and stomach are in contact with Maika's hot skin.
Maika's body is small…
I bend over her small body while my penis is still inside her.
…Heartbeat's still racing.
It feels like my body just ran a marathon…
My body feels in pain…
…Maika too.
She's breathing heavily under me…
I can feel Maika's hot breath on my cheek…

We just made intense movements that's possible with only a man and a woman…
…Sex…reproduction
We're male and female[1]
No…That's not it.
I forcibly turned Maika into a 『Woman』
Rape…I raped her.

「…Heavy」

Before long…Maika who's under me mutters.
Maika's face is wet with both rain and tears.

I almost said 「…Sorry」
I swallowed those words of apology.
I promised Yuzuki-sensei…
I should never apologize to Maika…

「…It felt really good!」

I spoke my impression to Maika.
It's fine to praise her I guess.

「Maika's body is the best!…That was an amazing sex. I felt so

good that I ejaculated a lot!」

I kiss Maika's lips.
Maika's no longer rejecting.
She looks at the clouds expressionlessly.

「We're going to have sex everyday. You're going to have sex with only me for the rest of your life. I will never let others taste this pleasurable body!」

I kissed Maika's face…
Ears…nape…
I embraced her once again.

「…Do you like Maika?」

Maika asked while looking at the sky.

「Yeah…I do. I decided to have sex with you ever since I first saw you…!」

I hold her small breasts once again.
I enjoy the sensation of the young breast.

「Maika hates you…」

Maika said expressionlessly…

「I don't care about that!」

I made my tongue crawl on her inverted nipples then said.

「…Why?」

Maika looks at me in wonder.
…Finally.
She looked at me.

「I like Maika. That's why I'll embrace…have sex with Maika. That's all!」

Maka's face is filled with anguish.

「This is too cruel」

I gripped Maika's breast tightly!

「If it's cruel or anything, then let it be! It's already decided, Maika's my woman! You're going to have sex with me for the rest of your life!」

I'll make this girl mine…!
That's what I decided.
I'll be with this girl forever…!

「No matter how much Maika hates it, I'll do it forcibly. If I want to do Maika, then I'll rape you anytime. I'll get inside Maika's house! Even at your school! No matter how many times…even hundreds… even thousands…I'll rape you…!」

My penis got erect inside Maika again.

「You should just get caught by the police! You should go to prison!」

Maika vents out her anger while crying…!

「If I go to prison, then I'll escape! I'll escape immediately and rape Maika!」

I won't lose!
I must never lose!
If I fall silent, I will lose.
If I hesitate, I will lose.
Anyway…I just have to keep talking aggressively!

「If Maika gets someone she likes, I will beat them up! If there are men who would court you, I'll kick them all! If there's a man other than me who kisses Maika, I will kill that guy!」

Maika's face distorts in sorrow…

「…Maika will never kiss a man other than me! You'll have sex with me forever! I will massacre those men who would get close to Maika!」

I don't care about logic.
Anyway…I just have to deliver my feelings that I want towards Maika!
Maika instinctively holds her breath from my insane words…!

「…Why? Why are you doing such cruel things?! Maika didn't do anything wrong! Why! Why!!!!!」

We shout at each other in the rain while our bodies are connected…!

「Isn't that obvious…That's because Maika's a good woman!!」

I just throw my childish reason at Maika!

「Maika's cute! Too cute! I want to have Maika no matter how cruel the method is!!! I will never let you go!」

…Aah…
…So that's what I thought about Yukino before.
Those hot feelings I had that time are now felt towards Maika.

「…No! Never, never, noo!!」

Maika roars in anger.

「Never with someone like you!」

Our voices sound like bickering children.
We're just shouting at each other…
But…we…
…Are having sex.
My penis inside Maika is completely rejuvenated.

「…Maika!」

I moved my waist again!
I violate Maika's body on the raining lawn!!!

「…O-Ouuuch! It huuuurts!!!」

Maika grits her teeth once again to endure it!

「…It hurts…Don't move, please!!」

The second sex seems to be more painful than the virginity loss.
I pity Maika for a bit.
Of course…I won't stop raping her because of that.
I pull out my penis half way…
Then plunge my penis to the root…

「…Maika…Maika…Maika…!」

I'm masturbating while my glans are in her vagina.
But, Maika's hot body is under me…
My skin makes contact with Maika's…
Maika's white and cute breasts…
A young elastic body that's still growing.
14 year old body…
Feeling the cold rain on my back…Only my glans can feel the heat of Maika's vagina…!
Sucked by Maika's vagina…My penis is melting like candy!!

「…W-What are you doing…?」

Maika who's held down by me, looks up at my face in fright…!
I breathe like a beast on top of Maika…

「…I'm going to ejaculate again. I'm going to cum inside Maika.」

…Aaah!
…The wave of pleasure is rising!!

「…I don't want that…That makes me pregnant doesn't it?!…
Please! No more hot stuff deep inside Maika!」

Maika pleads while spilling tears.

「…So cute. Super cute…Maika!…Maika!…Maikaaaa…!」

…Uuu, cumming!
I released the root of my penis…
Then pushed it inside in a dash…!!

「…Noooo, nooooooo!!!」

I ejaculated while listening to Maika's scream…!

「…aaaaah, so hot!!!」

The scorching hot white liquid pours inside her womb again!!!

「…It's coming in again…the hot stuff is coming in again…Baka, baka, bakaaaa…Maika can no longer be a bride…!」

Maika shed tears once again….
I press my glans against her uterus…
I poured it in to the last drop…

「…You're already my woman!」

I embraced Maika…
Maika's body is really hot…

◇ ◇ ◇

I ejaculated inside Maika for the third time…
My penis finally withered…
My meat stick has lost it's hardness and became small…
Before long, it came out of the virgin vagina of the 14 year old girl…
Was it pushed out by the pressure of the vagina?…

「…Haa, haa, haa」

I finally calmed down after my penis ended it's rage.
I slowly raised my body…
The rain's getting stronger.
Maika and I are completely wet with rain and sweat, we look so awful…
The soil under the lawn got wet with the rain and has turned into mud…
Maika's body…is muddy.
She's lying down with her limbs stretched out on the ground.
It's as if she's dead…
Her crotch is dyed red with blood.
…Cruel
I did this…

I raped a 14 year old girl…ejaculated three times inside her vagina.

「…Maika, can you stand?」

Those are the only the words I can say.
Maika's not moving.
She might be unable to stand up…
She's bleeding a lot…

「Maika…let's go in. I'll carry you…」

I told Maika.
There's not a single reaction from Maika…

It must look cool from the side, being princess-carried…
To be honest, I'm not confident about my strength.
I raised Maika's body forcibly…

…Huh?
…It's light?
Maika's so light!

I shivered from the youth of the girl I raped.
But…Time won't come back.

「Maika…Hold onto me!」

Maika ignores me.
She's not moving at all.

「Look, you'll catch a cold!」

In the end, Maika raised her upper body…then I carried her limp body.
The naked man who's wet with rain and the girl who's half naked wearing a muddy blouse.
It surely looks strange from an outside perspective.
I might be seen carrying the corpse of a girl.

「Maika…Get a grip. Let's go somewhere we won't get wet anymore!」

For the time being…I carried Maika to the terrace where the rain doesn't reach.
Some wind came out.
This is no good…We have to enter the mansion.
The terrace floor is tile but it would hurt if I drag her I think?
…Eeei! Sink or swim!
I lifted Maika-chan princess carry!

…Heave ho!

「……？！」

I see Maika half-opening her eyes…

「Don't struggle…It's dangerous if you fall!」

As expected…She's light!
Yeah. I can carry her somehow if she's like this!
Anyway, I just have to be careful that I won't slip and drop her…
I carried Maika inside the room carefully…carefully…!

There are several white towels at the entrance of the room.
It's Katsuko-nee…

「…Maika, I'll wipe you off」

Maika's still playing dead.
Powerless…she's not doing anything.
She's not saying anything.
Her eyes are open so she's not fainted.
She just looks at the ceiling expressionlessly.

「…I'm wiping you down, okay?」

I wipe the drops of water on Maika's body with a towel.
I wiped her thin legs.
Her white long arm too…
She won't fall or slip down for the time being.
But…The mud and blood aren't enough to be wiped by towels.
I have to bring her to the bath soon…

I wiped my own hands and feet.

It would be a problem if Maika slips down.
I wiped her sole carefully in particular.

Then, I princess carried her once again.
I got the gist of it from my experience from a while ago.
Like where I should put my center of gravity…

「Maika…I'm going to carry you again. We're going into the bath… okay?」

I don't know if she's listening or not…
For now, I told her our destination.

I lift Maika and left the room
Fortunately, the door was left open earlier.
We went to the bathroom through the corridor.
It feels strange…
I'm naked…filled with mud…
And I'm carrying the middle school girl I raped into the bathroom…

I didn't meet with anyone in the corridor.
Katsuko-nee and the others must be watching in silence…
The door to the bathroom is open wide enough that it's easy to get in.
I thanked Katsuko-nee in my mind.

We passed straight through the dressing room and went into the bathroom.
As expected, the glass door is open.
I walked carefully so I wouldn't slip on the bathroom tiles…
I lay Maika down near the bathtub.
…Paying careful attention
So that her head won't bump on the floor…
I spread the towel from a while ago as a substitute for a pillow…
The towel that's still clean is left.

I took off her completely muddy blouse…
The blouse sucked in water and it stuck to her body so it wasn't easy to undress her.
But, anyway, I'll do my best.

「Maika…I'm taking this off!」

Maika's still limp…
I lift her arm and raised her back…
After a fierce battle, I finally got Maika naked…

Now then, what should I do?
I can pull the shower and wash her with hot water, but…
I'd feel sorry for getting hot water in Maika's eyes and face…
…It can't be helped.
I dip my fingers in the bathtub.
Checking the temperature…
It's not that hot…Okay
I draw hot water from the bathtub with a pail…

「Maika… I'll clean you up」

I poured hot water onto Maika's body bit by bit.
I wash the mud away with my fingers.
First, the tip of her foot…
I squat down at Maika's foot and washed her feet.
I wash the mud between her toes carefully.

「…Ahn!」

When I rub between Maika's toes, she raised a small voice.

「What's wrong?…Does it hurt somewhere?」

Maika doesn't answer…

「If it hurts then tell me immediately…! If it really feels painful then I'll take you to the hospital…You don't need to endure it!」

I wash in-between her toes one after another…
Mud enters such places…
I shoved in my index finger, picking out the mud in between.
Yeah…It's clean now.
For now, I just wash it with water and onto the next toe…
I draw hot water with the pail again and again…
I wash Maika's feet completely…

Next are her arms.
I wash away the dirt from her arms…
Then, in between her fingers too…

I finished with her shoulders…
Then…Her chest
…I washed her stomach.
…Then

When I sprinkled hot water on her crotch…!
Maika said 「Ouch!」

「…Does it hurt? Does it sting?!」

Maika answered me who's having a worried face.

「…I'm okay」

Then…She got up slowly.

「That's enough…Maika will wash herself…」
「No, stay still…your body's in pain isn't it? I'll be washing you off」

Maika stares at me.

「Because…Isn't your body muddy too? I'll never get clean if you wash me with that kind of body…!

…Eh?
…I-I see!
Speaking of which, I haven't washed myself at all!
I'm still sweaty and muddy!

「…Wait a moment!」

I shoved the pail to the bathtub and splashed it on my head…!
…One
…Two!
…Three!

「…There, I'm clean! I'm clean so let me wash Maika! Okay?」

Maika looks at me with a surprised face…

「…Why do you want to wash Maika that much?」

I answered honestly.

「I want to wash you with my own hands!」

…That's right.
I want to clean Maika up.

「…Strange」

Maika answered.

「Yeah. They tell me that a lot」

I answered

「…We're not going to have sex anymore?」

Maika asked anxiously.
I looked at my crotch.

「It's calm for now. I ejaculated a lot earlier so I think it won't stand up for a while…」

Maika answered.

「Is that so?…Then do what you want」

I can use the shower since Maika got up now.
I pulled the shower head and sprinkled water on Maika's body.
Her back and ass that weren't washed because she was lying down a while ago are washed…

「…Your hands are lewd」

Maika complains when I washed her ass with my hands.

「It can't be helped…Maika's ass is cute」

Maika's ass doesn't have any flesh at all.

A round and small ass.
But…it has tension and softness like a rice cake.
I washed her crack in her ass.

「Iyaaan! You don't need to wash that place with hot water!」
「Well, there's mud sticking…!」
「You're lying! You just got naughty, didn't you?!」
「There's really mud there…!」
「Lies!」
「…No way, is it shit?」

Did she defecate from the shock of rape?
Maika's face turned red from my serious question!

「There's no way that is! Baka, baka, baka!!」

…Anyway
I washed Maika's back with hot water.
…Then.

「Don't just wash it with hot water, do it with soap too…Isn't there a shampoo and sponge there?」

Maika said.
Looking at it…There's certainly a complete set of everything.

「Onii-san, wash yourself properly…you still got a lot of mud on your body」

…Ah
As expected, it's no good to just wash my head with three pails of water.

Maika took the sponge and bottled shampoo…then froth it.
Her long and thin finger make bubbles skillfully.

「…Hey, Maika's washing you off」

…Eh?
…Maika?

「Onii-san washed Maika over right?」

「…Yeah」
「Then, Maika will be washing Onii-san」

Maika said with a slightly angry face…

「Okay…squat down」
「…Y-Yeah」

What changed her mind?…I don't know

「…I'm washing you off」

Maika washed my back with a sponge…
The white foam spreads on my back.
I can feel Maika's small hand over the sponge.

「Hey…Onii-san, how are you called?」
「…Eh?」
「Maika doesn't know Onii-san's name」

Speaking of which…I never introduced myself.
Katsuko-nee said nothing but 『This boy』

「I'm Yoshida」
「Hmm…Yoshida-san?…Yoshida-san is hard to say so, I'll just call you Onii-san…Okay?」
「…Y-yeah」

Maika washes my arm this time.

「…Please wash the front by yourself」
「…Yeah」

Taking the sponge from Maika, I wash my own chest and stomach.
Then, my crotch…

「Then, I'll be rinsing it off」

Maika sprinkled hot water on me.
The bubble flow beautifully…
Yeah…It feels good.

「Thank you, I'm clean now」

Then, when I thanked Maika…
Maika bursts into laughter.

「…What's wrong?」

Maika spoke while laughing.

「Onii-san, your face is still dirty…!」

Oh, well, my face wasn't washed yet.,

「Close your eyes…I'll be washing it off」

I closed my eyes and Maika's small hands plaster bubbles on my face.

「Okay, we're done…!」

The water current hits my face…
Ah…I feel refreshed.

「Then…It's Maika's turn」
「…Ah」

This time, I wash Maika's back with the sponge.
The white foam creates a beautiful S curve and flows down.

「…Onii-san」

Maika talks to me.

「…What?」
「At first…Maika was scared of Onii-san. You're wearing strange clothes too. Especially, your hair」

…Hey hey.
Isn't the『Prince of the stars』and 『Pompadour』a failure?!

「Then…You had sex with Katsuko-san and Misuzu-san didn't you?」
「…Yeah」

「I was surprised」
「Yeah…Of course」

We suddenly had a public sex show after all.

「Maika had seen lewd videos inside father's room」

…Eh?

「The sex in those video was very disgusting. All the men and women there were like animals. Screaming waa gyaa. They're like monkeys in the zoo」
「…Hee」
「Because, the woman's hanged midair on a horizontal bar…her nose was hooked up, she was given an enema, and swat by a whip…They even lit a firework up in her anus」

Shirasaka Sousuke…has too much of an abnormal hobby.

「Maika thought that she never wants that disgusting thing…Sex is very scary!」

Of course that's what she'll think if that's the first sex video she'd see.

「But…Onii-san and Katsuko-san's sex is very different. I can clearly see that Katsuko-san really loves Onii-san. Very beautiful…it looked so pleasurable」

Maika said.

「On the other hand, I understood that Onii-san likes Misuzu-san during your sex. You're really taking care of Misuzu-san…you're treasuring her. I understood that you love her」
「…Is that so?」
「That's why…When Katsuko-san said that I should try it too… Maika got troubled」
「…Why?」
「Because…Maika doesn't like Onii-san…I thought that Onii-san doesn't like me either. I can't have sex like Katsuko-san or Misuzu-san…!」

…Oh.
Anyway, it seems that our 『Temptation plan』 has completely failed.
Maika-chan's much more intelligent than we imagined…
She's a clever girl…

「Then…Onii-san attacked Maika…」

I stopped my hand from moving the sponge…

「Maika was really scared…Onii-san shouted words I don't understand…ran after Maika and raped me…!」

I almost said「…Sorry」unintentionally.
I swallowed my words.

「It can't be helped…I want to make Maika mine…」

…Maika's back trembled, I felt that with my hand.

「It was really scary…and painful too. I thought that my stomach would split…」

…Maika

「I didn't understand a thing Onii-san said…it was absurd. The logic was strange. I thought that a crazy person is violating me… Maika felt sad, scared, miserable…!」

Maika's naked back is shaking…
I embraced Maika from behind…

「…I told Onii-san that I don't want it, yet, you came twice inside Maika」
「…Three」

I whispered into Maika's ear from the back.

「…Eh?」
「I ejaculated inside Maika three times」

I stretched my hand and reached for Maika's stomach.

A soft stomach of a 14 year old girl.

「Right now…There's three shots worth of my semen here. It's living in here」
「…Is that so?」

Maika asked sadly.

「I'll get you the medicine Katsuko-san uses so you won't get pregnant. You'll be fine」
「Okay」

I caressed Maika's stomach gently.
Maika put her own hand over mine.

「Hey…Onii-san, you wanted to have sex with Maika that much?」
「…Yeah」

I embraced Maika from behind again…
What a small body…
Unripe, underdeveloped body.
The feeling when embracing her is completely different.
She's thinner than Misuzu who has a delicate figure.
If I embrace her too hard, I feel I might break her…

「When we finished having sex…I hated Onii-san so much. I'll never forgive you, I thought. I thought that you'd better die」

Maika turns to me.
She looks at me with moistened eyes.
…I thought that she's cute.
I kiss Maika.
Maika's face turns to surprise.

「…Why did you kiss Maika?」

Maika asks when I separate my lips.

「…I just thought that you're cute」
「You kissed Maika because you thought she's cute…?」
「…Yes」

I kissed Maika again.

「…I'll do it again and again」

Our lips joined up again.

「Maika hates onii-san」
「I don't care about that…Maika's just cute」

Maika and I looked at each other.

「I'll curse you forever…I'll never forgive you」
「Yeah…You can do that. I don't need to be forgiven…!」
「It's really true!…I'll hate you forever」
「Yeah…You can do that」

I spoke seriously to Maika who's making a serious face…

「I like Maika…I don't care about anything else」
「…You don't care about Maika's feelings?」
「Yeah…It doesn't change that I like Maika…!」

Maika shed tears…

「That's cruel…Onii-san」
「Yeah…it is」

I sucked Maika's tears…

「I'll never let you go…!」
「Cruel…too cruel…!」

Maika embraces me…!
I embraced Maika back…!

「…You see, my aunt in Shizuoka」

Maika whispered in my ears.

「My aunt told me…that men are smooth talkers so I must not believe their words. See through the actions of the other person…」

…I see.

I'm all talk since earlier.
I won't be trusted by Maika-chan with this…

「Onii-san's amazingly gentle. I understood that you really liked Maika…」

…Eh?

「Since when you carried Maika from outside…You took care of Maika really hard. You're diligent to a surprising extent…that you think about Maika before yourself. Even after coming in the bathroom… You washed Maika really carefully. You even washed Maika's foot didn't you?」

Maika looks into my eyes.

「…Yeah」
「You even cleaned the gaps of my toes. When Onii-san touched between the fingers…Maika shivered. Then, I thought…This one might not be a bad person」

…Maika

「Wash me once again」

Maika pushed out her bare foot to me…

「…Okay」

I put on soap this time and washed Maika's feet.
Between her toes…one by one, carefully.

「…What should I do? What should Maika do?」

Maika muttered.

「This feels good. It makes me shiver…!」
「Then, I'll wash you from now on」
「Un…please. Onii-san」

Maika said.

「Maika won't forgive Onii-san for the rest of her life. I'll hate you forever and ever. You're still okay with that?」
「Yeah…That's fine」

Maika looks at me.

「…Is it okay for Maika to be Onii-san's sex partner? Just like Katsuko-san」
「…Yeah」

Maika said.

「Got it…I'll become one」
「…You won't have sex with anyone but me you know」
「…That's fine. In exchange, wash Maika's feet forever」
「…Yeah」

I finished washing both her legs.
I wash away the bubbles with the shower.
Maika opened her arms wide.

「Onii-san…You want to wash Maika's front too don't you?」
「…Yeah」
「Then, I'll let you wash it」

I applied soap on Maika's breasts.
Her cute stomach and crotch too

「There…it still hurts a bit」
「You'll get used to it after a few more times」
「…How many more?」

How many was it with Yukino?

「Two or three? The latest would be a week, you'll get used to sex…」
「…Really?」
「I'll be careful so that it will feel good. I won't be violent anymore…」
「…That's a promise」
「Yeah, I promise」
「…Got it」

I kissed Maika again

「…You kissed me again」

Maika laughs.
…Cute
I kissed her again.

「You don't understand unless I move, do you? From now on, I'll kiss Maika when I think she's cute. Anytime anywhere…」
「…Got it, Onii-san」

I kissed Maika once again.

「Hey…Onii-san, wash my hair too. It's gotten crumpled because of the rain」
「…Okay fine」

I wet Maika's hair with the shower…
I applied shampoo.
Girls have a lot of hair.
Will this do?

「…Okay」

I put my fingers in between Maika's hair and wash it…
It's my first time shampooing a girl's hair.
It's somewhat amazing.
Maika's hair is so thin…

「…What's wrong?」

Maika asks me with her eyes closed.

「Err…Are you feeling itchy anywhere?」
「…What's that?」

Maika laughs.

「Eh…That's what barber-san says when putting on shampoo」
「I don't know. Maika never went barbers after all」
「Eh…Then, is your mother cutting your hair?!」

Maika laughed out from my answer.

「That's funny! Onii-san, you're so funny!」
「…But」
「Maika's going to a proper hair salon…I don't go to barbers!」

…I see.
This girl's an Ojou-san too.

「But…You must've gone when you were a child, to the barber shops」
「I don't…Maika's always gone to salons ever since she was small」

…Wow
I realized the economic disparity in such a place.
Of course, her uncle in Shizuoka is a Shirasaka too.
She even took piano lessons…
When I was in elementary school, if you talk about the child learning piano, it would be the daughter of the tax collector or the daughter of an owner of a yakiniku shop. [2]
Yeah…It's the rich's world.

I washed away the shampoo…
I rinsed off with conditioner…
I somehow finished washing Maika's hair.

「I'll ask Onii-san to take care of Maika's hair from now on too!」

Maika said laughingly.

「Yeah, got it」
「Eh, no way, I was just joking though?!」
「It's fine. I'll wash at least your hair」

Maika got red…

「Un. Then…I'll ask it of you」

After that, she looks at me.

「In exchange, Maika will be the one to wash Onii-san's hair…!」

Maika washed my head.
She also put conditioner.
After washing it…My muddy hair is now clean.

「…You shouldn't do such a strange hairstyle anymore. Onii-san」
「…Ah, yeah」

I didn't do that myself though

「Normal is better…Onii-san」

Maika smiled.
This face is too cute…

I kissed her again…

「You kissed me again! Onii-san, you really love kissing」
「…I like Maika」

Maika smiled.

The two of us soaked in the bathtub…
Kissed again and again…

「…Do you like Maika that much?」
「Yeah, I do」

When I said that…
Maika kissed me…?!

「…What's wrong?」

Maika laughed and said…

「Because…Onii-san's cute!」

We exchanged kisses in the bath for a while…

…Just like small birds in their spring of love.

---

1. Those who claims that there are more than two gender, read what our lord has declared; EN: facebook begs to differ~ ↩

2. EN: grilled meat restaurant: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Yakiniku ↩

94. In the bath with a middle school student.

「…Are you ready to get going?」

I ask Maika.
The two of us continue kissing while soaking in the bath.
It's already been more than five minutes.

「Just a little longer, I want to stay like this.」

Maika says as she continues to kiss me.

「Do you like kissing now?」

Maika giggles.

「I'm just kissing because I feel like it! Maika's given up and is just going with the flow!」

She says as she kisses me again

「Hey… Onii-san」

Her cute eyes turn round and look up at me like *KuriKuri*.

「…What's up?」
「Onii-san, how old are you?」

Maika asks with a curt smile.

「Sixteen. I just started high school this year. 」
「Eh, that's so young. Compared to Maika that's not much different!」

Yeah…

「That's the same age as my onee-chan at home. Onee-chan is also a high-school first year.」

Yes… I know that very well.

「Which school are you going to?」
「It's the one close to this mansion… About a 10-minute walk.」
「Eh..then that means it's the same school as my onee-chan.」

Ahh…
The matter regarding Yukino, it's better if I don't tell her yet.

「Maika's school is an all-girls school, right?」

I quickly change the subject.

「Yup. My school is strict… No one's allowed to have a boyfriend. There was once a girl who had a picture of her boyfriend in her cellphone.」
「…What happened?」
「There was…. another girl who told a teacher. A nasty girl who gossiped too much. The girl's cellphone got confiscated and they called in her mother. They found a picture of her kissing the boy inside the girl's cellphone and…」

Maika lets out a small sigh.

「The girl was forced to transfer to a public school. 『There is no need for vulgar students in our school!』 they said…」

Maika said imitating a teacher. Most likely, an old-lady teacher who's past her fifties. Giving off a kind of crazy feeling.

「The student-counselor, Ozone-sensei, is very meddlesome… She always tries to keep us in check!」
「Hee～」
「There are daily inspections…. If anyone gets caught bringing stuff like makeup it all gets confiscated. Even…」
「….Even what?」
「Even sweets」 1

I'm sitting here in a bath with a middle-school girl. It's just the two of us…. What the heck am I doing?
The two of us are naked….
Not to mention, this girl's uterus is bathed in my semen.

「Candy is allowed if you tell her something like 『My throat hurts.』, she won't take it. But gum is useless. It's absolutely no good. Ozone-sensei says 『Things such as gum fail at being food. Hmph! In the first place, if it's something you have to spit out, it can't even be called food!』

Umu～ That's quite an interesting perspective.

「Also, she gets very angry with chocolate. That's why Valentine's day is such a big deal. Ozone-sensei gets even stricter than usual checking belongings. We have to hide it in our lockers for three days beforehand."
「Valentine's day…. at an all-girls school?」
「For example, isn't it bad to not give any to your club seniors?」
「Even though you're both girls?」
「That doesn't matter…sweets are the lubricant of human relations」
「Ah, that's right.」
「Exactly. It's tough for everyone to be in an all-girls school. There are lots of girls who quickly get jealous, cause a commotion, and gossip about bad things behind each other's back. That's why you have to do your best not to make any enemies!」

「…Hee～」

「That's why it's bad if you don't hand out sweets in the clubs…. It's a given that you have to give Valentine's chocolates to the seniors who always take care of us」
「…that's quite the reason」

「I'm serious.」

Maika giggles again.

「What club is Maika in?」
「Maika's in the dance club」

Uwa～ as expected of an all-girls school

「…What kind of dance?」

Maika…winces her eyebrows

「Its a… a weird dance」
「… Weird dance?」
「You know… Maika at first thought it was something like jazz dance or modern dance. But after joining, I found out it was a weird dance….!」
「What kind of weird dance?」
「… 『Creative dance』 is what I would call it. It was senpai's idea and no one questions it even though no one likes it. Everyone just dances that unpleasant dance.」
「…Really?」
「During the school festival this year, we'll be dancing. It's unpleasant though. In our school, once you've joined, there's not much you can do. You can't leave.」
「…Hee～」
「During my first year, I wasn't sure whether to join the ballet club or not…. Ballet requires you to have a good figure but my breast and butt didn't develop. So I picked the dance club.」

Do girls really care that much about their looks?

「But its fine now. This summer the third-years will graduate, and it will become a place for Maika. With that it will change into the 『Jazz Dance Club』.」
「Is that so.」
「Yup…..but that's still a secret. I'll bring forth a great revolution!」

Maika gives off a mischievous smile.
It's very cute.
I kiss her again.

「Ahn～ I was still talking…..!」
「Cute… You're too cute.」
「It can't be helped…. Onii-san」

This time, Maika gives me a kiss.

「…Maika?」
「Because you were too cute …」

And… we kiss again.

「What should Maika do? If Ozone-sensei find's out about this situation. Maika will have to quit school.」

I stuck my tongue in Maika's mouth.
Maika accepts my tongue.
Our tongues…..entwine.

「…This also feels good!」

Sucking each other's tongue.

「…It's fine if Maika gets expelled.」
「That kind of thing is no good.」
「But let alone kissing, we've already had sex. Once it's been found out that I'm no longer a virgin, I'm definitely getting kicked out…!」
「When the time comes, I'll tell the teacher. That because I forcibly raped Maika…. because Maika is just a victim. That Maika is not at fault…!」
「If you do that, the police will arrest you…!」
「That's fine. If it means that Maika doesn't get expelled, I'll get arrested. I'll go to prison.」
「That kind of thing….will only trouble Maika.」

Once again, Maika sucks my lips.

「If you go to prison….. I will no longer be able to kiss Onii-san!」

…Maika!
I embrace Maika.

「When Onii-san holds me….. I like it.」
「Me too, I like holding Maika.」
「…Why?」
「Maika becomes all KyuKyu in my arms」

…This girl's entire life is being held in my arms.

「…Is it different than with the others?」

Maika looks up at me….with a slightly worried face.

「…Maika?」

Maika looks despondent and asked,

「Is Onii-san's sex partners just Katsuko-san, Nei-san, and Misuzu-san?」
「…No, there's a few more.」

…I'll speak honestly.

「As I thought… Onii-san is quite popular!」

No….That kind of thing is impossible.

「How many people are there in total?」

Let's see…
Katsuko-nee, Misuzu, Nagisa-san, Megumi…. Nei-san can't be counted since we haven't done it yet.
Yukino's is different
Yukino's isn't a sex partner.
That girl is difficult to put into words.

「…Four people. Including Maika, that makes five.」

Maika is surprised.

「Uwa~ That's quite a few!」
「Well…I've only just recently become acquainted with everyone. Truthfully, it was only until recently that I was still a doutei.」

That's right.
It was only a little while ago, I would never have imagined that I'd be in this situation.

「….What's a doutei?」

Ah…A second-year middle school girl wouldn't know yet.

「Doutei is what you would call a guy who hasn't had sex yet.」
「…Is it Chinese?」
「It's a real japanese word! It's in the dictionary too!」

「That so. I'll look it up tonight」

Maika replied with a serious face.

「Anyways… Not much time has passed since I started having sex.」
「That's a lie!」

Maika scrunched her eyebrows.

「It's not a lie…. It's the truth.」
「But….the time you did it wih Katsuko-san, you looked like you were quite used to it!」
「That's because…. Katsuko-nee is quite skilled.」

Maika reacted to my words.

「…You call Katsuko-san by Katsuko-nee?」
「Yeah.」
「…..Why?」
「Because Katsuko-nee told me 『Please call me this way.』 that's why…」

…That's right.
… Ever since the first time I had sex with Katsuko-nee that one night in the public toilets.
… Where Katsuko-nee told me to call her that way

「…How about Nei-san?」

Maika is staring at me.

「Regarding Nei-san, how do you call her?」

She's worried about such a thing….

「Nei-san is Nei-san. Misuzu is also Misuzu…!」

Maika's eyebrows twitch.

「Misuzu-san…?」

…Crap.
Maika was led to believe that today was the first day I met Misuzu…!

「The thing about Misuzu, in reality I knew her from before. Even though I say from before, I really met her for the first time in the afternoon of the day before yesterday.」
「The day before yesterday? Then that means you immediately became sex partners?」

…eeeeeh.
I'll just tell her everything.

「Misuzu isn't my sex partner….She's my pet.」
「…Pet?」

Maika has a surprised look on her face.

「Such a beautiful and elegant person is…..Onii-san's pet?」

…Ah.

「Well…. Katsuko-nee's best friend is a person called Nagisa-san. Originally Misuzu was a pet belonging to that Nagisa-san. Nagisa-san gave me Misuzu.」

Somehow…. It seems like the more I explain, the more hazy things get.

「This Nagisa-san person, did Onii-san have sex with her too?」
「Yeah… I did.」

Maika begins to pout.

「…Onii-san is quite the perverted person.」
「Yeah …I think so too」

…I'd crawl into a hole if I could.

「…What kind of person is Nagisa-san? Afterall, she's got to be a pretty person. Right?」
「Nagisa-san is the same age as Katsuko-nee and… She's a very

beautiful, bright, and gentle person.」
「…The same feelings as someone like Katsuko-san?」
「Katsuko-nee is a little bit different. Katsuko-nee is like a big sunflower. Always dashing and smiling. Just by looking at her, your mood will brighten.」

Yeah, just like a tall sunflower standing proudly. Shimmering in the light of the summer sun.

「Nagisa-san is like a flower garden of Rapeseeds. Giving off a feeling of warmth, comfort, and ease.」

Yeah, Nagisa-san like a spring flower garden spread out as far as the eye can see.

「…hmmmm」

It's a bit difficult to understand with just words.
I'm poor at trying to explain things to people.

「For now, We'll see」
「…Will it be okay meeting Maika?」
「Yeah… They'll surely be nice to Maika!」

I'm sure if its Nagisa-san…

「…Is it really okay?」
「It's neither good or bad. In regards to Maika, you're like my cute little sister.」

Maika misinterprets my words.

「I see, all the sex partners are sisters. Just like Katsuko-san said!」
「Ah… Yeah…」
「I can become close sisters with Katsuko-san and Nei-san, right?」
「That's right. Everyone will treat Maika gently!」
「… Uwaa! I'm so happy!」

Maika makes a big smile.
…That's a relief.
I, alone, raped Maika.

「Misuzu also」
「But … Misuzu-san isn't Onii-san's sex partner, right? She's a pet, right?」
「…well」
「How should Maika treat Onii-san's pet?」

Maika really does worry about things…

「Maika's friend, Tomomi-chan, has a puppy but whenever Maika goes to play at Tomomi-chan's house, it barks loudly. It barks going, Kyan!Kyan!, thinking Maika would take away Tomomi-chan. It was quite noisy."

…uh
Certainly, Misuzu is quite like a puppy.
…huh.
Somehow, I'm also getting worried.

「Onii-san just met Misuzu-san the day before yesterday, right?」
「Yeah. But we also met yesterday… You could say that, I have sex with Misuzu everyday…」

Or more like….Whenever she is with me, she'll immediately try to wring me dry.
That's… the kind of feeling I get.

「….You guys have sex every day?」
「Yeah… it's always once a day. Oh, Katsuko-nee also.」

I do it with Katsuko-nee once a day.

「… Katsuko's also?」
「…Yeah」
「Then….is it possible to do it with Maika everyday too?」

Maika pressed down on her tiny stomach.

「…Does your stomach hurt?」
「Just a bit, its tingling as if Onii-san is still inside.」
「If it hurts too much, let's visit the doctor.」
「It's not painful to that point….but」

… Sex still seems to be scary.
I embrace Maika.

「…Maika」
「What's the matter? Did you want to do it again?」

Maika is misunderstanding.
It seems　after all, the rape experience is still effecting her.

「…Sit down over here」

I lean against the wall of the bathtub.
I take a little step and lower myself.

「…Huh?」
「I'm just going to make sure you're not hurt.」
「…But」
「Believe in me.」
「…okay」

With the wall to her back, Maika sits on the edge.
Going in between Maika's legs.
I look at Maika's vagina in front of my eyes

「It's embarassing after all… Please dont look so much.」

Maika shyly twists her body.

「I won't know if I don't take a look.」

Grabbing her thighs, I spread them open widely.

「…Ahn!"」

Maika's secret place was slightly swollen.
Seems painful.
Her folds that should have been tightly closed were slightly open.
This was probably due to the sex being forced.

「…It hurts right?」

The words 『I'm sorry』 come to me but I swallow them.

「Yeah, it hurts.」

At the very least…
Even just a little bit, I want to make it feel pleasant.

「…I'll lick it」
「eh?!」

Maika's surprised.

「To sterilize it with my spit!」
「Sterilize?」
「…Yup」

Actually, I don't know if spit has any antibacterial effects.
Regardless, I want to lick the place I hurt.

「…Here I go」

My tongue reaches out to Maika.
First, I lick the insides of her thighs.

「…Iyan~ It tickles!」

The skin of the beautiful fourteen-year-old girl is smooth
…White and soft.
In that spot, I let my tongue roll.

「This really feels kinda perverted…!」

Maika mutters as she looks over me licking her crotch.

「It is perverted. Because I'm a perverted person.」

I respond towards Maika.

「Hey….actually…」

Her face turnes completely red.
Maika becomes aroused.

「Maika…is just a little bit perverted.」

My tongue crawls over her vagina.
It has a sour taste.
This is…. the taste of love nectar.
Maika's gradually letting it out.

「…Maika is getting wet.」
「Thats not true.」
「…Maika's love juice is delicious.」

Deliberately making licking and slurping sounds.

「No…don't say such things.」

The taste of love juice… varies between girls
It's different… from person to person.
It's better to stop sticking my tongue inside her vagina.
…It seems like it still hurts.
I, stretch out my tongue towards her clitoris.

「…Iyan!」

I lick.. the skin-covered clitoris.

「…Ahn!, Don't lick… Such a place….」

After all that licking… Maika's body loosens up.
The small clitoris peeked out from under the skin.
I went licking at full strength!

「… Fuwaa! Don't do it so intensely!」

Maika's body's trembling…!

「It's okay… Just leave everything to me…!!」

*Chupa*Chupa* Purposely making noises, I suck deeply on Maika's clitoris.

「….Amazing! I~It feels so good..!」

Maika grabbs my head with both hands…!
Looking down at me with a face showing that she's feeling it.

「…If Maika experiences such a thing…. Maika won't be able to have sex with another person!」

The tip of my tongue grinds against her clitoris!

「… Ahyiin!」

Maika's body bounces!

「I'll take care of everything. I won't allow another man to do perverted things.」

I continue to precisely stimulated it with my tongue…!
Licking her clitoris little by little….!

「….ahhhhhh~!…It feels good! From now on, Maika won't do it alone anymore. Onii-san, give it to Maika! Please give it to Maika everyday!」

Maika… grabbs tightly onto my hair!
Pressing me tightly against her crotch!
I…
More intensely, I stimulate Maika's clitoris.
Slowly but steadily, love nectar comes dripping out from her vagina!
…Maika's body is trembling! *purupuru*

「… Aahn! It feels good! This is addicting! Maika's turning into a naughty girl!"」

…Just a little bit more, she's almost there!

「… Ahnn~! Ahn~! Something… Is shining! White! It's turning white! … Ah~ … Ah~ … Ah~ … Ahn~! … Oni-sa~~~n!!! 」

Maika's body is trembles as she floats away.

「… Maika is becoming useless! Useless!!!」

Maika screams… while cumming…!
My head's tightly grasped with all her might…!
The too young and small body tightens and cramps up!

「…Ahhhhhh~, Nooooooooo~!」

Jorororo…!
…Warm water drenched my face!
Maika's peeing!

「…Nooo~! Noooo~! Avoid it Onii-san!」

Although Maika says that, her hands are firmly holding my head in place.
I can't… move my head while being held down against Maika's crotch.
And just like that…the golden shower hits my face directly…!
Maika's pee is beautifully shining and sparkling.

「…No, no, Iyaaan!」

Eventually… Maika lets everything out.
Strength leaves Maika's hands.
And just like that…We slide down… and sit in the bathtub.

「…Ha~, Ha~, Ha~」

Maika's still immersed in the afterglow of pleasure.
Then suddenly, hot water flies at my face!

「Wash your face, Baka!」
「…Ah, yeah.」

I splash my face with warm water.

「『Ah, yeah.』 My ass. Isn't it dirty?」

Maika's in high tension because of her embarrassment.

「It's Maika's right?… So its not dirty.」

My face turns red as I say that.

「…BAKA」

Then… She embraces me.

「… It felt good. Onii-san」
「It's fine. It's no good if it hurts too much. After all its going to become the memory of Maika's first time.」
「Yeah …, thank you.」

Maika… kisses me.

「What should I do now…?」

Maika says.

「Maika's body will become useless without Onii-san」

Her small breasts press against me.

「Maika… might have to drop out of school…!」

Maika…kisses me.
…I

「Onii-san….is getting hard again…!」

Another…erection.

「What do you want to do? Let it out in Maika again?」

Maika asks me.

「But… It hurts right?」

I'm worried about Maika's body.

「I'll endure it… After all, Maika is Onii-san's sex partner.」

…But.
In that instance…
She gallantly dashes into the bathroom…!

「…From here on, leave the rest to me!」

…She came.
…Misuzu.
Misuzu burst into the bathroom naked~!

「Sorry, Maika! I apologize about before!」

Misuzu cries out to Maika!

「This is the type of person Misuzu really is! A vulgar girl who cannot bare it if her amazing Danna-sama gets taken away.」
「… Misuzu-san?」

Maika'as stunned by Misuzu's excessively high tension.

「That's why…Please hand over that penis to Misuzu. Please! Please! Pretty Please!」

Misuzu already threw away both her dignity and her pride.

「…Umm」

Maika looks over towards my face…

「This is the real Misuzu. She's always with a loud voice, always with a smile, and always cries often. A lovely girl. She's my pet!」
「…Yes~! Misuzu is Danna-sama's faithful pet~!」

I stand up from the bathtub.
I sit down at the edge of the bath.
With my erect penis, pointing staight towards the sky. 2

「Misuzu, Suck…!」
「…Yes, Danna-sama!」

Misuzu happily crouches down in front of my crotch.
Nestling up close just like a real puppy.

「…Itadakimasu~!」

She swallows my penis.
Licking all over with her tongue.

「…How is everyone?」

When I ask, Misuzu replies.

「Katsuko-san is making lunch …」

…eh?

「Most likely, Danna-sama and the others would be hungry…. I tried to invite her saying 『Let's attack the bathroom together!』 … Katsuko-sama said 『Since I also have the ability to cook, I'll use that appeal instead』. But…Misuzu doesn't have any talent in sex.」

…uhh.
I think she has more than enough talent in sex.

「…Misuzu is cute even without being perverted.」
「Does Danna-sama hate having sex with Misuzu?!」

Misuzu looks up and stares at me.

「No… that's not the case.」
「Misuzu loves having sex with Danna-sama～! Misuzu can no longer live without Danna-sama～!」

…eh, Misuzu?!

「…Please don't throw Misuzu away!」

Misuzu says as she licks my penis.
I stroke Misuzu's face.

「…What's wrong?」

Misuzu asks…

「Misuzu is…. a little bit impatient!」

…eh?!

「Misuzu does not want Danna-sama to be taken away by a young and cute girl.」

Really this child…
Taking this cute girl into my hands
I… embrace Misuzu's body

「Don't worry. How can I ever forget about Misuzu? Since Misuzu is so cute. I love you..!」
「…Danna-samaaaa~!!」

Misuzu is clinging to me…!
…There's nothing to cry about.

「Misuzu-san is cute…!」

Maika says from inside the bathtub, with an astonished look on her face.

「Ahn, Danna-sama~~~! I'm called cute by a cute child!」
「There's no reason to cry! Because Misuzu is such a cute girl!」
「…Really?」

Misuzu… looks up to me with a crying face.
At that time… a voice comes out from the speakers.

「Hehehe… relax Mii-chan… Right now, I'll tell you something good!」

…It was Nei-san's voice.

「This is a recording from just an hour ago…!」

…recording?
Audio started playing from the speakers…!

「… By the way,Yo-chan what do you think of Mii-chan?」
「What?」
「Do you think she… is the best in the world?」

Ah…this is?!

「Misuzu is… the cutest in the world.」

…was what I had said.
I…
Nei-san, you recorded that!?

「Well then… it seems like Yo-chan believes that Mii-chan is the

number one cutest person in the world」

…Nei-san is really quite the mischievous child!

「…Danna-sama! I like you～! I love you～!!!」

Misuzu jumps at me..!

---

1. TL Note: Candy is not used here because the word okashi is specifically refers to sweets. Where as below Ame is use, hence candy ↩
2. EN: A drill ready to pierce the heavens! ↩

95. Naked Misuzu

「…Err, Uhm…Shouldn't you explain everything now…?」

Maika asks Misuzu
Misuzu separates her mouth from my penis and speaks…

「Can we leave it for later after sex?」

Maika…

「Hmm…I'd like it before if possible. That way, I can watch Onii-san and Misuzu-san have sex in peace…」

…Err
…What should I do?
There's a lot of things I have to explain.
Misuzu's intrusion is too timely…
Nei-san's announcement…
The secrets of this mansion in the first place…
What should I talk about then?
Or rather…How far am I allowed to tell Maika.

「Misuzu calls this one Danna-sama! Misuzu is this one's pet!」

Misuzu…you're explaining that one?

「Earlier, just as Danna-sama told Maika-san, Misuzu was owned by Nagisa-sama previously and was given to Danna-sama as a present. It was the day before yesterday. That's when Misuzu gave her virginity to Danna-sama!」

Misuzu answered immediately.

「…Three days ago[1]…You met him and gave your virginity immediately?」
「Yes, that's right!」
「…But, Misuzu-san felt good a while ago you know…?」

Maika asks Misuzu in wonder.

「…That's because Danna-sama loved me with all his might」

Misuzu turns red.

「…Misuzu also felt pain during her first time. But, it felt good on the second day. Right now, there's already no pain. Maika-san will get used to it immediately too!」

Misuzu answers…

「Misuzu also gave her virginity on her first time meeting Danna-sama. At that time, Nagisa-sama was the owner of Misuzu so, suddenly, I was ordered to have sex with Danna-sama. To be honest, it was really scary…I'm not good with men after all…」

Misuzu at that time…
It was just three days ago but it felt like something from a very long time ago…

「I'm quite similar to Maika-san. Misuzu's virginity loss was almost rape too…」

…Err.
…Sorry.

「But, Danna-sama was really gentle with Misuzu. He told Misuzu 『I like you』 …then loved me. That's why, Misuzu lost her virginity and gained love. I'm grateful to Danna-sama for such a wonderful first experience…」

That's…I
I just wanted to embrace Misuzu…

「Misuzu-san…Are you really a Kouzuki?」

Maika asks Misuzu with curious eyes.

「Yes. I didn't lie in my introduction a while ago. I'm Kouzuki Misuzu. My grandfather is Kouzuki Shigetaka. My father is serving in the Ministry of Education, Culture, Sports, Science and Technology. My mother came from the Ooya house. This uniform is definitely mine too. I didn't lie at all, I swear on the Virgin

Mary…!」

Misuzu answers Maika clearly…

「…Onii-san, do you know about the Kouzuki House?」

…Eh?

「No…I did't know about it at that time. Or rather…To be honest, I still don't completely understand it even now」

Yeah…Sorry though
Is it really a famous house…?

「…Danna-sama doesn't know anything about Misuzu's family. Not knowing anything…He just loved what he saw in Misuzu. Misuzu's really happy about that…!」

Misuzu looks at me.

「I'll say this before Maika-san would Misunderstand…Misuzu's Danna-sama isn't a frivolous person who'd just say that he loves any girl he sees. Rather, he has a very clumsy character…a person that won't say light complements to women」

…un.
I'm really no good.

「This person will never lie to someone he loves. Everything Danna-sama says is his real intent…he's serious from the bottom of his heart. When Danna-sama says 『I love you』 That's what he's really thinking with his heart and soul…!」

Maika nods at Misuzu.

「Yes…I somehow understood that…!」

Misuzu smiles at Maika.

「Once Danna-sama likes a girl…he'll never betray her. On the contrary, he'll accept her without rejecting anything. Misuzu's actually a bad girl so I purposely call Danna-sama late at night and

early in the morning… But, Danna-sama never shows an attitude of being annoyed. He always listens to Misuzu any time with a sincere attitude…!」

Eeeh…The pee call?
I'm being tested…?!
…Ah
Nei-san and Margo-san put me through a test before too…
…I see.
These people won't trust a human like me that easily…

「Maika also felt that! Earlier, Maika was talking about her school quite leisurely but…Onii-san's just listening the whole time. If it was Mama or Onee-chan, they'll just say 『Sure sure』 then throw responses based on the contents but…Onii-san's listening only while looking at Maika's eyes…!」

No…Well
I have to listen to Maika's story…

「He's that kind of person…He's a very wonderful person. Misuzu likes this one. I love him!」

Misuzu's slightly aroused.
Her eyes are moist.

「Misuzu half thought that it can't be helped because it's fate. I…To be honest…cast away my own life for these past few years. That's why…When I was told by Nagisa-sama to become Danna-sama's pet…Then that I have to give my virginity…! But…I lightly thought that I don't care if I have that kind of life. It can't be helped if it has come to this. Then I'll become his pet forever…!

…Misuzu.
…Is that so?
Her mind has given up in various ways…
She became my pet…

「But…That was only at first」

…Eh?

「Every time Misuzu talks to Danna-sama…or meets with Danna-sama…I'm coming to love Danna-sama more and more! Danna-sama never refuses Misuzu at any time. He's always accepting me. Whatever selfishness Misuzu says, all of it is taken seriously…! He's always directly accepting the indecent and shameful Misuzu! There's no one like him! He's the best one for me! I need this man…!」

…Misuzu looks down.

「Today, when I met Maika-san…in the first room in front of the terrace and in the second floor's studio, my attitude was cruel wasn't it…I'm sorry」

Misuzu bows towards Maika…

「…That's not true. Misuzu-san's very gentle…Adult-like, even elegant…!」

Maika responds…

「No…That's all a facade. Pretending to be an adult might look good…but it's just miserable…」

Misuzu looks up sorrowfully.

「…That is Misuzu's usual appearance. In school, and at home… Even when at social gatherings. That's how it feels to live as a 『Daughter of Kouzuki』 Misuzu acts conceited, pretending to be smart…a disgusting prudish attitude. Misuzu has an ugly heart…!」
2

…Misuzu.

「…What are you saying! That's not Misuzu's fault. You're very beautiful!」

I told Misuzu, but…
Misuzu's gloomy face doesn't change.

「…Thank you, Danna-sama. But, Misuzu doesn't like herself at those times. But…I have to live in my school and house acting like

that…!」

…Have to live?

「The students in our school are all Ojou-samas from respectable families. All of them are carefully selected relatives of the noble families. …You'd be ostracized if you show any weakness. At school, there are a lot of factions from each house. If you belong to a faction, you can enter the umbrella of protection from the influential person and live easily, but…Misuzu's a Kouzuki. I can't enter any other faction…」

So super Ojou-sama schools are dangerous…

「Misuzu's actually a lump of an inferiority complex」

Misuzu looks at me like a small girl.
She clings to me…

「In our school…Misuzu has a relative two years under her. The successor of the Kouzuki house…The daughter of Misuzu's grandpa's eldest son. She's Ruriko-san」 3

…Misuzu shows the depths of her heart.

「…I always lose against Ruriko-san. I'm no match against her at anything. Language, Piano, flower arrangement, and even dances… Ruriko-san is better. And she's two years younger…!」

That's Misuzu's complex.
This is the thorn in her heart she never reveals to anyone.

「Ruriko-san's a very adult-like child. She's been mature ever since we were young…she's beautiful. A much more beautiful girl than Misuzu. Also very good at everything. Perfect at anything and everything…! That's why, I have to be perfect just like her. As an older relative…!」

Misuzu's talking about the darkness in her heart…
…I

「But…If you pretend to be a 『Perfect child』 all the time, it makes

you feel a terrible burden. The stress builds up… You won't have any friends around of whom you can trust. That's obvious… Misuzu's always pretending by herself. Misuzu has act her part in the play… I. am an ugly duckling pretending to be a 『Perfect girl』」

Misuzu's hands are trembling…

「It has continued since childhood…It… hurts… my feelings gradually grew darker… Then, Grandfather became worried about me so…he sent me to Nagisa-sama…!」

…Nagisa-san.
So the meeting of Misuzu and Nagisa-san being the teacher of flower arrangements was no coincidence?!

「When Nagisa-sama saw me, she said this… 『You're going to play with Onee-san a lot!』… 『You can be crazy in front of me! I'll be crazy too!』 Then laughed…Thus, I became Nagisa-san's pet… Then, the weight in my heart was reduced. I can depend on Nagisa-san like a puppy…」

…Yeah. I get that.
Nagisa-san has tolerance like that…
Misuzu's grandfather was Nagisa-san's guest so…He knows that Nagisa-san has that power[4]
Noticing Misuzu's suffering…He entrusted her to Nagisa-san.

「Misuzu's really not a child who can call herself 『Misuzu』 That's something I thought that would just make me seem childish and vulgar…But, when I'm with Nagisa-sama, I becoming more of that kind of child… That's when I noticed. This is the real me. A vulgar childish girl. It became easier when I noticed it…」

As expected of Nagisa-san.
She peeled off the husk around Misuzu's heart little by little…

「Twice a week, on Tuesdays and Saturdays…I meet up with Nagisa-sama under the pretense of part time work… I'm able to endure the remaining five days if I have those two days. I was satisfied with that kind of daily life」

That's before Misuzu met me.
Acting as the 『Perfect Girl』 in her house and at school, getting spoiled like a puppy in front of Nagisa-san…
A girl with two faces.

「But…That was a misunderstanding. I understand it now. Why Nagisa-sama passed Misuzu to Danna-sama… 」

…Eh?

「My relationship with Nagisa-sama was just relaxation after all…I could never truly reveal my heart to Nagisa-sama. Nagisa-sama thought that I needed a much more fundamental change. That's why…Danna-sama…I… 」

…Me?

「…My meeting with Danna-sama three days ago was devastating! 」

Misuzu grips my arm.
…Then.
Misuzu transformed 5
A different face I've never seen before…!

「…Sorry, do you get it?! You have changed my life! I'll show everything about myself if it's you! The dirtiest part of my heart, the cunning one, the lewd one, I'll expose everything. I'll always be naked in front of you. I'll show everything from head to toe! I'll talk to you about everything I think of from the bottom of my heart!… I'm yours only! I don't have anyone but you! 」

Misuzu clings to me crying…!

「Because, I know that you'll never refuse me! I believe that you'll accept it no matter who I am! 」

…Misuzu.
A year older beauty.
The one I thought of as a puppy…has changed into an Onee-san.
Girls have many faces.
All of those face make me feel loved…

「I want to live forever with you! I'm fine being scolded by Grandfather or Father! I'm fine being thrown away by my family! I'm fine being thrown from the Kouzuki house! I can't live if I'm not with you!」

Misuzu kisses me.
I accept Misuzu's kiss in silence.
Misuzu released her lips and looks up at me.
Her tear filled eyes are shining.

「…What should I do?… What should I do? What should I do? I want to make you mine by any means! I love you!」

…Misuzu.
Misuzu's heart is pained for me.

「I'll do anything! I'll give birth to your child, as many as you want! I'll do everything! I'll devote my whole life to you! That's why…That's why…please be a man that's only mine! I want to monopolize you! By any means!!!」

…But
I can't choose only Misuzu.

「Sadly…we can't accept that…!」

There's a voice from the entrance of the bathroom.
That's, Yuzuki Minaho…My teacher.
Sensei comes into the bathroom naked…
She's not hiding the big scar on her stomach…!

「Misuzu's not the only one who needs Yoshida-kun. Katsuko and Nagisa too…the other girls need his existence too. They have the same reason you just said…!」

Sensei tells Misuzu.

「If Misuzu-san is Yoshida-kun's pet…then I'm the current owner of Yoshida-kun. I won't allow your selfishness…okay?…!」

Yuzuki-sensei's words are threatening…

「…But, I」

Misuzu lowers her head with a gloomy face.

「…Misuzu-san, do you really intend to confront your grandfather?」

Sensei smiles at Misuzu…

「…Eh?」

Misuzu's surprised.

「If you were serious…Then I'll talk to Kouzuki-sama too」

Misuzu made a face like she couldn't believe…!

「…Are you saying that you will cooperate?」

Sensei and Misuzu probe each other…

「…Yuzuki-sama, what's the merit for you?」
「To deepen the relationship between the 『Kuromori』 and the Kouzuki house…If Kouzuki-sama accepts and becomes our formal support, it would be a great help. It's a matter of celebrating…!」

Misuzu thought for a moment then answered.

「Understood…I'll leave it to Yuzuki-sama」
「For the time being, be satisfied that you can be alone with him. I won't allow you to monopolize him but, I'll prepare a time for Misuzu-san to be alone with him. Evenly with the other girls…If Misuzu-san behaves herself, I'll think about social status in the future…!」

Sensei smiles at Misuzu.

Err…Social position?

「…But, she's aiming at that too」

…W-What?

「Everyone's aiming at it…Katsuko and Nagisa too…」

Misuzu whispered to me…

「…What are you talking about?」

Misuzu looks at me.

「…It's the talk about who's going to be Danna-sama's bride!」

My bride?

「…It's not something urgent is it? Yoshida-kun's still young. You all just have to compete…Or could it be that you don't have the confidence to win the status of wife?」

Sensei asked Misuzu daringly…

「…I do! I will fight against everyone!」

Misuzu declares war with dazzling eyes!

「…Misuzu-san, everyone's fighting fairly 6 Don't try to take any strange plans…」

…Strange plans?…

「Your eyes become suspicious from time to time. You're plotting something aren't you?」

Misuzu looks at me.
Misuzu fidgets…

「I'm sorry…I planned to kidnap Danna-sama!」

…Kidnap?
…Me?

「There's a villa in Nagano…I intended to confine Danna-sama there…bind him in the bed, then have sex until I got pregnant. Misuzu intends to take care of everything like Danna-sama's meal, bath, or pee!」

…Eeeeeeeeeeeh!!

「For these past few days, I've been coming to this mansion…I keep looking for Katsuko-sama and Margo-san's opportunity, and for a way to take Danna-sama out…!」

I-I-I-I-Is that so?!

「As Yoshida-kun's owner…I can't allow such a thing. Isn't going to Nagano just double suicide?」

S-Sensei…Double Suicide?

「…We won't die. We'll live. I'll make Danna-sama happy!」

Misuzu tells Sensei…

「If ever you kidnapped Yoshida-kun and arrived at Nagano…what would you do after that? If your grandfather and 『Kuromori』 searched seriously we can find you immediately. You'll get caught within two days. Then, Misuzu-san would be separated from Yoshida-kun…and you'll never meet each other for the rest of your lives」

Sensei threatens Misuzu.

「…That's!」
「…Because, won't this act be putting your grandfather to shame? Misuzu-san had a fiance that your grandfather had decided after all…」

Sensei laughs.

「…Yes. That's right. I think that will happen」
「I won't go as far as to say that your grandfather would kill Yoshida-kun but…he'll keep him away from you. You might be made to study abroad. Or maybe your marriage with your fiance would be hastened…」

Sensei's words are putting weight on Misuzu.

「That's why…Misuzu-san don't do anything absurd alone. We're

not Misuzu-san's enemies so believe in your sisters」
「…My sisters?」

Misuzu looks surprised.

「All of the girls who need Yoshida-kun are sisters…Think like that. It's fine to fight and compete but…there's no need for hate. After all, Yoshida-kun loves all girls equally…!」[7]

After Sensei's speech…a voice from the speakers continues.

『…That's right, Mii-chan! We're sisters! We help and cooperate with each other! I like Mii-chan! But, Yo-chan is for everyone!』

…Nei-san!

『…Katsuko thinks so too. Think of us as your sisters and consult us about anything. Nagisa thinks the same! Everyone likes Misuzu-sama! By the way…we won't let you monopolize him』

…Katsuko-nee.
Misuzu…answers everyone while crying.

「Yes…Thank you very much!」

I look at Sensei.

「…Sensei. Do you intend to make Misuzu a member of the 『toys』?」

Sensei shook her head slowly.

「I won't…Misuzu-san's your pet. You have to take care of her. You have to discipline her!」

Sensei laughs.

「Yes…Misuzu is a very bad girl. Please make me everyone's sister. Also…Danna-sama」

Misuzu sits straight on the bathroom floor and bows towards me.

「I've been extremely rude! I'm sorry!」

Misuzu dogezas in front of me.

「…Raise your head Misuzu」

I command Misuzu.

「…No, Misuzu has done something not suitable as a pet…please punish me!」
「…That's okay now! Raise your head!」

I shout at Misuzu.

「…Eh?!」

Misuzu raises her head in surprise.
I squat down ahead of Misuzu and embrace her delicate body.

「It's fine! It's fine for Misuzu to be selfish, absurd, and vulgar! You're fine being a pet that can't be disciplined!」
「…Danna-sama?」
「Depend on me more! Trouble me! I'm fine no matter how many times you bother me!」

Misuzu's perplexed at my words.

「That's bad」
「It's fine! It's natural for me to take care of Misuzu! We'll be together forever so that's how it is!」

That's what I think.
Loving someone means that you have to be prepared to accept everything no matter how much they trouble you.

「…Danna-samaaaaaaa!!」

Misuzu clings to me crying.

「Seriously. Misuzu's so helpless!」
「I'm sorry…I'm sorry…Danna-samaaaaa!」

Misuzu asks a kiss from me.
Of course I'll kiss her.

No matter how many times…

「…What are your impressions?」

Yuzuki-sensei asks Maika.

「Uhm…I'm surprised. I feel like I'm watching a movie…!」

Maika answers.

「My…You belong there too. This dramatic movie will happen to you too from now on…!」

Sensei smiles at Maika.
…Sensei?

「I'm Yuzuki Minaho. Nice to meet you」
「…Shirasaka Maika」

While I'm embracing Misuzu…the two of them exchange mysterious greetings.

「There's a lot of things that need to be explained to you. You also want to know it don't you?」
「…Yes」

Maika looks at Sensei's face.

「But, don't worry…Whatever happens, Yoshida-kun will protect Maika-san. You do understand that he likes you, don't you?」

…Err
You're saying that while I'm embracing another girl…

「You don't believe him…?」
「I do believe Onii-san. Right now, Misuzu is faithful to Onii-san…」
「He's faithful to Maika-san…This boy is equally faithful to the girls he likes. He'll never discriminate. Isn't that right, Katsuko?」

Sensei speaks to the ceiling…

『Yes, Katsuko is also loved the same! This boy will never betray women's feelings!』

Katsuko-nee's voice is heard in the bathroom…

「…Yoshida-kun, Maika-san's your 『woman』 already isn't she?…!」

Sensei asks me
…I

「Misuzu…Step back for a moment.」

Misuzu nods

「Yes…Danna-sama」

I come before Maika.

「…Maika.」

Maika looks at me with a blank face.

「What is it, Onii-san…?」

I kneel in front of Maika and hold her hand.
I kiss the back of Maika's hand…

「I will never betray Maika from now on. I'm Maika's ally whenever. Whatever happens…I will protect Maika. I will protect you…!」

…Perhaps, I'm thinking that if Maika will lose her father.
Shirasaka house will collapse…
This can no longer stop.

「Onii-san…what do you mean by that?」

Maika looks at me.

「…I will explain from hereon」

Sensei told Maika…

「But, I would like you to remember. Yoshida-kun will never abandon Maika-san. And, as far as Yoshida-kun is concerned, he's Maika-san's ally…The sisters who love Yoshida-kun…Katsuko, Nei, and Misuzu will be your allies too… 」

Misuzu looks at Maika.

「Yes…Maika-san's my sister. I'll treasure you like my little sister…! 」
「…Misuzu-san? 」

Sensei told the surprised Maika.

「I'm a woman who has a grudge against your father, Shirasaka Sousuke…I'm living just by the thought of revenge on your father…! 」

---

1. Today's April 30, Misuzu lost her virginity in 28th, Maika's counting today as well ↩
2. EN: fixed it so Misuzu speaks in third person when referring to herself casually (yoshida mode), in first person when referring to herself formally (ojou-sama mode), and in first person when referring to her own thoughts (mental thoughts) ↩
3. EN: I'm assuming she's speaking in the "royal we" when referring to her school on the behalf of being a Kouzuki ↩
4. Oh boy you don't know what Nagisa can do ↩
5. No, this is not your magical girl anime. She may be naked but she's not going to change into magical girl costume anytime soon ↩
6. Fuck that, **** won't fight fairly! ↩
7. EN: Love Communism? ↩

96. Gentle Liars.

「…Maika's Papa did something bad?」

Maika asks Yuzuki-sensei anxiously.
Sensei began talking calmly.

「…When I was 12, I was raped by your father. It was before you were born…!」

Sensei's eyes are serious…

「…Eh?」

Maika's surprised.

「After that…I had horrible experiences with your father. I was made to sell myself…you know prostitution don't you?」
「…I do」
「I was raped multiple times by your father's friend. For years and more」

Sensei…looks at Maika's eyes as she talk.
Maika's listening to Sensei seriously.

「Then, I got pregnant…I was 16 at that time…!」

Maika's eyes have tears collecting.

「But…Your father still made me do prostitution while I was pregnant…then my stomach was made to no longer be able to bear a child. My body has become like this…!」

Sensei shows the scar on her abdomen to Maika…
A painful to look at wound…hollows out from the abdomen to her genital.

「It's cruel isn't it? It's ugly isn't it?…My body can no longer have a child. I don't have a womb. Far from that, I can't have sex with a man. That's what happened to my body…touch it」

Maika spoke to Sensei.

「…But」
「I want you to touch it…I want you to confirm that it's a real wound with your fingers…!」

…Maika.
Is unmoving, stiff.
I hold Maika's hand.

「…Let's touch it together」
「…Onii-san」

Maika looks at me.

「If Maika doesn't touch it…I would feel sorry for Sensei.」
「…Why?」

Maika asks me.

「Yuzuki-sensei wants Maika to learn the truth…She's showing the wound she never wants to show anyone」

Sensei became naked for that sake.
…Maika prepares herself.

「Onii-san…touch it together with Maika」
「Yeah…I'm here with you」

Putting my hand on top of Maika…we reached out to Sensei's stomach.

「…I'm touching it」
「…Go on」

Maika and I touched Sensei's stomach at the same time.
Yuzuki-sensei's stomach is cold.
We trace the swell of the wound…
…Yeah
…It's definitely a genuine wound.

「…What do you think? It's not fake isn't it? It's a true scar」

「…Yes, it is」

Maika answered.

「…Maika's Papa did something horrible to Yuzuki-san didn't he?」

Tears spilled from Maika's eye sockets…
Sensei confesses more of her severe past……

「…It's not just me…I have a little sister named Naomi…Maika's father raped Naomi too. Then she died…!」
「…That's!」

Maika's eyes opened wide…!

「My little sister was 13 years old…and yet, she was raped, made to sell herself, and died. She didn't even have a first love!」

Sensei said while biting her anger.

「That's why…I'll never forgive him. I promised to make Shirasaka Sousuke fall into hell…That is why I became the devil…!」

Maika cried out right away…!
Tears flowed like a waterfall…!

「…Maika…it's okay…I'm with you」

I embraced Maika tightly!

「…Misuzu is here too! I'm here!」

Misuzu pats Maika's back gently.
Maika calms down for a bit.
Misuzu brings over a towel.
Then, she wipes Maika's face.

「…Maika-san, do you believe what I just said right now?」

When Maika finally stops crying…Sensei asks her.

「…I do」

Maika answered.

「My uncle in Shizuoka told Maika before… 『Maika's father might do something horrible soon』 and 『He's doing bad things in the dark』 …!」

…Maika

「It was a famous saying in the family that my Papa is a bad person. He's working at the advertising agency but…He has Yakuza friends…they said!」

Maika trembles bit by bit.

「That's why…Maika thought that Papa might be caught by the police someday…since I was a child…!」

Maika's makes a pained face…
It seems that she's worrying about her father all this time.

Shirasaka Sousuke…
I don't know what kind of person he is though…
A parent who lets their own daughter have such a look is the worst…!
It's absolutely unforgivable…!

「…12 years since my little sister was killed, I've been living with the thought of revenge against Shirasaka Sousuke」

Sensei continues to speak…

「This mansion is my house… Of course, Katsuko is living in here too but, Margo and Nei are residents of this mansion too…」

…Sensei, do you intend to tell Maika about everything?
About 『Kuromori』?
Even about Katsuko-san being a prostitute…

「Katsuko and Margo are my friends. They came here to help with my revenge…!」

…Eh, Sensei?

Sensei's truth has 『Lies』 mixed in it

「Yoshida-kun's called me Sensei earlier didn't he? I'm a high school teacher. Nei and Yoshida-kun are my students. I used these two students from school for my revenge…!」

…Sensei recites a story unlike the truth.
So that Maika won't learn Katsuko's past…!
It must be because she's thinking not to destroy Katsuko-nee's image in Maika…!

『…I'm not being used! I became Sensei's ally by my own will! Aren't you the same, Yo-chan?』

Nei-san's voice is heard from the speakers again.

「Uhm…I've been curious from a while ago but this house?」

Maika throws a frank question…

「Oh…This mansion was originally a senior citizen's home for rich old men and women. I bought this senior house when it became unpopulated. This has lot of room so it's convenient living together. It's near the school too…」

Sensei piles up her lies smoothly…

「Since it's an old senior citizen's house, there are surveillance cameras remaining. Look, it's dangerous if they get injured isn't it? There are those who wander at midnight too. It's also a necessity in crime prevention. Even the bath has some cameras…」

…Amazing.
I can't do this kind of play.

「It's obvious for senior citizen's home to have announcement system too isn't it? It would be trouble if there's a fire after all」
「…Is that so?」

Maika believes it quickly.
Yeah…Of course.
Yuzuki-sensei's acting at an academy award winning level towards

this 14 year old girl…

「Since they were worried about Maika-san…Katsuko and Nei had been watching the bathroom from the old caretaker room…I'm the same」

…That's how it has become.

「Ah, Misuzu's watching in the caretaker room too…!」

Misuzu matches up…!
I…
Since I'm dumb, I just have to be silent.
Nothing will be exposed if I just stay silent.

「…Katsuko-san, Nei-san, and Misuzu-san know it too? That Maika was raped by Onii-san…」

Maika's face distorts in sorrow…!
…Shit
That problem surfaced!!!!

「To be clear…I ordered Katsuko and Nei to make contact with Maika-san. My purpose was to lure you into this mansion…!」

…S-Sensei, you don't have to be clear about that!

「…So your objective was to have Maika raped…!」

…As revenge for Shirasaka Sousuke.

「That's right…My aim was to have Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter be raped just like how I was raped」

…Yuzuki-sensei!!

「…Everyone's been fooling Maika, haven't they?」

Maika's face gets gloomy instantly.
…Shit
…What should I do?!
…What should I do?!

…What should I do?!

「…At first. We had such plans…」

Sensei calmly answered.

「Halfway through though…our plans changed…!」

Maika raises her face in surprise.

「After coming in contact with Maika-san and knowing what kind person you are…Katsuko, Nei, and Margo came to like you. 『We can't do horrible things with her』, 『Rather, I want Maika-san as an ally』 is what everyone said…!」

Sensei continues her 『Lie』…!

「 Especially Yoshida-kun…He fell in love at first sight when he saw your photographs. He's grown fond of you…!」

Maika looks at me with a surprised face.

「There's no need to hide it this late in the game so I'll say everything…Our first plan was to have Maika-san raped by an adult man. Just like when I was raped by Maika-san's father…」

Sensei stabs Maika's heart strongly on purpose.

「But…Yoshida-kun said 『That's so pitiful. Please, stop it』 and begged in front of me. Of course I refused. Because this is the revenge I've been living for 12 years. That's why, I said…!」

Sensei smiled.

「 『Then…How about Yoshida-kun rape Maika-san instead?』…! I'm satisfied as long as I can slap the fact that Maika-san was raped to Shirasaka Sousuke. Yoshida-kun's much more gentle than a strange old man. Then…Yoshida-kun cried…and said…!」

…Eh?
What did I say?

「『I will rape Maika-san myself. In exchange, I'll take good care of Maika-san for the rest of my life. I'll definitely make Maika-san happy…』」

Did I say something that big?

「He's rubbing his forehead in the floor as he begs. He's crying all out…Yoshida-kun really liked you」

Sensei's 『Lies』 seeps into Maika's heart…

「…Onii-san」

Maika looks at me.
I thought that it would be bad if I say something.
That's why I kiss her.
I kiss Maika's lips again and again.
…Love
I love this small girl from the bottom of my heart[1]
These feelings are true…!

「When he was raping Maika-san…Yoshida-kun shouted some incomprehensible things like 『I'll make you mine』 and 『You're my woman』 didn't he?」
「…Yes. Onii-san said that」

Sensei smiled at Maika…

「He was serious about that. This boy. Yoshida-kun really wants Maika-san that much…」
「…Why?」

Maika asks me.

「That's obvious…It's because Maika-san's cute!」

Misuzu shouted before I could answer…!

「Misuzu had sex with Danna-sama multiple times but…It's always Misuzu asking from Danna-sama! Danna-sama never had sex with Misuzu where he's the one attacking! That's why, to be honest, it feels frustrating! I'm becoming impatient!」

Misuzu's high tension surprised Maika.

「Why?」
「Isn't that obvious?…It's because Maika-san might steal Danna-sama away! Maika-san's the first one Danna-sama approaching in sex!」

Misuzu…Nice follow up.
Or rather…Half of it might be her true feelings.

「But…I'm not that cute. Isn't Misuzu-san much more adult-like… and beautiful?」

This time, I'm the one who answers Maika.

「I want Maika! I think Maika's cute! I want to kiss Maika! I want to have sex with Maika! I want to make Maika mine!」

Words I can't comprehend fly out of my mouth…!

「…Really?」

I kiss her instead of answering…
I insert my tongue in Maika's mouth…
I lick inside Maika's lips…
I embrace Maika…!

「…Geez, Onii-san! Get away for a moment!」

Maika says in a slightly angry tone…so I part with her.

「Got it! I can't understand what Onii-san is saying as always…!」

Maika's eyes look at my crotch…
I'm intensely erect.

「…This got big because of Maika, didn't it?」

I answer.

「Yeah…I want to embrace Maika so much that it got erect!」
「…Maika's body has small breasts and buttocks…I'm boring」

「It's not true, I want to do it with Maika…!」

I say that as I look straight at Maika's face.
…Maika looks at me.

「…Do you really like Maika?」
「…Yeah, I do!」
「Got it…I'll believe Onii-san's penis」

Maika responds.

「…Maika!」

I embrace Maika again!
I Lick her nape…!

「…Aaaahn! Don't lick that place!」

Maika raises an adorable voice…!

「Geez, Danna-sama! Misuzu wants it too! Please lick Misuzu!」

Misuzu pleads.
Maika looks at me…

「Please give it to Misuzu-san too…Misuzu-san's Maika's onee-san after all!」

She said with a smile.

「…Misuzu come!」
「Okaaay!」

Misuzu jumps at me like a puppy.
I make my tongue crawl on her nape.

「…ahaaan, it tickles! Danna-sama I love you!」

I exchange kisses with Misuzu…

「…Are you guys done?」

Yuzuki-sensei opens her mouth.

She's smiling but…it's scary 2

「Ah…Sorry, Sensei!」

Maika looks at me.

「So it's really Onii-san's teacher?」
「Yeah. Yuzuki-sensei's our homeroom teacher」

Until Golden Week ends that is…!

「…Let's go back to our topic. Maika-san」
「…Yes」

Sensei's quiet voice tightens the atmosphere of the place.

「Your father is in Australia isn't he?」
「Yes…He'll come back soon though」
「That business trip is my plot. All of my preparations will end before Shirasaka Sousuke returns home」
「…What will happen to Papa?」
「Worry about yourself more than your father」

Sensei told Maika…

「Shirasaka Sousuke will surely be fired. I will be reporting all of the crimes of Shirasaka Sousuke to the bigshots in your father's company. Do you know about punishment dismissal? It means completely firing the person if he does something wrong」
「…Yes」
「I think that Shirasaka house will be banishing your father too. You do know that there will be no relatives to help you, don't you?」
「…I think it will be. I can no longer meet my uncle in Shizouka too…!」
「After that…Your father has debt with the Yakuza. Up until now, he's a member of Shirasaka house and they're waiting for repayment since he's working in a big company but…The Yakuza will come to collect immediately if he loses his support. Your family will be sold. No, even if all of your father's assets are taken…there will still be a debt remaining」

Maika's body is trembling…
I embrace it tightly.

「…Is Papa finished?」
「Yes…please give it up. By the time he went to Australia, I've already finished all the preparations…」

Sensei coldly sentences Shirasaka Sousuke…

「…Is that so?」
「He's in a place where there's no phone signal for two or three days…Katsuko, where is Shirasaka Sousuke right now?」

Sensei asks Katsuko-nee:…

『He's in the middle of the desert right now. Yesterday, all of his baggage and passports were stolen and he was called and helped out by a white man when he was troubled, however the place that white man brought him is a hard gay special motel, Shirasaka went until morning having men aim at his ass』

Katsuko-nee announces.

「My…Was his ass violated?」
『No…He was forgiven by just giving fellatio to ten people. His buttocks is the next opportunity』
「That's regrettable…What's today's schedule?」
『Today, he will stay in the temple of a new Indian religion where there are only 40 year old lesbians. Four old ladies will be preaching to him thoroughly about the splendor of Ganesha until morning. He's not going to sleep』
「…My, that's troublesome too. As usual, is the aborigine with a spear still chasing him?」
『…He's completely marked!』

Sensei laughs.
It seems that Shirasaka Sousuke's hell travel in Australia continues…

「…Papa」

Maika mutters.

「Then…What will you do, Maika-san? Your house will be lost soon」

Maika has a dark face.

「Maika…has to stop going to her school」
「That's not all…Maika-san will lose her guardian in the place she's living too. Your father's a criminal…what will you do after this?」

Maika's frightened.
I must help her.
I have to help her at all cost.

…I
Speak to sensei

「I'll live together with Maika…!」

Maika looks at me in surprise.

「I'll leave school. I'll start working. If I work hard…I think I can somehow deal with Maika's life…!」

…Yeah
…I'm sure I can

「…Onii-san, why?」

Maika asks me.

「Because I like Maika. Isn't that how love is?」

I don't have any hesitation.

「Maika…I was abandoned by my parents」

I told Maika the truth.

「That's why…I'll never abandon Maika. I'll make Maika happy whatever happens. I have decided that so Maika doesn't need to worry」
「…Onii-san」

Maika clings to me.
I gently caress Maika's back.
Misuzu's looking at me.

「Then Misuzu will live together too!」

…Misuzu?

「I won't let Maika-san monopolize Danna-sama!」

…Err
Misuzu…are you listening?

「Misuzu-san…it's okay…that won't happen」

Sensei laughs.

「By the way, Maika-san…」
「…Yes?」
「Maika-san…Do you like your mother?」

Sensei looks into Maika's eyes…

「…Yes, I do. Mama's not always in the house but she always makes meals when she's there…and she's kind to Maika」
「You do know that your mother's committing adultery, don't you?」

…That means?!

「I know…Its the manager, Takarabe-san…!」

…Maika.

「Maika's Mama and Papa are just a couple who got married because of family circumstances. I know that Papa doesn't love Mama all this time. They've been sleeping in different bedrooms for years already. We have that kind of family so I thought that Papa and Mama are having affairs」

Maika's too clever.
On top of that…There's the gentleness thinking about other people's

feelings too…
That's why Maika has accepted the selfish way of life of her parents as 『Something that can't be helped』…

「I want to meet your mother. If possible, your grandfather too. Ichikawa-san's your mother's father isn't he?」
「…Yes」
「I think that your mother should prepare a divorce before Shirasaka Sousuke loses power. She's a cooking adviser and this incident will be troubling Ichikawa's house, don't you think?」
「…Yes」

Maika answers calmly.

「Perhaps…You and your Onee-san will be taken by Ichikawa house.」

…Is that so?
I feel a bit relieved.
Maika still has a place to go back to.

「Understood…Maika will call Grandfather. If I tell Mama about this, I think that Mama will not believe it. I think that Grandfather should be the one telling Mama」
「Thank you…I'll ask that of you then」

Sensei thanked Maika.

「Uhm…Yuzuki-san」

Maika speaks to Sensei.

「…What?」
「Is Yuzuki-san's revenge Maika only?」

…Maika?

「Could it be that Onee-chan too?」

If there was a plan to rape her…It's normal to think that her elder sister will be the same.
Maika's a clever girl.

「…I can't answer that. My revenge is still in progress」

Sensei answered.

「If possible…please pardon Onee-chan. Onee-chan's having her first boyfriend now, she's happy…! Please don't let her experience this cruelty!」

Still…Maika's a child.
She's thinking that she was raped first…
She's thinking that Yukino's unusual events these past few days are because of her first experience with Endou…
That prejudice has already been engraved so it won't overturn easily…

「…I'm saying that I can't answer you didn't I?!」

Sensei tells Maika in a slightly harder tone.

「Maika…Maika will do anything, so please don't do anything to Onee-chan!」

Sensei then answered Maika who lowers her head.

「That's no good…Maika-san, you're already Yoshida-kun's 『Woman』 I won't do anything cruel to Maika-san anymore…!」

…Sensei.

「Yoshida-kun…Thank you for helping me with my revenge until now. But, that's enough. You have to be happy with Maika-san and Misuzu-san. We'll take care of everything from here…!」

Sensei says.
Is she saying that she's going to free me from being a 『Toy』 for Maika and Misuzu's sake?!

「…Sensei, even if that's a joke, please stop that」

I told Sensei.

「…Yoshida-kun」

「I treasure maika. I also treasure Misuzu. Everyone in 『Kuromori』 is important to me. Also…I think of Yuzuki-sensei as important」

Sensei looks down.

「…Are you sure?」
「I will be with you until the end」

I look at Maika.

「Maika…You're my 『woman』 aren't you?」

Maika looks at me.

「…Yes. Maika is Onii-san's 『Woman』」
「Then…follow me without asking why…!」

I speak with strong eyes.

「Don't ask about the revenge anymore…I'll make Maika happy. I'll definitely make you happy…!」

Maika…

「…Got it. Maika won't ask anymore. I'll do anything Onii-san asks me…!」

Maika replies.

---

1. Police!!!! ↩
2. EN: Picture an oni mask floating behind her ↩

97. Rivals / Misuzu and Maika.

「…That's all I have to say for now」

Sensei says and stands up…

「We're in the bathroom but my body feels cold since I was out the whole time…!」[1]

Sensei says so and draws hot water…
She stands on her knees and pours it on her shoulders.
She turns her back to us…
Sensei's white back…
I can see her backbone clearly.
The body of an adult woman…
Sensei's very thin but her naked back is sexy I think.

「…Sensei's back is beautiful」

I say my impressions…

「Eh?…It's my first time being told that」

Sensei answers laughingly.

「Even for me, it's my first time hearing that」

As expected…Misuzu cuts in.

「D-Danna-sama! Please take a look at Misuzu's back!」

She turns her naked back towards me.
Yeah…Misuzu's delicate back is cute.
Or rather…Women's backs are wonderful at whatever age.
Misuzu's back shows a line that's completely becoming an adult.
…A high school girl's back.

「Maika, show me your back…!」
「Yes…Onii-san!」

Maika's back has the silhouette of one whose in the middle of being a child, almost an adult.
She's a middle school student…a 14 year old girl.

「Both of you are cute…Your backs are very beautiful!」

Maika smiles from what I said.

「Thank you, Onii-san!」

Misuzu…

「Is that true? Is Misuzu's back arousing…?!」

…Err

「…Why is Misuzu fast to think about lewds?」

Misuzu's face turns bright red from my question.

「Because…Misuzu can't serve Danna-sama apart from sex…!」

…Misuzu

「When I'm having sex with Danna-sama…That's when I feel alive the most. Misuzu realizes that she's born as a woman for this…!」

Misuzu's depending on me for sex.
But…That might just be escapism…
Is it okay for this to continue?

「…Yoshida-kun」

Sensei who's soaking in the bathtub calls out to me.

「Yes?」

When I turn towards her.

「…Women need that kind of time too. Be kind with Misuzu now」

Sensei seems to have foreseen all of it.
If she says that after seeing through it…

I should let Misuzu do as she pleases I guess.

「Misuzu…Come here」
「Yes…Danna-sama!」

I kiss Misuzu repeatedly.

「Uwa…Amazing!」

Maika calls out to us.

「Maika, come here too…Let's kiss」
「Un…Onii-san」

The three of us kiss each other…

「Danna-sama…you got energetic again! What should we do? Want to cum inside Misuzu?」

Misuzu says as she looks at my penis.
Seriously…If Misuzu's a puppy, she would be waving her tail vigorously.
I imagined that appearance.

「But…This grew big because of Maika…」

I say that and look at Maika.
Maika says that she'd believe my penis earlier.
That's why…I must entrust this erection to Maika.

「…But, I」

Maika touches her crotch…
It must still be in pain.
The fear from being raped too…
Maika's scared of sex…!

「…Sadly, it's about time we get out of the bath. Leave the sex for later」

Sensei tells us.
Then she gets out of the bathtub.

「Katsuko's making lunch…! You must all be hungry」

She says gently.

「…Okay, got it」

Misuzu seems to be dissatisfied by my answer however.

「Eeeh, Misuzu wants to do it though…」

Sensei speaks to Misuzu with a cold tone.

「My…Misuzu, you don't want to do it on top of a bed?」
「…Yes?」

Misuzu's expression stiffens.

「If you want to have sex with Yoshida-kun right now, then go on. If you do?…Well, that would mean that Misuzu-san's turn for today will end. You're going to observe Yoshida-kun making love with other girls on top of a bed with your panties on…!」

Misuzu surrenders from the mean words of the teacher.

「…I understand. I'll give up for now. Misuzu also wants to be loved on top of the bed…!」

Misuzu…That's not something to cry about.

「Uhm…Yuzuki-san?」

Maika asks Sensei.

「What is it, Maika-san…?」
「Uhm…Maika heard it from her friend but…they said that once men's penis grows big, it won't go smaller until it lets that out」

Is that something middle school girls should be talking about…?!
No…Maika's in an all girl's school.
It might just be young women with plenty of superficial knowledge about sex.
It's only wrong sexual knowledge.

「My, you know it well…Maika-san!」

Sensei shows an exaggerated surprise.

「That's right…When men's penis grow big, the semen collects and it becomes painful…」

You're teaching lies to this middle school girl again.

「Then…Doesn't Onii-san need to let it out?」

Maika looks worried.

「It's fine to endure it for at least an hour…Isn't that right, Yoshida-kun?」

Sensei turns to me…!

「…Ah…Yes. I'll endure it!」

Yeah…I have to endure it.
We're going to have lunch after this…

「But…His stomach would become stiff and it will become slightly painful. That's why…Maika-san, you have to make him ejaculate after the meal is over…!」

Sensei tells Maika…

「Yes…Understood!」

Maika answered with a serious face.

「Uhm…Misuzu wants to do it too」 2

Misuzu mutters in a soft voice.

「Maika-san…Misuzu-san wants to do it together it seems. Is that okay?」

Maika responds…

「Yes. Maika still doesn't know a lot about lewd stuff so…Misuzu-

san, please teach Maika, please!」

Maika bows to Misuzu.

「…That's how it is, are you okay with that Misuzu-san?」

Sensei approaches Misuzu with strong eyes…

「Ah…Yes」
「The semen collecting in Yoshida-kun's stomach will be Maika-san's share okay?…Give it to Maika-san's inside properly. Misuzu-san, the following will be your share…You have to keep the order」

Sensei says

「Yes…Understood… !」

Misuzu agrees for the moment.

「Then, I'll be going on ahead…You have to wash your bodies once again」

Saying that…Sensei leaves the bathroom ahead of us.

「Ah…Misuzu still hasn't washed her body since coming into the bathroom!」
「…There's no time to wash again but, let's flush ourselves with hot water…Maika」
「Un…Onii-san」

The three of us enter the bathtub…
The afternoon spring sunlight shines through.
This holiday is wrapped in a calm atmosphere.

「…Onii-san」

Maika calls over to me.

「…What's wrong?」

Maika's face turns red…

「Nothing…I just wanted to call out your name…!」

I kiss Maika's lips

「…Ahn」
「You're cute… Maika」

Misuzu shouts loudly!

「…Danna-sama!」
「…W-What?」
「I just wanted to call you!」

Misuzu's cute too.
I also kiss Misuzu.
As soon as our lips join up, Misuzu smiled.

「…I want a kiss here too」

Misuzu stand on her knees and presents her breasts in front of me.
I kiss Misuzu's nipples…

「Ahn…Danna-sama, so cute!」

Misuzu says while embracing my head.

「I'm jealous of Misuzu-san. Maika's breasts are still childish…」

Maika looks at her chest soaked in hot water.
She seems to be worried about her sunken nipples.

「It'll get fixed soon! Misuzu had the same thing before!」

Misuzu who's having her nipples sucked tells Maika.

「…Is that so?」
「If you have it licked by Danna-sama a lot, it'll come out immediately!」

Misuzu answers while laughing.

「…Misuzu-san」

Maika speaks.

「Please take care of Maika from now on. Best regards!」

Then bows to Misuzu.

「…M-Misuzu's the same…best regards! Uhm…Maika-san」
「…What is it?」

Misuzu looks down.

「Please do not monopolize Danna-sama too much…!」

Maika gets surprised…then laughes.

「…I should say the same! Misuzu-san shouldn't monopolize Onii-san!」

Two girl's laughter echoes in the bathroom…

◇ ◇ ◇

We enter the dressing room.

There's three bath towels prepared.
Perhaps it's Katsuko-nee.
…But
There's no change of clothes in the dressing room.
Do we have to go back to the studio naked?
…Huh?

「Misuzu…Where did you take off your clothes?」

Misuzu has a wondering face too.

「I left it here…no?」

It seems like it was collected while we were in the bath…?
It surely was Katsuko-nee too.
Well fine…They're watching from the surveillance cameras anyway.

「…Maika, come here, I'll wipe you」

I took a bath towel.

「Ah…yes please」

Maika turns her back to me bashfully.
Her wet hair sticking to her back is very sexy.

「…I'm wiping it then」

I wipe Maika's small body gently.
Not letting a single drop of water remain…
From her back to her ass.
Her arms and legs too.

「…Somehow…Doing it like this, I feel that Maika's really my 『Woman』」

I say while wiping the back of Maika's knees.

「…Maika thinks the same. Maika is Onii-san's…」

Maika mutters.

「I'll wipe the front too…」
「Yes…please」

I wipe Maika's cute breasts and stomach…
Her crotch…then her thighs.

「…Maika's so soft and cute」
「…Do you like Maika?」
「Since the beginning, I like you Maika!」

I kiss Maika's lips.
Now then…Misuzu's next.
Just when I was thinking about it…Misuzu covers my back with a bath towel…!

「Danna-sama, Misuzu will be wiping you off!」

Misuzu wipes my body roughly.

「…I'll clean it all up!」

Misuzu's small hands move around my whole body.
My crotch…and my half erect penis too.

「…This is a bonus!」

Misuzu positions herself in a way Maika could see and purposefully licks my glans!

「Now…It's Misuzu's turn」

When I said that, Misuzu…

「…Danna-sama, please do that」

She speaks bashfully.

「…That?」
「Just like what you did with Maika-san…Misuzu wants her feet to be cleaned too!」
「…Okay」

I say with a laugh.

「Then, Maika will be wiping Misuzu-san's body!」

The naked Misuzu sits on the dressing room's chair.
Maika stands behind Misuzu and wipes her back.
I squat down in front of Misuzu…
And wipe her feet.
Each and every gap between her toes…carefully.,

「…Aaahn! This is good! This might become a habbit!」

Misuzu's eyes are melting…
There's a warm liquid dripping from her vagina.
Maika takes care not to wipe Misuzu's front but it seems that she hasn't noticed it yet…

「Having Onii-san touch your toes feels good doesn't it?…It makes me shiver!」

Maika says.

「…Maika wants it too?」

I look up…

「Yes! Of course!」

Maika smiles happily…

◇ ◇ ◇

Before long, the water has disappeared from the body of the two girls.
Next…I dry Maika's hair.
The naked Maika sits down on a chair in front of the mirror.
Err, the dryer and brush…this?

「…Is it okay?」

Before Maika can finish asking I move over to her.

「I don't mind it at all…I want to do it」

I use the dryer on Maika's hair.
I hold the dryer with my left hand and brush with my right…!

「…No, that's wrong! Danna-sama, you do it like this!」

Misuzu guides her hands over mine…!

「The dryer should face this direction…and you have to comb from top to bottom…please remember that」

…I-I see

「…Maika will definitely drop from school」

Maika mutters…

「Naked…and having a man dry my hair…! Onii-san is so lewd!」

…I wonder?
I don't get girl's senses.

「This is much more lewd than actual sex. Maika's becoming a very bad girl…!」

「…Then, should I stop?」

When I ask.

「…Iyan~! Don't stop! You meanie!」

Maika who's looking straight ahead looks at me through the mirror and shouts!

「…I'll dry it properly…okay?」
「Un…Onii-san」

Maika smiles in the mirror.

「Ah, Danna-sama…Please apply the air this way」

I turn the dryer according to Misuzu's instructions.

「…I'll dry Misuzu's hair too」

I whisper to Misuzu.
If I pay attention to Maika only, she'll sulk again…

「Misuzu didn't wash her hair so there's no need for drying…
Rather than that, Danna-sama!」

Misuzu smiles.

「Misuzu will be drying Danna-sama's hair! Is that okay?」

…Err
…Minutes later

「…As expected, it should be like this」

I sit in front of the mirror.
Maika divides my hair 7:3

「Eeeh! That makes Danna-sama look like a bank clerk! Shouldn't we do it like this?!」

Misuzu changes it to a swept back look.

「Misuzu-san, this is basically an office worker!」

Maika objects strongly.

「Then…let's take the middle, how about this?」

Misuzu divides my hair into two. One white string floats.

「That's not taking the middle, isn't that just straight middle?!」

…Err?

「This makes Onii-san look like a lewd person!」

Un
Well…I think I am though

「Then…Let's put it all back」

…Hey, Misuzu.

「Misuzu-san…Could it be that you were the one who put the strange hair on Onii-san?」
「It's not strange! It's pompadour! It's cool![3]」

Misuzu doesn't back down.

「I think that Danna-sama needs to let out a bit of a delinquent feel! I'm sure it'll be cute!」

Misuzu says that however…

「No! Onii-san is better looking as kind! I think that smooth and dry fresh hair is better!」

Maika and Misuzu seem to have different opinions.

「…You want the delinquent one don't you, Danna-sama?」
「…Maika says that the gentle Onii-san is best!」

Two beauties press me from both sides…!

…I

「…Let's do the usual hair for the time being」

Misuzu's face warps.
Maika…

「…Misuzu-san, what's Onii-san's usual hair?」

Misuzu answers.

「…It's just ruffled」

The two girls shout at me at the same time.

「…That's the worst!」

…Eeeeeeh?!
…I-Is that so?

…In the end.
With the joint work of the two…My hairstyle is cut in 6:4 and sunken behind.

「…Un, Maika will be at ease this time!」

Maika combed my hair while smiling…

「Misuzu's satisfied with this!」

Well…That's fine if they like it however.

「But, Onii-san really let us do whatever we wanted」

Maika told me.

「Because…Both of you are thinking about it a lot all for my sake…」

Maika responds…

「When Maika was in grade school, I played beauty parlor at my friend's house. Then, we played with the hair of the younger

brother of the first grader who we made as the customer but…he hated it a lot and it had become terrible. In the end, he cried…!」
「Well…He's still in grade school. I'm a high school student」
「No, Danna-sama…Even the normal high school boys hate having their hair touched. I think that there's no one but Danna-sama who's okay with whatever is done to you」

…Is that so?

「Ah…My Papa is always noisy about his hair. He's always facing the mirror for 30 minutes before going to office everyday. We have a restroom exclusively for Papa. His hair conditioners are lined in a row. He said that when he was a student, he would not go to school if he didn't fix his hairstyle…」

Shirasaka Sousuke's like that?
I'd rather sleep than stare in front of the mirror for 30 minutes in the morning.

「…Well, Our Papa's overdoing it however…But Onii-san. you should pay better attention to your hairstyle!」

Maika rebukes me.
She has a very happy face…

「Got it…I'll try to learn about it」
「…Yes」

Maika smiles.

「Ah…That's okay! You don't need to study about it Danna-sama!」

Misuzu speaks.

「Misuzu will take care of Danna-sama's hair! Danna-sama just needs to sit in the chair! Misuzu will make you cute everyday!」

…She says that however.

「But…Misuzu's not living with me…」
「I'll get up early and will go back and forth to Danna-sama everyday! Danna-sama, at what time do you wake up every

morning?」
「No…That will just be troublesome won't it? Furthermore, if you match according to my time, won't Misuzu be late to her school?」

Waking up early morning, going to my house to fix my hair…Then, when will Misuzu arrive at her school?

「…I'll be late to school everyday! Taking care of Danna-sama is much more important!」

Misuzu's eyes are scary.
…Maika retorts.

「…But, Misuzu's sense is a bit..」

What Maika says just fuels Misuzu's burning spirit.
Misuzu glares at Maika!
…Shit!
At this time…!

「I think the same…Also, it's no good if you go late to school because of that…!」

Goddess of Salvation…Katsuko-nee appeares!

「…Sure sure sure, I've brought everyone's change of clothes!」

Katsuko-nee brings over a big wagon…

「…Katsuko-san's so beautiful」

Maika admires Katsuko-nee's figure.
Katsuko-nee's wearing a thin white cloth.
It's like an outfit of a Greek Goddess…
Her clothes are so thin that her skin can be seen clearly through it.
I can see that Katsuko-nee's not wearing underwear…
There's big jewel accessories on her arms and neck.

「…That's amazing!」

Maika's surprised by the jewels.

「These are genuine aren't they?」

Misuzu too.

「Yes…They're showy but don't have expensive stones, so they're not expensive」

Katsuko-nee says that however…

「That's not true…Isn't this quite valuable?」

Since Misuzu says that, it should be true.
I don't know anything about accessories or jewels.
They say that it has considerable value so I'm sure it will likely be a hundred thousand.
No, it might exceed 200k?

「We have your share too」

Saying that, Katsuko-nee takes out a black case from inside the wagon.
She opens it.
There's shining accessories packed inside.

「Pick what you want…」

Katsuko-nee hands it to Misuzu and Maika.

「…Uwaaaaa!!」

The two admire the jewels…
So it's true that women like shiny things.

「…Please wear these clothes」

Katsuko-nee takes out white clothes from a step under the wagon.
It's Greek myth like clothing just like what Katsuko-nee is wearing now.
However…Maika and Misuzu have miniskirts.

「Don't wear underwear, just wear it on top of your skin…!」

Katsuko-nee tells the two.

「…This is genuine silk isn't it?」

Misuzu touches the clothes then asks.

「That's right, it's made from the finest silk…It feels good to touch doesn't it?」
「…Yes. It's very smooth!」

Maika answers Katsuko-nee

「I have Yoshida-kun's clothes too…!」

Katsuko-nee takes out the same type of clothing.

「Yoshida-kun should wear this without underwear too」

…Err
Anyway, let's try putting it on…

「Uwaa, Misuzu-san's so cute!」
「Maika-san too!」

Maika and Misuzu wore the Greek style clothes.
Both of them look like shrine maidens.
There's genuine accessories attached to their arms and neck.
Their bare legs are exposed under the miniskirts.
For the footwear, Katsuko-nee brought them leather sandals.

「It will be seen if you jump around too much」

Katsuko-nee warns the two.
Actually, I've been looking at their raw asses since a while ago.

「I don't mind! I'm showing it to Danna-sama after all!」

Misuzu smiles at me.

「Maika-san, you're fine with it being seen too aren't you?」

Maika's embarrassed, however…

「Onii-san saw a lot already…this clothes is half naked after all…」

…That's right.
This transparent thin silk cloth doesn't hide anything.
Or rather…It has gotten lewder by wearing this.
It feels lewd…

「…Onii-san, why are you hiding your front since a while ago?」

Well, you see.
If I don't hide it, it will just come out in front…
Still…What's this look of mine?
It feels like I'm 『Run, Melos』[4]

「…By the way, you're all thirsty aren't you? I brought Calpis」

Katsuko-nee brings a pitcher and glasses when we finish changing.

As expected of Katsuko-nee…She's attentive.

「My my, you must not leave that out」

Katsuko-nee's glance is towards the accessories put on the wagon.
Misuzu and Maika tried out a lot but seem to have left them there.

「…Ah, sorry」

Maika rushes up but…

「It's okay…I'll take care of it…」

Katsuko-nee gently smiles and puts the jewelry away.
Then looks at me…

「…Can you distribute the Calpis to everyone?」
「Sure, Katsuko-nee…Maika, Misuzu, want to drink?」
「…Yes, I'll take one!」

Hearing Maika's answer…I was about to take the pitcher…!

「Aaaah…Danna-sama…Misuzu will be doing that!」

Misuzu runs in panic.

That's…You don't need to run…!

「Misuzu-san looks like Onii-san's Onee-san」

Maika laughes.

「…What?」

Misuzu's eyes became a blank in surprise.

「Because…aren't you always taking care of Onii-san?」

Maika laughes cutely.
That's what's reflected in Maika's eyes but…
Misuzu actually wants to make me her pet.
She wants to take care of me as an owner.

「A-A-A-A-Anyway…Let's take the Calpis!」

Misuzu pours the calpis into the glass…!

---

1. referring to the water ↩
2. Hugh Misuzu, Maika's on her training right now dammit! ↩
3. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=w5ytYl6X0XM ↩
4. A Japanese short story by Osamu Dazai ↩

98. 『Yoshida-kun sisters' club』

Nei-san's already waiting in the dining room.
Nei-san's wearing Greek myth-like clothing too.
She's donning the same king of jewelry.
Nei-san invites us in with a smile…!

「Hurry up…! I'm already hungry!」

The meal's prepared on a big table.

「It's a dim-sum like meal for our lunch today. There's Chinese soup and salad too!」

Katsuko-nee tells us.
I see…There are spring rolls and siomai prepared.

「There's deep fried spring rolls and Vietnamese style rolls too… Have a seat and eat…!」

After Katsuko-nee, Nei-san distributes the plates and chopsticks to everyone.

「Yo-chan, have a seat too…!」

Everyone surrounds the table and sits.

「As for the drinks, you can just say what you want whether it be tea or juice…!」

Katsuko-nee is being gentle somehow or another…!

「I'm opening the wine!」

While saying that…Nei-san's already begun to pull the cork off the wine bottle.

「Geeze…There's a middle schooler here!」

When Katsuko-nee says that, Nei-san…

「Isn't that fine! It's a celebration for Maika-chan today!」

…Celebration?

「For…Maika?」

Maika asks Nei-san in wonder.

「That's right, it's to give honor to Maika-chan becoming an adult! Also, a celebration for being Yoshida-kun's sex partner! And in addition, a celebration for becoming our sister!」

Nei-san pulls off the cork…!

「…That's why, Maika-chan should drink a lot too! There's no one to bother you here for today…!」

Nei-san tells Maika laughingly.

「Speaking of which…Where's sensei and Margo-san?」

I ask Katsuko-nee
…Where did those two go?

「…Ojou-sama's being considerate of me…I never eat in front of Ojou-sama…」

Oh right…Katsuko-nee is following her duty as a maid so she never eats at the same table as Yuzuki-sensei.

「Today is a celebration for Maika-san…As a sister, Katsuko should be in the dining table with them…she said!」

…I see
This is to make sure that Katsuko-nee enjoy herself along with everyone.

「Maru-chan has work…She left 40 minutes ago. I don't get what it is though」

Nei-san tells me.
Margo-san went out suddenly…?!

Could it be…?!
Katsuko-nee makes eye-contact with me who got startled…

The person chasing Nei-san from america…
Cesario Viola made a move…

「That doesn't matter! Yo-chan, distribute the glasses to everyone…!」

Nei-san pretends to not worry and pours wine into the glasses.

「Ah…Misuzu will help out!」

Misuzu and I hand out the glasses to everyone…

「Ehehehe…Since it's a celebration for lost virginity, it's a red wine!」

Nei-san says that…

「Well then…We have the chairwoman giving her greetings!」

…Chairwoman
Katsuko-nee clears her throat after Nei-san's speech.

「…Well then, this presumptuous me Takanashi Katsuko will be making greetings as the founding chairwoman!」

…Err

「…Katsuko-nee, chairman of what club?」

Katsuko-nee smiles.

「Of course it's…『Yoshida-kun sisters' club』」

…『Yoshida-kun sister's club』????!

「…Everyone, all of us here love Yoshida-kun, and are loved by Yoshida-kun, we're Yoshida-kun's 『Women』! Women who love the same man are 『Similar to sisters』, therefore let us deepen our bonds as fellow sisters, 『Yoshida-kun sister's club』」

…K-Katsuko-nee?
Nei-san's laughing but…Misuzu's dumbfounded.
Maika…Why are you trembling?

「…I-Is that okay? Maika becoming everyone's ally?」

Maika's slightly excited…

「Isn't that obvious?…Maika-chan's already a 『woman』 aren't you?」

Katsuko-nee says gently.

「But…Maika's not adult like everyone…I'm not a beauty either」

Maika looks down…

「That doesn't matter! What's important is what Yo-chan is thinking about Maika-chan!」

Nei-san turns to me!

「Yo-chan, what do you think of Maika-chan?」

I answer clearly.

「I think she's amazingly cute!」

Nei-san smiles towards Maika.

「That's decided then! Maika-chan's a member of 『Sisters club』!」

Nei-san says that but…Maika's expression doesn't improve yet.

「But…My papa did horrible things to Yuzuki-san…」

Maika thinks that we're cooperating with Sensei for her revenge.
Actually…Katsuko-nee and Nagisa-san also have a deep grudge against Shirasaka Sousuke too.
But, Maika's wasn't told about that…
Maika doesn't have to know about the darkness that is the prostitution section of 『Kuromori』

「It doesn't matter who your parents are…Maika-chan is Maika-chan[1]」

Katsuko-nee tells Maika.

「What's important is that Yo-chan likes Maika-chan. Also, Maika-chan is accepted by Yo-chan as his sex partner. Those two are enough」

Nei-san peeks at Maika's face…

「He already answered that he likes Maika-chan…What about you Maika-chan? Will you seriously become his sex partner? Do you swear that from the bottom of your heart and are not just going with the flow?…We want to know Maika-chan's true feelings」

Katsuko-nee gives Maika her life choice.[2]

「That's right…It should be by your own will! Your parents and siblings don't matter at all!」

Maika falls silent.

「…Of course, we know that Maika-chan's father is having difficulties. Or rather…We're the the ones orchestrating his problems. Ojou-sama has explained why it has to be didn't she?」

Maika nods at Katsuko-nee's words.

「…Yes, in the bathroom. I understood that it's something that can't be atoned for because Papa did horrible things…!」

Katsuko-nee smiles gently at Maika.

「We will never forgive your father. We'll do our best to accomplish our revenge. That's already been decided. But…That and Maika-chan are different. We really want to make you our ally. We want to become Maika-chan's sisters…!」
「That's right!…Don't worry! We Onee-chans will definitely protect Maika-chan!!」

Nei-san also smiles gently at Maika.

「Maika-chan…we want you to enter the sex partner circle. Then, we'll reveal all the good and bad things…we'll become real sisters. We'll be 『Sisters』 connected by bonds stronger than actual sisters. Your worry and suffering will become ours too…!」

Katsuko-nee's words…dissolve Maika's heart…

「…Is that really okay?」

Maika answers.

「It's Maika-chan's decision whether it's okay or not! In exchange, when you enter the 『Sister circle』 you won't have sex with anyone but Yo-chan! Give up on other men! This club is a 『Club for women who are loved and love Yo-chan』!」

Nei-san reminds her…

「…Uhm」

I butt in.

「I don't have any complaints about the club but…please let me add a rule!」

Katsuko-nee responds to me.

「…What rule would that be?」

…I

「…If you ever like a man other than me…You can leave the club anytime」

…I talk as I look at each person's eyes.

「…To be honest, this situation is abnormal. This is just strange. There's no way a human like me can be this popular…」

Everyone's eyes focus on me.

「Right now, I think that I'm just being an annex to strengthen everyone's relations. Or…Just an opportunity for Katsuko-nee and

Nagisa-san to part from their pasts… Misuzu and Maika too…Your firsts were just by chance…I think that someday, everyone will meet some wonderful man who I can't compete against…! That's why…If ever you find one, then you can break up with me…I'm fine being alone…!」

Katsuko-nee lets out a sigh…

「…We can't leave you because you're like that…!」

…Eh?

「Danna-sama! Please don't disrespect Misuzu!」

Misuzu who's been silent until now is violently angry at me…?!

「Misuzu's not confined in a box! I've seen lots of men until now! In my grandfather's party, there's a lot of men who call out to me! There's one from a noble family, or a first class performer, or even a globally famous artist! But there's no man like Danna-sama!」

…Misuzu?

「…The only man in the world who can accept all of Misuzu is only Danna-sama! Misuzu has already decided! Misuzu will give her heart and body to only Danna-sama!」

Katsuko-nee speaks to Misuzu.

「I intended to ask Misuzu-san next but…Misuzu-san's enrollment to 『Sisters club』 is okay…!」

Misuzu nods.

「…Yes. Misuzu knows that Danna-sama treasures women other than Misuzu too」
「…Don't worry. Because 『Sisters club』 will allot equal time with him. We'll prepare time for Misuzu to be alone with him properly…!」
「…Yes, I'll believe Katsuko-sama」

Then…Misuzu's enrollment in the 『Sisters club』 is decided.

「Me too…I'll say it since we have the chance」

Katsuko-nee looks at me.

「I don't want to be made happy by you. I want to make you happy. Seeing your happy face makes me happy…That's why I'll never break up with you!」

Katsuko-nee looks at me with moistened eyes.

「Yo-chan, I'm the same!」

That said, Nei-san and Katsuko-nee…

「Nei-sama, before you say that…」

She goes that far then swallows her words…!

「…What?!」
「T-That's enough!」

It seems that it will be kept secret from Maika that Nei-san's still a virgin…!

Katsuko-nee turns her gaze back at Maika.

「…Anyway, what about you Maika-chan? To be frank…This Onii-san's a bargain! There's no one like him. This one never lies to us… and he'll never betray us even if he would die. You may share him with other girls…I love this one」
「I also love Yo-chan!」
「…Misuzu too!」

…Maika thinks

「Oh right, I have to introduce the other girls too!」

Katsuko-nee takes out her phone.
Connects it to her laptop and makes a call.

「…Hello, Nagisa? The one we talked about earlier…」

Nagisa-san's reflected in the monitor.

「…『Sisters club's』honorary president, Katagai Nagisa-san!」

Katsuko-nee faces the laptop camera towards Maika.

『…Katsuko, can you move the camera a bit to the right…There, I see it』

Nagisa-san's voice comes out of the speakers

『Hello! I'm one of Yoshida-kun's 『Women』…Katagai Nagisa! Maika-chan, nice to meet you!』

Nagisa-san in the monitor has her usual healing smile.

「…H-Hello. I'm Shirasaka Maika」

Maika faces the camera and greets her…!

『My, how cute! I send my regards to you as a woman who loves the same man!』

Nobody could win against Nagisa-san's gentle smile.

「…Ah, yes. Best regards」
『I'm managing a flower shop! You're welcome to play anytime!』
「…Yes」
『…I'm happy, getting such a cute little sister! Thank you, Yoshida-kun!』

…I
…I don't know why I'm being thanked.

『I want to meet you soon!…I'm sorry, I'm in the middle of work right now…I'm going back to the shop soon!』
「Sorry for calling at such a busy time, Nagisa!」
『It's fine, Katsuko! It can't be helped if it's Yoshida-kun…Right now, as long as I have Yoshida-kun, I'm happy!』
「…Eh?」

Maika raises a voice of doubt.

『Before I became Yoshida-kun's 『Woman』you see…I always

smiled but my heart's actually in ruins. I got irritated when no one was looking, and cry out alone to myself in the dead of night… I'm okay now though. I'm no longer lonely. I have Yoshida-kun. If I get lonely, I can just see him anytime…I can be embraced anytime…I'm happy!』

…Nagisa-san.

『That's why…Maika-chan, be happy too! If you're going to come by and play, bring him too! Bye~!』

Then…The line goes out like a passing storm.

「That was Nagisa just now…My best friend!」
「…She's a very beautiful and gentle person」
「She's Misuzu's previous owner!」

Misuzu puffed her chest for some reason.
Well…I can understand that proud feeling of hers.

「There's another 『Woman』 other than her but…She's in her club activities right now. That's why you won't be meeting her for a while…」

Katsuko-nee says.

「…She's a student?」
「She's a high school student…She's his classmate of the same school, isn't she?」

Katsuko-nee looks at me.

「…Yes」

Maika knows that Megumi's her relative…
When will I talk about Megumi being my 『Woman』…

「Anyway…That's all!! All of Yo-chan's 『Women』!」

Nei-san reports to Maika brightly…

…Err

…Yukino?

Nei-san kicks my foot under the table!
She glares at me.

…I shouldn't speak of her right now?

「Then what will you do? Join us Maika-chan in the『Sisters club』!」

Nei-san approaches Maika.

「…Let's become sisters. Okay?!」

Katsuko-nee.

「Misuzu will be here with you…!」

Misuzu too…!
Maika looks at my face.

「…Onii-san, I」

Maika seems to be unable to decide.
I…

「I know that Katsuko-nee and Nei-san want to let Maika decide by herself but…But I think it's different…!」

Katsuko-nee and the girls are cornering Maika…it seems that they want Maika to be『Accepting by herself』
But…Maika's still a middle school student.
I think that it's cruel to make Maika decide this by herself…
I look at Maika…

「…Maika, listen to me」
「…Yes」

Maika looks at me.

「…Maika, you're already mine. That's what I decided. I don't care about Maika's feelings. I like Maika so I'll make Maika happy.

That's all my selfish feelings. I will do what I want with you as I please…!」

I'll take responsibility.

「I order you Maika! Enter the 『Sisters Club』3 Get along with my other 『Women』! Your life is already mine! I won't let you be free. Do everything I say…!」

Maika looks at me.

「…Lucky Maika-san. Misuzu also want to be told the same thing as you…!」

Misuzu mutters.
…Maika.

「…Got it. Maika won't hesitate. I'll do anything as Onii-san commands…!」

…Maika!

「In exchange…If you ever come to hate Maika…please throw away Maika at anytime」
「…I won't, I'll treasure you forever」
「…But」

Maika closes her mouth.

「…That's not it」

Katsuko-nee tells me.

「…Maika-chan also has her pride as a woman」

…Eh?

「…What do you like about Maika-chan?」
「…Beautiful and cute」

I answer honestly.

「You like Maika-chan as a woman don't you?」

「…That's obvious」

Maika's face turns red…

「Maika-chan…doesn't want to be pitied. She wants to be a 『Woman』 that is loved properly… That's why, she's saying that you should throw her away when you don't feel her charm as a woman anymore…!」

I finally understood it with Katsuko-nee's explanation…
Maika's 14 years old but she's already a 『Woman』

「But, don't worry Maika-chan…Your Onee-chans will polish your 『Femininity』…!」
「That's right! We'll make you a charming lady!」
「We're the same as Maika-chan. We're always thinking of doing our best to polish ourselves so we won't be abandoned by him」
「Un, We'll become much, much better women!」
「…He'll be thoroughly polished too!」

Katsuko-nee looks at me…
…Err
…What are you going to do with me?

「…Misuzu will do her best polishing Danna-sama too!」

M-Misuzu too…!
Maika bows towards everyone…

「Please take care of me!」

Katsuko-nee holds out her hand.
Nei-san put hers on top of it…
Misuzu on top of that…

「…Maika-san」
「…Yes」

Maika puts her hand on the topmost…

「…What about me?」
「Yo-chan must not. It's 『Sisters club』 so Yo-chan can't enter!」

「Danna-sama just has to watch!」

…Is that so?!

「Take photos with that camera there」

Katsuko-nee tells me.

「Got it…!」

I take out the camera and face the 『Women』

「…Here we go! Smile!」

The girls piling up their hands smile.

…Click!

The camera records this moment.

「…Err. We have to say something then release our hands don't we?」[4]

Misuzu says so while their hands are still piled up.

「Ah, I want to say something cool so…you all just have to say 『Oooh!』 in the end. That's when we release our hands…okay?」

Nei-san tells everyone.

「Got it」

Maika smiles…!

「Then…here we go!」

Nei-san shouts!

「…The four of us may have different birth dates and birth places but, we pledge to be tied as sisters, our hearts love the same Yo-chan!」

…Nei-san, what's that?!

「…Okay?!」
「…Ooh!」

Then the four separates their hands!
I captured that moment with the camera too.

「…Now, let's eat!」

Lunch has finally started with Katsuko-nee's words…

◇ ◇ ◇

It's a slightly late…but peaceful lunch.
Everyone's eating and laughing.
Misuzu's the one talking a lot but…she waves the topic to everyone.
That's why Maika's also talking happily.
Nei-san just reacts greatly saying「Eeeh!」and 「Then, then?」,
she's good at drawing out stories from everyone.
Katsuko-nee recommends a meal and pours drinks for everyone
while participating in the talk.
…I
I'm a devoted eating expert.
To be honest…I don't get half of what the girl's are talking about
that well.
Especially the particular brands of cosmetics…

「…You see, there's a lot of hairstyles developed in late 20'th
century created by Vidal Sassoon starting from the 60's…!」

Katsuko-nee speaks.
…Hee
Vidal Sasoon…is actually the name of a person.
I thought it's a name that came out from Gundam.

「…Vidal Sassoon is recognized as one of the brands of Protect and
Gamble Company in Japan nowadays」

Protect and Gamble Company…What company is that?
I can only think of it as a war industry from it's name…
…Hm?
My phone vibrates.

Looking at it…It's Sensei.

「…Yes?」
『…Yoshida-kun, can you get out of there for a moment? I'm in the room where you waited earlier』

Oh…There are monitors there.
The room where I waited earlier?

「Got it, I'll go immediately」
『Tell everyone that you'll come back immediately…!』

She said then cut the line.
I stand up.

「…What's wrong, Danna-sama?」

The perceptive Misuzu calls me out immediately.

「I was just called by Sensei so I'm going…!」
「Yuzuki-sama…?」

Katsuko-nee spoke to the questioning Misuzu.
Maika's looking here.

「…I think it's about school」
「…Oh」

Hearing 『School』…Misuzu thought of Megumi it seems.
Maika's thinking that it's really school.

「I'm be back immediately…!」

When I say that, Nei-san…

「Yo-chan…Bring this remaining wine to Sensei. We can't finish this up」

There's still more than half left in the wine bottle.

「You don't need to come back immediately! Sensei must be considering the 『Sisters club』 but…She must be lonely being

alone. Chat with her for a while!」

Nei-san winks at me…!

「Right, we're going to have fun as 『Sisters』!」

Misuzu says.

「Kay…Then I'm going…!」

I left the room with the wine bottle…

◇　◇　◇

…Knock!

「…Get in」

I enter the room…

「…Sit there」

I sit in the chair she's pointing at.
Sensei's prepared two glasses…
She looks at the bottle I brought.

「My, Nei-san, she opened quite a good one…」

Saying that, she pours it into the glass.

「…Is it expensive?」
「It's not that expensive…It's just 50k yen」

…Uwa, expensive!

「But, it's exceptionally delicious for it's price…」

Sensei says that but…
I don't know

「…Yoshida-kun will understand it soon enough. Women and Women's value aren't known until tasted…」

Sensei offers me a glass.
I take the glass…
Sensei matches it with her class.
「Kin!」I heard a crystal sound…
To match with Sensei who takes a sip…I also drink.
…Hmmm.
This is 50k yen?

「…We did well until now」

Sensei speaks.

「To be honest…We're still on edge. We balanced it until the very last minute so we didn't break it somehow…!」

…Eh?

「Yoshida-kun…Do you know why Maika accepted you, who's her rapist?」

…Well

「…I don't know」

Sensei drinks up the wine glass.
Then she pours the next one immediately.

「…Because she's a child.」

Sensei smiles wryly…

「Humans are foolish so they immediately think that 『I'm the most unfortunate person in the world』 Or 『I'm the luckiest in the world』 …」
「…What does that mean?」

I don't know.

「Hmm…You're someone who doesn't understand what's happiness and what's not that's why you can't understand Maika-san's situation…」 5

Sensei looks at me.

「…For women, being raped is the worst humiliation. Scary, frightening, it'll become a trauma their whole life. All the more because it's their first experience…!」

…… !

「For the time being…your coping up to now was wonderful. You didn't hurt Maika-san's pride as a woman and it seems that she somehow consented to the situation. But…the experience of rape will leave a scar deeply in her heart. She might not be able to have a normal sex experience…!」

…That's.

「In the end…it's just one of her mental defensive instinct to accept you easily」

Sensei looks at me…

「The rapist was unexpectedly gentle. He might be a good person. He's saying that he likes me. He's recognizing my charm. This might be fate. If it's fate, I have to accept it…!」

…Fate?

「Because, she doesn't want to admit it doesn't she?…Her first experience being rape? Became an outlet of lust forcibly? That's why, she desperately makes another story. It's the same as Misuzu-san's first time」

Misuzu at first…
She was abnormally affected by the word 『Pet』 by Nagisa-san…
Now that she has calmed down…Misuzu's abnormality after her first experience with me is understood…
In short…Misuzu surrendered to the story that 『She became my pet』 … 『If it has happened then it can't be helped』 she gave up.
That's why she's abnormally attached to me.

「Misuzu-san said it herself a while ago…But still, she came to love Yoshida-kun even more and more that…you desperately respond to

Misuzu-san…for the time being, she's calmed down」

…Calmed down?
…That?

「At least, there's no possibility of her falling into despair, closing her heart, and going towards a dangerous direction any longer. Right now, all of her energy is going towards you…she truly loves you and trusts you. That won't sway anymore…Don't worry」

…Is that so?

「That's why…I said it a while ago but, spoil her for a little longer. When her desire for you becomes excessive, Katsuko and Nei will control her. That's why the 『Sisters club』 was made…!」

Sensei…for that sake

「…Although, even Katsuko and Nei aren't completely stable. For the time being, Yoshida-kun's their anchor and they've settled down. I'm really thankful to you…!」

Sensei says.

「Who would've thought that a man like you would bring good effect to those girls. But, thanks to you Katsuko said herself that she'd retire from prostitution, and Nei's no longer having nightmares of her late younger brother…!」

…I
…Even though I didn't do anything…

「…Be with those girls for a while. Please」

Sensei bows her head…

「…That's, please stop. I'm Sensei's 『Toy』 …!」

Sensei laughed to herself

「Yoshida-kun, there's no need to do that 『Wordplay』 …!」

… 『Wordplay』 ?!

「…You see, women like the 『Words』 like 『This is fate!』 …Or 『I'm your toy』 … No…Those 『Words』 have the power to control those girls somehow」

…Sensei?!

「…All of those girls are actually damaged and are incidentally fragile. Giving themselves to 『Words』 …everyone's relying on each other to somehow live. Even the word 『Sisters』 creates a bond, don't you think?」

The monitor in the room reflects the state in the dining room.
Everyone's laughing happily.
They're like real sisters.

「I'll go back to Maika-san…for the time being, she's riding the story of 『Yoshida-kun likes me so much that he raped me inevitably』 『I'm being loved by Yoshida-kun』 『This is the result of love』 and desperately convincing herself…!」

Maika-san's laughing on the screen.
But, Looking at her…She fidgets and fixes her posture.
Her crotch must still be in pain.

「…Because Maika-san's very naive, we can fool her as much as we want. The convenient story will soon become the truth for her…!」

Sensei looks at Maika on the screen.

「But…She notices it. That 『That she set her heart on believing on the story she made desperately』 …!」

…Maika

「…Sensei, what should I do for Maika's sake?」

Sensei looks at me when I ask.

「Are you prepared to take responsibility for that child through your whole life?」

…Eh?!

「That girl's first experience is rape so…You have to replace it with wonderful memories. You need to be prepared to deceive her the rest of her life…!」

…I
…I

「…Got it I'll keep lying to her forever. If that's what will save Maika…!」

I strengthen my resolve.

「…Is that so? Then」

Then, sensei speaks.

「Yoshida-kun…You have to rape Maika-san once again…!」

---

1. And people die if they are killed ↩
2. EN: >love >fuck >run >yandere ↩
3. I Yoshida **** commands you! Goddamn code geass reference ↩
4. EN: By your powers combined, I am Captain Planet! ↩
5. Yoshida's a psycopath ↩

99. Teach us! Yuzuki-sensei.

「Women who lose their virginity to rape…are greatly divided into two types depending on their interactions with sex」

Yuzuki-sensei's talking while drinking her wine.

「I know it well…In this mansion when it was『Kuromori Tower』, I saw plenty of women…I'm one of them too…」

…Right
Yuzuki-sensei was raped by Shirasaka Sousuke when she was 12…

「One would be the girl being absorbed in sex to override their rape experience. Drowning themselves to remove their memory of fear. Misuzu-san's that type」

Certainly…Misuzu's indulging herself in sex…

「It's not a lewd nature in particular…Trying to get over the fear from the rape, they try to lie to themselves and have sex assertively. Convincing themselves that they had sex by their own will…」

…Misuzu was like that.

「Misuzu-san's actually scared… Yesterday, you had sex with Misuzu-san in the bathroom didn't you?」
「…Yes」
「That's the time when she finally trusted you. I think she was frightened in her heart until then…Do you remember? Yesterday before you had sex with Misuzu-san, she told you『I want you to trust me soon』]?」

Speaking of which…I feel that she said such thing.

「That's reversed. Actually, Misuzu-san thought was that she wants to 『Trust』you. She reflects her own wish to you and spoke…」

…I see

「Do you remember that Misuzu told you 『I want to be violated』…Didn't you?」
「…I do」
「Actually, there's still some fear remaining for sex…That's why she said that. She wants you to force having the sex instead of by her own will…」

I…
I never understood Misuzu's feeling at all…
I just followed my own desire.
I'm the worst.

「At that time…Misuzu said that she wants to be my sex slave」

Sensei laughs.

「Do you really think that there's a girl who would want to become a man's slave?」
「…I don't」

…I

「It was really a dangerous state…You did rape play didn't you?」

…We did
I got very aroused though…
For Misuzu, it wasn't that different from real rape…

「If Misuzu-san gave up in despair because of that rape play, she might really have become your sex slave…」

Sensei says.

「You see…There's no endlessly lewd woman in this world. Among the prostitutes, there are occasional women who makes that play. A girl that has no forbidden plays, all okay. That kind of person isn't a helpless lecherous person… They just gave up. Throwing their own life…Thinking that it's already hopeless…therefore they accept anything. They have no choice but to accept」

…They gave up in life?

「Those kinds are okay with anyone. They're not looking at the man's face. They just surrender themselves to the pleasures in their body… They get scared when they look at reality…they became ashamed that they want to die. Therefore, they close their eyes to indulge themselves in the pleasures of sex, and concentrate only on the sexual feeling…!」

Sensei gulps down the glass.

「…I was the same」

…Sensei

「There's only one thing I can thank Shirasaka Sousuke for. …My body can no longer have sex ever again, you know that don't you? That's why I can no longer escape to the pleasure of sex…! Even if I force myself, I can only face the reality…therefore, I think I went mad…!」

I poured wine into Sensei's glass silently.

「…Thanks. You see…I'm actually a weak woman. No, I was weak…before. But I have no choice but to get stronger. I have no other way out after all… I can't masturbate. When I touch myself there, the scar hurts…! The bottom of my stomach makes a tingling pain…That's why, I…!」

I hold Sensei's hand.
As a reflex, Sensei's body twitched and she tried to move away from my hand!
But still…I hold Sensei's hand firmly!

「…I won't do anything. I'll just hold your hand」

Sensei looks at my hand…

「…Sorry. I drank alcohol too fast…」

Sensei looks down.

「I'll go back to Misuzu-san…I think that just a bit more and she'd suffer from sex madness. It was really a dangerous state. If it

advanced badly…she would have your body for a while then she'd immediately start to fish for men. Escaping to sex, she'd sleep with any possible man…She'd become a hopeless woman…!」

So it was such a critical state…!

「…So it's different now?」

After getting up courage, I ask Sensei…

「After yesterday's rape play sex in the bathroom, you went for another round didn't you?」

Right…I began my second round without pulling out.

「As a result, she was saved by that sex. Doing all your best… feeling Misuzu-san properly…that was good. Your feelings reached Misuzu-san that's why she came to trust you. If you didn't have the second sex, it would've been trouble this time…」

Sensei sighes.

「With that sex…Misuzu-san somehow accepted you…」

…Well
Misuzu's attitude changed completely after our second sex.
It's not her strange brightness from before but a genuine smile…

「After that…Misuzu-san became your woman. Don't worry. She will no longer part from you as long as it's not something much…」
「…Why?」

Sensei laughes as she was amazed.

「You're the only man in the world she can yield her mind and body…Misuzu-san said it herself didn't she?」

So she was serious.
I don't get it.

「Seriously…You're taking so many girls seriously and yet…You're always lonely as usual…」

Sensei said with a sad expression.

「I'm lonely?」

Sensei returns a question to my question.

「…Yoshida-kun…When I say 'your own bed' what do you imagine?」

I answer immediately.

「If it's my bed then it's the sofa in my house」

That old sofa with bad springs.
I lived there this whole time…
That old sofa where I can't stretch my body so I have to round myself to sleep.

「…This bed in this mansion isn't a bed for you…」

Sensei said.

「Because…I'm only borrowing the bed in this house. My house is there…」

That house where neither my mother or father comes home.
…I have to go back soon.

「Well fine…Let's talk about it next time」

Sensei forcibly changes the topic…
Having me reminded of my house, I show an awkward face.

「If…you didn't do the second round of sex…and Misuzu-san didn't open her heart…What do you think I would do to Misuzu-san?」

Sensei asks me…

「…No, I don't know」

To be honest…I can't imagine it.

「Misuzu-san was a girl sent by Kouzuki-sama to Nagisa wasn't

she?…She cannot be mad at sex」

…Certainly

「In that case, I'd have Nagisa take her and have her become Nagisa's slave. A complete lesbian」

…Lesbian?

「Then, she'd get married with the man Kouzuki house had decided…endure only one sex to have one child, then have her stay as a lesbian for the rest of her life. Isn't it better for her to play with Nagisa's lesbian pets rather than madly playing with men? Society can be fooled by that too…」

…Is that so?
Sensei's always thinking two steps ahead.

「In the first place…I got surprised when Nagisa transferred Misuzu-san to Yoshida-kun! That was so sudden wasn't it?…It happened before I even knew it…!」

…There's no surveillance cameras in Nagisa-san's shop.
That was Nagisa-san's decision alone.
She didn't consult Yuzuki-sensei…

「Nagisa…understood Yoshida-kun's power. Surely, she believed that you could open Misuzu's heart…!」

Sensei says.

「Margo too… She believes in your power that she didn't report a follow up to me on the spot. Well, she has seen Nagisa-san being embraced and liberated by Yoshida-kun…」

Nagisa-san and Margo-san believed me and entrusted me with Misuzu…

「Sometimes, I get heartbroken. No matter how much I think, I can't match Nagisa's insight and Margo's perception… Those girls more excellent than me. No…I'm no good. I'm just a big-headed woman lacking imagination…」

Sensei blames herself…

「Anyway…There's no pressing problems with Misuzu-san. Just love her a lot. Now's the time for her to be spoiled. Make your bonds of trust thicker. Okay?」
「…Okay」

The problem is Maika.

「Maika-san…is another type of the raped girls」

…Another type?

「…She's scared of sex. It's become a complete trauma. Simply put, she's afraid of it. It might cause androphobia for her…」

…Eh?

「But…She's been in the bath together with me all this time…」

Yeah. We talked and kissed a lot.

「Don't you think that she's abnormally talkative in the bath?」

…Eh?

「Usually…someone won't talk to their rapist about their club activities」

That might be.

「But…She didn't hate it when I touched her in the bathroom…and we kissed multiple times」

I even licked Maika's clitoris…
Afterwards…Maika asked if I still want to have sex…

「That's just a flip of sense from fear. She's alone with the rapist. She'd choose to open her body willingly rather than be violated by force. If she doesn't convince herself to accept the man voluntarily, she can't win against the fear」

Sensei says.

「Afterwards, Misuzu-san entered the bathroom…That was on purpose. I thought that you might not be able to endure it anymore. If Misuzu-san is there, she will have sex with you instead of Maika-san」

That was also Sensei's strategy?

「When she sees Misuzu-san being madly in love with you…Maika-san's recognition of Yoshida-kun might change. Maika-san can feel relieved if Misuzu-san is being deeply in love with you, can't she?」

You sent Misuzu with such intentions?

「As I thought…Misuzu-san had gone on a rampage and you accepted it…When it had become a slightly peaceful atmosphere…I went in…!」

Right…Sensei entered at the perfect moment.

「You remember what's after that? Your penis got hard and you wanted to have sex once again, what kind of reaction did Maika-san show?」

…Maika was

「…She's refused sex. She seemed very afraid」

Yeah…she did.

「In that case, Misuzu-san and I were there, you weren't alone. In short, that's Maika-san's current frank reaction towards sex」

…Maika

「She's overdoing it…all this time. Even now」

I looked at Maika on the monitor…
Maika's laughing with everyone.

「Maika-san's still worrying about it. If it's okay for her to become everyone's ally. In the first place, isn't it strange to become someone's sex partner? She asks…She knows that she's brought to

an unexpected world. She's quite clever…!」

Right.
This is certainly abnormal.
Maika's still a middle school student…
For her to share a sex partner with other women…it's crazy.

「Sensei…What should I do then?」

I ask Sensei once again.

「Anyway…You must not disturb Maika-san's sense of fear from sex」

Sensei answers.

「That's why you have to rape her again」

…Eh?

「Rape her again and again…Repeat it endlessly until it becomes pleasurable for Maika-san. That can be misled into thinking that it's a form of love…!」

…Wait
…Wait a moment

「If this continues, Maika-san will never seek sex from you…You do understand that don't you?」
「…Yes」
「It's not just you…Even if Maika-san gets a lover in the future, she will still refuse sex, I think. Maika-san will never allow anyone to have her body. She'll fear sex from the trauma of her first experience…and ultimately, she'll hate sex. She'll suffer from complete androphobia…!」

…That's.

「That's why…You have to continue wishing for her by force…」

I can't do anything but to continue violating Maika?

「You made girls wish for you on the second time, didn't you… Even if it was Misuzu-san or Katsuko」
「…Yes」
「Yoshida-kun…You never seek the woman yourself」
「…Sorry」
「Why?」
「…I thought that a man like me would be hated by everyone」
「…You don't want to be hated by women do you?」
「Or rather…I think that all of the woman in the world hate me. I still think that even now. Hearing Sensei's talk…Understanding that Misuzu and Maika actually just force it…I thought 'as expected'. It's strange that I'm popular…!」

I think.

「But…It would be troubling if Maika-san doesn't want to have sex with me…!」
「…Are you ready to be hated?」

Sensei smiles wryly

「Idiot…Rape Maika-san a lot and become liked. Make her fall for you…!」

…… !

「…That's impossible」
「Then…Do you intend to abandon Maika-san as she is…?!」

Sensei presses me…!

「…There's no way I can abandon her!」
「Then…Rape Maika-san a lot until she falls in love with you!」

…I

Sensei breathes deeply then says…

「…Yoshida-kun, do you know the photographer named Lee Miller?」

…Lee Miller?

「…I don't」

Sensei laughs.

「Right…There's no way you would」

…Then don't ask!

「She's more famous as Man Ray's lover than a photographer. Of course you don't know the artist named Man Ray either, right?」
「…No」
「Lee Miller you see was a very beautiful woman. At that time, the multi millionaire Egyptian who had the titled most beautiful woman in the world had divorced her because he fell in love with Lee Miller」
「Hee」
「The divorced wife committed suicide…That's how beautiful she was」
「…Haa」

I can't imagine it.

「Man Ray took photos of Lee Miller's figure at night. Naked upper body, a rope pulling the neck, a poison prepared, and a piston in one hand… It was a humorous photograph but there's live ammunition in the pistol included. Man Ray's Assistant was scared as the trigger might be pulled…」

What's the relation of that person to Maika?

「Lee Miller was of course beautiful since childhood…so beautiful that she was raped when she was 8…!」

…Eh?

「But…an 8 year old girl would just agree to anything don't you think?」

…Yes.

「Of course…Her rape experience caused a deep trauma in her. Therefore, the adults around her couldn't tell her that sexual desire

and love are different…!」

That means?

「The feeling of love and the feeling of wanting sex are different… She was brought up given that idea. But…She grew up as a woman wild at sex. It can't be helped…Loving someone and wanting to have sex with someone is different. Even if she has a lover, she sleeps with other men she wants to have sex with easily…」

She was raised in such a manner so it can't be helped that it has become like that.

「In the end…She broke up with Man Ray and with the Egyptian Millionare…She changed one man after another. She settled down middle aged…when her beauty declined. In the end, she remarried with an artist of surrealism but…it seems that she didn't like that person that much. They weren't divorced because they had a son born」

Sensei says.

「It's not just Lee Miller. There's a lot of women who have their life controlled by their first sex experience that's instilled in them. I'm the same」

…Yuzuki-sensei

「I became a prostitute when I was 12. Of course I never had a boy I loved back then…raped, everyday, taking care of guests…men, sex, those things convinced me. I hate everyone」

Sensei looks at the distance.

「You see…people are really weak. As long as they have allies… They can survive the situation somehow. You'll think that you're not alone in this situation after all. Prostitutes encourage each other then hope to live somehow…Those days」

Sensei looks at the wine in the glass.

「Megumi's mother, Keiko-san, you see…I was able to become a

decent person because of her」

Megumi's mother?

「Keiko-san was deceived by Shirasaka Sousuke when she was 19 and was confined here. Then she gave birth to Megumi…and was thrown into prostitution. Keiko-san had a lover…」

…That's

「Keiko-san always talked about her lover to us. I understood that Keiko-san really loved that person. In addition, after knowing how kind Keiko-san's lover was…we were taught that there's such love outside this mansion…! We took Keiko-san's love story as our own and listened. This mansion was hell but…The outside world was wonderful. We saw that there's a kind of relationship between a man and woman that's not bought by money. Therefore…I think that I wasn't twisted by my grudge…」

Sensei drinks up the wine in the glass.
She gulps it down her throat.

「…Then there's Maika-san…convince her that a man has to have sex with the woman he likes. You raped Maika-san because you loved her so much you couldn't help it. Also…Normal men will never do it but…Yoshida-kun loves Maika-san more than anyone else so you had no choice but to do it…! Let her body remember it. Restrain Maika-san. Violate Maika-san every time she talks about other boys. Declare that she can't have sex with any man other than you…!」

…Sensei's words stick in me.

「…Is that okay?」
「It can't be helped…You already raped Maika-san. Do it thoroughly. Rape is your expression of love…Convince her that your love for Maika-san won't compare to other men」
「…We're fooling her?」
「That's right, continue to deceive her for the rest of your life! Fool and deceive her and if it goes through…She'll be convinced that today's rape was a result of too much love.[1] Change her fright into

beautiful memories…!」

But…

「What if Maika has someone she likes…?!」

I must back away.

「Yoshida-kun! Why are you looking at Maika-san from below?!」

Sensei's angry.

「You're the person concerned! Even if you lie to her or anything… Maika-san's already one of your lovers!」
「I know that…!」
「No, you don't! Isn't it your mission to fight the 『man』 who appears as a rival in love for Maika-san?!」

…My mission?

「Isn't that obvious?! You like Maika-san so much that you forcibly raped her and made her your 『Woman』! You must not just easily back down on whoever appears! Fight with all your power! Get ready to not hand her over to any other men even if you die…!」

…That's right.
It is as Sensei said.
That's something I must do.

「In the first place…your relationship with Maika-san can't just have some strong opponent who can kidnap Maika-san from the side, or else Maika-san will never be happy! Blow away those novice men…I order you!」

…Sensei.

「Yes, Understood!」

I answer.

「I'm telling you…It's the same for other girls. Katsuko, Nagisa, Megumi, and Misuzu-san…Love them to death. Think that you

should never hand them over to other men. Those girls won't be with a 『Man』 without that spirit…!」
「…Yes, I'm ready」

Sensei smiles.

「…Yoshida-kun, you cannot easily die now」

…Right.
I have to make them happy.

「Live with all your effort…Not for your sake but for those girls」

…Yeah
I have to live for those girls.
…But

「Uhm…Sensei, what about Nei-san?」 2

Why did Nei-san's name not come up?

「…Nei's okay for now…You don't have to think of Nei as your 『Woman』 until she's ready to give her virginity to you」

Sensei speaks coldly.

「But…I also treasure Nei-san」

Sensei glares at me…

「You have to differentiate! You have to give priority to the 『Women』 you have right now don't you? If not, it will be rude for them!」

…Certainly, it might be so
…But

「I'm not telling you to abandon Nei but…you need to identify who you should prioritize. Decide it right now」

…Sensei urges me for a decision.

「Listen…You're on a boat with everyone and that boat is sinking.

You have to decide who's going to be picked up by the rescue boat in order. Katsuko, Nagisa, Nei, Megumi, Misuzu-san, Maika-san… Decide on your priorities」

…That's

「If I was Yosihda-kun…I would make the order of Misuzu-san, Megumi, Nagisa, Nei, Katsuko, and Maika-san」

Sensei says.

「Misuzu-san is Kouzuki-sama's grandchild so I'll help her first. Next would be Megumi. She's my treasure. Next is Nagisa. She has to get on as there's also Mao. Nei's next. Katsuko is after her. Maika-san will be the last one…!」

Sensei doesn't like Maika?

「…What about you? Answer right now!」

…If it was me

「The youngest, Maika would go first. Next is Megumi, then Misuzu. After that, Nei-san. Nagisa-san…Though I'm sorry, Katsuko-nee would be the last」

Yeah…I think that should be.

「…Yoshida-kun's evaluation of Nei is too high」

Sensei's a bit surprised.

「…Because, isn't Nei-san Beautiful?」

I reply.

「Well…There's that part where you still haven't had sex with Nei. Put Nei for last. Nei's the most postponed」
「…That's」
「Yoshida-kun…You do know that men aren't skillful don't you?」

Sensei says in a slightly ridiculous tone.

「I do」
「You should give priority to those you want to help first. Nei's okay to be put off for later…Margo and I are with her…」

…Right.
Nei-san doesn't need my help in particular.

「Anyway…Prioritize those who are already your 『Woman』 Okay?!」

Sensei strongly orders me.

「…Yes, understood」

I couldn't answer but that.

「But, I feel relieved…Yoshida-kun understands it」
「…What?」
「The order Yoshida-kun just said is the same as the order of the girls who don't trust Yoshida-kun yet…!」

…Eeeeh?
…In short.
Maika doesn't trust me that much?
I know that…
But…Is Megumi the same?

「Do you remember what Megumi said recently?」

…Err

「She's always saying 『I want you to violate me』 or 『Sex Slave』 doesn't she?」

…Sensei's watching properly.

「Don't you think that's the similar reaction to Misuzu before she completely trusted you?」

…I see.
Her fear of sex is strong so she's saying that she wants to be violated by force.

Her trust in me is still thin so…She says she's okay with being a 『Sex Slave』 oppositely.
Megumi's words are all turned upside down…!

「…You got it. Please be careful with Megumi. She's been overdoing it since earlier this morning」

She declared to her senpais in club that she'll bear my child.
Megumi's cornering herself on purpose.

「The fear of reality…makes her run in a strange direction. You know that Shirasaka Sousuke plans to turn Megumi into a prostitute don't you?」
「…Yes」
「I was able to prevent it somehow but…We need to pull her from the Yamamine house for that sake. We can't trouble Yamamine-san after all…」

Yamamine house is indebted with Shirasaka house…

「Right now…She's under considerable stress. Among them, she gave her virginity to you and left all of the decision making over her life to you…」

…Megumi

「But…That doesn't mean she loves you from the bottom of her heart. You were just there by chance…that's why Megumi wanted you. Megumi's a kind girl so she threw herself to Yoshida-kun because her body is wanted」

Thus…Megumi gave her virginity to me…

「The present doesn't matter…The problem is the future」

Sensei looks at me…

「I'll ask of you…take care of Megumi. Truly love her. Don't make her regret that she gave her virginity to you…!」

…I

「…Yes, understood」

I take Sensei's words heavily…

「It's not just Megumi though…Katsuko, Nagisa…Nei and Margo too…Don't disappoint them. Everyone believes in Yoshida-kun…!」

…Before I noticed.
I made bonds with various people.
If those people believe in me…
I must not betray them…!

「Anyway…Cherish those children. There's no turning back …!」

Sensei tells me.

「Got it…I'll do my best」

Anyway…I have to do my best.
There's nothing left.

「Going back to our topic…It's a courtesy for a man like you to wish for sex with your own 『Woman』 It's not just for Maika-san…the other girls too」

Misuzu, Megumi, Katsuko-nee and Nagisa-san too…

「Women will feel happy if you ask for sex yourself… You don't understand that feeling do you?」

…I don't understand it at all.
I really didn't think about them.
In the end…I just protected myself.
To prevent them from hating me…
I never noticed what those women want from me.

「…I think that it's troublesome but it's something you have done so take complete responsibility」

Sensei's words make my back shiver.

「…I'll do my best!」

Sensei smiles at me.

「Anyway…Maika-san's first. You're going to rape her by this evening. While everyone's watching. After that…Maika will meet Megumi」

…Megumi?

「Making her meet Magumi and letting her be aware that both of them are Yoshida-kun's 『Woman』 we'll finish with this for today. This kind of recovery won't work if time passes by… Maika-san will go to Ikeda clinic after this. That's why, have sex with her even if she complains about the pain. Ejaculate inside Maika-san's womb okay?」

Sensei says…

「Yes…Understood」

Apart from Megumi…I'm honestly surprised Sensei's thinking this much about Maika.

「…Then, we're going to have Maika-san stay here today. Someone else will be with you two and she'll sleep in the same bed as you tonight . It will be dangerous for her to return home today. Once she's left alone, the rape will flash back to her.」

Maika cannot be alone.

「The fear will be reproduced and Maika-san will establish the recognition that it's an unpleasant memory. Once that happens, she can no longer recover…That's why you will be with her all the time tonight. Don't ever leave her. Don't even let her go alone to the restroom」

I have to be with Maika the whole night.
…I can't let her go alone in the bathroom.

「Embrace Maika-san and sleep tonight. Then, wake her up calmly while still embracing her tomorrow… Then, I think most of her fear towards you will disappear…」

…Yuzuki-sensei

「…Sensei, why are you thinking that far for Maika?」

…Even though she's the lowest on Sensei's priorities earlier?
Sensei makes an unpleasant face.

「…I don't care whatever happens to her」

…Eh?

「Maika-san's Shirasaka's daughter…Actually, I want to sell her to a foreign brothel」

…S-Sensei?

「…Then why?」
「…I'm thinking for your sake! So that you won't feel unhappy!」

…Y-Yuzuki-sensei?

「I'm a high school teacher but I've never done anything teacher-like. I just registered there as a talent scout for 『Kuromori』…I was never a homeroom teacher once these five years. I'm not an adviser for any clubs either. I go around being an English teacher just to look for girls becoming candidates…」

Sensei smiles.

「I want to become teacher-like for Yoshida-kun. I want to teach you as my final act…then resign as a teacher」

Sensei became a teacher for 『Kuromori』…
If her revenge against Shirasaka Sousuke ends…Kuromori will be completely closed.
Yuzuki-sensei doesn't need to remain a teacher anymore…

「I'll tell you my priority order right now…!」

Sensei says with a soft smile.

「In my case…Yoshida-kun, Agnes, Megumi, Nei, Katsuko, Yukiyo,

Nagisa, Margo, Misuzu-san, and Maika… 」

…Sensei

「 I want to be trusted by Yoshida-kun more. I'm most worried about you…! 」

Yuzuki-sensei says.

「 You're my final student… 」

◇ ◇ ◇

Coming back to the dining room…Everyone's still talking.
When it's just between girls, they're noisy.

「 Oooh! Yo-chan! How was it? What did Sensei tell you? 」

Nei-san asks me.
Though she drank plenty of wine, she's not blushing at all.
Nei-san…are you strong at drinking?

「 …I can put Nei-san for later so I have to love Maika and Misuzu the most! 」

I answer honestly!

「 What's that?! Sensei you meanie! 」

Nei-san is in bad temper…

「 As expected of Yuzuki-sama! She knows it well! 」

Misuzu comes to me.

「 We've been permitted by Yuzuki-sama so, Maika-san, let's get loved a lot! 」

Misuzu tells Maika, but…

「 …Y-Yes 」

Maika got tense from the word 『Loved』

「…Misuzu?」
「Yes? Danna-sama?」

I embrace and kiss Misuzu.
After that, I massage her naked ass under her skirt.

「…W-What are you doing?!」

Misuzu trembles in surprise.

「…Doing what Sensei told me. If I really love you, then I must not hold back」

I tell Maika and Misuzu.

「I really like Misuzu so I will touch Misuzu, kiss…and have sex with Misuzu. I was told to demand more by myself…!」

Maika's frightened by my words.
Then…Misuzu smiled.
She's secretly surprised…
Misuzu's internal unrest…when I heard Sensei's explanation, I understood it.
Though it's not scary for her to lean by herself…Misuzu's not used to being wanted by me.
She's feeling fear from a man's desires.

「That's right, as expected of Ojou-sama…! It's been too much of girls wanting you until now. I think it's okay to be more aggressive…!」

Katsuko-nee tells me.

「…Katsuko-nee」

I want Katsuko-nee's lips…
I kiss Katsuko-nee.

「Misuzu…Let me touch your ass more. I like the feeling of Misuzu's ass」

When I said 「Like」, Misuzu's perplexed face turned bright

instantly.

「Do you really like Misuzu's ass?!」
「That's right. I'm saying that I love it」

Misuzu jumps into my arms!

「I'm glad! Please touch it!」

Misuzu doesn't break her posture of giving herself to me until the end.
Well…There's no helping that for now.
My current target is Maika…
I'll hold Maika with Misuzu as a base…
I'll rape her once again…!

---

1. Will kill you～ ↩
2. EN: what ABOUT Nei san?～ ↩

100. Threat and Decision

「…Nfufu! Danna-sama, open your mouth!」

I opened my mouth wide and Misuzu puts a spring roll in my mouth using chopsticks…
Yup…Kastsuko-nee's spring rolls are delicious.
The spicy sauce works…!

「Danna-samaaa…Is it delicious?」

Misuzu's face closed up to me.
Misuzu's smiles in satisfaction…

「…… !」

Maika's looking at us.

I sit on the sofa and Misuzu's on top of my legs.
Misuzu carries dim sum on a saucer then to my mouth with chopsticks…
My hands are busy touching Misuzu's ass since a while ago.

「…Aaaahn! If you touch it that much, it'll feel good!」

Misuzu's hot breath reaches my ear…

「Then, should I stop touching you…?」
「Geez, Danna-sama you meanie!…Is Misuzu's buttocks pleasurable?」

Misuzu's eyes are melting…

「Yeah…It feels soft and good…!」

Women's ass are far thicker than men.
That's why it's soft and fluffy and yet…It's temperature is lower than men.
It's not chilly but…Still, it's slightly cold.
That feel is pleasurable.

「…Do you like Misuzu?」
「…I do」
「Nfufufu!…Misuzu also loves you!」

I kissed Misuzu…

「…Ahn! Danna-sama's mouth has the taste of spring roll sauce!」
「Misuzu's mouth tastes like lemon…!」

Misuzu rubs her cheeks to my face…!

「…What is the taste of Danna-sama's tongue?」
「…Taste it」

I stick out my tongue

「…Itadakimasu!」

Misuzu slurp my tongue.

…Maika's watching.
She's watching us flirt…

「…How is it?」

Misuzu answered with a smile.

「I can't tell the taste but…My heart's beating so fast…!」

Misuzu rubs her breasts on my own chest…

「…Misuzu wants it now」

Misuzu wants to be spoiled by me.

「No no…You promised just a while ago don't you? Maika would be first」

I look at Maika.
Maika lowers her eyes quicklyt.

「Maika's fine later…I can be postponed for later…」

Misuzu licks my ears.

「Yeah…I promise」
「I'm happy!」
「In exchange…I want Misuzu to help me with my sex with Maika later. I think Maika's still in pain」
「…Yes. Danna-sama」

Misuzu calls Maika…

「It's okay, it's Maika-san's second time. Your hymen's torn already so it won't be as painful as your first!」

Misuzu said brightly, but…
Maika's face is gloomy.

「…There's the possibility that it's still painful on the second time!」

Katsuko-nee comes holding a big plate.

「The torn hymen may be turned up and get stuck with the penis」

As expected of Katsuko-nee, she knows a lot about this.

「If possible, Maika-san's body shouldn't have sex for today anymore but…Do you want to do it by all means?」

Katsuko-nee looks down at me.

「…I want to. Or rather, I definitely want to do it!」

Maika shuddered from my determination…

「…Why/」

Katsuko bent her waist and closed up to me.
I kissed her lips.

「Geez…Don't joke around and answer me!」

Katsuko-nee's face is laughing but…She must be worried about Maika. Her eyes are serious.

That's why I answered seriously.

「…Maika's first sex was quite bad. Therefore I want to do it over again」

Maika turned to me in surprise.

「Maika's first experience must be pitiful if it was rape…I want to embrace her properly on top of a bed…!」

Katsuko-nee's pleased by my answer.

「Right…If you're going to do it over again, it won't have any meaning if it's not today!」

Misuzu nodded.

「…Certainly! Misuzu thinks it is a very good idea」

Maika's face shakes in fear.
…She has to experience that horrible experience once again after all.
I ignored Maika's expressions and said.

「…It'll be different this time. Maika will be watched over her sisters…and will be embraced by me with their blessings!」

It seems to be a splendid thing…
That the scene of sex will be seen by everyone.

「…Katsuko-nee, can you take photographs as I embrace Maika?」

Maika trembled in response…!

「…Taking photos?」

Maika's face is frightened…

「Yeah, it's a commemoration of Maika's lifetime event…!」

I look at Maika showing a natural face…

「Maika doesn't want to be photographed… I'll be troubled」

Misuzu spoke to Maika who has a gloomy face.

「That's okay Maika-san…we won't show it to other people. No one can see it but Danna-sama and the 『Sister's club』 members」
「…But」
「You see…Misuzu also had photos. Photos of my first time with Danna-sama…! Of course I was still a virgin there! Misuzu's first kiss, virginity, all of it were given to Danna-sama!」

Misuzu clings to me.

「…Maika-san's the same isn't it?」

Katsuko-nee who's already not a virgin spoke to Misuzu looking sullen.

「Oh, that's right! Maika-san and Misuzu-san are the same!」

Misuzu's happily informing Maika but…Miaka's expression doesn't clear up…

「Then, Misuzu will take photo souvenirs too! I'll show my lost virgin photo to everyone.」

Misuzu smiled.

「…Katsuko-nee can we take a look?」
「Err…We can see it on the laptop but you have to wait because I will bring the data. The personal information are managed in my room」

Katsuko-nee puts the big plate in front of me while saying that.

「…Margo-sama's share is already partitioned. This is all what's remaining so eat all of it!
「…Okaay～!」

I throw more dim sum in from the plate to my mouth steadily.

「…Amazing, you're still eating」

Maika's simply surprised…

As a matter of fact…I've already eaten a lot.

「…This one will never leave behind any meal I make. I'll eat until the last grain!」

Katsuko-nee told Maika proudly.

「…Well, Katsuko-nee's meal are delicious!」

I answered while munching it all down.

「…He's really kind」

Katsuko-nee's words made Maika puzzled.

I who's been flirting with Misuzu since earlier…
I who declared that I'll redo Maika's lose of virginity once again mercilessly in public…
I who's eating up the remaining lunch with all my effort…

All of them are me.
But…in Maika's eyes, she can only see it as a split personality.

I who raped Maika in the raining garden…
I who washed Maika's foot in the bathroom…
I who's adored by Misuzu and Katsuko-nee…

Maika's looking at me.
Staring…in worry.

「…Fuu, I'm hungry. Where's my share?」

Then…Margo-san comes in.
Margo-san's having a sporty look with Beige leather jacket and brown slacks.

「My…What's wrong?」

Katsuko-nee asks Margo-san.
Margo-san shook her head.
It seems that the investigation on Cesario Viola didn't go well.

「…What about Ojou-sama?」
「I reported to her earlier…Where's Nei?」
「…Nei-san is resting there!」

Misuzu pointed at Nei-san who's sleeping peacefully in the table.
Nei-san drank quite a lot of wine.
We had a lot on the first…Or rather, I just licked it a bit.
Nei-san drank it all alone…
When I took the bottle to Yuzuki-sensei, the bottle's already down to half.

「…Seriously, you're so hopeless Nei」

Margo-san said then hand her jacket to Nei-san.

「Margo-sama…I've prepared your meal there. Should I warm it up?」

Margo-san replied…

「That's okay…I'm really hungry」

Margo-san takes a seat then begins her meal.

「Speaking of which, I heard it from Minaho but…You're forming something called 『Sister's club』?」

Margo-san asks.

「Yes, Misuzu, Katsuko-sama, Nei-san and Maika-san have sworn to be 『Sisters』 who love Danna-sama!」

Misuzu answered proudly
Maika's still gloomy.

「Hee…Yoshida-kun, it'll get harder from now on」

Margo-san looks at me then chuckles…

「…Margo-sama won't enter?!」

Misuzu invites…Margo-san?

「…Me? Not now…」

Margo-san answered while smiling wryly.

…Margo-san?
…Not now?

「I don't have any sexual relationship with Yoshida-kun…I like him but I'm in a slightly different direction from everyone」

…Different direction?

「Anyway…Thank you for your invitation but I decline. You can all enjoy『Sister's club』…!」

Margo-san's bright smile shocked Maika.

『…I shouldn't forced myself to enter』

That's what Maika's expression says.

「…… ! 」

Maika's face is dyed in despair and regret…
Maika was convinced by the flow and atmosphere of the place that she has to enter the 『Sister's club』
She never had the resolution to become my sex partner or to not have sex with other men.
No…In the first place, Maika didn't imagine losing her virginity today…
A 14 year old middle school girl.
She's forced to go through horrible experience for these past few hours.
…Then
Right now…Margo-san in front of Maika refused to enter 『Sister's Club』
The thought『I should've refused』…Is plunging in Maika darkly…

「Then…what happened? Maika-chan already had sex with Yoshida-kun…?」

Margo-san asked as if it's natural…

It has the same feel as『It seems that the neighbor's cat gave birth already』…

Margo-san's doing it on purpose.

Margo-san met Yuzuki-sensei before coming to the dining room and finished her report…
In short…She knows everything that happened.
Knowing that…She's cornering Maika.

「If you ask, it's already done! But, they'll re-do once again!」

Misuzu answered Margo-san.

「…Re-do? Why?」

Margo-san asks calmly.

「Uhm…Maika-san's lost virgin is…quite. It became a forced rape.[1] It's pitiful as her first experience…that's why they're going to do it again with everyone watching over. Danna-sama suggested it…!」

Misuzu explains.

「Hmm…Everyone's so kind to Misuzu-chan」

Margo-san munches the spring roll…

「…Uhm…Does Maika really need to have sex again immediately?」

Maika who's unable to stay silent any longer asked us…

「Uhm…That place still hurts…」

Margo-san puts down the chopsticks quietly.

「…Maika-chan, aren't you misunderstanding something?」

Her tone was gentle but Margo-san's eyes were scary.

「I think that you should understand the position you are in now…」

Margo-san's strong glance made Maika tremble.

「Yoshida-kun's too gentle with you so it's becoming a misunderstanding! Katsuko-san too! Being gentle is different from spoiling isn't it?!」

Margo-san scolded me and Katsuko-nee strongly…!

「…S-Sorry」

Let's apologize for the time being.
I don't know why she's angry though.

「…I'm extremely sorry」

Katsuko-nee lowered her head to Margo-san.

「…Maika-chan」

Margo-san looks at Maika once again…

「…Y-yes」

Maika is trembling.

「You already heard that your father has done horrible things to Yuzuki-sensei don't you? Minaho was raped when she was 12 years old and had been a prostitute all this time. All of them aren't normal sex. She's made to play abnormally pervert old men like your father…and it was a cruel act every time
「…Yes」

Maika responded in a low voice.

「Did you also hear that she experienced that hell for four years… got pregnant when she was 16 years old…and her body has become unable to bear a child anymore, do you?」
「…Yes, I've heard it. I saw her wound in the bathroom」

Maika's trembling.

「Did you know that that your father handed Minaho to a madman

who wants to wreck pregnant women?」
「…I did not know that」
「Minaho tried to protect her child with all her life. And yet, your father brought a guest that beaten up Minaho's body. She miscarried then Minaho's body has become like that…!」

Margo-san casts eyes of hatred on Maika…!

「Minaho helped me so I'm living right now. Minaho's revenge is my revenge…!」

Margo-san who was raped in an Indian settlement in the past…
Shirasaka Sousuke is a person she cannot forgive.

「…We'll corner your father. We'll show him hell on earth. That's what we have decided on」

Margo-san, Katsuko-nee and nei-san are participating Yuzuki-sensei since beginning…
As Sensei's 『Toy』

「By the way…Shirasaka family. Do you know what are our plans with you, your mother and sister?」

Margo-san asks Maika with cold eyes…

「…No」

Maika's frightened.
She's trembling…and her whole body is having goosebumps…

「First…Your mother had an affair with the manager right? We already took photos of it. It's not some scandal picture in front of hotel. It's a photo of your mother and the manager naked, having sex on top of the bed. We have a video too. We took peeping photos. The face can be seen clearly…If you want to see then I'll show it to you…!」
「I-I don't want to see that」

Maika refused in reflex.

「We're ready to announce it to the mass media anytime. We're

prepared to make it flow in the internet too. Maika-san's mother is a famous cooking adviser but…Shirasaka house is much renowned. A blood relative of the founder of a first class newspaper…I think that the mass media would take a bite on it. Your mother would be ashamed that she'll never show her face anymore…!」

Margo-san laughed.

「…Please don't do that. I beg you」

Ignoring Maika's plead, Margo-san continued talking…

「Then…Your sister. Did you know that Maika-chan's actual first partner isn't Yoshida-kun but an old man form the neighborhood?」
「…I heard it from Yuzuki-sensei」

Maika said while looking down.

「Yup. That's right. We prepared four men for you to lose your virginity to…!」

Maika's eyes opened wide…!

「We prepared four disgusting old men to rape Maika-chan in turn. That's not all…You'll be confined in this mansion and will be raped until Golden Week ends. It's not just four old men. We prepared dozens to play with you…!」

Margo-san continues her threat.

「It can't be helped you know? The number your father sold Minaho to isn't just that. She's been raped continuously every day and every night by abnormal old men from 12 to 16 years old. On top of that, Minaho's body can no longer love a man anymore…!」

Margo-san's anger and hatred are genuine…!
That's why…
The lie 『Maika's planned rape』 feels true.
Maika's believing Margo-san's story…

「Why do you think it has been changed on the last minute? Yoshida-kun asked Minaho in tears, didn't he?」

Margo-san looks at me.

「…Yoshida-kun, just what's good with a woman like Maika-chan?」

I answered.

「She's beautiful and cute…I thought I want to make her my 『Woman』」

Maika looks at me in surprise.

「Shouldn't you just confine her and make her your sex slave?… You want her to be your 『Woman』?」

Margo-san emphasized her words.

「Yes. Maika's already my 『Woman』…!」
「…Yoshida-kun, you're going to take responsibility for her?」

Maika looks at me.

「Yes, I promised Sensei. I love Maika…!」

Margo-san sighed.

「…Yoshida-kun, you're liked by Minaho. If it isn't because of you, Maika-chan won't be saved…」

Margo-san returned her eyes to Maika.

「Aren't you glad, Maika-chan? Yoshida-kun liked you. Furthermore, he loves you as one of his 『Woman』 instead of a slave. That's why…Minaho decided to overlook your mother…!」
「…Eh?」

Maika raised her voice in surprise.

「You're Yoshida-kun's loved 『Woman』 so she decided to spare your mother. …If you were Yoshida-kun's slave, she won't be spared. That's obvious」

Margo-san declared.

「Well, it's not Yoshida-kun who liked Maika-chan…Katsuko-san and Nei who turned you from a target of revenge to a『sister』is great I think. Do you get it Maika-san? You were put into 『Sister's club』because of affection」

She was entered with affection?

「…Entering the 『Sister's club』will let you off as a target of revenge. I will never make a move on Katsuko-san and Nei's 『Sister』…Katsuko-san and Nei's existence is more than a sister to me…」

Margo-san looks at Maika with strong eyes.

「But, don't forget this…I think that we should do our revenge according to our original plan. We prepared for a long time for that sake. Maika-chan's overlooked because she's Yoshida-kun's 『woman』 and Katsuko-san's 『sister』 I don't have the thought of wanting to save Maika-chan from the bottom of my heart…!」

Margo-san told Maika.

「Right now, the reason why I'm not entering the 『Sister's club』is because Maika-chan's there. I want to draw a line with Maika-chan until the revenge with Shriasaka Sousuke is over. That's my thought. I'm a core of the combat corps of the revenge…!」

Margo-san plays the hated role in purpose.
Because Maika needs a human protecting her…Katsuko-nee and Nei-san created the bindings called 『Sister's club』
On the other hand…Margo-san became the antagonist so that Maika will always look straight at reality.
To show the current situation to Maika.

「Yoshida-kun, I want you to promise me one thing…!」

Margo-san looked at me.

「…What is it?」

I replied.
Maika's staring at me.

「If you ever hated Maika-chan, just tell me. If Maika-chan isn't being affectionate to Yoshida-kun or if she's being selfish, just tell me. Or if you looked at her properly then saw her as not cute, just say it…!」

Margo-san's cornering Maika slowly.

「Then, I will resume the frozen program immediately. Maika-chan's mother would be first. If you get tired having sex with Maika-chan and don't need her anymore, I'll resume the gangbang plan again…!」

Maika's trembling.
Her frightened face looks like Yukino, I thought.
However…Yukino cries immediately.
Yukino will cry immediately…then stop thinking and just throw her feelings.
Maika's not crying, she's enduring it desperately…
She's enduring and facing the situation upfront.
Could it be that Maika's experience of being away from her parents and living her childhood in Shizuoka giving Maika's strength?
Or could it be that she's just smarter than Yukino?
I don't know…

「…She'll never be not needed. I'll never throw my own 『Woman』」

I answered.

「That said, you must not spoil her. It would trouble everyone if you just show her sympathy. You know that don't you?」
「…Yes」
「Your 『woman』 isn't just Maika-san…If Maika-san becomes a burden then be prepared to cast her away anytime…」
「…But」

…I

「It's important to say it clearly. Break of off with Maika-san clearly…」

…Margo-san
That's right…Margo-san devotes herself to the role of being hated…
I have to show a strong stance in Maika.

「…Maika」

I spoke to Maika.

「I like you. I like Maika's face. I like your body. I like your voice. I like your cute character. I want to have sex with Maika」

Maika looks at me.
She's looking at me with enduring eyes.

「Let me like Maika all the time. Become a woman who's continuously loved by me. It's an order…Okay?!」

Maika's troubled.

「…U-Uhm…」

She's hesitating on what to answer.
…Maika
She still doesn't love me as a man.
She doesn't love me.
In the first place, a 14 year old girl…doesn't know what's love and what's admiration.

…Therefore.

I corner her with cruel words.

「You don't need to like me right now…You just need to not hate me. Cling to me with your life on the line. Flatter me with all your body. Satisfy me with sex…That's what makes my 『Woman』」

Maika holds her breath.

「…Isn't that right, Misuzu?」

I turned to Misuzu.

「Yes! Misuzu will avoid to be hated by Danna-sama! I'll cling to Danna-sama and have sex until he's satisfied!」

Misuzu clings to me like a puppy.

「…Katsuko-nee?」

Katsuko-nee who's just listening all this time answered me.

「I…I'd rather die than be hated by you. I'll do anything to be loved by you. If you wish, I can get naked anywhere and be embraced anytime. I will just have sex with only you until I die…」

Katsuko-nee declared.

「…Maika, all of my 『women』 thinks like that. Maika…Become like that」

…Maika

「…I don't need to force myself to like Onii-san?」

I touched Maika's shoulder.
Maika twitched.

「Yeah…You don't need to like me forcibly…You just need to not be hated by me. Pay attention to me all the time. Have sex with me anytime I want it. Satisfy me with your body…!」

I hugged Maika.
I don't care about Maika's will…I kissed her without permission.

「…Maika's already no good. Onii-san caught me…!」

Maika said sadly.

「…Maika-chan. That's what's called 『Happiness』」

Margo-san muttered

「…Eh?」

Maika looks up.

「…It's great that there's someone who would catch you before you fall in the bottom. Try to imagine the worst possible situation today…」

Margo-san's word made me imagine it.

Betrayed by Katsuko-nee and Nei-san whom she trusted…then Maika raped by me.
Then imprison her…
Yuzuki-sensei might really have sold her off to a foreign brothel.

「…You're really lucky…!」

Margo-san's word made Maika shiver.

「Give up already, Maika…You're already my 『Woman』 That's what I decided on. Therefore, I embraced you. I'll also do that from now on. I'll have sex with you and after that, it's just about Maika accepting me or not…!」

I push Maika with cold words.

「Maika…accept Onii-san?」

Maika looks up at me.

「Yeah…reality won't change. If Maika accepts me, then we'll be able to become happy… But, if you don't accept me…Everyone will be unhappy」

The word everyone includes Maika's mother too.

「…What would you do, Maika?」

Maika finally steeled herself.

「…Got it」

She muttered.

「What did you understand?」

I let Maika speak accurately.

「…Maika was wrong. Maika depended too much on Onii-san and everyone's kindness」

Maika clings to me.

「Maika needs to make an effort so she has to be liked by Onii-san, right?」

I gently hugged Maika…

「…I want to have sex with Maika」

Maika answered me courageously even while trembling.

「Yes…Onii-san」

I embraced the trembling small body.

「…I won't stop until I get satisfied」

…This twitching small body.
It entered both my arms.

「Yes…Maika will endure it」

I told Maika.

「Don't endure it…Answer 『I'll enjoy sex』」

…Maika

「Yes…Maika will enjoy having sex with Onii-san…!」

---

1. Because there's consensual rape. Hey, who the fuck put this note?! ↩

101. Maika, re-rape (Part 1)

「…Fuaaaaaaaaaa!」

While we were severely cornering Maika…Nei-san who's been sleeping woke up and made a loud noise.
She stretched out widely…
Her pink nipples spill out of her silk clothes.
Of course, Nei-san doesn't mind it at all.
She smiled at us with a half-asleep face…

「…I just had a dream!」[1]

…Dream?
Was it a scary dream again?
No, she's smiling without care, I guess not…

「…You see, everyone from the 『Sister's club』 got pregnant with Yo-chan's child.. Katsun, Nagisa-san, Mii-chan, and Maika-chan… Everyone's holding their own child. All of them are cute babies. They're so cute that I hold all of them in turns Then…!」

Nei-san laughed 'kukuku'

「We didn't know who's child is whose…We're all panicking in my dream! Then Maru-chan came in…」

Margo-san looks doubtful.

「…Me?」
「That's right…Maru-chan told the foolish me! Kukukuku」

Nei-san laughs at us who's looking at her in surprise…

「…What did I say in Nei's dream?」

Nei-san imitated Margo-san and answered.

「… 『It doesn't matter who gave birth. Isn't all of them Nei and everyone's child』 she said…!」

…Nei-san laughs.

「…Really, it is. That's why we made the 『Sister's club』 Whichever child it is, it's all Yo-chan's child…It's the child of all in 『Sister's club』!…Hey Maika-chan, isn't that kind of thought fun?」

Nei-san talks to Maika brightly.

「…Err」

Maika's perplexed.

「Eh, isn't it so fun?! Everyone living together helping each other out with Yo-chan as the center! When a child is born, everyone would help out to raise it of course! It doesn't matter who's child it is…All of them are siblings! They might go and fight but I'm sure they'll grow up peacefully…! Yupyup…We need to make a 『Home』 like that…!」

…『Home』?!

「…Because, isn't that right? We'll be 『Family』!」

Nei-san said it as if it was natural…
We'll be 『Family』…?
I…
…Will I reach that?

「Don't make that worried face! Yo-chan has a lot of capable waifus!」

Nei-san told me laughingly, though…
Hey…Waifu?!

「『Sex Partner』 means 『Wife』 It's fine even if it's not a wife registered in a formal marriage. Common law wife is no different from a wife isn't it? What's needed is to only live with Yo-chan and have sex with only Yo-chan…!」

Nei-san explained.
In short…Polygamy?![2]

「Let's all share the housework! We can't leave Katsun do everything. In exchange…teach us how to cook okay～」
「Yes…I get it. Let's do that」

Katsuko-nee promises to Nei-san.

「…We have to look for a house where we can all live. Katsun, you're going to start a bakery don't you? There's also Nagisa-san's flower shop…What should I make?」

Nei-san talked about 『Dreams』 one after another

「Since there's a lot of children that will be born, we need a wide and sunny home! Mii-chan, how many kids do you want…?」

Misuzu got shocked as she's suddenly called.

「Misuzu…?! Misuzu would settle for one for now. I want to give birth to one first」

Misuzu answered after thinking for a while.

「…Eeeh, just one?!」
「Because…If all of 『Sister's club』 members give birth, it'll be four children already!」

Megumi who's not in here is included there.
And Yukino's womb too.

「Isn't that fine?! There's nothing scary if we raise it all! I'm sure it'll be fun! Every day's exciting and thrilling…!」 3

Nei-san said.
Maika's in blank surprise.
The 『Dream』 Nei-san is imagining as a matter of course is very far from the common sense.

「…You think that Nei's saying something strange?」

Margo-san asked Maika.

「Uhm…Maika doesn't get it…」

Maika answered while looking down.

「I know that it's not normal!…But, I want to be 『Ohana4』 with everyone」

Nei-san said.

「You do know that I don't have a family anymore, don't you? Maru-chan is always with me so I don't know but…I'm always thinking 'what will happen after this?' I'm glad I met Yo-chan!」

…Me?

「Yup…I now have a 『Dream』 Become a family with 『Sister's club』 then live together. Everyone's working and raising children, I'm sure we'll be happy…I'll become happy!」

Nei-san talked about her decision brightly…!

「…What about Misuzu-san? Do you want to participate Nei's 『Dream』?」

Margo-san asks Misuzu.

「Misuzu will follow Danna-sama forever. I also like everybody so I'll participate. Let's become 『Family』…!」

…Misuzu.

「…Misuzu-san, at what age do you want to give birth?」

Margo-san's question made Misuzu think for a bit.

「If it's a child…I'll get pregnant anytime Danna-sama wants me to! Even right now…!」

Margo-san sighed…
Then laughed maliciously.

「…MIsuzu-san, that's a failing mark. If you really intend to become 『Family』, then I think that you should confront the reality of it」

Margo-san's eyes are harsh.

「…Reality?」

Misuzu also changed to her serious face.

「Answer me seriously…Do you want to give birth to Yoshida-kun's child?」
「…I want to!」

Misuzu answered immediately.

「Right now, the 『Family Plan』 Nei talks about is just a 『Dream』 Do you think you can achieve it?」
「…Maru-chan, you're mean! It's not a 『Dream』! I'll make it a reality!」 5

…Nei-san

「…Nagisa and I can't let this 『Dream』 end either. We'll definitely make it a reality…!」

…Katsuko-nee too.

「…Misuzu-san, what about you?」

…Misuzu

「Misuzu also wants to make it a reality…!」

Misuzu looked straight up at the tall Margo-san.

「Then…You should think what to do to make that 『Dream』 a reality. You have to remove all of the obstacles realistically…!」
「…Yes」
「Think concretely without overlooking anything…Misuzu-san, at what age do you want to give birth?」

Misuzu thinks deeply.

「…I can finish high school and give birth immediately…That's impossible. There's the honor of Kouzuki house to be included…!」

Misuzu changed her face from 『My pet』 to 『Kouzuki house's daughter』 Onee-san face.

「However…I don't want to wait until I graduate from university. I'll give birth by 21 or 22 years old.」
「…21 or 22? Be clear about it」

Margo-san demands a more particular decision from Misuzu.

「Then…I'll take 22 years old」

Misuzu decided immediately.

「…What month would be the delivery?」

Margo-san pursuits further…!

「…I'll give birth during Summer vacation…It won't be hindering my study at University with that」
「Women's conception period is 280 +- 15 days. Do you know when you have to be pregnant so that you can give birth during summer vacation?」
「…I'll calculate it」
「Make a schedule now…If you're really interested in making it real…!」
「…Yes!」

『Dreams』 …will become reality…?
You have to make a concrete plan for that.
Each and every precise detail.

「Misuzu-san, which university do you intend to go? Since you're Kouzuki house's ojou-sama, it's normal for you to enter a foreign university, right?」

…Eh?

「…That was the plan but it'll be stopped. Misuzu cannot get away from Danna-sama. I'll go to a local university」

…W-wait

「…That means?」

Margo-san knit her eyebrows.

「Yes…I must pass Tokyo University」

T-Tokyo University!
Misuzu's that smart?!

「Father and Grandfather went to Tokyo University therefore… My father hates it for the reason of『Women's life in Tokyo University diminish because of marriage proposals』 Misuzu's already Danna-sama's 『Woman』 There's no choice as it's for the sake of not being brought to strange marriage talks…」

…Misuzu
That's the world for good families like Misuzu's.

「Misuzu will do anything to continue being Danna-sama's 『Woman』 Whatever it is. Even if it is fighting against Grandfather and Father…!」

You're determined to go that far.

「You can't, change your way of thinking, if you don't want to be apart from Yoshida-kun, you must never fight against your parents and Grandfather. Make them your ally」

Margo-san instructs her.

「…It is as you say. Misuzu was wrong. I think that Margo-san is right」
「You must think of the shortest path to realize the 『Dream』 Don't take a detour on purpose…It'll trouble everyone. This is everyone's 『Dream』 after all」

Misuzu nodded at Margo-san.

「Nei and Yoshida-kun, remember this…You have to think all of the possibilities, and the concrete necessities for you to be able to achieve your 『Goal』 Then, prepare for it… Take the shortest path and think of the 『Dream』 as the top priority. If not, the

「『Dream』will always be a dream…Okay?」

Nei-san and I nodded.
Margo-san looks at Katsuko-nee.

「Katsuko-san, when do you intend to give birth?」

Katsuko-nee answered with a smile.

「Nagisa wants to get pregnant right now and intends to give birth next year, right? That's why I want to give birth at the same time. I want to raise Nagisa and my child like twins. That's my dream. My first hope…!」

Katsuko-nee faced me and smiled.

「But…Revenge to Shirasaka Sousuke is the top priority right now. I must not leave ojou-sama until that ends. Therefore, I will continue drinking pills until this matter settles. That's what I decided…!」

…Katsuko-nee
Margo-san looks at me next

「…Yoshida-kun will be deciding on Maika-chan 」

…Eh?
…Me?

「…Yoshida-kun, at what age do you want Maika-chan to give birth?」

Maika looks at me with frightened eyes.
…I

「Decide right now…It doesn't matter if you change it by the situation later. But, you must decide concrete plans on the 『What and when to do』beforehand…!」

…I see
…I must prepare for everything already.
…When I determine it, I can always have a concrete plan.

Now that I made Maika my 『Woman』…
I already have to think about Maika's life plan clearly…!
How old should I make Maika give birth?
At what age I can make Maika give birth at ease?
Maika's two years younger than me.
I intend to work as soon as I graduate high school…

「…Maika, you're going to give birth by 20 years old…」

I declared.

「…Onii-san. Is that already decided?」

Maika spoke to me sadly.

「…Yeah. I just did. You don't have to worry. Until then, I'll make an environment where Maika can give birth to a child at ease. I'll do my best」

I answered.
Misuzu embraces Maika from behind.

「…We'll be together forever. We'll definitely make our 『Dreams』come true」
「…Misuzu-san」

Maika looks at Misuzu absentmindedly.
It seems that it's still difficult for her to take it as 『Reality』…

「Don't make that face! It'll definitely be fun! We're all together! We'll definitely become happy!」

Nei-san said with a bright smile…

「But, Maru-chan…Why are you not asking me when I want to get pregnant?」

…Err
…What should we do with this virgin?[6]
Margo-san smiled wryly and answered.

「Nei has a bigger problem right now…A troublesome case. We

have to take care of that first」

Nei-san's face turned gloomy

…Cesario Viola

The man coming after Nei-san from U.S…
The man who killed Nei-san's parents and brother.
…Just what kind of man is he?

「…Now then, my sermon has ended!」

Margo-san returned to her smile.

「I still have a job to do so I'll see you later. Katsuko-san, thanks for the meal. It was delicious!」

Margo-san said then left the room.

「…Nei-sama, Misuzu-san…Can you help me wash the dishes?」

Katsuko-nee told the two.

「Ah…I'll help too」

When I said that, Katsuko-nee…

「It's okay…You can just play with Maika-san」

Maika trembled.

「We'll be recording your sex so you can do anything you want but that until we finish cleaning things up」

Katsuko-nee smiled suspiciously.

「Maika-chan…We'll be in the kitchen. If you really can't stand it, then just call out loudly」

…Maika

「…Yes, got it」

Nodded small.

「Ah, Katsun, I can do cleaning up alone!」

Nei-san said.

「If I saw Yo-chan and Maika-chan's sex, I might become strange. I want to think alone for a while…!」

Nei-san said.

「Understood…Then, please」

Katsuko-nee looks at me.

「…Where do you want to have sex with Maika-chan?」

…Err

「…The room from yesterday is good」

The room where I had sex with Megumi.

「Understood…Then let's all go there」

Misuzu holds Maika's hand.

「…Now, Maika-san, let's go!」
「Y-Yes」

Maika leaves the room supported by Misuzu and Katsuko-nee from both sides.
So I can rape her once again.

◇ ◇ ◇

Immediately after entering the room from yesterday…I made Maika sit down on the bed.
The bed where I embraced Megumi yesterday.
I'll be embracing Megumi's half-sister today.

「Please wait a moment as I get the camera ready…」

Katsuko-nee comes out of the room.
I sit down next to Maika.
I felt that Maika twitched in nervousness.

「…Maika, are you scared?」

I asked…

「…A bit」

She muttered.

「The second won't be as scary. Misuzu is here with you too…
Okay?!」

Misuzu smiled at Maika.
Maika doesn't respond.

「…Maika」

I exposed my penis.
My penis is half erect already.

「…… ! ! !」

Maika shudders.
She tried to stand up and take distance from me.

「Don't, just stay there!」

…I gripped Maika's arm and didn't let her stand.

「Maika…touch it to make it bigger」

I ordered Maika.
The trembling Maika can't move.

「Maika-san…it's like this」

Misuzu squats between my feet.
Then she gently caress my penis with her fingers.

「It's not scary…Look」

Misuzu holds Maika's hands.
Then…She let Maika's hand approach my penis.

「…It's going to be okay. Let's touch it together…!」

The trembling fingers of a 14 year old girl touched my glans.
It has a different feeling with Misuzu's finger.
…The temperatures are different too.

「Touch this place gently…」

Misuzu made Maika's finger crawl behind the glans.

「…Ah, it got big」

Maika muttered…
My penis is filled with blood…!

「Maika-san touched it and Danna-sama felt good」

Misuzu smiled.

「…Maika did?」
「Yeah, Maika made me aroused」

I told Maika.

「…Onii-san's thing is hot」

The glans touched by Maika is swelling up.

「Look, it's getting wet isn't it? Men gets wet too if they feel good…!」

Misuzu explains to Maika.
Misuzu carries Maika's finger to the root of the penis.

「Make a ring with your fingers…That's right. Then you grasp it here and let it go up and down. It's okay to grip it a bit stronger… Yes, just like that」

Misuzu piled her hands on top of Maika's then stroke my penis.

「Danna-sama, does it feel god?…Misuzu was just taught by Katsuko-sama just a little so I'm not as confident however…!」

Right…Even Misuzu's experience in sex is low.
The situation of a girl with little experience teaching a younger girl who doesn't know anything gets me intensely aroused.7

「…It feels good, Misuzu, Maika…!」

The pleasure goes from my penis to my spine…!

「…Ufufu! I'm glad! Then, Maika-san, continue to do it like that. Misuzu will be sucking it!

Misuzu put my glans in her mouth while letting Maika stroke the root.
「Aun!」She said then the glans get inside Misuzu's hot and damp mouth…!
The roughness of her tongue licks my tongue like candy.

「…aaah…It feels good, Misuzu!」

Misuzu separates her mouth from my penis.
The saliva string on the tip of my penis making a bridge on Misuzu's lips…What a lewd face…

「…Misuzu, has come to love sucking!」

Msiuzu looks up at me
She sticks out her tongue and trickle the tip of my penis.

「I also like Misuzu's fellatio」
「Ufufufu, Thank you very much! I'll do this everyday!」

Misuzu makes wet sucking sounds.

「Amazing…Onii-san's thing is thumping…」

Maika who's grasping the root voices out her surprise…

「Thank you for the wait!…My, you already started?」

Katsuko-nee returned with a big camera at hand.

Both of you…face this way…Okaay～!」

Misuzu's happily holding my glans in her mouth…
Maika's touching my penis while having a frightened face…
It's photographed…

「Yup, that's great…your expressions are very vivid that it has become a lewd photo![8]」

Katsuko-nee presses the shutter one after another…

「…It got big enough already. It's Maika's turn next」

Maika shudders from my words…!

「…I want to eat Maika」
「…M-Maika's scared」

Maika's memory of rape must've revived.
She's trembling so hard.

「It's okay…It's not scary. Everyone's here with you」

Misuzu embraces Maika closely…

「…Maika, lie down on the bed」

Maika slowly faced up in the bed.
She's still wearing her silk clothing…
Her bare skin is transparent and she's not wearing panties either.
If I roll it up a bit…Her breasts and slit would be exposed.
Maika hides her breast and crotch with her hand.
She hides just her chest before.
So she's hiding her crotch now that she lost her virginity?[9]
No…There's still a lingering pain from her loss of virginity.
That's why she can't help but unconsciously hide her crotch even if she doesn't want it.
Maika imagines the pain from now on and closed her eyes tightly…

「Don't close your eyes…Look at me」

I ordered Maika.

「Okay…I'm sorry」

Maika opens her eyes.

「…If you don't open your eyes, you won't know who you're having sex with. Look at me, feel me」

Maika looks up at me.

「…Onii-san」

Maika talks to me.

「Maika already understood what kind of situation she's in. Whatever is done to me…even if I get killed it can't be helped.」

…Maika

「We don't want to torment Maika」
「I know that…Katsuko-san, Nei-san and Misuzu-san made Maika their ally」

Maika's eyes is dyed with color of sorrow.

「I understood that Onii-san isn't a bad person. I think that you're a gentle and a good person…but」

Maika said

「When Onii-san says that he likes Maika…I can't believe it by all means」

…Eh?

「Onii-san said it right? That you like Maika, you want to make her yours so much that you raped Maika…」
「…Yeah」
「Maika understood that since Onii-san raped Maika, she won't have to suffer anymore. That's why I've given up being raped. I'm prepared to continue to be raped by Onii-san from now on. Maika

will give birth to Onii-san's child…it's for Mama and Onee-chan's sake. Maika will accept it all…!」

Maika throws out her feelings.
But, Maika's not crying.
…She's different from yukino.
This girl has a strong heart…

「But, Maika…cannot believe by all means that Onii-san likes Maika…」

Maika fixed her eyes on me and said.

「Why? Isn't Maika very cute? I think that it's genuine when Danna-sama said that he likes Maika-san」

Misuzu follows up from the side…

「Maika's not cute. Maika's still a child…there's no way Onii-san will like Maika」 10

Maika said…

「…Why do you think?」
「Because…Everyone around me, Katsuko-san, Nei-san, and Misuzu-san are all beautiful ladies…these people all likes Onii-san and happily talks about giving birth to his child…! Maika's no match to everyone!」

That's Maika's complex.

「I know. Onii-san just pities Maika don't you? You felt sorry for Maika being messed up by unknown old men…so you took charge of me from Yuzuki-san?! You don't really like Maika don't you! Isn't that right?!」

…Maika

「That's not true…I really like Maika」
「…That's a lie. Please tell me the truth. It's okay. Maika will have sex with Onii-san. I will take care of Onii-san from now on. I'll give birth to your child. I promise that. But…I don't want to be told the

lie『Like』…! Please say『I don't like you』clearly. Then, Maika will…』

Maika looks up at me with lonely eyes…

「I've already given up on everything. I'll become Onii-san's slave… therefore」

…I

「…I really like you, Maika」
「…Enough with that lie」
「It's not a lie…I'm telling the truth」

I look down at Maika…

「I…The first girl I liked really resembles Maika」

Maika is Yukino's little sister.
They really look alike.

「Therefore I like Maika's face.」

Maika's eyes open wide suddenly…!

「I don't get my heart well. We just met after all. But, I like Maika's face. That's why I wanted to save you. I thought I want to make you mine…That's all」

I can tell Maika's body relaxing.

「…Really?」
「Really…I fell in love with Maika's face. Just your face. But, I came to like you」

Those were my honest feelings.

「…Are you really okay with Maika? Maika's face isn't that cute you know?」
「…I think it's cute」

Maika laughed lightly.

It's still an awkward smile but…but still, I'm glad that I saw her smile.

「Got it…Maika will give herself to Onii-san」

Maika released her hands hiding her breasts and crotch.

「…Please do as you like」

---

1. I, Nei, have a dream!!! GOLD EXPERIENCE! ↩
2. I want to put Harem but we're talking about husband and wife relationship ↩
3. Yeah, like changing diapers and waking up late at night because the child is crying. ↩
4. Ohana means family ↩
5. GOLD EXPERIENCE REQUIEM! ↩
6. Maybe offer her to Zeus? Zeus likes virgins ↩
7. I guess this is why he becomes a lolicon ↩
8. It has a girl sucking on a man's dick, if it's not lewd then Aphrodite's sculptures aren't as well!! ↩
9. We need to test that out, we need more data ↩
10. Stop, don't go the lolicon path! ↩

102. Maika, re-rape (Part 2)

「…You like Maika's face so you want to have sex with Maika don't you? It's okay…Onii-san can do what he wants」

Maika who resigned herself relaxed on top of the bed.
She turned her lonely face towards the ceiling.
Two eyes1…tall nose.
Just a few more years and she'll become an exceptional beauty.

「…What's wrong, Danna-sama?」

Misuzu asked me who fell silent.
I look at Katsuko-nee without answering Misuzu…

「…Hey, Katsuko-nee」
「…You're curious about something?」

Katsuko-nee smiled at me.

「…Why are women like this?」

Why do they easily give up?
She prepared herself to be embraced by me…
She's allowing me to her body by herself…
Misuzu and Megumi are the same.

「You see…That's because the girls around you are all cute…!」

Katsuko-nee answered.

「Everyone's a beauty aren't they?…Women have their pride. Therefore, they would rather 『Give』 instead of being 『Robbed off』」

…『Give』?

「If they willingly gave their body, then their own pride won't be hurt…!」

…I see.
…That's right.
Everyone woke up in that reality so they try to fix the course so that their pride won't be hurt2
Thinking 『It can't be helped』 …then forcibly swallowing it.
Doing that…after having sex with me…their real intent is different.

Misuzu completely became my sexual 『Pet』
Megumi declared that she's going to bear my child in front of her club seniors.
Maika tried to make friends with me in the bathroom after I raped her.

All of it are different from their real intent.
Therefore all of their actions were excessively strange…

Misuzu became stable after piling skins with me multiple times. It's still excessive however.
I must check Megumi's state after this.
Then…Maika.

I can't leave her like this…

I spoke to Maika.

「…Maika. You're misunderstanding something…!」

Maika looks at me while having an 「Eh?」face

「I don't want to embrace Maika who's just lying down like a corpse…!」

…I lay my body next to Maika.
Maika tried to escape from me by reflex.
I didn't allow that…
I forcibly made Maika who's facing upwards face me.
Maika and I are looking at each other as mirror opposites on top of the bed.
We're lying down as two parallel lines…
My penis is sticking out between me and Maika.

「…Touch it. Maika」

Just like that…I made Maika touch my penis once again.

「…How's my dick?」

Maika's trembling.

「…I-It's hard…and hot」

Then I said.

「Touch it more…Make me feel good…!」

…Maika
She began caressing my glans like earlier.
The shaking of her hand doesn't stop…

「Don't look at my dick, look at my face…Maika!」

Maika looks at me with frightened eyes.

「What kind of face am I making?」
「…Scared. Onii-san has a very scary face」

Maika said.

「Then…Change it to pleasure with Maika's hand」

I gave her an absurd order.

「…Pleasure?」

Maika seems to not know…

「Touch my dick in various ways. Try to touch it here and there.
Look at my face and search on which places feels good…!」

Maika's finger move slowly.
But, Maika's hand is hesitating…It's not moving well…!

「Here…Touch here!」

I pressed the backside of my glans on Maika's fingers…

「…H-Here?」

Wet with Misuzu's saliva from a while ago, my glans goes slippery.
Maika's fingers rubs a pleasure point
…Uu!

「…Onii-san, does it feel good?」

Maika's looking at my face in surprise.

「…Yeah…Try to touch it there…stronger!」
「…Like this?」

Maika's small hands picks up my glans.

「…T-That's right. Can you tell that I'm feeling good?」
「…Un. I do. I can tell」

Maika looks at me.
I'm also looking at Maika.
Our faces have a distance of not more than thirty centimeters…

「Maika…stick out your tongue」
「…Eh?」
「I'll lick Maika's tongue」

Maika prepared herself.
Facing me, she stick out her tongue.,
I stretched my neck and sucked on her tongue.
Our mucous membranes intersect…
Maika's making a pained face.

「…Maika, do you hate me licking your tongue?」
「…Err」

Maika stops her hand

「Don't stop your hands…continue touching my dick」
「…Yes, Onii-san」

Once again, Maika moved her hand restlessly.

「Let me ask you again. Maika…How do you feel when we twine our tongues?」
「Somehow…It feels strange. It makes me shiver」
「I don't care about your impressions…Say if you like or hate it」

I asserted coldly.

「…Be honest. You can't lie to please me」

Maika's face turned gloomy.

「…I'll immediately know if you're lying」

I want to know the truth.

「…I-I hate it」

Maika answered in a small voice.

「Of course you do…Licking a man's tongue of the man you met for the first time today would be something you'd hate」

That's the proper reaction…
In this short time…furthermore, a man who raped her suddenly, Maika shouldn't be liking it.

「…Yes」

Maika mutters in pain…

「Then…Maika, one more」
「…Eh?」
「…Stick out your tongue」

Maika gave up and stick out her tongue
Then I lick up her tongue.

「…How is it?」
「I really hate it. I don't want to do this…!」

Maika strongly endures it…!

「That's not it…Not Maika, but mine, what kind of face I'm

making?」
「…Onii-san」

Maika's face shows 「???」
I told Maika.

「…I'm going to confirm how Maika feels on each and every thing.
Therefore, Maika should take a look on how I feel too…!」

I kissed Miaka.
Pushed my tongue in Maika.
I twined with Maika's tongue in her mouth.

「…How is it, what kind of face I'm making?」
「Onii-san's making such pleasured face」
「Yeah…I feel good. Feeling Maika's tongue makes my spine shiver.
What's happening to my dick now?」

Maika confirms the penis in her hand.

「It's bigger and hotter than a while ago…!」

Maika reported…
She's making a surprised and puzzled face.
I kissed Maika's lips.

「I took Maika's first kiss…right?」
「…Y-yes」

Maika tries to look away from me.

「Don't…Look at me! Just look at my eyes!」

Maika's eyes reflects me…

「Maika, what did you think when I took your first kiss?」
「…I thought that it can't be helped.」
「…Don't lie」

I glared at Maika.
I can see her heart from a short distance.
I can clearly see the lies from the truth.

「What's the truth?」
「…I'm regretting it」

Maika answered.

「…Maika's first kiss is something like that…!」

Maika spoke her frustration while looking at me.

「…I see」

I kissed Maika once again…

「…Why are you kissing Maika?」

Maika said with a slightly angry face.
She can't hide the irritation in her heart.

「I want to so I'll kiss Maika's lips again and again…!」

I kissed her once again. And again and again.

「Maika…doesn't want it. Don't want to…!」

Bit by bit…Maika's cover in her heart comes off.
Her raw and wounded true feelings appears.
I step into Maika's heart deeper…!

「…Maika, how you feel when you had sex with me?」

Maika's face had a color of hatred appearing in her face…!

「It hurts…It was so painful…!」

Still, Maika's different from Yukino…
She's not crying and closing up her heart.
She's staring straight at me…she shows her serious desire to fight me.

「I don't care about Maika's body…What I want to know is Maika's heart!」

I provoked Maika even more…!

「Were you happy when you had sex with me?」

…Maika

「There's no way I would be happy! That kind of thing…!」

She glares at me strongly…!

「…You stopped moving your hand」

…… !

Maika's hand caressed my penis…
Frustrated…in pain.

「I was really happy…when I had sex with Maika. I felt really good…!」
「Maika felt pain…. Sadness…just pain and misery…Maika thought she'd die…!」
「You won't die…Maika will have sex with me forever after all…!」
「…Maika doesn't want that…!!!」

Maika and I throw our true feelings at each other…!

「Maika lost her virginity from being raped by me, right?」
「…That's right. Maika is…!」

Huge emotions well up inside Maika…!
Maika tries to hold down those feelings desperately…!
She's doing her best to swallow it…!
That's why I hit my next move!

「…Maika. What do you think of me?」

From the physical sex talk, I change direction to the mental talk!
Maika's true feelings instinctively spills out…!「」

「…Hate. I hate you so much!」

The eyes of a 14 year old girl hates me.
This…Maika's feelings becomes exposed.

「But…You'll become my sex partner, right? You're going to give birth to my child when you're twenty, right? You promised me a while ago…!」

I penetrate Maika's heart even deeper…!

「Because…well…if Maika didn't do that…Onii-san will just do it, right?! Onii-san wants to make Maika his slave, right?…!!!」

Maika's feelings that were piled up now explodes.
…I

「Maika…How's my penis right now? Take a look…!」

Maika looks at my penis.
The erection is already at the maximum.

「I'm aroused…Thinking that I'll have sex with Maika again, I feel shivery…!」

Maika glares at me…!

「…Pervert. Is it fun bullying a middle school girl…?!」
「I'm not aroused at a middle school girl…I'm aroused at Maika!」

I bend over to Maika!

「…N-Noo!」

I get on Maika's waist and hold down her hands!!!

「Now…Let's have sex, Maika!」

Maika shouts her bare heart!

「…No! No! I don't want this! Noooo!!!」

I hold Maika and waited until she calms down.
While holding Maika's body down…

「……？？？！」

Maika got confused as I'm not doing anything then looks up at me.

I look down at Maika's face.
…Our eyes met.

「Maika…Why do you think we need to have sex?」

I asked.

「Isn't that because Onii-san wants to rape Maika?」

I purposely hurt Maika's heart.

「…Do you think that your body is a body I want to rape?」

Maika fell silent.

「I have Misuzu. Katsuko-nee…I don't have troubles when it comes to partners」

…Maika

「I'm sure Onii-san is a lolicon[3] You just want to rape Maika's childish body…!」

I smiled wryly.

「Why would a man who has Katsuko-nee as his sex partner be a lolicon?」
「…That's」

Maika's having an inferiority complex to Katsuko-nee who has the charm of an adult…
She's under the impression that she's so childish and has no charm as a woman.
Therefore, this 『reason』 is the most painful for Maika…

「Maika…It's not because of your small body that I want to rape you…!」

I look at Maika.

「I'll rape your heart!」

Maika shivered…

「Then…I'll make you completely mine…!」

Miaka looks up at me…!

「…Why? Why are you doing this horrible things…?」

Maika told me in a small voice.
…I

「If I make your mind and body completely my woman…I can risk my life for Maika…!」

I finally understood what Yuzuki-sensei is saying.
Why do I have to prioritize my 『Women』…and why do I have to put Nei-san whom I haven't done yet for later…
Nei-san and I didn't have sex yet.
We don't have the bond of heart from the sex.
It's not good that we have a relation without having sex.
We're not even real siblings or parent and child either…
You can't risk your life for one if you didn't have a love relationship where you present each other's mind and body.
You must not risk your life for something incomplete.
Above all…It would be rude for the other 『Women』 who already entrusted their mind and body to me…

「…What Onii-san is saying is absurd. You're raping Maika for Maika's sake? Isn't that just Onii-san wanting to rape Maika? Why does Maika have to thank Onii-san for raping Maika?! This is cruel! Strange! Insane!」

…Yup. Of course.
This is certainly insane.
…But.

「If there's something delicious in front of me, I just eat without thinking about anything! I'll just think after eating. I'll use my whole body and soul to take responsibility for it…!」

This is the way of 『Kuromori』

「Maika…I already ate you. There's no going back.[4] I'll take responsibility of you until I die. But, before that…!」

I strengthen my resolve…

「I'll completely devour you. Your mind and body…!」

I try to insert my erect penis to Maika…!

「…I don't want this! No, no, noooooo!」

Miaka shouts in fear…!
The tears she endured until now gushed out…!
The 14 year old girl…Maika cries out!

「…Wait」

Katsuko-nee called out to me from the back…!

「Let's use lotion. Maika-chan's hardly wet…!」

Katsuko-nee brings a semitransparent bottle.
Then drip the liquid on Maika's genital.

「…C-Cold!」

Maika's body jumps in surprise.

「…I'm applying it inside too」

Katsuko-nee spreads Maika's clit then pushed in the mouth of the bottle.
Then squeezed the bottle…!

「…Ah!」

Maika's mouth opened and closed like a fish.
The lotion pours inside Maika's vagina.

「…Cruel. Katsuko-san, you're cruel」

Maika spoke her complaint to Katsuko-nee.

「It's not cruel…Become a real 『woman』」

Katsuko-nee told Maika.

「…You cannot be a real 『woman』 if you just experience sex. I understood that after I was embraced by him. Exposing all of your mind and body…then eating up each other… That's where the bonds form…!」

Maika shook her head.

「Maika doesn't understand that, Maika doesn't understand what Katsuko-san is saying…!」
「…Experience it. You'll understand if you do」

Katsuko-nee holds Maika's shoulder…!

「…Katsuko-san?」

Maika's surprised.

「I'll hold down Maika-san…Hurry up!」
「…Yeah」

I placed my erection to Maika's slit.
The glans can feel the slimy lotion.

「…No, nooo…This is cruel Katsuko-san…Katsuko-san, help meeeee!!」

I…
Thrust it in…!!!

「…Ouuuuch!!!」

Maika shouted…!
Maika's experiencing a second rape today!

「…I-It's tight」

The invasion of the glans is resisted…!
But, it was a body I violated once already.
I slowly slip inside Maika…!

「…Ouch, Ouch, It hurts…It huuuuuurts!!!」

The raging Maika is being hold down by me and Katsuko-nee!

「…Maikaaaa! Maikaaaaa!!!」

The glans caves in the location of the hymen once again!
The torn membrane is ruptured even more…!

「…Aaaaaaaaaah!!!」

Maika's shout isn't from the pleasure…
She must be feeling pain…
She's enduring it with her whole body…!
Her body shrinks, trying to reject my penis.
…But
It's no match against a man's invasion!5

「…This is the goal!」

I throw my penis until the root!
The glans kissed her uterus!!

「…It's in, Maika!!」

I skewer this 14 year old beauty.
Maika is breathing heavily.
It must be painful . She's knitting her eyebrows.
There's a large amount of sweat on her forehead…
I keep the same posture until Maika calms down.
Confirming that Maika's no longer raging, Katsuko-nee released Maika.
She photographed me connected with Maika with the camera…

「…We're having sex. Maika's being raped again by me」

Maika looks up at me.

「…You're insane. Pervert」

She cursed me.

「…What kind of face I'm making right now?」

Maika answered my question.

「It's the worst face…You're making a happy face while raping Maika…!」
「Maika's making the worst face too. You look like your in pain…!」

From my words…Tears spilled from Maika's eye.

「…End this sooner」

Maika said.

「End what?」

I asked meanly.

「…Hurry up and let it out inside Maika. Then end it」

I answered.

「…No way」

Maika glared at me.

「I want to taste Maika thoroughly…your mind and body…!」
「…I hate you!」

Maika curses me.

「…Misuzu, come here!」

I raised my body while still connected with Maika.

「Yes, what is it Danna-sama…?!」

Misuzu who's watching us all this time jumps in!

「…Lick Maika's clitoris」

I ordered her…

「I won't be moving…Misuzu, use your tongue to make Maika feel

good」

…Misuzu

「…Yes. Certainly, Danna-sama」

Misuzu's face closes to the connecting part of me and Maika…!

「…M-Misuzu-san…P-Please stop!」

Maika begs Misuzu but…

「Maika-san…Misuzu has been taught by Nagisa-sama how to use one's tongue so I'm confident!」

She exposed Maika's clitoris while smiling.

「…I'll make you feel good!」

Misuzu's red tongue touches Maika's clitoris!

「…Aaaahn!」

Maika's body jumps up…!
The vagina clamps my penis harder…!

「Ufufufu…Maika-san, youre cute!」

Misuzu licks it up with her tongue!
Dripping some saliva, she stimulates the clitoris… !

「…aaaaaah…aaaaah, aaah, ahn!」

Maika's gasping voice isn't stopping…!
Every tim eher body reacts to the pleasure, her vagina also wriggles mysteriously…!
I'm not making a piston…Just enjoying the change inside Maika's vagina…!

「…Ufufu…Maika-san's bean got bigger, it's bright red like a ruby!」

Misuzu kisses it!

「…Hyaan, d-don't suck it!」

Maika's body curves!
I knew from the bath that Maika's clitoris is sensitive.

「Ufufufufufu! Get even cuter!」

Misuzu's licking the surface with her tongue while stimulating the clitoris with her finger.
It seems that she's really taught by Nagisa-san a lot.

「…Ah…Ah…Ah…Iyaan…Aaaah!!!!」

Maika's vagina develops moisture while she's gasping.
Her vagina's clamping hard.
The interior and the depths have different clamps.
I thoroughly enjoy Maika's vagina like that…!

「…Maika, you're making such a pleasured face」

Maika looks up at me with moist eyes when I said that…

「…Don't look…Aaaahn…Maika's…embarrassed…aaaaaah!」

Maika gets drunk from Misuzu's tongue while she's being violated by me.

「…What kind of face I'm making?」

Maika answered.

「…Onii-san…Ahn…Is making a pleasured face…!」

Maika's vagina is squeezing my penis…!
Just the movement of her insides makes me want to cum.
I hold the root f my penis and stroke it up and down.
…It's ready to ejaculate anytime!

「Maika's vagina feels good…so warm, wet…It's clamping to me gently…!」

Misuzu then told Maika.

「…I'll get intense」

Misuzu attacks Maika's clitoris, making lewd wet sounds…!

「…Iyaaaaaan…Aaaah, ah, ah, haaan!」

Maika's having a face of delight…

「…Maika, look at me!…I'll also look at Maika…!」

Maika looks up at me.,

「…It feels good, Maika…!」
「…Iyaaan…Don't look at Maika with lewd eyes…!」
「Even Maika's making a lewd face you know!」

Misuzu takes her last spirt!

「…Hiiiii!…Aaaahn!…Aaah!…it's coming!…The white thing is coming to Maika…!6」

Maika speaks the signs of climax…!

「…Look at me Maika! I'm looking at you! Cum while you're looking at me!」

…Maika! Maika, Maika, Maika!
This second year middle school beauty is looking at me with eyes falling into pleasure!!!
Her vagina's wriggling…!
I'm about to cum too…!

「…Aaaaah!…M-Maika's…no more!…She's becoming no good!」
「…I'm looking, I'm looking at you Maika!」
「…I'm being seen! Maika's being seen by the Hentai Onii-san!!!」
「…You're making such a lewd face, Maikaaa!!」
「…aaaaah, nooo, don't look…Don't look!」
「…I'm looking, look at me!」

Maika's body moved like it's hit by a lightning!!

「…Nuaaaaaaaan!!!」

Maika's body twitched repeatedly!
Her vagina's tightening so much!

…Now!!!

I pushed my glans to Maika's uterus…!
I leak out my semen!!

「…Aaah…So hot!」

I feel Maika's interior while pouring my hot liquid to her uterus…!

「…I'm looking, Maika! I'm looking at you!」

I'm looking at Maika's face that reached the climax.
Maika's face who's being impregnated by me.

「…Maika's also looking」

Maika's eyes reflects my face.
The face of me who's releasing my semen on the deepest part of Maika…!

「…Maika…my Maika…!」

I pushed my glans to her uterus until I pour the last drop.

「…Onii-san」

Maika looks at me…!

The 『Man』and 『Woman』who exchanged sex looks at each other…

---

1. No, seriously, that's what the JP meant ↩
2. 　みんな……そうやって現実に起きたことを、自分のプライドが傷つかない方向に修正して納得しようとする。 ↩
3. There we go, POLICE! ↩
4. Once you go black (forest) there's no turning back ↩
5. -Genghis Khan 1200 ↩
6. I don't know whether she's saying that she's going to faint or

that the semen is coming to her, so I'll just put that one ↩

103. Reconciliation sex

「…You came inside Maika」

Maika looks up at me.

「Yeah」

My penis is still hard…
I pulled out my penis from Maika's inside.
White semen drips from the connecting part…
Katsuko-nee took photo of it.
Maika's powerless face…and her tragic vagina.

「…Why are you doing this to Maika」

Maika muttered with her legs spread out.

「…I don't know sex」

Maika's puzzled.
The 14 year old girl had sex with the man she doesn't love…
Learning about physical pleasure, Maika's heart gets confused further.

「…Maika-chan's a 『woman』 And, he's a 『man』 Men and women need to have sex to understand each other…」

Katsuko-nee told Maika.

「Right now…I noticed it for the first time…!」

Looking up from Maika's crotch…Misuzu spoke.

「…Since Misuzu became Danna-sama's pet, everyday, I came to like Danna-sama bit by bit.」 It's love right now. That's because Danna-sama is always so kind and honest to Misuzu, my body feels that it is loved…」

Misuzu's eyes looks at me…

「But…It seems that it was wrong. Since Misuzu was handed by Nagisa-sama to Danna-sama as a present…You did your best to like Misuzu」

…Misuzu?

「I finally understood it with Danna-sama's sex with Maika-san… Danna-sama's making his best effort to come to like Maika-san…!」

Maika…looks at me with surprised eyes.

「…Coming to like Maika?」

Misuzu looks at Maika with kind eyes…

「Yes that's right. Maika-san…our Danna-sama is a really gentle one…!」

…I

「That's wrong Misuzu…I'm not that good of a person. I'm a horrible man who rapes women…!」
「Isn't that to save Maika-san?」

Katsuko-nee told me.

「…Well, just like what Misuzu-san said.…I finally understood it. That might be the reason why Margo-sama was that angry a while ago. We're depending too much on him. We believe that he'll accept everything…depending on that, we tormented him…!」

…Katsuko-nee?

「…We spoke too many 『Words』 due to the momentum and power of the atmosphere. Of course, it won't happen if we don't use forceful 『Words』 『Let's all become happy!』 or the likes…If we don't speak out to each other, we won't be able to endure it… especially the women in this mansion…」

Katsuko-nee said lonely

「Then…uniting with the power of the 『words』 …binding with

the power of 『words』 is our way of doing it…!」

…Us
That's… 『Kuromori』
Right…
Yuzuki-sensei binds me with her words…

『You have to ****…!』
『You can't do anything but **** already…!』

Leading me with such strong 『words』 …I came this far.

「But…it is as Margo-sama says earlier. 『You have to confront reality soon』 …」

Margo-san certainly said that…

「We must no longer cling to the power of 『words』 We can get close with just Ojou-sama's 『words』 … If we really want to be happy then we have to decide it ourselves and confront the obstacle in our presence…」

…Katsuko-nee.

「…What Margo-sama has said has struck Nei-san's chest so she went to the Kitchen alone…」

Misuzu told Katsuko-nee.

「Perhaps…She was told to 『not just talk about your dream and face the reality properly』 …」
「Above all…Everyone just talks about their own selfish 『Dreams』 and nobody noticed that we're giving Danna-sama heavy thoughts」
「It really is」
「Danna-sama…I'm sorry」

Misuzu bowed her head

「No…I didn't…」

I don't know what they're talking about…

「…What did you think when everybody suddenly talked about making 『Sister's club』?」

Katsuko-nee asked me.

「No…If everyone wants to do it then it must happen…」
「…That all?」
「Err…I thought that I need to quit high school immediately」
「…Why?」

Katsuko-nee's surprised.

「…Well, everyone's going to live together right?…First I have to learn how to work on Nagisa-san's flower shop and Katsuko-nee's bakery…I don't have time to go to school. Also, I have to work part-time to save money even just a bit for now…」
「…Money?」
「That's right…There's Nagisa-san's shop and Katsuko-nee's working in our school which is fine but…I must earn Nei-san, Misuzu and Maika's living expenses…」

Maika's surprised.

「Onii-san…Me too?」
「Or rather…Maika's the one I'm worried the most. Misuzu has her house and Nei-san has Sensei and Margo-san. But, Maika's father would be in trouble…If I take custody of Maika in this situation, I have to work…!」

Katsuko-nee sighed.

「…You're thinking properly aren't you」
「Isn't that obvious?…If everyone says they want to do it then I have to manage somehow…!」

Misuzu answered me.

「Danna-sama…The 『Sister's club』 is just a mere 『dream』 It's something like 『It would be nice if this is the future』 …But, Danna-sama's thinking seriously…」
「Rather than that… He's always serious I know that…I know that and yet, we depended on him before we noticed it」

Katsuko-nee said.

「It's normal for Margo-sama to be angry then」

Misuzu looks down and said.
Katsuko-nee looks at Maika.

「…Maika-chan, could you empty your thoughts and ask yourself this」
「…W-What is it?」
「You do know that there's a plan to rape your for the revenge on your father…Shirasaka Sousuke, right?」
「…Yes」
「Then…He, as a result…raped Maika-chan, is that right?」
「…Yes」
「Normal men would just run away after raping. They run away from the guilty conscience…don't you think?」
「…That's right」
「If it was a more impudent man, he'd try to make Maika-chan his own slave. Making a toy as an outlet of his desires」
「…That might be」
「But…He's different. He's taking responsibility for raping you and is prepared to carry you on his back throughout his life… He's honest, clumsy, and diligent…!」
「…Eh?」

Katsuko-nee looks at me.

「If a woman tells a man who have sex with everyone 『Rape that girl』 you think he'll do it easily right? He's a beast for lust after all. Certainly, there might be such a man but…most boys are delicate. When they're told to 『Rape』 a girl he doesn't like, he can't carry it out. His penis won't stand」

…Yeah, I somehow get that

「The only men who can rape a woman he doesn't know because he's ordered by others are idiots lacking imagination or genuine sex offenders. If not, most of the ordered men would be scared…」

With that said…I'm either an 『Idiot lacking imagination』 or

『Genuine sex offender』?

「However…His way of thinking is different from the normal. After raping Maika-chan, he made up his mind making Maika-chan happy. It's absurd isn't it?…He just met Maika-chan…he doesn't even like you yet」
「…It's absurd. Onii-san」
「Maika-chan…how many times he told you 『I like you』?」
「…I can't count it anymore. He kept telling Maika 『I like you』 since he first attacked…」
「Therefore Maika-chan's angry earlier, right?… 『You don't really like me』 you said」
「…Yes. But, Onii-san said that he likes Maika's face」
「Maika-chan, what did you think about it?」
「…I thought he's a 『liar』」

…Maika
So you felt like that.

「…He's desperate you know」

Katsuko-nee smiles at Maika.

「He's doing his best, desperately coming to like Maika-chan. He's really an idiot. Finding good parts on Maika-chan, trying to like Maika-chan at any cost」
「…It was the same with Misuzu. Misuzu thinks that Danna-sama does his best to come to like Misuzu. Misuzu thinks that Danna-sama's actually confused. Nagisa-sama suddenly handed over Misuzu. And yet, he never showed a troubled face…and never said anything pushy. …Not wanting anything from Misuzu so Misuzu always requests him. Misuzu should be the older one and yet…I've been depending on him this whole time. I never knew what Danna-sama feels…」
「…I'm the same. I understand it now. Because I saw his approach to Maika…I thought that he didn't like me from the start. I remember it well. My mental state wasn't straight those days… This child comes to love me in the middle of sex. No, he's making his best efforts to like me…That's why I'm the present me」

…Misuzu

…Katsuko-nee

「…Maika-chan, do you know which has a higher rate of not getting a divorce? Love Marriage or Arranged Marriage?」
「…I don't know」
「It's the arranged marriage. The persons in arrange meetings remain married throughout their life. I think that's because 『They're making efforts to like their partner』」
「…『Making efforts to like』?」
「That's right…In case of love marriage, they get married under the condition of 『They love their partner』 isn't it? Therefore they just divorce if they don't like each other anymore. But, arranged marriage…both don't know each other at all so they marry with the thought of 『Will I come to love this person?』 After they get married they'll continue to 『make effort to love their partner…』 therefore their their marriage rarely collapses…」

Katsuko-nee said.

「…Maika-chan Perhaps he won't stop 『Making efforts to like』 Maika-chan. Then, he'll come to like you. Just like how he likes Misuzu-san and me…!」

Maika looks at me.
She's evaluating me with serious eyes…

「…Maika-chan, how about you start there too?」

Katsuko-nee told Maika.

「Maika…has no more choices than Onii-san?」

Maika said sadly.

「That's not true! That's not true Maika, if you come to like someone else, you can just abandon me…but」

Maika looks at me.

「…But」
「…Yuzuki-sensei said it a while ago. Maika would become a woman who'd hate sex because of the shock of rape. You might get

androphobia」
「Then…what did Ojou-sama say?」

Katsuko-nee asks me.
…I
I can't say 『I was told to rape her again』

「Anyway…she told me to have sex with Maika multiple times Then, make her understand the pleasures of sex. Have sex with Maika making her convinced that I like Maika so much that I can't endure it and have sex」

I thought that there's no other way so I just let it all out.

「…Very Ojou-sama-ish」

Katsuko-nee leaked out a sigh

「Ojou-sama's a former prostitute so her way of thinking is biased!」
「But…I thought that she's thinking properly and her reason is okay」
「…Even if the reason is okay, your body and mind won't last if you do that!」

Katsuko-nee's angry.

「Ojou-sama's over evaluating you too! You're just a normal fist year high school student…! Won't you break before you can even save Maika-chan?!」

…Err, Uhm.
…Katsuko-nee

「…Come here」

Katsuko-nee pulled and embraced me forcibly
Katsuko-nee's rich breasts wraps up my face.

「…Sorry. It's not just Ojou-sama. We've been expecting too much of you」

Katsuko-nee whispered to my ears.

「You never reject us…because you're someone who won't betray us…!」
「It's okay. Nobody had expected something from me until now. I'll do anything as long as I can…!」
「…Baka! Treasure yourself more!」

Misuzu embraces me from behind…!

「That's right Danna-sama. Misuzu and others were mistaken…!」

…Err
…About what?
…I don't know

「…Onii-san's an idiot」

Maika told me.

「Yeah…I admit that I'm an idiot…」
「You shouldn't say that!」

Maika shouted

「In the end…isn't Onii-san thinking about Maika all this time, since the first to the end. It's all wrong…you only did strange things but…But Onii-san was really worried about Maika , right?…!」

…Maika?

「I've been cautious of Onii-san as I thought you were a scary and dangerous person. But…It wasn't so…」

Maika's eyes have tears piling up.

「It never made sense. The scary Onii-san who had sex with Maika by force and the gentle Onii-san in the bathroom afterwards. I thought it was a split personality. I was scared. It was really scary…! But, Katsuko-san, Nei-san, and Misuzu-san trusts Onii-san so much…I can't understand it! Maika thought that she might have her head broken…!」

…Maika

「Now I finally understand it. Onii-san's at his very limit. Just like Maika…suddenly pushed into a strange world, needed to have sex with Maika…you've been in pain for all this time, aren't you?…!」
「I'm not in pain you know」

Katsuko-nee spoke to me.

「You have lived in a world where it's natural to endure so…you don't know how much you're in pain anymore…!」

…Is that true?
…Me?

「Just like how Misuzu tried to become Danna-sama's 『Pet』 desperately…Now, Danna-sama desperately tries to like Maika-san. Unreasonably…!」

Misuzu told me.

「No…I will. I'll definitely like Maika. I'll like her and make her happy. Just like Misuzu…!」
「…I know. Misuzu knows it」

Misuzu embraces my back.
Misuzu's crying?

「Why are you…」

…Katsuko-nee?

「You never do something irresponsible to women…! You love your partner with your mind and body…!」
「Because…Isn't that obvious? I can't have sex unless I really like my partner!」
「Baka…You're an idiot…!」

Katsuko-nee embraces me.

「…Onii-san」

Maika calls me.

「…Please don't suffer for Maika's sake. Maika will forgive Onii-san did. Onii-san doesn't need to worry about Maika anymore…!」

Maika looks at me.

「…Maika will do as Yuzuki-san first planned. I'll get violated by a lot of men. That's enough already…Onii-san, please throw Maika away」

…I
…Shouted!

「…Don't joke with meeeee!!!」

I shouted so loud that I myself is surprised…!

「There's no way I can do that!!!」

Maika's having a surprised face…!

「I'll never abandon you! I'll make Maika happy! I definitely will!」

Katsuko-nee spoke to Maika.

「Didn't he tell Maika-chan a while ago? He's abandoned by his parents. It's true. Therefore…He can't abandon someone who's in front of him」

Misuzu's speaking to me while crying.

「…He's really a troubling Danna-sama…I love you…!」
「…I'm the same」

Katsuko-nee pats my head.

「…Got it」

Maika muttered.

「Maika will put effort. I'll do my best to come to like Onii-san…」

…I

「It's okay…You don't need to do that Maika. I'll come to like Maika therefore…Maika doesn't need to force herself to like me」

Maika glares at me.

「Don't treat me as a child! Maika's already an adult! Onii-san made me an adult 『Woman』」

…Maika?

「If Onii-san's making his effort…Maika will make effort too! I'll come to like you! I definitely will…!」

Then…Maika spoke to Katsuko-nee and Misuzu.

「Katsuko-san, Misuzu-san…I ask you once again! Please put Maika as a member of 『Sister's club』!」
「…Maika-chan?」
「Maika's still a young and a bad little sister but…I'll do my whole best. I'll do my best and become Onii-san's 『Woman』」

Katsuko-nee smiled at Maika.

「…I'll accept you as a 『Sister』 with pleasure」
「…Misuzu's the same」

I don't get what's what anymore.
Or rather…The only thing I understand is that Maika's heart suddenly changed and accepted us.

「Onii-san…!」

…Maika looks at me.

「Please have sex with Maika again!」

…eh?

「Earlier when you licked me in the bathroom, and the sex just now…Onii-san is always thinking how to make Maika feel good the

most…… 」

…Err

「 Please embrace Maika once again so Onii-san would feel good 」
「 But…It hurts doesn't it, Maika? 」
「 I'll endure the pain…! Maika wants Onii-san to feel good with Maika's body! 」

Maika said.

「 …Do it. Don't go easy on her 」

…Katsuko-nee

「 It would rather hurt her if you mind it 」
「 Maika-san…wants to know Danna-sama properly 」

Misuzu told me.

「 …Do you want Maika to lick it? 」

Maika draws her face to my penis.

「 If I recall…There's a rule that you have to lick it before having sex, right? 」

That's the fake rule Katsuko-nee said in the studio a while ago.
…But

「 …Excuse me 」

Maika's small mouth sucks at my half erect penis.

「 …Like this? 」

She's licking it with her tongue.

「 …It feels good here? 」

She makes her tongue crawl on the back of my glans.
She's sucking the glans and making it wet.
It got erect again in no time.

「…That's enough, Maika」

Maika separates her lips.

「…Take your clothes off」

Saying that, Maika took off her light clothes and became naked.
I also got naked.

「It's still a growing body but…I'm sure it'll become a body that Onii-san likes. I'll come to like Onii-san's body too…!」

…Maika's expression is hard.
She must be nervous…her face is pale too.

「…Maika, stop using honorifics on me」
「…Eh?」
「Maika like that won't come to like me more…be normal」
「…Normal?」
「Just do it…try breathing deeply」

Maika breathed deeply

「…One more」

She breathed deeply multiple times.
There's a bit of energy coming back to Maika's face again.0

「…Maika」

I kissed Maika.
Maika accepted my kiss obediently.

「You're really a good person, Onii-san」

Maika muttered
There's still some nervousness remaining…

「Maika…feels like she'll come to like you immediately」

Slowly…I let Maika lay down.
I lick Maika's breasts.

Her nipples still remain sunken.

「Will this become an adult breast?」

Maika said in worry

「It'll become one immediately…No, I'll suck it out」

I suck her areola.
But, her nipples doesn't come out.

「…It seems that it's no good」

Maika smiled.

「Let's do it slowly. It'll come out one of these days. There's no need to hurry」
「…Okay, you're right」

Maika spread out her legs.

「More…spread it wider」
「…L-Like this?」

Maika spread out her legs like a frog.
Her small genital is wet with the sperm I released a while ago.

「Put a pillow below your buttocks…It'll raise your waist and it would make it easier to put it in」

Katsuko-nee advised us.
Following her instructions, I placed a pillow under Maika's raised ass.

「Let's put lotion on your penis. Maika-san doesn't seem to be easy to get wet…」

When I try to take the lotion bottle…

「Danna-sama, Misuzu will wet you」

Misuzu drips down the lotion on my penis, wetting it.
Then she stroke my penis with her thin and long fingers…!

「…Here we go, Maika」

Maika looks at me then nodded.

「Onii-san…Maika likes a slightly forcibly boy. Therefore, be pushy. Please don't stop until the end even if Maika's in pain…!」
「…Got it」

I push my glans to her vagina!
This will be the third time I insert it today…!

「…Uuguu! It's coming iiiiin!!!」

Maika's vagina that is still narrow as it just lost it's virginity…is forcibly spread out.

「…N…Nnnn…Kuh!」

Maika's enduring the pain…!

「Aah …uu…Ah!」

My penis is perfectly burried.

「…It's all in, Maika」
「I can tell…Onii-san's gushing…hot…!」

Maika endures the pain and smiles.

「…I'm moving.」
「…Do it forcibly. It's okay to be forcible okay!」
「…Yeah」

I began to move rhythmically!

「…Aaaaah, agu…gugu…aha…!」

Maika's desperately enduring the pain…!

「…How is it?…Does it feel good?…Does Maika's inside feel good?」
「…Yeah…It feels good, Maika!」

I have to end this sooner…!
Therefore…I attacked Maika intensely…!

「…aaah, Ah, aaah, O-Ouch…aaah」
「…Maika…Maika…Maikaaaaa」
「…Onii-san!…More, make me a mess! Make Maika's inside sloppyyyy!」

Maika's too small of a vagina hole is being violated intensely by me.

「…Maika, Maika, Maika, Maika!」
「…Ah, ah, aah, aah, gu, aah, aaaah!」

The heat of desire rises within me…!

「…Maika…I'm cumming…I'm going to cum again…!」
「…Let it ouuuut…Please…let it out sooneeeer…!」

She must be on her limit…!
Maika's shouting 「Let it out sooner」…!
Looking at Maika's enduring face…I reached the climax…!

「…Cumiiiiiiingggg!!!…Maikaaaaaaaa!!」

I ejaculated!!!
Dokun…Dokun…Dokudoku…!!!

「…It's coming out…The hot stuff is spreading inside Maika…!」

Maika's looking at me ejaculate.
I look at Maika being impregnated.

「…With this, you're truly my 『woman』…Maika!」
「Un!…Onii-san's 『woman』…Maika became a 『woman』…!」

Maika's crying…
While sperm pours in her womb…

---

104. The way where first love has Come

I pulled my penis from Maika.
My penis spills over the too small bottleneck.
Two times the amount of semen is dripping from Maika's vagina.
There's a bit of blood mixed in there too.

「…Does it hurt?」

I asked Maika.
Maika repeats breathing roughly in pain.
Her white skin is flushed and sweating profusely.

「…It's okay…I was able to endure it」

Maika looks at my eye and answered.

「…Onii-san, did it feel good?」

She's looking up at me in worry

「Yeah, it felt really good…」

Maika's inside is so small that it's clamping on me so hard.

「…Maika is a woman with a very high pride than Onii-san thinks」

Maika said suddenly.

「Therefore…Maika will only have sex with Onii-san」

…Maika

「Make me unable to have sex with anyone but Onii-san…please」

Maika's words have two meanings
First, she wants me to teach her the pleasures of sex.
Second…Is so that she won't be abandoned by me, get gang-banged and fall into prostitution.
Maika right now understands her standpoint.

She has already entrusted her fate to me.

「…Got it. I'll protect Maika…I promise」

I embraced Maika's sweating body.
I caress her whole body with loving feeling.
Her hair…small breasts…stomach…
I kissed Maika's lips again and again.

「…Hey, Onii-san, you've been calling Maika earlier 『You[1]』, right?」

Maika said.

「…Err, did I?」

Did I call her 『You』?

「You did. Not this time but…when we had sex with you having a scary face earlier ago!」

Maika says with a dissatisfied face.

「Danna-sama…you did」
「Un, I heard it too」

Misuzu and Katsuko-nee spoke from my back.

…Hmm.
Certainly, I might've said 「You」…

「…Maika is slightly displeased when men calls her 『You』」

Maika makes a sullen face.

「Oh right. I never thought that Maika hated it…」

Or rather, I.
I was trying to look good on my rape[2] mode…
Remembering it, my face turned red in shame.
Maika holds my face with both hands.
Both of my cheeks…

Then, she kissed my lips…!

「…Onii-san's so cute」

Err…

「What should I do? He's so cute!」
「Yes, Misuzu thinks the same always」

Right.
Katsuko-nee always says that I'm 「cute」…
Well, Katsuko-nee, Nagisa-san and Misuzu are older so I won't resist if they call me 「Cute」…
But when Maika who's two years younger says that…it feels slightly complicated.

「…Maika's cute too」

Taking the dignity of an older man…I replied to Maika.
Maika laughs.

「You don't need to try to look cool, Onii-san…Knowing that Onii-san's a cute person makes Maika happy. I'm glad」

Maika kissed me once again…

「…I'm glad that it's Onii-san」

…Maika
Is she really accepting me…?
Maika's eyes are moist.

「Hey, Onii-san…What do you want to call Maika?」

…Eh?

「I want a name that's special to Onii-san…!」

Maika looks at me…
She's smiling…

「Anything's fine, Onii-san should decide it…!」

…Errr
Is Maika talking about 『Pet Names』!?!
W-What should I do?
I've never thought about a woman's pet name since I was born…

「…Maika, you see」

For the time being, let's just say what's on my mind

「There was a player named Ogura in the J-league before…」

Maika's making a vacant face…

「When that Ogura was a beginner, he was given a nickname by the team for publicity…」
「Hm…Then?」

For the time being…Maika's listening to my story.

「The first one gained from the supporters was 『Ogu』…The second was 『Gura』…!」

…Yeah
…I
…What am I saying?

「…Hmm」

Maika knits her eyebrows…

「…There are some of Maika's friends calling her 『Mai』…I definitely don't want 『Ika3』…!」

As expected she doesn't

「Uhm…Danna-sama」

Misuzu calls out to me from the back.

「I'd like to tell you beforehand…Misuzu also doesn't want to be called 『Misu』and 『Suzu』」
「Right…I don't want to be called 『Katsu』 『Tsuko』too」

「On Nagisa-sama's case…Would that be 『Nagi』and 『Gisa』」
「More or less 『Nagi』is fine」
「Rather than that, what about Nei-san?」
「…No way, 『Ne』and 『I』?」
「How about we flip it and make it 『Ine』?」
「She'd sound like an old woman then…!」

……Err
Katsuko-nee…Misuzu…

「…Pu!」

Maika bursts out laughing…!
「Ahahahaha」, she laughs out loudly.

「…Maika?」

Maika pinched my nose while laughing…!

「Geez…Don't make that miserable face! Onii-san's so fun…!」

Maika's still laughing.
Without any nervousness…

「Cute! Very cute…!」

Maika rubs her cheeks on mine.

「Maika had a dog in Shizouka…!」

Maika then begins to tell a story.

「His name is Lucky…He's a pug. He's having a bit of a flat face, then Maika's friends tell that he's 『not cute』 But, Maika thinks that he's really cute…」
「…Hee」
「Then…One day, my uncle in Shizouka told me. 『You're thinking it's cute because it's your dog』」

Your dog.

「Right now…I feel that Onii-san's very cute. Isn't that the same?」

「I'm a dog?」

Maika laughs 'kukuku'.

「That's wrong, Onii-san, you're Maika's 『man』 Maika's property. Thinking like that, I can see you getting even cuter…」

…Maika

「Onii-san…do you think Maika's cute?」

Maika looks up at me with upturned eyes.

「Yeah…I think you're cute. Maika's very cute」

I answered honestly.

「Maika's Onii-san's 『woman』, right?」
「…That's right. Maika's my 『woman』」

Maika sighed deeply in relief.

「…I'm glad」

I pat Maika's head.

「…What happened to Lucky?」
「He's still in Shizuoka… Maika wants to bring it with her but… Onee-chan hated it. She doesn't want to keep animals in the house…[4]」

It's Yukino's selfishness again
Seriously, you should've at least listened to one of your sister's wishes…

「Then, let's go get him someday」

I told Maika.

「…Really?」
「Yeah…I want to see the town Maika grew up from…」

I smiled at Maika.

「…Thank you, Onii-san!」

Her thin naked arm hugs me tightly.

「Maika-san, do you like animals?」

Misuzu asks Maika.

「If it's a cat…Misuzu has one on her house」
「Eh, is that true?」
「You can come to see it. It's cute!」
「I'm going! Maika wants to see it!」

An exchange between Misuzu and Maika starts from a strange place.

「How many do you have?」
「There's 2 males and one female」
「Eh, what's the name?」
「『Ivan the Terrible』and 『Yekaterina』and『False Dmitry III』」

Those are cat names?

「The two are Russian Blue cats. It's a type of cat」
「…Uwaa, amazing!」

Maika's pleased.
I don't know what kind of type that is however.

「『Ivan the Terrible』was taken when he was a kitten, father gave him the name 『Ivan』 And because he's the smallest of the four kittens born, it became 『Ivan the Terrible』」

Misuzu explains it briefly
Eh…Why?

「Ah… 『Ivan IV』means 『Ivan the Terrible』」
「…I see」

Maika…you got that?
I didn't get that at all.

「『Ivan the Terrible』is a pedigree, but the female 『Yekaterina』 seems to have a different blood of cat mixed in her. Thus she was named 『Yekaterina』when she came to us. Of course, Mother named the cat 『Yekaterina』 She's on the first generation…」

Misuzu continues to talk…

「『False Dmitry III』is a kitten we just took in. He's a Siberian cat, it's a Russian cat, so I thought that this one has to be 『False Dmitry III』…」

I'm sorry…please stop this topic already

「…Naming cats is really difficult」

Maika describes her impressions.

「『Cats』had that line…」

Katsuko-nee told Maika…

「Speaking of which, that's right…!」
「Oh, the 『Jellicle songs』」

Misuzu and Maika seems to understand what it means…
…Err
What's 『Cats』?
No…I should never ask.
If it goes like 『Somethingsomething III』, it would be troublesome…

「As expected, names are important. It's the name you'll always call after all」

Misuzu said.

「…That's right. If cats have that much trouble…It won't be easy for Onii-san to give Maika a nickname I guess. Got it…Let's leave this as a homework!」

Maika looks at me and smiled.
…I-I see.

…Well, as long as I don't have to think right now, then it's fine.
…Now then
I raised my body and looked at Misuzu.

「…Misuzu.」
「Yes, Danna-sama?…What is it?」

Misuzu replied.

「…Misuzu's turn is next」

I promised earlier.
I'll have a round of sex with Misuzu after Maika.

「Ah…Misuzu's fine for now. Danna-sama's tired, right?」

Misuzu said…?!

「No…But, I promised…!」

Misuzu hugs me and kisses my cheek…

「I'm sorry for everything until now…Misuzu's always pushing her feelings」

…Misuzu?

「Misuzu will try to endure even for a bit」
「No…I'm perfectly fine. I can do it at least one more time. I'll make Misuzu feel good…!」

Misuzu shut me up with her mouth…!

「…Danna-sama…please get rid of your habit of overdoing everything. Your body will break if this continues」
「No…I'm not forcing myself」

Katsuko-nee interrupts from the side…!

「How many times have you ejaculated today?」

…Err
This morning, I ejaculated inside Katsuko-nee and Megumi's

mouth…
Inside the studio, I had sex with Katsuko-nee and Misuzu…
I ejaculated inside Maika three times in the garden…
Then I came inside Maika twice after entering this room…

「…9 times」
「And yet the sun is still up…don't you think it's too much?」
「I-I do…!」

After all…This isn't the last one
I'll talk properly with Megumi and I need to have sex with her too…5

「Misuzu wants to be loved by Danna-sama all my life. Therefore, I will stop requesting greedily」

Misuzu said.

「There's no need to rush…Misuzu knows that Danna-sama will do me at any time, at any place when Danna-sama can't really endure it anymore…!」

…Misuzu

「Also…Looking at Danna-sama and Maika-san's sex, it feels slightly envious. Danna-sama's sex with Misuzu is always Misuzu asking everything from Danna-sama. Misuzu has become a bit rash. Therefore…Danna-sama should request from Misuzu from time to time」

Misuzu said with a red face.
…I see
For the time being, I must be ready to ejaculate to Misuzu when I see her.
I breathed deeply…

「Misuzu will endure to only once a day…!」

…Eh?

「Please embrace Misuzu once a day…!」

…Well, it can't be helped.
…If it's just one.

「Same for me! I'll endure with one a day only!」

…K-Katsuko-nee?

「…What should Maika do?」
「Maika-san, I think that you should get a lot until you get used to sex」
「Right…if you don't have sex for a while then the hymen would regenerate, it would hurt again!」
「Maika…doesn't want pain again. Then, let's do it three times a day until I get used to it…! Is that okay, Onii-san…!」

…Err
With just the people in here, it would be 5 in a day already.
Add Megumi…
I would feel sorry if I don't do the same thing to Nagisa-san…
Also…Yukino
I need to have sex with Yukino 60 more times in the next days, right?

「Don't worry! Everyone will be managing your physical condition」
「Yes! We won't let Danna-sama overdo it!」

Katsuko-nee and Misuzu said, however…
To be honest, I feel reluctant.

「Oh right…Danna-sama just finished having sex with Maika-san」

Misuzu takes a look at my half-withered penis.

「Misuzu will be cleaning it!」

Misuzu puts my penis inside her mouth…

「Ah…Maika will do that. He came inside Maika after all…!」

Saying that, Maika tries to get up from the bed…

「…Ouch!」

Maika who just had her virginity ravished…holds down her stomach.

「You can relax for today. Don't do the impossible. Let's get in the bath once again and we'll go to the doctor」

Katsuko-nee told Maika.

「Leave this to Misuzu for today. Please, Maika-san」

Misuzu holds my penis in her hand then smiled at Maika.

「…But, there's also Maika's stuff in there」

Maika seems to be embarrassed having her own love nectar licked up

「Please don't mind that. Aren't we 『Sisters』?」

Misuzu puts my penis in her mouth.
She's licking the semen and love nectar with her lips and tongue.

「…『Sisters』」

Maika mutters
Katsuko-nee brings water and medicine.

「Maika-chan…take this」
「…What is it?」

Maika stares at the tablet.

「It's a medicine to prevent pregnancy. A middle school girl's body isn't ready to be a mother yet so it's dangerous. Drink this for now…!」
「…Okay」

While Misuzu is doing up her cleanup fellatio…Maika swallows the emergency contraceptive.
That tablet is the real one.

It was the same medicine I saw multiple times.
I finally calmed down.

Maika's no longer a target of 『revenge』
She's my 『woman』…
Katsuko-nee and the girl's 『Sister』…
She's accepted as an ally…!

◇ ◇ ◇

「We're going to the bathroom, you go to the kitchen」

Katsuko-nee told me.
Nei-san's in the kitchen.

「Nei-sama's surely feeling down so I'd like you to patch it up」

Katsuko-nee seems to be worried about Nei-san.

「Then, Onii-san…I'm going to the bathroom!」

Maika goes with Misuzu to the bathroom.
That part really seems to be in pain…
She's walking bow-legged.
Misuzu's walking by Maika's side, taking care of her…
She's ready to reach out for her anytime…

「Please leave Maika-san to me. Danna-sama, please take care of Nei-san!」

Saying that…Misuzu and Maika left the room.
Katsuko-nee whispered to me.

「The kitchen has a hidden camera but there's no mic」

…Eh?

「Ojou-sama has taken it off so that the prostitutes in the mansion can talk freely」

…I see
The stress will pile up when you're monitored all the time.

In the kitchen, you can say whatever you want.

「Therefore…no one will hear whatever you will talk about!」

Katsuko-nee smiled at me.

「Then…I'm going to the bath too」

◇ ◇ ◇

I face the kitchen.
I opened the door.
This is the room where we made the pregnancy congratulatory cake for Yukino.
Nei-san's sitting on the corner of the room absentmindedly.
It's the usual cloudy sky outside the window.
But…It's not raining anymore.
The shower from a while ago seems to be just a short one.

「…Yo-chan」

Nei-san noticed me and called me out.
She looks languid…
She's still wearing those Greek style clothes.
I'm the same however.

「…Nei-san, you don't look so fine so…」

When I called her out…

「Lies…Katsun's just being considerate isn't she?」

Nei-san looks down again.

「Yeah…Well that's true」

Nothing's going to start if I lie here.
I just answered honestly.
I took a seat close to her.

「…I'm the worst. I still didn't have sex with Yo-chan and yet…I've been saying 『Sister's club』 or 『Let's all be happy』 …」

Nei-san blames herself.

「The dream earlier you see…Everyone's holding Yo-chan's child but I didn't have a child. I've just been holding everyone's child… 」

…Nei-san.

「It's cruel isn't it?…Even though I don't have the courage to be everyone's ally…I corner Maika-chan. Telling her to become Yo-chan's 『woman』 …! 」

Nei-san's eye have tears collecting on i.

「And yet…I've just a big mouth and I've never really though about everyone's future…! Maru-chan is right for being angry!…I'm the worst…! 」

I squat in front of Nei-san.
I match on Nei-san's eye-level…

「Well, it can't be helped, can it?…As long as Nei-san hasn't settled things with that Mr. Viola…you can't think ahead right? 」

Nei-san looks at me.

「…Yo-chan! 」

I smiled at Nei-san.

「There's no need to rush… We're still young so we just have to think what should we do at ease 」

Nei-san's eyes have tears spilling from it.

「Nei-san wants to be my Onee-san right? Isn't there no need for us to have sex by force? 」
「…But, Yo-chan wants to do it right? 」
「Well, I want to. Nei-san's a beauty after all… But, I'll hold back on my own Onee-san 」
「I want to have sex with my lil bro! No…I can't have sex with anyone but my brother! I'm that kind of pervert! I've been made into that kind of woman…! 」

…Made into that kind of woman?
…By Cesario Viola?

「I promised my little brother that I'll give him my virginity…ever since our childhood. And yet…my little brother is no longer here. Kei-chan got killed…!」

Nei-san's body begins to shake.
…I
I hold Nei-san's shoulder with both of my hands!

「…Isn't that why I'm telling you that I'll become your little brother?!!!」

Nei-san opened her eyes wide and looked at me.

「…I don't care if you're a pervert. I'm want Nei-san!」
「…Yo-chan?」

I tell Nei-san my feelings.

「Earlier…Yuzuki-sensei was angry at me because my『priority on Nei-san is too high』 But, even so…I know that from the start」

My heart

「I don't get my own heart. I like Katsuko-nee, Nagisa-san, Misuzu, Megumi and Maika. I treasure them all. I love them from the bottom of my heart. I also like Yuzuki-sensei and Margo-san. I feel that they're my family…!」

I touch Nei-san's trembling shoulders.
I feel Nei-san's temperature.

「But…Nei-san. You're different from the others…you're special!」

Nei-san mutters.

「…Me?」

I nodded.

「I thought that Yukino's been my first love all this time. But, that was wrong. Yukino isn't a 『longed person』 for me… I was just watching Yukino from far away…just longing for her appearance and her surface character…but when I saw Yukino 『escaping reality』 …That's not my first love」

That's right.
I didn't understand a thing about Yukino.

「…Nei-san!」

I tell Nei-san who's still surprised.

「…I love Nei-san. You're my first love…!!!!」

---

1. This is quite hard to notice in Translations, but he's saying 'Omae' ↩
2. This is also read as insult, which is on the title ↩
3. Ika means squid ↩
4. Then get out bitch ↩
5. Noooo, this spiral of Megumi darkness ↩

105. Mind shuffle

「Earlier, I told Maika that she 『Resembles my first love』 I like Maika because she resembles Yukino. Then…Maika thought that I'm a 『Liar』 That's when I noticed… 」

I noticed it for the first time when someone told that it's a 『lie』 My first love isn't Yukino.

「I've always convinced my head that 『It's like this』 …So, I don't understand my true feelings. Thinking, what else would it be if I Yukino isn't my first love. Then, Yuzuki-sensei told me that 『Your priority on Nei is too high』 …I thought of it once again 」

The answer came out immediately.

「I like Nei-san. I'll do anything for Nei-san's sake. This feelings is most likely…love, isn't it? 」

Nei-san is just watching me calmly.

「Thank you…But, I can't answer Yo-chan's feelings 」

Nei-san answered.

「I'm a cursed woman 」

…I

「I don't care about that. I'm just okay Nei-san to be happy and bright everyday. I don't have any selfish feelings for Nei-san. I just want to be Nei-san's strength…! 」

Nei-san looks into my eyes.
…Seriously.

「…Even if we don't have sex? 」
「…Yes 」
「I can't become Yo-chan's lover 」
「…I don't mind 」

「…Why?」

I gave the words that appeared in my heart.

「…『First love』doesn't come true, does it?」

Nei-san's eyes turned moist.

「…You're an idiot. Yo-chan」

I smiled at Nei-san.

「Yes…I think so myself」
「Shouldn't you just leave me alone and be happy with everyone?」
「I'm quite greedy you know」

…That's right.
…I

「…I can't be happy if I'm not with Nei-san」

Nei-san smiled.

「…I'm quite a messed up woman!」
「I know that」
「…I'll really be a burden to Yo-chan」
「Then trouble me a lot」
「…The man who's chasing after me is a genuine madman. He's a person who doesn't care about killing…!」
「Then…I'll protect Nei-san」 1

My heart has already decided…!

「…Yo-chan」

Tears spill from Nei-san's eyes…

「…Is it really okay?」

I answered.

「…I'm a man. It's normal to help my first love」

Nei-san begins to cry.

「But…I can't return anything to Yo-chan」

…I!

「I fell for you so there's no helping for it. As long as Nei-san is smiling as always, I'm satisfied. If Nei-san happily gets married to someone other than me…I'll bless it with a smile. I'll support Nei-san anytime. I'll help you. I'll do anything as long as I can…!」

In short…This is 『First love』[2]
It's not love.[3]

「…But, Yo-chan. I…I…!」

Nei-san shakes her head while crying…!

「…You should tell him 『Thank you』 for the time being」

When I turned around, Katsuko-nee's there…!

「Huh…Katsuko-nee, weren't you in the bathroom?」

Katsuko-nee laughed.

「…Misuzu-san said 『I'll take care of Maika-chan myself』
Thinking that the talk would be confusing if you're alone…」

Katsuko-nee and Misuzu are worried about me and Nei-san.

「Nei-sama…How about you put everything on hold until the matter with Cesario Viola settles down?」

Katsuko-nee proposed to Nei-san.

「As long as we don't do something to that man…Nei-sama won't be free」

…That means?

「But Katsun. There's a chance nothing won't be resolved… I might just change appearance and run away somewhere else…」

Nei-san looked down and replied.

「Just like when I first ran away from Cesario Viola…taken by Sensei and came to Japan from US…changing names and running to a different land again」

…Change name?

「…That's already impossible」

Katsuko-nee told Nei-san.

「Ojou-sama wants to dismantle 『Kuromori』 as soon as possible… If 『Kuromori's』 support disappears…Nei-sama can no longer find a new name and new hiding place」
「…I know that」
「Above all…Ojou-sama and Margo-sama intends to settle it with Cesario Viola here. As last job of 『Kuromori』 」

Sensei and Margo-san has already decided.
Ending 『Kuromori』 …
Therefore…Margo-san was angry at us earlier
「If you really want to be happy then face reality and think concretely」 …

「…Cesario Viola is a monster」

Nei-san sighs.

「That's the reason why he must be defeated. To liberate Nei-sama…!」

Katsuko-nee smiles at Nei-san…

「…Katsun?」
「You're our treasured 『Sister』 …」
「…But…but」
「Geez, enough of that!…Just be spoiled by your Onee-chan and little brother!」

Katsuko-nee embraces Nei-san…

「…What should I do? I'm always being saved by everyone and I can't return anything…!」

Nei-san shouts at Katsuko-nee while crying.

「If that's what you think then be kind fo Misuzu-san, Megumi-chan and Maika-chan. Nei-sama's already an 『Onee-sama』 You've got a lot of 『Little sisters』…!」

Nei-san nods…
…and cries in Katsuko-nee's chest.[4]
Katsuko-nee speaks while gently smiling at Nei-san…

「…Isn't that right?! Ojou-sama!!」

Suddenly, Katsuko-nee is shouting towards the counter on the wall.
The counter created a clanking sound…!

…Eh?

「…Open it」

Katsuko-nee is busy embracing Nei-san.
As ordered…I opened the door for the counter.

「……Ah」

When I opened it…
Yuzuki-sensei's curling herself inside.
She's making a very impatient face…

「I told you that there's no microphone in this room right?」

Katsuko-nee told me.

「In exchange, there's a secret passage. You can only hide here if you want to eavesdrop to the conversations」

I see…The interior of the counter is connected to a passage on the other side of the wall.「」

「…Katsuko, you lured me out…?」

Sensei said bashfully.

「Yes. Of course…I handed Nei-sama a memo to not move from the Kitchen beforehand」

…I see
Katsuko-nee went to the bathroom.
Thinking that Katsuko-nee is in the bathroom…Sensei moved to the secret passage and came to eavesdrop my talk with Nei-san.
But, there's no monitor in here so Sensei wasn't able to perceive that Katsuko-nee's coming to the kitchen.
Then, Katsuko-nee exposed her hiding place…!

「I never knew that there's a secret passage in here…!」

Nei-san's surprised.

「That's okay now…Ojou-sama. 『Kuromori's』 prostitution mansion will be gone anyway so we can expose everything…!」

Katsuko-nee told Sensei.
I see…There's no hidden microphone here so the prostitutes are able to complain freely.
Sensei listens to their free remarks in here.

「…I-It doesn't matter. I'm just worried about you guys」

Sensei said feeling embarrassed.

「…Ojou-sama, shouldn't you be saying something beforehand?」

Katsuko-nee told Sensei.

「Ojou-sama, you've been observing his and Maika-chan's state, weren't you…?」

…That's right.
It's Sensei so she has been observing from somewhere all this time.

「Ojou-sama…You ordered him to 『Continue raping Maika-chan until she accepts him』 …didn't you?」

Katsuko-nee glares at Sensei.

「That's what I think is for the better… 」

Sensei desperately defends herself.

「If it's about him…please consult the 『Sister's club』 without fail. Ojou-sama should understand more that her own sensitivity is deviated from the world…! 」

Sensei bows at Katsuko-nee's presence.

「…Sorry 」

Then, she looks at me.

「Yoshida-kun…You're getting even more excellent. You jumped over my top heavy forecasts and instructions… You deal with everything directly so it went well with Maika-san…You're also thinking of Nei's feelings 」

…Sensei?

「I've just been telling something unnecessary to you…Someone like me is no longer needed by you 」

Ah, shit. I thought.
This is dangerous…
Seriously…All the girls in this mansion…!

「…Sensei, It's not about the need or not-need! 」

I told Sensei directly.

「…Yoshida-kun 」

Sensei's surprised.

「…Sensei, how old are you? 」
「…28 」
「That's right. You're still young. It's fine for you to be not always correct and have mistakes! 」

Katsuko-nee and Nei-san also became speechless.

「Even if it was a mistake…Sensei's thinking about me seriously and adviced me, right?! No, you don't have to answer! I know it!」

…Yeah
…I know, Sensei!

「I'm a man so I should make decisions of what I should do by myself. Decide by myself, act by myself, and lastly, take responsibility. Therefore…Sensei, just say what you think to me just as always. Please…!」

Sensei said.

「…Is that okay?」

…Seriously!

「Isn't Sensei our oldest sister?! I'll treasure my Onee-san's opinion. I'll think about it carefully. Aren't we 『Family』 already?!」
「…Yoshida-kun」
「I finally understood it with Maika. I've already prepared myself. I'm ready. I understood what Sensei told me a while ago」

…I can no longer go back.
…I have a responsibility to my 『Women』 and 『Allies』

「…Sensei. The bed I'm borrowing in this mansion…please let me have that bed」

I bowed to Sensei.

「…You're saying you want to become my 『Child』?」

Sensei asked me.
Margo-san said this before.
Nei-san wants to be an 『Onee-chan』…
Yuzuki-sensei wants to be an 『Okaa-san』…

「…No」

I shook my head.

「It's wrong to think of me as your 『Child』」

Sensei's surprised.

「…It's wrong to think you're my 『Child』?」
「Yes. If you think of me as your 『Child』 won't you just look from a higher standpoint and won't say anything great? But…Sensei's still young so there's no need to force yourself to act as the 『Mother』」

I look straight at Sensei's eyes…

「…Think of me as your 『Little brother』 An audacious, idiotic, troublesome 『Little brother』 Then, you'll become our eldest 『Onee-san』 Please」

…Sensei

「I-I'll be…Yoshida-kun's 『Onee-san?』」
「Yes, that's right…!」

Sensei's staring in blank surprise…

「…Ojou-sama」

Katsuko-nee spoke to Sensei.

「Katsuko-nee has always been helped by Ojou-sama for these five years. And thus, I know how much effort you make to be a 『Mother』 for us prostitutes in this mansion. But…That's enough already」
「…Katsuko」
「Right now, the one's remaining in the mansion are the people Ojou-sama can trust. You no longer need to push the limits, there's no longer a need to fight Shirasaka Sousuke and your father anymore…」

Sensei's always been fighting to protect the prostitutes of this mansion.
Therefore, Sensei became the 『Mother』 of the prostitutes…

She's still on her 20s and yet she's pushing herself too much…

「Katsuko has learned various things since he came to the mansion」

Katsuko-nee looks at me.

「Katsuko has depended on Ojou-sama for everything before. Moving according to Ojou-sama's instruction…I never think by myself. But, it's different now…」

…Katsuko-nee

「I want to be happy with him. Every night, before I sleep, I think of what I should do for him. If he will be pleased of what I do. The meals until now has been decided by Katsuko's taste. Looking at the cookbooks, then merely preparing the meals according to the books. Now…If he says 『Delicious』…That makes me happy…so glad… That everyday I make meals for his sake. Katsuko's happy. I'm truly happy right now. I feel like I'm alive…!」

…Thank you
…For thinking that way.

「And…It's my first time understanding Ojou-sama's hardships. On how much Ojou-sama has sacrificed herself to devote to us…!」

Sensei is listening to Katsuko-nee's talk in silence.

「Ojou-sama has definitely became our 『Mother』 A 『Mother』 has to guide her 『Children』 to the path of righteousness. Failure cannot be tolerated so her 『Children』 won't lose trust…One must not seek for reward as well. One must restrain their 『Children』 with power sometimes too. And…a 『Mother』 can never stand on the same standpoint as the children. The 『Mother』 must always protect the 『children』」

Sensei has always been the protector…
She's not someone who can be talked to as an equal…?

「Ojou-sama…it's okay now. At least, Katsuko no longer needs a 『Mother』 Katsuko wants Ojou-sama to be 『Ane5』 『Sisters』

who can open their hearts mutually on whatever worries they have…!」

Katsuko-nee's words sink into my heart…

「Sensei, I'm the same! I want Sensei to be my 『Nee-san』! A 『Sibling』 whom I can consult of everything…!」

Sensei's looking at us in blank surprise.

「Can I do it? Be your 『Ane』?」

Nei-san who's always been quiet has spoken!

「…Sensei can!」
「…Nei?」
「Become one! Become Everyone's 『Sister』…!」

Katsuko-nee's smiling.

「Then…as the chairman of 『Sister's club』…Katsuko petitions for Ojou-sama to enter the 『Sister's club』!」

Sensei's confused.

「But…I can't have sex with Yoshida-kun」
「Then…We'll change the name and rules of the 『Sister's club』! It won't be 『Yoshida-kun Sister's club』 but 『Kuromori Sister's club』…! The members can decide to hire anyone who will pledge as a sister」
「…Then, is it okay for me to be a member too?」

Nei-san asked Katsuko-nee.

「…Of course!」

Nei-san's eyes bright up.

「Then…Sensei, and Katsun, Nagisa-san, then me become Yo-chan's siter, Mii-chan, Megumi-chan, Maika-chan are Yochan's wives so they're our little sisters! 『Sister』 and 『Sister in law』 have no difference It's a club where everyone can consult each other and

become happy together!

Nei-san said happily.
Yup…The laughing Nei-san is better.
「Eh…I'm also a 『Little sister』?」
「It's actually a 『Little brother』 though…Well, don't mind the small details!」

Katsuko-nee laughs.

「…With that said, what will you do, Ojou-sama?!」

Sensei sighed.

「…I lose. I get it. I'm joining in」

Sensei answered.

「Then, we'll have Ojou-sama as the President of the 『Sister's club』!」
「…President?」

Katsuko-nee answers.

「Yes…When 『Sister's club』 has differing opinions, we'll seek for Ojou-sama's approval. Please lead your 『Little sisters』 as the 『Eldest sister』 from now on…!」

Katsuko-nee bowed respectfully to Sensei.

「…In the end, you're just going to push the troubles to me?」
「No, there's a lot of problems that we can't resolve unless we consult Ojou-sama's decision!」

Sensei and Katsuko-nee looks at each other…
Then…Both of them laughed.

「…I get it! I should just do it right?! I'll show you how to be the 『eldest sister』!」

Sensei finally became our 『Ally』
Not a 『Head』, 『Ruler』 or 『Leader』…

But as an 『Ally』…

◇ ◇ ◇

「With that said, Ojou-sama has inaugurated as the president of the 『Sister's club』…!」

Katsuko-nee explains to Misuzu and Maika.
Both of them has changed to their school uniforms after the bath.
The two girls applauded.

「…However, Katsuko will still be the chairman of 『Sister's club』 Because I will work as a coordinator when the opinions break up…!」

Sensei's having an aloof attitude but she's happy inside.[6]

「Maru-chan's next!」

Nei-san said.

「Margo-sama cannot enter at right now…She said 『I can't enter right now』 after all」
「…Right」

… 『I can't enter right now』
Until the revenge on Shirasaka Sousuke ends…
I look at Maika.

「…Don't mind it Onii-san」

Maika looks up at me.

「Maika understands it」

Maika's forcing herself to smile.

「Then, Yoshida-kun, please take a shower and change clothes in hurry」

Sensei told me.

「We're about to come back to school」

…Oh right
Megumi's next7
My relationship with Megumi is twisted.
I have to go to Megumi's house to fix that twist.

「Danna-sama…Misuzu has a dance practice at night so it's about time to return」

Right…The symposium is the day after tomorrow./

「Misuzu-san. I'll send you off by car so please wait」

Sensei told Misuzu.

「No, Misuzu will walk to the station」

Misuzu insisted but…
It's trouble to walk from here to the station…
Cesario Viola is here too…

「…Misuzu-san, I have to discuss with you about that one and Yoshida-kun」

Sensei said.
'That one', means Megumi.
Maika still doesn't know my relationship with Megumi.
Sensei must be thinking something as she's still hiding it.

「Either way, it would be faster if we go by car…okay?」

Misuzu finally accepted when Sensei repeated her words

「Understood, if that's how it is.」

Katsuko-nee looks at Maika.

「Maika-chan will be be with us and we'll go to the clinic after stopping at school」
「…Okay」
「Misuzu was taken there the day before yesterday. Ikeda-sensei is a kind doctor so don't worry!」

Misuzu told Maika.
She has completely become Maika's Onee-san…
But…It must be trouble for the clinic to be visited by girls who lost their virginity in three straight days.
Or rather…It's pitiful for Yukino to be the only one who's not taken there.

「I'm making tea…You hurry up and take shower. There will be school uniform in the changing room!」
「…Okay!」

Pushed by Katsuko-nee's voice, I run in the corridor.

「Ah, Wait…Yo-chan!」

Nei-san called me from the back.
Nei-san is holding some file.

「…Yes?」

I stopped…

「…You can just walk. Let's talk until you come to the bathroom」
「…Got it」

I walk with Nei-san on the long corridor.
When there's no one else around…Nei-san spoke.

「…Thanks for earlier」
「…Eh?」
「That made me really happy」

Nei-san says while her cheeks turning red.

「…Yo-chan. I」

Nei-san said.

「I'm actually not 『Natou Nei (奈島寧)』」

…Nei-san

「My real name's 『Najima Yasuko(奈島寧子)』 You just remove the 『子』but it becomes a different name in English writing, right?」

Doing that…She came to Japan escaping Cesario Viola…

「My little brother is 『Najima Keito (奈島景人)』 We've been called by our family 『Nei』and 『Kei』since childhood…Take a look at this」

Nei-san took out a photo from the file.
A photo of two children.

「…This?」
「This is me…and this is Kei-chan」

The child on the photo is definitely Nei-san on her childhood days…
Both of them have the same face…!!!!

「…Kei and I are twins」

…No, but?!

「Isn't this a photo of two girls?![8]」

Nei-san answers my question sadly.

「…Vesario Viola loved to dress Kei-chan as a girl…!」

…That means?

「Cesario Viola is a pervert with that hobby…!!!![9]」

---

1. Pledge to protect ↩
2. Hatsukoi ↩
3. Renai, I don't understand it either ↩
4. Damn, I want to stuff myself in Katsuko-nee's chest too! ↩
5. Meaning, Elder sister ↩
6. Tsundere Minaho ↩
7. Ugh ↩

8. “THE DICK MAKES IT BETTER” ↩
9. In short, he’s a trap lover! ↩

◇ Megumi Arc

106. Rumors and eyes

After taking a quick shower and changing to my uniform…
Everyone's in the dining room drinking tea.
It's already past 4:30.

「I'd like to offer you some tea but there's no time」

Katsuko-nee mutters apologetically.
Katsuko-nee has changed her clothes too.
It's a black business suit. The lower isn't a tight skirt but pants.
She looks active and cool…

「Nei will be looking after the house…okay?」

Sensei's on her usual black dress.
Or rather, it's the same clothes she wore at the school earlier this morning.
The students at the school doesn't know that Yuzuki-sensei's living on a place that's just nearby the school.
If she comes back with different clothes, they'll have strange misunderstandings.…

「…Okaaay～ I'll look after the mansion!」

Nei-san is still wearing the Greek style clothing.
When she's the only one wearing it, it looks very lewd…

「Onii-san, you look better with that kind of hairstyle…!」

Maika said when she saw my head after bath.

「Eeeh, Misuzu likes it a bit wilder however」

…Hmmm
The girls wearing uniforms from the two of the most famous Ojou-sama school in Japan touches my head.

「Well…I'm going to school」

I told the two.

「I was there earlier this morning…if I change my hairstyle suddenly, everyone would be surprised, right?[1]」

Actually…There's probably nobody going to notice that I changed my hairstyle.

「…Then it can't be helped.」

Misuzu seems to have agreed somehow

「Then, let's go…!」

Sensei stands from her seat

「Let's go to the car…!」

Katsuko-nee bowed

「Nei…Turn the security of the mansion to the Maximum level」

Sensei told Nei-san…

「Maru-chan has already done all of that!」

…Margo-san's thinking about the possibility that Cesario Viola has already come to Japan.
…And that he'll come to attack the mansion.

◇ ◇ ◇

At the entrance, Katsuko-nee comes with a green minivan.

「…Katsuko will be the driver. Sit next to Misuzu-san and Maika-san」

Sensei said.

Maika-san will be sitting on the backmost. In case that there's some gloomy feelings coming up in Maika-san, you can cling on Katsuko or Misuzu. You two, if you feel something's bad, then hug her immediately…!」

That's assuming that she gets a psychological flashback from being raped.
In any case, there's a possibility that Maika's attacked by a strong fear…
Therefore, the two Onee-san will stay next to Maika.
The rapist, me…should seat apart from Maika.

「I'm on the passenger seat」

When I tried top go to the passenger seat which is the farthest from the backseat…
Yuzuki-sensei…

「Yoshida-kun will seat on the second row. We'll be going in the school so it would be bad to see the female teacher being intimate with a schoolboy」

…Certainly.
The car has smoke glass panels starting the second row but…it would be troublesome if someone misunderstood that Yuzuki-sensei and I are alone in the car.

「…Got it」

Misuzu, Maika, and Katsuko-nee are seating on the third row of the minivan.
Second row is me on the left seat.
It's only Sensei on the first row…

「…We have to hurry」

Sensei started the engine.

◇ ◇ ◇

The green car we're in immediately enters the school.

「…This is Onee-chan's school isn't it?」

Maika looks outside the window and said.

「…Y-Yeah」

I try to be evasive.
How should I explain about Megumi and Yukino to Maika?
Sensei goes to the track and field club's room instead of the usual school personnel parking lot.
Sensei stopped the car on the back of the physical education warehouse which is hardly used.

「We don't have much time. Yoshida-kun, can you bring her here?」

Sensei spoke to me through the mirror.

「…That girl?」

Maika makes a suspicious face.

「Didn't I tell you earlier? He has another sex partner who's going to the same school as him」

Katsuko-nee told Maika with a smile.

「She's a very gentle person. Misuzu likes her. I'm sure that Maika-san will get along with her」

Misuzu told Maika.
Maika looks at me in worry.

「Onii-san…There's no way it's my Onee-chan, right?」

Maika's clever. She's very sensitive.
I raised my ass from the seat and turned to Maika on the back row.

「…It's not. It's a different girl」

I told Maika.

「There's no need to worry Maika」

I smiled at Maika.

「…Really?」
「Yeah」

「…Then that person will also be Maika's 『Sister』, right?」
「That's right」
「…Got it. Maika will try to get along with her」
「Thanks」

I stretch out my hand and pat Maika's head.

「Then, I'm bringing her immediately…!」

I got off the car alone…
I go towards the girl's track and field team…

◇ ◇ ◇

「…Oh, Yoshida-kun!」

The first years have gathered in front of the track and field room, they're fixing their equipment.
Of course, everyone's still on their training wear.
The one who called out to me is Koujou-san.

「…I-I came here to get Megumi as told by Yuzuki-sensei」

Shit. I should've recovered, but…
I'm still stuttering in school.

「Megumi's in shower right now. We had her go first in order for her to leave at 5…

Takeshiba-senpai comes from the clubroom and told me.

「…T-Thank you very much!」

Senpai smiled at me.

「You don't need to be that nervous. You're a pair of lovers I approve. You can be more bold…!」

Saying that…She then spoke to the first years.

「Someone tell Yamamine… 『Your husband has come to get you』!」

The girls shouted 『Kyaaa』 in joy

「Ah, I'll call her out!」

Koujou-san stood up and responded to Captain Takeshiba.

「…Okay」

Saying that, Senpai disappeared to the clubroom.

「I'm going then…!」
「Ah, please」

Koujou-san comes to the gym from the clubroom.
The shower room for the girl athletic club is next to the gym.
By the way, the men's are just at the back of the clubroom.
The shower room for men and women are separated to not let them take a peek…
No…There's probably a hidden cameras in the showers because of Yuzuki-sensei.
Sensei's searching for prostitution candidates in this school…
She'd put cameras in the stall showers so they can check their naked bodies…
What an outrageous thought…

「…hey hey, Yoshida-kun!」

The first years from the track and field team gathered around me.
The voice who called me out was perhaps my classmate.
I remember her face but not her name.

「…Err」
「No way, name's Ogino. Aren't we in the same class?」
「Well, I know…」
「Well fine. Yoshida-kun doesn't get along with anyone after all…!」

…Well
I can't reply to that.

「But, that surprised me. Who would've thought that Yoshida-kun and Megumi are raburabu2」

…Yup
Even I am surprised.
Who would've thought that it'll be like this…

「Aren't you completely crazy on Shirasaka-san? Though it often changes to Megumi…!」

…Change?

「Ogino-chi, you shouldn't say that!」

The other girl's scolded Ogino-san.

「Ah, Sorry. But, everyone in the class knows that Yoshida-kun is madly in love with Shirasaka-san. As expected, you woke up when Shirasaka-san dated Endou-kun?」

…As expected, everything about me is leaked to everyone.
Hey…I woke up my eyes when she dated Endou?

「Well, of course you will. No matter how good looking Endou-kun is…even a hundred year love will wake up!」

Ogino-san laughs calmly.

「Eh…Endou's not that popular with girls?」

I asked instinctively…

「That's just a small portion. They went kyaa kyaa over what bastard is saying They just have big voices so they may think so but…most of the girls hate Endou-kun」

I-Is that so?

「Speaking of which…Did you see it Yoshida-kun?」

Ogino-san laughs.

「…What?」
「Ah, you don't know. Endou-kun came to school with a terrible face. His face is swelling so hard and there's a big plaster on his

nose…!」

…That's.
Margo-san beating him up on the night park the day before yesterday…!

「…Endou-kun said that he was attacked by a hooligan in a town」

Ogino-san laughed.

「Everyone's saying that he might've attacked Shirasaka-san by force and Yukino retaliated…!」

…Yukino retaliated?

「You see…the people in the baseball cub are betting on when Endou-kun would take Shirasaka-san's virginity. Then, Endou-kun attacked Shirasaka-san in the night park as he's getting impatient… then she repulsed him with all her might…!」

…So that's the rumor?

「Ah…My bro is a second year baseball club member. When I saw bro during lunchtime, he said that」

Another member of the club told us.

「Endou-kun's acting bossy because his father has a connection with the coach of the baseball club? Even though he's just a first year. That's why he's isolated in the baseball club
「I heard it from my bro, he seems to be giving out sports drinks, supplying protein, and bringing them to some other place…in the end, that's all his parent's money. The seniors are being friendly with him on the outside but they're making a fool of him in the back」

…Therefore, there's the rumor of Yukino retaliating him going around.

「Yoshida-kun should take a look at it later. It will make you feel refreshed…」

Ogino-san told me.

「Y-Yeah…」
「Huh…Yoshida-kun was beaten up by Endou-kun because of Shirasaka-san right?」
「…Well」
「That was horrible isn't it? You see, Yoshida-kun is just staring at Shirasaka-san however…that's all. He's not a stalker, and he doesn't even approach her within three meters」

So I was like that.

「Ogino-chi, isn't that enough. He already has Yamamine-chan after all.」
「That's right…It's not like he's going out with Shirasaka-san. It would make him feel sorry!」

The other girls are supporting me.

「Ah…Sorry, sorry. But, it was a surprise. It was so sudden」
「But…Yamami has become so wonderful. And bright too」
「Yeah She's just an overly serious and obstinate girl but…」
「I've never thought that she's such a playful child…」

…Eh?

「Look…earlier this morning…she said 『I'll definitely bear Yoshida-kun's child』 I've never thought that she's a girl without common sennse」
「That's right, it was surprising」
「But, she's gotten more human and cute!」
「Just a bit of a fool though」
「Yeah, she can't even concentrate on today's practice」

I got surprised on what Ogino-san said.

「…Megumi wasn't able to concentrate?」
「Well, the usual Megumi don't do a lot of mistakes. She misheard Senpai's instructions. So she ran a lap on the ground alone」
「Yet she's strangely bright. She's smiling at random times」
「That's inevitable. Love makes you an idiot right? Her head is in

happy mode so let's leave her alone for a while」

The members say that however…
As expected…Megumi's overdoing it?
About dating me.

「Oh right, I heard it from Yamamine-chan…Yamamine-chan's the one who confessed?…」

…Eh?

「…No way she did, right?」
「She said that she confessed during lunch break」
「I heard it too. She said that she likes Yoshida-kun since the entrance ceremony. Then, when she and Yoshida-kun suddenly became class representatives…Megumi confessed when you two were alone」

…Wait a moment

「Right…Megumi's the one who asked to date Yoshida-kun」

…That means?

「After asking so many times, Yamami finally got her approval. She said that she loved Yoshida-kun all this time」

Megumi made another story.
Rewriting the story from reality so she can accept it.
…Shit.
Or rather, this might be a dangerous situation.

「I can't see what's so good with Yoshida-kun though」

Ogino-san said.

「Hey hey, Ogino-chi That's rude to someone else's husband!」
「That's right, don't be stingy on someone else's taste」
「…Ah, sorry」

Ogino-san stick out her tongue and apologized.[3]
No…I think the same thing.

There's no way someone like Megumi would suddenly like a human like me…!

「Yamami's a serious girl so she goes full speed once she's sure…!」
「Yeah. That's why, treasure her…Yoshida-kun」
「Don't make Megumi cry!」
「That gentle girl is quite rare you know. You'd be beaten up if you do something unreasonable」

All of the girls are telling me.
Megumi…you're loved this much by everyone.

「I thought that Yoshida-kun as a strange shadow person in the class all this time…」

Ogino-san told me.

「But, I see you in a new light…You confronted captain and Yuzuki-sensei upfront」
「Yeah…It was so manly」
「We got juice as treat」
As expected of the man Megumi fell for…! He maybe vague but, he's core is reliable」

Ogino-san says that however.
I…
I don't have confidence in myself.

「You should stick out your chest more even in the classroom」
「That's right, Yoshida-kun has to get himself together or Yamamine-chan would be made fun of…!」

If I don't get it together…Megumi would be laughed at…?!

「Well yeah. That's what means to be 『Boyfriend girlfriend』」

…I
I was naive.
I've never thought about it.
Since I'm going out with a girl…I must not let her be ridiculed.
I have to become a wonderful man whom my girl can be proud of.

「…Thank you everyone. I'll do my best to be a man suitable for Megumi…!」

I bowed to the girls.

「…W-What are you saying Yoshida-kun!」

Ogino-san panicks.

「No, I really thank you. I'm still no good but…I'll become a man who won't be strange being next to Megumi. I'm not good for now. I'll do my whole best」

The girls are looking at me with admiration.

「…So Yoshida-kun's this serious」
「As expected of Yamami's boyfriend」
「…I want to be told by those words too」

Ogino-san looks at me.

「…By the way, are you really going with Yuzuki-sensei and Megumi to her house?」
「Yeah, I will. I'm going to greet Megumi's parents」

There's nothing embarrassing anymore.
I said it fairly with confidence.

「Uwaa…He's serious」
「Yeah, I'm serious…You can tell everyone in the class that I'm going out with Megumi」

…That's right
I cannot pull back anymore.
I'll make Megumi happy.
I'll put my life on it…!

「…Yoshida-kun's so cool!」
「I'll support you!」
「Invite all of us in your wedding!」

My determination is transmitted to the girls.

Everyone's laughing happily.
Therefore, I ready myself…
I'll definitely invite all these girls.
…At Megumi's wedding.

「…Ah, Yamami's here!」

When I turned to the voice of the girl…
Koujou-san and Megumi on her uniform has come from the gym.
Megumi ran towards me when she confirmed my figure.

「…Yoshida-kun!」

She pulled my hand and separate me from the crowd.
She pulled me to under the iron stairs on the clubroom…
Then she asked me in whisper…!

「…How did it go with Maika-chan?」

I answered in a small voice.

「…For the time being, it settled peacefully」
「…Eh?」
「Maika became our ally… She's with Yuzuki-sensei in the car」
「…Really?」
「A lot happened but…she understands it now. She's getting along with Katsuko-nee and Misuzu…Sensei also accepted Maika as an ally」
「…I'm glad!」

Megumi embraces me!

「…Wow!」

The girls shouts in joy again.

「Yamami, it's okay to be raburabu, but…!」
「Well, isn't that fine? We're seeing something that's rare too…!」
「Eh, won't they look like that everyday?」
「You said it」
「If it becomes annoying, then I'll complain」
「Well, let's forgive them for now!」

We can hear those voices from the girls.

「…Anyway, let's go to Sensei's car」
「…Yup」

Megumi separates from me.
When she finally noticed the girls' eyes, she felt a bit embarrassed…

「Then, I'm going to say goodbye to my seniors…!」

She went to the track and field team's room.
She knocked on the door.

「…It's Yamamine」
「…Enter!」

It was Captain Takeshiba's voice.

Megumi opens the door.

「…Then, I'm extremely sorry but I'll be going ahead!」

Megumi bowed her head deeply.

「Yeah…I don't get it but do your best!」
「…Yes?」

The seniors from inside the room calls out to the absentminded Megumi one after another.

「Introducing one's boyfriend to the parents is a big event for women…!」
「They're going to check the man's look…and if he's going out with Yamamine-chan properly!」
「The father would take a look at the clothes first」
「If the man's face can't be fixed…his clothes should be decent, right?」
「Eh, you have such experience?」
「No no…What about you?」
「When I was dating with my previous boyfriend around the station, Dad came home from work by chance…!」
「Ooh…Then what happened?」

「It was super-bad! I'm wearing a red miniskirt and a frilly blouse… and the guy's wearing a very flashy clothing…!」
「…Then, what happened?」
「Then you see, Dad calmly took photos of our appearance with his phone…」
「…What?」
「Then, we had a family meeting because of that photograph at night…Mom, and bro, and my elementary lil sis gathered…『What do people think when they see couples with this appearance』They kept nagging me」
「…That's harsh」
「Certainly, when I saw the photo…I can't see us as an interesting couple…」
「…Did you reflect on it?」
「…I soul-searched!」
「With that thing happening, you should take care of how you look too. When you're alone, you can go for the fashion that's a bit loose but…when you're a couple, you need to consider the impact of it to the society」

Captain Takeshiba brought the talk into an agreement somehow.

「Thank you for the advice! I will keep it in mind!」

The serious Megumi bows to her seniors again.

「Anyway…Do your best. We'll also support you」
「…Thank you」
「Later then. Thanks for the day」
「…Thanks for the day. I'm going ahead!」

Megumi said that and closed the door.

「Then, bye Yamami!」
「Yoshida-kun」

The members from outside the room called us out too.

「Sorry for going ahead…I'll be paying for this debt」
「You don't need to do that, Megumi. We had juice earlier too」
「That's right…You don't need to mind it. In exchange!」

「…Don't break up easily!」

Megumi bowed her head to the other first years…
And finally she comes back to me who she left behind.

「…Yoshida-kun」

Megumi grabs my hand.

「…Megumi」

Megumi grips my hand powerfully…
She must be nervous meeting up with Maika.
…Her hand is cold.
We went to the physical education warehouse where Sensei stopped her car…while holding hands.

「Look…It's there」
「…Yeah」

Megumi's tension is transmitted…
We approached the car…
I opened the door from the back…
In the middle of the rear seat…
Katsuko-nee and Misuzu has Maika sitting in between them…
She looks up at Megumi in surprise…!

「…Eh, Megumi-chan?」

Megumi talked to Maika with a forced smile.

「…It's been a while. Maika-chan.」

---

1. Actually, no, I tried doing that and nobody noticed. Or maybe that's just because I'm wearing a hat ↩
2. Rabu rabu means love love ↩
3. Teeheepero ↩

107. Slave girl Yamamine Megumi

Maika cannot hide her bewilderment from the sudden appearance of Megumi.

「…Misuzu-san, go to the second row, Megumi can sit next to Maika-san」

Sensei instructs them

「Okay」

Misuzu moves away from her seat.
In exchange, Megumi sat next to Maika.
Maika clings hard to Katsuko-nee.
Not Megumi who's her distant relative but Katsuko-nee.
Lastly, I step in the car and closed the door.

「Then…Let's go」

Sensei starts the car…
The strained atmosphere in the car continued for a while

「…Megumi-chan, are you Onii-san's sex partner?」

Maika asks Megumi timidly…

「…Sex partner?」

Megumi seems to not understand what she means.

「Katsuko-san, Nei-san, Misuzu-san are all Onii-san's sex partners. Also…Maika became one too…Maika's Onii-chan's 『woman』 …!」

Maika talks to Megumi.
Maika's hand is holding into Katsuko-nee's arm tightly.
Katsuko-nee is holding Maika's shoulder gently…
Megumi answered.

「…I'm not. I'm Yoshida-kun's sex slave1」
「…eh?」

Maika's stunned.
Misuzu looks at Megumi in surprise.
…I'm also shocked.,

「I'm fine being next to Misuzu-san and Katsuko-neesan I'm the least existence for Yoshida-kun. Maika-chan shouldn't mind me and be loved by Yoshida-kun a lot…」

Megumi smiled kindly…

「But, I'm glad…Maika-chan's accepted by everyone」

Saying that, Megumi talked to everyone in the car2

「…Thank you everyone.. Please take care of Maika-chan from now on. I ask of you all」

Megumi bowed…

「…Megumi-san, what do you mean by that now?」

Misuzu asks Megumi

「…What?」
「Saying that you're Danna-sama's sex slave?」

I can't understand that too
Megumi answered…

「…Because, a girl like me is only suited as a sex slave」

…Eeeh?
Megumi looks at Maika.

「…Maika-chan, how much do you know about me?」
「…How much?」

Maika is at loss…

「…You do know that your father is my father too, don't you?」

Maika clings to Katsuko-nee

「…Un」
「…Where did you learn it from?」
「…Onee-chan」

Of all the people…Yukino talked about it?

「…What did Yukino say?」

…Maika

「Megumi-chan was a daughter of Papa from a hostess. Papa was deceived by that person…then when she gave birth to Megumi-chan, she took a lot of money. But in the end, she threw Megumi-chan and ran somewhere…Unable to stand it, Megumi-chan was sent to Yamamine-ojisan」

…What the hell?
…Isn't that entirely different from the truth!

「…That's a lie」

Yuzuki-sensei muttered from the driver's seat.
The car's about to reach outside the school soon

「…Eh?」

Maika looks at Sensei in surprise.
Sensei looks at Megumi over the mirror

「Megumi…I didn't tell Maika what happened to myself. I think it's a breach of manners to talk about that other than myself…」

Sensei used that reason to warn Megumi to not to tell Maika about 『Kuromori』

「…Maika-san. I told you about me and my little sister being raped by your father and being sold into prostitution, isn't that right?」
「…Yes, I heard it」
「My mother's the same」

Megumi continues what Sensei is talking about
Maika looks at Megumi in surprise.

「…My mother was the same. Raped forcibly by Shiraska-san… became pregnant with a child…and was sold into prostitution…!」

Megumi talks indifferently
Sensei's eyes from the mirror is gloomy.

「…No way!」

Maika's surprised…!

「…That's true. My real mother was a prostitute」

Sensei proves Megumi's story

「Megumi's mother…Keiko-san became a prostitute at the same time as me. I know that well. We keep company the same men after all…I'm really indebt with Keiko-san…!」

Sensei's words are heavy.

「I raised Megumi until she was six When the prostitution house lost Keiko-san…Shirasaka Souzuke pushed Megumi to Yamamine-san who has a weak standpoint」

Maika looks at Megumi.

「Megumi-chan's real mother is dead?」
「Yeah…well, a lot of things happened」

Megumi spoke vaguely
She must be thinking that it's harsh to talk about the evildoings of one's father in one go.
But…Sensei continued to talk.

「When Keiko-san died, Megumi became Yamamine-san's adopted daughter for ten years. But…That's not the end. …Shirasaka Sousuke plans to contact Megumi this year. He told Megumi to stop school and become a prostitute…!」
「…Papa did?!」

Maika receives shock.
…Megumi is.

「Yes, that's true…I was told『I'm going to take you from Yamamine house when Golden Week ends』」
「…That's!」

Megumi took out her phone…

「…Look」

Megumi opens the mail.

「…『I'll meet you at the end of holiday. I've already finished the business talk. I've already sold your virginity for 3M, get your body clean ready』」

Katsuko-nee reads out the contents of the mail Megumi showed Maika…

「This is Papa's address…!」

Maika confirmed that the sender of the mail was her father…

「…She sold Megumi to a Yakuza and a politician I know who he's scheduled to sell her. I've examined all of it!」

Sensei said

「…That's cruel. That's too cruel…Papa

Maika spilled tears
Katsuko-nee embraces Maika tightly and pats her back.

「It's okay…Minaho-san has saved me. I don't need to be a prostitute」

Megumi smiled at Maika.

「…Really?」

Maika looks up.

「In exchange, I have to get out of Yamamine house. Yamamine house cannot go against the head of Shirasaka house」
「…Why?」

Maika who's a member of Shirasaka house cannot understand the house problems Megumi is talking about

「A family with a good social standing needs to give birth to a prodigal son by all means. Shirasaka Sousuke is exactly that. Normally, a child who's bad will be disposed out of the family but…The actual head of Shirasaka house, Shirasaka Moritsugu is Shirasaka Sousuke's uncle. He's Maika-san's grand-uncle…!」

The head of Shirasaka house…The owner of the newspaper publishing?

「Moritsugu-san cherishes Shirasaka Soueuke. Even if he's like that, he's his brother's son. He only thinks of protecting him」

That famous newspaper company defends Shirasaka Sousuke?

「Also…If it was discovered that Shirasaka's own illegitimate child is being sold to prostitution by the society, it'll become a huge scandal. Shirasaka house would be the target of the mass media. Therefore…If we tell the current situation to the head of Shirasaka house, they will erase Megumi…」

Sensei…That means?

「She won't be immediately killed however…She'll be brought to some distant place and be watched all the time. Won't be allowed to go out freely…and sooner or later, she'll be made to marry someone from the instructions of Shirasaka house…That's how it will be」

That's Shirasaka house's way of doing it…!

「Therefore…I'm going to take Megumi from the Yamamine-san's house. If I take her away by force, Yamamine house won't be blamed for it. I feel sorry for it but I'll have Yamamine-san severe connections with Megumi. That's for the sake of both sides…!」

…Severe connections.

She'll separate from the foster parents she lived with for 10 years…

「Maika-chan…I'm going to say my goodbye to Yamamine house. Thus I will completely separate from the blood of Shirasaka. I'll become Minaho-san's ally. That's what I decided…!」

…Yuzuki Minaho's ally.
That means becoming a member of the crime organization
『Kuromori』

「Then…I don't need to sell myself anymore…」

Megumi shows her best smile.

「That's why I decided…I'll become Yoshida-kun's sex slave!」

…Eh?
…That means?
…Hey
…What do you mean by that?

「…Maika-chan, you already had sex with Yoshida-kun?」
「…I did」

Maika answered Megumi with a frightened expression.

「Then you know it. Yoshida-kun is a very gentle and sincere person…!」
「…Un」

Maika nodded.

「I trust Yoshida-kun very much and I'm grateful to him. When I was embraced by Yoshida-kun, I was able to cut off with a lot of things. I have given up completely. I was a daughter of a prostitute so I thought it's inevitable for me to become a prostitute too. My life has always been miserable and shameful that I thought I can no longer come back…!」

…Megumi?!

「But…Yoshida-kun embraced me. He really embraced me gently

like a lover. I…even though it's someone like me, he accepted me as someone living. It's not just me…He also recognized all the people who brought me up. He thanked them. That made me very happy…!」

Tears pile up on Megumi's eyes.

「That's why I decided…Since I don't need to sell myself and serve lots of men…I'll dedicate my life to Yoshida-kun. I'll become his sex slave」

Misuzu butts in without break!

「Why sex slave?! Shouldn't it be a lover?!」

Megumi answers.

「Because, Yoshida-kun has Katsuko-neesan and Misuzu-san before I was embraced…[3]」

…… ! ! !
…Oh right!
…Before Megumi experienced her first time.
…I've shown Megumi my sex with Katsuko-nee and Misuzu!

「I don't need to barge in. I'm not as beautiful as Katsuko-neesan or Misuzu-san…![4]」
「Megumi-san, what are you saying!」

Misuzu strongly protests against Megumi!
…But

「I'm a daughter of a prostitute[5] I've seen my mother being embraced by various men since I was born. She's bought with money. Therefore…I thought that I would become a prostitute someday. That I cannot escape that fate…!」

Megumi lived with and was raised by the prostitutes until she was six
Megumi's mind is deeply pierced by the memory of those days…!

「I was taken care by my foster parents. I'm very thankful of them.

They were gentle to me who was a daughter of a prostitute…[6]
That's why…I thought that I must not be a shameful daughter for my foster parents at Yamamine house」

Therefore Megumi was an honor student all this time?
As she's an adopted daughter, it adds additional shadow to character development of Megumi…

「I'm that kind of trivial woman. I'm different from Misuzu-san. I don't have the quialification to be loved by Yoshida-kun unlike everyone」

…Megumi looks at me.

「I don't have to end on prostitution…therefore, I swear」

…What?

「I'll become Yoshida-kun's sex slave for my entire life. I don't need to be loved…I'm just fine being a slave. I'll do anything. Yoshida-kun will be the only one who can have my body. I want to bear Yoshida-kun's child. I'll even sell myself for Yoshida-kun's sake…!」

…Megumi announced.

「I love Megumi though」

Megumi shook her head and laughed slightly.

「I don't need to be loved.[7] I'm not a woman that should be loved by you[8] Isn't there a lot of women that should be loved by Yoshida-kun?[9] Just think of me as a slave. I'll devote myself to you forever. I'm fine being your sex slave…!」

In the end…I didn't understand anything.
I should've understood it from Sensei's talk of Lee Miller.
Lee Miller was raped when she was eight…to remove that trauma, the adults around her gave her an idea that romantic feelings and sexual desire are different.
As a result, Lee Miller has become a woman too rampant in sex…!
…In Megumi's case.
She was raised in a brothel until she was six…Furthermore, it was

the time where Shirasaka Sousuke does whatever he wants in the mansion, she saw her own mother and other girls forced to compel on perverted sex.
She was convinced that she'll do the same…
Furthermore, when she was received in Yamamine house as a adopted daughter…She always felt indebt thinking 『My existence has always been a trouble』
Therefore…Megumi has become distorted.
She assumes herself as a woman who's not qualified to be loved by someone…!
…What the hell!

「But, what about the commotion you made earlier this morning?… You declared that you're going out with Yoshida-kun in front of everyone in the track and field. 『High school student-like relationship within school』」

Sensei asks Megumi.

「That's…If I don't do that, I think that Yoshida-kun won't part from Yukino」

Maika reacts from Megumi's words.

「…From Onee-chan?」

Megumi answers calmly.

「I'm in the same class with Yukino and Yoshida-kun… Yukino is Yoshida-kun's first love…!」

Megumi makes a frank follow up.

「Therefore…I chose Yoshida-kun as one of spy's for Shirasaka Yukino」
「…Could it be, Onee-chan's already…?」

Sensei answered Maika's sharp question.

「The plan is still in progress…It's not complete yet. I can't tell Maika-san anything other than that…!」

Maika looks at me.

「Onii-san…You said that your first love looks like Maika right? Was that Onee-chan?」
「…That's right」

I admitted it obediently.

「I've been in an all male's middle school so when I entered high school and met Yukino…I've admired her all this time」
「I'm using that feelings of Yoshida-kun」

Sensei adds.
While perfectly hiding it in『Present progressive』that Yukino's already been violated…[1　Yukinoがすでに犯されていることを、『現在進行形』の絶妙な表現で隠しながら……。]

「I don't like that Yoshida-kun's attracted to Yukino. I definitely don't want that. Therefore I want to pull Yoshida-kun's eyes away from Yukino That's all」

Megumi looked at me once again.

「…I'm sorry. Yoshida-kun might hate having a girlfriend like me. Endure it for a while. Please」

Megumi…What are you saying?

「…If ever you like someone in the school other than Yukino, just tell me. I'll bring her to you., I'll do anything for Yoshida-kun's love…!」

…Megumi

「It's okay, I'll just tell everyone in the school that I like Yoshida-kun so much that I forced him to go out with me. Yoshida-kun's reputation won't go down even if you abandon me. I'll definitely make it like that. Yoshida-kun can just think of me as his sex slave okay…」

Why are you so servile?
You're trying to alter your memory for that sake?

…I!

「I promised to the members of the track and field team earlier. I promised to invite them at my wedding with Megumi」
「…Wedding?」

Megumi mumbles.

「That's right…Our wedding」

Megumi's in blank surprise.

「…That's impossible. I'm just a slave. I would be cursed if we hold a wedding ceremony」

Misuzu who's sitting on the second row spoke heavily.

「No…Megumi-san, please marry Danna-sama…!」

…Misuzu?

「I can't do that. Misuzu-san wants to marry Yoshida-kun, didn't you?」

Misuzu…

「I want to!…But, the reality won't allow that」

…Reality

「We were scolded by Margo-sama a while ago. 『If you really want to be happy, then you have to face reality and think concretely』 she said」

That's right.
Margo-san said that.

「Misuzu is Kouzuki's daughter. If Misuzu pushes her own ideas and marry Danna-sama forcibly, Misuzu's grandfather will disinherit me. And, it won't just be me…Yuzuki-sama, Nagisa-sama and the others would be affected by it badly as a result…」

Certainly…If Misuzu forces it, Misuzu's house will be hostile to

『Kuromori』

「Misuzu has to think how to be loved by Danna-sama for all the time. Misuzu thinks that she should build a firm position in the clan first. I think of being a researcher in the National University or a high ranking official like my father. Then, I'll continue marriage talks backed by my social power. Then, I'll become Danna-sama's 『Mistress』 for my entire life so it won't be a disgrace for my grandfather and my clan…!」

Misuzu will take an exam at Tokyo University for that sake?
So that she won't part from me…!

「Misuzu cannot register as Danna-sama's wife. Kouzuki house will never allow that. Therefore…I'll leave the lawful wife role to Megumi-san」

Misuzu's eyes are seriousl

「…Is it okay for me to marry Yoshida-kun?」

Katsuko-nee smiled at the surprised Megumi.

「I cannot marry him. My past doesn't allow it. I want a cute bride for him. Someone like Megumi-chan」
「…I」
「Nagisa surely thinks the same. We're the same as Misuzu-san… We're okay being his 『Mistress』 for the rest of our lives. We won't wish for the seat of legal wife. No…We can't wish」

Katsuko-nee and Nagisa-san's past…
That's them being prostitutes of 『Kuromori』
Is it that heavy?

「But…Nei-san's there too. Nei-san's very beautiful… and I'm sure that Yoshida-kun likes Nei-san more than me…!

Megumi sees through me.
No…I can't hide secrets anyway.

「I'll become Nei-san's 『Little brother』」

I told Megumi.

「I'll enter Nei-san's family register and become her real brother. That's what we decided」

Nei-san wants a 『Little brother』
She wants to be my 『Sister』

「Therefore…I cannot marry Nei-san」

I said it clearly.

「Yuzuki-sensei, I'll do that. Can you contact my father and adopt me as soon as possible?」

Yuzuki-sensei is.

「Yoshida-kun's father is in Fukuoka right now…」

…As expected.
Sensei examined it.

「…Are you really sure about it?」
「Yes, please」
「Got it…We're quite busy right now so I'll contact your father once we reach a point where we can pause」

When the revenge on Shirasaka Sousuke and the matter with Mr. Viola ends…
I'll formally become Nei-san's 『Little brother』…

「What about Maika-san? Do you want to marry Yoshida-kun?」

Sensei asks Maika

「…Maika doesn't understand marriage yet」

The 14 year old girl answered.

「But…If Onii-san and Megumi-chan marries, he'll become Maika's real Onii-san…」

…Maika!

「Maika-chan…do you think of me as your sister?」

Maika smiled at Megumi.

「Isn't that obvious?…Megumi-chan is Maika's Onee-chan!」

Maika holds out to Megumi.
Megumi holds Maika's hand.

「…Ever since childhood, Megumi-chan has always been so gentle with Maika. You always think of Maika. Maika-chan wants Megumi-chan as her real sister instead…!」
「…Maika-chan」
「I'm fine being Onii-chan and Megumi-chan's little sister. Megumi-chan, marry him. I'm sure Megumi-chan needs Onii-san the most…!」

Maika said.

「I…Yoshida-kun…?」

Misuzu spoke to the surprised Megumi.

「That's right. I also understood that I depended on the word 『Danna-sama's pet』 for a while. Megumi-san wants to depend on Danna-sama. Therefore, you're trying to run to the word 『Sex slave』 …!」
「…I」

Megumi tries to reflect on herself.

「Megumi-chan might be the one who wants to monopolize him the most…!」

Katsuko-nee said.

「Am I like that?」

Katsuko-nee told Megumi who's looking down.

「You're the one who knows your feelings the best…!」

Once again, Misuzu asks Maika.

「…Maika-san. Maika-san is also fine being Danna-sama's 『Mistress』?」

Maika…

「Yes. Maika will become a 『Mistress』 Maika's already Onii-san's 『woman』…!」

Hey hey, Maika…!

「Maika…There's no need to force yourself. Even Maika might find someone better than me someday…Shouldn't you just marry that person…!」

Maika laughs innocently and shook her neck.

「Onii-san…Did you listen to Misuzu-san's talk earlier?」

…Eh?

「Maika…can no longer marry properly. Maika's Papa will surely be in trouble won't he? He was that bad after all…It can't be helped」

…Maika, you

「Maika can no longer stay on Shirasaka house, can she? Even if Maika mets some other men, what Papa did will always follow Maika」

Maika's too clever.
Even though she's just a 14 year old girl…
She's holding her feelings and she has the strength to analyze reality calmly.

「Maika…Perhaps, will never be able to marry for her entire life. I can't give unnecessary troubles to the person I will marry and his family」

Maika looks at me.

「…Onii-san. Can you take Maika as your 『Mistress』 and love her for the rest of your life?」

The second grade middle school girl is entrusting me with her future.

「Yeah…I promise. Maika will forever be my 『Woman』…!」
「…Will you do the same to Katsuko-san, Nei-san and Misuzu-san?」
「Yeah. I'll never differentiate. I'll love you all the same. I'll offer my whole mind and body for it…!」

I look at Megumi.

「Megumi's the same… Even if I marry Megumi, I won't treat her better than other girls. I'll love everyone fairly. As all are my 『women』」
「…Yoshida-kun」

Megumi looks at me.

「…I'm glad」

Maika mutters in relief.

「Maika…doesn't love just Onii-san. I like Katsuko-san, Nei-san, and Misuzu-san…I like everyone. I want to be everyone's 『Ally』 Maika also loves Megumi-chan…!」

From Maika's smile…Megumi…!!!!!

---

1. lol ↩
2. Author indicated Maika but it's actually Megumi ↩
3. Pun sighs ↩
4. Dammit Megumi, why are you trying to lower Maika's self esteem with you! ↩
5. And Katsuko was a former prostitute, get your shit together ↩
6. You're like shaming your mother ↩
7. He just said that he does, dammit! ↩
8. He just said that he does ↩
9. Don't worry, Yoshida-sama has a very huge love capacity ↩

108. Passionate girl Yamamine Megumi

「…Megumi-san, do you like having sex with Danna-sama?」

Misuzu suddenly throws a question to Megumi.

「I…still don't understand it」

Of course.
Megumi just lost her virginity yesterday.
There's still the pain and she didn't experience pleasure in sex yet.

「But…I'll do anything as long as Yoshida-kun wishes for it. I'll do my best to become a lewd girl…!」
「You don't need to do your best on that!」

Misuzu scolds Megumi.

「I understand…Megumi-san. You're misunderstanding that you should merely serve Danna-sama」

Megumi's puzzled by Misuzu's words.

「In sex…It won't end with just you giving your mind and body. You have to give it to your partner and you should receive too…!」

…Give and receive?

「Misuzu finally understood it recently. Or rather…I discover various things every time Danna-sama embraces me. I'm learning. And…Misuzu comes to love Danna-sama even more」

You understood from having sex with me? You learned?
…I
It's not that I didn't learn anything.
Misuzu's body feels so soft, warm, and pleasant…
That's all.

「Misuzu recently thinks about Eros and Agape」

…Eros, what?

「Misuzu-san What is that?」

Maika asked.
Great, nice follow-up!

「Well, it's not something taught as early as middle school…」

Misuzu told Maika.
No…I'm a high school but I don't know it either.
I may learn it somewhere however…

「It's an ancient Greece word however…In Christian philosophy, 『Love』 is greatly divided into 『Eros』 and 『Agape』」

C-Christian philosophy…?!
W-What's philosophy…?

「『Eros』 is general lust. Sexual love with body. It is considered to be the want to be rewarded by the partner」

Eh…It wasn't just 『Ero』?
It's that isn't it?
『Keep the Eros within bounds』 that kind of 『Eros』, right?

「On the other hand 『Agape』 is a philanthropy given unconditionally to everyone. Mental love. A love that doesn't ask for rewards. It can be translated to 『Neighborly love』」

…Shit
Could it be that Misuzu's a smart girl?
She said that she'll take Tokyo University exam.

「In Christianity, the spirit is higher than body so Agape is assumed as the highest class of love. Saying that the 『love』 God gives to men is the same as 『Agape』」

…Hee

「But…Misuzu had a doubt since then. Is 『Eros』 really inferior to 『Agape』…?」

…Eh?
『Mental Philanthropy』and 『Lewd feelings』is incomparable isn't it?
Or rather『Lewd feelings』is very personal…
Or rather, what's most strange is comparing the two.

「Misuzu thinks that 『Eros』is very important」

…Misuzu?

「…Katsuko-sama, can I ask you something?」

Misuzu talks to Katsuko-nee.

「Sure, ask me」

Katsuko-nee answered cheerfully

「Katsuko-sama…do you intent to have sex with any other man than Danna-sama?」
「No…I won't have sex with anyone but him. If I can't have sex with him then I'll just masturbate throughout my life. I don't need any other men…!」

Katsuko-nee smiles.

「…Why can you say that?」
「Because…His sex is truly wonderful. I can reveal my body and mind in front of him. He also shows me everything. There are no secrets. We throw our desires and greed at each other. I don't think I can find another ideal sex partner for a second time」

Katsuko-nee said.
Misuzu continued asking.

「But, if ever…Danna-sama dies right now…what will Katsuko-sama do?」
「…I'll kill myself」

Katsuko-nee answered immediately.

「I'm already as good as dead before I met him. A world without

him is meaningless for me」

…Katsuko-nee!

「Then…If Danna-sama encounters an accident and lost his penis… what will Katsuko-sama do?」

If my penis is cut off?

「Let's see…Even if he lose his penis, I'll love him as long as he still has his fingers and mouth. No…even if he lose his mouth or hands, it's fine as long as he's here. As long as we can have our skins touch…I'll masturbate while embracing his body closely. That will satisfy me. I'll live with him forever」
「…But, you can't have sex with him anymore?」
「I already had enough sex. Katsuko's mind and body has firmly memorized the wonderful sex with him. Of course…I want to have sex with him a lot from now on but…I'm okay as long as he's living. I have the memory of our happy sex. I'm fine doing it by myself while he watches me. I'll be satisfied enough…I can live happily with that!」

…Katsuko-nee answered.

「Misuzu thinks that Katsuko-sama's feelings is actually 『Eros』」

…『Eros』

「This is also 『Love』…Moreover, if there is no 『Sex』as mediation, it's a 『love』that doesn't come into existence」

Misuzu said.

「Misuzu feels 『Eros』for Danna-sama. For example, if Danna-sama goes comatose…It's a bit imprudent isn't it? I'm sorry…But still, Misuzu will love Danna-sama forever. I'll take care of him forever. I'll never leave him. That's because I have the memory of a 『Wonderful sex』with Danna-sama. I have the memory of loving and being loved so…Misuzu will embrace Danna-sama not with only love and affection but also with trust and respect. I feel a deeper love towards Danna-sama than my blood relatives right now…!」

Misuzu said that, but…
I… I don't get it.
I just love everyone I have sex with and think of them as precious.
If they ask 『Do you love these girls?』 …I'll answer 『I do』 confidently
But…
If Katsuko-nee or Misuzu became human vegetable[1]…Can I still love them until I die?
…I don't know.
I can't answer right now.

「…That's wonderful. Katsuko-neesan and Misuzu-san」

Megumi told the two.

「Will I be able to feel that way too?」

Misuzu smiles at Megumi.

「You will, if it's Megumi-san…!」

Megumi thinks for a moment.

「I trust Yoshida-kun. I respect him as a person. Therefore, I am resolved to offer my body for my entire life. Is that insufficient?」

Katsuko-nee answers.

「…Yes, that's not enough」

…Katsuko-nee

「Megumi-san is saying 『I'll dedicate』 but…you don't reveal everything to him」
「I don't reveal?」
「If you really want to dedicate everything to him…You have to ask him 『What do you want?』 properly」

Megumi looks at me.

「Yoshida-kun…What do you want with me? What should I give you?」

…I
I look at Megumi's face.
Long and narrow eyes…a beauty.
What do I hope from Megumi…?!

「…I want to date Megumi properly」

Those words come out of my mouth.

「…Eh?」

Megumi's surprised…

「Megumi…No, Yamamine Megumi-san. Please go out with me…!!!!」

I bowed to Megumi.

「That's…Yoshida-kun. Even if yo don't say that…I'll have sex with Yoshida-kun. I'll do anything Yoshida-kun wants. I promise that…」
「…That's not how it is!!」

I shouted.

「I want to know more about Megumi. I want Megumi to know about me. I thought that I understand Megumi this far but… actually, I don't know anything Sorry, Megumi…!」

The way of thinking Megumi has since she was born…
What are the worries of Megumi she had all this time…
I never knew that…

「I'm an idiot so…I've never understood Megumi's feelings…No, I think I still wont. No matter how much I try to understand, I'm different from Megumi so I might never understand you forever. We might reach the deep trench. But…I won't stop putting an effort to understand Megumi. I'll never stop…!
「…Yoshida-kun?
「And…I want Megumi to try to understand me too…!」

Those words are naturally overflowing from the bottom of my heart.

「…Not stopping the effort to understand one's partner That's 『Love』 too」

Katsuko-nee muttered.

「…But, how?」

Megumi asks me.

「Isn't that obvious…It's sex! Have a lot of sex!」

Misuzu answered instead of me.

「We're not Gods. We cannot understand our minds so we have to use our whole body to feel it. Have lots of sex. You might clash, hurt, or fight each other. But, pile your bodies together and understand each other. Feel it…Hey, Megumi-san!」

…I
I stretched my hand to Megumi.

「…I can't say it well but… I don't want Megumi to be my 『Sex slave』 I want Megumi to be my lover…!!!」

Megumi's eyes open wide…!

「Let me say it once again…Yamamine Megumi-san, please become my girlfriend. Please…!」

…Megumi

「Is that okay for me to become Yoshida-kun's girlfriend?」
「It's fine…That's what I want」
「But…I don't know what should I do being a girlfriend.」

Megumi's eyes have tears collecting on it.
A first year high school girl.
She has never experienced love until now.
Raised by prostitutes…as a backlash, she became an extreme honor student on the house that adopted her as a daughter…
A girl who lost her virginity before she has her first love.
A beauty that walks on a different road than normal girls.

「Even I don't know」

That's right, even I…
I raped Yukino without even experiencing normal love experience…
The frequency of sex only increases and I can't do a proper love.
I still don't know anything.

「Therefore…Let's try it」
「…Us?」
「Yes. Let's confirm it…examine it…test it…and do things lovers do」

I talk to Megumi who has moist eyes.,

「…Can I do it?」

Megumi asked in worry.

「…It'll be fine. I'm here with you」

Tears spill from Megumi's eyes
It drops like crystal…

「…Got it. I'll try it. I'll become Yoshida-kun's lover. 」

Megumi holds the hand I hold out to her…

「If you're fine with me…I gave you my best regards…!」

…Megumi and I
…Became lovers.
Not for mere form's sake but in truth.

「…You're so interesting」

Yuzuki-sensei mutters from the driver's seat.

「You don't know whether you should take a shortcut or do it on a roundabout way. But…You finally saw each other's existences already…」

…Certainly

I feel that we took a very roundabout way.
Then ran past through a shortcut in a dash…
But, what's important is that Megumi and I are holding hands.
That means that Megumi and I are here…

「Man and woman…are like two cars that dashes in the dark without turning on the lights… Thinking that the other is on the opposite side without feeling properly the other's existence, and before they noticed, they have been separated. On the contrary, they might crash against each other… Thus you cannot stop being cautious」

Yuzuki-sensei said.

「Keiko-san told me that before. 」

Keiko-san…Megumi's lost mother.

「…My mother did?」
「Yes. Keiko-san had experienced love…I was very envious of that」

Sensei said.

「Now that you're lovers, you should tell each other whatever you think! You must not hold back. You should point out what you don't like and what's bad with your partner. Your relationship shouldn't be broken with such things anymore after all…!」

Katsuko-nee told us.

「Yoshida-kun…Uhm, I…」

Megumi looks at my face as if she remembered somethinng.

「…What is it, Megumi?」

When I answered her.

「I don't like it that much when I'm called 『Megumi』」

…Awawa

Is that so?
Certainly…I'm being so arrogant calling her by her first name.
Or rather…Didn't Maika tell me the same thing?

「…Call me 『Megu』」

…Megu?

「Then I want to call you 『Yoshi-kun2』…!」

…Un
I should begin here to let her be slip out of the slave sense.

「…Got it, Megu」
「…Thanks, Yoshi-kun」

Megumi smiles…
I raised my body from the seat.
Megumi brought her body close
Inside the minivan…
We kissed.

「…Yoshi-kun, I want to have sex right now」
「…Later. I'll do you a lot, Megu」
「…Un」

We kissed each other repeatedly

「Megumi-san…please get loved by Danna-sama for Misuzu's fill too」

Misuzu told Megumi.

「…Misuzu-san, are you sure?」

Megumi who feels sorry for Misuzu has asked.

「Misuzu cannot date Danna-sama outside. I'm the daughter of Kouzuki after all. I cannot be seen by people flirting with Danna-sama. I would be receiving scolding from grandfather if I bring shame to my house」

…Misuzu.

「Misuzu will endure so she can be with Danna-sama. In exchange…Please love me a lot on the bed. Is that okay?!」

Misuzu smiled at me. With amorous eyes.

「Yeah. Let's have lots of sex!」

I promised Misuzu.

「Katsuko doesn't have that kind of bondn so…I can flirt a lot even outside! You can take me on places where non-adults can't enter!」

…K-Katsuko-nee?

「But…I agree with you having a healthy high school love with Megumi-san. Nagisa and I can teach you nothing but a too strong sex. You can still go to school properly so I'd like you to experience what normal people does」

…That's right.
Katsuko-nee and Nagisa-san has dropped out of high school because they were turned to prostitutes…
They weren't able to go to school.
Of course…They weren't able to experience love for high school students.

「I will not interfere in the school at all. Flirt a lot okay?!」

Katsuko-nee said while laughing.

「…What should Maika do?」

Maika's a bit troubled.

「My…is it not stimulating for your Onee-chan to do lewd things with her boyfriend?」

Katsuko-nee says that but.

「Does Maika-chan want to be Yoshi-kun's lover too? I won't be

jealous at all」

Megumi told Maika.

「Hmm…Maika's fine being Onii-san's 『Mistress』 I'll leave the lover to Megumi-oneechan」

…Maika.

「Look, Maika feels like a 『Woman in shadows』?」

…I wonder

「But…please do lots of lewd stuff. Maika wants to feel the 『Eros』 towards Onii-san too」

Saying that, Maika smiled.

「I'm okay with it being only at school. Yoshi-kun, you can date Maika-chan, Katsuko-neesan and Nagisa-neesan outside」

Megumi said.

「My…Megumi-chan should date him. We'll properly set times for the four of us in the 『Sister's club』!」

Katsuko-nee declares as the chairman of 『Sister's club』

「…Hey, what about Nei-san?」

Maika asks in wonder.

「Nei-san…cannot date Onii-san?」

…Err
How should I answer this?3

「…Nei has a lot of things with her right now」

That's my answer for now.

「Oh right…let's talk about Danna-sama and Megumi-san's wedding!」

Misuzu changed the talk forcibly.

「Misuzu will be doing the speech as Megumi-san's bridesmaid」

…Misuzu?

「I will bless that day with all my heart!」

Misuzu seems to have decided already.

「Should Maika-chan and I sing a song?」

Katsuko-nee jokingly said.

「Maika will dance! It's Megumi-chan's wedding after all!」

Maika-chan answers laughingly

…Megumi.

「Thank you everyone. I'll sit next to Yoshi-kun in the ceremony. But, that marriage won't be for just me. Let's all spend the wedding night together. Yoshi-kun and all of the 『Sisters』」
「Megumi-san…are you sure?」

Misuzu asks Megumi.

「Yes. I'm just sitting as a bride representing the 『Sisters』 I think that we all 『Sisters』 marry Yoshi-kun That way's better」

Megumi said.
As usual, they're talking without my approval…
My future's decided already.
Well…I'm okay with that though
I love this 『Sisters』 after all.

「Ojou-sama should attend too…Would you?!」

Katsuko-nee talks to Yuzuki-sensei.

「I'm fine…you can enjoy it yourselves」

Sensei…doesn't seem to enjoy parties.

「I won't let that. Ojou-sama will sit on the 『Relative seat』 …」
「…Katsuko」

Sensei hesitates.

「You can chose your role, it's either his 『Mother』 or 『Sister』」

Katsuko-nee smiled.

「If you want, should we make a floral tribute of the bride and groom for Ojou-sama? 『I appreciate your kindness, mother』」
「…Enough. Don't do that」

Sensei's troubled.

「…No, Sensei will sit not on the 『Relative seat』」

I told Sensei

「…A different seat?」
「Yes…Sensei is Megu and my 『Teacher』」

That's right.
Sensei is our teacher.[4]

「We'll give a floral tribute to our 『Teacher』…!」

I look at Megu.
…Megu is.

「Un. I also want Minaho-san to attend as our teacher…!」

Sensei answered.

「Thank you two…I'm going then. As your 『Teacher』…!」

---

1. He means that they turn into coma ↩
2. It'll take us 400 more chapters to see how clever this name is, but I'm already giving you guys a hint. "Yes, that's part of Yoshida's name, but is that all?" ↩
3. Tell her Nei's a virgin ↩

4. This is why I keep using Sensei instead of Teacher ↩

109. Crossroads / First resolution

「…By the way, Maika-san…do you have a class tomorrow?」

Yuzuki-sensei asks Maika.
Today's May 1.
This year's golden week has May 1 and 2 in weekdays.

「Maika's doesn't have school until Golden Week ends. There's a lot of children who travels abroad in the consecutive holidays…which is mostly the reason」

As expected of an Ojou-sama school…they're drastic.

「Misuzu's school will be closed tomorrow. May 1 is the founding anniversary of the school. May 2 will end after the medical checkup by morning」

I see…during consecutive holidays, you must still have motivation to go to the usual class in school.

「Our school's the same. It will end after the medical examination and fire drill. On May 2, it will do the usual class however…」

Sensei said.
Hee…So there's no lessons tomorrow.

「…Endou-kun's baseball practice match would be tomorrow lunch」

…Oh
So that's what's scheduled.
I completely forgot about Endou.
Didn't they say that his face is plastered?

「Then, I will visit by lunch tomorrow」

Misuzu said.
It seems that it has already become natural for her to come to the mansion.

「If I go out too early, mother would be suspicious. Also, Misuzu has a traditional dance practice tomorrow starting evening…」

Misuzu's dance symposium at May 2 Night…
Tomorrow is likely the dress rehearsal for the next…

「Give me a call before you come tomorrow? I'll meet you up tomorrow」

Katsuko-nee tells Misuzu.

「No…I would feel sorry for being received by your car. I'll come to the mansion by foot from the station」
「You don't have to mind that. It's been dangerous here lately. That's why I will come to get you. Okay?」
「…But」

I interrupt Misuzu and Katsuko-nee's talk.

「Misuzu, let Katsuko-nee come for you」
「…Danna-sama?」
「Everyone's worried about you」

Misuzu looks down…

「Misuzu doesn't want to have preferential treatment」
「I'm not treating you specially」

Katsuko-nee smiled at Misuzu.

「It's not just Misuzu-san…I will come to pick up Megumi-chan and Maika-chan too. Everyone's equally important」
「…Katsuko-sama」
「Therefore…Let her come and pick you up」

I ordered Misuzu.

「Understood, Danna-sama…Katsuko-sama thank you in advance」

Misuzu bowed to Katsuko-nee.

「By the way…Maika-san. Can you stay at our mansion today?」

Sensei asks Maika.

「…Stay over?」

Maika looks at me and Megu with a perplexed face.

「You want to talk to Megumi don't you? Megumi will stay in the mansion as well. Katsuko too of course…Yoshida-kun, you're going to stay over for today, will you?」

We still haven't told Maika that I've been in staying in the mansion for all this time.

「If I recall, your mother is in the countryside, is she?」
「Yes…Mama won't come back home because of business」
「Then, that's great」

Sensei invites Maika.

「…Hmmmm」

Maika's hesitating.

「I want to talk a lot with Maika-chan」

Megumi smiles at Maika.

「Maika's the same…but」

Maika's worry is…

「…I don't think that Onee-chan will allow it」

As expected, it's Yukino

「Without Mama…Onee-chan is very bossy in the house」
「Huh…Maika's house?」

I instinctively asked.
His father is in hell at Australia.
Her mother is on the countryside for business.
Is there someone else that's living with them?

「Ah, there's a maid that goes in our house」

Maid…?[1]

「The maid does the cleaning and washing. When Mama's not there to make meals, the Maid will make it」

…So rich people's house
Are putting out cash to depend on people?!

「But…Onee-chan's always so selfish. They all stop immediately. 『The meal's not delicious』 or 『The way you fold laundries are bad』 she says. Onee-san calls to the maid agency directly to complain. Therefore, we change three to four maids in one year…」

If you can complain then you should just do it yourself…
Yukino's already a high school student.
It's not my place to say that however…

「Maika's house…has Onee-chan acting like a Queen…」

She was spoiled and raised in such a way…
Yukino became that kind of womann.
And…because she's such a sister.
Maika grew up to be a decent girl…
Of course, her being apart from her sister and grew up in Shizouka since infancy is a big influence too.
The thought of her being suppressed by her sister changed her feelings to 『wanting to be a grown up sooner』
Anyway…Yukino is so sinful.

「Therefore…even if Maika calls saying 『I'll stay over my friend's house today』 …Onee-chan will surely not allow it」

Maika said sadly.

「Well fine…We'll be arriving at Misuzu-san's rehearsal hall. Afterwards, we'll go to Yamamine-san's house…and to Ikeda clinic. We'll do that order」

Sensei told us.
The car runs in the town at a very high speed…

◇ ◇ ◇

「Yes…It's there. Please stop at the next signal」

Misuzu told Sensei.
…Here?

「Yes. That's the rehearsal hall of the head of school」

Since we're talking about a traditional Japanese dance rehearsal hall of the head of the school…I thought that it would be a Japanese style building.
There's a seven story building before my eyes
It's around the size of a department store around the station…!
It's a first class site facing the main street.
There are big buildings around it.
It's lined up with stylish restaurants and dressmakers.
This area…if I recall, it's a famous upper class residential area.

「During pre-war, there seems to be all residential quarters in this hilly section of a city but…It feels like it has been completely developed now」

Misuzu explained.

「This has been the residence of the head of the school since old times…Then, the building was rebuilt around thirty years ago. Therefore, the head of the school has this building rounded. The fourth floor is the office and the fifth floor is the rehearsal floor. The rehearsal room is separated into a big and small room. The sixth floor is has her apprentice living and the seventh floor is the house of the head of school」

…Haa

「So they're lending the floors below?」

Katsuko-nee asks Misuzu.

「Yes. A relative of the head of the school does a sports gym. There's a heated swimming pool on the underground and the second and third floor are offices. The first floor is a tea lounge and

a restaurant」
「…What about the rooftop?」
「The rooftop has been greened and it is the garden of the head of the school. It's a very beautiful Japanese garden. There's tea room too」
「…I see」

Katsuko-nee stares at the building.

「What's wrong, Katsuko-nee」
「Look…My dream in the future is a bakery but, I thought that it would be nice to have such a complex building」
「…Eh?」
「For example…Nagisa and I bought a building as one house…then have both the flower shop and bakery at the same location would be nice. Then live inside the buildingn. Then, we can help each other…it would also be convenient on taking care of the children and dropping off and picking up the children on the kindergarten」

Katsuko-nee has various plans coming up it seems…

「What do you think?」

…Me?

「That's right. You're also going to live there too」

K-Katsuko-nee…?

「We'll also have Megumi-chan's room…and Maika-chan's welcome too. Oh, we need Nei-sama and Margo-sama's room too. When it comes to it, buying a whole building might be the right choice. In my case, I'd like a spa on the rooftop…!」

Katsuko-nee says that, but…

「Right…That's an interesting idea. Should I search for a site?」

Yuzuki-sensei told Katsuko-nee.

「I ask of you Ojou-sama」
「Katsuko's assets can buy a small building

Katsuko-nee…You earned that much?!
…But
Katsuko-nee answered Sensei with a laugh.

「No…What Katsuko wants is a slightly bigger building」

…Eh?

「Therefore…please invest on it Ojou-sama. We'll have the best room as Ojou-sama's room」
「…Katsuko」
「Katsuko-wants Ojou-sama to eat Katsuko's meal!」

Katsuko-nee and Yuzuki-sensei looks at each other's eyes.

「…I'll think about it」
「Yes, thank you in advance」

Margo-san said…
『Before you talk about your dream, confront reality and think of a concrete plan』
That certainly penetrated everyone's mind.
Everyone's thinking of the 『Future』 concretely and begin to act.

「…Then, Misuzu will be going soon」

Misuzu brought her face close to me
We kissed in a position that cannot be seen from the outside.

「Thank you for giving me your love for today as well. I love you. Danna-sama」

Misuzu looks at me with moist eyes.

「…Me too. I love you, Misuzu」

We pile our lips once again.

「…Please love me tomorrow too」
「…Yeah」
「I'll call later tonight」
「Okay…I'll wait」

Misuzu looks at Megu.

「Megumi-san…Please take care of Danna-sama」
「Ah…Yes」

Megu's cheeks blushed

「Maika-san…later」

Misuzu smiled at Maika.

「Yes…Misuzu-san」
「Let's have sex with Danna-sama tomorrow as well」
「Misuzu-san's licking felt very good」

Oh right, Maika had her clitoris licked by Misuzu while having my penis inside her…!

「I can do it again anytime」
「Next time, Maika will be the one to lick Misuzu-san」
「My…Are you sure?」
「…Please take care of Maika from now on」
「That's natural…It's not just Megumi-san but, Misuzu is also Maika-san's 『Onee-chan』 I'll cherish you a lot…!」

Megumi's smile feels so fascinating.

「Yuzuki-sama, Katsuko-sama…Thank you for everything. Please guide Misuzu from now on」

Misuzu bowed to the two ladies.

「I should say that as welll…Thank you Misuzu-san. I'll ask you to take care of Yoshida-kun and the other girls」

Sensei responded.

「Yes…It's for my beloved Danna-sama and 『Sisters』」

Misuzu smiled.

「…Then, excuse me」

Misuzu opens the car door
Before she steps out of the car, she looks at me.
Then she handed me a white cloth from her pocket.

「This is a souvenier」

Saying that…When Misuzu got off the car, she flipped her skirt on purpose.
I see her naked ass under her skirt…!
So Misuzu handed me her panties?

「Please don't worry, I've prepared a change in the locker at the rehearsal hall as we'll change to Yukata for the practice…! I'll never show this to any other man but Danna-sama!」

Saying that…Misuzu closed the door.
We keep waving our hands until she enters the rehearsal hall.

「…She has really changed within just three days」

Yuzuki-sensei says while watching Misuzu disappear in the building.

「Yes, she's stabilized greatly…somehow, she also has some dignity」

Katsuko-nee said.
Stabilized…?
…That?
Certainly, I think that she has settled down, but.

「…She was a very childish girl before but…she became a good woman, didn't she?」

Katsuko-nee looks at me…
…Yeah
I certainly think that as well.

「At any rate…It's great that she's our ally」
「Right. We need the help of Kouzuki-sama on our confrontation with the head of Shirasaka house」

…I see
To complete the revenge with Shirasaka Sousuke…
We need the head of Shirasaka house to abandon Shirasaka Sousuke
We also need to liberate Megumi.
The treatment of Yukino and Maika is needed to be talked about too.
Shirasaka house is a clan that founded a major newspaper…they have quite the social power.
It is a dangerous opponent for 『Kuromori』 to take upfront.
If so…obtain a bigger power from the financial world…having Misuzu's grandfather enter won't be a bad hand.

「But, Ojou-sama…Would Kouzuki-sama help?」

…Eh?
Misuzu's grandfather was a former customer of 『Kuromori』 …
Won't he sympathize with the prostitutes of the residence…?!

「Kouzuki-sama has been friendly with us until now but…I don't think that he will permit his relationship with Misuzu-san」

…I see
Him favoring the prostitutes…
And Misuzu being my 『Woman…』
Is completely different.
Misuzu's grandfather might not allow her own granddaughter becoming a 『woman』 of a man from 『Kuromori』
In the first place, Misuzu has a fiancé he has decided on.
As a daughter of a noble family…she's planned to marry a man with a good standing.
And I…
I stole her virginity and made her my 『woman』
And…I'm just a commoner…
No, more than a commoner…I'm someone who's abandoned by my parents and doesn't have a support.
I'm obviously not suitable as a groom of a Kouzuki house's daughter…

「There's the case where instead of lending us power, he'll try to separate Yoshida-kun and Misuzu-san」

Sensei analyzes.
…No way!

「Yoshida-kun…answer me honestly. Do you hate separating from Misuzu-san…?」

If I break up with Misuzu…Misuzu's grandfather will help 『Kuromori』
If that happens…
Sensei and others will be saved from the trouble.
It would be an advantage for 『Kuromori』
…But

「…I don't want that. I promised Misuzu that I'll protect her. I cannot break up with her.」

I answered clearly.

「…I'm indebt with Sensei but I'm sorry」

Sensei laughs.

「…That's fine., I know that you're like that」

…Sensei?

「That's why Misuzu-san has become your 『woman』 from the bottom of her heart…I don't have that intention this late」

Sensei looks at me.

「But…Remember this. That is why you have no choice but to have your relationship with Misuzu-san be accepted by Kouzuki-san. You have to confront Kouzuki-sama directly…!」

…Directly.
I will settle it with Misuzu's grandfather…

「Misuzu-san's dance presentation tomorrow…will of course have Kouzuki-sama there as well」

I'll meet with Misuzu's grandfather there.

No, not just her grandfather.
Misuzu's fiancé her grandfather has decided will be there too…!

「Think about how you will talk with Kouzuki-sama from now on」

Sensei told me.
…I

「Got it. I'll think about it」

I look at Misuzu's panty at my hand.
Misuzu's surely ready for it.
Then…I should steel myself too.
As Misuzu's 『man』

「You have changed…Yoshida-kun」

Sensei looks at my face.

「…Eh?」

I don't know.

「You've changed…You're making a good face. A very manly face」

…Manly?
I'm always a man though?…

「Before, you didn't have anything to protect. You never thought of yourself as important」

Katsuko-nee tells me.

「But…Right now, you have a lot of people you treasure. You're brining good tension of the feeling of 『Want to protect』 Right now, you're making a good tensed face」

Katsuok-nee praises me.

「…Now, you should value yourself even a bit more」

Sensei sighs.

「…That's okay」

Megumi mutters.

「Yoshida-kun treasures us. He's our beloved 『Danna-sama』after all…」

Megu borrowed Misuzu's words…

「Right…we only have to take care of him」

Katsuko-nee smiled.

「Then…Maika will pat pat his head!」

Maika pats my head.

「Isn't that great…Yoshida-kun?」

Sensei says so then steps on the accelerator.
The car has began to run again…
Next destination would be Yamamine house

This time…I have to meet Megu's foster parents

---

1. Literally "Helper" ↩

110. Marriage declaration / Second resolution

「…That is my house」

Megu points at a house.
The sun has already gone down…
The cloudy night sky comes.
On the corner of the low-lying residential area…entering a compact shopping district, right at the back of the alley.
An old small house was built there.

「Waa…Small」

Maika says.
Perhaps, there's only one or two rooms on both floors.
The first floor is the parent's living room and the second floor is Megumi's room and the storage?
The glass door has a crack and is patched by a brown packing tape.
The lamp in the front door is burning darkly.
The paint on the wooden wall has faded away considerably.
It's a rag house with poor light inside.
By standards…You can't think that they're relatives of the famous family Shirasaka.

「Right…It's smaller than Maika-san's house」

Yuzuki-sensei told Maika.

「Ah…Sorry. I didn't mean it like that」

Megu smiles at the apologizing Maika.[1]

「It's fine. Yamamine house is being aided by Shirasaka house on the livelihood…」

Megu said.

「The head of Shirasaka house…the second wife of the founder of

the newspaper company was coming from Yamamine house」
「Yes, she's originally a daughter of an employee of the company. The founder fell in love with her then…as far as it goes, they put her in the family register and made her a concubine」

Megu answers Sensei question

「Yamamine house has become Shirasaka house's relative like that but…because other marriage proposals other than Yamamine house has been on the distinguished families…they've become a complete luggage of the clan」

Yamamine house who came from commoners has been looked down by the people of Shirasaka house all this time.

「My foster father, and all of his brothers are all employed in a company affliated to Shirasaka house」
「Did any of them enter the newspaper company?」

Megu shook her head?

「…People from Yamamine house will never be hired in the newspaper and big companies. They're appointed at the place that is the subsidiary of the subsidiary of the company group. Even if they work for that company for years, they cannot get anything higher than section chief. They're driven to the standpoint where they can't go against the people of Shirasaka house」

They're such a clan who do such things without concern…

「They're like idiots…Even Shirasaka house was just a commoner until the founder made the newspaper company succeed. Mistaking that they have risen to such nobles, they justify such foolish things, but…!」

Sensei speaks out.

「Maika-san…Misuzu-san will have her symposium the day after tomorrow. Go with Yoshida-kun and Megumi. That's where the genuine nobles of the country gather」

Sensei tells Maika.

「Take a look at the genuine first class people. You will understand that Shirasaka who's an upstart isn't the real one」

Misuzu's learning the Konpeki style traditional dance from the headmaster2
The headmaster's class would be performing the day after tomorrow.
It's just a presentation of a traditional dance class and yet, they're using the 『National Theatre』
The girls dancing with Misuzu are all students of the headmaster…
They must all be daughters of prestigious families.
Naturally…Their family would come to see the presentation.
Japan's…wealthy socialites.

「Right, I think it would be a good study for you. You should go there」

Katsuko-nee says so, however…

「Nei-sama and Margo-sama will be coming too…If I recall, Nagisa will do the same?」
「Huh, Katsuko-nee won't come?」

I asked instinctively.

「I cannot go to such places…. Nagisa is already 『Retired』 for years so she can pass…But I'm still in 『Active service』 There's a lot of people I would be troubled to face」

Katsuko-nee choses her words carefully in front of Maika.
…I see
Katsuko-nee will have lots of her guests coming in there too…

「I will be alright but…those people」

The guest would be coming with his wife and daughter and yet, he would see Katsuko-nee's face…That's certainly hard.

「Therefore, I will be just a support on the day after tomorrow…!」

…Eh?
Not 『House watching』 …But 『Support』

That means that there's something scheduled to be executed at that day…
As 『Kuromori』…

「…Katsuko, how's the rear?」

Sensei has been observing the state outside the car since a while ago.
She's been staring at the darkness where the street lights doesn't hit.

「There's no abnormality on the rear as well. There's no lookout or ambush it seems…」

Katsuko-nee is also checking the outside through the rear window.

「It seems that Shirasaka's head doesn't begin to move yet…」
「Yes. Shirasaka Sousuke from Australia cannot contact Japan…the clan and the company still thinks that he's on a normal business trip」

Sensei turned to us.

「Okay…We're about to go. Megumi and Yoshida-kun will be with me. Katsuko and Maika will wait inside the car」
「…Okay」

Megu's nervous…

「I've brought a hidden microphone so Maika-san will be listening with Katsuko in here」

Sensei tells Maika.

「…Maika-san, you still don't trust us from the bottom of your heart, don't you?」

…Eh?
Maika swallows her saliva.

「Therefore…I'd like you to listen to my talk with Yamamine-san. You don't think that Yamamine-san is also conspiring with us just to fool Maika-san, do you?」

「Well…Yes, I think that uncle Yamamine won't do that」

Sensei looks straight at Maika…

「Then…Listen. I want Maika-san to understand the truth about Shirasaka house」
「Yes…understood」

Maika replied.

「…Bring this」

Katsuko-nee handed me a small digital camera

「Take photos of Megumi-chan's family and her room as well」

…Take photos

「Megumi-chan will be parting from this house today…take a commemoration photo」

Megu can no longer return to this house
The house she lived for ten years.
She'll part from her foster parents.

「I'll quote a famous photographer I respect…『Take as much photos as possible. We'll forget about it anyway』…Human's are quite forgetful. Therefore, you should leave it as a photos as much as possible so you won't forget it[3]」

…Katsuko-nee

「Got it…I'll take photos」

I hold the camera firmly.

「Yoshi-kun…I」

Megu's trembling.

「It's okay…I'm here with you」

I kiss Megu.

◇ ◇ ◇

「…I'm home」

The glass door opened with a rattling sound…And Megu calls out.
Footsteps can be heard from the house
A middle aged man and woman with an age around fifty shows up.

「…Megumi」

Megumi bows to the two.

「I'm sorry for staying overnight yesterday…Father, Mother」

Megu's parents…doesn't look like Megu at all.
That's obvious however.
Megu's foster parents have a third of their hair white. They look like decent people. They must've been back just from work. He's still wearing a necktie on his gray suit. A shabby worn out suit. It feels like he's wearing an RTW from a bargain sale for very long.
The mother is just a usual simple mother. Short hair and no makeup. She looks at Megu in worry.

「I'm Kuromori…the one who contacted you the other day」

Yuzuki-sensei greeted Megu's foster parents

「You…?」
「Yes…I'm the current head of Kuromori」

Sensei answered with her usual cold eyes.

「Well…whatever it is, let's talk inside…dear」

Megu's foster mother talked to her husband.

「Y-Yes…we should. Kuromori-san…please come in」
「…Excuse me」

Sensei took off her shoes…

「Uhm…This person?」

Megu's foster mother looks at me

「…Megumi's friend?」

…I

「Yes. I'm Megumi-san's classmate. And…A person of
『Kuromori』 house」

Megumi's foster parents might not know the name 『Kuromori』 as a crime syndicate.
That's why I answered like that.

「He's not a suspicious guy…He came with us to help Megumi-san carry her luggage」

Sensei explains.
I see…if we're going out of this house
We have to take Megumi's luggage.

「It's okay, father, mother…he's a trustworthy person」

Megu told her foster parents with serious eyes

「Understood…please come in」

I took off my shoes as well

「This way…」

The room next to the door is the living room
There's a low table in the Japanese style room.
Megu's foster mother puts out a floor cushion.
When everyone sits on a 8.42 square meter room4, it's narrow.
There's a Kokeshi, and a wooden bear on the cupboard.
There's a simple calendar on the wall.
Somehow, this looks like Showa era.
When tea was distributed to everyone, the foster father started the talk.

「Megumi…Are you sure that they're the people you stayed with before?」

「Yes father. There's no doubt. I've been indebt with Kuromori-san before I came to this house. I was small back then but I remember it well」
「Megumi-san's mother…Keiko-san has been kind with me. I think that this is the time to repay the kindness she has given me」

Sensei talks to Megu's foster mother…

「I think that you already know this but…Megumi's real father, Shirasaka Sousuke will make her a prostitute. I will never allow that to happen. I will take custody of Megumi. And, I'll protect her at a place where Shirasaka house cannot reach」
「But…Kuromori-san. Weren't you managing the prostitution organization with Sousuke-san?」

Megu's foster father seems to hold clear distrust.

「I've already stopped the operation of the prostitution organization already. At the same time, I've already banished Shirasaka Sousuke from our organization. We're currently separated completely from Shirasaka Sousuke」

Sensei answered clearly.

「…You say that but…I cannot trust you」

The foster father declared so.

「To be honest…I don't want to hand Megumi to Sousuke-san. There's no parent who wants to make their treasured daughter a prostitute. But…Kuromori-san and Sousuke-san are in the same prostitution organization, weren't you? There's no guarantee that if I leave Megumi to you, she won't become a prostitute」

For normal people…There's no difference between Shirasaka Sousuke and Sensei.
Both of them were managers of the prostitution organization
『Kuromori』…
It must be unreasonable to trust them…

「…Shirasaka Sousuke has already been caught in a trap」

Sensei declared with cold eyes.

「He's captured by our people in Australia. His trouble with the gangs will be found out soon. Shirasaka Sousuke will lose his position certainly. Shirasaka house will banish him」

Megu's foster mother is startled.

「If that happens…Megumi-san will be taken over by the head of Shirasaka house. For the head of Shirasaka house, Megumi-san is Shirasaka Sousuke's shameful child. She'll be likely to be hidden from the world. I think that she'll be separated from Yamamine-sama too. I think that she'll be entrusted to someone in the province that's under Shirasaka house and she'll be kept there until she dies」
「That's better than her being a prostitute!」

Megu's foster mother shouted.

「Megumi-san should be the one to decide which is better and what life she'll live. Megumi-san…what do you want to do?」

Sensei looks at Megu.
Megu…spoke to her foster parents.

「Father, Mother…Megumi will be going to Kuromori-san」

Megu bowed to her parents.

「I don't want to live being dragged around by Shirasaka house anymore. Megumi wants to leave Shirasaka house no matter what result it gives me」

Her foster parents look at each other.

「But…Megumi」

The foster mother tries to persuade Megu somehow.
But, Megu is…

「I'm sorry, Mother…I've already decided. Megumi right now has been living, obediently following fate. But, not anymore. I'll fight

my own fate. I want to be happy…!」

…Megumi

「I will get out of this house without your permission. If I ran away from home…that way, the head of Shirasaka house won't be blaming father」

…I see
Her parents would be suffering…
If they handed Megumi to Sensei, Yamamine house would be erased by the head of Shirasaka house.

「Megumi-san…you don't get it. If you do that, Shirasaka house won't be forgiving Yamamine-san. I think that they will attach various false charges and make Yamamine-san suffer」

Sensei said.

「…That's」

Megu is at loss.

「…Therefore, I will take Megumi-san by force. Please report to the head of Shirasaka house 『Megumi-san has been kidnapped by Kuromori』 We have already restricted Shirasaka Sousuke so it's okay to tell the head of the house」

…Sensei

「I understood the feeling of Yamamine-san not being able to oppose Shirasaka house. Yamamine-san's brother, kinsmen…are all working on companies related to Shirasaka house. I can understand that you cannot betray Shirasaka house by all means」

Sensei…said with a strong tone

「…No, I」

Megu's foster father tries to object but he can't speak.

「Kuromori house is a genuine criminal organization. Because

we've committed such crimes multiple times, Shirasaka house will surely believe Yamamine-san's report」

『Kuromori』 kidnapped Katsuko-nee and Nagisa-san.
And…turned them to prostitutes.
It's not just the two of them.
A lot of women…

「…The young lady has been kidnapped by a crime syndicate. Yamamine-san's a victim…not our a cooperator. Please contact Shirasaka house at the moment we bring Megumi-san out of this house. And, there would be no more worry about the sparks falling to Yamamine-san」

…In exchange.
『Kuromori』 will confront the head of Shirasaka house…

「…Then, Kuromori-san and Megumi」
「There is no need to worry…We are prepared to fight Shirasaka house. We've already taken a hold of Shirasaka Sousuke himself」

Saying that, Sensei took out her phone.
She pushed the call button.

「…Katsuko, Phase 3」

That's the only line she told over the phone.

「With this, Shirasaka Sousuke on Australia will be imprisoned to a place we only know. We will negotiate with Shirasaka house in exchange for Shirasaka Sousuke…!」
「…That's unreasonable. Kuromori-san doesn't know the terror of Shirasaka house!」

Megu's foster father muttered.

「I agree that it's unreasonable. And, Yamamine-san should know this too…we're a group of people who knows true hell」

Sensei…smiles coldly

「We've fought existence far more frightening than Shirasaka

house. We don't intend to lose…!」

And, she took out a white package from her back.
She puts it on top of the low table.

「Of course, we won't just tell Yamamine-sama to give Megumi for free…This is 10 Million in cash」

Sensei presented the package to Megumi's foster father.
Megu's foster parents are at loss.

「You want me to sell my daughter?」
「This is a reward for reporting a lie to Shirasaka house. We will be kidnapping Megumi-san in paper however. It's regardless of Yamamine-san's will…」

Sensei looks at Megumi's foster parents.

「…Check would be traced by banks. We've prepared bills that's not in the circulation. It would be dangerous to leave the full amount on the same bank. Subdivide it little by little and put it in different accounts with your name」

Megu's foster father looks at the package silently.

「I'm asking you father, please take it」

Megu spoke powerfully.

「That's saying that you want to sever connections with us?」

Her foster father says sadly.

「…That's not it. Whatever the situation becomes, Megumi is father and mother's daughter」

Megu told her foster parents

「……Please think of Megumi being sent off as a bride」

Megu looks at me.
I nodded.

「…Father, Mother…I really thank you for loving and raising me until now」

Megumi takes off the cushion, puts her hand on the floor and bows to her parents

「Megumi…will marry this man…!」

Megu looks at me.
Megu's foster parents look at me in blank surprise…
…I
I removed the cushion, imitating Megumi.
Putting my hands on the mat…I bowed to Megumi's foster parents.

「…I'm Yoshida. Please let me have the priviledge to marry Megumi-san」

I said clearly.

「…I'll make Megumi-san happy. I will never let her feel sad… Please let me have your young lady…!」

I…
I don't like saying『Please let me have your young lady』
Megu…is already at the age where she can decide her own future.
Someone who's will is being controlled should be liberated.
From Shirasaka Sousuke…
From Shirasaka house…
And…from her foster parents.
I look at Megu once again.

「…Megu, marry me…!」

…Megu

「…Yes」

She answered.

「We will hold a proper ceremony when the time comes. At that time, please attend as Megu's parents. Please…!」

I promised Megu's foster parents.

「…You're serious?」

Megu's foster father asked me.

「Yes, I'm serious」

I answered clearly.

「Father, Mother…I'm also serious. I love this person. I believe him. I will be with him throughout my life…!」

Megumi bowed to her foster parents again and again.

「Dear…What do you think about them?」

Megu's foster mother asked her husband.

「I think we should give Megumi as a bride」

The foster father turns to his wife.

「…Are you sure?」

The foster mother nodded.

「It's much more better than being taken and becoming a prostitute or being kidnapped… It's a celebration as well…」

Her foster father sighs.
Then, he looked at me.

「…Yoshida-kun, was it?」
「…Yes?」
「I leave Megumi in your care」

The foster father bowed to me.
…I
…I steeled myself.

「I'll protect Megu with all my best…!!!」

I created another big resolution.

◇ ◇ ◇

「This will be a slightly adult talk so…get the luggage」

Sensei told me and Megu.

「Right…I think it'll take at least half an hours, pack everything by that time. Just pack up the minimum necessities」
「…Okay」

Megu answers Sensei.

「Yoshi-kun My room's on the second floor…」
「Ah…Okay」

Coming out of the living room, we climb the narrow and steep stairs…
We can hear Yuzuki-sensei's voice from the living room.

「…As for the contents that Yamamine-san have to report for the head of Shirasaka house…」

Sensei didn't blame Megu's foster parents but instead…it seems that she has prepared the minimum information that would be the content that they would report to the head of Shirasaka house.

「This is my room」

…Megu's head.
A six-mat Japanese style room…A study desk, bookshelf, and a bed…
There's nothing else.
There's nothing that looks girlish…

「My luggage has already been packed」

There's two travel bags in line on side of the bed.

「Look…I should be taken by Shirasaka-san5 after the golden week. That's why…I've already finished preparations」

…Megu
She was prepared for it.
His biological father making her fall to prostitution.
That's why, Megu is…
She has given up on her life…

「Wait. I'll gather my school stuff. I thought that I cannot go to school anymore after all. Therefore I didn't pack my school stuff」

Megu said…
All of the books and notebooks are piled up on Megu's desk.
Her uniform and spare gym suits are stuffed in a sports bag…
The packing ended in just a minute.
I took photos of Megu's room.

「…What are you doing Yoshi-kun?」
「Well…This is the room Megu has lived since she was six, right?」
「Yeah…I lived here for ten years…」
「Then…I have to take photos」
「Right…I cannot go back here after all」

Megu said sadly.

「…The room you've lived for ten years is really clean」

Or perhaps should I say there's nothing but the minimum.
There's no magazines or manga or even a novel on her bookshelf either.
Other than old textbooks…It's empty.
There's not a single stuffed toy, poster, or something that's like a high school girl would own.
And, the windows are cleaned beautifully and there's not a single dust on the floor.
It's perfectly cleaned.

「I think that I'm just borrowing this room from Yamamine-san…」

When we were alone in the room…Megu calls her foster father
『Yamamine-san』
In short…She never heartily think that her foster parents are her own parents.

They're just the people who raised her. She wasn't thinking that they're living together.

「It's just a borrowed room so you must not let it become dirty, right?」

Megu said seriously.

「Also…I thought that somebody would come to pick me up someday」

…Megu?

「…Someday, I'll come back to the mansion and become a prostitute. Ever since I was a child…!」

…That's.

「Therefore…I was prepared to get out of this house since I was a child. I've been prepared all the time. Someday, someone will come to get me so I put my things on two bags and have it next to my bed」

These two bags have been prepared all this time.

「This is the bag that I brought when I was taken from the mansion to this house. Mama's bag…!」

Megu's mother…Keiko-san's bag.

「I came here with just two bags…so I thought that I should just have two bags when I will leave as well」

Megu's two old bags.
Somehow, I remember my cardboard boxes.
My private properties are collected in just one cardboard box…
Megu and I are same existence.

「Because the bag I use in school was added…It became three」

Megu smiles wryly.

「I'll take all of it」

I'll carry it out of the house with Megu's thoughts.

「It's okay…let me have half of it」

Megu said bashfully.

「I want to be Yoshi-kun's half」

Megumi and I want to share the sorrow and the harsh memories.

「…Got it」

I answered.

「But, I'm glad. Thanks to Minaho-san…I will be able to continue going to school」

…Eh?

「…I've always thought of it. I'm able to live just like a normal child for now…I have to do all of my best while I'm living on Yamamine house. Thus…I do my best in study and sports. My foster parents are very pleased when I give good results…!」

Thus…The honor student, Yamamine Megumi was made.
Megu believes that her life ahead has the hell of prostitution waiting for her…

「…Megu doesn't need to become a prostitute anymore…you'll be my bride」

I embraced Megu.

「Un…I'm glad I met Yoshi-kun…I'm happy」

I kissed Megu.
Megu returned a kiss to me…

「It feels strange…I never thought of kissing a boy in my own room」

Megu said laughingly.

「Speaking of which…It's my first time in my life entering a girl's room」
「Sorry…My room's just a dull one」
「That's not true…This room has Megu's scent in it」

Yup…This room definitely has Megu's scent soaking in it.

「Yada~…Don't say embarrassing things」
「It's true…look」

I lay down on Megu's bed.
I sniffed Megu's smell from the futon…
I spread my arms and legs and shoved my face on Megu's futon.

「It smells good…I feel like Megu's wrapping me up…」

…Then
I can hear rustling sounds from the back…
When I look up…Megu's taking off her clothes…?!

「…Megu?」

Megu then said.

「Take a nude photo of me in this room」

Megu's eyes are serious.

「Then…I want to be embraced by Yoshi-kun in this room…!」

…Megu?!

「…I want to have sex here…!」[6]

---

1. The author might just still be adjusting on whether he would write Megu or Megumi ↩
2. We're still in a debate on what should we change the "Head of School" into ↩
3. I guess Megu's a big photo of Yoshida ↩

4. That means Rokujouma for those who ask ↩
5. Yes, Megumi's saying "Shirasaka-san" ↩
6. With my parents downstairs. I promise, it won't be awkward. ↩

111. I want you to violate me in my room…

「…I was allowed to live in this house so…I cannot do anything bad…Therefore, I never did lewd things in this room」

Megu on her underwear told me.
I took the half-naked photo of Megu inside the room where she lived for ten years…

「I've never masturbated since I was born… All of the first lewd stuffs were Yoshi-kun's. That will be the same in the future…!」

…Megu?

「You do know that I've been watching men embrace my mother and the other ladies in the mansion since I was born, don't you? Therefore I thought that I would be doing the same thing someday…for always」

Megu was born in the brothel.
The young Megu saw sex that's not normal love.
It's sex of prostitute who sell themselves to men…
Furthermore, it was the time when Shirasaka Sousuke is completely holding the real power of 『Kuromori』
Perhaps…most of them are abnormal sex.

「…I remember all of it. How the ladies in the mansion were violated. Remembering that, my heart feels pain…!」

…Megu's slightly trembling…

「I saw it in dreams when I came to this house. Inside the dream… men always were rough on me. I'm being violated absurdly…when I open my eyes, my heart is beating so fast and my whole body is sweating」

The memory of the brothel when she was young…has deeply eaten into Megu's heart…!

「It's not sex of lovers where they gently love each other…In my dream, I'm always forcibly violated…! I always thought that sex means that kind of rape…!」

Megu looks at me with moist eyes.

「Yoshi-kun…what should I do? I think I'm abnormal.[1] I'm a helpless perverted girl…!」

…She's looking at me with teary eyes.

「I'm scared of such delusions on myself. Therefore, I… I never approached men when I was in elementary and middle school. I desperately concentrate on sports and studies…I forbid myself from love or lewd stuffs…because, if someone like me begins to do that… I feel that it would be impossible for me to get out of sex anymore」

On one side…her interest in sex has risen to a threat.
On the other hand…there's the sense of fear and unease for herself.
Two contradicting feelings have always clashed within Megu all this time…

「If I experience even just a slight lewdness for once…I thought that I would become a perverted girl」

This girl had sex with me.
Megu's sexual feelings has awakened!!!

「…I'll tell only Yoshi-kun about this. Megu is actually a lewd and indecent girl. A pervert. I had interest in lewd stuffs all this time…!」

Megu talks to me like she's confessing.

「Also…It's not just the usual lewdness. Since I was a child, I saw all of the men who were doing mother…! I want my body to be made a mess of…!!!」

…Megu!

「That's why…I was serious about what I told you in the car. I'll be

a prostitute only for Yoshi-kun.2 I'll give my true self to only you. I want to be your sex slave forever. Misuzu-san and Katsuko-san said that just because they're considerate of me, but… Megu actually wants to be a doll violated by Yoshi-kun…!

Megu wants to be violated the same way as her mother.
That must be her thought of atonement from being unable to save her mother.
The gloomy sex deeply twines around Megu's heart.
I must know how to untangle that thread…!

「…Just listen Megu. That's enough…I get it already」

I embraced Megu
I embraced Megu tightly.

「…I will take all of Megu's naughty emotions…!」

I promised Megu.

「…But…Megu's my girlfriend. You're my bride」
「…Un, on paper. I'm in charge of being Yoshi-kun's girlfriend on paper…!」

Megu thinks that her marriage with me is just her taking the official position as a member of 『Sister's club』

「That doesn't matter. Megu's my girlfriend. That's for sure…!」
「…Yoshi-kun」
「…We're a real couple so we're allowed to do whatever sex it is. No matter how embarrassing it is, how perverted it is, it's all lover's sex. It's a 『Pretend play』」

I'll accept all of Megu's desires.
I will not reject whatever it is!

「We'll do anything, even if it's 『Rape play』 or 『Slave play』 I'll do anything if it's for Megu…No, let's enjoy it together…」

I look at Megu's eyes…
Megu…

「…Are you sure, Yoshi-kun?」
「…In exchange, we'll never break up」

…Megu nodded.

「Yoshi-kun. I want to part away from the 『Honor student Yamamine Megumi』 right now…!」
「…That's why you want to have sex in this room?」
「Yes…On the bottom of this room…even though my parents are there…Megu and Yoshi-kun will have sex. Raped. I want to be a messed up 『bad girl』」
「Got it…I'll make you a 『bad girl』」

Megu turned her back to me…

「…Yoshi-kun, remove Megu's bra」
「…Okay」

I removed the hook of Megu's bra[3]
Her cute breasts jumps out…!

「…From now on, Yoshi-kun will always take of Megu's bra. And put it on too…!」

Megu's fawning on me…

「…Even at school?」
「Baka…School's different. I'll leave it to Yoshi-kun other than that place…!」
「…Got it」
「You see…I want to be restrained by Yoshi-kun」

…Restrained?

「…Saying that I must not talk to other men」
「Megu…don't talk to any other men but me」
「Yes…Megu won't talk to anyone but Yoshi-kun. I'll never show my naked body. I won't have sex with anyone but Yoshi-kun…I'll become Yoshi-kun's slave forever!」
「…It's not slave」
「I want it…I'll become a wife that's like a slave…!」

Megu lets my hand touch her own panty…
Megu's already wet there…

「Megu's aroused… What should I do, Yoshi-kun? Megu's a real pervert…!」

I trace my finger on Megu's crotch…!

「…It's fine being perverted…Megu won't show her perverted face to anyone but me, right?」
「Yes. Megu won't have sex with anyone but Yoshi-kun…Yoshi-kun…!」

Megu's breathing turned hot…!

「…Yoshi-kun…Don't stop with just Megu. Give the other 『women』 lots of sex too」
「…Megu?」
「That's for the better…Have lots of sex with Misuzu-san and others. Megu will watch…!」
「…You want to watch?」
「Yes…Megu will watch…!」

Megu's violently aroused…!

「…You see, when I heard Yoshi-kun raped Maika-chan…I was actually super aroused. I feel unpleasant on the other hand. It feels really painful that Yoshi-kun's having sex with other girls. But, on the other hand…I want to see it. When I saw Yoshi-kun having sex with Misuzu-san and Katsuko-san, I felt very aroused…I'm a really lewd girl.
「…I raped Maika forcibly at start. When it rained in the courtyard, we were filled with mud…!
「…Outside?」
「Maika run away so I chased after her, pushed her down on the lawn and held her down…!」
「…Maika-chan cried?」
「Yeah…Maika cried when her hymen was torn forcibly…!」
「…It must've hurt?」
「Yeah…She cried out and screamed. But I violated her until the end」

I unfastened my belt and lowered my pants.
My erection is already flourishing…!

「…Maika-chan's so pitiful!」
「Then…I ejaculated inside Maika-chan three times…!」
「…Oh!」

Megu's panty is completely wet…!

「I feel sorry for her and yet…I'm so aroused. I'm a bad girl. Maika-chan's my little sister, and yet…!」

Megu's looking at me with enchanted eyes.

「Yoshi-kun…punish this bad girl…!」

I then told Megu.

「Megu…suck it!」

Megu smiles bewitchingly.

「Yes dear!」

Megu kneeled in front of me and puts my penis in her mouth.
The room she has lived for ten years…
The room she has never done lewd things until now…
Megu's giving me a fellatio…
The room below has her foster parents…!

「I'll take photos so look up the camera」
「…Okay」

Megu looks up at the camera
Her cheeks are dyed red in shame…
She's smiling happily.
I captured that face.
I captured Megu's naked upper body…her pink nipples.
Megu separates her mouth from my penis…

「…Not enough…please violate Megu!」

I look at the watch.
…If I recall, Yuzuki-sensei told us to pack up within thirty minutes.
It's already been 12-13 minutes.
It would take five minutes to fix our clothes…!

「…Don't think about me, Yoshi-kun should just violate me to feel good. 7I want to be ravished in this room…be made a mess of…!」

Megu pleads.

「…Got it…I won't worry about Megu's body. I'll thrust it in and feel good by myself…okay?」
「…Un!」

Megu looks up at me…

…Megu!
I stripped my lower half in a hurry…
Meanwhile, Megu laid a blanket on top of the tatami mat.

「…It would be making creaking sounds on top of the bed so ravish me on top of the blanket, please!」

Oh…we cannot let the people downstairs know that we're having sex…!
We should make as less noise as possible…
I need to ejaculate inside Megu in short time…!

「…Go on. Violate me」

Megu lies down on the blanket…!
I violently pulled down Megu's panty.

「It's the second time so I think it will still hurt…!」
「It's fine…It's better if it hurts. That way, I would feel that Yoshi-kun's ravishing me…!」

…Megu!
I let the naked Megu spread her legs wide in front of me…!
I open Megu's dripping wet vagina.

「…Here we go!」

…I!
Thrust in my penis in Megu's slit!
…Ngugugu!!
Megu who's vagina just lost it's virginity resists the invasion of a foreign object!

「…O-Ouch!」

Megu leaked out her voice…!
I pulled my penis unintentionally.
My penis came off…!

「…Yoshi-kun, take this handkerchief」

Megu points at the white handkerchief coming out of her uniform pocket.

「…O-Oh」

When I hand her the handkerchief…

「I won't be able to leak out my voice with this…!」

Saying that, Megu bites into the handkerchief…!
Megu's eyes is telling me 「Now, rape me!」

「…I'm putting it in, Megu!」

I thrust inside Megu once again!

「…Nnn, Nnnnn!!!」

As expected…Megu seems to be in pain.
But…I can no longer stop!!!

「…I'm going to thrust it in deeply!」

I pushed my penis deeply to her uterus in a dash!!!

「…Nnnnn! Nnnnn!!!」

Megu's eyes spill tears…it must hurt, it must be painful.
Still, Megu's eyes…is staring at me.

…I!
I move my waist back and forth…!
I thrust inside Megu violently!
The hot penis stirs the unripe vagina of Megu…!

「…Nnn…N…Nnnn…Nnnnnn!!!」

Megu…I'm violating Megu…!
While her tears are spilling…!
Still, Megu's pleased…!

「…Megu, Megu, Megu!!!」

I grab Megu's nipples while moving my waist.
I massage her breasts while sucking her nipple.

「…Nnnn! N!…Nnnnn!!!」

Megu's breathing roughly…
Megu's whole body sweats profusely and reddens from the sexual arousal…
Megu's sweat smells like sweet milk.
Megu's room…Megu's blanket…Megu's body…
Wrapped in Megu's scent…I violate Megu intensely…!!!
…Aaaaaaah!
Megu's insides are hot and moist…!
A vagina unaccustomed to sex…Is squeezing me out with all strength that screams harshly…!

「…Nnnn! NN!…Nunnnnn!!…Nnnnnnn!!」

Biting to the white handkerchief…Megu endures the man's cruelty.
But still…Her eyes are looking at me.
She's pleased being raped by me from the bottom of her heart…!!!

「…M-Megu!」

The pleasure is rising up!!!

「…I'm cumming! I'm going to pour in my semen inside Megu…!!!」

Megu appeals me with her eyes…!
『…Come inside me』She says!

「…Megu, Megu, Meguuuuuu…Aaaaaaah! Cumming!」

I leaked my cloudy liquid in the deepest part of Megu…!
I ejaculated violently like I'm peeing!
I pour in my liquid inside Megu's womb!!!

「…Nnnnn! Nn! Nnnnnnn!!」

Megu…feels the heat inside her womb…!
Her body trembles…
I-I'm being sucked out!!!

「…Megumi, Yoshida-kun…are you ready?!」

I can hear Yuzuki-sensei's voice from downstairs…!
…S-Shit.
I'm still ejaculating inside Megu.
My ejaculation doesn't stop!!!

「…Just a bit more, Minaho-san. Please wait five more minutes!」

Megu took the handkerchief from her mouth and replied to Sensei…
While being impregnated by the naked me…!

「…Hurry up…!」
「Okay…We're coming!」

Megumi answers Sensei with her 『Honor Student』voice.
I finally ended my long ejaculation.

「…It felt good, Megu」

I kissed Megu.

「Now…Let's hurry and put on our clothes」

When I say that…Megu.

「…Wait, Yoshi-kun. Take photo of it」
「…Eh?」
「I want to take souvenir a photo」

Megu's eyes were serious.

「…Got it」

I took photo of me connected with megu.
Then…I pull out my penis…
White semen drips from Megu's vagina spread wide.

「Ah…don't put it away」

Megu stops me from pulling my pants

「…Megumi will clean it up」

Megu licks up my penis that's wet with love nectar and saliva.
I also take photo of that spectacle too.

「That's enough…let's hurry」
「…Un」

Megu took out a spare underwear from the bag.
She put the panty that was dirtied by our sex just now and placed it in her bag.

「We cannot leave this in the house…」

I take Megu's bra.

「…Turn your back」

As promised…I put up Megu's bra.
While we're at it, I also put on her panty…

「Thank you…Yoshi-kun's really gentle…」

Megu bashfully told me.

「Enough with that…let's hurry up and put on our clothes!」

Megumi smiles happily.

「Yes…dear」

We fixed our clothes in a hurry…

「…how is it?」

Megumi changed from her high school uniform to a white dress.
…A beauty was there.
It's a pure and innocent girl that you won't think that she just had sex with a man a few minute ago.

「Un…Beautiful」

Compared to that…the clothes I'm wearing looks languid.

「Geez…Yoshi-kun, stand here」

Megu adjusts her clothes.

「…Okay, we're done!」

Megu smiles.
That face no longer has the gloom.

「…Megu's beautiful」

That's what I honestly thought.
I think that Megu's becoming more beautiful every time we have sex.

「Thank you…I'll do my best」
「…Eh?」
「Among Yoshi-kun's 『woman』…I'm the one being in charge of being Yoshi-kun's 『girlfriend』…I'll do my best to become even more beautiful. If not…I would feel sorry for the other 『Women』…!」

Megu promised me.

「I'll carry the luggage…!」

I lift Megu's three bags…
Megu looked around the room once again…

「…It's strange」

Megu laughs.

「I'm going to part from this room, and yet」

She looks at my face and smiled.

「I should be sad but…I'm unbearably happy…」

…Megu

「This will be the last so I thought that I should take a look at my room firmly but…I can't remember anything but Yoshi-kun's face」

Megu embraces me who's holding the luggage with both hands… then kissed me.

「This is fine. I don't need anything as long as I'm with Yoshi-kun…!」

◇ ◇ ◇

Coming to the floor below.
Sensei and Megu's foster parents are already waiting in the door.

「…Are you sure that's all?」

Megu's foster father is surprised that Megu doesn't have anything but three bags.

「Yes, Father…This is enough」

Megu answered with a smile.

「Megumi's room has been kept intact all the time」

Megu's foster mother said so.

「Thank you very much. I've been taken care for these ten years.

Father, mother…!」

Megu bowed to her parents…

「I won't forget this favor throughout my life…I thank you from the bottom of my heart…!」

Megumi's foster father holds back his tears.

「…Sorry. I don't have the strength」

Yamamine house cannot go against Shirasaka house…
Her foster father really felt mortified.

「Then, as I told you a while ago…at the same time we leave with our car, please contact the head of Shirasaka house」

Yuzuki-sensei gives the last reminder.

「Yes…『Megumi was forcibly taken by a woman named Kuromori Minaho. We were told that Shirasaka Sousuke's life would be in danger if we contact the police. What should we do, please order us』…Was it?」

The foster father repeated the contents of the report.

「As long as you report that…Yamamine-san won't be pursued by Shirasaka house. They will have their hands filled with a lot of things…」

That's…
Searching Shirasaka Sousuke in Australia…!
Naturally…Yuzuki-sensei and us would be a target.

「Then…Let's go」

Megu bowed to her foster parents once again.

「Megumi has been really happy as father and mother's daughter」

Heavy air drifts in the door.

「Megumi…please forgive us」

The foster father may think that he should send Megumi out of the house for the sake of Yamamine clan.
The adopted daughter they raised for ten years…will be entrusted to the head of the prostitution organization…

「No, Father, This is what Megumi wants. Mother, please send me off with a smile」

Megu…holds to my arm.

「Megumi will be happy with this person from now on…!」

…I

「…I'll protect Megumi-san throughout my life」

I swore to Megu's foster mother…!

「…Please take care of Megumi」

The parents that will part from their adopted daughter bowed to me…

「…I'll definitely make her happy」

I don't have any answer but that.

◇ ◇ ◇

We returned to the car stopped outside the house…
Mr. and Mrs. Yamamine was about to see of the car but Sensei stopped them.
Their daughter was being taken forcibly on the setting so it would be strange to see them off.
We don't know if there's someone watching from the outside.

「…Katsuko, are there any observers outside?」

Taking the deiver's seat, Sensei asks Katsuko-nee that's on the back seat.

「There's no sign of it for now…」

Katsuko-nee answered.

「Then…It will start at the moment Yamamine-san reports to the head of Shirasaka family…!」

Sensei rev up the engine on purpose and drives off the car…!
With that sound as the signal…Megu's foster parents will make the call.
Megu's kidnapping and…Shirasaka Sousuke's scamper will come to light.

The head of Shirasaka house and 『Kuromori』…Will confront each other!

「…Maika-san, what do you think?」

Sensei asks Maika.
Right…Sensei holds a hidden microphone when she came to the Yamamine household.
The negotiation with Megu's foster father and the meeting afterwards…are all heard by Maika in the car.

「Yuzuki-san told Maika earlier to 『Stay for tonight』…But that's actually wrong. Maika cannot go home today, can she?…!」
「…Sorry but, that's how it is」

Sensei answers through the mirror.
The car comes to the main street.

「You would be antagonizing the head of Shirasaka house so… Maika should better be a hostage, right?」

Maika answers Sensei with a smile.

「…Maika, are you sure?」

When I asked, Maika…

「Well, Maika's already Onii-san's 『Woman』 isn't she? It may be painful to antagonize Shirasaka house but, it can't be helped. Maika's already a member of 『Sister's club』…!」

Maika's completely prepared for it.

「Right. I'd like you to stay in my mansion until the consecutive holidays end」

Sensei tells Maika…

「Understood…But, please let me come back home after this. Maika wants to bring her change of clothes…I want to have those at hand too」
「…Yes, we'll make an opportunity from the situation」

「…Maika also have to get out of the house like Megumi-san」

Maika's being 『Kidnapped』 just like Megu…?!
As a card to be used against the head of Shirasaka house.

「Onii-san should come with me when I come back of the house!」

Maika looks at me.

「Yeah…Got it」

I remembered the night where we were in front of Yukino's house.
Stopping the car in front of the house…I raped Yukino.

「We're going to have sex in Maika's room…!」

Eh…?
M-Maika?…

「…You had sex with Megumi-san on the room upstairs, didn't you?」

Maika laughs 'ehehen'

「…W-Why?」

How do you know?
We've been careful not to make noises or speak…!

「Everyone would notice if the ceiling creaks that much!」

What…Katsuko-nee…?!

「That's right…It was really embarrassing for me to talk with Yamamine-san because of that…!」

…S-Sensei?

「『Those two really love each other』and 『Young people can't have their passion restrained』…Yamamine-san has been holding back and just tells what's suitable…!」

Well…I'm seriously sorry.
Or rather…I want to die.
Someone kill me…

「I-I'm sorry…Minaho-san!」

Megu apologizes to Sensei with a red face…

「But…I wanted to do it by all means!」

M-Megu?
Why are you speaking like that…

「…I thought so. It can't be helped!」

Sensei told Megu.

「Well, if I was in that situation, I'll definitely have sex too…!」

…Katsuko-nee too.

「Therefore…Do it with Maika too! In Maika's room…!」

M-Maika?!
Maika's fawning on me…
…Eeei!
It can't be helped if it's found out.
I promised that I will be fair to all my 『women』…

「G-Got it…I'll do it with Maika too」

I promised.

「I love you Onii-san! Then, Maika has a task to do too!」

Maika took out her phone.
She pressed the buttons…

「…Ah, hello, Onee-chan? It's Maika. Maika will stay on her friend's house for today? I don't need dinner…Eh? Come back? What are you saying Onee-chan, didn't you also go spent the night outside without Mama's permission because she won't be coming back just the other day?」

Maika called Yukino?

「In the first place, Onee-chan has been breathing noisily recently! Your voice reaches the next room! It's so noisy I can't sleep! Onee-chan's voice roars through the windowpane! Onee-chan's voice shrills like a supersonic wave!」

The panting voice vibrates the window pane…Y-Yukino…

「Onee-chan you're a masturbation maniac! If you love masturbating that much then marry Onani4! Pervert, lecher, hentai…!!!」

M-Maika-san?

「…With that said, Maika will be staying over her friend's house!… Eh? Who's friend…?」

Maika looks at my face and smiled.

「…Of course, it's a man's house!」

Maika then cut off the call…
Her phone rang immediately after…
Yukino's redialing it…

「Geez…you noisy!」

Maika then turned off her phone…

1. Hentai means perverted or abnormal ↩
2. That job is already taken ↩
3. Yoshida had troubles with it before, but he's now an expert ↩
4. That means masturbation, I thought of putting it because I want to make fun thinking that it's a name ↩

112. Various women kaleidoscope

The car takes us in the night town…
From the residential area to the shopping district.

「…Minaho-san. About the money that you handed to father」

Megu asked sensei in worry.
Earlier, Yuzuki-sensei gave the Yamamine couple 10 Million Yen in cash as 『Hush Money』…

「I'll pay for it with my whole life」

Megumi said with a serious face.

「That's okay…That's Yoshida-kun's money」

Sensei answers lightly while driving the car.
…Eh?
My money?

「Yoshida-kun. Do you remember Iwakura-san having to pay 10 Million Yen as compensation for aiming at your life?」

Speaking of which…there was that…!

「For the time being…Iwakura-san pulled out 7 Million yen. The remaining 3 Million will surely be collected so don't mind it…!」

When 『Kuromori』 prostitution organization closed down, Yuzuki-sensei handed 『Dividend』 on all of the prostitutes in the mansion.
Naturally…Iwakura-san should also have money.
Did Sensei pull from her account?

「Yoshida-kun won't mind using it for Megumi's sake…would you?」

Cool eyes looks at me through the mirror.

「…Yes of course!」

I answered flatly.

「No way…I would be troubled」

Megumi looks at my face.

「There's no problem using money for one's own 『woman』」
「But…That would make me look like I was bought by Yoshi-kun…!」

…She's right.
If you look at it on a different perspective, it looks like I bought Megu from the Yamamine family for 10 Million Yen.

「My…Don't you like it that way, Megumi?」

Sensei asked laughingly.

「Doesn't Megumi want a reason to have it impossible to separate with Yoshida-kun for the rest of your life?」

Sensei sees through Megu's true nature.
The true nature that's hidden from the clean face of the honor student Megu.
Megu thought for a moment then answered Sensei.

「…Yes. You're correct, Minaho-san」

Megu affirmed Sensei's words.

「I…have to live my whole life devoting myself to Yoshi-kun now…!」

Megu happily smiled.

「That's right…You'll devote yourself to him throughout your life」
「…Yes!」

W-Wait a moment.

「But…That's not my intention…!」

I…

「…I like Megu. I truly want to treasure you forever」

There's no lie on that sentence.

「But…I don't have confidence in myself. The confidence on being a man suitable for Megu's love… Therefore…If Megu came to love a man other than me in the future, I want you to leave me and become happy with that person. I'm okay as long as Megu's happy…!」

When I say that…

「…Onii-san, are you still saying that?」

Maika leaks a sigh.
…Eh?

「…That line has already crossed the things we cannot allow…!」

…Maika?

「All of us 『Sisters』 share the same fate…we don't have any other choices but to live with Onii-san forever…!」

…No other choices?
Maika looks at Megu with sad eyes…

「Megumi-chan can no longer return to Yamamine house…Maika's the same. Maika has already betrayed Shirasaka family so…Onii-san, are you thinking of what are you going to do with Maika after Golden Week ends?」

After Golden Week…

「I can stay with Yuzuki-san until the holiday ends but…Where should Maika live after that?」

…That's right.
Shirasaka Sousuke will perish…
And Maika's family will collapse.
If ever the world knows the evildoings of Shirasaka…Maika can no longer come to her school.

Maika's daily life will all be lost…!

「…I'll make Maika's place to stay. I'll never leave you alone」
「…Is it okay for me to believe that?」
「…Yeah」

I really have to steel myself.
At anything.
I have to do something.
I have to do something even if I offer my life…
What should I do…
…What should I do?!

「…Yoshida-kun, you need to learn the thing about bonds with people even a bit…!」

Sensei looks at me then said.

「Humans are creatures that cannot live alone. For example…does Yoshida-kun really understand the suffering of the Yamamine couple?」

…Eh?

「…Those people whose lives are grasped by the Shirasaka house… If they anger the head of Shirasaka house, they might lose their job. They might be erased socially. Furthermore, it's not just themselves, the harm might even reach their relatives…」

…People's bonds.
…Human cannot live alone.

「How do you think Yamamine-san will use that 10 Million yen?」
「…I don't knwo」

I cannot imagine it.

「…I think that she'll pass it to their relatives. As an 『Apology money』 for this matter…」

… 『Apology money』 ?

「With Megumi being kidnapped…Shirasaka house will be blaming the Yamamine clan one of these days. Even if it's not big…they would be harassed even for a bit. Therefore…Megumi's father will have to apologize to his relatives」

…That's.

「There's not a single yen going to be left for Yamamine-san. That's how adult society works…!」

…That's the adult's method.

「Since Yoshida-kun's so simple…You're thinking of stopping school right now and working to support Megumi and Maika-san's life, don't you?」
「…Yes」
「Stop thinking stupid stuff…Yoshida-kun's no longer alone」

…Sensei?

「You already have us with you…!」

Katsuko-nee holds my hand…

「I have 701 Million yen deposited in my bank. I can use all of it for your sake. I will feed you, Megumi-chan and Maika-chan… You don't need to worry about money, go to school without worries…!」
「…Katsuko-nee, but…That's the money Katsuko-nee will use to start the bakery, right?」

Katsuko-nee smiles gently…

「We can just save money again…! I'm your 『woman』…Megumi-chan and Maika-chan are my s『Sisters』 What's bad on using money for your 『family』…?!」
「…But!」
「Geez…don't you get it? Didn't you say the same thing a while ago…What's wrong using money for the sake of one's own 『woman』…?!」

…That's right.

It's the same logic I used a while ago.
If I can pay 10 million yen for Megu's sake…
I cannot criticize Katsuko-nee for using her money for me and the 『Sisters』 …!

「…I'm definitely going to return the debt!」

Katsuko-nee bursts out laughing when she heard it.

「Isn't that the same response as Megumi-chan」

…Oh
Standing on the same position…I finally understood Megu's standpoint.
Megu no longer has choices but to live with me throughout her life.
And I swore to never betray Katsuko-nee…
I'm sure…Maika too.

「…It's not just Katsuko. Nagisa will surely pull cash out for your sake. Of course…Me too…!」

…Yuzuki-sensei?

「I'll be frank…You three should graduate high school. Decide your course afterwards by yourself. If you want to go to a university, I can sponsor you. You can live in my mansion for as long as you can. If you don't want that, then I think you can live on Nagisa's house. But…I will never allow you to rent a room…!」

Maika's surprised.

「…Is it okay for Maika to be with Onii-san and Megumi-chan?」

Sensei spoke.

「When you ask me to be honest, I have complex feelings towards Maika-san. But, I will protect you as long as you're Yoshida-kun's woman. I can assure you that. But if ever you betray Yoshida-kun, I will dispose you on the spot…be careful with your actions…!」

…Sensei.
That means that Maika is not allowed to like any other men…!

She'll be bound to me forever…!
But, Maika is…

「…Yes! Understood! Maika will be Onii-san's 『woman』 forever. I will never betray Onii-san…!」

The second year middle school beauty declares…

「……Maika, Are you fine with that?」

Maika had a blank look on her face……

「Does it matter if I'm fine or not? Because, isn't this our fate?」

…Fate
Ours…

「Yoshida-kun, you're already tied by the 『bonds』 You can never get away alone. If you accept fate…you should learn do depend on your 『Family』 …!」

…My
… 『Family』

「You told me…we're already 『Family』 …Didn't you?!」

…That's right.
I told sensei that.

「Then depend on us all you want…I'm also your 『Sister』 」

Yuzuki…Sensei

「Can I call Sensei 『Minaho-neesan』 ?」
「Do what you want…You still have to call me 『Sensei』 in school however」
「Got it…Nee-san」
「Is it okay for me to stay calling you 『Yoshida-kun』 ?」

Sensei asked bashfully.

「If I try to call you something else…I might call you that in

school…!」
「Un…Got it. Nee-san」

I answered.

「…Katsuko」

Minaho-neesan talked to Katsuko-nee.

「What's wrong, Ojou-sama?」
「…It's bad for the heart to be suddenly called 『Nee-san』 My heart's tightening…!2」

Katsuko-nee laughs 'Kukuku'

「It's good for the heart. When Katsuko's called 『Katsuko-nee』 by him, my womb aches!」

…Katsuko-nee?!

「Uhm…Me too, when he calls me 『Megu』 my heart tightens!」

Megu also reports with a blushing face…!

「That's nice…How should Maika be called?!」

…Err
W-W-W-W-What's with this atmosphere…

◇ ◇ ◇

While we continue that talk…Our car arrived at a high quality flat close to the downtown.
A big flat with red outer walls.
The car slides to the basement parking area…

「…This is Ikeda-sensei's clinic」

Megu told Maika.

「I was brought here yesterday…She's a very gentle doctor so don't worry」
「Eh…Then Megumi-chan lost her virginity yesterday?」

「…That's right. I was embraced by Yoshida-kun」
「Then the one on your room earlier was the second time?」
「…That's right」

Megu's puzzled by Maika's questions…

「Was the second time still painful?」
「Hmm, it still painful but not as much as the first time」
「Misuzu-san said that it felt good for her on the second time however…」

Katsuko-nee intervenes the two.

「Women have different consitutions…there seems to be girls who doesn't feel any pain at their firsts」
「Wow, is that so?…That's envious. Maika wants that to happen to her too…!」
「For me, I'm glad that it did hurt」
「Eh…Megumi-chan, why?」
「It makes me feel like I've really given my virginity to Yoshida-kun…!」
「Err, do men prefer to hurt women?」

Maika looks at me.

「No, It would be troublesome if it hurts so much…it would make me worry…but, it would be great if one's a virgin and yet she's feeling it great…!」

What am I saying?

「Haa…In the end, the balance is hard to get」

Maika's dumbfounded.

「But…It's still hurts now but…I can find a bit of pleasure in it…I really like having sex with Yoshi-kun. The feelin of loving and being loved…!」

…M-Megu.

「Wow, Megumi-chan's making a lewd face…!」

「Is that so?…I just remembered our sex a while ago」

Megu blushes and smiles to Maika…

「Maika-chan will also feel good soon…whoever it is, if they have sex everyday for two weeks, they'll feel ecstatic」

Katsuko-nee still blows unnecessary information again…!

\「Katsuko-san, is that true?」
「Yes…I've read it on a report of an American Sexologist before…!」
「…Two weeks」

Err…M-maika-san?!

「Then, let's do it everyday until it feels good…Onii-san!」

S-Seriously?!

「But…Won't that place become oversized and loose if Maika have sex everyday?」

Maika asks Katsuko-nee once again.

「Oh…That's fine. As long as Maika-chan trains that place properly…!」
「Train that place…?!」
「Women's entrance have muscles…don't you hear this a lot『Your pussy's clamping my penis』…!」
「…That's Maika's first time hearing it」
「Women's hole have that function. Therefore, if you just keep having sex nonchalantly without training it, it would certainly be oversized and loose…But if you train it, it'll become an amazing pussy…!」
「Wow, is that so?!」
「That is the same for the inside…If you train it, it would be able to tighten no matter what phase the penis is inside. When a male felt impressed by a female genitalia, then he'll say that it's an『excellent article』…If it's trained well, any girl's genital will become an 『excellent article』…!3」

Katsuko-nee…a middle school girl being an 『excellent article』…

「Hey, Onii-san, what do you want? Maika should be an 『excellent article』?!」

…Well, yeah
…If you ask me.

「Then, Katsuko-san…how can you train to be an 『excellent article』?!」

Maika clings to Katsuko-nee like a puppy wanting food…!

「First would be getting used to sex…I'll teach you the later steps when having sex!」
「Okay! Thank you in advance…!」

…awawawawa
Maika has become Katsuko-nee's disciple…

「…The road to 『excellent article』 is steep!」
「Maika will do her best!」

That's when Megu speaks out.

「…Uhm, Katsuko-neesan」
「What is it, Megumi-chan?」
「I also want to learn about it…!」

…Megu!

「…I also intend to forcibly instill it on Megumi-chan!」

Katsuko-nee told Megu gently.

「You don't want to be bad at sex and be hated by him do you?」
「Yes…Katsuko-neesan and Nagisa-neesan too are skilled…Misuzu has the talent it seems. If Maika-chan becomes better in sex…I might be hated by Yoshi-kun…!」

…I!

「No, that won't happen! Everyone has different pleasure when I embrace! Nagisa-san feels soft wrapping me up…Katsuko-nee feels like she's jam-packed inside. Misuzu's soft and slippery…Maika's embracing me tightly…and Megu is…!」
「I…?!」

I told Megu who's worried.

「Megu's body is clamping tight…But, it feels soft and pleasurable. I love it!」
「…I'm glad」

Megu sighed in relief.

「…Then…Let's train ourselfs to be suitable for our characteristics. That is to make him feel even more and more pleasure…!」

Katsuko-nee ends the talk nicely.
Or that's how it should be…

「Huh, what about Nei-san…?」

…Maika
Why are you so sharp at strange places.

「How long are you going to chat?…!」

Minaho-neesan interrupts on a good timing.
As expected of our neesan…!

「We're about to reach the reservation time. Maika-san will go with Katsuko to Ikeda-sensei…!」

…Eh?

「Eh…we're not all going there?」

Minaho-neesan looks at me with an amazed face.

「Ikeda-sensei is an illegal doctor…we cannot go with such great number of people you know?」

…Illegal
Oh…She's a doctor connected to 『Kuromori』
As expected, she'll be an underground doctor.

「Don't worry, her skills are certain… 」
「Also…if you bring Maika-chan, Sensei would scold you! 」

Katsuko-nee says.

「Eh, why? 」

Katsuko-nee looks at me with mean eyes…!

「Misuzu-san the day before yesterday, Megumi-chan yesterday, and Maika-chan for today…I think a female doctor will have a complex feeling for examining three day consecutive loss of virginity 」

I-I see
Or rather…I
Shouldn't I be hit with divine punishment soon?

「…Ojou-sama, will it only be me accompanying her? 」
「Sorry but…I'll leave it to you Katsuko 」
「Katsuko won't be telling any sarcasm to Ikeda-sensei…Never, never…! 」
「Sorry but…deal with her alone…! 」

Minaho-neesan pushed the female doctor to Katsuko-nee…!

「Sure sure…Got it…! 」

Of course…Katsuko-nee isn't seriously dissatisfied.
She's just messing with Minaho-neesan…
Katsuko-nee smiled and looked at Maika.

「Let's go…Maika-chan 」
「…What will be examined? 」
「She's going to check if the hymen is torn properly, if there are wounds in your vagina, and if the hemorrhage stopped already. Well, I think you'll be fine. Just think of it as a periodic inspection for sex. Then, she'll give you medicine to prevent conception…it's

the type taken everyday so that the influence to the body will be few…!」
「Got it…if so, then it's better to get examined!」

Maika looks at me.

「Then, I'm going! Onii-san!」
「…Oh, get yourself examined」
「Got it!」

Maika and Katsuko-nee gets off the car…
They walk into the basement parking area of the dark flat.

「Then…are we going to wait here until the examination ends?」

Sensei turned to us.

「No…You two will go to the town」
「…What?」

…Town?

「There's no other timing to go shop than now」

Minaho-neesan said seriously.

「Even if Shirasaka house is a noble family…they're just an owner of a newspaper company in the end. Even if Yamamine-san called Shirasaka house earlier…they cannot move immediately」

…Cannot move?

「First, they will start by confirming if Shirasaka Sousuke has been caught by us, don't you think so? But, Australia is far…and since we did various works, they won't be able to obtain information by today」

…I see
If he's scheduled to go to a region where phones won't connect from the start…they cannot confirm it.

「Well, they will mobilize the employees of the newspaper

company on the Australia for the time being but…They won't easily catch the tail there」

Minaho-neesan works out her plan thoroughly.

「Megumi being kidnapped has a lower priority for the head of Shirasaka house than Shirasaka Sousuke…Well, he'll have someone he knows from the underground to investigate however. They will begin to move precisely around tomorrow」
「…Why?」
「The underground people's work are costly. Furthermore, once you requested for a job, it'll take huge money to cancel the job… Until they're able to get a positive proof that Megumi was really taken by 『Kuromori』, Shirasaka house won't request on the underground」

I see…Megumi's kidnapping might just be a farce.
First…they have to concentrate on Shirasaka Sousuke's safety…
About Megu…Even if they contact Yamamine house tomorrow morning and even if they really confirm that she's not coming home, they willl respond slowly.

「If the Shirasaka house is greatly pleased with Megumi, it would be different however…」
「That won't happen…I'm a disgrace in the clan」

Megu answered.

「Therefore…You don't have time to go to town but only today…!」

Minaho-neesan told us with a laugh.

「But…Shopping? What are we going to buy?」

There's nothing that I need though…

「First…there would be a medical examination tomorrow」

Minaho-neesan said.

「Megumi…have Yoshida-kun decide your underwear」

「O-Okay」
「After that…Megumi will pick Yoshida-kun's underwear…!」

C-Chose my underwear?

「W-Why?」

I don't get it.

「First year's medical examination have girls check each other's underwear. Choose an underwear where she won't be embarrassed when compared to other girls…!」

I-Is that so?

「Also…At May 2, we're going to Misuzu-san's traditional dance presentation…!」
「…Yes, that's right, but」
「Yoshida-kun…you have to chose Megumi's dress」

Megu's dress…?!

「Minaho-san…I'm going there in my uniform…!」

Megu refuses Minaho-neesans proposal…
…But

「Megumi…Do you intend to embarrass Misuzu-san?」

Minaho-neesan harshly scolded Megu.

「I don't intend to do that」
「Then…go with a dress suitable as Misuzu-san's friend」

…That's right.
The presentation Misuzu will come from is a presentation of the headmaster's Japanese traditional dance…
There's a lot of wealthy socialites coming to see it.
She can't go in front of Misuzu in her uniform.

「…Megu, let's buy you a dress」

I said.

「…Yoshi-kun…But I」

Megu wasn't able to dress up beautifully because of Yukino's obstruction.
She always attended in her school uniform wherever it is…

「It's fine. Megumi's no longer on Yamamine house…No, You don't need to be considerate of Shirasaka house」

I embraced Megu…

「…Go with your most beautiful dress…okay?!」

Megu muttered in a small voice.

「…Un!」

---

1. 616,381.50 US Dollar according to Google ↩
2. I actually want to type, "It makes me go HNGGGGGG", but I endured that ↩
3. 『名器 ↩

113. Dress and ring.

「…Take this」

Minaho-neesan handed me an envelope.

「…That's 200,000 yen, use it to shop」

…Eh?

「Yoshida-kun, didn't you do your job on 『Kuromori』 for Nagisa's sake, did you?…1.5M yen is your pay for the work. I deposited 1.3M yen on the account I made for you…I'll hand you the passbook and the card when we come back the mansion」

Minaho-neesan said it like it's natural.

「No…But I didn't do anything…」
「You sandwiched your body between the Yakuza and Nagisa and you had your life aimed by a hired gun, weren't you? Just accept the money. Margo, Nei, and Katsuko are being rewarded too…」
「…But」
「You need money don't you? I will be taking care of you, Maika-san and Megumi's expenses, but…Yoshida-kun will be paying for the others」
「…Others?」
「Yoshida-kun will be giving Maika-chan and Megumi's pocket money and clothes…」
「M-Me?」
「Obviously…Both of them are your 『women』」

…Now that she said it.
I cannot rely on Minaho-neesan for everything.

「Either way, you're going for a part time job for Megumi and Maika's sake won't you? I'll find the job for you…」
「…My job?」
「… 『Kuromori』 isn't just a prostitution section」

…Eh?

「My grandfather, Kuromori Kounosuke used the 『Prostitution section』 for the sake of expanding business so it wasn't all just a brothel」

…Is that so?

「It seems that before, it was a trade and entertainment business. When my father took charge, he disposed all of it however…」

Sensei says sadly.

「My father had an inferiority complex from my grandfather… wanting to exceed grandfather as a businessman…he failed in business. Thus, what remains for 『Kuromori』 is the brothel. My father had such character that's why he's been taken advantage by Shirasaka Sousuke…」

Minaho-neesan makes a pained face whenever she talks about her father.

「When I participated the management of 『Kuromori』 …I began starting other business. Right now we have 『Investment Section』 and 『Real Estate Section』 …」

Oh right…Isn't Minaho-neesan a big shareholder of the hotel that has a contract with Nagisa-san?

「I'll start business for Katsuko's 『Bakery』 …and for Margo and Nei's sake too」

…Minaho-neesan?

「『Kuromori』 prostitution section is no more, so we have to find another job…!」

Minaho-neesan thins about what's ahead all this time.
She's really our… 『Nee-san』

「If Yoshida-kun and Megumi has something they want to be in the future then just tell me. I'll get it prepared whatever it is…!」

To be honest…I'm very grateful.

「Anyway…I'll think about Yoshida-kun's part time job. Okay?
「…Yes

I replied in a loud voice

「Minaho-san…I'll also work part time」

…Megu?

「I feel bad to let Yoshi-kun do all of it…I'll work for the money I need」

Megu said that, but…

「Don't. Megu should have the track and field as priority…!」

…That's right.
We promised Captain Takeshiba and the other members…!

「…But」

Minaho-neesan talked to the worried Megu.

「Megumi has days where she doesn't have practice…So she can work for two days a week at least」
「…Yes, I think that will be fine」

Minaho-neesan smiled at Megu…

「Then, go and work at Nagisa's flower shop. In exchange of Misuzu-san…!」

…In exchange of Misuuz?

「Misuzu-san…won't have time to work part time anymore. She's seriously thinking of taking Tokyo University exam…!」

Right…She said that as well.
Misuzu needs to study seriously for the exam since she's in second year high school already.

「Talk about it with Misuzu on phone later. I'll be the one to talk to Nagisa」

「Yes…Thank you very much」

Megu bowed to Minaho-neesan.

「With that said…I'm handing you this 200k yen. Buy Megumi's dress for the symposium with your money…okay?」

There's no actual feeling that it's my money however…
Anyway…I'll buy Megu's clothes with this money…

「50k yen or more for the dress and 20k or more on the shoes」

Minaho-neesan said strongly.

「Minaho-san…that's too expensive! And I'm going to wear that?!」

Minaho-neesan…

「The other girls would buy much more expensive dresses…
Actually, I would tell you to get 100k yen for shoes and 200k yen for the clothes. But…The two of you won't look for things with that amount, would you?」
「…Yes」

Where do they sell that astronomical price of a clothing?

「I think that this time, it will have meaning if you buy with only the two of you. Therefore, you're going without Katsuko or Nei accompanying you」

Minaho-neesan…is making us pile up our experience…?

「Megumi's sense of clothing is so decent so…buy cute dress with an approximate price of 70k yen. Buy shoes that goes along with the dress. If you don't get it then ask the assistants. You just have to say 『Please show shoes appropriate for this dress under 30k yen』」

Minaho-neesan advised us.

「Uhm…Minaho-san. What about Yoshi-kun's clothing…?」

Megu asked.
Certainly…I intend to go on my school uniform as well…
If Megu's school uniform is no good…I'm the same.

「Katsuko's currently fixing Yoshida-kun's clothing」

…Katsuko-nee's fixing?

「Yoshida-kun had your clothes measured yesterday, didn't you?… Our mansion has quite a lot of suits of my dead grandfather. I had Katsuko look for clothes for Yoshida-kun and have it fixed. It won't make it in time if we had it custom tailored…and ready to wear would be too big…」

Katsuko-nee…
…She's fixing the size for my sake…

「Katsuko likes doing that so let her be」
「…O-Okay」
「Ah…Keep it a secret that I told you about it. Feign ignorance until Katsuko tells Yoshida-kun」
「…Got it」

Minaho-neesan…Katsuko-nee
Everyone's thinking of me.

「Also…Yoshida-kun」

Minaho-neesan smiled.

「…Yes?」
「Buy Megu a ring on the way…Get something with the price of 10k for the time being」
「…Eh?」

R-Ring?

「You have your student pocketbook, don't you?」
「Ah…Yes」

I took out my school pocketbook from my pocket.

「Take a look at the school regulations…schoolgirl's dress code」

I turn the page as told by Minaho-neesan
Megu looks into my pocketbook from the side…

「What's written on the item concerning accessories?」

…Err

「…Gaudy accessories. Earrings, necklace, pendant, brooch, bracelets are forbidden in the campus…However」

…The hell?

「…Chokers and engagement rings without jewels are allowed when acknowledged by the school staff」

Eh…Even though accessories are prohibited?
Rings and chokers are allowed?!

「…Before, there are girls who go to the high school at day and prostitutes in the mansion at night…!」

Minaho-neesan answered.

「Choker is a collar symbol…it's a sign for the teachers to be careful of the students that are prostitutes of 『Kuromori』」

That's right.
Our school…is a camouflage of the brothel 『Kuromori』 that Minaho-neesan's grandfather bought.
Actually, it's a prostitute candidate hunting ground…The prostitutes kept going to school before…

「The ring is a warning for men that says 『This girl has a fiance so don't make a move on her』」

…I-I see

「Therefore…Buy Megumi a ring」

To let the other men know that Megu is mine.

「Yes…Got it」

I answered.

◇ ◇ ◇

Megu and I come out of the flat.
Minaho-neesan remained in the car and opened her laptop.
It seems that she wants to take a look at Shirasaka house and the state at Australia.

「…Do you know this place?」

From the underground parking lot to the outside world.
The night town…It's past 6 o'clock
I know the neighborhood downtown, however…
For me who doesn't go out usually…I don't have the feel of the place.

「I know…I think that's JR station」

As expected of Megu, she's reliable.

「…Can we hold hands?」

Megu muttered.

「Ah…Sure」

We go towards the station holding hands.

「…Ufufu」

Megu laughs…

「What's wrong?」
「It's my first time going on a date with a boy」

Megu said bashfully.

「…I'm the same」
「Yoshi-kun's the same?」
「…Yeah」

Megu suddenly draws me to the shadow of the vending machine.

「…What?」

Megu kisses me before I can ask.

「…I love you, Yoshi-kun. I'm really happy1」

Megu embraces me and mutters.

「…Megu」

Megu has lost the house she had lived for ten years…
She no longer has a place to return to.
On the contrary…She'll be chased by the Shirasaka house from now on…
But still…Megu is.

「Let's be together forever…!」
「Un…I know」

This time, I kissed Megu…!

「Let's go somewhere for the time being?」

She asks, hiding her embarrassment…

「I don't know clothes with the price higher than 50k yen so…let's go to the department store around the station with a lot of brand shops?」

Megu suggested.,

◇ ◇ ◇

…Err
There's luxury brand stores lined up in the department store.
We pass through and come in…
We're in front of the shop but we don't have the courage to enter.
The stores with foreign brands seems to be dazzling strangely…
The clerks feel like they're glaring at us saying 「What's with them?」…

Megu and I…
Are completely scared…!!

「…Megu」
「…Un」
「…We don't suit this place, don't we?」
「…I think the same!」
「…Should we escape?」
「…Un, let's stop this…!」

Holding hand, we tried to escape out of the building…
After coming outside, Megu and I looked at each other.
A natural smile spilled…

「…Getting nervous on such things…we're no good」
「Yeah…we're no good」

Both of us are laughing…
This is somewhat fun.

「…Ahn!」

Suddenly, Megu holds down her ass.

「…What's wrong?」

Megu's looking at me with a troubled face.

「It's dripping」
「…What is?」
「…Yoshi-kun's」

…My what?

「Yoshi-kun's semen…!」

Oh right…I came inside Megu earlier…

「Un…It's fine already. Let's go」

Megu takes my hand again and begins to walk…
My semen is inside the womb of the girl walking next to me.

Thinking about that…it somehow made me aroused.

「Yoshi-kun…you're thinking lewd things, weren't you?」

Megu looked at me smilingly.

「Ah…Sorry」
「It's fine…I'm thinking the same thing…!」

…Megu

「I want to be filled by Yoshi-kun all the time…!」
「…Eh?」
「Sorry for being a lewd girl…」
「No…I'm glad that you're a lewd girl」

I embraced Megu's waist…

「Ahn…it's dripping again…!」

Megu whispered in my ears…

◇ ◇ ◇

「…We should've gone here in the first place」

We moved to a little bit more popular department store.
We go the women's clothing section through the escalator.

「Mother bought me clothes in this department store…」
「Is that so?」
「I'm slightly taller than other children. Children's clothes don't fit me so I have to wear adult clothes」

I look at Megu's whole body while we're in the escalator.
Yup…Megu's figure is tall and slim, she's like a model.

「Sorry for having children's size breasts however…」

Misuzu and Maika too…women are conscious about the size of their chest.

「…I like Megu's breasts」

「…Really?」
「Yeah…It's Megu-like, it's cute」
「I also love having Yoshi-kun licking my breasts」

…Megu looked down.

「Let's do it again.」
「…Yeah」

I tap Megu's ass.

「…Ahn! Geez!」

Megu raised her voice.

「Sorry…you don't like it? Did it drip out again?…」

Megu spoke bashfully

「I'm already fine…I don't hate being touched…Megu's body is Yoshi-kun's after all, so touch it as much as you want…!」

Megu refers herself as 『Megu』 when we're alone…
The look that's a bit embarrassed is very cute for me.

「Here…I think it's there」

Coming to the women's section…Megu chose two clothes.
One is a tight and decent looking set of skirt and tunic and skirt.
The other one is a bit showy dress.
That said, it's Megu's sense of clothing so it's not too gaudy.
Both of them are colored vivid green.

「…You like green clothes?」
「Yeah…I want to go with green clothes」

Now then…Which should we pick?
The price…the decent one is 58k yen and the showy one is 73k yen.
The expensive one has less cloth…
I don't get women's standard on clothing…

「…Let's go with the cheaper one」

Megu said.

「Let's stop that way of thinking」

I said clearly.

「But…What should we do?」

The decent one is Megu-like so I think it'll suit her.
I think that the showy one changes the image of Megu. I want to see this.

「…How about you try it on?」
「…Okay」

According to Megu, there seems to be a fitting room for couples when it comes to young children clothing.
It seems that the boy can take a look at the girl changing on that spot but…this is a normal department store so there's no such facility.
I wait outside the fitting room.

「…How does it look?」

First, the decent one.

「…Looks good. You're very cute」

When it's just the clothing, it looks simple but…when the real class chairman, Megu wears it, it looks very clean and beautiful. This clothes enhances Megu's cuteness.

「Un…Then I'll wear the other one」

Megu goes in the fitting room once again…
There's not much people walking around the women's corner at the department store.
Having to wait absentmindedly outside…I feel asking myself what I'm doing.
I tried to take a look from the gap of the thick curtain.
I see Megu's naked back…

「Geez…Yoshi-kun no Ecchi!」

Ah, she noticed.

「You could've just told me if you want to take a look…!」

Megu shows her pink nipples

「That's all for now…The rest is for later…!」

Megu smiles from the gap of the curtain…
…Yeah.
I'm looking forward for tonight.

「Okay…Thank you for waiting」

She opens the curtain.
The showy dress…
This looks good too
So Megu's this beautiful.
Usually, she looks so simple…so her impression is simple as well…
When she wears a showy clothing…with her tall height and good style, and facial looks looking sharp…You'd notice that she's actually a beauty…
I understood the reason why Yukino would rather die than let her wear good dress.

「This is a bit embarrassing」
「Why?」
「It's my first time wearing clothes that shows my shoulder and legs」
「Eh, I think it's very cute though」
「But…It's embarrassing」

The embarrassed Megu looks cute

「I'd like the docile clothing from a while ago. That's cheaper too」
「I like the showy one however」

Now then…Our opinions don't match.

「Should we buy both of them instead?」

I said boldly.

「Eeeeh, that's a waste…!」
「It's not…It's Megu's clothes after all」
「It's a waste because it's my clothes!」

Why is Megu belittling herself…
Even though she's this cute.

「Yoshi-kun, which clothes looks better?」

Megu asked me.

「This dress shows Megu's legs clearly」

I answered what I was thinking

「My legs?」

Megu's showing a surprised face.

「Yeah. Megu's legs are thin and long…It's very beautiful. I like the legs of a girl that does sports. With this dress showing your legs, I like this dress better…!

Megu looks at me.

「…What's wrong, Megu?」
「Yoshi-kun's really a good person」
「…Eh?」
「You never say something halfhearted whenever it is」
「…Isn't that obvious?」
「Hmm…Not everyone's like that. Not everyone thinks and answers everything seriously」
「…Is that so?」
「…Un, that's right…Therefore I like Yoshi-kun…」

Megu smiled at me.

「…I'll buy this dress!」

…Megu?

「Yoshi-kun said that he wants to see my legs more after all…!」

Megu said calmly.

「I'm going to Misuzu-san's symposium, be compared to other girls so I cannot wear shameful clothing, that's what I always thought」

No…Isn't that right?

「But, that's wrong…With that kind of thinking, whatever clothing I wear coming to the symposium, it would be shameful」

…I see.
The other girls might wear much more expensive clothing…
If you compare it to simple clothes…Megu cannot have the advantage.

「I'm Yoshi-kun's 『woman』 I should wear clothes that Yoshi-kun likes…isn't that right?」

Megu needs me…

「Yeah…That's right. It's fine as long as I think that Megu's 『Cute』 …other people's glance doesn't matter」

I now understand why Minaho-neesan made us buy clothes with just the two of us.
That is to destroy Megu's inferiority complex when it comes to clothing…
If Megu herself consents the clothing that I think is better, whatever clothing it would be, it'll become the 『Best clothing』

「Yoshi-kun…are you sure with this dress?」

Megu asked me one last time.

「Yeah…this dress will do」

No…That's not it.

「I'd like Megu to wear that dress…!」

Megu's face bloomed like a large flower…!

「…Thank you…. Yoshi-kun!」

◇ ◇ ◇

Buying the dress…we also bought shoes that suits it.
We had 200k yen…but half of it already has vanished.
Women's clothing are really expensive…1
Maybe I should earn a lot.
Megu's a commoner so it's fine, but…
Misuzu and Maika prefers high class…
Nei-san seems to look good with flagship goods…2
I have to give Katsuko-nee and Nagisa-san gifts too…
Living without trying to spend money until now made me think that money's trivial.
But I cannot say that anymore…
I have to work a lot…

「Yoshi-kun…how about this?」

Continuing…we're at the ring section.
Somehow…This is much more embarrassing than the female clothing section.
Buying a ring with a girl is telling the world that she's my 『woman』
The shoppers walking around are all looking at me.
Aaah…It's so embarrassing I want to die.
Or rather…someone kill me.3

「Instead of that, this is a popular item recently…」

The clerk onee-san shows an expensive ring casually…Megu's eyes only look at the rings 10k or less.
…Seriously.

「Megu…I won't buy it unless it's a 30k yen ring or more」

I said.

「Why? Minaho-san said that we should get approximately 10k」

…That's.
Or rather…Is that why you're looking at the 10k yen less corner?

「Minaho-neesan's opinion seems to be that it should be a bit more expensive since it's the first ring…!」

…Un.
Somehow, I understand the difference of thinking of each women…
People are different from each other even a bit.

「But…Megu's going to wear that ring for the rest of your life, won't you?」

Megu looks at me.

「…Un」

Look…

「Then…Let's go with a bit more expensive. Something that won't break that easily…」
「…Right, got it」

Megu turns her eye to the 30k yen or more…
Yup…This is good.
Though, the strength won't change that much from 10k yen to 30k yen…
It's just good that Megu's choices are widened…
To be honest…the rings priced 10k yen or less doesn't have much varieties.

「…Is platinum okay?」
「Yeah, anything's fine」

I don't get what's platinum however…
It's unrelated to Plasma, isn't it?
Megu's choosing seriously.

「Which is better, this, this, or this?」

Megu tags ring after ring.

「You should stop that.」
「…Why?」
「There's the difference in purity of the platinum. Shouldn't we pick the high purity instead of the high quality?」
「Ah…That's amazing, Yoshi-kun」
「No…I don't get it too but…maybe」
「I've heard about it…when the ring has low platinum purity…it becomes distorted…」
「…Where did you hear it from?」
「My senior」

As usual…Megu has a lot of superficial knowledge.

「With that said…It's this or this…!」

…Megu chose the ring with a simple design in the end.

「…Let's do with this」

The clerk Onee-san comes to us.

「I will fit the size then」

Then…Megu…

「Please match the size to the ring finger!」

Megu smiled satisfied.

「This will be our wedding ring…![4]」

I'm astonished of course.
Because…We're still high school students.
We're in our school uniforms too…
But…The clerk is used to such developments?…

「Yes…Understood!」

Fortunately…Megu has thin and long fingers.
It entered her ring finger perfectly without resizing it.

「It suits you very much」

Hearing the clerk, I…

「SOLD![5]」

I paid the price for the ring.
32k yen…

「Ah…You don't need to wrap it. I'll wear this」

Megu told the clerk…
She presented me the platinum ring…

「Yoshi-kun, put it on me…!」

…I

「…Okay」

I hold Megu's fair hand…
I fit the ring on her ring finger…!

「…Ahn!」

Megu raised a small voice when the ring reached the root of her finger.
It's as if the penis has pierced her uterus…

「…With this…I completely become Yoshi-kun's…!」

Megu caress the ring with enchanted eyes…

So rings have such magic…!

---

1. and your mother had two rooms full of clothes ↩
2. Imagine Nei on a thin white sleeveless shirt, stop fapping, hey, STOP! ↩
3. Viola: "Coming"! ↩
4. Megu, get Yoshi-kun a ring too then ↩
5. Sorry, I can't resist ↩

114. Underwear and pursuer

Now that we've bought the ring…the next one is.

「…Let's buy Yoshi-kun's underwear」

My underwear?

「No…We don't need to buy mine in the department store…」
「Eh?…Yoshi-kun, where do you usually buy underwear?」

Megu's making a surprised face.
…Where?

「…100 shops」
「…100?」
「100 yen shops」

Or rather…for this five years, I've been living by buying underwear at 100 yen shops.

「Hmm…Don't 100 yen underwear feel bad?」

Megu's making a worried face though.

「I don't know…I've never put on anything but 100 yen」

Is there difference between the feel of men's underwear?

「Hundred yen underwear is no good…let's buy a better one」

Megu told me with a serious face.
No…I never had problems with hundred yen though.

「It's fine…It would be a waste. I'm the one wearing it after all」

When I said that…

「Then…Megu will buy hundred yen underwear as well. Are you fine with that?」

Megu stares at me…

「No…Megu doesn't need to match with me. Women's underwear on the Hundred yen shops doesn't look so decent… 」

Yup…It's bad quality.
After all it's just 100 yen.

「Yoshi-kun…if the hundred yen underwear for women isn't decent, don't you think that's the same for men's underwear? 」

Megu says seriously
Now that she said it that might be right…

「But…I don't need to mind the feeling when wearing 」
「I want you to! 」

…Megu?!

「Yoshi-kun…there're are various things in the world. 」 I want Yoshi-kun to become a man who understand the difference of things…! 」

…A man who understands the difference of things?

「Yes…If you understand the difference, won't you be able to judge the true value of it? 」

Megu grasps my hand strongly…

「But…My underwear won't be seen outside 」
「Even if the others can't see it…Yoshi-kun who's wearing it will know, right? Wearing it…and understanding from experience 」
「…Well, that's true 」
「Yoshi-kun…If I think that it's a waste of money so I go to school with an old and worn out underwear, what would you do? 」

If Megu wears an old and worn out underwear…

「I don't want that. I want Megu to wear a clean oone 」
「…I'm the same! 」

Megu told me strongly…!
…I see.
I'm devoting myself on Megu one-sidedly.
If I think of wanting Megu to wear a clean underwear then I have to get clean underwear as well…

「Also…Tomorrow's the 『Medical Checkup』 I'd like Yoshi-kun to go there in proper underwear」

Tomorrow's 『Medical checkup』 will have body measurement.
The doctors had already done their 『Medical Checkup』 at the start of the term.
Well, that was internal medicine checkup.
Tomorrow will be mainly measuring the height, sitting height, weight, and chest measurement and likes.
Also…does X-rays come too?
Anyway…they will be measured in their underwear separated by gender.

「If Yoshi-kun wears a strange underwear, I'll be laughed at…」

Megu stares at me.

「I'm Yoshi-kun's 『girlfriend』 in the school after all…!」

Oh…I'm completely surrounded.
I'm no longer alone.
I have to live carrying the 『Consideration』 to my 『women』 …!

「…Got it. I'll let Megu buy it」

Megu smiles…!

「…Okay!」

◇ ◇ ◇

…But.
Coming to the men's section…

「Ufufufufufuun…!」

Megu's chosing my underwear in high spirits.
While humming…

「Megu…Aren't you embarrassed?」
「Eh…Why?」
「Well…It's men's underwear section」
「I'm having fun you know! I'm like Yoshi-kun's wife…!」

…W-Waifu?!
…M-Megu?

「Err…Yoshi-kun likes trunks, right?」

Megu saw my underwear multiple times.
I showed more than the underwear though…

「Ah…yeah」
「But…how about you try this boxer briefs? This ones have a better texture」

…Boxer briefs?
Oh, the trunks that have the tight feel?

「Hmm…Then, let's go with that」

I don't have any objections.
I don't care about the underwear I wear either way…
I don't like white briefs, but…
I wore white briefs before I bought trunks on hundred yen shops.
After wearing that for a year…It becomes impossible to wash away the yellow tint…

「Got it…Let's buy five pieces.」

…5?

「No…Let's just buy 3. I can just wash it in rotation if it's 3 pieces.」
「No…We'll buy 5 pieces. There should be a spare too!」

Megu's wife methods are obstinate.

「By the way…how much is that?」
「840 yen a piece」

…Err!
…I can buy eight trunks from the hundred yen shop with that.
Five pieces…!
T-T-T-That's a huge expense!!!

「Don't make that face…we bought my dress for 70k yen! Use some money to buy your underwear!」

…D-Dammit!
When it comes to this…!

◇ ◇ ◇

「That's a waste!」

We're in the female underwear section right now…
This is terribly embarrassing.
Though I'm feeling extremely embarrassed…I endured it with determination.

「That's no good! I'll buy Megu an underwear set with 10k yen or more…!」

I'm already desperate.…!
Let's get the best bra and panty…!

「And we're going to buy three kinds of it!」
「…Three kinds?」

Megu's making a blank face.

「First would be for tomorrow's 『Medical examination』 It's not good according to the school regulations to wear anything but plain white!」
「…Y-yeah」
「Even if it's plain white…I'd buy a design set for it A beautiful, cute, and cool one」
「That's…We can just use the normal one I use to go to school」

Megu said, but…

「Nope! Your body would be seen by other girls during the body measurement, won't it? Even I want Megu to go there with the best, beautiful and the cutest underwear!」

I'll return the logic Megu used on me a while ago…!

「…Got it. But, let's lower it to 3k yen…!」
「Never!…We're going to buy 10k yen! It'll look different!」

I declare with firm determination…!

「Also…the one you'll wear the day after tomorrow, on Misuzu's symposium. Since you're going to wear a good dress, you should wear good underwear as well. You should dress yourself up even if it's not seen from outside, wasn't it…?!」
「Well…That's true but…」
「We'll buy a bra and panty that suits the 70k yen dress…!」
「Un…I get it」

Megu approved this one immediately.

「Lastly…let's buy a lewd underwear…!」
「…Eh?」

Megu's long and narrow eyes opened wide…!

「I want to see Megu wearing a lewd underwear」

Megu's face turned red.

「…Geez, Baka」 1

Megu clings to me…

「Megu…will wear no matter how lewd it is…!」

…And
The two of us hunts underwear…
We looked for the underwear that's appropriate on the school regulations for tomorrow.

「Isn't this one good?」

I chose a set of a refreshing design.

「…T-That's right」

Megu's embarrassed.
Err…I take a look at the price tag.
The white bra and panty set is priced 12k yen…

「…Umu」
「What's wrong, Yoshi-kun?」
「I finally understood what Megu said a while ago…?!」
「Eh, why?」
「It's just a plain white underwear…But the look is completely different. This one has an appearance that tells that it feels different when worn and that it has high quality texture…!」

Even though it's really just a simple design.
They're drawing a distinct line from the bargain sale products…
As expected, those that exceed 10k yen are different…

「Even Yoshi-kun's 100 yen and 840 yen underwear are completely different…!」

That might be the case but…I can clearly see the difference between girl's underwear.
Well, there's the price too…
Okay…The first set is done.
Next…

「…Are you sure with this?」

This time, it's the underwear for the symposium…
I suggested that the set costing 23k would be good to Megu.
This one is a pale pink set with frills and lace.
There's floral watermark designs in it.
…It looks gorgeous and cute from the outside.

「I wonder if this suits me」

Megu is still belittling herself again.

「Then…Should we buy this 40k yen instead?」

When I urged her aggressively…
Hey…We're almost our limit though.

「I-it's fine…This one will do!」

Megu agreed with the 23k yen.
Lastly…the lewd underwear.

「Yoshi-kun…are you sure with that?」

The set I chose is a red cloth with black lace.
The color is flashy but the design is ordinary.
It would feel normal having a high school girl wear it…
But still…It feels like a 『Lucky underwear』…

「…I'm fine with something more strange you know?」

That's what Megu says while blushing.

「I've seen the ladies in the mansion wear something even more amazing than that when I was a child. Yoshi-kun wants to have sex with me on those clothes?」

Megu thinks of buying even more lewder underwear it seems.

「Katsuko-nee may have lots of those types」

Yup…She must have lots of bra with hole on the nipple or string panty.

「Also…This is a normal department store. They don't have those that are extreme」

If we seriously want to buy lewd underwear…we have to go to a specialty store for that.

「But…This isn't much of a lewd underwear…It's not adult-like at all. Yoshi-kun, are you sure with that?」

…Oh

Megu doesn't understand it…

「Megu…What kind of underwear do you have?」
「…It's all plain white. Just according to the school regulations」

I thought so…!

「You don't wear showy underwear with color, don't you?」
「…Un」

I told Megu.

「It's fine to not use too lewd underwear immediately. Megu's been an『Honor Student』so far. It would make me confused if Megu wears such a 『Lucky underwear』…!」
「…Is that so?」
「Megu's still a first year so even if you're a lewd girl, I'd like you to be a high-school-like girl…!」

I want to be in a relationship with Megu who's at the same age as me.
There's no need to force her to stretch herself.
Megu thinks deeply.

「Right. I cannot win in sexiness against Katsuko-neesan or Nagisa-san. If Megu fights, she has to use her high school student girl-like lewd weapon…!」

…Eh?
…Fight? Weapon?
…Megu?

「I've been aiming to be a 『Good girl』and 『Honor student』since I was taken in Yamamine house…I think that shell is hard to break. Perhaps, I cannot get away from the 『Honor Student』route anymore…」

Megu analyses herself…

「Yoshi-kun…is being aroused by the 『Honor Student』Megu being indecent, is that right?」

Megu looks at my face…

「Hmm…I like the lewd Megu… 」

…Wait a moment.
I also think deep inside of me…

「No…What arouses me is the Megu who's very tidy, persevering, hardworking, and kind to everyone…being lewd in front of me 」

The image gap.
Megu listens to my talk seriously.
Then…She nodded…

「…Got it. Megu won't stop playing the 『Honor student』 role. I'll be a 『Good Girl』 in front of everyone…and become a 『Bad Girl』 in front of Yoshi-kun…! 」

Megu said with brilliant eyes.

「Yoshi-kun, take a look at both Megu's…Both of them are real Megu…! 」

…Megu!
Megu takes the red and black 『Lucky underwear』 …

「You're right…Up until now, I thought of wearing this kind of color of underwear will make me a 『Bad Girl』 That's how much of a 『Honor student』 I am…! 」 2

The reunion with 『Kuromori』 has put Megu's sense out of order…
Just hearing 'lewd underwear'…She thought of a 『Prostitute』 like underwear…

「Yeah. It is as Yoshi-kun says…I should begin my 『Bad Girl』 image with this underwear… 」

Megu confirms her own position…then starts from there.
She's not forcing to stretch herself…

「Megu is at the same year as Yoshi-kun…so we should do high-school-like indecency…! 」

…Megu!

「Megu…Let's go to the back of that pillar there」

I hold Megu's hand

「…Why?」

Megu smiles at me.

「I want to kiss Megu just now…!」

Megu clings to me.

「What a coincidence! Megu wants to kiss Yoshi-kun too…!」

Just like that…Megu piled her lips with mine.
We're kissing at the female underwear section in the department store…!3

◇　◇　◇

In the end, we chose the cheapest high school student-like 『Lucky underwear』
8.8k yen for a set…Hmm.
After deciding on buying three sets of underwear, I noticed the sizes.
Megu said 「Perhaps this one fits right」…
It's expensive after all…
Then, the clerk asks「Would you like to put it on?」
…Eh, you can try underwear?
I see…This is expensive after all.
But…wearing underwear that someone else tried on…isn't it unpleasant?

「I'm going to try it on…!」

Then, Megu went to the fitting room with the clerk.
This time…I can't come with her.
It would be too embarrassing no matter how you look at it.

「We've already decided so the only thing they're going to do is to

check the size…!」

Just kidding…I just want to show off because the clerk is in front of us…
I'm in my school uniform.
What am I saying…Or rather, I'm an idiot!
Then…I waited alone.
…Err
…What the hell is this.
In the female underwear section…I'm waiting alone in my school uniform.
Ah…the shoppers walking around are all looking at me with weird eyes…
『Why is he on this floor?』their faces say…
…Awawawawawa
Ain't I looking like a pervert?!
…M-Megu!
H-Hurry up and come back!!

「…Thank yo for the wait Yoshi-kun!」

…In the end, I bathed in cold eyes from the people for almost 15 minutes.

「I'm glad I tried it on. The『Lucky underwear』is a perfect fit but…the two others are a bit bigger. They'll change it with the same underwear with different size. Also…The clerk had taught me how to make my breasts look big when wearing bra…![4]」

Ah…Is that so?

「Then, should I take this to the counter?」

The clerk said with a cheerful face.
Well, we're shopping stuff that exceeds 40k yen…

「Yes, please…!」
「Are you going to use cash?」

Well…We're still students so we can't have a card.

「…Yes. Cash」

I took out money from the envelop Minaho-neesan gave me.

「…Is this a present for your girlfriend's birthday?」

The clerk asked me laughingly.
Megu and I are queued in the cash register.
Megu holds my hand again.
We're being seen that way…
Certainly, I'm holding the bag of Megu's dress and Megu's shoes.
On the other hand…Megu's holding the bag that contains my underwear.

「No…That's not it」

I answered the clerk clearly.

「That's my gratitude for my girlfriend…!」

Megu holds my hand tightly…!
She's looking down bashfully with moist eyes.

「I'm wrapping it then…!」

The clerk said with a smile…!

…But

Megu's dress costs 73k yen.
The shoes matching the dress costs 35k yen.
The ring costs 32k yen.
My underwear costs 4.2k yen.
The plain T-shirt that was bought along with the underwear costs 1.8k yen.
Megu's underwear, three sets…costs 43,800 Yen.
Total…189,800 yen.
…We bought without thinking.
We took 200k yen and there's only 10,200 yen left.

「…This is strange」

I muttered.

「What's wrong, Yoshi-kun?」

Megu looks at me.

「No you see…Even though I think that its a waste to use money on myself…I don't feel any regret buying for Megu. Rather, I thought of wanting to spend more…」

…It's really strange.

「I'll earn a lot. I have to buy a lot of things not just for Megu but also for Maika and the other girls」

Megu leans on my body…

「I'll also work part time…I want to buy Yoshi-kun a lot of things…!」
「I'll be fine. Megu should just use the money she earned for herself」
「What Megu wants to do is to devote herself to Yoshi-kun…!」

Megu…smiled at me.
Somehow…My chest feels hot.
I don't get it though.
Is this what they call happiness?

…Bururururu!

Suddenly, my phone vibrated.

「Isn't that Minaho-san?」

I see…Maika's examination ended already?
I answered the call.

『…Hello, Yoshida-kun. Where are you right now?』

…As expected.

「We're in the department store around the station」
『…You're done shopping?』
「Yes, we bought everything」

『…How much was left?』
「Err…Around 10k yen」

…Will she get angry?
We spent too much…

『You passed…I thought that you'd leave more than half since it's you』
「…Eh?」
『If you had more than 50k yen remaining, I intend to have you buy Megumi's clothes once again…but it seems that there's no problem』
「…O-Okay」

As usual…Minaho-neesan likes to test people.

『Go to the bus terminal around the station in 15 minutes. Line up on the bus stop to the municipal hospital』

…Bus stop to the municipal hospital?

『Try to pretend that you don't know my car even if you see it… When I blow the horn, dash towards the car. Okay…?!』

…It feels like there's reason for that.

「…Okay, got it. We're going to run as soon as you blow the horn」

I ready myself and answered.

『See you in 15 minutes』

…She end the call.

「Sorry, can we have a bigger bag so we can put it all together?」

Hearing me on the call…Megu spoke to the clerk.

「…Megu?」
「If we're going to jump to the car, we should do that」

Megu smiles calmly.

…It seems that she's already prepared.

◇ ◇ ◇

Without hurrying…without panicking.
We walk at normal speed…
We're holding two shopping bags.
Megu holds the bag of dress…
The shoes and underwear are all in my bag.
We come to the bus terminal after getting out of the department store.

「Do you know the number of the terminal on the bus to the municipal hospital?」

When I asked…

「12th. I know that because my foster mother was hospitalized before」

Megu answered.

「…Why was your mother hospitalized?」
「She fell on the stairs in the company…and her waist bone was broken」
「Your mother was working too?」
「Yes…She's on the design advertisement company. It's a small company but…they also have newspaper design in them. They're printing a huge amount of copies for not just supermarkets, but also car companies, big flats, or car companies」

In short…Megu's mother is also working on a company related to Shirasaka house.

「Ah…The 12th is on that way」

The bus terminal for the municipal hospital is the most out of place.
Is the bus coming soon?…There's 10 people lining up already

「…We'll line up too」

We lined up with the queue…

There's still five minutes before the appointed time Minaho-neesan told us.

「Let's buy canned juice?」

When I said that…

「Let's not. It would hinder our movement…」

Megu answers.

「Rather than that…Yoshi-kun.」

Megu snuggles to me and murmurs…

「If ever someone's following us, they'll surely line up in this queue」

…I-I see

「…That's why you shouldn't be loud if it's something you don't want someone to hear it」
「…Okay」
「With that said…Yoshi-kun's bad with that, right?」
「…Yeah」
「Megu will be talking so Yoshi-kun just have to nod」
「…G-Got it」

Seriously…
My 『women』 are much more intelligent than me…
It saves me a lot though…
Megu begins her talk about her track and field team…
Anyway…I just kept coming.

「…They're here」

Megu whispers to my ear without changing her expression.

「Yoshi-kun, don't turn around…」
「…Okay」
「We just have to run when she blows the horn…is that right?!」
「Yes…That's right」

Megu holds my hand…

「Don't be nervous…Megu's here with you」

…Megu, what a reliable girl!

「The car is at Yoshi-kun's back right…it's around ten meters」

Megu gives me the detailed information…

「…Right now, Katsuko-san opened the door…!」

…Bubuu!!5

The horn rang!
…Now!

Megu and I turned and dashed to the car…!
As expected of a track and field member…Megu's legs are fast!

「…Hey, wait!!!」

I hear a scream from the back…!
As expected, they're following us…?!

「…Hey, dude, you dropped something!!」

…Like hell I'll take the bait!

Katsuko-nee opens the car door wide.
Maika's hiding herself.
I can't see her from outside…!

「…Thief! Catch them!」

The man chasing us from the back suddenly said!
You're using everything now…?!
…… ! !
First, Megu jumps to the car…!
Next…I jumped in!!
We closed the car and turned back in a hurry…!
There's three hoodlum men running after us!

A-Are we going to make it?!

「Don't bite your tongue…!」

The car starts immediately when the car door closes!

「…Hey!」

One of the hoodlum kicked the door…!
Thanks to that, the door closed![6]

…Bababababababababa!

The car accelerates…!
The three men from outside the rear window becomes small…

「…We're saved」

When I sighed…

「No…They're going to come after us」

Minaho-nee muttered…!!!

---

1. Here's a joke for selected language, "Mou, Baka!" ↩
2. Saying that she doesn't think of anything lewder than that before or something?, Either way, here's the raw 「そうだね……今まであたし、こんな色付きの下着を付けるのは『悪い子』のすることだと思ってた。それぐらい、カチンコチンの『優等生』だったんだよね……！」 ↩
3. Get a Room! ↩
4. HERETIC! ↩
5. Desuwa! ↩
6. Thank you good Hoodlum-san ↩

◇ Escape Arc (incomplete)

115. In the abyss….

I looked back when Minaho-neesan told me that…
Certainly….There's a car that's running after us in a bizarre speed. [1]

「You're mistaken if you think that that's the only one…!」

…Eh?

「We have phones and internet nowadays…While they're chasing after us in a loud manner, there's another car going ahead of us…!」

So the other party is such a huge organization…!

「W-What should we do?」

I turned to Sensei…
Sensei who's holding the steering wheel spoke calmly.

「It's okay…This is why we're going round and round the station…!」

Speaking of which…we're not getting away from the station…?!

「We'll be able to read most of the enemy numbers. As long as we can know the number…we can know how serious they are…!」

…Minaho-neesan?

「How many years do you think we stayed in this town? We have reliable investigators hired. All of the suspicious people around the station are being suppressed right now… This is our hometown. We're all using surveillance cameras in the public facilities and shopping district…!」

She's going around the station on purpose to see through the enemies…!

「Also, this is a location with a lot of people so the enemy cannot

touch us by force…!」

As expected of our Nee-san!

「It's about time I guess…!」

…Eh?
…What are we going to do?

「…We had our escape destination since the start?」

…Escape destination?

「…Everyone, hold on tight!」

Saying that, Minaho-neesan suddenly turned the steering wheel…!

「Uwa!」
「Kyaa!」

We're being pushed by the force!
Maika and Megu screamed!

…Buaaaaaan!

The car blows it's exhaust and jumps into the underground parking station of the big hotel from the main street…!

「…Isn't this?」

Katsuko-nee smiled…

「That's right, this is the hotel that's contracted with Nagisa…
and」

Katsuko-nee looks at Minaho-neesan.

「…I have forty percent of the stocks here」

In short…Minaho-neesan is a big shareholder of this hotel…
This building is under the patronage of 『Kuromori』…!

「…They're coming as expected」

Our car blasts in the underground parking lot…
The car from a while ago comes from our back!
No…it increased to two!

「Now then…It's about time we end this」

Minaho-neesan turns the car to the gate on the interior of the parking lot.
There's a 『Members only parking lot』…
There's a management office and a muscular security guard runs out in groups.
Minaho-neesan flickers the light of the car…
With just that, the gate opens automatically…!

「I've contacted them a while ago so they know my car」

Our car slides in to the 『Members only parking lot』…
At the moment the car enters, the security guards bowed to Minaho-neesan.

「…I'll leave them to you people」

Opening the car window, Minaho-neesan spoke to the guards.
The gate has already been closed.

「Hey fuckers…Open this gate!」

The two cars chasing after us are prevented by the gate from coming inside.

「Sorry, this is a member's only area」

The security guards face the pursuers.

「What? What Member?!」

The pursuers got off their car noisily as well.
1, 2, 3, 4…there's 5 people in total
All of them are hoodlums…or rather, they look like Yakuza.

「Well you see…This is a gate that never let those people who doesn't know what organization enter…!」

The security guards took out their metal policeman club and stun gun…!

「We can just leave everything else to those people」

Our car goes in deeper the 『Members only parking lot』
There's an elevator that can fit a large sized car in the interior of the parking lot.
Minaho-neesan took out an electric key and turns it to the elevator.
There's a gate protected by humans and a double check elevator machine that performs a check.
The elevator door opens and the car comes in.

「…Uwaaaaa!」
「…Ugyaaaa!」

I can hear the men screaming from the background…

「…Don't look back. They're just an unsightly scenery」

Minaho-neesan said over the mirror.
The elevator door closes…
I can no longer hear the screams

◇ ◇ ◇

The elevator goes further underground.

「This is the fifth underground floor…」

Minaho-neesan told us.
The elevator's descent stops and the door opens.
Approximately ten cars can park in here.
But…There's not a single one parked in.

「It's been a while coming here…」

Katsuko-nee muttered expressionlessly.
I somehow understood it…
This hotel is is an annex of 『Kuromori』 brothel
Minaho-neesan chooses her words in explaining so Maika won't notice the existence of 『Kuromori』

「You see…This is a meeting place for rich people and their mistress without being known by anyone. Nowadays, this is a 『Room rent』 for such people…!」

『Kuromori』 prostitution section has stopped their activities however…
This annex is still lending rooms to the guests of 『Kuromori』 from the old days.
The guests take their female partner by themselves.
Therefore, the security guards are residing here…

「If it's a city hotel, you can just pretend to have a meeting on a different room…then go down the secret elevator won't you? You can have 『Adult meetups』 without everyone seeing it. You can use the usual guest room rented as an alibi and the hotel can make a profit as well」

…So they're doing that kind of business.

「Either way, let's go to my office. Take all the baggage when you're going down. I like this car but we can't use this anymore. Those people have the number of this one」

Minaho-neesan said in regret.

「I feel sorry for the people who owns this car in papers but…the trouble fee has been paid in advance, we have no choice but to give up…」
「What kind of people are they?」

I find it curious so I asked.

「If I recall, they're elderly people working at a plating factory in an industrial park…」

Oh…Those people would be invaded by the companions of those hoodlums.
My condolences.

「This way」

We took our baggage and followed Minaho-neesan…

「It's here…Even though I said office, It's hardly used」

Nee-san opened the lock and invited us inside.
There's only a desk and reception set…It was an unexpectedly simple room.

「Either way…we're absolutely safe here」

We sat on the sofa being told by Nee-san.
Maika leaks out a sigh.
As expected, she's nervous.

「Are you okay Maika?」
「Un…I'm fine. Or rather, it made my heart throb!」

Maika looks at my face and smiled.

「…Maika?」
「Yuzuki-san, what kinds of room are those used for 『Secret adult meetings』?」

Maika asks Minaho-neesan.
…What?
When you said that your heart is throbbing, you were interested in those?
…No, that's wrong.
Maika's face might be laughing…
…But her legs are trembling.
She's talking a different topic on purpose to hide her unease…
This child had that character…
If I don't take a look at her more.
Megu nods at my glance.
Megu understands…
Katsuko-nee's holding Maika's shoulder casually…
Everyone's thinking carefully of the smallest among us, Maika…

「The secret meeting rooms have luxurious interior. The concept is different on each room」
「Waa, Maika wants to see」
「Not right now…There's a lot too stimulating things in there」
「Eeeh!…Stimulating? What kind?」

Maika bites Minaho-neesan's words.

「We'll visit next time…we don't have time for today」

Minaho-neesan smiled wryly.
The phone on the desk rings.

「…Yes, it's me」

Minaho-neesan answered the call.

「…Is that so? Got it. They're also intruding the front of the hotel. I don't mind, call the police. So they knew it from the people who chased us to the underground…As expected. They're fast to talk to people on the crime syndicates…please report to the lawyer, Tsuruya-sensei. If they deal with that kind of team, the opponent would be plucked off enough…」

As expected…it was a crime syndicate.

「…The detailed correspondence should be left to Manager Takada and Concierge Chief Nomoto. The crime syndicate will persist to destroy the hotel side by putting false charges on them…the hotel should strongly appeal that they're unrelated. I'm going up immediately. The usual room please. Thank you…!」

Nee-san said then hang up the phone…

「The concierge of this hotel is my senior」

Katsuko-nee told us with a smile.
Katsuko-nee's senior…In short, a retired woman of 『Kuromori』

「She's very reliable so please feel relieved…」

Perhaps, most of the women in the mansion has taken part in Minaho-neesan's various business.
There's a firm bond between the women who were made prostitutes…

「Ojou-sama…should I prepare tea?」

Katsuko-nee stands up from the sofa.

「No need. We're done here anyway. There's a guest room prepared above so let's just call for room-service」
「Then, we're having supper here as well?」
「Right…the people in room service are safe」

…It seems that we're going to eat supper at this hotel.

「This underground facility isn't just used to run away from the pursuers」

Minaho-neesan looked at us.

「Electric waves doesn't reach this underground facility. There's no relay broadcast facility as well. There are a lot of customers who want to enjoy the 『Secret Meeting』 in a place where phones won't reach…」

…Phone?

「I'm going to confiscate your phones」

Minaho-neesan…told Megu, Maika and I.
…Err?

「…Did you not know that the location of a person can be known from the phone?」

Un…I've heard about it.

「Your phones are already identified by those people…!」

…I see.
Megu and my location can be found out by the GPS.

「But…Maika would be troubled if she can't contact her friends」

Maika said.

「That's fine」

Katsuko-nee took out a machine that looks like a laptop from the

car.

「We've bought identical ones from the phone shop. We'll just read the data on your phone and transfer it」

In addition, Katsuko-nee took out three phones with the same model.

「We'll give this in exchange of the confiscated phones. You can use it so don't worry. The data from contacts and mails, everything will be transferred. You may not like it but endure it. Once this event settles down, we'll change the model…」

Katsuko-nee said with a smile.

「That's fine isn't it, Maika-chan?」

Megu smiled at Maika.
She handed her own phone to Katsuko-nee, taking the lead.

「…Then please」
「Yes, leave this to me!」

Katsuko-nee ties the phone to the machine via cable and begins her work…

「It can't be helped…Maika just renewed the other day…」

Saying that, Maika presented her own phone.
I took out my phone as well.

「But…They're faster than I thought」

I told Minaho-neesan.

「Are you talking about Shirasaka house's movement being sooner than expected?」

Then…Minaho-neesan…

「No. Shirasaka house still haven't began to move yet. According to my investigation, it seems that they hired an underground

investigation company but…they have bad reputation, they move slow, and have low investigation ability. Why would they hire those people expressly? As expected, newsspaper people are useless. They have tunnel vision on what they know…thus they're naive…!」

…Eh?

「Then…Shirasaka house haven't started investigation yet?」
「That's right. Well, with the scale of their investigation company, they'll complete their preparations by tomorrow or the day after tomorrow」

…With that said?

「Huh…If so, when who's the crime syndicate that's coming after us…?」

…W-Who employed them?

…*Knock*

Suddenly, the door was knocked…!
I was startled by it.
This is an underground facility so we're the only one's here, right?

「…Who's there?」

Minaho-neesan asked…and the person on the other side answered.

「…It's me…Minaho!」

There's only one person calling Minaho-neesan 『Minaho』…!
…M-Margo-san?!

「…Come in, it's open」

The door opened and Margo-san comes in.

「…How did it go?」

Margo-san took out one sheet of paper when Minaho-neesan asked.

「It's them as expected」

There's a low resolution photo from a surveillance camera somewhere printed on the paper.
It's a tall foreigner?
I don't get his face though…

「…It's Cesario Viola」

…Margo-san?

「He's already in this town…!」

My head was filled with what's ahead that I forgot the existence of the strong enemy…

「Who's this foreigner?」

Maika peeps to the photo in curiosity.

「…Nei's archenemy」

Margo-san spit out.

「Nei-san's archenemy?」
「Yeah…He's an American that killed Nei's parents and is now chasing Nei…!」

I'm surprised.

「Could it be that those people who chased us just now…?!」

Margo-san smiles wryly.

「It's as Yoshida-kun expects…Those are hired people of Mr. Viola in Japan」

…Is that how it is?

「Mr. Viola's parents are soldiers so he came in Japan in his childhood and he can speak Japanese. However, he should've been in Okinawa. It's my first time hearing that he has come to the mainland as far as I know. Naturally, since he's not familiar with the land…he employed locals」

Margo-san explained.

「Is it that easy to employ Yakuza?」

Megu asked and Margo-san…

「Mr. Viola's underground community in US is well known…He must've mingled with the people of the crime syndicates in Japan」

Then…
The crime syndicate trying to intrude the hotel hardly knows any information on Cesario Viola.
Their relationship is just an employee and employer.

「As a makeshift…a huge amount of Yakuza will chase Yoshida-kun and Mr. Viola will take a look at our reaction…」

…Reaction

「The number of people, the scale…and the connection with the underground」

I see…

「We're the same though. We're both still in the dark. But, because of the uproar being concentrated only around the station, we're able to confirm that Mr. Viola is in Japan. We have checked all the surveillance cameras in the neighborhood」

Minaho-neesan let the pursuers chase us around the station to confirm the appearance of Cesario Viola.
Thinking that Mr. Viola himself is near the location…

「Then…Where is he right now?」

Margo-san shook her head…

「Taking a look at the surveillance cameras, he left by the taxi after this. We're examining the taxi company for the moment but…it seems impossible to chase after him. I don't think he'll come to this hotel. He's not an idiot that jumps to the enemy nest alone…!」

…They're already good by just confirming that the enemy is in Japan.

「But…Why do those people know our whereabouts?」

Megu asks Margo-san.

「That's because of Yoshida-kun's phone」

My phone?

「…Iwakura-san leaked information about Yoshida-kun, Nei, and me to the underground community, don't you remember?」

That's right. Our personal information was leaked by Iwakura-san to the underground community.
Mr. Viola came to Japan because of the leaked information and photo of Nei-san…

「…Yes」
「Nei and I were hidden all the time so it's impossible to search our whereabouts in Japan」

Margo-san and Nei-san are members of 『Kuromori』…
Nei-san never took in a guest so she has never shown her face in 『Kuromori』
Margo-san is on backstage as guard so she basically don't show her face.
There's no information on the two connected to 『Kuromori』…

「Iwakura-san had leaked information at least which school Nei is staying but…In the first place, the phone number and address Nei submitted to the office of school are all fictional. Even if someone access it, we would immediately be alerted and be standby to move. It's holiday today as well so they cannot distinguish Nei's location from the school. As for me, my address in the university and the embassy are identical… My phone number are all from a different person…and I'm always using multiple ones. Ah, the number Nei and I have been using until now has been disposed. We'll tell you our new number later…!」

So they've been thorough with that.

「Therefore…Yoshida-kun's the only clue they have」

…Me?

「Iwakura-san leaked out the information about who you are and which school you go to. Your mobile number, even if who of your classmates has 10k yen, they're able to have that from the phone network」

…Perhaps they do.
Who's number did I write on the emergency contact again?

「That's why those guys come to you first…」

…Is that how it is?
Nobody knows that I'm related to 『Kuromori』
They just think that I'm a normal high school student.
They'll take a hold of me then have me spill out Nei-san's location.

「Ah…Then, Maika and Megu are still safe, aren't they?」

I sighed.
If I'm the only one they're aiming, I can deal with it somehow.
But…Margo-san…

「You see Yoshida-kun…the underground world is comparatively small」

…Ha?

「What do you think will happen if Mr., Viola's hired Yakuza and Shirasaka family shared information?」

…Share information?

「It would immediatelye known that Megumi-chan's the girl who run away with you. Shirasaka house is requesting to search Megumi-chan no investigation companies. Students on the same class and same school would be uploaded on the underground community. There's no person who won't think that you two are related…」

In short…They'll cooperate and come after us…?!

「It'll be immediately found out that we're behind Yoshida-kun and Megumi-chan. If both targets are in the same group… There's a high possibility that Mr. Viola's hired crime syndicate and Shirasaka house's hired investigators will cooperate」

…Certainly.
That would become troublesome…

「Can't we have the syndicate hired by Cesario Viola withdraw?」

Katsuko-nee asked Margo-san.
Un…If we use the name 『Kuromori』, the crime syndicate might give up…

「That's no good. The crime syndicate is connected with Mr. Viola. There's almost clues on that mister. We should let him free and gather more intelligence」

Margo-san's opinion is reasonable.

「…We're able to escape to this hotel from the crime syndicate by chance. They don't know our relation with this facility after all…

Minaho-neesan said.

「Those who enter the underground gate of this hotel will be 『Guests』 without question thus…they cannot tell information about the customers, they'll reject it. That would make the other side quiet」

『Kuromori』 is a prostitution ring that is associated with the big shots of politics and business circles.
That means that they'd rather die than tell that 『Information about the guests』
For the time being…Mr. Viola's hired crime syndicate would hold back.
They would feel indebt with the hotel that's under the rule of 『Kuromori』 without knowing anything.
But…Shirasaka house.
They know that they're dealing with 『Kuromori』 from the start…

「…We need to make a hit before Shirasaka house is able to arrange themselves.」

Margo-san said and looked at Maika.

「I feel sorry for Maika-chan but…can you contact your mother and your grandfather on mother's side?」

…That's?

「What the Shirasaka house fears the most is the people knowing Shirasaka Sousuke's evildoing. It would cause serious damage on the Shirasaka house after all」

Margo-san analyzes it clearly.

「The second one is to secure Shirasaka Sousuke himself. They want to recapture Shirasaka Sousuke without anyone knowing that he's kidnapped」

…I see.

「Securing Megumi-chan is the later of the priority level…At most, they must be thinking that she has the clues on Shirasaka's current whereabouts」

Margo-san supplements Minaho-neesan's talk.

「If the head of Shirasaka house was a bit more decent and…He'll contact me directly. There's a lot of people among them who knows me and the mansion…!」

The family and the persons connected with Shirasaka Sousuke naturally knows 『Kuromori』 as well.
No…There's a lot of 『Guests』 among the clan as well.

「It's a makeshift…All the dirty work are done by the people they hired, it'll get even more troublesome as they don't approach themselves…」

…I see

「Therefore…What was Shirasaka Sousuke doing in the back until now. And with the fact that he's being restrained in Australia…They think that this will be leaked to people other than Shirasaka house」

Margo-san smiled.
In short…We're informing Maika's mother's side to restrain the head of Shirasaka house!

「Maika-san's grandfather…Ichikawa-san is a decent and honest person, or so I've heard. …We've never met each other however…」

In short…He's not a guest of the mansion.
A person completely without contact with 『Kuromori』

「There's no need to let the public know Shirasaka Sousuke's back face…Having the relative, Ichikawa-san know first and it will have enough effect. Ichikawa-san is the leader of the advertising industry and a person in equal ground of the head of Shirasaka house. He won't do something that's on Shirasaka house's convenience…!」
「Rather…They hate being involved with the scandal of Shirasaka house. For Ichikawa-san, Shirasaka Sousuke's evildoing is an inexcusable act of betrayal」

Even if it's a political marriage…the man who married his own daughter is a manager of an illegal prostitution ring…
An honest man shouldn't be able to tolerate such things…

「I'm sure my Grandfather would be surprised…」

…Maika muttered.

「It seems…Maika should better report him now…」

Quietly…she laughed and answered.

「…Maika, will you please do it?」

Maika looks up at me.

「What are you saying…I'm Onii-san's 『Woman』」

…Maika.

「Maika understands how serious Yuzuki-san as well…but…!」

Maika hesitates.

「Isn't it about time you tell Maika everything?」

…Maika's too clever.
Even though we try not to speak the whole picture of 『Kuromori』 to Maika…she noticed it.

「It's still no good…We can't tell you everything」

Minaho-neesan said clearly.

「Does that mean that you can't trust Maika?」

Maika looks straight at Minaho-neesan.

「…That's wrong. It's the problem of timing. I think that it's better not to tell Maika-san everything yet. That way, you can behave at ease」

MInaho-neesan answered with a smile.

「…What do you mean?」
「We can't have Maika-san come home today but…it's possible that you will meet your mother and grandfather tomorrow. At that time, I would be troubled if Maika-san knows too much. You might tell Ichikawa-san information we don't want them to know yet…」
「You're thinking that Maika will tell her grandfather without thought?」
「I don't…But, I cannot underestimate Maika-san's grandfather. He's managing a big enterprise. I think that he'll be able to gather information from Maika-san persuasively…」

Minaho-neesan looked at Maika with strong eyes…

「Therefore…We still can't tell you about everything 『Yet』 …!」

…Maika

「Not 『Yet』 for now. Then you're going to tell me everything sometime?」
「…Yes. I promise that」

The two women glare at each other…

「Got it…Maika will contact Mama and grandfather…」

Maika submitted for the time being…

---

1. Teki no stando da! ↩

Credits

Pure Love × Insult Complex
Love × Rape Complex
純愛×陵辱　コンプレックス

Author: thirty silver and (Judah).

Translations: Machine Sliced Bread.

Ebook: dreamer2908.

Contents were fetched from the translation group's site on 2017.02.22.